Martial God Asura

(修罗武神)

Volume 03

Eastern Sea Region

Kindhearted Bee

(善良的蜜蜂)

Story Description:

In terms of potential: Even if you are not a genius, you can learn Mysterious Techniques and martial skills. You can also learn without a teacher.

In terms of strength: Even if you have tens of thousands of treasures, you may not be able to defeat my grand World Spirit army.

Who am I? Every single living thing in the world views me as Asura. However, I did not know about that. Thus, as Asura, I became the Martial God.

Original Story can be found here: Link

Chapter 549: Pulse Searching Method

"Big Brother Tianyi, how about you go call for Big Brother Chu Feng? The sky's going to be dark soon." Jiang Wushang said a bit worriedly.

"Yeah! This time, you will all soon begin a long trek, so you must select a fortuitous hour and day for departure to obtain great fortune. It will truly be a shame if you were to let today's chance pass." In reality, even many other people started to feel anxious.

They had assembled there at dawn and prepared to send Chu Feng and the others off, yet now, the sun already started to set in the west, an entire day's worth of time passed.

At present, the sky was turning black right in front of their eyes, so naturally, they were slightly unable to remain still.

"Ah Tianyi, go call for Chu Feng. Don't let everyone wait for him." Seeing all of that, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke as well.

"Mm." After he spoke, Zhang Tianyi also nodded his head.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

But just at that moment, from the direction of the main palace, three rainbows appeared abruptly. Those three rainbows first stormed straight into the sky, but quickly after, like meteors, streaked down, and at the end, landed in the center of the square.

After the three rainbows landed, they became three figures. When their faces could be seen clearly, all of the people at that place were taken aback.

Especially the ones who were close to Chu Feng. Even their mouths widened greatly, their faces showing ecstatic expressions quickly after

The three people were precisely Chu Feng, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

At that very instant, the two beauties, who had their own special traits, already wore the two skirts Chu Feng gifted to them. Their beauty was embellished by the Strange Armament skirts, making them appear even

more bewitching.

As for Chu Feng, he stood in between the two of them, his two hands unrestrainedly over their soft things. He said to the crowd, “Everyone, please excuse me, I’ve come late.”

“Little Rou, Little Mei, you’re awake, you’re awake!”

At that moment, a middle-aged man suddenly dashed up to Su Rou and Su Mei, bawling with snot and tears. That person was none other than Su Rou and Su Mei’s father.

“This is great, this is great! Sisters, you two are finally awake!” Quickly after, Su Rou and Su Mei’s elder brother and his wife also ran over. Seeing their family, Su Rou and Su Mei were very touched as well.

In reality, seeing the two of them reawaken, those who recognized them were all very happy. No matter how they reawakened, from the bottom of their hearts, they felt happy for them and Chu Feng.

Of course, some were happy, and some were puzzled as well. After all, not everyone knew about Su Rou and Su Mei.

For example, Jiang Wushang. Currently, fog filled up his head, so he patted Zhang Tianyi’s shoulder and asked quietly, “Big Brother Tianyi, who are these two beauties? Why do they seem so intimate with Big Brother Chu Feng? Even their cultivation isn’t weak.”

“Heh, I almost forgot. You still don’t know about them.” In regards to that, Zhang Tianyi smiled faintly, and then simply explained to Jiang Wushang the relationship between Su Rou, Su Mei, and Chu Feng, as well as what happened between them.

And after knowing everything, the gaze Jiang Wushang looked at Chu Feng with contained only one word: admiration. At the same time, he couldn’t help exclaiming, “Big Brother Chu Feng, your luck with beauty runs deep!”

“Ah, Chu Feng! The time is late. It is better to depart early.” The Azure Dragon Founder had no choice but to urge them as he saw the sun, which already descended halfway down the western mountains.

"Mm." Hearing that, Chu Feng nodded his head, then quickly after, went up to Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, and said, "Senior Zhang, Brother Wushang, Little Rou and Little Mei also want to head to the Eastern Sea Region along with us. Can they?"

"Of course they can." Without even thinking Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang nodded their heads and agreed.

Jiang Wushang even took the initiative to open the Strange Armament chariot's door, pulled Chu Feng into it, and said to him, "Big Brother Chu Feng, this Strange Armament is not for battle, but for journeying. There is no difference between this and a palace. Not only is its speed strangely fast, it is very comfortable living inside as well."

"There's exactly three rooms in here. The biggest room over there was originally for my own use because I like sleeping on large beds, but now, I'll give it to you. Hehe, relish it well! Hehehe..." As his voice faded away, a hint of lasciviousness even appeared on the corners of Jiang Wushang's mouth as he smiled.

Chu Feng calmly smiled as he faced Jiang Wushang who acted like that, then said in a low voice, "Brother Wushang, good job."

Thus, just like that, Chu Feng, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang, the five of them, rode on that Strange Armament chariot, and departed from the continent of the Nine Provinces, heading towards the Four Seas Academy in the Eastern Sea Region.

"I truly don't know what accomplishments these children will achieve in that sea region." Seeing the Strange Armament chariot that disappeared on the horizon in a blink, the Jiang Dynasty's old ancestor felt rather despondent.

"Don't worry. These children's abilities all surpass me by a huge margin. Even if it's the Eastern Sea Region, they will definitely have a certain amount of achievements." The Azure Dragon Founder calmly smiled and said.

Hearing the Azure Dragon Founder's words, everyone also smiled relievedly. It was really not only he who had such thoughts, but everyone

as well.

***

Strange Armaments. At the end, it's still a tool, so if one wants it to move, they must use their cultivator's power to spur it forward. The stronger the power of the one who spurs it, the speed it moves becomes quicker.

This Strange Armament is the same. In order to more quickly reach the Eastern Sea Region and arrive at the Four Seas Academy, it required the circulatory propulsion of Chu Feng and the others, constant travelling through day and night.

However, because of the special relationship between Chu Feng and Su Rou and Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang themselves requested the mission of urging the Strange Armament forward to be covered by them two. It would be sufficient for Chu Feng to put his focus on accompanying Su Rou and Su Mei well.

At first, Chu Feng still felt rather bad. After all, the road was far. Chu Feng really felt ashamed to let only the two of them drive the Strange Armament forward.

But when he saw Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang's firm stance, Chu Feng gave up, and at the end, said only a sentence. Good brothers need no explanation.

So, Chu Feng was able to concentrate on being with the two sisters Su Rou and Su Mei and enjoy the beautiful scenery on the road while being in the Strange Armament. That feeling of happiness really made Chu Feng feel extreme rapture.

However, when it was deep in the night, when all of them should have been asleep, a scene that Chu Feng could do nothing about occured.

Chu Feng, who was initially lying perfectly fine on the bed next to the sisters, was heartlessly kicked onto the ground by Su Rou. Moreover, she flashed a warm smile, then said to Chu Feng, "Before marriage, don't even think of committing immoral acts towards me and my sister."

“Little Rou, don’t do this! The ground is cold!” Chu Feng’s face was filled with appeal, but as it did nothing to Su Rou, he could only cast his pleading gaze towards Su Mei.

However, Su Mei also sweetly smiled, and said “She’s right” before quickly pulling down the canopies, thoroughly excluding Chu Feng from the large bed.

“Sigh.” Seeing the canopies that already blocked his vision, Chu Feng sighed helplessly, but very quickly, his face brimmed with a hint of a joyful smile.

In reality, Chu Feng had never planned to commit any indecent acts to Su Rou and Su Mei. The two of them, being able to cheerful jump around in front of him, Chu Feng already felt content.

“Chu Feng, right now, you are already a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, and you are also going to enter the Eastern Sea Region. I think it’s time to teach you the Pulse Searching Method.” But just as Chu Feng closed his eyes and prepared to sleep, Eggy’s voice suddenly rang out.

Chapter 550: Deep and Profound

"Pulse Searching Method?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's grogginess immediately vanished.

A long time ago, Eggy had told him about the Pulse Searching Method. It was a special method that could search for the world's oddities, myriads of mystical treasures, and cultivation resources.

However, cultivating that method was very troubling. In addition, the things Chu Feng needed to handle before never ended, so Eggy hadn't mentioned that to Chu Feng.

Eggy didn't mention, Chu Feng didn't ask; but in reality, Chu Feng always had his mind on the Pulse Searching Method. At present, Eggy was finally willing to teach him that method, so of course, Chu Feng was very excited.

Thus, as he willed, he shot his awareness into his own Spiritual World and came inside the World Spirit Space.

Seeing Eggy who was coldly beautiful without detraction from cuteness, and cute without detraction from sweetness, Chu Feng grinned, chuckled, and said, "Eggy, you're finally willing to teach me that Pulse Searching Method?"

"Chu Feng, listen carefully. This Pulse Searching Method is a method that normal World Spiritist are unable to grasp. Even above the ranks of Gold-cloak World Spiritists, there is almost no one who grasps this method."

"It can be said to be a secret that hasn't been passed down. The number of people who grasp this method is few within few. It is even more precious than your Secret Skill. If this gets known, it will definitely cause a bloody catastrophe to arise." Eggy said.

"What? This Pulse Searching Method is something that normal World Spiritists cannot grasp, and it is actually that precious?!" Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help gulping, then curiously asked, "Eggy,

where did you get such a thing? Could it be your Asura World Spirit's unique method?!"

"Of course not. This Pulse Searching Method was created by a very mighty World Spiritist. I learnt it from a World Spirit senior who is even several times more powerful than me because this senior was the World Spirit of that mighty World Spiritist." Eggy said.

"What? A senior even several times more powerful than you?" Being told that, Chu Feng was very startled. Before Eggy was sealed, she should have been already extremely strong. If so, what level of existence was the World Spirit even stronger than her?

"It's a World Spirit that very few people dare to be disrespectful towards in the entire Asura Spirit World." Mentioning that World Spirit, even on the face of the usual prideful Eggy emerged a hint of respect. From that, it could be seen that the World Spirit was truly extraordinary.

But what made Chu Feng even more amazed was the master of that World Spirit. If the World Spirit itself was already so powerful, what strength would the master of that World Spirit have?

"But Chu Feng, something I need to remind you beforehand. Although I know the cultivating method of this Pulse Searching Method, I do not know if it will be successful."

"The only thing I can tell you is that this Pulse Searching Method is not easy to cultivate."

"Hehe, in this world, what things are easy? Eggy, just tell me. What do I need to do?" Chu Feng indifferently smiled as he asked.

"The Pulse Searching Method requires one to cultivate three things. First, cultivation of the eye. Second, cultivation of the brain. Third, cultivation of the heart."

"The cultivation of the eye can be said to be the critical juncture of the Pulse Searching Method because the method requires you to use your eyes to see everything, and eyes like those are called the Heaven's Eyes."

"Heaven's Eyes?"

“That’s right. As long as you cultivate your eyes to the point where you see things that others cannot see, and notice things that others cannot notice, then you can say that you’ve grasped the early stage of the Heaven’s Eyes.”

“And cultivating the Heaven’s Eyes requires enormous Spirit power. The lowest standard is Spirit power that can use blue-coloured Spirit Formation power. That’s also why I had to wait until you were a Blue-cloak World Spiritist before willing to pass down the Pulse Searching Method.”

“Then what is cultivation of the brain?”

“Cultivation of the brain is the replenishment of your knowledge. Of the millions of things and organisms in this world, its rivers, streams, mountains, hills, there are truths to their existences. There are meanings in their shapes.”

“For example, a seemingly ordinary mountain range can possibly contain many peculiar objects; a seemingly ordinary book can possibly hide unseen artifacts.”

“However, no matter how much more special they are, ordinary people cannot see such things. However, if you have the Heaven’s Eyes, you can see their remarkability from their external shapes.”

“But if you needed to determine whether there are truly treasures hidden within, then you are required to grasp the related knowledge. I have here a chant. This chant records almost all geographical shapes of areas that conceal various treasures in this world. As for how much you can comprehend from it, that will depend on yourself.”

“Regarding the cultivation of the heart, it is actually very simple.”

“For all things, if there are benefits, there are detriments. Danger always coexists with advantages. The greater the advantage, the greater the danger.”

“And after you grasp the Heaven’s Eyes as well as the knowledge related to the Pulse Searching Method, you will be able to dig out many buried

oddities, or locations with treasures."

"But you need to know that even though the things there can possibly turn you into a dragon, causing your cultivation to greatly soar, it can also evaporate all your work, killing you within."

"When you discover a place that hides treasures, to enter or to not, and what to do after entering, all of that needs to be determined by your heart. A serene yet strong heart can always guard your life, and allow you to gain even more results."

"Chu Feng, that's the Pulse Searching Method. Simple when said, difficult when done. Are you certain you want to cultivate it?" Eggy, with her pair of slender brows and big eyes glittering in jet-black, she stared at Chu Feng solemnly. She was waiting for Chu Feng's answer.

Confronting Eggy's question, Chu Feng lightly smiled, and answered, "Of course I want to."

After obtaining Chu Feng's answer, the corners of Eggy's mouth curved upwards, revealing a devastatingly beautiful smile because she precisely liked Chu Feng's spirit of fearless adventuring.

From then on, Eggy told the three cultivation methods of the Pulse Searching Method to Chu Feng. The proverb "the master shows you the door, but you must walk through it" was very evidently shown in the Pulse Searching Method.

Eggy had also never truly seen a person cultivate the Pulse Searching Method, she only knew the method of cultivation, so she had no clue if he could succeed or not, or how fast he could grasp it.

In reality, the Pulse Searching Method was truly very difficult to cultivate. It was so hard that even Chu Feng, who had extremely powerful comprehension power, had a muddled head and had to intensely study it word-by-word.

But, the more Chu Feng cultivated, the harder he worked; the more he cultivated, the more serious he became; the more he studied, the more absorbed he got into it.

It was because he discovered that the Pulse Searching Method was truly deep and profound, and he wondered what kind of divine being the creator was, actually being able to produce such a thing.

Putting all other aside, just the Pulse Searching Method's cultivation of the eye was an upgraded version of Spirit power.

If one were to succeed in learning the method, there would be no need to use Spirit power for detection. With merely a glance, they could see through everything that Spirit power could perceive.

Let's say it like this. If the cultivation of the Heaven's Eyes succeeds, Chu Feng would be able to see objects through walls. The so-called x-ray vision.

Reaching the later stages of cultivation, Chu Feng's pair of eyes would have savage destructive abilities. With a look, he could flatten mountains and evaporate lakes.

If he were to master it, he could see one's inner heart and soul, ascertain the evil and just; with only a glimpse, he could see through a person's nature, and possibly with only a look, he could force others to be submissive, and serve himself for their entire life.

Chapter 551: Luxurious Tavern

As for cultivation of the brain, it was even more impressive. The chant had no more than a hundred words yet contained the world's boundless mysteriousness. Just a single word encompassed many profound matters. However, as for how much he could understand from it, that relied solely on the cultivator's own comprehension strength.

In short, the Pulse Searching Method thoroughly engrossed Chu Feng because he felt if he were to completely grasp the Pulse Searching Method, in the future, he truly need not worry about any cultivation resources. Perhaps relying on the Pulse Searching Method, he would become a supreme expert because he felt hiddenly that the Pulse Searching Method seemed to conceal some divine secret.

So, Chu Feng's days were entirely cast into the cultivation of the Pulse Searching Method, and that lasted over two full months of time.

In two months, the Strange Armament chariot flew over innumerable deserts and plains, and rivers and lakes. They even flew past several small-scale sea regions.

And after two full months non-stop all-out hurrying, Chu Feng and the group finally entered the Eastern Sea Region.

"Chu Feng, Chu Feng!" At that instant, Chu Feng was currently in his room, painstakingly studying the Pulse Searching Method, but when Su Mei's beautiful and excited voice rang out without end, Chu Feng had no choice but to stop cultivating.

"Little Mei, what's the matter?" Opening his eyes, Chu Feng discovered that Su Mei and Su Rou, the two sisters, were standing in front of him presently. Moreover, sweet smiles were worn on their pretty little faces.

"Heh, quickly come, come and look! You'll know when you see it!" Su Mei didn't explain. She directly grabbed Chu Feng's hand and pulled Chu Feng out.

After walking out of the room and coming up to the window, Chu Feng's

pupils couldn't help shrinking abruptly before similarly his face brimmed with excited emotions.

Because, at that very instant, underneath the Strange Armament chariot, it was an edgeless and endless sea, but that sea was completely different from what Chu Feng saw before.

The seawater was azure, and large waves rose into the sky. Even the smallest were several meters tall, while the largest reached heights of several hundred meters. They were truly incomparably fierce.

At that very instant, despite standing within the Strange Armament chariot, Chu Feng was also able to hear the sounds of the waves, and the noises of the wind. A sea like that was absolutely not something ordinary people could survive in, and a region of sea like that was clearly the Eastern Sea Region.

"The Eastern Sea Region, completely boundless. Above this sea are only islands, but the sizes of these islands are over several times larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces."

"The Eastern Sea Region, imperceptibly deep. From what I've heard, there lives within the bottom of the sea enormous and vicious sea creatures. There are even powerful Monstrous Beast species living deep under the sea for very long years."

"Similarly, within the bottom of the sea, countless artifacts can be found, and the number of treasures is even immeasurable." Jiang Wushang said on the side.

"It is indeed not simple. Entering this place is truly like coming to another world." Chu Feng was quite amazed as well. It was as though he entered a new point in his life.

The Eastern Sea Region was very big. Even though the Four Seas Academy was located at a relatively eastern location, if they wanted to reach it, they still needed a few more days.

After roughly two weeks of rushing, an island finally appeared within their lines of sight, and on the island, finally, they saw traces of humans.

“Look! There’s a tavern ahead. Since we’re not far from the Four Seas Academy anyway, why not go down there and have a meal? Let’s check out how the Eastern Sea Region’s dishes taste like.”

Jiang Wushang pointed forward and loudly yelled out. Looking over at that direction, a very large tavern was indeed situated there. Many chariots and special horses halted outside. There were even Monstrous Beasts bound by Spirit Formation ropes.

Simultaneously, many figures were scuttling. Even though the distance was still very far, they could see that almost everyone there was a cultivator. Even many chariots were pulled by Monstrous Beasts.

How was that even like a tavern? It was simply like a small-scale city. At least, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, Chu Feng and the others had never seen a tavern of such magnitude. They had never seen so many cultivators gathered in a single tavern as well.

“Waa, there’s so many people! Let’s go down and have a look. After eating rations for so long, I also want to savor appetizing dishes.” At the same time, Su Rou also exclaimed with a face full of longing.

Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi who was currently responsible for urging the chariot forward looked at Chu Feng, and after seeing him nod his head, he willed, drove the chariot forward, and entered the vast tavern directly.

Following the entrance of the Strange Armament chariot, driven by Chu Feng and the others, into the tavern, the attention of quite a few people was aroused. After all, Strange Armaments were treasures. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, they were still priceless.

Especially when the Strange Armament chariot Chu Feng and the others sat in was extremely luxurious, naturally, it attracted some observers.

Even in the first instant, some people gave birth to inimical thoughts. Since this place wasn’t within the borders of the Four Seas Academy, and it was located quite remotely, there would usually not be any investigations after an instance killing, robbing, and silencing via extermination. So, many criminals stood guard at a place like that,

specializing in finding weak people for unlawful activities.

However, after Chu Feng and his group walked out of the Strange Armament chariot, the ones with malicious intentions couldn't help dispelling those thoughts.

Five young males and females. Three in the third level of the Heaven realm, two in the second level of the Heaven realm. That age. That strength. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, it was not weak in the slightest.

It was even to the extent that when some people saw Chu Feng and the others, they actually evaded hurriedly, a bit of fear emerging into their eyes.

Only some fearless people, who were attracted by Su Rou's and Su Mei's beauty, dared to shoot another glance.

But when they discovered that there was some aggravation within Chu Feng's and the others' gazes, they also quickly redirected their sight. As they smiled apologetically, they speedily left, deeply afraid being given a lesson by Chu Feng's group.

"It seems like no matter where, people still bully the kind and fear the evil." Seeing the crowd that surrounded with tiger-like stares yet rapidly withdrew after he displayed his strength, Zhang Tianyi smiled derisively.

"The weak are meat and the strong eat. That's the only rule of this world, without exception regardless of the place." Chu Feng also smiled.

"Guests, are you staying, or eating?" Just at that moment, a male dressed as a waiter ran over with a face of smiles.

But despite of that, even though it was a waiter's attire, his clothing was many times more gorgeous than a waiter's clothing in the continent of the Nine Provinces. He simply did not even seem like a commoner.

But the thing that shocked Chu Feng was that the waiter was actually a cultivator belonging to the Origin realm.

"So this is the Eastern Sea Region huh? Even a waiter has the cultivation in the Origin realm." But at present, the one most

flabbergasted was none other than Su Mei.

It was because her initial cultivation was in the Origin realm. If the Pearl of Flames didn't enter her body, perhaps she would still be in the Origin realm right now.

Yet, in the Eastern Sea Region, a lowly waiter who poured tea for others was quite unexpectedly also in the Origin realm. That really stunned her, and she even felt a bit of unfairness.

Chapter 552: Tianyi's Secret

"Heh, Lady Su Mei, you need to get used to this! This is only the Eastern Sea Region. I've heard in the Holy Land of Martialism, some Monstrous Beasts with noble bloodlines are born in the Profound realm!" Jiang Wushang hiddenly sent a mental message as he saw Su Mei's stunned expression.

After hearing his words, Su Mei's already shocked face became even more shocked because it was the first time she truly felt what "there's a sky beyond a sky, and a person beyond a person" meant. It was not strange that the continent of the Nine Provinces was called a tiny place in the eyes of many experts.

However, even though it was the Eastern Sea Region and cultivators with decent cultivation were scattered everywhere, in actuality, there weren't many people who stepped into the Heaven realm.

At least, within the several thousands of people in the luxurious tavern, there were no more than a hundred who were in the Heaven realm, and even of those who did, most of them were middle-aged uncles or aged people. There were very, very few people who were as young as Chu Feng and the others.

That was also why the appearance of Chu Feng and the others struck fear into so many people. They were not only afraid of their cultivation, they felt more strongly about there being an enormous power behind their backs.

After a short moment of sighing, they booked a fairly good room in the tavern. They were comfortably prepared to have a taste of the Eastern Sea Region's delicious foods.

"Junior Chu Feng, I have something I want to discuss with you in private." But just as they entered the room, Chu Feng received a mental message. Following along the sound and looking over, he saw Zhang Tianyi currently looking at himself with smiles.

"Go ahead and order some dishes. I'm going to take a leak." In response,

Chu Feng quickly stood up, and headed out.

"Junior Chu Feng, wait for me, I'm going as well!" Understanding, Zhang Tianyi also followed out.

wuao

But just as they walked out of their booked room, there was rumbling like bursts of deafening thunder.

Gazing at that direction, they saw several extravagant chariots being pulled by Heaven realm Monstrous Beasts from the east. They travelling along in the air, and at the end, landed in the tavern.

After those chariots landed, several armoured men walked out of the chariot. There was thirty-eight of them, and they were all in the Heaven realm.

What surprised Chu Feng and the others the most was that the one who led was already in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, but the most significant thing was his age. It was similar to Zhang Tianyi's; he was a young man.

The young man was clearly the leader in that group of people, and from his conversations to his subordinates, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi also learnt their identity.

Like Jiang Wushang, they came from the east as well, from a place called the Shentu Dynasty. They were special people who had Inherited Bloodlines.

As for the young man with strength in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, his name was Shentu Lang. He was a prince of the Shentu Dynasty, and was also preparing to enter the Four Seas Academy for cultivation.

They were the same as Chu Feng and the others. After such a long voyage, they saw this tavern, and decided to take a small break.

"Waa, a group of truly impressive characters came from this year's Shentu Dynasty of the Eastern Continent!"

"Yeah. A few days ago, two Shentu Dynasty princes have already come

from the Eastern Continent. They had the cultivation of the fourth level of the Heaven realm. That age, that cultivation; if they entered the Four Seas Academy, they will be able to receive focused development."

"I didn't expect the Shentu Dynasty to send some in the fifth level of the Heaven realm today. The Shentu Dynasty should be the strongest power in the Eastern Continent right?"

The appearance of Shentu Lang and the others drawn many people's attention. Some of the surrounding observers even started to exclaim and discuss with low voices.

The Eastern Continent they mentioned was actually the place Chu Feng and the others came from. At that place, several continents were connected with one another, separated only by "rivers". So, the entirety of the continents was called the Eastern Continent by the people of the Eastern Sea Region.

"The hell are you looking at? Scram! If you disturb my prince's rest, you will all die." However, not only did the people from the Shentu Dynasty ignore the crowd's exclamations and praises, they even pointed at them and loudly cursed. A very vile attitude.

"They are truly looking to die." As he saw that scene, Chu Feng's complexion couldn't help changing, his fists unavoidably clenching lightly.

Even though the people from the Shentu Dynasty were pointing at the crowd and cursing, in reality, they also included Zhang Tianyi and him, insulting them as well.

bam But before Chu Feng went forward, he felt a hand pulling him back. Turning his head to look, Zhang Tianyi was shaking his head slightly to himself, saying quietly, "Junior Chu Feng, it is our first time here. Given the choice to do more or less, why not do less? Endure one moment, the winds will be calm and the waves serene; take one step back, the ocean will be peaceful and the sky clear."

Hearing that, Chu Feng remained silent. He wasn't afraid, but just didn't want to give no face to Zhang Tianyi.

Afterwards, they no longer paid attention to the people from the Shentu Dynasty, and left the tavern towards an unpopulated area.

“Senior Zhang, just speak your mind. There is no need to hold yourself back on anything.” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

“Mm, then I won’t bother with courtesy words. By calling you out here, I do indeed have one thing I want you to help me with.” Zhang Tianyi said.

“What is it? Just say whatever’s on your mind.” Chu Feng smiled brightly.

“It’s actually nothing big, but Junior Chu Feng, since you’re not planning to cultivate in the Four Seas Academy, according to your nature, you should be planning to journey around the Eastern Sea Region right?” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Mm. That’s not false. I have some things I need to do, and those things destine me to travel through the Eastern Sea Region.” Chu Feng nodded his head without confirming nor denying.

“Then that’s great! Junior Chu Feng, take this with you. When you traverse places, please look around and if you see this symbol, please tell me.” As he spoke, Zhang Tianyi took out a jade ornament from his pocket and handed it over to Chu Feng.

“This is?!” Accepting the jade ornament, Chu Feng’s pupils couldn’t help shrinking and on his calm face some astonishment emerged.

That jade ornament was black, the material it was made of was special, and even with Chu Feng’s current strength it was impossible to break the jade ornament. Clearly, it was not an ordinary jade ornament.

Moreover, engraved on the jade ornament was a special picture. A delicate sword.

If the scale of the sword was enlarged, it would be a very long and broad sword. However, by the sides of the sword, a pair of wings was engraved. The wings stretched outwards, as if it was going to fly out with the large sword. So, looking at it from that perspective, it seemed more like a special symbol, or something that contained a special meaning.

“Senior Zhang, where did you get this jade ornament?” Chu Feng asked curiously. Intuition told him that the origin of the jade ornament was absolutely not simple.

“To be honest, I’ve had amnesia.” Zhang Tianyi said a bit embarrassedly.

“What, amnesia?” Hearing those words, instantly, Chu Feng was even more astounded.

Chapter 553: The Arrogant Shentu Lang

"That's right. When I lost my memories, I was only six. I don't remember what happened before I was six years old. I only know that back then, I was situated in an alien land, and only later on did I learn that the land was called the Azure Province."

"Me back then had absolutely nothing. Other than the set of clothes on my body, there were only two things. The first was this jade ornament, the other is this." As Zhang Tianyi spoke, he took out a book. On the front were three big words: Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

"Senior Zhang, you..." At that instant, Chu Feng was also incomparably startled, because he seemed to have understood a few things.

It appeared like the Forbidden Mysterious Technique Zhang Tianyi cultivated was not found by chance, it was already on him. More importantly, the jade ornament and Mysterious Technique proved already one thing. Zhang Tianyi's ancestry was likely very special as well.

"I don't know why I lost my memories, but I feel that I don't belong to the Azure Province, nor to the continent of the Nine Provinces. This jade ornament should be able to unravel the mystery of my ancestry, and perhaps it can help me retrieve the memories I had before six years of age."

"Junior Chu Feng, you don't need to specially search anything for me because these things rely merely on luck. You only need to pay slightly more attention and it'll be fine just like that. Honestly speaking, even I cannot confirm whether they are in the Eastern Sea Region or not." A light grin was worn on Zhang Tianyi's face, but Chu Feng could feel the sorrow veiled over by his smile.

A child of only six years old, fatherless and motherless, completely alone. Chu Feng could imagine the kinds of hardship one needed to face in that situation.

When he was young, even though his life in the Chu family wasn't optimal, there was at least someone taking care of him. But Zhang Tianyi

on the hand didn't. Clearly, his younger times were more painful than his.

The most important thing however, was Chu Feng also having great desire to understand his own background. Hence, Chu Feng was able to closely sympathize with Zhang Tianyi and feel his current emotions.

"Senior Zhang, don't worry. I will definitely pay attention."

"But keep the jade ornament on you. I have already memorized its appearance." Chu Feng somberly guaranteed. While he spoke, he returned the jade ornament to Zhang Tianyi because he knew how important it was to him.

"Then sorry to trouble you, Junior Chu Feng." After hearing Chu Feng's response, Zhang Tianyi also smiled happily.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi returned to the tavern, but before approaching it, their faces experienced change.

It was because they discovered bewilderedly that there was smoke rising inside the tavern. Clearly, someone initiated an attack inside, but at present, Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei were still inside the tavern. Naturally, Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were very anxious.

At that moment, within the tavern, the room booked by Chu Feng and the others had been flattened. Many structures surrounding it became wreckages as well. That place already became ruins.

Su Rou and Su Mei stood in the heart of the ruins with faces full of fury. They supported a person together, that person being exactly Jiang Wushang.

"I'm fine. It is but a scratch." On Jiang Wushang current forehead he wore a golden, dazzling "royal" character. It could be seen that he used the power of his Bloodline. But in spite of that, on his body, there were a few wounds, and a sliver of blood trickled out of the corner of his mouth.

There stood a group of people from the Shentu Dynasty in front of Jiang Wushang. Unquestionably, the ones who injured Jiang Wushang were them.

“Hmph. You were so arrogant I thought you must have impressive strength, but in reality, you are only trash. You’re surnamed Jiang, right?” The prince called Shentu Lang questioned with contempt.

“That’s right. What about it?” Jiang Wushang stubbornly wiped the traces of blood from the corners of his mouth and loudly asked.

“What? Hmph.” Shentu Lang sneered, then said to the guards next to him, “Remember. He is surnamed Jiang, so his dynasty should be called the Jiang Dynasty. By giving birth to garbage like this, it seems like there is no need for his dynasty to continue its existence.”

“When you return to the dynasty, remember to report this to Father. Send people to eradicate that Jiang Dynasty. Leaving a dynasty like that in this world will do naught but lower the status of royalty. They are not worthy to possess Inherited Bloodlines.”

“You!!” Hearing those words, Jiang Wushang gnashed his teeth in rage and as he spoke he was going to attack Shentu Lang again.

But before letting him make his move, he was stopped by Su Rou on the side. Her brows knitted lightly, hiddenly warning him not to be rash, to wait for the return of Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. They would then naturally be able to take care of Shentu Lang.

Jiang Wushang did not belong to the category of fools, so he clearly knew he could not defeat Shentu Lang after his previous exchange against him. If he continued being foolhardy, though it would not count for much whether he got injured or not, if he were to drag Su Rou and Su Mei down with him, he would let Chu Feng down too much.

Thus, he who was usually reckless also forcibly pushed down the flames in his heart, and didn’t say anything more.

“Milord, milord, stop, stop! It’s my fault, it’s my fault!” Just at that moment, an old man beautifully dressed ran over with an apologetic smile on his face.

That old man’s cultivation was not weak, being in the third level of the Heaven realm. Following behind him was a group of cultivators, their

cultivation also not weak. However, looking at their attire, they were likely staff of the tavern so clearly, the old man was the boss of the luxurious tavern.

"Who are you?" Shentu Lang looked at the boss disdainfully.

"Milord, I'm the owner of this tavern." The boss said with a smile.

"Hell, you're the owner of this tavern? You dare to even appear in front of my prince?!" After knowing who the boss was, one of the Shentu Dynasty guards in the fourth level of the Heaven realm gripped the old man's clothes and angrily howled.

"Ah, manners, manners! Pay attention to manners. We are ones with status!" Shentu Lang smiled strangely and said.

"Hmph." Only after seeing Shentu Lang personally speak did the guard release that boss.

"Thank you milord, thank you milord." Being released, the boss hurriedly kowtowed as gratitude to Shentu Lang because their strength did indeed cause him endless horror.

However, what he didn't know was that things were not as simple as they seemed. He saw Shentu Lang wear a smile on his face, yet speak chillingly, "I grace you with my presence, but you didn't even prepare a decent room for me? Do you know what sentence you deserve for committing such an offense?"

"Th-this... I do not." Hearing those words, the boss's expression unsettled, and he subconsciously retreated a few steps.

"The death sentence." Shentu Fang's face abruptly turned cold. His hand struck out, fiercely slamming the boss's face.

Powerful Heaven power went through his body, and with a bang, the tavern's boss became a mist of blood, dissipating in the air.

"Ah! Murder! Murder! The ones from the Shentu Dynasty are murdering in the Eastern Sea Region!"

Seeing that, the people who went along with the boss broke out in cold

sweat from terror. As they screamed loudly, they scattered.

"Where are you going? All of you, stay behind and accompany your boss to the grave." However, Shentu Lang coldly snorted, then waved his hand, emitting boundless Heaven power, forcefully crushing the dozens of experts in the Profound realm into pools of blood.

Chapter 554: Taking On Strange Armaments Barehanded

“Go, kill everyone here. Leave none alive.” Shentu Lang spoke to the guards behind him after killing the powerful group.

“Yes sir!” Hearing Shentu Lang’s words, a few guards unhesitantly rose into the air. Those who were seen by their naked eyes received their cruel slaughter.

In an instant, the luxurious tavern became a war zone. Flames rose into the sky, rumbling unceased. Coincident with those noises were dismal implorations and screams.

“You are so freely killing innocents! Are you even human?” Seeing the events unfolding in front of her, Su Mei could not continue enduring. She pointed at Shentu Lang and furiously rebuked.

“Human? Of course I’m not human. To be more precise, I’m God.”

“The people here occupy too much space. That’s why I can’t even book a slightly more luxurious room after coming to this place. They’ve delayed my journey, disrupted my plans, and no matter if it was intention or not, death is the best punishment for them.” Shentu Lang said complacently.

“You! You are simply an animal!” Su Mei loudly cursed.

“Animal? Okay, okay, okay. You dare to say I’m an animal? I’ll let you know what a true animal is!”

“Men! Strip these two women. I’ll give your eyes a treat and act out a scene in a ‘Chun Gong Tu’[1].” As Shentu Lang sinisterly cackled, he lustfully swept over Su Rou’s and Su Mei’s proud beautiful bodies.

[tl: [1] = Equivalent to the Japanese “Shunga” (slightly NSFW)]

“Yes sir.” Hearing his words, the two guards currently standing behind Shentu Lang flew up together, dashing towards Su Rou and Su Mei in the air. The cultivation of those two guards was not weak, as both were in the

fourth level of the Heaven realm.

"You are truly looking to die!" Looking at them, Jiang Wushang's eyes could spit fire from anger. Revolving the Heaven power within his body as well as his Bloodline power, he wanted to give those two guards a good lesson.

Although he was no match for Shentu Lang, his battle power was more than enough to take care of the two guards.

hmm

However, before Jiang Wushang got a chance to attack, suddenly, seemingly limitless Heaven power fell down from above. With a boom, a huge pit appeared ten meters away from Jiang Wushang. Shifting his gaze back at the two guards, they were already crushed to death forcefully, becoming two meat patties.

Simultaneously, a voice filled with bloodlust descended from the heavens. Soon afterwards, two figures landed in front of Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei. Those two people were none other than Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi. The one who attacked just now was, of course, also Chu Feng.

"God damn, you dare to attack my people? You are truly looking to die! Men, send them all to death!" Seeing two of his own guards killed, Shentu Lang became enraged as well, and howled at the sky.

Hearing those words, the guards who were massacring became furious as well. All of them flew back, and without another word, started to attack Chu Feng.

"You wish to kill me? None of you are qualified."

However, Chu Feng did not fear in the slightest as he faced the powerful ones flying towards him from all sides, of which the weakest were only in the second level of the Heaven realm, while several were even in the fourth level of the Heaven realm.

hmm

His hand waved, then immense Heaven power stormed into the sky, and like fierce, wild beasts, consumed them in one go.

“Ahh~~~~~~”

“Prince, save me~~~~~~”

At that instant, one could hear continuous cries of misery and unbroken screams. The guards of the Shentu Dynasty were experiencing great agony.

They were because Chu Feng didn’t immediately kill them. He was tormenting them, using Heaven power to, bit-by-bit and inch-by-inch, rip their skin, bones, and even nerves. The pain made them wish they were dead as they were in pain.

“You! You are truly looking to die!”

Seeing his own guards being abused and mocked right in front of himself, Shentu Lang’s killing intent overflowed out of him. A furious howl rang out, then a dazzling “royal” appeared on his forehead with a flash.

At that instant, his aura of the fifth level of the Heaven realm increased by several times. His battle power did indeed not allow for any underestimating, and he was many times stronger than those guards.

“Hmph.” However, to Chu Feng currently, no need to even mention the fifth level of the Heaven realm, even the sixth level, or even the seventh, was not enough to strike fear into him.

Lightning surged within Chu Feng’s eyes and his aura rose rapidly. In a blink, he rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm.

After his cultivation raised, with a thought, several bangs resounded like explosions. The Shentu Dynasty guards in midair all became pools of blood, and like rain, sprayed down and fell upon Shentu Lang’s body.

“This...” At that instant, not only Shentu Lang, even Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei were stunned.

They already knew Chu Feng was very strong, but they never would have thought he reached such a level of power. Chu Feng's strengthened cultivation entered the sixth level of the Heaven realm already.

Especially when they thought about Chu Feng's horrifying battle power and also thought about Chu Feng's cultivation at present, they were totally able to imagine how strong Chu Feng's real power reached. Even those in the eighth level of the Heaven realm might not defeat Chu Feng.

"You, you, you, you... I will cut your corpse into ten thousand pieces!"

When he faced Chu Feng currently, Shentu Lang, who overflowed with self-confidence and was already consumed by anger, simply did not feel the perilous aura. Disregarding everything he started his attacks on Chu Feng.

"Ahh!"

A furious roar could be heard before radiance flashed in his two hands. There was then two Strange Armaments, a blade and a sword, that appeared in the air.

"Go." Quickly after, he pointed at Chu Feng. The two Strange Armaments streaked through the air, and with the might of Strange Armaments, pressed towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and even Zhang Tianyi felt the strong pressure, and had to admit that Shentu Lang was indeed very strong.

Not only was his cultivation quite good, his battle power was extremely powerful as well, seen from his ability to channel power into two Mastered Strange Armaments.

If they were fighting one-on-one, likely even Zhang Tianyi could not defeat him.

But regretfully, the one confronting Shentu Lang was not Zhang Tianyi, but Chu Feng.

"Good timing."

whoosh Facing the two Strange Armaments descending from the sky, Chu Feng did not retreat, and instead rose into the air.

Coming into the air, Chu Feng spread both of his arms, formed a claw shape with his hands, and actually clawed towards the Mastered Strange Armaments which contained very strong power.

“Chu Feng!” Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei both deeply broke out in cold sweat for Chu Feng. After all, they were able to feel the might bottled within the two Strange Armaments.

At that instant, only Zhang Tianyi was comparatively serene. He who had truly fought against Chu Feng knew deeply how powerful he actually was.

“You dare to receive Strange Armaments barehanded? You are truly looking to die!” Seeing Chu Feng’s actions, Shentu Lang coldly snorted, and formed a hint of a derisive smile. At the same time, he put all his strength into the two Mastered Strange Armaments, wanting to kill Chu Feng in a single direct blow.

bzzzz

Just at that moment, Chu Feng’s palms already neared the blade and sword, the two Strange Armaments. Both weapons and palms seemed to wish to go through one another as blinding sparks arose and layers of ripples never-endingly exploded in the air.

But Chu Feng was unstoppable. Putting strength into his palms, he actually grabbed the two Strange Armaments into his hands, then one could see his arms tremble as two bursts of boundless power were channeled into the Strange Armaments.

At that instant, the two weapons were intensely vibrating, but very quickly, the horrifying might disappeared, and finally, the Strange Armaments were taken down by Chu Feng from the air. Chu Feng truly took on the two horrifying Mastered Strange Armaments barehanded.

Chapter 555: What Are You Planning

"How is this possible? You, you, you actually!" Seeing his two Mastered Strange Armaments truly grasped by Chu Feng, Shentu Lang's eyes were widened even larger than a cow's, his gaze full of astonishment.

"I must say, although in terms in quality, these two Strange Armaments are just a bit inferior to my Asura Ghost Axe, their quality is still quite good out of the Mastered Strange Armaments I've seen."

"Little Rou, Little Mei, how about I gift these two Strange Armaments to you two for protection?" Chu Feng held the two Strange Armaments and cheerfully looked at Su Rou and Su Mei.

"Sure!" Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei nodded in agreement with faces full of smiles.

Although they were two powerful Strange Armaments, one blade and one sword, they had very elegant outward appearances, very suitable for females to use. If Su Rou and Su Mei used them, it would be perfect.

"Bastard thing, you dare to give away my Strange Armaments? You are looking down on me too much are you?!" Seeing Chu Feng actually pass his two treasures to others, Shentu Lang vividly grinded his teeth.

But he wasn't too nervous because they were Mastered Strange Armaments! Treasures that were connected to his heart and mind, allowing him to freely control them!

So, radiance flashed in his palms, formless power pouring into the two Strange Armaments in Chu Feng's hands. He wanted to summon his weapons back to his own hands.

"Hmph." However, Chu Feng coldly snorted at Shentu Lang's actions. His hands quivered faintly as he imbued what seemed to be infinite Heaven power into the Strange Armaments.

Then hearing a bang that came from the Strange Armaments, Shentu Lang's face immediately turned incomparably deathly-white. At the same time, the light in his palms disappeared, then a large mouthful of blood

sprayed out with a poof.

"What is happening?" Zhang Tianyi and the others were flabbergasted as they saw the events unfolding in front of him because evidently, Chu Feng did not make a move on Shentu Lang, so why did he receive heavy injuries?

"You, you, you, you cut off my connection to the Strange Armaments?!" In that moment, Shentu Lang's face was full of shock. His previous haughtiness existed no longer, endlessly fear taking its place.

As the victim, he understood very clearly what happened. The reason why he suffered heavy injuries was for none other reason but because Chu Feng cut off the link between him and the Strange Armaments. To be more precise, the two weapons currently no longer belonged to him.

It wasn't like he hadn't heard of things such as cutting off another person's connection with their Strange Armament, but it applied only for situations when the render had strength far above the owner of the Strange Armament. Although Chu Feng aura was currently in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, he clearly shouldn't be equipped with such an ability.

Yet Chu Feng did it. In addition to Chu Feng's various methods previously, he made him aware of a very frightening problem: he was facing an extremely horrifying opponent.

whoosh

Feeling things going awry, Shentu Lang quickly turned around, wind rising under his feet. He was using a bodily martial skill as he wanted to flee.

"Naive."

However, Chu Feng disdainfully smile at Shentu Lang's actions. Quickly after, his hand turned into a claw shape, and he grabbed the air. Immeasurable Heaven power gushed out, formed a huge Heaven power hand, and clasped Shentu Lang down.

boom After snatching him down from high in the air, Chu Feng

suddenly flicked his entire arm downwards, fiercely throwing Shentu Lang onto the ground.

"Ahh!"

The powerful force immediately formed a huge pit on the surface of the ground. Shentu Lang's body even kept on making cracking noises; clearly, the bones throughout his body was shattered by Chu Feng.

After dropping Shentu Lang down, Chu Feng gradually walked up to him and stepped on his head.

"Bastard. You dare to do this to me? Do you know who I am?! If my father knows about this, he will definitely kill you! He will kill all of you!" Shentu Lang furiously howled. As a lofty prince, a famous genius within his clan, he had never received such ridicule.

"Are you certain your father will know about today?" The corners of Chu Feng's mouth rose to form a strange smile.

gulp Hearing those words, Shentu Lang couldn't help swallowing some spittle. His formerly still arrogant complexion was replaced straightaway by terror. He already understood Chu Feng's thoughts because there was something called "silencing by extermination".

"Just now, you said we delayed your journey, so we should die."

"Then do you know the consequences of daring to attack my friends?" Chu Feng indifferently asked while looking at Shentu Lang beneath his feet.

"My brother, it's a misunderstanding! A misunderstanding! It is really a misunderstanding. I initially had no intentions of touching your friends... Ah! Hey, brother, what are you doing? Just let me go and talk this out with words."

At that instant, Shentu Lang panicked. He was truly afraid that Chu Feng would kill him, but Chu Feng did not give him any opportunities to explain himself. He lifted him up with a single hand, then spread out his Spirit power before flying to the northwest.

Zhang Tianyi and the others felt puzzled at Chu Feng's actions, so they hurriedly rose into the sky and chased after the direction Chu Feng flew towards.

After ascending into the air, only then did they discover that the luxurious tavern became completely void of people. Other than the corpses which littered the ground, and themselves, there was basically no one left alive.

As for the reason, it was actually very simple. It was not the people from the Shentu Dynasty who killed everyone there.

It was just that after encountering the Shentu Dynasty's carnage, of those who survived, which ones dared to stay behind? They had already slipped away like a sliver of smoke.

boom But just at that moment, Chu Feng came above a structure, threw his palm downwards, and demolished it with an explosion. After the structure vanished, a vast area contained yellow-coloured substances suddenly emerged onto the surface of the ground. Coinciding with that was an unbearable stench that came permeating through the air. It was a huge excrement pit.

hmm After blasting the pit into the open, Chu Feng waved his hand and enveloped layers of Spirit Formation onto Shentu Lang's body.

In addition to that, Chu Feng even laid another formation on top of the Spirit Formation. Only after doing that did he chuckle towards Shentu Lang, and said, "Don't worry, I won't kill you."

"Wha-wha-what are you doing?!" Seeing Chu Feng inimical smile, Shentu Lang immediately gulped as he broke out in cold sweat throughout his entire body. Even his clothes were drenched by sweat. He truly broke down from terror.

"You will soon know what I am doing." Chu Feng smiled strangely, then waved his hand and threw Shentu Lang downwards.

Hearing a poof, he shot immediately into the pit of excrement.

"Ahhh~~~~~~ Damn your ancestors! You dare to throw me into this pit?!

I will kill you, I will kill you, I will definitely kill you!!" At that moment, Shentu Lang was incomparably furious and roared without end.

But Chu Feng paid no heed to his curses. Rather, a faint smile was always worn on his face. He started to lay a Spirit Formation, and actually covered the excremental pit, then moved over large pieces of debris to thoroughly bury the pit.

Chapter 556: A Person Beyond A Person

After completing the deeds, Chu Feng flipped his hand, and several Cosmos Sacks appeared. All of those were from the people of the Shentu Dynasty.

Although Chu Feng killed many people, he struck appropriately. Not only did he absorb their Source Energy for Eggy before their deaths, he even looted their Cosmos Sacks as well as the treasures they brought along and had on themselves.

Chu Feng finished all of that in an instant. If it were before, Chu Feng wouldn't be able to do such things, but he, at present, can. That was Chu Feng's current power.

"I didn't expect the Shentu Dynasty to be this wealthy."

After examining the objects in the Cosmos Sacks, Chu Feng nodded his head satisfiedly. It could be said that the Shentu Dynasty was truly quite wealthy. Especially Shentu Lang. He himself brought a frightening amount of fortune. For Heaven beads alone he obtained ten thousand.

One must know if Chu Feng were to convert all of the Ji Dynasty's wealth he plundered into Heaven beads, he could get, at most, a bit over one hundred thousand.

But Shentu Lang, he alone actually brought ten thousand Heaven beads. Either he was an insanely wasteful person, or his Shentu Dynasty was truly abundant in wealth.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, you really do have good ideas. You are drowning him alive with excrement!" At that moment, Jiang Wushang flew over and said with a smirking face as he looked towards the pit of excrement below, already covered by Chu Feng.

"Junior Chu Feng, that brat is too full of himself. He dared to attack Brother Wushang and had malicious thoughts towards Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei! We should punish him well. Killing him immediately is too benevolent." At the same time, Zhang Tianyi vented his anger.

As he faced their gazes, Chu Feng, a light smile on his face, said, “No. I am not drowning him to death. That Spirit Formation will protect him, preventing him from directly contacting the excrement.”

“What? Junior Chu Feng, what are you planning? Why not just use excrement to drown him to death?”

“Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, what are your plans? Could it be you are preparing to starve him to death?” Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang expressed confusion to Chu Feng’s words, and started to guess his intentions.

“No, I’m not starving him to death either.” Chu Feng shook his head with a smile.

“Ahhh! Big Brother Chu Feng, exactly how are you planning to take care of him? Don’t leave us in suspense and quickly tell us!” Jiang Wushang really impatiently wanted to know the answer.

“That Spirit Formation will protect him, separating him from the excrement. But he will not starve to death because on the Spirit Formation that’s protecting him, I laid another formation. That formation absorbs the energy from the outside and forcefully channels it into his body. Incidentally, that energy is sufficient to sustain his life.”

“As for that outside energy, I’m sure all of you know what it is right?” Chu Feng grinned evilly.

Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang looked at each other with their four eyes, their heads completely foggy. But soon, they understood something and asked together, “Is it excrement?”

“That’s right, excrement.”

“He cannot escape because my Spirit Formation bound his power.”

“He will not starve to death because that formation will feed him the energy converted from excrement. No matter if he’s willing or not, the formation will turn the excrement into energy and imbue it into his body.”

“Unless one day he completely absorbs all of the excrement, he will not die.” Chu Feng smiled and said smugly.

“Haha, Big Brother Chu Feng, good thing you thought of forcefully submerging this Shentu Lang into excrement.” Jiang Wushang swayed back and forth from laughter.

“Junior Chu Feng, I must say that this move is even eviler than what I had initially thought. I’m guessing that this Shentu Lang must really want to die right now!” And on Zhang Tianyi’s face, even some admiration appeared.

Su Rou and Su Mei seemed a bit speechless when seeing their reactions. Although they knew Chu Feng was venting their anger for them, in their perspectives, forcefully feeding a person excrement, no matter how one thought of it, was revolting.

That made them, who originally wanted to cram themselves with food, lose their appetite completely. In addition, there was no one else able to prepare them food in the luxurious tavern, so Chu Feng and his group continued their journey.

After a while of travelling, they finally entered the Four Seas Academy’s territory. It was a continent formed by countless archipelagoes. Although it was fragmented, its total surface area was several times larger than the continent of the Nine Provinces.

And such a huge land was all of the Four Seas Academy’s territory.

Most importantly, on the large stretch of land, all of the structures were under the name of the Four Seas Academy. From that, it could be seen how enormous the Four Seas Academy was. A truly large force of power.

But despite the Four Seas Academy’s massive size, there were not many disciples in there. One must know that the peak powers of the Nine Provinces had around ten million people.

But it was said that the Four Seas Academy, a power so distinguished, had no more than several hundred thousand people when all elders and disciples were summed up. And most of those were even elders.

Though there were few people in the Four Seas Academy, the disciples there could be called the dragons within men. Just take the simplest thing: if one desired to enter the Four Seas Academy, it mattered not if you were a male or a female. There were even no restrictions on age. But there was one mandatory requirement: you had to be in the Heaven realm.

The Heaven realm. They were all in the Heaven realm. Several hundred thousand Heaven realm experts. They were real elites.

"My god, they are actually all in the Heaven realm! Cultivators titled peak experts in the continent of the Nine Provinces are everywhere here!" At that moment, as she looked upon the continual emergence of people, Su Mei's face was full of amazement.

It was because no matter if she gazed at an old one, or middle-aged one, or a young one, there was not any who was in the Profound realm. All of them belonged in the Heaven realm, and there was a large number of them. It was difficult for her not to be amazed.

"No need to be awed. This is, after all, the Eastern Sea Region! The Heaven realm isn't much in this place, and only Martial Lords are the truly strong ones. Only Martial Kings are the unparalleled experts. There are too many people who can step into the Heaven realm." Jiang Wushang explained.

"Brother Wushang is correct. A certain area of land brings about a certain type of people. The spiritual energy, Origin power, Profound power, and even Heaven power here are many times denser in comparison to the continent of the Nine Provinces. It can't be helped that the cultivators in this place have cultivation that is not weak."

"Moreover, disregarding the natives of the Eastern Sea Region, those who are able to come to the Eastern Sea Regions from faraway lands do not have weak cultivation. The weak would not dare to come to this place."

"Even more so as the Four Seas Academy have very strict requirements for disciple recruitment. Although they do not limit based on age, or

origin, or gender, for those who wish to join them, the minimum is the Heaven realm. Even those in the Heaven realm need to pass through examinations and tests. So, that's why everyone who shows up here are cultivators in the Heaven realm, yet even that may still not be enough." Chu Feng explained with a smile.

"It seems like the proverbs are quite correct. Right now, I truly understand what 'there is a person beyond a person, and a sky beyond a sky' means."

After hearing Chu Feng's and Jiang Wushang's words, Su Mei seemed to be serene. A hint of happiness even emerged onto her face. By relying on the Pearl of Flames, her cultivation reached the Heaven realm. Because of that, she initially even thought that she was exceptional. After all, in the Azure Province, the Heaven realm was like a legend.

So, in that instant, she knew that the Heaven realm wasn't really anything. That being said however, the reason she rejoiced was exactly because she obtained the power from the Pearl of Flames. If not, she would have been an existence equivalent to trash in the eyes of the Eastern Sea Region's people, and would lack any great achievements in her entire life.

Chapter 557: Aberrant Treatment

The disciples of the Four Seas Academy could benefit from extremely excellent treatments because in the land of the academy, there were specialized training grounds. Large amounts of cultivation resources were grown as well.

There was even land that belonged to every single disciple, and they could build structures they liked in their own land, and do anything they enjoyed to do.

And since the area of the Four Seas Academy was this large, in order for convenient travelling, World Spiritists built countless Teleport Formations on the vast grounds. The Teleport Formations were built by Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

With the Teleport Formations that spanned the mighty-sized terrain, really, no matter where one wished to go, it became a lot simpler because the speed of the Teleport Formations was not something comparable to other basic means of transportation.

hmm

At that instant, in the middle area of the Four Seas Academy, there was a huge city. The city could contain several hundred thousand people, and was primarily used to welcome those who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy.

Inside the enormous city, there were countless Teleport Formations brimming with purple light. As the radiance flashed, several people walked out from behind, and a few of them were Chu Feng and the others.

“This Four Seas Academy is indeed not simple. They’ve actually set up so many Teleport Formations! The speed of movement when using these Teleport Formations is quite extraordinary. It can even be said to be scary.”

After such a long distance of displacement completed in only a short

moment, even Chu Feng felt disbelief. Although, as a World Spiritist, he had once used the power of Teleport Formations, he had never tried such a far teleportation. As such, he deeply understood as well how difficult it was to complete Teleport Formations for such great distances.

"There is nothing to be amazed at, as this isn't a genuinely single long-distance Teleport Formation. These are many overlaying, smaller Transport Formations that create the illusion of them being a single long-distance teleportation."

"Although Teleport Formations such as these can also show the effect of speedy transportation, it is an enormous construction project. To build so many Teleport Formations in such a large span of land, they must have used an enormous number of Purple-cloak World Spiritists, as well as no less than several hundred years."

"It can be said that the Teleport Formations you see today are the lifeblood of the Four Seas Academy's seniors."

"However, if it were laid by a Royal-cloak World Spiritists, that person alone could finish such a project with merely a few years of time."

"And if it were laid by an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, it would be complete with only a few days of time, and the Teleport Formation they create would be far superior to the one you see now." Eggy, who was always in the Spiritual World, explained.

"Royal-cloak World Spiritist? Immortal-cloak World Spiritist? Those are the World Spiritists above the Gold-cloak rank?" Chu Feng asked with joy, because he knew that absolutely, the Gold-cloak rank was not the end point of World Spiritists.

But Eggy had always been unwilling to tell him what realms were above the Gold-cloak one, saying it would be useless telling him too much with his inadequate cultivation. But now, it seemed like Eggy planned to tell Chu Feng.

"Above Gold-cloak World Spiritists are Royal-cloak World Spiritists, and above the Royal-cloak are Immortal-cloak World Spiritists." Eggy said.

“Then what about above Immortal-cloak World Spiritists? Are there stronger realms above the Immortal-cloak?” Chu Feng closely asked.

“Above Immortal-cloak? There are, of course there are. But I’m afraid even in the so-called Holy Land of Martialism there are none. So, it’s better if you don’t ask more because those things are too distant from you.”

“Take a Royal-cloak World Spiritist for example. Unless they have exceptional talent, otherwise, without the cultivation of Martial Kings, they should not even think of becoming a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Even if they have the cultivation of Martial Kings, without certain comprehension strength, they cannot become a Royal-cloak World Spiritist because the Royal-rank Spirit Formation power is not something that’s on the same level as Purple-coloured Spirit Formation power. The distance between the two of them is like the heaven and the earth.”

“Even Martial Emperors may not be able to become Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. So now, you should know how difficult it is to become someone who surpasses Immortal-cloak World Spiritists right?” Eggy giggled and said.

Hearing everything to that point, Chu Feng also couldn’t help sucking in a breath of cool air, as he finally knew about the profoundness of the World Spiritist road. When Martial Emperors were already that strong, how terrifying would those above Martial Emperors be? Chu Feng truly did not dare to imagine.

“Excuse me, are you planning to enter the Four Seas Academy?” Shortly after walking out of the Teleport Formation, a man flew over with a face full of smiles.

That man was over the middle-ages, probably already over forty years old. On his face that seemed to have experienced the undulations of life, there seemed to be an outer appearance of maturity engraved within. His cultivation was not weak as well, being in the fifth level of the heaven realm, and speaking in terms of cultivation, he could be said to be stronger than Chu Feng and the others.

More importantly, the blue-coloured clothes he wore, the two huge black words “Four Seas”, and the badge worn on his waist revealed his identity. He was a person from the Four Seas Academy.

“Senior, we are indeed preparing to enter the Four Seas Academy. I’ve heard this place can allow us to rest, so we came here.” Jiang Wushang kindly replied. He did not dare to be rude to disciples of the Four Seas Academy.

Especially as, on the road there, they saw the haughtiness and unreasonableness of the people from the Four Seas Academy, even if it was Jiang Wushang he didn’t dare to be disrespectful towards those from the Four Seas Academy.

“There is a place, of course there is! Juniors, follow me. I’ll arrange resting grounds of the highest quality.” But the thing that surprised Chu Feng and the others was the complete lack of arrogant attitude from the person in front of them. Rather, he seemed very kind. That really made Chu Feng and the others nonplussed.

Initially, they thought the man in front of them was very different from the masses, as he had a very considerate nature. Only after several people accidentally blocked their path, sparking a string of curses from the man, did Chu Feng and the others discover that they were very wrong.

The man was only amiable and warm to them. When he treated others, not only was he plentiful imperious, he was even incomparably ferocious. He scared many people to the point where they first bobbed their heads and bent their waists in apology, then scattered and fled.

Facing that scene, Chu Feng and the others looked at one another and were numb. Only later on did they learn why the man treated them so friendlily. It seemed like Chu Feng and the others were exceptions.

Even though there were several tens of thousands of people who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy today, in reality, they were not young. The number of people who were truly young and stepped into the Heaven realm were few within few.

So, the ones who were young and strong like Chu Feng’s group could

pretty much easily pass the exam, and could even possibly have quite a nice future in the Four Seas Academy.

Thus, even disciples of the Four Seas Academy would not be willing to offend Chu Feng and the others. They would even use the excuse of welcoming them to befriend them.

He, the one who greeted them, hoped that if Chu Feng and the others had achievements in the future, perhaps they could pull him up as well. After all, he was already so old. Even though he was quite impressive in the eyes of outsiders, in reality, within the Four Seas Academy, he was bullied quite a bit.

Just like that, the middle-aged disciple prepared a rather fine residence for Chu Feng and the others. Moreover, he prepared a servant for them. However, that servant did not belong to the Four Seas Academy and was his own, as only the elders and disciples could afford to support a servant in the Four Seas Academy.

Chapter 558: Ten Divine Instructors

"Senior Yuhe, you are truly too polite. We don't really need a servant." Jiang Wushang said embarrassedly. On the road, after some chatting, they learnt that the middle-aged man was called Yuhe.

"Ahh, you have tired greatly from this journey. It simply won't do for you to refuse this service. Besides, 'the ones who come are guests'. Since you've come to my Four Seas Academy, how can something like pouring your own cup of tea be allowed?"

"There are still several days to the start of the examination, and besides, the examination is a very lengthy process. In this period of time before the examination, I would feel more relieved if there were a person taking care of you. If you require assistance in any areas, you can directly tell the servant, and get them to notify me. I will definitely arrive as soon as I can."

"Okay, it's getting late now. You guys rest early. I will inform you later about the specific times of the examination." Yuhe smiled with a face of indifference, then drifted away.

Chu Feng and the others looked at each other, then smiled in relief towards Yuhe's actions, and gladly accepted all his arrangements. They knew that the reason why they could gain Yuhe's respect was because they were armed with that strength.

At that moment, Jiang Wushang's, Zhang Tianyi's, Su Rou's, and Su Mei's confidence rose by many times, and felt more and more that being in the Four Seas Academy was like fish being in water.

Several days later, they finally reached the moment of the examination. Although Chu Feng was not planning to join the Four Seas Academy, he still went along with them. It was for no other reason but his own worry.

And when Chu Feng and the others reached the place of the examination, they once again truly witnessed what "grand" was.

The so-called examination grounds was simply an enormous sealed

castle. Its area was comparable to even a small-scale mountain range.

As for the people who came to participate in the examination, although the ages were uneven, they were truly all in the Heaven realm, and when several tens of thousands of Heaven realm experts appeared at the same time, that scene could really only described as “magnificent”.

“Chu Feng, are you really not going to enter the Four Seas Academy with us? Can I really not go together with you?” Outside of the examination grounds, Su Mei was gazing intently at Chu Feng with her clear and beautiful eyes.

She actually didn’t want to enter the Four Seas Academy, and also wanted very much to continue following Chu Feng. However, he advised them to stay in the Four Seas Academy, for a very simple reason. He did not want them to face danger.

“Little Mei, listen to Chu Feng. There are some things that are better left up to him to do. You will only distract him by staying close to him.”

But before letting Chu Feng speak, Su Rou intimately stood out, but at the same time she spoke those words she also looked at Chu Feng. Within her pretty eyes, there was similarly some reluctance.

“Go ahead, I will come back often to see you.” Chu Feng waved his hand at the two of them with a smile.

Seeing that, Su Rou and Su Mei no longer clung onto him, and turned around, heading towards the examination’s entrance. Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang followed in as well.

“Eh? Junior Chu Feng, why are you still here? This examination will start immediately! If you don’t enter now, you won’t make it.” Suddenly, a voice rang out behind him, and turning his head around to see, it was Yuhe.

“Senior Yuhe, I am only accompanying them. I’m not planning to enter the Four Seas Academy.” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“That’s not true is it? You’re not planning to enter the Four Seas Academy?” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Yuhe had shock across his

face, but seeing Chu Feng's firm appearance, he had no choice but to believe them. Quickly afterwards, he said with a strong shake of his head, "A pity, a pity, what a true pity."

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

But just at that moment, several blurs of light appeared abruptly from the distant sky. Very soon, those lights dashed up to the sky above the examination grounds, and halted in mid-air.

At that instant, Chu Feng's eyes couldn't help brightening because in the air he discovered there stood nine people. Of the nine people, two were females, seven were males, and all were white-haired and aged.

However, their cultivations were overwhelming. Their powerful auras far surpassed the Azure Dragon Founder's, so Chu Feng determined they were nine Martial Lords, and their realms were definitely not low either.

"Look! It's the Ten Divine Instructors!"

After those nine people appeared, from the disciples of the Four Seas Academy, bursts of cheers rang out, and even many elders revealed admirative expressions.

As for the nine in the sky, they seemed to enjoy the crowd's reaction quite a bit, as though they were waiting for such exclamations when they stopped in the air.

It seemed to prove true when very quickly they shot across the sky and dashed into the examination area. Only a good while after they entered did the churning crowd quiet down.

"Senior Yuhe, what's the history behind these nine people?" Chu Feng curiously asked Yuhe.

"Junior Chu Feng, could it be that you haven't even heard of the Ten Divine Instructors?" Yuhe very astonishedly gazed at Chu Feng, as if looking at a peculiar animal.

"Honestly speaking, I truly haven't heard of them." Chu Feng shook his head, slightly embarrassed. Although he knew the Four Seas Academy

was very strong, it was absolutely not stronger than the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, ever since Zi Ling was taken away, Chu Feng abandoned the thought of entering the Four Seas Academy because it simply could not oppose the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Thus, naturally, he hadn't scouted out many things about the Four Seas Academy. After arriving at that place, he kept on cultivating behind closed-doors, studying the Pulse Searching Method. Up until now, his comprehension of the Four Seas Academy stagnated within his previous knowledge that expanded only from Jiang Wushang and the others' conversations.

"Whatever. I'll tell you about this."

"Within the Four Seas Academy, elders are responsible for handling the internal and external matters. The ones responsible for passing abilities down to disciples are instructors."

"Instructors are separated into three levels. One of them are Mortal Instructors, and the other are Earthen Instructors. They are assigned to disciples based on the disciples' examination results."

"But other than the two types of instructors, there are also Divine Instructors. The strength of Divine Instructors are extremely powerful, and can be said to be a portion of the Four Seas Academy's strongest battle force. Their position in the academy is extremely high."

"However, there is no disciple who can choose them. In order words, only they choose the disciples, and no disciples choose them."

"Most importantly, there are only ten Divine Instructors in the entire Four Seas Academy, and each one of them take only one disciple."

"Only after their disciple leaves the Four Seas Academy do they choose a new one, and this year coincidentally is the time when all of their disciples leave, so it is also the time to choose new disciples." Yuhe very detailedly narrated.

"No wonder the people from the Four Seas Academy cheered in such a way. So they were great characters within the academy."

“But Senior Yuhe, you said there are ten instructors, but there were only nine just now!” Chu Feng counted and discovered that the numbers didn’t match, so he couldn’t help expressing his doubts.

“There’s another that hasn’t come. Oh that person... He has a very strange nature, and there are very few disciples who catch his attention. It can even be said ever since becoming a Divine Instructor, he had never accepted a disciple. So, don’t have expectations that he will come this year.” Yuhe said.

“He’s that unconventional? Does the Four Seas Academy not care about his actions?” Chu Feng felt bewildered. Becoming an instructor, yet not instructing any disciples. It was like occupying the toilet but not taking a crap! Yet the Four Seas Academy allowed such behavior?

“Hoh.” To Chu Feng’s question, Yuhe chuckled, then went near his ear and said in a low voice, “When a person reaches a certain level in strength, he can create exceptions.”

Chapter 559: Congratulatory Gifts

The examination of the Four Seas Academy was very complicated. Especially as several tens of thousands of people entered at the same time, going through them in turn required several full days before it could be completed.

And in this period of time, Chu Feng continued studying his Pulse Searching Method in his resting area, while awaiting their examination results.

“Chu Feng! Chu Feng!” Several days later, the resting area which had remained in silence for many days was disrupted by a voice brimming with joy. At that instant, Chu Feng knew that the lengthy examination finally ended.

When Chu Feng opened his eyes, he saw his room’s door pushed open and a beautiful body dashing in, immediately arriving in front of himself, leaping into his embrace.

Looking at the little beauty before him, Chu Feng chuckled, because that person was none other than Su Mei, “Seeing that you’re so happy, you’ve passed?”

“She has not only passed! Big Brother Tianyi and I really admire Lady Su Rou and Su Mei to death!” But before letting Su Mei respond, Jiang Wushang voice rang out at the door.

Turning towards the voice, he saw Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and Su Rou walking in. There were faint smiles worn on their faces. Especially for Su Rou, the alluring and mature great beauty. Her smile could truly dazzle a person to death.

“Brother Wushang, why so?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“It turned out that in this examination, the Ten Divine Instructors came over to observe. Big Brother Chu Feng, you must not know about the Ten Divine Instructors right? These Ten Divine Instructors are truly outstanding! I’ll explain it to you like this. In the Four Seas Academy,

there are no ‘masters’, only ‘instructors’. Instructors are the ones who teach us abilities.”

“There are also different levels of instructors, and the Ten Divine Instructors are the ten strongest Divine Instructors in the entire Four Seas Academy. Their position is supreme, and they are extremely exceptional. It is everyone’s wish to become their disciple.”

“As long as one becomes their disciple, not only will they obtain development of the highest quality, they will acquire an extremely high position as well. Even many elders and instructors will respect them.”

“Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei have caught the eyes of two Divine Instructors. Moreover, it was determined on scene that they need not participate in any more exams or competitions. Also meaning that in the next four years, they are disciples who will be specially developed by the Divine Instructors.”

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you don’t need to worry about anything. These two Divine Instructors are female, so they were definitely not enticed by Lady Su Rou’s and Lady Su Mei’s beauty but saw their potential!”

Jiang Wushang narrated with an extremely admirative tone, but from his face overflowing with smiles, one could see that he also felt happy, from the bottom of his heart, for Su Rou and Su Mei.

“Brother Wushang, stop acting like a victim here! Aren’t both you and Senior Zhang also very impressive? You’ve also gained the approval of Divine Instructors!”

“As long as you can gain victory in the showdown tomorrow, you can become disciples of those Divine Instructors.” Su Rou said on the side.

“Showdown? What’s this?” Hearing the word “showdown”, interest immediately came for Chu Feng as he hurriedly asked.

“Chu Feng, it’s like this: Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang caught the eyes of two Divine Instructors.”

“However, that applied also for many other powerful disciples. Yet, every Divine Instructor can instruct only a single disciple, so if Brother

Wushang and Senior Zhang want to follow them, they must defeat the other disciples and reign victorious at the end." Su Rou walked up to the Chu Feng and warmly explained.

"Those two Divine Instructors are too half-hearted to select multiple disciples at the same time." Chu Feng teasingly said.

"Ahh, so that's why I said Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei are impressive! They have no need to participate in any showdowns and were directly secured as disciples by their instructors. It can even be said it's the first time this happened in history!" Jiang Wushang said, curling his lips.

"This is actually not really much because other than the two instructors who chose Lady Su Rou and Lady Su Mei, all of the other instructors chose multiple disciples as well, and many wanted to have a process of elimination." Zhang Tianyi said smilingly.

"Mm. But Big Brother Chu Feng, you don't need to worry about anything."

"Big Brother Tianyi and I have already meticulously examined our competition. Honestly speaking, yes, there is pressure, but there's not much."

"Ah yes, that's right. The interesting thing is, within the people who are competing against me and Big Brother Tianyi, there is also a pair of brothers surnamed is Shentu and they've come from the Shentu Dynasty as well. I'm sure they must be related to that Shentu Lang in some way." Jiang Wushang said with an evil smile, seeming to want to take revenge for Shentu Lang's bullying back then.

"Hoh. If they are related, then great; if not, no matter. All in all, this is a rare chance. Regardless of who your opponent is, do not have mercy. The more you let the instructors see your abilities, the more advantageous it will be to your future developments. So, do not hold anything back." Chu Feng gravely reminded.

"Don't worry, Big Brother Tianyi and I are people who do not like to leave face for our opponents, right? Big Brother Tianyi!" Jiang Wushang smugly looked at Zhang Tianyi.

Facing Jiang Wushang's question, Zhang Tianyi smiled, then said, "Of course."

"Hahahahahaha!!"

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others happily roared with laughter. They were all very joyful. After all, if Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei, could truly become disciples of Divine Instructors, then it would be accurate to describe their position in the Four Seas Academy as "stepping to the Heavens in a single step".

In terms of strength, they will rise abruptly; in terms of status, they will also receive many people's respect.

"Ahaha, congratulations, congratulations!!" But just at that moment, from outside the door suddenly came incomparably excited laughs.

After those laughters sounded, Chu Feng and the others all looked at each other, their smiles on their faces couldn't help becoming even wider. Because, without even seeing the person, they knew who it was. It was definitely Yuhe.

"Juniors, really, congratulations! You've actually all become disciples of Divine Instructors! In the future, please treat me well!" Indeed, Yuhe soon walked in from outside, and there were even some gifts in his hands.

But behind him, there was even another Four Seas Academy disciple who followed. He had also a face full of smiles, and was similarly holding priceless gifts.

"Senior Yuhe, what are you doing?" Seeing that, Jiang Wushang asked a bit puzzledly.

"Ah, Junior Jiang. Please accept this. It is but a small part of my heart, think nothing of it." Yuhe forcibly pushed the presents in his hands to Jiang Wushang.

"Yeah! Juniors, these are just small parts of our hearts. You must accept them! In the future, we will still need to rely on your care..." Quickly after, the disciple behind Yuhe also, full of smiles, brought gratulatory gifts and went forward.

Chapter 560: Auction

"This..." At that instant, Jiang Wushang was in a bit of a difficult situation. He didn't know whether to accept the gifts or not, so he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi.

"Brother Wushang, just accept them. After all, Senior Yuhe has looked after us quite well, so it is only reasonable to take care of each other in the future."

Chu Feng smiled. He had always recognized favours and paid them back. Although Yuhe had dishonest intentions when contacting them originally, he had helped them, after all. Thus, it was only right to look after him as well.

As for the other person, since Yuhe brought him over willingly, they undoubtedly had a very good relationship. So, there was no problem in him using his propinquity with Yuhe and also obtaining a tiny bit of the benefits by being with Chu Feng and the others.

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Jiang Wushang did not hesitate anymore and accepted the presents successively.

"Ahh, thank you Junior Chu Feng, thank you Junior Wushang, thank you, thank you!" The thing that made Chu Feng and the others speechless was that after Jiang Wushang accepted the presents, Yuhe and his friend actually bowed and thanked without end. Their level of shameless bootlicking skills was indeed exceptional.

"Su Rou, Su Mei!"

"Jiang Wushang, Junior Zhang Tianyi! Do you live here?"

But immediately after accepting their presents, a voice that was rather loud, yet very soft, rang out from outside.

It seemed like more people learnt of them becoming disciples of Divine Instructors and came to gift presents, hoping to befriend them.

But Jiang Wushang and the others did not accept the presents from those people. The reason was very simple too: after eating one's food,

your mouth goes “numb”, therefore you do not curse them; after taking their things, your hands becomes “short”, therefore you do not fight them.

It wasn’t that they were approaching unkindly, but there was really no need to become acquainted with people who wished to do naught but to take advantage of them.

If you flourished, perhaps they would be completely obsequious, and be a cow or horse as you so desired, but if one day everything fell apart, not only would they entertain themselves from your own misfortunes, they would even strike when you were down. It’d be wise to distant oneself from those kinds of people.

Like that, after several continuous waves of people came, even Jiang Wushang and the others could not bear it any longer because those people would not stop the pestering. It was not easy to handle them.

But just as Chu Feng and the others were irked, Yuhe and the others were quite complacent.

It was not schadenfreude of course. The reason they felt happy was because Chu Feng and the others accepted their gifts.

After all, their position in the Four Seas Academy was not high, and those who came bearing presents were in better positions than they were.

But people like them were all denied entry by Chu Feng and the others, while they received treatment for distinguished guests.

Even if they didn’t want to be smug they couldn’t. It was the first time in the Four Seas Academy that they felt superiority.

“Juniors, right now, your names resonate too strongly. There will be many more people coming to befriend you.”

“It will never end if this continues, and I’m afraid you will even find it difficult to sleep peacefully tonight. How about I bring you to another residence?” But while being pleased, Yuhe did not forget to dissolve their concerns, so he suggested on his own initiative.

“Oh? Senior Yuhe, you can find a rather tranquil place for us to rest?

We wouldn't be disturbed by anyone anymore?" Jiang Wushang expressed uncertainty. If those people could find out that they lived here, how could it be they couldn't do so after they switched places?

"That's very simple. There are records of you living in this place, so of course it's easy to find you guys, but if you come to the residence in my land, naturally, they will not be able to locate any of you." Yuhe said.

"Will this not be too inconvenient?" Chu Feng asked. More importantly, he was worried Yuhe would offend many people by doing that, and was afraid he would attract unnecessary troubles.

"Don't worry. Although my land isn't too big, it is not small either. There are mountains, creeks, lakes... Not to mention empty houses, the environment over there is much better too. Put away your worries and follow me." Yuhe patted his chest, guaranteeing.

Seeing that, Chu Feng and the others hesitated no longer. After a simple pack up, they followed Yuhe and left.

But before walking to the Teleport Formation, they discovered there were people endlessly flying past in the sky, heading towards the center area of the vast city.

In addition, on their faces, there were bits of excitement and longing, as if there were a good occasion.

"Senior Yuhe, what are those people going over there for?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"Ah, every year, at this time, in the center of the city, there will be some auctions. As long as you have treasures, you can sell them off for quite good prices."

"Of course. Because these auctions are set up by my Four Seas Academy, there will be some processing fee taken."

"Junior Chu Feng, is there anything you want auctioned off? If there is, you can do so with your two juniors' status. Given their current positions, there will be no need to take any processing fee." Yuhe explained.

“As the people here come from many places, every year, there will be some strange treasures taken out for auction. There are even people who come here, not to join the Four Seas Academy, but for auctioning treasures off their hands.”

“If you are interested, there is no harm in going over and having a look because this auction that happens only once a year can be counted as a rare festival. Even many disciples and elders of the Four Seas Academy will come for the liveliness.” At the same time, the disciple, who came along with Yuhe, spoke. It seemed like he had quite some interest in the auction as well.

“Really?”

“Chu Feng, since this auction is so interesting, let’s go take a look. It’s still early after all, so why not go join the liveliness?” Hearing those words, Su Mei got interested, and started to shake Chu Feng’s arm as she tugged it.

“That’s fine. Incidentally I have some things I want to sell off, so I’ll have to trouble you, Senior Yuhe.” Chu Feng said with faint smile. Back then, other than cultivation resources, he obtained quite a few valuable treasures from the Ji Dynasty. It was wealth that the Ji Dynasty accumulated over several thousands of years.

At first, he wanted to use those treasures for trading the cultivation resources that the Azure Dragon Founder and the Jiang Dynasty’s old ancestor looted from the other two dynasties, but they just gave Chu Feng cultivation resources and did not take his treasures. Those treasures were currently all on Chu Feng.

Moreover, since there was no use in keeping them, it would be better for Chu Feng to sell those things, converting them into cultivation resources. Then, leave a portion for personal emergency uses, and also leave a portion for Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang, for unexpected situations.

After deciding, Chu Feng and the others went to the auction grounds. It was a huge square, and within the square, people formed mountains and

oceans. Within the square there existed over a hundred auctions stages, selling off various treasures.

It could be said that a large group of people surrounded every single auction stage, endlessly bidding and overriding bids. It was a very explosive scene.

Only in the heart of the square, the largest, most luxurious auction stage, was completely empty. Although there was nothing being auctioned on the stage, the outside was already filled with people, and their faces looked very forward to what was coming.

Chapter 561: Selling

"That's the most exciting auction out of all these auctions, and it only starts after the sky darkens. The ones able to appear in this auction are not priceless treasures, but peculiar oddities. Every year some rare good objects appear, so it is also the auction people look forward to the most." Yuhe explained for Chu Feng and the others.

"Senior Yuhe, if you can, sell off all the things I have here. Optimally, change them all to Heaven beads." Chu Feng handed a Cosmos Sack to Yuhe, inside containing all the treasures he plundered from the Ji Dynasty.

Since the Four Seas Academy was equipped with specialized appraisal elders for the auctions, in addition to Su Rou and Su Mei already disciples of Divine Instructors, Chu Feng was not afraid that Yuhe would swindle him, because he likely did not have the guts to do so.

"Junior Chu Feng, you...this..." After Yuhe accepted Chu Feng's Cosmos Sack and examined within, his originally composed face immediately surged with astonishment.

It was because the treasures inside filled the eyes with dazzle. There were even several Strange Armaments, and even three Mastered Strange Armaments! Even if he didn't want to be shocked he couldn't.

"Senior Yuhe, is there a problem?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"There's no problem, there's no problem. I will certainly give you good prices for these. Wait for me, I'll auction these off for you right now." Yuhe hurriedly replied, immediately flying towards an auction stage.

Initially, their talent made him feel that they were not simple people, yet Chu Feng just casually took out so many treasures for him to auction. So, from that point on, he decided to better the relationship between him and them. He would even be willing to sacrifice his own interests for an improvement in closeness.

"Oh? Yuhe you poor brat, what are you here for? Could it be you also

have treasures for auctioning?"

One of the elders responsible for appraising in the auctions revealed a disdainful and derisive attitude.

It was because he recognized Yuhe, and also knew he was an ordinary and useless disciple. If one were to look into that elder's heart, they would discover contempt.

"It is not me who has things to auction. I am auctioning in place for those juniors over there." In usual circumstances, Yuhe would definitely pettily greet that elder, but at present, he did not. Rather, he very calmly pointed at Chu Feng and the others in the sky.

"Oh?" The appraisal elder felt rather surprised at Yuhe's abnormal behavior, and followed along Yuhe's fingers, looking over.

"This..."

But after seeing Chu Feng, his eye couldn't help lighting up because Chu Feng, with his age, in addition to his cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm, could absolutely be considered to be a genius even in the Four Seas Academy.

"This! Isn't this!!" But when he saw Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei, his expression became stunned.

As he was an elder, he had the authority to gaze upon the information of the disciples who participated in the exam. In order to avoid offending outstanding disciples, he had especially looked at the information of the disciples who had excellent results in the examination.

So naturally, he recognized Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei. The sisters had already been confirmed to be disciples of Divine Instructors, and though Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang hadn't been confirmed yet, their strengths gave them strong chances to become disciples of Divine Instructors.

Of the ten Divine Instructors, only nine were willing to instruct disciples, and of those nine disciple slots, currently four appeared right in front of his eyes. Moreover, other than those four, Chu Feng's cultivation

was not simple at all either.

Furthermore, seeing their intimate appearances, without even a thought the elder knew they were in a close group. It was a group of geniuses!

“Yuhe, you’ve actually got acquainted with them?!” At that instant, in the gaze that the appraisal elder looked at Yuhe with was filled with wonder. Not only did it no longer have its former disdain, there was instead an extra hint of respect, coincident with that also shock and confusion.

He could not understand. Geniuses like them should be extremely proud. How could a person like Yuhe get himself related to such geniuses?

“Hmph. But of course. I even have a great relationship with these juniors. Before, innumerable people had came bearing gifts, yet they were all denied outside. They were willing to befriend me only, and were simply treating me as a blood-related elder brother! Otherwise, they wouldn’t have given me such valuable things for auctioning.”

Seeing the completely inverted attitude that the elder gave him when compared to before, Yuhe seemed even smugger. As he spoke, he directly threw the Cosmos Sack Chu Feng gave to him at the appraisal elder.

And after the elder looked through the treasures in the Cosmos Sack, his face couldn’t help changing, and he couldn’t help gasping deeply. Although he had seen many treasures, there were very few people who took out so many in one turn. Normal people could not own so many treasures.

“Elder, you should know my juniors’ identity, so it would be wiser to give them good prices. Also, there is no need for the processing fee right? Ah yes, change everything to Heaven beads as well. Only Heaven beads.” Yuhe instructed.

“Right now, they are counted as people from my Four Seas Academy, so naturally, there is no need for processing fee. Also, his things are in high demand, so don’t worry. It will definitely not be hard to auction them off for good prices, nor is it difficult to exchange them for Heaven beads.”

“But after the auctions, I’ll be counting on you to say a few good words in front of them... Hehe...” The appraisal elder solicitously smiled and said.

Despite being an elder, in front of instructors, his position was not high. Especially to elders like him who were responsible for very trivial matters. To him, disciples of Divine Instructors were great people who held very high positions.

“It’ll be nothing.” Yuhe very calmly smiled, but his heart was filled with excitement.

It was because he knew that from today on, he, Yuhe, was going to flip upside down. He was no longer going to be a person looked down upon. He was going to be a person that many people respected and wished to befriend, and all of that happened was for no other reason but because he was lucky and got himself acquainted to the geniuses.

After that, Chu Feng and the others went around the auctions. Seeing little toys Su Rou and Su Mei liked, Chu Feng extravagantly bought them, making the two girls very happy.

Particularly when Su Mei gave a kiss to Chu Feng in front of the large crowd, that attracted quite some people’s attention and admiration. After all, no matter where Su Rou and Su Mei were, they were beauties who caught other people’s awareness.

And Chu Feng was accompanied by the two completely different-styled beauties: one alluring and mature, the other pure and cute. Naturally, it gave rise to envy from the observers.

Time passed, and in a blink the sky became black. The auctions also reached the final, most exciting, stage.

Because of Su Rou and Su Mei’s current special statuses, Yuhe helped them obtain several seats very close to the auction.

“Junior Chu Feng, your treasures simply could not keep up with demand. They have all been sold.” Shortly after they sat down, Yuhe, who went in a circle to auction off the items, walked back with a cheerful face.

Moreover, he even held a high-quality Cosmos Sack in his hand.

Chapter 562: Provocation

"Junior Chu Feng, your things have all been sold." Yuhe said after coming back from the auctions.

"Sorry for the trouble Senior Yuhe." Chu Feng accepted the Cosmos Sack, but when he examined inside, his expression couldn't help changing greatly because he discovered, astounded, that there were a hundred and fifty thousand Heaven beads packed in the Cosmos Sack.

Although his treasures were invaluable, according to Chu Feng's calculations, it would already be extremely challenging to sell them off for any more than several tens of thousands of Heaven beads, yet presently, he obtained one hundred and fifty thousand beads. That truly exceeded his expectations by a long shot.

"Hehe, Junior Chu Feng, I wonder where you got so many treasures from? Although many are goods for living, they have long years of history, some even of several thousands of years. Treasures like those are very well-received." As Chu Feng had his doubts, Yuhe spoke.

After hearing his words, Chu Feng roughly understood some things. The Eastern Sea Region was incomparable to the Eastern Continent. In this place, there were even Martial Kings. Let alone Heaven beads, it was likely there were even Martial beads. Something that this region lacked the least should be cultivation resources.

But, after all, the Ji Dynasty had been prospering for so many years. Thus, it was reasonable that the treasures they accumulated sold well here.

"Oh? Isn't it Junior Su Rou, and Junior Su Mei? So you know these two bumpkins?"

But just at that time, a sharp voice rang out behind him. Turning his head back to look, he saw a group of people walking towards them.

The ones who led were two young men. They had the cultivation of the fourth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, they wore the exact same

clothing as Shentu Lang's, so with a single glance, Chu Feng knew who they were.

They were definitely the two people from the Shentu Dynasty who were fighting for the two disciple spots against Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, the two of them are Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. They are likely brothers with that Shentu Lang." Indeed, Jiang Wushang's voice verified Chu Feng's guesses.

Behind Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai followed four disciples from the Four Seas Academy. Clearly, they were the same as Yuhe. Knowing that the two people from the Shentu Dynasty were very possibly going to become disciples of Divine Instructors, they tried to become acquainted with them.

Or else, why would grand disciples of the Four Seas Academy, like little brothers, follow people who hadn't even officially become disciples yet?

After Chu Feng indifferently swept his gaze over those people, he coldly said, "Whose unleashed dogs are being so damn rowdy."

"God damn, who are you? You dare to speak to Junior Shentu like that?!" However, before letting the two people from the Shentu Dynasty speak, the middle-aged disciples behind them pointed at Chu Feng and howled.

"He is my fiancé. Do you have any complaints?" But just at that moment, Su Rou spoke. Displeasure was everywhere on her exceptionally beautiful face. Her pair of pretty eyes were like invisible blades as they emitted eerie cold glares. It could be seen that she was truly furious.

"What? Junior Su Rou, he's your fiancé?" Hearing those words, the crowd was both shocked and frightened. Shocked because such an excellent woman like Su Rou actually had a fiancé. That more or less broke the hearts of the male disciples who longed for Su Rou.

And the reason they were frightened was because Su Rou was truly angry. They were able to feel Su Rou's killing intent. Although, with their cultivation, they were simply not afraid of Su Rou, her current status was

something that had to be feared.

"Not only is he my elder sister's fiancé, he is also my fiancé. So, you better speak more politely or else I will report this to Instructor Duanmu that someone has disrespected me. You will then definitely not escape the consequences." Just at that time, Su Mei fiercely spoke as well. The Instructor Duanmu she mentioned was the Divine Instructor who took her as a disciple.

"This, this, this..."

At that moment, those people were completely stupefied. What was happening? Where did that brat come from? Taking the huge beauty Su Rou was one thing, but he also took the little beauty, Su Mei? He took in the pair of beautiful sisters, and those sisters even seemed like they completely surrendered themselves with unwavering hearts, and would marry no one other than him?!

It really made everyone feel a bit of disbelief, like a huge hammer of several billion tons stuck their heads to the point of buzzing.

Especially Su Mei's words of "reporting to Instructor Duanmu". That made many people mute from fear because it was not a small matter. If Instructor Duanmu put down punishments, not to mention them, even their own instructors would have to receive the penalties. At that time, they would truly have horrid luck.

"Fiancé huh? It's not only he's truly become your husband. Why so protective?"

"That's right that's right. Juniors, there are exceptional people everywhere in the Four Seas Academy. He only has the cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm. Is he worth it for you to entrust yourselves to him for your entire lives? From what I see, it's much better to go with us!"

While many people feared, the two brothers Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai intentionally provoked. After all, the two of them were people also chosen by Divine Instructors. Moreover, they had great confidence they could become the disciples of Divine Instructors, so naturally, they were

not frightened by Su Rou and Su Mei.

"Do you wish to die?" At that moment, Chu Feng was furious. Bloodlust was evident in his words. When there were really people who dared to make fun of his fiancées in front of him and moreover in public, Chu Feng truly had killing intentions.

"Chu Feng." Seeing that, Zhang Tianyi quickly went close to him and powerfully patted his shoulders, signaling him to not act rash.

He understood Chu Feng too well. Chu Feng was a smart person, and he definitely knew in those circumstances he could not easily perform attacks.

But Zhang Tianyi also knew that Chu Feng was a bloodthirsty person. If that bloodthirstiness was thoroughly ignited, Chu Feng would do some insane things, disregarding the consequences.

So, he was truly afraid. Afraid of Chu Feng starting a massacre at that place because with Chu Feng's cultivation, he could, without any problems, kill Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

However, Chu Feng did not enter the Four Seas Academy. That was the issue. He belonged to those outside of the academy, whereas Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai had already entered the Four Seas Academy, and could be counted as being somewhat part of the Four Seas Academy.

If Chu Feng were to kill those two, he would simply be slapping the Four Seas Academy's face. No matter what, the academy would not forgive Chu Feng, so he could not allow Chu Feng to assault them at that place.

"Shentu Jiang, Shentu Hai, you've got some problems? If you do, come at me. I, Jiang Wushang, will keep you busy at any time." Jiang Wushang was also enraged. With a bang, he stood up, and loudly yelled at Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

He voice was clear, and almost everyone in the square heard it. Countless gazes looked towards them.

Those gazes belonged not only to those of outsiders. Many were also

disciples of the Four Seas Academy. There were even some elders and instructors.

Chapter 563: Bidding

"You think I'm afraid of you? I just don't want to attack you in this place." Facing the gazes of the crowd, containing even of elders and instructors, Shentu Jiang did not dare to be too aggressive. He pointed at Jiang Wushang and said, "Brat, just wait. Wait until tomorrow and see how I'll take care of you."

After finishing those mean words, they waved their big sleeves, walked towards nearby seats, and sat down.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, don't worry. Just watch how Big Brother Tianyi and I will take care of these two bastard dogs tomorrow." After Shentu Jiang and Shentu Ha left, Jiang Wushang spoke solemnly.

"Hoh." However, Chu Feng only lightly smiled at Jiang Wushang's words, and then gestured for them to sit down, and no longer paid attention to Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

Although Chu Feng feigned indifference on the surface, within the gaze he swept over their backs with, immense bloodlust emerged.

Chu Feng was definitely not going to just simply teach them a lesson when they dared to toy around with his own women right in front of his face. He would kill them. As long as the chance was given, he was definitely going to kill them.

Though their side's disturbance attracted everyone's attention, after the auctioning elder for the finale auction stepped onto the stage, everyone's gazes were taken away by him because all of them knew that today's greatest scene was finally going to begin.

"Sorry for the wait everyone."

"In today's auction, we've received quite a few treasures. I'm sure many of you will feel interested in the first item that will start it off."

As the elder spoke, two young and beautiful females behind him pushed an exquisite little cart onto the auction stage.

Those two did not have very high levels of cultivation, and were clearly

not people from the Four Seas Academy. It was likely they were that elder's, or a certain disciple's, servants.

The little cart they pushed up was very intricate too. Treasure was placed upon it, ready to be auctioned, but veiled over the little cart was a shiny cloth.

That cloth was not normal cloth, as it was reinforced with a Spirit Formation. Even World Spiritists could not detect what the treasure underneath the cloth specifically was with Spirit power. That increased the mysteriousness of the auctioned treasure, as well as the audience's expectation.

whoosh The elder waved his big sleeve, then the two beautiful females pulled away the shiny cloth. A delicate dagger three inches long, swirling with five different coloured brilliance, appeared within the crowd's line of sight.

"Rainbow Dagger. It is the Mastered Strange Armament personally made by Senior Qing Xianrou of the Immortal Execution Archipelago five hundred years ago, and also the only Strange Armament he made in his entire life. Starting price, five thousand Heaven beads!" The auction elder loudly called.

"Five thousand? A Mastered Strange Armament like that is actually selling for five thousand Heaven beads?" Chu Feng was a bit shocked. Indeed, the Rainbow Dagger's quality was quite nice, but it wasn't even comparable to his Asura Ghost Axe. It was, at most, similar to the two Mastered Strange Armaments he looted from Shentu Lang.

Although, within the category of Mastered Strange Armaments, its quality was decent, the starting price being five thousand Heaven beads seemed a bit too high.

"Nine thousand! Nine thousand, I'll take it!"

However, when people started to endlessly bid, and when a person even called the price up to nine thousand Heaven beads, Chu Feng understood. The people of the Eastern Sea Region truly did not lack money!

No wonder the things he plundered from the Ji Dynasty, which were simply useless in his eyes, could sell for a hundred and fifty thousand Heaven beads.

From then on, there was a myriad of treasures entering the stage continuously, and there were also many different prices for them. However, not a single one of them could move Chu Feng's heart.

That continued until another Strange Armament emerged onto the stage, of which stirred up Chu Feng's interest. It was Strange Armament fan, and it wasn't even a Mastered Strange Armament. It was just a normal Strange Armament fan.

But the special thing about it was the map imprinted upon it. It was said to be a treasure map, but because the specific lines on it were too blurry, no one was able to determine if it was real or fake.

The reason why Chu Feng felt interested wasn't because of the fan itself. It was because Shentu Jiang seemed to be interested, which in turn made him interested.

"Five thousand Heaven beads." Shentu Jiang yelled loudly. The fan wasn't Mastered, and despite there being a map on it, because it was a bit blurry, he could not determine the specifics. But also because of that exact same reason, there were very few people willing to start a bidding war against him. The starting price was merely three thousand, so he was confident he had it with five thousand.

"Six thousand." But at that moment, Chu Feng unconcernedly yelled out such a number.

Hearing that, Shentu Jiang lightly furrowed his brows and fiercely glared at Chu Feng, but said nothing other than another bid, "Seven thousand Heaven beads!"

"Eight thousand." Chu Feng continued bidding.

At that instant, the fury on Shentu Jiang's face soared immediately because he could tell that Chu Feng was messing with him. Yet, he did not dare to be sure whether Chu Feng was the same as him or not: to take

a chance with luck, to hope that the Strange Armament's map was truly a treasure map, and to see if he could find any opportunities within.

But no matter what, he would not easily give up. So, he glanced at Shentu Hai beside him. After a nod of his head, Shentu Jiang involuntarily gnashed his teeth, as if steeling his heart, before loudly yelling, "Ten thousand Heaven beads!"

"What? Ten thousand Heaven beads? This Strange Armament's worth ten thousand Heaven beads?"

"Yeah! It is only an ordinary Strange Armament, and it's not even a Mastered Strange Armament. It is on a completely different level than the high-quality Rainbow Dagger before."

"The only special thing about this is the imprinted map on it, but since that map is so hazy, you can simply not ascertain if it's a treasure map or not, or even if it's a map or not. It is simply not worth such a price! Not to mention ten thousand, this Strange Armament is really worth no more than three thousand Heaven beads."

"Ahh, with a single gleam I know already they're from the Eastern Sea Region. Only people from that place have excessive hopes that they can rely on something like this to gain some sort of chance encounter, yet they do not know that there are innumerable Strange Armaments like this one in the Eastern Sea Region."

"There are even many people who intentionally paint an unclear map on an ordinary Strange Armament and use that to raise the starting price. But in reality, they are just swindling."

"It can't be helped. In this world, there will always be people like them who like to daydream, and do things that are penny wise but pound foolish. Since they themselves are willing to do such a foolish thing by betting on this fan, so really, who can it be blamed on?"

After hearing Shentu Jiang call out that number, bursts of exclamations rang out instantly from the crowd. Some people even started to criticize Shentu Jiang's action.

And also at that moment, Shentu Jiang came to a realization. He finally knew why no one fought over a Strange Armament that possibly held some amazing opportunity. So it seemed like those things were used to trick people in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, he was not a simple person. After being aware of the turn of events, he did not show any panic. Rather, he acted out a proud and very “cool” expression, looked towards Chu Feng, and even sent a provocative gesture at him.

He was implying that Chu Feng was a poor bastard, unworthy to match his price. He wanted to use that to enrage Chu Feng so he would continue bid, upon which he would back out with everything.

But how would Chu Feng not see through his little tricks? He did not even give Shentu Jiang a glance, and continued to chat and laugh with Su Rou and Su Mei, no longer bidding.

Chapter 564: Son of Magma

"Damn your ancestor." At that instant, the corners of Shentu Jiang's mouth twitched, and he couldn't help cursing at the bottom of his heart because he knew that he was played by Chu Feng. That guy clearly had no plans to buy the Strange Armament, and intentionally raised the price to force him into a trap.

"Is there any higher price than ten thousand Heaven beads?"

"Ten thousand going for once, ten thousand going for twice, ten thousand going for thrice!"

dong "This Strange Armament Treasure Fan belongs to that young knight."

The sound of the bell settled, making Shentu Jiang's face gloom completely because he knew that he wasted ten thousand Heaven beads on an ordinary Strange Armament. His foolishness with money this time truly went far.

Especially as he saw Chu Feng and the others' applause and their pleased expressions at his misfortune, he grinded his teeth in fury, yet he could say nothing. He could only forcefully endure it, and silently take such a deficit.

"Okay! Of the items before, some have extraordinary origins, some have exquisite workmanship, but no matter what, they were all treasures created either by cultivators or World Spiritists."

"Next up, we will auction some oddities not made by humans, but formed by nature."

The elder clapped, then the two beautiful females pushed the auctioning cart up again. After tearing the cloth away, it was an object the same size as a watermelon, yet was like cotton, and emitted faint radiance.

It was a Natural Oddity that contained dense Heaven power. After that treasure appeared, almost everyone's eyes lit up, intrigued.

They did so because it was a supreme cultivation treasure. When cultivated, it was treasure many times more useful than Heaven beads. It could be said to be a holy artifact used to make breakthroughs for Heaven realm experts.

“This Natural Oddity is called Firefly Silk. The Heaven power it contains is comparable to ten thousand Heaven beads, but it can be very easily absorbed, not something Heaven beads can compare to. When reaching upon times of breakthroughs, refine it, and you will obtain unimaginable effects. Starting price, one hundred thousand Heaven beads!” The auctioning elder loudly said.

“One hundred thousand Heaven beads, that expensive? Heaven power equivalent to ten thousand Heaven beads is actually selling for one hundred thousand Heaven beads?” Hearing those words, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and the others all felt disbelief.

“This is indeed a treasure. To normal people, its worth is much higher than Heaven beads. The price of one hundred thousand Heaven beads is absolutely worth it. But to me, it isn’t too useful.” Chu Feng shook his head.

He felt that the Firefly Silk was indeed a treasure, because when normal people cultivate cultivation resources such as Heaven beads, they could absorb only a portion of its total power. That was also why Natural Oddities were so valuable. The power contained within made it easier for ordinary cultivators to absorb them.

But the reason why Chu Feng shook his head was because he was different than normal people. Even if it were Heaven beads, he could completely absorb all of the power within them. So, to Chu Feng, there was simply no difference between the special Natural Oddity, and Heaven beads.

“One hundred and ten!”

“One hundred and twenty!”

“One hundred and thirty!”

“One hundred and fifty!”

“Two hundred!”

After a round of bidding, someone actually raised the starting price of one hundred thousand to two hundred thousand, and at the end, the so-called Firefly Silk was taken by the astonishing bid of two hundred thousand.

It was an aged man, and based off of his appearance, he was at least over a hundred years old. His cultivation was very strong as well, being in the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

He was likely planning to use the Firefly Silk to undergo the final attempt. If he were to succeed, his cultivation could strengthen, and his life would be prolonged. If he were to fail though, then he wouldn’t have many years left in him anyway, and there would be no use in leaving those Heaven beads around.

“Damn. Some lump of Firefly Silk really sold for two hundred thousand Heaven beads. This, this is twice the amount of wealth that my Jiang Dynasty accumulated for several thousands of years!” Jiang Wushang widened his mouth in shock, feeling inconceivability.

“Haha, Brother Wushang, don’t forget. This is the Eastern Sea Region! More experts, so more wealthy people! Besides, there has always been a lot of cultivation resources in this place, so Heaven beads in this place are worth a lot less in comparison to the continent of the Nine Provinces.” Chu Feng patted Jiang Wushang’s shoulder. It was something that he also learnt just now.

After the Firefly Silk, there were quite a few Natural Oddities that appeared in succession and brought up to the auction stage. Moreover, they were all very rarely seen cultivation treasures, but their prices rose higher and higher as the treasures were auctioned.

There was even one that sold for a high price of one million Heaven beads. That price nearly shocked everyone on scene.

And the person who bought that object was a young man. He was

garbed gorgeously, had airs of excellence, and was similar in age as Zhang Tianyi, but his cultivation was even above Zhang Tianyi. An expert in the fifth level of the Heaven realm.

That person was also the person who prepared to enter the Four Seas Academy. Furthermore, he was already chosen by a Divine Instructor. His name was Zhu Daye. He was a real genius, and he had quite the origin as well. He came from a wealthy and prominent clan in the Eastern Sea Region, and both his grandfather and his father were Martial Lords.

"The treasure coming up next is very special. Its rarity can be said to be far above the previous treasures. The power it contains is also completely incomparable to the former treasures. Accordingly, it should be priced at several millions of Heaven beads, but regretfully, the power it contains incidentally cannot be refined."

"So, it is fated to have no use in terms of cultivation, but it is definitely a superb object for a collection."

"As for its name, I'm sure everyone here has heard of it. From deep underground, from the legends, a Son of Magma!"

As the auctioning elder introduced it, an object as large as a newborn baby appeared on the auction cart. After that object appeared, everyone couldn't avoid gasping deeply, excitement emerging into their eyes. In some people's gazes, there was even fear.

It was truly the exact same as a baby. Simply, it was like an infant in deep sleep. However, it was absolutely not an infant because the skin on its entire body was steaming like lava. More accurately speaking, it was magma.

"What is that? It contains such berserk power!" At that instant, Chu Feng rose suddenly, excitement simply shooting out of his eyes.

He discovered that the so-called Son of Magma contained extremely dense power. It was much stronger than the Spirit Formation Essence he saw quite some time ago. If he were to refine it, Chu Feng could definitely make a breakthrough again.

“This is a Son of Magma. Legends say they are ancient organisms that exists deep underground. They are born from the earth, and can only be shaped after a thousand years of condensation.”

“But when a volcano erupts, it possibly forces them onto the surface from underground, and if they leave the magma before they are shaped, they will die.”

“Looking at this Son of Magma’s appearance, it should have condensed for almost a thousand years and was going to soon have its own intelligence, but sadly, it is already dead, and cannot become a real Son of Magma.” Yuhe explained.

“Son of Magma. Is there really such an organism in this world?” Hearing Yuhe’s seemingly exaggerated explanation, Jiang Wushang and the others expressed doubt.

Chapter 565: A Heavenly Great Deal

"It's real. According to historical records, ten thousand years ago, a matured Son of Magma appeared in the Eastern Sea Region. At that time, it began a massacre. However, no one could defeat it. Even when all of the peak experts in the Eastern Sea Region gathered together, they were unable to defeat it."

"In the Eastern Sea Region at that time, it was really like hell. Corpses formed mountains, and blood formed oceans. It was truly able to destroy the entire Eastern Sea Region with its own power." Yuhe spoke solemnly.

"It was actually that powerful? But right now, the Eastern Sea Region still exists, which means it didn't cause total destruction. Could it be that it left on its own accord?" Jiang Wushang asked curiously.

"Left on its own accord? How is that possible!"

"It has a bloodthirsty nature and simply no emotions. Killing is its hobby, so why would it leave on its own accord and let the souls of the Eastern Sea Region go?" Yuhe shook his head.

"Then what exactly happened?" As Chu Feng and the others were hung in suspense, they impatient asked.

"It was defeated. An unknown hidden expert suddenly showed up. With his destructive might, he pushed the Son of Magma back, forced it back deep underground, and sealed the entrance that it came from. Only by doing that could the Eastern Sea Region be saved." Yuhe narrated.

"He's that powerful?! Who is that person, actually having such level of strength?" Jiang Wushang continued asking. At the same time, Chu Feng and the others tightly stared at Yuhe, wanting to know who saved the Eastern Sea Region.

"No one knows who he is, and no one knows his name. It's said that he was a young man with an extraordinary demeanor, and so strong that even the horrifying Son of Magma could not defeat him. If the guesses were correct, then he was likely a Martial Emperor."

“Moreover, beside him, there followed four symbolic powerful divine beasts.”

“One was an azure dragon, one was a fiery phoenix, one was a white tiger, and one was a black tortoise. Those four divine beasts were incomparably strong, and like pets, accompanied the man.” Yuhe seriously narrated while he wore an idolizing expression.

“What?!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly and surprise emerged onto his face. Simultaneously, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei did the same.

Hearing to that point, they could already guess roughly who that man was. He was very possibly the master of the terrifying Imperial Tomb within the Azure Province in the continent of the Nine Provinces; the super-expert who baffled the Nine Provinces ten thousand years ago, Qing Xuan Tian.

After all, those four unique divine beast were too distinct. They were clearly the four Secret Skills created by Qing Xuan Tian, and in addition to the time of “ten thousand year ago”, everything matched perfectly with Qing Xuan Tian.

But what they did not expect was Qing Xuan Tian’s achievements also being recorded in the Eastern Sea Region. He was even a hero who saved the Eastern Sea Region.

Although they had already guessed that the expert in Yuhe’s words was Qing Xuan Tian, Chu Feng and the others did not say anything. After all, three of Qing Xuan Tian’s Secret Skills were on Chu Feng. If that became known, it would very possibly attract a murderous disaster.

Ultimately, the inheritance of a peerless expert, the Secret Skills that had the ability to devastate the heaven and earth, was too enticing. If people were to know about that, there would definitely be many people who would try to take them away.

“A terrifying organism from the deep underground, a Son of Magma condensed by the earth. Starting price, one thousand Heaven beads!” The auctioning elder loudly shouted.

“One thousand Heaven beads? That thing has such an impressive origin, yet it is actually selling for so cheap?!” Jiang Wushang and the others all felt puzzled.

“It’s too expensive. This price is too high. It is impossible for it to be sold.” However, as Jiang Wushang and the others felt shocked, Yuhe shook his head.

“Too expensive? Senior Yuhe, what do you mean? Are you saying that this Son of Magma is not even worth a thousand Heaven beads?” Jiang Wushang asked confusedly.

“The origin of this Son of Magma is impressive, yes, and it is also extremely rare, but all of that is useless when it can only be used for the eyes. It can only be collected and not refined.”

“In addition to that, ten thousand years ago, the Son of Magma almost destroyed the Eastern Sea Region! Therefore, many people view it as an inauspicious object, and who collects something that is inauspicious? Even if some person buys it, they would use a special method to seal it, so that the inauspicious feeling gets dispelled.”

“The price of one thousand Heaven beads is very expensive. Reasonably speaking, this Son of Magma is worth at most a hundred Heaven beads.” Yuhe explained with great understanding.

Chu Feng and the others still held their doubts after hearing Yuhe’s words, but when there was really no one who bid after the starting price of one thousand Heaven beads was called out, and when there were even many people cursing, they had no choice but to believe it.

“Elder. This Son of Magma is an ominous object, and should be destroyed. How can it be collected?”

“I do not know who this thing belongs to, but one thousand Heaven beads is really too much. I am willing to take two hundred Heaven beads out to buy it and seal it off, in order to dispel the inauspiciousness.”

”I wonder only if the seller is willing to or not?!”

Just at that moment, a middle-aged man called out loudly. At the same

time he spoke, he even swept his gaze around him, seeming to be searching for the owner of the Son of Magma.

He was a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, and his strength and position was quite high, so that was why he dared to speak those words.

"This..." At that instant, the auctioning elder was in a predicament. In the auctions, it was forbidden to reveal the identity of the treasure holder. Besides, this was an auction that allowed the seller to set their own starting price, rather than the price being set by the appraisal elders.

If it were a normal person, using his status as an auctioning elder, he could, in fact, change the price according to some rules, but all of that was useless as the seller of the object held a special position. Even he, the auctioning elder, did not dare to change the price without the permission of the seller.

Actually, even he knew that the Son of Magma was an ominous object, and was not even close to being worth the price of a thousand Heaven beads.

Logically speaking, he wouldn't even put something like that onto the auctioning stage, because that would do nothing but give rise to displeasure.

But he could do nothing as the seller was too obstinate. He simply didn't dare to argue, and could only take it out for auctioning, no questions asked. He even had to set an unreasonably high price to start it off.

"Elder! I'll take this Son of Magma for one thousand Heaven beads!" Just at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

"What? There's really someone who's willing to spend a thousand Heaven beads to buy something like this?" Chu Feng's words attracted quite a few people's attention.

It was because nearly everyone felt that that sort of thing was not worth one thousand Heaven beads. Even if it was rarer, more special, it was absolutely not worth one thousand Heaven beads.

"My friend, are you sure you want to buy this Son of Magma?" Even the

auctioning elder felt rather surprised because he also knew that the Son of Magma was not worth a thousand Heaven beads. So, he never even had plans to sell it.

"Elder, I want it." Chu Feng very firmly nodded his head.

"Okay! If no one gives an even higher price, this Son of Magma will belong to you, my friend." At that instant, the auctioning elder's face shifted and hurriedly yelled.

"He's sick! An idiot!"

"He's actually spending such money to buy such a thing! There must be something wrong with his brain!" After Chu Feng confirmed it, some whispering insults came from his surroundings.

But Chu Feng just faintly smiled at their insults. Perhaps in their eyes, the Son of Magma was an ominous object, but in Chu Feng's eyes, it was akin to a priceless treasure.

A priceless treasure bought for merely one thousand Heaven beads. No one knew how joyful or how happy he was, but this time, he truly picked up a heavenly great deal.

Chapter 566: Moon Festival

One thousand Heaven beads. With that price, it was definitely the cheapest treasure sold in tonight's finale auction stage.

But such a low price was viewed as a waste in many people's perspectives. So, there was naturally not going to be anyone who fought against Chu Feng for the Son of Magma.

Just like that, the priceless treasure, in Chu Feng's eyes, was easily bought into his hands with the price of one thousand Heaven beads. But in the eyes of outsiders, Chu Feng seemed more like an idiot. Some even felt he was mentally ill, yet no one knew Chu Feng's current excited emotions.

"Thank you elder."

After the conclusion of the auctions, Chu Feng, with one thousand Heaven beads, obtained the Son of Magma, the oddity that came from deep underground. Looking at the fiery-red infant doll flowing with overwhelming power in his hands, Chu Feng's heart really was incomparably excited.

After grasping it in his hands, he believed more and more that the Son of Magma would help his cultivation grow, and there was absolutely no problem in making a breakthrough. After all, back then in the Imperial Tomb, a lot of Heaven power was already accumulated in his body.

"Honestly speaking, they are correct. The Son of Magma is an inauspicious object. Are you truly going to collect it?" Seeing such a joyful appearance from Chu Feng, the auctioning elder, as if he discovered kindness, reminded Chu Feng.

"Don't worry elder. Of course I know about the Son of Magma, so I am certainly not buying it for a collection. If you must ask what I am planning to do with this, it can be understood as me preparing to thoroughly destroy it." Chu Feng smilingly said.

"You're a World Spiritist?" Hearing those words, a hint of astonishment

flashed into the elder's eyes, and a hint of surprise couldn't help being within the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with. The power that the Son of Magma contained was extremely horrifying. Unless it was a Martial King, there was no one who could truly destroy it.

The only method of destroying it was for a World Spiritist to build a Sealing Formation and seal the Son of Magma. They call it "destroy", but in reality, it was only sealing.

So, that was why the elder felt that Chu Feng was a World Spiritist, otherwise his cultivation did not allow him to have the methods to destroy the Son of Magma.

And being a World Spiritist, no matter where, was an excellent occupation. Given identical cultivation, they would always be a level higher than others, and make others treat them with an extra bit of respect.

"I am indeed a World Spiritist." Chu Feng smiled, but since Su Ru and the others were waiting for him, and moreover there were still many people currently waiting to exchange their goods, Chu Feng only spoke a few courtesy words to that elder before turning around and leaving.

"I keep on feeling something off about this little boy. Judging by his age, he should be afraid when he sees the Son of Magma, yet he was very excited. Does he really know about this Son of Magma?" Gazing upon Chu Feng's departing back, the auctioning elder muttered to himself.

"Did someone buy it?" But shortly after Chu Feng left, a hoarse old man's voice suddenly resounded behind that elder.

Turning his head back to look, the auctioning elder's initially unperturbed complexion turned immediately tense. He quickly bowed, and respectfully said, "I pay my respects to Lord Taikou!"

The person who currently appeared in front of him was an aged man. Although his face was full of wrinkles, his head was full of black hair. He wore the clothing of a Four Seas Academy instructor, but he was extremely disheveled. Most importantly, he held a cane. He had only a single leg.

“We pay our respects to Lord Taikou!” At that instant, everyone at that location in the Four Seas Academy, no matter if it were elders, or disciples, or instructors, all of them saluted respectfully, fear emerging onto their faces.

Because that person was definitely one of the strongest characters in the Four Seas Academy. He was the leader of the Ten Divine Instructors, the strongest Divine Instructor who could easily defeat the nine others with a single hand, Taikou.

“I’m asking you. Have you sold it?” Instructor Taikou’s expression was chilly. The scar at the corner of his eye made him seem even more frightening.

Looking at it, the auctioning elder was terrified endlessly. His heart was uneasy, so he dared not to hesitate any longer, and quickly reported, “Milord, it has already been sold.”

“Oh?” Hearing those words, Taikou’s cold expression changed faintly, then he asked, “There’s really someone who bought my Son of Magma with one thousand Heaven beads?”

“Yes milord.”

“Who bought it?”

“It’s him. A young man named Chu Feng.” The auctioning elder hurriedly flipped through the auctioning bills and records, then gave the one to Taikou.

“Mm? He’s not a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, nor has he registered to enter the Four Seas Academy?!” Taikou’s eyes lit up when he saw Chu Feng’s information.

“Yes. That young man is different from the others. He somehow feels a bit special.” The auctioning elder said.

“Haha, interesting. This Chu Feng is rather interesting.” At that instant, what no one expected was that the usually cold Taikou brimmed with smiles on his face, then waved his sleeves and drifted away.

Only after he left did the people at that place breathe a sigh of relief, as if they released some heavy burden. Taikou's position was really too high. His strength was very frightening as well, and he was an abnormality in the Four Seas Academy. Other than the head and several manager elders, not a single other person did not fear him.

Chu Feng and the others, however, did not know about the scene in the auction. Through the power of Teleport Formations, they arrived at Yuhe's land.

Yuhe's place definitely counted as small when compared to the other disciples of the Four Seas Academy, but with a glance, there were still a small mountain and a small lake. The scenery was quite nice, especially the rows of structures. They actually all belonged to Yuhe himself, and from that, it could be seen that the treatment the disciples of the Four Seas Academy received was truly very good.

In order to welcome Chu Feng and the others, Yuhe even specially prepared a lavish banquet. Under the night sky, they drank wine and conversed.

"Today's moon is so round, so big, and so beautiful!" Su Mei normally did not touch any wine, but today, she wanted to drink nothing but wine. She, who had no resistance to alcohol, flushed like a red apple. Her speaking voice was very coquettish, very alluring.

"Little Mei, you can't handle wine, so don't drink that much! If you drink too much, you will feel very bad." Su Rou urged on the side.

"Sister, you're the one saying that? Aren't you also drinking wine? Are you more tolerant than me? Ever since I was young, this is the first time that I've seen you drink wine!" Su Mei's mouth smelt like alcohol as she giggled and said.

"I..." Su Rou was asked to speechlessness by Su Mei, and didn't know how to reply.

"The two of you, drink less. I don't usually see either of you drink wine, so what's with you two today?" Chu Feng smiled and advised on the side.

“Hmph!” But after Chu Feng spoke, what he got instead were two glares by the two sisters. That made Chu Feng completely befuddled, and a bit embarrassed.

“Hoh, there’s nothing wrong with drinking some wine because today is the annual Moon Festival! It is a day very rare to come by.” Seeing Chu Feng’s slight embarrassment, Yuhe hurriedly spoke to diffuse the tension.

Chapter 567: Sleeping Together With You

“Moon Festival? What festival is that?” Su Mei blinked her hazy big eyes and asked, intrigued.

“Have you discovered that tonight’s moon is particularly big, particularly round, and particularly bright?” Yuhe lightly smiled, replying with a question instead.

“Yeah, yeah! Tonight’s moon is so beautiful. I have never seen such a beautiful moon.” Su Mei pursed her little lips, nodding in agreement.

“Heh, the moon is not normally this beautiful. Every year, it happens only once, and to this phenomenon, there are many types of explanations. However, in the Eastern Sea Region, the most widespread is a legend.” Yuhe said.

“Legend? What legend? Senior Yuhe, quickly tell me!” Su Mei curiously asked.

“The legends say in ancient times, only the sun existed and there was no moon. There were also no stars that filled the sky. So, during the day, the sun lit up the sky brightly, but when nighttime came, it was pitch-black, to the point where one could not see their fingers if they stretched out their arm.”

“In ancient times, there was a pair of lovers. Both were cultivators.”

“They were friends from a young age, and there was nothing they didn’t talk about. They had a very strong relationship.”

“The male even had exceptional talent, and was a very rare cultivation genius. In the cultivation world, he kept on making breakthroughs and soared powerfully.”

“But nothing could be done regarding the female’s ordinary aptitude, so she was slowly left behind, very far, by the male. However, their feelings did not fade away because of their distance in cultivation. Rather, they became stronger and stronger, and made those next to them very admirative.”

“However, with the flow of time, both of them got older and older. Although, with special medicine, the female could always keep her young beautiful appearance, the limit of her life gradually approached.”

“The male was aware of that, and started to madly think of methods to save the female. He cared not of her complexion, but absolutely, he could not lose her.”

“Finally, he thought of a way. It was to make himself stronger, so strong that he could prolong the female’s life.”

“And with his hard work, he finally stepped into an extremely outstanding realm. He lacked only one step before he entered a realm that none had entered before. It was a realm that was going to shock the world. In order to successfully take that single step, he painstakingly cultivated in isolation.”

“When he exited his seclusion, the world quivered. He gained the power to rule the world, and was already invincible. Everything was within his grasp.”

“But what he never, ever would have thought was that his single closed-door cultivation lasted for several hundred years. His lover existed no longer, eerie white bones were all that remained.”

“The man lost all spirit. He grasped the power to rule the entire world, became a god in the eyes of all the living, but he could do nothing to save the person he loved the most.”

“He cried for an entire day. When the night fell and he saw the pitch-black world, only then did he think of some words his lover said to him before.”

“She said, she disliked the night because if there were no flames, she could not see his face.”

“She said, how great would it be if the night also had the sun. She could then, at any time, see his complexion.”

“The man loved her too much. He loved her so much that without her, he lost any significance in living. Even though he had an uncountable

number of years left in his life and received the world's adoration, all of that was inferior to the female's company."

"Since he already lost any thoughts of surviving, since he already decided to accompany the female's death, he chose to complete her wish before his death, and at the same time, made all lovers complete. He decided to bring light into the night."

"So, he burnt his own body as the sacrificial price, he collected many Natural Oddities, and he laid a formation that covered the entire sky. It condensed above the Nine Heavens, and finally, he created an object. That object would appear during the nighttime to light up the world."

"Moreover, when the man was forming such a thing, he named it with his final breath. Moon, the name of his lover."

"It's because of Moon that there is light in the night. So, in remembrance of Moon, people named the day that the moon was born on as the Moon Festival, and today is that day."

"Although it is only a legend, it is widespread and has been passed down for generations. Furthermore, a special meaning was bestowed upon the moon. It is to cherish the ones close to you." Yuhe detailedly narrated.

"Haha, nonsense! What is the moon? There is only one in this world, and no matter how much stronger a cultivator is, they cannot be so strong to make their body into a moon. It is merely a legend. How can it possibly be true?" At that instant, Jiang Wushang laughed loudly, feeling that it was rubbish.

"That's right. How can the moon be created by a human? That's too nonsensical. Come come come, drink, drink, drink!" Zhang Tianyi also spoke in contempt.

"Cherish those close to you, huh?" However, the joke-like legend in the males' eyes stirred up special thoughts from the females.

Su Rou and Su Mei couldn't help casting their gazes full of love towards Chu Feng who was drinking with Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi. There was no one who knew what they were thinking.

After the banquet, Chu Feng impatiently returned to his own room and took out the Son of Magma, wanting to refine it. After all, he currently had heavy responsibilities, so the earlier he raised his strength the better.

dong dong dong, dong dong dong

But just as Chu Feng prepared to take out the Son of Magma, his doors were knocked. Through Spirit power, Chu Feng knew that the one who came was Su Mei.

"Little Mei, we separated just now and you're already missing me?" Chu Feng opened the doors and discovered that indeed, Su Mei stood outside. So, he couldn't help teasing her.

"Yeah, I miss you." However, surprisingly for Chu Feng, Su Mei who would usually be affected by his teases not only wasn't affected in the slightest, she instead leaped, and pounced into Chu Feng's embrace.

That wasn't even anything. After Su Mei entered the room, she closed the doors and actually, while hugging Chu Feng, shoved Chu Feng further into the room and pushed him onto the bed.

"Little Mei, you..." When facing Su Mei who acted completely differently than usual, Chu Feng was a bit lost on what to do.

Although Su Mei was often cheerful, lively, and was quite intimate with Chu Feng, she acted appropriately. For example, the thing between a man and a woman, or sleeping in the same bed. Those were forbidden behaviors, yet today, she seemed to be doing taboo actions.

"Tonight, I want to sleep together with you." Su Mei slowly crawled onto Chu Feng's body, and again, put her little beautiful face up to Chu Feng's face, and with a sweet and warm, warm and delicate voice, spoke to Chu Feng.

gulp At that instant, Chu Feng fiercely swallowed some spittle because Su Mei in front of his eyes was too enchanting.

Under her eyelashes, a pair of big, walnut-sized eyes emanated haziness. On her pretty face, a layer of redness permeated. It was quite bewitching.

Especially as Chu Feng shifted his gaze downwards and scanned over her chest, he actually saw snow-white. The originally firm but soft spherical objects, when pressed against his chest, already became ovally, but gazing from the center, he could still see a V-shaped ravine. The size of that was not to be underestimated, and one could simply not see the bottom.

Chapter 568: Beneath The Round Moon

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling a breath of cool air. He said hiddenly in his heart, "Little Mei has grown. She was already impressive before, and now, she is even bigger. She's simply comparable to her elder sister!"

Chu Feng was a man, and in a situation like that, he naturally had his reactions. Under his stomach, a "pillar to the heavens" arose, and it was quite imposing.

At first, Chu Feng even felt a bit of shame. After all, Su Mei was pressed on his body, so she could certainly clearly feel his change.

But what he did not expect was that Su Mei truly seemed to be another person. She clearly sensed it, but she did not avoid it. Not only did she allow Chu Feng to stare at herself, there was even a hint of a blush on her face. She opened her pink lips and moved in to kiss Chu Feng.

"Little Mei, what are you doing?" Yet, Chu Feng subconsciously evaded Su Mei's fragrant kiss because he promised Su Rou, that he would not do the thing between a man and a woman with Su Mei before marriage.

But right in front of his eyes, Su Mei's behavior was clearly off. If that continued, he would lose control over himself. At that time, he would commit an offense. He did not want to do the thing he promised not to do.

"Nothing. I just like you. I really, really like you. I want to give you my everything, and to only you." As Su Mei spoke, she suddenly stood, and in front of Chu Feng, took off her pink long skirt.

At that instant, Chu Feng instinctively gasped, his eyes roundly widened, and almost shot out two pillars of blood from his nose.

Because, at that very instant, what appeared in front of him was doubtlessly a perfect body. White and delicate skin, protruding fronts and behinds, and in addition to Su Mei's unique sweet face, and her blurry eye expression because of alcohol, it was simply irresistible by any man.

"Chu Feng, I not only like you, I love you. I am willing to do anything for

you, and I am willing to give you everything. I will do anything you request me to do. I just can't lose you. I am yours, and only yours. I can give you anything."

Suddenly, Su Mei leaped into his embrace again, causing Chu Feng to subconsciously hold her. But when he touched Su Mei again, the feeling he got from his hands was completely different.

Without the separation of clothing, Chu Feng's palm truly touched Su Mei's skin. The feeling of smoothness, warmth, and also some elasticity, was simply like a reignition of fire. It made the flames in Chu Feng's heart thoroughly burn, and it filled his entire body.

"Mm!"

Chu Feng spin around, and pressed his body onto Su Mei. He widened his mouth, and started to madly suck Su Mei's body, as if he wanted to put all of Su Mei into his mouth.

At the same time, his hands unrestrainedly went around everywhere. On Su Mei's perfect body, he rubbed and scratched, acting very wildly.

"Ahh~~~" When Chu Feng was so rough, Su Mei did not know if it hurt or not, so she involuntarily moaned.

But Su Mei's soft voice was like adding oil on fire, making Chu Feng even wilder. He very barbarously ripped off his clothes, and prepared to make some love with the beauty beneath him.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing?!"

But just at that moment, a fierce voice rang out suddenly behind Chu Feng. It made both Su Mei and Chu Feng shocked. Looking towards the origin of the voice, their complexions couldn't help changing further.

It was because at present, Su Rou appeared within the house. She stood ten meters away from the bed, looking at Chu Feng and Su Mei with both a stunned and horrified expression.

At that moment, it was as though Chu Feng and Su Mei did some vile thing as they hurriedly, in panic, wore their respective clothes, and during

that period of time, Su Rou stood in front of the bed with the same expression.

"Chu Feng, do you remember what you promised me earlier? How can you do this?!" After waiting for Su Mei to wear her long skirt, Su Rou interrogated with an extremely strict tone.

"Sister, this isn't Chu Feng's fault, I..." But before letting Chu Feng speak, Su Mei rushed to explain.

"Little Mei, leave. Return to your room. I have something I want to talk to Chu Feng alone." But before letting Su Mei finish speaking, Su Rou gestured her to leave.

Glancing at her elder sister, then looking at Chu Feng, Su Mei gnashed her teeth, pursed her lips, but ultimately, left with a shameful expression.

"I..."

"You don't need to say anything. I know that Little Mei went to find you. I'm her elder sister. How can I not understand her?"

"She loves you. Loves you greatly. She wants to let you know how much she loves you, so she wished to give her everything to you before you leave."

"Chu Feng, I know your feelings are sincere to both me and Little Mei, but please understand. I still hope you two can wait until after the marriage before doing this sort of thing."

"After all, having something to look forward to when you return is better than having nothing."

Chu Feng initially wanted to say something, but Su Rou had a know-it-all appearance. Moreover, as she spoke, she walked up to Chu Feng, and did something that made Chu Feng stupefied. She actually slowly loosened her skirt in front of Chu Feng, and removed it.

At that instant, Su Rou completely exhibited her mature and well-developed, hot and fair body, in front of Chu Feng, and even leaped into Chu Feng's embrace.

“Little Rou, you are?!” Chu Feng panicked a bit. He understood Su Rou’s words, but did not understand why Su Rou would suddenly do all that because in his perspective, although Su Rou was already “owned” by him, she was still a bit against doing the thing between a man and a woman.

“Chu Feng, Little Mei loves you, but I also love you. Little Mei can give anything to you, and I similarly can give anything to you.”

“Chu Feng, please forgive me. Forgive my stubbornness. I only have one sister, Little Mei, so I hope you can love her more than you love me.”

“Just wait a bit longer. Little Mei is sooner or later yours. We sisters are yours. But before that, she can’t do it with you, so let me take her place.”

Su Rou’s gentle tone kept on lingering next to Chu Feng’s ears, and her slender hands tore away the clothes Chu Feng wore just now, and started to trace along Chu Feng’s heated body.

In that situation, no man could continue enduring. Besides, Chu Feng was an impatient, “real” man.

So, his thing that he just controlled exploded again. Ignoring all, he pressed Su Rou underneath. However, this time, Chu Feng learnt his lesson. Before doing the deed, he laid a powerful Spirit Formation, sealing the entire house, preventing anyone from interrupting his good time.

Under the bright round moon, in the room that overflowed with love, one manly and one soft body interweaved, creating an enviable beautiful scene.

Chapter 569: Road of Death

The next morning, when Chu Feng reawakened, he discovered that Su Rou was there no more, but next to the bed, she left behind some bodily fragrance, letting him know that Su Rou did indeed accompany him for a night.

When he walked out of the room and saw Su Rou and Su Mei again, he discovered the sisters were holding each other's hands, and smiling while chatting. Their serene appearances made it look as if nothing happened last night at all.

It made the piece of worry in Chu Feng's heart disappear like a sliver of smoke. He once again felt how strong the two sisters felt about one another, as if nothing could make conflicts arise between them.

"How was it? Did you sleep comfortably last night?" After Su Mei saw Chu Feng, with her little hands behind her back, she walked up to Chu Feng and asked naughtily next to his ear.

"Eh, you little girl..." There was guilt in his heart, so he was a bit embarrassed. He couldn't avoid casting his gaze towards the nearby Su Rou, but discovered she only curled up her red lips and beautifully smiled, then turned her head away and no longer paid attention to Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng could really do absolutely nothing. He even thought that Su Rou told Su Mei what they did last night, or somehow Su Mei learnt about what he and Su Rou did.

But when Su Mei's red lips quivered and a mental message was projected into his ears, Chu Feng was instantly speechless.

"Next time, find a secretive place, and I'll give myself to you then. But be careful, we can't be discovered by my sister or else she will definitely not forgive me~"

Just like that, on the special day of the Moon Festival, though Chu Feng was unable to be "complete" with Su Mei, he shared a bed with Su Rou once again. Although the process in which that happened made Chu

Feng a bit lost, he once again experienced how much the sisters loved him.

The reason why they acted like that was because they were loath to separate with him. After all, from today on, Chu Feng was going to leave the Four Seas Academy and step onto an uncertain trek.

This day was also the final day of the Four Seas Academy's disciple examination. The disciples who passed the examination before already had their respective instructors, and were currently entering the Four Seas Academy.

Of those people, the ones most focused upon were, of course, Su Rou and Su Mei. Their instructors were Divine Instructors! They really gave rise to envy.

But other than Su Rou and Su Mei, there were also many people who were admired, and those included Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. They had already gained the qualifications to enter the Four Seas Academy, and also gained the chance to become disciples of Divine Instructors.

That chance was currently grasped within their own hands. Whether they could successfully become disciple of Divine Instructors, and from then on rise greatly in position, depended on their own abilities.

Those who fought to become disciples of Divine Instructors were all from the young generation. Their strengths were not weak, and they were all geniuses. However, in Chu Feng's eyes, not a single one could defeat him.

Looking at those in the young generation, the ones with the highest strengths were only in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, and if Chu Feng used the power of his lightning, his cultivation would also enter the sixth level of the Heaven realm. In the same level, who could defeat Chu Feng? At least, up until now, only Zi Ling could.

In reality, not only Chu Feng, even Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi didn't have too much pressure. Not only did they destroy all the obstructions in the examination, they even defeated all their opponents, and at the end, became disciples of Divine Instructors, genius disciples

who would be gazed upon by many.

In the process, they, with the cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm, fiercely beat up Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, who were both in the fourth level of the Heaven realm. Those two battles were one of the few, out of the many, fights that made people exclaim in admiration.

Chu Feng also felt happy for Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang when they were stared at by countless admirative and praiseful gazes as they become disciples of their respective Divine Instructors and also became disciples who were the most excellent and had the most potential in the Four Seas Academy.

It at least meant that they weren't only geniuses in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Even in the Eastern Sea Region, they similarly could make a standing for themselves.

After Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi successfully became disciples of Divine Instructors, Chu Feng decided to leave on the exact same day because on this day, those who weren't able to enter the Four Seas Academy had to leave.

But when leaving, Chu Feng didn't let them send him off because he didn't want to leave on a sad note. He wanted to keep a cheerful heart before stepping onto his next journey.

And just as he arrived in front of the Teleport Formation, Chu Feng recognized two familiar figures. It was Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. Currently, bestowed by Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, their noses were blue and their faces swollen. As they walked in the crowds of people, many whispers arose. It was extremely shameful.

Seeing their lips moving slightly yet no sound was made, Chu Feng knew that they were sending mental messages.

So, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power, and with its immense strength, caught strands of their voices, and with that, listened into their mental conversation.

"God damn, we were actually defeated by those two guys in the third

level of the Heaven realm. This time, we've truly lost a lot of face."

"Sigh. If Big Brother Shentu Lang were here, he could definitely fiercely give those two a lesson."

"Of course! If he was here, out of this year's new disciples, he would have definitely become the most well-known person. When would it even be their turn to take the spotlight?"

"But, why hasn't he still not arrived yet? Didn't we say he was going to enter the Four Seas Academy as well? What the hell is he doing?!"

"Who knows? But I'm sure Big Brother Shentu Lang must have his own plans."

Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, indeed, were complaining about everything because of their defeat in battle. Moreover, from their words, Chu Feng also confirmed that they were indeed in the same group as Shentu Jiang.

"Oh? Who's this? Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai right? What happened? I haven't seen you for only a day, yet your heads have become pig heads?"

"Ah, I know. You must have taken quite a few blows from today's fight right? Who was it from? It wouldn't be from Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang right?"

"This is truly embarrassing you guys! Last night, you even put the word out there, and said you were going to beat up Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. How come today, when you really go fight, you're beaten to this state? So you only know how to brag and nothing else?" After eavesdropping on their mental conversation, Chu Feng intentionally walked up to them and jeered loudly, as if wishing the entire world could hear him.

"You!!" The two already had stomachs full of anger, so when they were made fun of by Chu Feng, their faces immediately turned livid, and were so furious that their veins popped out.

"Hmph." But the two of them did not say much, and turned around with a cold snort because they were, indeed, defeated. It was something that

everyone knew. If they continued defending themselves or hurling insults, they would get nothing but more ridicule. So, they could only endure.

"Ahh, don't leave! Come chat for a bit longer!"

"What? You can't take a few more words? Don't you know what 'wise advice goes against the ear' means?"

"Trash! If I were you two, I would have burrowed myself into some hole in the wall. Pfs, some dog-butt Shentu Dynasty. So it's a place specialized for raising up garbage!" Although the two of them already turned around, Chu Feng did not let them go easily. His insults were extremely loud, and only after the two of them disappeared from his line of sight did Chu Feng smile lightly, as if some evil plot succeeded.

Quickly after, relying on Teleport Formations, Chu Feng left the Four Seas Academy. However, he found out that two people were secretly following him.

As for who those two were, Chu Feng knew even with his eyes shut. They were definitely Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. The two of them were already displeased at Chu Feng, and just now, he mocked them in such a way as well. How could they truly endure that?

This time, by following him, they naturally aimed to give Chu Feng a lesson. Little did they know that the humiliation before was merely a scheme set up by Chu Feng. They even thought they could fiercely beat Chu Feng up, but were ignorant to the fact that they were already led onto a road of death.

Chapter 570: Brothers Meeting

Within the Four Seas Academy, arbitrary fighting was forbidden, and even more so, arbitrary murder was forbidden.

So, if Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai wished to take care of Chu Feng, they had to follow him all the way until he left the territory of the Four Seas Academy before they could do anything to him.

But Chu Feng was not as easy to handle as they had thought. After he left the grounds of the Four Seas Academy, Chu Feng used the bodily martial skill, the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens, for quicker movement.

Although the speed of the Dragon Travelling Through Nine Heavens was not comparable to the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, it was still very fast. It forced Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai to use everything they had, yet they could still not catch up to Chu Feng.

Although the two of them could not catch up, they weren't left behind by him either. They advanced forward with the same level of speed. At first, the two of them even thought that Chu Feng discovered them, but, they found out in no point in time was he anxious, and moreover, he even sang as he travelled. How was that leisure attitude even close to preparing for the arrival of an enemy?

So, the two brothers, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, determined that Chu Feng had yet to discover them. But Chu Feng's method of movement was too aberrant. Not only was his speed quick, when he moved, he didn't even sleep or rest, didn't eat or drink, and when he moved, he continued non-stop for several days.

But naturally, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, who hated Chu Feng and the others down to the bone, and could only vent their anger by killing Chu Feng, were not willing to give up so easily. So, they kept on following him. Only after entering the grounds of the luxurious tavern did they discover that traces of Chu Feng disappeared.

"Dammit! Where did that brat go? How come he suddenly

disappeared?!" Shentu Jiang stood above the luxurious tavern and looked down, yet could not see even Chu Feng's shadow. He couldn't help panicking because more and more, he felt that they were possibly being toyed around by Chu Feng.

"This is quite familiar... Heavens! This place, isn't this place that tavern we rested in when we first came to the Eastern Sea Region?" After Shentu Hai detailedly observed the things below, he suddenly became shocked.

"That's true! At that time, there was still people circulating in this place, and it was even very prosperous! Why has it been destroyed to this state? Something must have happened here." Hearing Shentu Hai's words, Shentu Jiang discovered as well that indeed, it was the tavern they had took a rest in before.

gulugulugulu But as they were baffled, from the center of the tavern, burst of strange sounds rang out.

"Some sound is coming from over there, let's quickly go check it out." Hearing those sounds, Shentu Jiang's and Shentu Hai's expression changed. They even thought that they had found Chu Feng, speedily flying towards the direction of the sound.

"This, what is this?" But when the two flew over and saw the object that the noise came from, they hurried covered their mouths and noses, almost vomiting.

Because, under them, there was a churning pit of excrement. Currently, bubbles kept on forming from the excrement, and gulugulu sounds came from it as well. At the same time, a revolting stench permeated that land.

boom But abruptly, within the pit of excrement, an explosion burst out. At the same time, like a volcano erupting, excrement soared into the sky.

"Damn!" Seeing the yellow-coloured object shooting straight towards them, Shentu Jiang's and Shentu Hai's faces greened. They quickly used their strongest bodily martial skills and dodged to the side. Only by doing that did they avoid being tainted by the poop.

"Haha, I've finally gotten out!"

But just as the two of them celebrated their successful evasion of such a catastrophe, an elated voice suddenly rang out in the sky full of excrement. Looking towards the origin of the voice, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were immediately dumbstruck, and even rubbed their eyes quickly because they did not dare to believe the scene happening in front of their eyes.

Because, at that very instant, they recognized the person who was standing in the air and insanely laughing. He was the number one genius of the Shentu Dynasty, Shentu Lang.

"Big Brother Shentu Lang, it's really you?!" With inconceivable emotions, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai yelled out at the same time.

"Little Jiang, Little Hai? What are you two doing here?" Seeing Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, Shentu Lang's expression shifted, feeling very surprised.

"Big Brother, that's something that we should ask you... Why didn't you participate in the Four Seas Academy's examination, and why were you there?" Shentu Jiang pointed at the pit of excrement underneath, replying to a question with a question.

"Ahh, it's a long story, but damn, I truly stumbled upon bad luck." Hearing Shentu Jiang ask about it, Shentu Lang didn't hide anything and roughly outlined what happened to him.

"So something like that happened." And after knowing that Shentu Lang was sealed into the pit of excrement by a person even younger than him, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were both flabbergasted, feeling quite a bit of disbelief.

After all, they understood Shentu Lang's strength. He was the number one genius in the several hundred years of Shentu Dynasty history. That appellation was absolutely not falsely gained, and they even felt that if Shentu Lang had participated in the Four Seas Academy's examination, he would have become the most well-known person there. Perhaps he would have even become the strongest person in the examination.

Yet at present, someone's strength was actually above Shentu Lang's

while that person was younger than him. How could they not be astounded?

"That's right. Little Jiang, Little Hai, at this time, the Four Seas Academy's examination should have finished right? Why aren't you waiting inside the academy, and have come to this place?" Shentu Lang curiously asked.

"Don't mention that. We originally came here chasing after a brat, but who would have thought after arriving at this place, he disappeared." Shentu Jiang said with a face packed with anger. The more he thought about himself and Shentu Hai, the more they felt that they might have been tricked.

"Little Jiang, what exactly happened? Quickly tell me." Seeing their fury, Shentu Lang knew that his two brothers might have been wronged.

Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai didn't conceal anything either. They roughly narrated the events that had occurred to Shentu Lang.

"This is truly preposterous. There's actually someone who dares to bully my brothers like that?!" Indeed, after knowing about it, Shentu Lang gritted his teeth with overflowing anger, then patted his chest and guaranteed, "Little Jiang, Little Hai, don't worry. From what you've said, he shouldn't have run too far. Right now, I'll help you two search for him. With my strength, he shouldn't even think of escaping from my palm."

"That's great! Big Brother, if it's you, not to mention him, even those few in the Four Seas Academy will not end up well!" At that instant, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai acted as if they had found their backbone. Their faces were full of happiness and excitement.

"No need to look for me. I'm here." But just at that time, a loud and clear voice suddenly exploded in the air. Soon after an imposing dragon's roar suddenly resonated as well.

At that instant, they saw wind blowing everywhere in the sky. The clouds shifted around, and a huge azure-coloured dragon, with powerful might, appeared in the sky.

And on that huge azure dragon's head, there stood a person. That person was none other than Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, you actually dare to appear in front of us."

"Big Brother, it's him. He's the person who humiliated the two of us publicly. Today, you must lend a hand to us to give this brat a good lesson!" When they saw Chu Feng, Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were endlessly ecstatic.

But when they cast their gazes at Shentu Lang, awaiting his attack to torture Chu Feng for a good while, their faces couldn't help changing, and with extremely nervous tones, they shouted simultaneously, "Big Brother, you, what's wrong with you?!"

Chapter 571: Who?

Presently, Shentu Lang no longer had his former arrogance. His face was full of terror.

He, quivering, held up his hand, pointed at Chu Feng who stood atop the azure dragon in the sky, then asked Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, "You, you two, the person you two were chasing wouldn't be him, would it?"

"It is him, Big Brother. Is there a problem?" Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai were not idiots, so when they saw Shentu Lang's expression, they knew some things must have happened.

"Dammit. The person who sealed me in this place is him! The person we were talking about are the same!" Shentu Lang spoke those words with a voice of hatred, but also helplessness.

"What? The person who defeated you was him? How is that possible? He's only in the third level of the Heaven realm!"

After hearing Shentu Lang's words, Shentu Jiang's and Shentu Hai's complexion changed. They couldn't help looking at Chu Feng again, examining him carefully. Although Chu Feng's current atmosphere was indeed extraordinary, in their eyes, it should still be impossible for him to defeat Shentu Lang.

"There's no time for any explanations! Run! I'll hold him off for you. Do not look back, and scram! The farther you go the better!"

Shentu Lang suddenly howled, and while doing that, he grabbed Shentu Jiang's and Shentu Hai's shoulders, and flung his arms with power that could uproot a mountain. Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai, like arrows, shot towards the distant sky.

"Brat, you dare to lock me inside the pit of excrement and forcefully use such waste to prolong my life! I have never received such humiliation in my life, and even if I cannot defeat you, I will not stop fighting until one of us dies!"

The current Shentu Lang was completely different from the past. His gaze was like a torch. His bloodlust overflowed. He, who embraced a determined heart to die, had not the slightest bit of fear. He only had thoughts to delay Chu Feng.

bang Finally, he stepped forward. Boundless aura exploded from the ground as he rushed towards the clouds, heading straight for Chu Feng.

Holding nothing back, he released the aura of the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It surged forward, and even the air twisted when it passed by. The might it had was not weak at all.

But in Chu Feng's eyes, no matter what Shentu Lang did, he would never be able to defeat him. He was like an ant in front of him. A raise of a hand or foot could crush him.

So, a hint of a smile formed, and he said, "There's quite the bond you have between you and your brothers, and because of that, I won't touch your Shentu Dynasty. But, you three brothers must die. This is the reasonable price you pay for your own actions."

Immediately after he finished speaking, lightning surged within his eyes, and the Heaven power within his body started to quickly change as well, causing his aura to instantly rise rapidly.

Fourth level, fifth level, sixth level. In merely an instant, Chu Feng's aura rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm.

boom After his aura finished adjusting itself, Chu Feng wasted no breaths saying anything. He opened his five fingers slightly, he leveled his arm slightly, and very easily, casually, palmed towards Shentu Lang who was dashing straight at him.

The earth and heavens were shocked by that palming. The might it contained was strong; it was as powerful as a dragon!

boom rumble rumble rumble

With such a simple palm, Chu Feng overwhelmed Shentu Lang's aura by several times.

At that instant, explosions burst out in the sky, the winds and clouds were altered, and the world trembled, as if everything went into chaos.

Looking at the roiling Heaven power coming towards him, Shentu Lang's complexion distorted greatly as well. Although he had a very grand demeanor before, and even tossed away any thoughts of living, when he truly saw Chu Feng's strength and truly faced death, he still feared.

But, this time, Chu Feng really did not give him any chances of survival. So, one saw only see the Heaven power streak across the sky, and the places it passed were all torn into pieces.

As for Shentu Lang, he was the same. With a puchi, the number one genius of the Shentu Dynasty, a cultivation expert in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, became a pool of blood within the turbulence of Heaven power. He could not even form a Consciousness.

"Heavens! Is-is-is he still human?!"

"How can he be that terrifying? He is simply like a demon!"

In the distant sky, there stood two people. They were precisely Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai. They had not left yet, because they did not believe that Chu Feng could kill Shentu Lang.

But at that instant, they did. Chu Feng, who they didn't even put into their eyes, was the most terrifying out of the five-man group. At that instant, they were truly afraid. It was impossible for them, who personally saw Chu Feng kill, to be not afraid.

whoosh But just at that moment, Chu Feng who stood in the faraway sky, turned his head around. He cast his cold gaze at Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

"Crap, he has seen us! Run, run!!"

Their hearts immediately wavered when they met Chu Feng's eyes. Their legs went limp, as if their blood was frozen. That kind of fear made them crawl back up while in the sky, and they almost fell down. Only after struggling for a good while could they stabilize their bodies.

swish

But just as they prepared to use their bodily martial skills and escape with all they had, a burst of gale whooshed past them from behind. An enormous monster had appeared in front of them.

That enormous monster had shining green scales and mist surrounded it. It was a huge azure dragon, and on the head of the azure dragon, Chu Feng was chillingly staring at them. Though it lacked strong killing intent, his icy gaze was still frightening.

poof

"Big Brother Chu Feng, we were wrong! We had eyes but couldn't recognize Mount Tai! We shouldn't have been disrespectful to you, so please give us a chance!" Shentu Jiang immediately knelt in the air and pleaded.

bang bang

Shentu Hai was even fiercer. Not only did he kneel in mid-air, he first unforgivingly slapped himself two times, before speaking painfully with tears and snot, "Master Chu Feng, it was my fault, it was my fault! I shouldn't have looked for trouble, I shouldn't have insulted your friends! Please, as a great character, have benevolence! Please be broad-minded with us, and give us a chance to start anew! I'm begging you, have mercy!"

Chu Feng's emotions did not shift in the slightest when he looked at those two, because when he wished to kill a person, he would not be swayed.

So, Chu Feng said only one sentence, "Both of you are less than Shentu Lang."

boom Immediately after he spoke, his thoughts spun around. Chu Feng did not use Heaven power, but Spirit Formation power. Blue-coloured Spirit Formations became a cage, and from all directions, locked the two of them inside.

Quickly after, it rapidly shrunk, then with two "poofs", they were forcibly crushed into pieces, and died very thoroughly.

whoosh

He killed them with lightning-like methods. Then, Chu Feng spread open his palm slightly, then two faint lights, like meteors going backwards, flew towards his palms from the place they died at.

Looking closely, they were two Cosmos Sacks, and those two Cosmos Sack were naturally the remnants of Shentu Jiang and Shentu Hai.

whoosh However, just as he obtained the Cosmos Sacks, Chu Feng flipped his palm, throwing them into his pocket, then cast his incomparably serious gaze behind him, and said, “Who?”

Chapter 572: The Queer Taikou

"Quite sensitive Spirit power. You've actually detected me after I approached." Just as Chu Feng spoke, a nearby space in the sky twisted. A single-legged old man appeared inside Chu Feng's line of sight, and was chuckling while looking at him.

"Who are you. Why are you following me?"

After seeing that person, Chu Feng couldn't help lightly knitting his brows because before, he wasn't really able to ascertain whether a person was near him or not. He only felt that something was off, but couldn't confirm if it was really a person.

The shout just now was merely a test, so he didn't expect a person to truly come out. Thus, that old man's appearance really did frighten Chu Feng.

In addition, not only did the old man in front of him wear clothing of a Four Seas Academy instructor, he even had unfathomably deep cultivation. And just now, Chu Feng killed two disciples from the Four Seas Academy. All of that made the situation head towards a disaster.

"You don't need to be afraid. Although I am from the Four Seas Academy, I won't charge you for any crimes because of two useless disciples. Rather, my thoughts are the same as yours; I feel that those two disciples should be killed." The single-legged old man seemed to know what Chu Feng was worried about, and quickly smiled, explaining.

"Who are you? What are you planning by following me?" Chu Feng only determined that his strength was very strong, but could not determine whether he was an enemy or a friend. So, he was very cautious towards him.

"Hehe. My name is Taikou, and I'm a Divine Instructor of the Four Seas Academy. I have but one goal for coming here: I feel that you're a genius, so I hope you can become my disciple. If you do, I will do all I can to develop you." Taikou was quite straightforward, and spoke his intentions directly.

“What? You’re a Divine Instructor? You want me as your disciple?!” And after the old man spoke his words, Chu Feng was shocked.

Given his strength, he was indeed qualified to be a Divine Instructor, and was even a lot stronger than the Divine Instructors Chu Feng saw before. So, when he stated his name and identity, the first thing he thought of was that the old man in front of his eyes was very possibly the strangest but most powerful instructor out of the Ten Divine Instructors.

But that person clearly never took any disciples, and clearly Chu Feng wasn’t a Four Seas Academy disciple. Yet, he actually ran over here and said he wanted him as his disciple? What was all that for? It really made Chu Feng a bit speechless, and made him very stupefied.

“When I, Taikou, speak, I am always straightforward. My friend Chu Feng, I just wonder... are you willing to or not?” Taikou said with a light smile.

And at that instant, Chu Feng felt even more uneasy. Since the old man in front of him knew his name, he seemed to have done a bit of investigation. But Chu Feng still didn’t understand why he wanted to take him as a disciple. But, regardless if it was real or fake, or if there were other intentions, Chu Feng did not plan to enter the Four Seas Academy.

So, he clasped his hands, and politely said, “It is my honour to able to catch your eyes, Senior Taikou. However, I haven’t entered the Four Seas Academy. It doesn’t seem to be too appropriate to be your disciple given that, right?”

“Don’t worry. As long as you are willing to be my disciple, you will naturally be a disciple of the Four Seas Academy. Rules such as ‘you must pass the examination’ are only restrictions for ordinary people. You have no need for them.” Taikou waved his hand. His attitude towards Chu Feng was very friendly.

But Chu Feng truly did not plan to enter the Four Seas Academy. So, he could only shake his head, saying, “Senior Taikou, I am truly sorry. I do not wish to enter the Four Seas Academy.”

“Oh?” Hearing his words, Taikou’s sword-like brows inverted, and he

seemed a bit displeased, but that displeasure passed by with in a flash. Very soon, he sighed, releasing the tension inside him, and said, “Those who wish to become my disciple are not suitable for me, and those I wish to become my disciple do not find me suitable. Such is fate. Whatever, I capitulate.”

As he spoke, Taikou turned around, and disappeared. But at the same time, a mental message was projected into Chu Feng’s ears.

“My friend Chu Feng, I’ll be blind to today’s matters, but in the future, if anyone dares to bully you in the Eastern Sea Region, you can use my name, Taikou. If there comes a day that you want to become my disciple, I, Taikou, welcome you with open arms.”

“Thank you Senior Taikou!” Chu Feng quickly saluted and thanked, but he did not receive any response from Taikou.

After waiting there for a while, Chu Feng concentrated and used his Spirit power to observe his surroundings. But, he could not detect any change, so he determined that Taikou truly left.

“That instructor is really as the rumours say. Extremely odd.” Chu Feng was fairly speechless when facing Taikou, but he did leave quite a nice impression behind. Although Taikou’s strange nature was a bit queer, at least he seemed to be an honest and broad-minded person.

But after experiencing such an event, Chu Feng also became more alert. He wore the Transformational Mask he got from the Hundred-faced Old Man back then, and made the illusion of an ordinarily-faced middle-aged man with a large build.

Chu Feng decided he would show himself to the public as that man. With that, even if he were to stir up some trouble, it wouldn’t affect himself, nor would it affect Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and the others.

Moreover, Chu Feng gave himself a new name: Wuqing. As for the reason, it was very simple as well. In order to reach his goal, Chu Feng had to be a heartless 1 person.

After changing his face, Chu Feng set his first destination. The Lovers

Terrace.

Qiushui Fuyan was in the Lovers Terrace. She was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, and also Huangfu Haoyue's former lover.

So, Chu Feng felt that when Huangfu Haoyue still held his rationality, he should have said something to Qiushui Fuyan. Thus, Qiushui Fuyan was likely the only other person who likely knew Chu Feng's ancestry.

However, the Eastern Sea Region was vast. If he wished to reach the Lovers Terrace, he would have to spend quite a bit of time.

Before that though, Chu Feng needed to raise his cultivation. So, he first found a hidden place, and prepared to refine the Son of Magma.

"Chu Feng, why not take out the Elite Armament fan Shentu Jiang obtained from the auction? Perhaps you can discover something." However, just as he found a hidden place and before he started refining, Eggy spoke.

"That fan? On the fan, there is indeed a picture, but it's a bit blurry and there's no way to determine what is imprinted on it. I can't even be sure if it's a map or not." Chu Feng said.

"Idiot. To normal people, indeed, it would be challenging, but you're different. Don't forget, you're a person who has cultivated the Heaven's Eyes. With a glance, you can see the essence of something like this."

"Although you haven't thoroughly grasped the Heaven's Eyes, after all, you have already cultivated it for such a long period of time. The picture on the fan coincidentally serves to test the results of your cultivation."

"No matter if it's real or fake, as long as you can confirm either, it means that you have grasped the early stage of the Heaven's Eyes. If you run into a place that conceals strange treasures, you should also see it." Eggy said.

"Yeah! How did I forget about it? The Heaven's Eyes that I cultivated allows me to see things that others cannot. It can also reconstruct incomplete things!" After hearing Eggy's words, Chu Feng realized it as well. Without saying anything more, he quickly took out the Elite

Armament fan.

*

1. “Wuqing” means heartless.

Chapter 573: Sacred Entities

Chu Feng opened up the Elite Armament fan. At a near distance, he found out that on the fan, there was really a picture imprinted.

There were still a few distinct lines on the picture, but most of them were blurry. In a normal person's perspective, indeed, it was a useless picture. However, when Chu Feng gazed with greater detail, his eyes couldn't help lighting up, because he subconsciously felt that there were a few hidden things in the picture.

So, he quickly revolved the Spirit power in his body, and concentrated it into his eyes. When the Spirit power finished condensing, Chu Feng's eyes instantly changed greatly. Special power was inside his eyes, and in short, the fierceness was a bit frightening.

That special change happened because Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes. He grasped but the most basic level of the Heaven's Eyes power. To be more precise, he was just barely into the introduction.

So, he was still unable to control the power of the Heaven's Eyes. If he used it, immediately, it would make his gaze appear incomparably ferocious.

However, if Chu Feng became proficient in the Heaven's Eyes, he could make such ferociousness fade away, and invisibly see through everything. It was very powerful.

hmm

And the most mystical thing was when Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes and looked back at the Elite Armament fan's picture, he discovered that the picture was actually changing. Many hazy lines started to become clear.

At the end, the initially very blurry picture, being gazed at by Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, became a half-finished map, and that map was, indeed, a treasure map.

In the heart of the map there were four big words. Spiritual Wolf

Immortal Mountain.

"Spiritual Wolf?"

"Organisms formed by the congregation of natural essences, because they have unique spiritual natures and bodies, are named Spiritual Beings. When Spiritual Beings are successfully shaped, they can shock the world with their supreme divine might."

"Chu Feng! If this map is real, you will definitely be able to find a very superb treasure, because the Spiritual Awareness of Spiritual Beings are great supplements for cultivation!" Just by seeing the four words Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain, Eggy exclaimed excitedly.

"You're right, but sadly, the level of my Heaven's Eyes is not sufficient. I can merely find the rough location of the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain, and I am also unable to restore the paths within the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain on this map. I'm afraid it is not easy to find the Spiritual Lair and Spiritual Veins."

"Besides, even more, I cannot determine the genuineness of this map." Chu Feng sighed with a bit of regret.

After some Pulse Searching Method studying, Chu Feng roughly understood the various types of treasures hidden in the world.

One was the tomb type, meaning the location of powerful cultivators' tombs, or the artifacts constructed by powerful cultivators. Most of them were manmade.

The other was the Natural Oddity type formed from the gathering of natural essence. However, Natural Oddities branched out to many different types as well.

One were Queer Objects. For example, they were flowers, grasses, trees formed by natural essence accumulation, or extremely strange rocks, or just some random odd things.

Those things, despite containing enormous power and even had intelligence and the ability to move, ultimately had different bodies than humans or beasts. So, they were named as Queer Objects.

Other than Queer Objects, another type were Spiritual Beings. Spiritual Beings were similarly born from the accumulation of natural essence, but after maturation, not only would they acquire intelligence as well as power that belonged to themselves, they would even have a body of a human or a beast.

Spiritual Beings always took longer to form than Queer Objects, but after they did, they would always be stronger. Some would then just hide within the mountains, some would just stir up chaos in a certain area, but one thing unquestionable was their strength.

According to the indication of the map, the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain was obviously an area where a Spiritual Being was being formed. When a Spiritual Being was being formed, it would use the earth as its body. Their own awareness was hidden within the earth.

Along with the Spiritual Awareness' growth in strength, their external telluric appearance becomes clearer as well. When matured, the earth and the Spiritual Awareness combines, and at that time, the vessel it grew in, an enormous mountain range, or a special forest, becomes its real physical body. They were incomparably huge, and they had peerless divine might.

From one sentence of the Pulse Searching Method's chant, Chu Feng learnt that there was once a Spiritual Being with the body of a continent after it matured. From that, it could be seen how strong Spiritual Beings were.

And if he were to find the Spiritual Being, what Chu Feng aimed to do was to search for the Spiritual Awareness within the special land because Spiritual Awarenesses were great cultivation resources. They were the foundations of Spiritual Beings, and to cultivators, there were endless beneficial effects.

But how could Spiritual Awarenesses be that easy to find? First, you had to find the entrance, also known as the Spiritual Lair. Then, you had to find the paths to the Spiritual Awareness after entering the Spiritual Lair. Those were also known as the Spiritual Veins. So, even if you found the

entrance, you had to find the veins. If one wished to obtain Spiritual Awareness, they had to plan and spend quite a bit.

That map indeed recorded the place where a Spiritual Being concealed itself, and likely also recorded the positions of the Spiritual Lair and Spiritual Veins, but Chu Feng could do nothing as with his current Heaven's Eyes, he could simply not clear up Spiritual Lair on the map, nor the lines of the Spiritual Veins. That also infinitely increased the difficulty in finding the Spiritual Awareness.

However, that was not the most important thing. Most importantly, even if Chu Feng restored a large portion of the map, he could not determine if it was real or not.

"Ahh, if you have to blame something, you can only blame your incompetence in cultivating the Heaven's Eyes. If you had cultivated them well, how could you possibly not see the genuineness of this map?"

"Regardless, you're in control. To go or not to go, choose yourself. I will not meddle at all." Eggy poke at his hardships jokingly.

"Really, I didn't plan to go. After all, you also know I still have a weak grasp over the Pulse Searching Method."

"But, according to the indications on this map, the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain is truly not far from this place. Since we're so close, it's rather worth it to go take a look. It wouldn't matter if it's real or fake, since I should be able to tell when I see the real Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain." Chu Feng smiled and said.

Spiritual Beings could not be underestimated. Although they took a long time to shape, several tens of thousands of years if short, several tens of millions of years if long, Spiritual Awarenesses that existed for only several thousand years, or several hundred years, or even a few dozen years, still had very outstanding effects.

Besides, looking at the Elite Armament fan, it seemed to be a bit aged. If that map was real, it meant that the Spiritual Being inside the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain likely existed for quite some time. Of course, Chu Feng was not willing to give it up.

“Tch. If you want to go, then go! No need to make up excuses. But before going, increase your strength.” Eggy naughtily curled her lips. She understood Chu Feng very clearly. Not to mention it being close, even if it were far, judging by his character he would definitely go and check it out.

“Mm. It’s time see what this Son of Magma tastes like.”

Chu Feng chuckled. After putting away the Elite Armament fan in his hand, he took out the Son of Magma. Looking at it, Chu Feng’s face was filled with expectation.

That thing was very impressive. Saying that it was a Queer Object wasn’t too right, and saying it was a Spiritual Being wasn’t right either. Queer Objects were not humanoid, nor did they really have physical bodies.

So, precisely speaking, Queer Objects were spiritual consciousnesses without physical bodies of their own.

As for Spiritual Beings, they could only use the earth itself as a body after maturation. Only then could they count as having a physical body.

So, it could be said that Spiritual Beings were Spiritual Awarenesses that could combine with the earth.

But the Son of Magma started out as a humanoid shape. Its appearance was the exact same as a human infant, and the natural energy it contained was very terrifying as well.

So, Chu Feng determined that the Son of Magma was another type of Natural Oddity, also the strongest and most terrifying type. A Sacred Entity.

Chapter 574: Wolf Ivory Mountain

Sacred Entities were fated to be stronger than Queer Objects and Spiritual Beings.

However, Sacred Entities were existences that people always feared and dared not to disturb.

The energy that they, regardless if they had a shape or not, contained was too berserk. It could simply not be used by cultivators, and those who dared to refine them were undoubtedly suicidal.

So, though Sacred Entities were powerful, in reality, they were useless to cultivators. They were only existences that people dreaded.

But to Chu Feng, the Sacred Entity was a great cultivation supplement within great cultivation supplements. For example, the Son of Magma in Chu Feng's hands currently. It was going to raise Chu Feng's cultivation greatly.

"Let me see what you taste like!"

After Chu Feng finished the appropriate preparations, he impatiently started to refine the Son of Magma. Because of its body, there was something special about refining it. Chu Feng could not consume it directly.

So, he had to first use a Spirit Formation to bind it, then he had to enter the formation himself. After doing that, he used the power of the Spirit Formation, which borrowed the Source Energy consumption method, and refined the Son of Magma bit by bit.

hmm

When a nearly invisible strand of gas was taken out of the Son of Magma's body and after it entered his own body, Chu Feng strongly felt how wild the power was.

If merely a single strand was like that already, Chu Feng could really imagine how berserk the body the Son of Magma was.

However, the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's body was not there for a joke. No matter how much wilder the power got, as long as it entered Chu Feng's body, it would be immediately consumed by the Divine Lightning in his dantian. There would not even be any residue remaining.

Along with Chu Feng's success in refining the strand of aura, the Refinement Spirit Formation also successfully functioned. Layers and layers of powerful aura started to endlessly surge out of the Son of Magma's body and enter Chu Feng's own body. They were all absorbed and refined by Chu Feng.

At the end, the Son of Magma's body started to split. The faint gas started to become fiery-red gas.

With that, the Son of Magma's power became even wilder, but to Chu Feng, it mattered not as he continued absorbing. Like that, the terrifying existence, the indestructible Sacred Entity, was thoroughly refined by Chu Feng.

After refining the Son of Magma completely, Chu Feng's aura rose from the third level of the Heaven realm to the fifth level of the Heaven realm. Although he had already expected that, after he truly stepped into the fifth level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng was still elated. His happy face was so happy that flowers bloomed.

It was because also, with his own Divine Lightning's power, Chu Feng cultivation could become equivalent to the eighth level of the Heaven realm. The eighth level of the Heaven realm! In addition to Chu Feng's special methods, it was not ridiculous to deal with those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. So, with Chu Feng's current cultivation, he was nearly invincible within the Heaven realm.

Although cultivation like that was only ordinary in the Eastern Sea Region, it greatly increased what Chu Feng had to protect his life. After all, Chu Feng only broke into the Heaven realm recently, but so soon already he was that near to becoming a Martial Lord. All of that completely relied on the assistance of all sorts of Natural Oddities and cultivation resources.

More and more, Chu Feng realized the strength of his Divine Lightning. As long as there were powerful cultivation resources available, Chu Feng did need to worry about being unable to break through. No matter how much higher the realms were, Chu Feng had no problem entering them.

"Haha, it feels so good! It is truly a Sacred Entity. Although its formation was quite recent, as it only formed for several years, Sacred Entities are after all, Sacred Entities! The Source Energy of Sacred Entities is indeed greatly beneficial!"

And as Chu Feng rejoiced, Eggy also cheered. It turned out that as Chu Feng refined the Son of Magma, the Source Energy within the Sacred Entity was also absorbed by Eggy. Her current cultivation had rose from the second level of the Heaven realm to the sixth level of the Heaven realm. It was even one level higher than Chu Feng.

"You've actually gotten a better harvest than I did." Chu Feng also discovered that change, and other than being shocked, he also felt happy for Eggy.

Eggy was very strong. The unique power she grasped was very terrifying too, and even though Eggy was in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, in terms of her real battle prowess, those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm wouldn't be able to defeat her.

And as Eggy was Chu Feng's assistant, when his assistant became stronger once again, naturally, Chu Feng was joyful.

"This Son of Magma is truly a Sacred Entity, or else it would be impossible for it to contain Source Energy. Moreover, the length of its formation was very short. It has probably only been forming for a few years. It likely didn't die because it left the depths of the ground, but rather it died before even leaving the underground world."

"The time it had been congregating for is too short. Although it had the appearance of an infant, in reality, it had yet to have real life. Or else, we would have gained a lot more from it."

"Sacred Entities are, after all, Sacred Entities. Even though it was just a few years, it is still this effective. What level of enhancement would it

bring if it had formed for several tens of thousands of years? Haha." Eggy was truly excited. Her stagnant cultivation finally moved forward again, so she truly felt exhilarated.

"Yeah! It didn't even have true life and had only been congregating for several years, yet it already brings such effects. If it had been condensed for several tens of thousands of years, what would have happened instead?" Chu Feng was similarly ecstatic. After experiencing the power of the Sacred Entity, Chu Feng hoped even more that the Spiritual Being was real.

Although Spiritual Beings were far from being comparable to Sacred Entities, if the time it condensed for was long, then to Chu Feng, it would still have great effects.

So, after both Chu Feng and Eggy made their breakthroughs, they impatiently restarted their journey, and headed towards the so-called Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain as stated on the map.

But since it was the first time Chu Feng came to the Eastern Sea Region, he was not familiar to anything. When he asked for directions on the road, there was no one who knew what the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain was.

But luckily, Chu Feng was a World Spiritist. With the map on hand, he himself could find the general locations, and finally, Chu Feng found the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain.

However, despite being marked as the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain on the map, it wasn't called the Spiritual Wolf Immortal Mountain by the locals. It was called the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

According to the locals' introduction, the Wolf Ivory Mountain was originally a nameless mountain. Roughly a thousand years ago, it suddenly rose from the grounds.

However, within the changes of the years, several mountain peaks were endlessly altered. At the end, they became as sharp as wolf ivories, so the mountain was named the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Coming outside the Wolf Ivory Mountain and looking at it from the ground, it was indeed as how the locals described it as. The highest mountain peaks of the Wolf Ivory Mountain were like wolf ivories. They were very special, and very strange as well.

"This mountain range is not simple. It seems like the map is more or less real."

Just by seeing the mountain peaks that were like wolf ivories, Chu Feng determined that the Wolf Ivory Mountain was very special, and in order to observe the mountain even better, Chu Feng rose into the sky, and only stopped when he was several tens of thousands of meters off from the ground and could put the entirety of the Wolf Ivory Mountain into his eyes.

"This is!!"

When Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes to gaze down from above to see the Wolf Ivory Mountain, his calm face immediately changed because with the power of the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng discovered that it wasn't just a few ivories that made up the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Other than the ivories, there was even a hazy outline. The body of a huge wolf!

That, truly, was a place where a Spiritual Being congregated, and according to Chu Feng's estimations, if that Spiritual Being finished congregating, it could not be underestimated, and it would be a very terrifying existence.

But currently, there were only a few ivories that were physically formed by the Spiritual Being. However, at least it meant that the Spiritual Being had been congregating for a minimal of a thousand years. If the Spiritual Awareness was still inside, it likely also congregated quite a bit of spiritual power.

Chapter 575: Deciding to Interfere

Chu Feng stood in the air, looking down. After observing for a long time, he was still unable to see where the Spiritual Lair was at, let alone the positions of the Spiritual Veins and Spiritual Awareness.

As he could do nothing, Chu Feng had no choice but to fly down and start to search the vast Wolf Ivory Mountain. He wanted find the Spiritual Lair by searching every single inch.

boom, boom, boom

But just as Chu Feng arrived at the middle section of the continuous mountain from the east side of the mountain, he heard deafening explosions bursting out endlessly.

Approaching closer and taking a look, Chu Feng discovered that it was a battle between a Monstrous Beast and a person.

That Monstrous Beast was twenty meters tall, dozens of meters long, and as it stood there it was like a small hill.

Its appearance was like a pangolin. All over its body there was indestructible armor, but more importantly, it had the cultivation of the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

That Monstrous Beast could not be looked down upon. For each step it took, everything within the circumference of a hundred miles would shake. The surrounding trees were already forcibly split and had fallen from the shock.

The huge hammer it held in its hand was even incomparably ferocious. Every time it spun a wild gale would be created. When it slammed down, it would create a deep pit. There were already thousands of holes in the mountain range it was in, making it completely unrecognizable.

The person fighting against it was not simple either, also being in the seventh level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, it was a female.

She had already passed the middle-ages, and was likely a bit over thirty. She still retained her grace, but more importantly, her cultivation. At that

age, it was very impressive for her to have stepped into the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

After all, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, those who stepped into the seventh level of the Heaven realm could be counted by your own fingers, and not a single one wasn't an old person. To be able to enter that level, at that age, did not mean that she was powerful though. It just meant that the cultivators in the Eastern Sea Region were on a completely different level than the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

boom boom boom

The Monstrous Beast and the woman fought against one another, continuously creating terrifying ripples. But Chu Feng could see that the woman was going to be defeated. At present, all she thought of was how to escape the attacking range of the Monstrous Beast, yet she was firmly held in place by the Monstrous Beast, and had no chance.

"This Monstrous Beast seems a bit off, as if it lost its awareness."

Chu Feng examined with his sharp Spirit power, and discovered the Monstrous Beast was bloodthirsty and furious. Despite the woman asking why it was attacking her again and again, the Monstrous Beast did not reply, and did nothing but continue throwing out fatal attacks at the woman.

It meant that either the Monstrous Beast was insane, or some problem must have appeared. In addition, Chu Feng had speedily went around the mountain range and discovered that even though there were quite a few Monstrous Beasts, there weren't many in the Heaven realm. Why did such a powerful one appear suddenly?

Those strange things overlapped one another, and there must be some reason for all of it. However, regretfully, "it's not related to you, so you need not worry". Chu Feng was not that irked and that bored to care about another person's life. If the person in front of him was swapped with one that had a great disparity in strength against their opponent, or if a cultivator was bullying a commoner, then Chu Feng would definitely interfere.

But right now, two existences with similar strengths were fighting. Perhaps there was some misunderstanding in between them, or grudges, or maybe some other reason, so Chu Feng did not want to bother with it.

In the world of cultivators, the powerful reigned supreme. There were too many battles, too many killings. If Chu Feng interfered with those things every time he saw them happen, he simply couldn't handle it, nor have the time.

"Wait, there are other people." But just as Chu Feng left for a short distance, he discovered that two people were hiding within a nearby forest.

One was a male, one was a female, and both were old. Their cultivations were not weak either, both being in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, even stronger than the woman before. Looking at their clothes, they were likely with that woman.

But currently, not only were they not helping the woman out with her battle against the Monstrous Beast, instead, they were watching as though they were watching two tigers brawling.

Such a twist in circumstances caught Chu Feng's attention. With the propulsion of curiosity, he concealed any traces of himself, and gradually neared. At the same time, he started to concentrate his Spirit power to eavesdrop into their conversation.

"Old guy, are we really going to just watch as the Big Miss gets killed by this Monstrous Beast? Aren't we a bit too black-hearted? After all, in so many years, the family master has treated us quite well." As the old man looked at the scene in the distance, her face revealed some unwillingness.

"Do you think I want this? But our damn boy has been locked up in the Ma family! If we don't follow their instructions to kill her, the one who will die is our boy! Do you hope that she dies, or our brat dies?" The old man rebuked.

"That god damn brat! He really gives us nothing but troubles. If this becomes known, where will our faces go!" Hearing those words, the old woman started to curse, but never mentioned anything regarding saving

the Big Miss. From that, it could be seen that she had decided.

"Our damn brat is disappointing, but if there is blame, the Big Miss can only be blamed for being too serious. The Li family and Ma family have already allied and both hold the key to open that treasure. Right now, the time is ripe, so what's wrong with directly opening it together with the Ma family?"

"But Big Miss disapproved regardless of anything. She did whatever she could to disrupt them and even recruited soldiers with high prices and looked for people she could trust. Clearly, she aimed to strengthen the Li family's power and wanted to open up the treasure alone."

"Obviously, the Ma family will not be happy with her actions. Thinking of ways to remove the Big Miss is some reasonable. So that's why I say that she simply looked to die!"

"In other words, if Big Miss continues this, sooner or later, there will be a huge battle between the Li family and the Ma family. If that happens, many innocents will be dragged in. So, our current actions can be said to be helping the Li family. We are saving the Li family! There is nothing to blame on ourselves." The old man very eloquently turned the betrayal of their own family into such a righteous action.

"Treasure?!" However, Chu Feng's eyes lit up when he heard that word.

If the Wolf Ivory Mountain had a treasure, what treasure was it? The first thing Chu Feng thought of was the Spiritual Being hidden within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Could it be that it was already discovered?

"It seems like I must interfere with today's matters."

At that instant, Chu Feng spun around and flew towards the circle of battle between the woman and the Monstrous Beast. The events of today were very possibly related to the Spiritual Being and the Spiritual Awareness within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

Even if they were unrelated to the Spiritual Awareness, since there was a treasure, Chu Feng would definitely not merely watch with hands inside

his sleeves. He decided to barge into that matter.

“There is no enmity between us. Why must you continue pressing on and desire to kill me?” At that very instant, the woman was completely exhausted. She was completely pressured by the Monstrous Beast. She kept on questioning the Monstrous Beast, but it was useless as it responded with only deafening roars and boundless bloodlust.

wuao And just at that moment, another furious roar sounded. The huge hammer in the Monstrous Beast’s hand slammed downwards at her once again.

At that moment, the woman subconsciously moved to dodge, but she could do nothing as her Heaven power was completely drained. Her speed did not match her thoughts, and it was already impossible to evade that strike.

Chapter 576: Odd

"No!!"

Looking at the huge falling hammer, no matter how much stronger the woman's cultivation was, she couldn't help shrieking.

Not only was that hammer huge, it also contained horrifying pressure. If she was struck by it, she would definitely forcefully become a meat patty with flesh and blood mashed together. It was something that she could never, ever, accept.

"It's time."

But the woman did not know that as she was facing death, a person was hiding in a dark place, watching, awaiting the opportunity to appear. And that person was none other than Chu Feng.

From the old man and woman's words, he roughly learnt of some things. So, since he chose to save the woman, naturally, he had to choose the most dangerous moment to appear because only then would she strongly remember that favour.

whoosh

The time was ripe, so naturally, Chu Feng held nothing back. He leaped, and like a dragon, flew out. At the same time, lightning flashed in his eyes, his aura already raised to the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Chu Feng descended from the sky, and just stood in front of the woman. Then, he stuck out a single fist, and punched the approaching big hammer.

boom That one punch made an explosion. Heaven power surged, and the terrifying huge hammer was shattered by Chu Feng.

aoo The Monstrous Beast roared in pain, concurrent to the destruction of its hammer, and it was forced back by the ripples of the explosion.

Succeeding with that one strike, Chu Feng struck again. Boundless might of the Heaven realm's eighth level burst out, forming a formless

giant net, imprisoning the Monstrous Beast inside.

aoo, aoo~~

The pressure that Chu Feng emanated was too strong. So strong that even those in the ninth level of the Heaven realm were inferior. Being pushed down by Chu Feng's pressure, the Monstrous Beast in only the seventh level of the Heaven realm was like a mouse frightened by a cat. It started to howl in fear, scuttling randomly.

But Chu Feng did not give any chances to it. With a thought, the power of the pressure instantly strengthened. It endlessly pressed upon the Monstrous Beast, through its physical body, straight into its soul.

Being under such horrifying might, the Monstrous Beast's eyes glittered. From insane struggling, its movements slugged, and even its body shrunk. From the size of a small hill into a tiger, and at the end, it even knelt obediently on the ground, dispirited.

At that moment, the Monstrous Beast did not even have the slightest bit of its previous might. It was like a little cowardly Monstrous Beast brat as it knelt in front of Chu Feng, not daring to even twitch. With only a thought, Chu Feng completely suppressed the Monstrous Beast.

"This..."

Seeing that, the woman was completely nonplussed. She even assumed she would die, without a single doubt, but never in her imaginations would she have thought that a person would appear in front of her, and with powerful methods, suppress the frenzied Monstrous Beast.

whoosh whoosh

Immediately after Chu Feng took care of the Monstrous Beast, two people also shot out from nearby. They were none other than the old couple.

"Audacious bastard, you dare to harm my family's Miss?!"

The couple never would have expected the emergence of a man out of nowhere. But no matter what, Chu Feng clearly disrupted their plans. So,

immediately after they emerged out of hiding, they made a surprise attack, aiming to put Chu Feng to death.

"Hmph." Although their strength was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, in Chu Feng's eyes, they were frail. Chu Feng did not even glance at them. He merely snorted coldly, waved his big sleeve, releasing a layer of Heaven power.

That Heaven power seemed to be gentle, but concealed within was brutally powerful might. Being caught off guard, the couple suffered. They were thrown several hundreds of meters away before they could stabilize their bodies. They were almost heavily injured.

But they were ignorant to the fact that they were in that situation only because Chu Feng held himself back. If not, he could have, just now, easily killed them both.

However, the old man and woman clearly were not aware of that, and even assumed they were struck because of their own carelessness. Not only did they not retreat after knowing the difference in strength, they even explosively yelled, gathering power outside their bodies, wanting to throw an even stronger attack at Chu Feng.

"Uncle Sha, Aunt Bi, don't attack him! Just now, he saved me! I owe a favour to him." Just at that moment, the middle-aged woman suddenly spoke.

And after hearing those words, the couple couldn't help but be taken aback. Despite their reluctance, it was not good for them to continue attacking, so they could only quickly come up to the woman, feigning worry and guilt, and say, "Miss, are you alright? It's our fault, we shouldn't have left you here."

"It's all thanks to Lord Benefactor for saving me, or else I truly don't know if I could have survived or not." The woman looked at the two, though her gaze wasn't really grudgeful. She then walked up to Chu Feng.

First, she looked meaningfully at the Monstrous Beast that wanted to kill her before, yet was compliantly kneeling on the ground, then bowed to Chu Feng, saying very appreciatively, "I am Li Chan, thank you for saving

me. May I know Lord Benefactor's name?"

"Wuqing." Chu Feng did not even look at the woman. He only crouched down, and stroked the Monstrous Beast.

Although the Monstrous Beast was already under control, by force, because of Chu Feng and was as submissive as a sheep, Chu Feng could still feel its bloodlust.

So, when Chu Feng stroked the Monstrous Beast, in reality, he was imbuing his Spirit power into the Monstrous Beast's body, to search for the origin of its problem, and currently, he obtained the answer. The Monstrous Beast was fed special medicine, making it lose its reason and become bloodthirsty.

"So Lord Benefactor is called Wuqing. This name is quite special."

"Just now, thank you for willing to come out and save me, or else my life would have ended there. If it's convenient, please come over to my Li residence for a small rest as thanks for saving my life." Li Chan was not displeased because of Chu Feng's coldness. Rather, from start to finish, she looked at Chu Feng with a very grateful expression.

Only after seeing Li Chan's good attitude did Chu Feng turn around and look at Li Chan again. He discovered that despite being already in the middle-ages, she took good care of her face, and her body was very nice as well. Not only was she alluring, she was very appealing too. If Chu Feng hadn't determined her age with Spirit power and purely looked at her outer appearance, he would have truly been unable to see that she was a middle-aged woman.

It had to be said that an attractive and mature female like Li Chan could enchant quite a few males.

But sadly, she wasn't up to Chu Feng's taste. At present, there was really too few number of women who could enter Chu Feng's eyes, let alone one that already passed the middle-ages.

Thus, Chu Feng only simply examined Li Chan, then asked, "There's no need for any reward. I wasn't saving you. I just discovered that this

Monstrous Beast was odd, and was afraid that after killing you, it would go hunt others. It doesn't matter much if it kills cultivators, but if commoners get harmed by it, that would not be too great."

Chapter 577: Ploy

“Lord Benefactor, you said that this Monstrous Beast is odd. May I ask which part of it is odd? Can you tell me?” Hearing those words, Li Chan’s eyes couldn’t help trembling as she quickly asked.

She also knew that the Monstrous Beast was a bit off. After all, Monstrous Beasts were not Fierce Beasts, they were intelligence, and had some reason. But that Monstrous Beast acted as though it was a Fierce Beast. It only wanted to take her life, which made her feel that there was definitely something fishy about it.

“I can, in fact, tell you, but those two must stay far away from me.” Chu Feng coldly said as he looked at the old couple.

“What did you say?! Say that again if you dare...” Hearing his words, the couple who already hated Chu Feng deeply gnashed their teeth in anger, their faces flushing red.

“Uncle Sha, Aunt Bi, don’t be impolite. He’s a person who saved my life.” But before letting them finish their words, Li Chan spoke to silence them, and urged them, “You two, leave for a while.”

“Miss, we know nothing about this person. If we leave you here alone, that will be too unsafe.” The old man advised worriedly.

“Yeah, Miss. This person has unknown origins. Maybe he’s even with that Monstrous Beast!” The old woman advised as well.

“Don’t worry. I trust Wuqing.” Li Chan said with a smile.

The old couple couldn’t really say much when Li Chan acted like that. So, after they glanced at Chu Feng, they warned, “Brat, you better pay attention to what you’re doing. This is my Li family’s territory! If you dare to do anything disadvantageous to my family’s Miss, don’t even think of leaving this place alive.” After speaking those fierce words, the old man and the old woman left.

“Hoh.” Chu Feng merely smiled disdainfully at their words. Naturally, he could hear that the old man was warning Chu Feng on the surface, but

in actuality, was threatening him. He was telling Chu Feng to not speak rashly, or else he would not restrain himself against Chu Feng.

"Lord Benefactor, I wonder, what have you discovered? Can you tell me now?" After the old couple left, Li Chan asked once again.

However, Chu Feng did not reply. Instead, loudly yelled, "Two old things, you're hiding here and eavesdropping! Don't you feel any shame?"

"God damn. Truly, damn it. Where did this brat come from? He can even detect us hiding here. Don't tell me he's a World Spiritist?" After hearing Chu Feng's words, the old man hiding in a nearby forest cursed in a low tone.

"Old guy, what should we do? That young man doesn't seem to be simple. He wouldn't have truly discovered something and reveal us two right?" Simultaneously, the old woman's face was full of worry.

"Right now, nothing can be done. We can't really attack him in front of the Big Miss right? This brat does have some strength. If we can kill them, then great; but if we can't and anger Big Miss, we would have to face the consequences."

"This brat does indeed have some ability, but there's no need to worry too much. That Monstrous Beast has been altered by an expert hired by the Ma family. No matter how much stronger this brat is, at most, he can only see that something's wrong with the Monstrous Beast, and would not be able to return it to its former nature."

"Besides, even if the Monstrous Beast is reverted, how is it related to us? Don't worry. First, report this matter to the Ma family and see what they have planned. If worst comes to worst, we'll take care of this brat and the Big Miss altogether. For our own damn boy, we can do anything." After the old man said those words, he leaped, and left.

"Ahh~" The old woman looked at Chu Feng meaningfully again before following the old man's shadow.

"Your two servants don't seem to be too obedient huh?" Only after knowing that the old couple left for quite a distance did Chu Feng smile

and speak to Li Chan.

"Hoh." Li Chan was a smart person, so naturally she understood what happened. But, after all, that couple was her Li family's people, so she could only bitterly smile, not knowing how to explain.

"That Monstrous Beast was likely fed special poison by someone, and its nature was also sealed by a special Spirit Formation. So, that's why it was so bloodthirsty and lost its rationality."

"It also means that the reason why this Monstrous Beast appeared at this place is because it's a plot. It was likely waiting for you here."

"As for why you've appeared in this place and who knows that you will appear here, I'm sure you're aware of the answer to those questions right?"

"Also, I might as well tell you this. I'm a World Spiritist. When that Monstrous Beast attacked you, I felt the old man and woman just now were hiding nearby. They were watching."

"Of course, they're the ones who are close to you, and I am merely a stranger. If you believe me, then be more cautious against them in the future. Otherwise, just assume I told you nothing." Chu Feng didn't conceal anything, and just directly stated that the old couple were traitors.

At that instant, Li Chan sank into silence. Her expression kept on altering for a while, her eyes showing some helplessness and uneasiness. There were even bursts of fear.

In reality, before Chu Feng said all that, she already had some suspicious because it was indeed that old couple who brought her here, and after bringing her to this place, they, for some reason, left.

When she encountered the Monstrous Beast, no matter how she yelled, the old couple did not show themselves; but after the Monstrous Beast was suppressed, the old couple immediately appeared. That made her feel distrust.

Currently, after Chu Feng spoke, she believed her suspicion even more:

that the old couple had likely betrayed her Li family.

"We've met only by chance, and I didn't come out because of you. I was worried that this Monstrous Beast was going to harm others. As for the reason why I told you all that, it's because I feel like you're a decent person, and I don't want a decent person to be harmed by someone in such a way."

"So, you also don't need to thank me, and let us say our farewells here." Seeing Li Chan's powerless and scared reactions, Chu Feng smiled smugly in his heart. Then, he acted as if he was going to leave and not care about anything else.

"Lord Benefactor, don't leave!" Indeed, as Chu Feng predicted, when he prepared to leave, Li Chan instantly panicked. When she was agitated, she actually grabbed Chu Feng's hand.

"Miss Li, unfamiliar men and women do not touch one another. What are you doing?" Chu Feng flung Li Chan's hand away. He was not acting there. Other than the women he felt were suitable, Chu Feng could not bear other females touching him.

"Lord Benefactor, I am truly sorry. I was too nervous."

"But, can you be a good man to the end, and help me out? I'm begging you, help me! Save my Li family! If you're willing to help me, I will pay a hefty sum!" After Li Chan let go of Chu Feng's hand, she then pulled Chu Feng's clothes, sorrowfully pleading. She was even going to kneel on the ground.

"Miss Li, don't be like this. If you have anything you want to say, just go ahead. Looking at you right now, it does seem like a catastrophe is approaching. What exactly happened? There's no harm in telling me."

"Although I, Wuqing, am not any righteous and benevolent great hero, I'm also not willing to see honest people abused by bad ones."

"So, if I can help you out, I'll give it a try. If I can't, then I will still give it a try. As for reward... If I can truly help with anything, then it's not late to talk about that thing when everything concludes." After hearing the word

“reward”, Chu Feng immediately swapped his expression. Currently, he seemed more like a businessman.

But in reality, it was intentional. He wanted to give Li Chan an illusion. A person who only aims for profit, but has some sort of rules he abides by.

Of course, Chu Feng’s real goal was not the reward given by the Li family. It was the treasure that the Li and Ma family knew about.

Chapter 578: The Specific Events

"This..." Although currently, Li Chan felt that there was danger ambushing from all directions, she was not so stupid as to tell her family's secret to a person she just met.

But, if Chu Feng were to leave and the old couple were truly traitors, then it was very likely that she would die immediately. So, she was in a really difficult situation.

"Honestly speaking, I can dispel the poison within the Monstrous Beast, given that sufficient medicine is gathered. At that time, various questions such as who fed it poison, or who it met before it changed, will be solved easily. Then, the truth of who wished to harm you can very likely be known. Evidence can even be obtained."

"Of course, if you don't believe me, then assume I said nothing. I have never enjoyed coercing people into difficult circumstances." Chu Feng spoke those words with a smile, then turned around, and prepared to leave.

"Lord Benefactor, don't leave!" Seeing that, Li Chan tensed up, and hurriedly pulled onto the corner of Chu Feng's clothes again, then said, "I believe you, please stay behind and help me!"

"This isn't a place for speaking. Follow me." Seeing Li Chan agree, Chu Feng willed, then an azure dragon appeared under his feet. At the same time, he waved his big sleeve and brought Li Chan onto the azure dragon. Then, it shot into the blue sky, very quickly leaving the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and arrived at a hidden area.

"Lord Benefactor, what martial skill did you just use? It was so fast! I have never seen such impressive methods." After feeling the power of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Li Chan's face was full of perplexity, and thought even higher of Chu Feng's strength. She felt, more and more, that the man in front of her eyes was not to be underestimated, and was very powerful.

Chu Feng only smiled lightly at Li Chan's praise. He intentionally used

that technique because his goal was to make Li Chan trust him even more, and make her believe that he could help herself.

So, Chu Feng didn't explain anything, and said, "Speak. What happened to you or to your family?"

In a situation like that, Li Chan still hesitated for a while, but at the end, weighing the situation, she decided to tell Chu Feng the truth.

And after Li Chan's narration, Chu Feng couldn't help but rejoice. It seemed like the treasure that the Li and Ma family were talking about was truly related to the Spiritual Being.

The beginning of the events had to be started from five hundred years ago...

Five hundred years ago, the Ma family's ancestor and the Li family's ancestor were people of impoverished origin. Relying on the widespread cultivation chants in the Eastern Sea Region, they did become cultivators, but because their talents were too ordinary, they stalled in the Spirit realm, and could not advance forward.

The cultivation of the Spirit realm was very common in the Eastern Sea Region, so they could only be counted as the pettiest existences. Naturally, the Ma family's and the Li family's ancestors could not rely on the cultivation of the Spirit realm to make any name for themselves.

They, at that time, reached the extremities of poverty. They couldn't even marry wives, and were spat on by others. They, sworn brothers, could only rely on one another to survive, and survive relying on hunting in the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

But one day, the Ma family's ancestor and the Li family's ancestor discovered an injured person in the Wolf Ivory Mountain. They knew that he was very possibly a cultivation expert, and if they were to save him, it could possibly change their fates. So, the two of them carried him back to their home, and earnestly took care of him for over three years.

It was exactly as the proverbs said: "Those who put their heart into working will not be disappointed". In a certain day in autumn, that person

finally reawakened. Moreover, using special medicines and abilities, that person, very quickly, thoroughly recovered. And as it turned out, he was truly a cultivation expert.

In order to thank the Ma family's ancestor and the Li family's ancestor for saving his life, that cultivator left behind a huge sum of wealth for them, and even passed down profound cultivation methods, as well as large amounts of cultivation resources.

Before leaving, not only did he use his skills to help the Li family's ancestor and the Ma family's ancestor raise their cultivation in the Spirit realm to the Heaven realm, he even told them that there was a special treasure impregnated within the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

However, the time was not yet ripe, and the treasure could not be used. However, if too much time passed, the treasure would gain intelligence and powerful strength, and it would be very difficult to deal with then.

So, the mysterious expert laid a special seal, concealing the treasure's entrance, and left behind two keys that could open the Spirit Formation, giving them to the Li family's ancestor and the Ma family's ancestor.

Before he left, he instructed the two to open the Spirit Formation five hundred years later. At that time, they were destined to gain some benefits from inside. But they could not be too early, nor could they be too late. With their attainments, it was best to wait for five hundred years, or else they would gain nothing.

Afterwards, the mysterious expert left, and with everything that he bestowed, the Li family's ancestor and the Ma family's ancestor rose very quickly in power. Not only did they marry wives, they even became local prominent characters.

But it was useless as after a few short dozens of years, their lives came to an end. They could simply not wait until five hundred years later to gaze upon the sealed mysterious treasure.

So, before death, they combined their powers to occupy the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and told their successors about the treasure inside the mountain range, and also told them to follow the mysterious expert's

instructions, to open up the treasure in a certain year and month to strengthen the Li family and the Ma family.

At present, it was five hundred years later. The relationship between the Li family and the Ma family was still very good, and they were also preparing to open the treasure within the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

But, Li Chan did not trust the Ma family's master, and felt that he held selfishness in his heart. Moreover, in recent years, he had started to spend great sums and hired quite a few experts. Currently, the Ma family's total strength already far surpassed the Li family's.

If they were really going to open up the treasure, she was worried that the Ma family was going to take that chance and destroy the Li family, then take the treasure all for themselves.

So, Li Chan always rebelled against their actions and dragged out the treasure opening date. During that period of time, she also spent great sums in hiring experts to join her Li family.

But, Li Chan also knew that she would anger the Ma family if she did that, and indeed, a dangerous scene like today occurred. If it wasn't for Chu Feng, Li Chan would have definitely died.

So, Li Chan immediately felt that the Monstrous Beast was the Ma family's handiwork, and the old couple were the ones who sold her out.

"To be honest, I heard a conversation between that old couple just now, and it's as you guessed. The Ma family is indeed planning kill you, and yes, it was the old couple who sold you out. As for the reason, it seems like their son committed some sort of offense, so he was taken away by the Ma family. Now, the Ma family is using him to coerce the old couple." After knowing what happened, Chu Feng smiled while looking at Li Chan. He already knew that she reached a dead end, and would definitely ask him for help.

As expected, after hearing Chu Feng's words, Li Chan tightly furrowed her brows, confirming her own guesses and worries because the old couple did indeed have a quite disappointing son.

“Lord Benefactor, please help me! As long as you bring me back to the Li family, I will repay that kindness with rewards!” Li Chan begged sincerely.

However, Chu Feng indifferently smiled at Li Chan’s plea, then said, “I can bring you back to the Li family, and you can also tell the truth to your family, but do you have proof? Can you guarantee that your family will trust you? Even if they do, does your Li family have the strength to oppose the Ma family?”

Chapter 579: Success

"I..." At that instant, Li Chan went silent. Only after a long time did she speak, "In these years, the Ma family has hired quite a few experts and they are developing their own people extravagantly. In terms of total strength, my Li family is indeed inferior to the Ma family."

"However, the Ma family has never made a move on my Li family. Rather, they have kept on maintaining this extremely good relationship on the surface. I'm guessing that they fear only one person, and that's my father."

"My father is a Martial Lord, and although he is only a rank one Martial Lord, after all, he's still a Martial Lord. His strength cannot even be comparable to those in the Heaven realm. Even if a single Martial Lord faces several thousands of Heaven realm experts, they can easily kill them all, and stand in an undefeatable place."

"Looking at the Ma family, although they had hired quite a few experts and developed quite a few experts of their own as well, only the Ma family's master is a Martial Lord."

"The Ma family's master, like my father, is a rank one Martial Lord. If the two of them fight against one another, the outcome is very difficult to predict, but something that can be ascertained is the one who wins their battle will represent the victory of that family."

"So, right now, I'm not worried that the Ma family will dare to directly attack my Li family. What I'm worried about is my father."

"My father is the Ma family master's sworn brother, and they grew up together since they were young. He trusts the Ma family's master completely, and in his eyes, his sworn brother is even more important than his family."

"So, I simply cannot tell him that the Ma family has selfish intentions, or else not only would he be enraged, he would even punish me, unless..."

"Unless there's evidence right?" Chu Feng said smilingly.

“Mm. Although my father cares a lot about the brotherly affection with the Ma family’s master, he is definitely not an ignorant person. If there are certain evidences that show the Ma family plans to harm me, then that would be a lot better.” Li Chan endlessly nodded her head.

“That’s quite simple. For example, this Monstrous Beast. The reason it is like this is definitely because of some World Spiritist’s work. But as long as you give me some time, I can return it to its original state, and at that time, the person who did those things to it and sent it to this place will be known. Naturally, those proofs will point towards the Ma family.”

“Also, in a situation like the one right now, continuing to drag it out isn’t the way to go. So, I suggest you ask your father to join hands with the Ma family and open the sealed treasure. It cannot be delayed anymore.” Chu Feng said.

“What? Open the treasure in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range?!” Hearing those words, Li Chan’s complexion couldn’t help changing, then she said, “Lord Benefactor, according to the mysterious expert’s words back then, the treasure right now should already have a certain amount of intelligence, and also very powerful strength. Without the cultivation of a Martial Lord, there is no way of suppressing it.”

“So, I’m really worried. If the treasure is opened and we enter, the Ma family will use my father. This is also why I’ve thought of all kinds of ways to delay the treasure’s opening.”

“You’re wrong. If this is continued, you will simply not be able to drag this out for long because this is not only your father’s personal wish, nor is it the Ma family’s master request. It is the teachings of the ancestors. Both family’s ancestors.”

“Can you change the teachings? Can you get your father to go against the teachings?” Chu Feng severely asked.

“I…” Li Chan was speechless, not knowing how to reply because Chu Feng spoke very correctly.

“But, if you let your father know that the Ma family has a selfish heart before opening the treasure, then when it is opened, as long as your father

is on guard, it will no longer be certain who will die." Chu Feng said.

"Lord Benefactor, you're quite right. But I am just truly worried. Even if you can restore this Monstrous Beast's original nature and make him speak the truth, my father may not believe that everything was directed by the Ma family's master. I understand him too well. Not only does he emphasize camaraderie, he is very obstinate regarding that topic."

"In these years, after combined operations between the Li family and the Ma family, when splitting the benefits, my father had always acted brotherly, and allowed the Ma family to take more. That's also the main reason why, right now, the Ma family has more wealth than my Li family." Li Chan worriedly said.

"Before you clear up the current situation, there are only two paths laid out in front of you. One, is to just stare as your Li family gets destroyed."

"The other is to bet it all, and fight for the final chance you have. However, the chance of success will definitely not even reach half. So, do not have delusional thoughts and think you can have a total win." Chu Feng reminded solemnly.

And looking at Chu Feng's fierce gaze and clearly analysis, Li Chan's expression changed. She felt more and more than the man in front of her was very powerful, and even felt that he sincerely wanted to help her Li family, and could really do such a thing.

At that instant, Li Chan, involuntarily, build up trust deep in her heart towards Chu Feng, despite only knowing him for a very short amount of time.

The reason why that happened was because Chu Feng used a special method. That special method came from the Heaven's Eyes of the Pulse Searching Method. Not only could the Heaven's Eyes see through everything, it could even bewitch the living.

Despite having a very poor grasp on the Heaven's Eyes at present, after a series of actions, it wasn't really hard to make a person like Li Chan build up trust and good impressions on himself.

So, Li Chan announced to everyone that Chu Feng was a cultivation expert, and was willing to work for the Li family. Because of that, she invited Chu Feng to the Li family.

"What? Chan'er, you were attacked?" Within the main palace of the Li family, a white-and grey-haired, yet spirited old man had shock and terror on his face after knowing Li Chan was attacked in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

And that person was Li Chan's father. The master of the Li family, a person with the strength of a rank one Martial Lord.

"Father, it was this Monstrous Beast that attacked me. But luckily, I was saved by this hero. If not, from today on, you wouldn't have ever seen me again." Li Chan had a face of suffering as she pointed at Chu Feng and the submissive and cowardly Monstrous Beast next to him.

"What happened? Didn't I tell you to stay next to her side? Why was she still attacked?" Hearing those words, the master of the Li family furiously shouted at the old couple.

"It's our fault, please punish us accordingly!" The old couple were cunning characters. In a situation like that, they did not beg nor explain in the slightest. Instead, they half-knelt on the ground, and with faces of sincerity, they asked for punishment.

"You two..." Indeed, when he saw their reactions, the master of the Li family immediately lost any rage he had. Then, he helplessly sighed, waved his hand, and said, "Whatever, whatever. Nothing happened to Chan'er anyway, and besides, you two didn't intend for it to happen, so how can I give out punishments? Just return."

"Thank you." As if they already knew he would react like that, the old couple's mouths rose to form a hint of a smug smile, then after deeply looking at Chu Feng and the Monstrous Beast behind him, they bowed, turned around, and left.

Chapter 580: Best Treatment

"Young hero, thank you for saving my precious daughter. May I have your name?" After the old couple left, the Li family's master was full of smiles as he examined Chu Feng. It could be seen that he felt very grateful.

"I am Wuqing!" Chu Feng replied, hands clasped.

"So it's Young Hero Wuqing! Your talent is truly good, already in the eighth level of the Heaven realm at this age. I'm sure you won't have any difficulty becoming a Martial Lord." After the Li family's master looked at Chu Feng for a while more, he nodded his head, satisfied, then clapped and said, "Servants!"

After speaking, two young female servants walked out of another room in the hall. Both of them held an exquisite tray, and on the trays, there were rows of sparkling beads displayed. They were Heaven beads, one thousand of them.

"Young hero Wuqing, it's all because of you that my Chan'er is alive. These are only small gratitudes, think nothing of them, but please accept them." The Li family's master said.

"Milord, I've already agreed to the Big Miss' invitation and I will use my power for the Li family. She has also promised me a reward of equivalent degree already. Thus, as a person of the Li family, protecting her is my responsibility! Milord, how can I possibly take another reward?" Chu Feng tactfully refused.

"Young Hero Wuqing, you are truly wise. Then, just assume these Heaven beads are rewards for what you've previously done." The Li family's master smiled and said.

Naturally, he knew when Chu Feng saved Li Chan, he hadn't joined the Li family yet, so at that time, Chu Feng did not have any responsibility nor obligation to protect Li Chan. Reasonably speaking, there was no shame in Chu Feng taking the extra reward.

Yet Chu Feng still refused, which meant he wasn't a person who only thought of profit. Instead, he had his own principles he abided by, and the Li family's master respected Chu Feng a lot on that, because people who were like that could always be greatly used.

"Wuqing, since my father's already spoken in such a way, just accept it." Li Chan also urged.

"If it is like so, I'll humbly accept them. Thank you milord, thank you Big Miss." Hearing that, Chu Feng could only accept.

Although a thousand Heaven beads had extremely minuscule effects to Chu Feng, as one would say, "although a mosquito is tiny it's still meat". Besides, the thousand Heaven beads were willingly gifted to him. If he didn't accept them, wouldn't that just be hurting himself instead?

"This Monstrous Beast's cultivation is not weak, but it is absolutely not one from my Wolf Ivory Mountain Range. Why has it come over here, and without any reason, attack you?" Only after rewarding Chu Feng did the Li family's master carefully examine the Monstrous Beast kneeling by Chu Feng's side.

"Milord. This Monstrous Beast has likely consumed some sort of special poison from a World Spiritist, and its reason and intelligence were sealed away as well. So, that's why it became so violent and bloodthirsty."

"However, as long as a certain amount of time is given to me, I will be able to open the seal. At that time, the reason why this Monstrous Beast appeared in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range will be easily found." Chu Feng replied.

"So you're also a World Spiritist" Hearing those words, the Li family's master couldn't help lighting up his eyes. After all, not everyone could become a World Spiritist. They were superior to others from birth, and regardless of time or location, they were respected by others, and looked upon differently as well.

"I am indeed a World Spiritist." Chu Feng nodded his head.

"Good, good! This time, my Li family has gained a blessing from

misfortune, and invited such an excellent person like Young Hero Wuqing!"

"Servants! Quickly arrange the best residence for Young Hero Wuqing, and from today on, he will receive the finest treatment from my Li family." The Li family's master said cheerfully.

"Yes sir!" After that, under the arrangements of a servant, Chu Feng brought the Monstrous Beast and left the hall.

"Ah Chan'er, your Uncle Ma personally came over to see me again and talked about opening the treasure in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range."

"He said that everything has been prepared, and they even invited a Purple-cloak World Spiritist over! There will absolutely be no problem opening the treasure, so I've already agreed to do so ten days later." After Chu Feng left, the Li family's master spoke to Li Chan.

"Since Father has already agreed, what can I do? I'll follow your arrangements." If it were before, Li Chan would have definitely been like thunder when hearing that news: extremely furious.

But at present, she was only a bit angry and simply didn't argue against her father. The reason she did that was naturally because Chu Feng advised her to do so.

"Chan'er, don't worry. My Li family and the Ma family has been very close for generations, and your Uncle Ma is even a brother who grew up with me."

"So, Chan'er, you don't need to worry about anything. Even if the Ma family sends out a few more forces this time to open the treasure, your Uncle Ma will definitely split it evenly with my Li family." Seeing Li Chan's angry appearance, the Li family's master smiled while conciliating. It could be seen he loved his daughter a lot.

"Father, everything that I've done before was to better our Li family, so I hope you can understand my efforts."

"But you are my father, and since you've made the decision already, as your daughter, I can only support you with all I have."

“I’ll go organize the Li family’s troops and make plans for opening the treasure ten days later.” Li Chan said.

“Heh, Chan’er, I don’t doubt your ability, but your marriage... That’s truly something I worry about.”

“Look at you! You’ll be thirty-five this year, and if you don’t quickly find a person to marry, you’ll really became an old woman soon! I see that young man named Wuqing is quite nice, how about...” On the face of the Li family’s master, there appeared a smile that was a bit shameless for his age.

“Father, what are you talking about?” Hearing those words, Li Chan immediately tensed up.

“Don’t pretend. Your eyes when looking at that Wuqing were very strange. In all the years that I’ve had you as my daughter, this is the first time that I’ve seen you look at a man like that. Both of your ages are quite close as well, so how about I talk to him for you?” The Li family’s master continued smiling and said.

“Father, don’t say random things! Or else, or else, I’ll!” At that instant, Li Chan seemed even more tensed up, but at the same time, a hint of redness spread across her face, then she quickly ran out of the room.

After leaving, Li Chan put her hand to her chest, feeling her intense heartbeat. Her gaze glittered uncertainly as she said in a low voice, “What’s with this feeling? I’ve only known him for less than a day... Have I truly been moved by him?”

Actually, it was very normal for Li Chan to have that feeling. After all, more or less, she was affected by the enchantment of Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes. Besides, even without the effects of the Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng’s strength and attitude in handling matters contained limitless charm.

Chu Feng did not know anything about the conversation between the Li family’s master and Li Chan. Being led by a servant, Chu Feng arrived at an elegant and vast manor.

Within the manor grounds, there were quite a few cultivators, though not a single was from the Li family. All of them were experts hired by the Li family with hefty sums. Their cultivations were not weak, and more or less, they each grasped their respective unique powerful skills.

While in the Li family's lands, those people could relish excellent treatment meant for distinguished guests. However, the treatments varied. As for which were better treated, it depended on their strengths and abilities.

But after Chu Feng entered, he directly occupied the most luxurious palace of them all, and even had the most excellent servants. That attracted quite a few people's attention as gazes of displeasure were condensed on the palace Chu Feng stepped in.

Chapter 581: Purple-coloured Spirit Formation Power

"Who was that person just now? He's actually using the best palace in this manor?"

In a certain area within the manor rounds, after a woman, who had a ugly appearance and heavy makeup on, and also had the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, saw Chu Feng enter that palace, her face was full of displeasure.

"I've carefully examined him just now. His cultivation is also only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. I wonder why he is qualified to go into that palace." A big man with scars across his face, also having cultivation in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, spoke very displeasedly.

"If you have time to be concerned about others, why not spend it on how to improve yourself." Just at that moment, an old man holding a cane, wearing a blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak, walked over. That old man was not only a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, he even had the aura of the ninth level of the Heaven realm. He was the one with the strongest cultivation in the manor.

"Yuelao!" Seeing that old man, the people there more or less revealed reverence. Since those people had very arrogant attitudes and no one viewed another as superior, it was hard to avoid some clashes of the tongue. Some even fought against each other, but without exception, all of them were given a lesson by Yuelao, so they deeply knew how powerful he was.

"Yuelao, we were only crying out injustice for you. Whose strength can be comparable to yours out of all the people the Li family invited? You should be living in that place, but the Li family did not have such arrangements."

"We even thought that the reason why the Li family didn't arrange for you to live in there was because they could find an even more powerful

character. I even thought they could get a super-expert, a Martial Lord! But who would have thought that ultimately, they got a person like him."

"What virtue or ability does he have? Not to mention you, it's likely many people in this manor can defeat him." After Yuelao appeared, the crowd tried to instigate a fight between him and Chu Feng by stating how he deserved to be in that mansion instead of Chu Feng.

"Do I need you to cry out injustice for something like this?" Yuelao lightly chuckled. He, who was old and cunning, clearly saw through their instigation.

"The Li family is wealthy, but they only give chances to people with strength. I've gotten news that in the next few days, the Li family will have an important operation, and the Li family has hired us for this exact operation."

"So, if you want to obtain even greater rewards, you shouldn't envy other people's treatment. The best thing to do now is to prepare, and exhibit your own strength soon." Yuelao said seriously. His tone was like an elder brother scolding his younger brothers.

"We understand." After hearing Yuelao's words, not a single person on scene dared to have any complains.

"Okay, you're dismissed. Go back and prepare well. Whether he's a dragon or an ant, it will naturally be revealed on the day of the operation." Yuelao casually waved his hand, but the meaning behind his words was very clear.

None of the people on scene were stupid, so of course, they understood what he meant. Hence, after the greetings, they went back to their respective residences.

"Hmph." However, after everyone left, Yuelao cast his gaze back at the palace Chu Feng was in, his gaze surging with a hint of a chilly aura.

As a World Spiritist, Chu Feng, as expected, felt the crowd's hostile gazes in the manor, but he simply didn't put them in his eyes.

So, after entering the palace, Chu Feng ordered the servants assigned to

him to prepare a quiet cultivation location. After entering the cultivation location, Chu Feng laid layers of Spirit Formations, preparing to train.

Chu Feng needed to open the Spirit Formation that sealed the Monstrous Beast's nature, but he also discovered that the Spirit Formation was purple-coloured, which meant it was a Spirit Formation laid by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

A Spirit Formation laid by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist was definitely not something Chu Feng could destroy, but since Chu Feng dared to make a promise in front of the Li family's master and Li Chan, of course, he had absolute confidence.

So, what Chu Feng needed to do right now was nothing other than to make a breakthrough in terms of his strength as a World Spiritist. He wanted to try to make a link to the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and step into the realm of Purple-cloak World Spiritists.

Reasonably speaking, Chu Feng's real cultivation was the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It was impossible for him to make a link to the Spirit Formation power with that kind of strength, because his body could not bear such a burden.

But in reality, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered when he stepped into the Heaven realm and obtained the power of the third lightning, the very essence of his cultivation changed.

At present, Chu Feng's real strength was not the fifth level of the Heaven realm. It was the eighth level of the Heaven realm. That was Chu Feng's real strength.

The power of the three lightning was no longer additional external power. It already thoroughly belonged to Chu Feng. It was his own power. It was his real cultivation. So, in that situation, Chu Feng could naturally make a link to the Spirit Formation power.

hmm

Indeed, after Chu Feng made sufficient preparations, he willed. Boundless purple-coloured gas surged out from the World Spirit Space,

and was then led into Chu Feng's own Spiritual World.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt his own Spirit power becoming a bit stronger, and with another thought, the purple-coloured Spirit Formation power could be controlled however he wished to.

He succeeded. On his first try, Chu Feng successfully connected himself to the power of the purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and grasped power only Purple-cloak World Spiritists could grasp. It was simply a piece of cake.

"Eggy, how is it? I'm quite impressive aren't I?" Even though Chu Feng was completely confident he could gain the power of the Purple-coloured Spirit Formation, when he succeeded on his first attempt, even Chu Feng himself couldn't help being a bit complacent, and bragged at the little beauty Eggy.

"Tch. It's barely satisfactory." Eggy alluringly curled her lips and said.

boom rumble rumble rumble However, just at that moment, the World Spirit Space trembled violently, just like an earthquake.

Such a change made Chu Feng's expression change greatly. He hurriedly cast his gaze towards the huge door behind him. Because, as a World Spiritist, he immediately felt that the reason why the World Spirit Space trembled was all because of the door behind him. It was from the power that exploded inside the door that affected the World Spirit Space.

boom Indeed, as Chu Feng tightly stared at the huge door, another burst of frenzied power was shot out from inside, causing the World Spirit Space to shake once again.

"Powerful!" At that instant, even if it was Chu Feng, he couldn't help inhaling deeply because even with the door separating them, Chu Feng could feel what kind of horrifying power surged within.

"You've finally gotten impatient? But sadly, the Spirit Formation here is too powerful. Even I can only obediently give up, let alone you." Just at that moment, Eggy also came over, but on her exceptionally beautiful face, faint excitement emerged.

“Eggy, do you know what kind of an existence is locked inside, and what cultivation it has?” Chu Feng asked seriously, because he was truly aware that the thing inside was very terrifying.

Chapter 582: Son of a Martial Emperor

At the start, Chu Feng could already feel the horrifying aura behind the enormous door. That aura made Chu Feng feel terror from the bottom of his heart, deterring him from approaching the huge door that was full of chains. Even though the World Spirit Space was his territory, he did not dare.

Back then, Chu Feng even thought he could gradually resist that aura as his strength rose, making him dare to go near the door, even open the door and control the existence behind it.

But he discovered that he was wrong. The stronger his strength became, the more he felt the overwhelming strength of that existence. If that door did not exist, he simply didn't dare to imagine what would happen.

Especially, just now, when the thing inside pounded against the huge door, aiming to break the Spirit Formation, it was the first time that Chu Feng felt peril.

It was because the horrifying power was truly too horrifying. Even though Chu Feng had yet to face it head-on, he already strongly felt how powerful the existence behind the huge door was.

Its power was like an endless great ocean.

And Chu Feng himself on the other hand, was nothing but a tiny speck of dust floating around in the sky.

So, when he compared himself to the huge existence within the door, it was the difference between a speck of dust and an ocean. If the thing inside suddenly broke the bindings of the Spirit Formation, then Chu Feng was definitely going to die.

"It is merely a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World that has a deranged nature and is full of hatred. Since the seal on this door is specialized for World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World, I am sure that it is from the Asura Spirit World."

"As for its cultivation, I was unable to confirm it before, but looking at

the power it used to smash against the Spirit Formation just now, it seems to be quite a bit stronger than my expectations." Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

"Exactly what realm is it in?" Chu Feng restlessly asked.

"According to the cultivation realms you have here, very barely, I suppose it can be counted as a Martial Emperor." Eggy smiled, downplaying the significance of her words.

"What? Martial Emperor?!" Hearing the two words "Martial Emperor", Chu Feng couldn't avoid being dumbstruck, his face flabbergasted.

There was actually a Martial Emperor locked within his own World Spirit Space. That was rather shocking, especially so since Chu Feng went to the Imperial Tomb and experienced the power of the Imperial Might. Whenever he thought of the fact that there had always been a Martial Emperor in his World Spirit Space, he truly had no choice but to be stunned.

"What's there to be afraid of? It's not like this guy has been locked in your World Spirit Space for one or two days. If it could escape, it would have already. How would it even let a boy like you continue living so leisurely?"

"You need to know that its malice is very strong. I'm sure it already hates you straight to the bone, and if it does escape, the first thing it will do is skin you, drink your blood, and take your life! Hehe!" Eggy strangely smiled, scaring Chu Feng.

"I'm not afraid, just shocked. Shocked that a Martial Emperor is imprisoned in my World Spirit Space." Chu Feng shook his head, but very quickly, a thought popped up, and he asked, "Eggy, does this mean that you're also a Martial Emperor? And wouldn't the person who sealed you two in my World Spirit Space also be a Martial Emperor?"

Seeing Chu Feng's dumbfounded and tongue-tied reaction, Eggy couldn't help tidying up her skirt and hair, then very pleasedly said, "Accurately speaking, that's true. My cultivation back then, according to your cultivation ranking here, was indeed of the Martial Emperor level, unlike

that guy over there who can only barely be counted as a Martial Emperor."

"As for the person who sealed my cultivation here without me knowing, I'm afraid I cannot be sure of his cultivation."

gulp At that instant, Chu Feng strongly gulped, then said, "Heavens. You were actually a Martial Emperor." Although he already had his guesses, when Eggy personally admitted her cultivation, Chu Feng was still quite surprised.

"Hmph. You brat, what is this attitude? Do I not look like a Martial Emperor? I'll even tell you this: I am not simply a Martial Emperor. I'm also a great demon who kills without blinking! Even in my Asura Spirit World I'm an infamous existence! You better not anger me!" Seeing Chu Feng's reaction of disbelief, Eggy pouted, seeming very displeased.

"Haha, of course not of course not. How could I dare to doubt Milady Queen's strength?" Seeing Eggy angry, Chu Feng hurriedly shook his head, denying her words. But, he wasn't able to hold back his laugh.

"You damn Chu Feng! Just you wait. On the day that I restore my strength, see how I'll take care of you." Eggy gnashed her teeth in anger, but regardless what expression she had on her absolutely beautiful face, it was so pretty that it did not seem serious. In Chu Feng eyes, she even seemed to be nothing but cute.

And after attempting to destroy the huge door two times, the Martial Emperor level World Spirit sealed behind the door quieted down as well.

As for why that happened, Eggy explained it as possibly because Chu Feng successfully linked himself to the purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, making the World Spirit feel a familiar scent, which in turn agitated it.

But Chu Feng had no need to worry about anything. The Spirit Formation in the World Spirit Space was very powerful. It was not something that the World Spirit could break. As for the reason why the person who laid such a formation sealed Eggy and such a horrifying World Spirit in Chu Feng's World Spirit Space, it was simple.

Obviously, that person wanted Chu Feng to use Eggy and the World Spirit. However, with Chu Feng's current cultivation, he was unable to grasp such power.

After that, Chu Feng left the World Spirit Space. Despite already calmed expressions on his face, his heart was still quite excited because to him, at present, if he thought of exactly who sealed Eggy and the horrifying World Spirit in his body, he was able to think of his father.

Back then, after confirming that Huangfu Haoyue's cultivation was of the Martial King rank, Chu Feng had felt that his father was a great Martial King, but right now, he couldn't help destroying that thought. His father was definitely not a Martial King. He was very possibly a Martial Emperor, perhaps even stronger.

And as a cultivator who was advancing forward bit by bit in the vast world of martial cultivation, when Chu Feng recollected that his own father was a mighty Martial Emperor, he couldn't help but feel his blood boil because that was definitely something to be proud of.

"Father. Although I don't know what happened back then, I will find you. I will find the answer. As your son, I will not disappoint you." After speaking those words with great confidence, he cast his gaze at the Monstrous Beast that knelt obediently nearby, and still had frenzied blood circulating its body.

hmm Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his sleeve. Purple-coloured Spirit Formation power visible by the naked eye poured out from his body. Afterwards, his finger was like a brush as it drew on the ground. With practiced actions, a grand Spirit Formation was gradually rising.

Chu Feng wanted to quickly destroy the Spirit Formation sealed in the Monstrous Beast's body. That was not something simple, but Chu Feng was totally sure and had absolute confidence he could break it open in a short amount of time.

It was for no other reason but because his blood boiled. As long as he recalled that his father was a Martial Emperor, and that he was a son of a Martial Emperor, he blood truly boiled and burned, strongly pushing him

forward.

Chapter 583: Black and White Rakshasa

The Li family's manor. Li Chan was invited to the palace Chu Feng lived in.

"Lord Benefactor Wuqing, you asked for me in such a hurry. Is there something wrong?" Li Chan's position in the Li family was not low. Other than the family master, it was reasonable to say she was the one with the most authority.

But a woman who had such a high position, when she personally saw Chu Feng, couldn't help referring him as "Lord Benefactor". Moreover, she had a very good attitude, so much that something seemed to be wrong.

"Iron Beast, go ahead."

"Truthfully tell Big Miss exactly what happened." Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the Monstrous Beast next to him.

"This is?" Only then did Li Chan discover that the Monstrous Beast which attacked her back then seemed different. Although it was still submissive, it clearly lost its former oddness. Looking at its clear gaze, it seemed to have its own awareness.

Indeed, after Chu Feng spoke, the Monstrous Beast actually stood up, walked up to Li Chan, and very apologetically bowed to Li Chan before saying, "Big Miss, I express my apologies for the matters on that day. However, I hope you can understand that I was truly helpless."

"You, you've recovered your nature?" After the Monstrous Beast named Iron Beast spoke, Li Chan was instantly elated. Quickly after, she looked at Chu Feng and said, "Lord Benefactor Wuqing, you've succeeded?"

"Yes. With Mr. Wuqing's powerful methods, not only did he restore my nature, he even recovered my memories regarding everything that happened in these past days. So, even though I lost my awareness since a few days ago, I remember everything that I experienced."

Before letting Chu Feng speak, Iron Beast took the lead and spoke first.

Furthermore, from its words and attitude, it could be seen that it was actually really grateful to Chu Feng for breaking open his seal and returning his nature.

"Then, what exactly happened? Who sealed your nature, and who brought you into the Wolf Ivory Mountain?" Li Chan impatiently asked.

"As predicted by you and Mr. Wuqing, it was the Ma family, and the person who caught me was the master of the Ma family, Ma Yukun." The Monstrous Beast calmly spoke, but the truth immediately came out, in a single sentence.

"It was truly them?" And after hearing those words, Li Chan's expressions changed greatly. Although she had already thought of the answer, when it was confirmed, she still felt disbelief.

Afterwards, Li Chan immediately brought Chu Feng and the Monstrous Beast to her father's residence. Moreover, she told everything to him.

As per Chu Feng's arrangements, the Monstrous Beast even supplemented details and said many things that did not exist in order to make the Li family's master believe that his brother held malicious thoughts for a long time already, and that he wanted to take over his Li family.

"Dammit! What a waste it was to see him as my brother. He dares to entrap me like this, and even wanted to kill my daughter?!" Indeed, with the combined assistance of Chu Feng, Li Chan, and the Monstrous Beast, the Li family's master, who knew the truth, clenched his fists in anger and gritted his teeth.

Chu Feng, who was already a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, could feel the surging fury in the Li family master's body, as well as his boundless bloodlust.

"Father, what should we do now? His Ma family clearly harboured selfish thoughts and has schemed for a long time. In a few more days, it will be the day to open the treasure. He will definitely make a move on us." Li Chan asked with a face of worry.

“This…”

“The treasure opening date has already been set. If I suddenly go back on my word, he will definitely be suspicious. Right now, it is really not a good situation.” Being questioned by Li Chan, the Li family’s master felt himself to be in quite the predicament.

“Milord, Big Miss, I do have a plan.” Just at that time, Chu Feng spoke.

“Wuqing, what plan do you have? Quickly tell us!” Hearing that, the Li family’s master hurriedly asked.

“The near-death experience that the Big Miss had, despite being carefully planned out by the Ma family, was still set up by the Shabi couple 1. If it weren’t for those two traitors, she wouldn’t have possibly entered such a perilous state.” Chu Feng said.

“Hmph. In these years that the Shabi couple followed me, I had never maltreated them. If it weren’t for my development, they simply wouldn’t have had their current cultivations. I treat them in such a kind manner, yet they repay that kindness in such a way. I will definitely make them pay the price for their actions.” When the Shabi couple was mentioned, the Li family’s master was as furious as the thunders, his killing intent boiling.

“Milord. Naturally, this Shabi couple must be punished severely, but right now, we can use them.” Chu Feng said smilingly.

“Use them? How?” Li Chan asked closely.

“They know that the one who saved you is me, and also know that I’m a World Spiritist. I subdued the Monstrous Beast and brought it back, so they can definitely suppose that I want to find clues regarding the attempted murder from the Monstrous Beast.”

“Tomorrow, announce my failure to remove the seal in the Monstrous Beast, which caused the Monstrous Beast to thoroughly lose control, and as nothing could be done, it was killed. I will also use special Spirit Formation methods to generate a fake Monstrous Beast corpse to show to the public, and make them believe it to be genuine.”

“With that, the Shabi couple will definitely report this to the Ma family, and because of that, they will not know that we have knowledge of their secret. In addition, the camaraderie between you and the Ma family’s master will make them assume that you’re still oblivious.”

“As for the treasure opening a few days later, we will undergo it normally. However, we must move before the Ma family moves. The so-called ‘beating someone in their own game’.” Chu Feng said.

“But the total strength of the Ma family is already superior to my Li family. Moreover, they have planned for a long time. I’m afraid we won’t be able to defeat them a few days later.” Li Chan worriedly said.

“Actually, that’s not a very hard problem either. Although the Ma family’s total strength is likely greater than the Li family, they have only one Martial Lord: the Ma family’s master. Milord, as long as you can defeat him, the Ma family will be undoubtedly defeated.” Chu Feng smiled and said.

“Wuqing, you’re quite logical, but I’ve personally sparred Ma Yukun many times before and we have always ended up with a draw. If I need to kill him, I’m afraid it won’t be easy. If the surprise attack fails, then the two of us will be forced into a dragged out battle. I would be quite fine, but it’s likely that all of you will be in danger.” The Li family’s master expressed worry as he spoke.

“Milord, there’s no need to worry about that. I, Wuqing, have studied Spirit Formation techniques carefully, and have once stumbled upon luck. Milord, as long as you’ve firmly decided in killing Ma Yukun, then I can guarantee that you’ll defeat him.” Chu Feng said while being full of confidence.

“Wuqing, I wonder...what methods do you have? Speak your mind!” The Li family’s master asked.

“I have here a single forbidden medicine obtained from an ancient remain. Although it cannot make you into a rank two Martial Lord from a rank one Martial Lord, it will have no problem increasing your strength greatly so you can kill the Ma family’s master.”

“However, after all, it’s a forbidden medicine. Ten hours after consumption, the medicinal effects wear off, and when it does, you will feel pain akin to ten thousand insects gnawing upon your bones. But with your current cultivation, you will definitely not die. Rather, it will help your future cultivation.” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out a black and white pellet.

“This is, the Black and White Rakshasa!”

And when the Li family’s master saw the pellet, his expression changed greatly, his aged face full of shock.

*

1. Pun. “Sha” and “Bi” is how the old couple are referred to as. The Pinyin also means something akin to “idiot”.

Chapter 584: Exploitation

"Wuqing, you actually have something like that?!" Seeing the black and white pellet in Chu Feng's hand, the Li family's master was bewildered.

Forbidden Medicine could raise a cultivator's cultivation in a short period of time. That was something everyone knew. However, the medicinal power of Forbidden Medicines varied, and colours were used to differentiate the strong ones from the weak ones.

After reaching a realm such as a Martial Lord, ordinary Forbidden Medicines didn't really have any use. Similarly, they were not affected by the backlash from ordinary Forbidden Medicine because their bodies truly reached extremely terrifying states.

However, high-quality Forbidden Medicine contained power that could even affect Martial Lords, but those kinds of Forbidden Medicine were always difficult to create, and even the method of creation was a secret that wasn't spread to others. Moreover, after producing such an item, there were at least two different colours. Forbidden Medicine like those had names unique to them.

For example, the one Chu Feng took out just now. It was a type of high-quality Forbidden medicine, and its medicinal power was so strong it could change a Martial Lord's cultivation. Especially for a rank one Martial Lord, its effects were the most distinct.

But even in the Eastern Sea Region, it was not easy to find Forbidden Medicine like that. It was something that truly lacked in supply, and was something that could only be found by chance. That was why the Li family's master seemed so astounded when Chu Feng took out that Forbidden Medicine.

"I am indeed unable to produce this Black and White Rakshasa, and indeed, I found it in a certain remain." Chu Feng nodded his head, smiling. The Forbidden Medicine was plundered from the Ji Dynasty. Since he knew that he would have a use for it in the future, Chu Feng did not sell it, and left it by his side.

“Wuqing, this Black and White Rakshasa is truly too valuable. I cannot take it for nothing. The market price for a Black and White Rakshasa should be fifty thousand Heaven beads. I’ll give you sixty thousand Heaven beads. Take them as the cost for the pellet.” As the Li family’s master spoke, he cast an eye gesture at Li Chan.

After Li Chan nodded her head, she turned around and left. When she returned, in her hand there was a Cosmos Sack, and inside were sixty thousand Heaven beads.

Chu Feng did not oppose the Li family’s action, and gladly accepted the beads. Although he knew that the Black and White Rakshasa wasn’t a simple thing, he never expected it to be so valuable. Sixty thousand Heaven beads was not a small number. There was no reason for any refusal.

“Wuqing, it is my Li family’s luck to be able to invite you to this place. With this Black and White Rakshasa, I will have absolutely no problem defeating Ma Yukun.” With the pellet in his hand, feeling the berserk medicinal power contained within, the Li family’s master mouth couldn’t help rising into a confident smile.

And seeing her father praise Chu Feng in such a way, and thinking about the things Chu Feng did before, Li Chan was a bit proud too. After all, Chu Feng was brought back by her.

“Chu Feng, do you feel that this Li family’s master is trustworthy? I keep on feeling something wrong with him. Either he is extremely stupid and has nothing in his heart called suspicion, or his scheming ability is so great that even you and I cannot see through it.” But just at that moment, Eggy spoke, expressing a bit of worry.

“Don’t worry. Unless he doesn’t take the Black and White Rakshasa, otherwise, I can control him within a short period of time. Even if I can’t control him, his cultivation will completely disappear if I wish it to.”

“Besides, regardless of how much stronger he gets, he is only a rank one Martial Lord. So, even if he doesn’t take the Black and White Rakshasa and retains his own cultivation, and also wants to harm me, if I put my

full strength in the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he may not be able to catch up to me. Also, intuition is telling me that this Li family's master is not a person who has extremely complex schemes. Rather, he's a person who reaches the extremities of stupidity. He is probably one of those legendary idiots who are never willing to change their minds and keep on trusting."

Chu Feng lightly smiled. There was a special Spirit Formation added into the Black and White Rakshasa. After the consumer refines it, the Spirit Formation would enter their body without them knowing.

As long as Chu Feng activates that Spirit Formation, it would control the consumer for a short period of time. Even if he was unable to control the consumer, he could restrain his power.

Chu Feng, at present, wanted to use the Li family's master to take care of the Ma family. After removing the Ma family, he believed that the Li family's master wouldn't just watch as Chu Feng took the Spiritual Awareness in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Rang. So, the Black and White Rakshasa was Chu Feng's trump card.

However, it was definitely not his final trump card. Those were still the three Secret Skills he grasped. Chu Feng knew that Martial Lords were very powerful, and with his current strength, despite being invincible within the Heaven realm, he was still unable to kill a Martial Lord.

But, the three Secret Skills Chu Feng grasped had evolved. If Chu Feng used them with his full power, it was likely even a Martial Lord could do nothing to him. That was also why Chu Feng was so confident.

After that, exactly as it played out in Chu Feng's head, the Li family let out information and announced to the outside that Chu Feng attempted to break open the Monstrous Beast's Spirit Formation, but at the end, was unsuccessful, causing it to go mad. As nothing could be done, he could only kill it.

When that was known, many Li family members who didn't know the truth were very disappointed. After all, they hoped Chu Feng could break open the Spirit Formation so they could find out the criminal who aimed

to assassinate their family's Big Miss.

But that put the Shabi couple and the Ma family's members at ease. They truly thought that the Li family knew nothing, so everything went according to their original plan.

Just like that, a few more days passed, and finally, the day that the Li and Ma family agreed to open the treasure within the Wolf Ivory Mountain arrived. The Li family gathered all of the experts and grandly flew over to the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range.

"God damn, that bastard really has some luck. He actually saved the Big Miss! Right now, he has really thoroughly gotten good impressions from her and the family master." When an expert invited by the Li family looked at the lively conversation between Chu Feng and Li Chan, and when even the Li family's master chatted occasionally with Chu Feng, he was permeated with envy, and such envy gave birth to hatred as well.

"In the world of cultivators, strength will forever rule supreme. The Li family did not invite us here for chats and laughs." Just at that time, Yuelao spoke.

"Yuelao, what do you mean?" Hearing that, many experts went close to him. They felt very displeased when they looked at Chu Feng, and really wished something bad would happen to him. They even wanted to give him a lesson.

"What day is today?" Yuelao asked.

"I've heard that there's an ancient remain in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, and the Li and Ma family will open it together." Someone replied.

"Since they're opening it together, then there will definitely be a contest. In this world, there are no true alliances, only true benefits."

"I've heard that the Ma family invited quite a few experts from the outside as well. So, when we meet later, there will definitely be clashes. At least there will be a time when we compare our might. That time will be the time when we show our strengths. With only the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, what can that brat Wuqing do?"

“Later on, if the Ma family does not jeer, then it’s fine. But if they do, I will be the first to make my move and shame the Ma family. If the Ma family doesn’t take that loss, they will definitely send another person up. At that time, all of you can recommend Wuqing to go. With his cultivation, he will definitely be greatly defeated, and his great defeat would also shame the Li family. So… Hmph!” Yuelao coldly snorted, his face completely chilly.

“Excellent idea Yuelao, excellent idea!” And after hearing Yuelao’s words, those experts sneered, and the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with was filled with expectation.

Chapter 585: Spirit Formation Technique Contest

After a short trip, Chu Feng and the others very quickly arrived at the agreed location in the Wolf Ivory Mountain Range, a small ravine within some mountains. At the bottom of the ravine, a large group of people had gathered, and judging by the clothes they wore, they were from the Ma family.

The cultivation that the Ma family had was all quite good. The weakest were in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, but most were at the peak of the Heaven realm. They even had eighteen Blue-cloak World Spiritists, but the Li family only had a number that could be counted with one hand: five.

So, it could be said that in terms of the number of people and total strength, the Ma family did indeed far surpass the Li family. That was not only limited to the experts the Ma family invited. Even the people from the Ma family surpassed those from the Li family.

There was especially an old man within the crowd who had an extraordinary complexion and powerful presence.

He was near three meters tall, and his body was so sturdy that even through his clothes his chucks of healthy muscles could be seen. Even the wrinkles on his face did not seem like wrinkles, but more like scars.

Although he neared the age of a hundred, the feeling he gave off was as if he was at the peak of his life. Without much thinking, Chu Feng knew who that person was. He was certainly the master of the Ma family, a rank one Martial Lord, Ma Yukun.

“Brother, you’ve finally come! I’ve waited quite a long time for you.” Seeing Chu Feng and the others, Ma Yukun first rose into the sky and while full of smiles, he initiated a conversation with the Li family’s master. The Li family’s master was also very enthusiastic, like nothing had ever happened. Both of them exhibited the brotherly affection

between themselves.

Chu Feng was used to seeing such a scene, so his focus did not stop on the Ma family's body, but at the ravine.

When he used his Heaven's Eyes and looked down from above, he discovered that the ravine did look quite like the location of a Spiritual Lair.

However, after Chu Feng descended, he simply could not find anything out of the ordinary, let alone the entrance. Now that wasn't because Chu Feng's cultivation was too weak. It only meant that the mysterious expert who sealed that place was too strong. It wasn't the terrain that hid itself from Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, but the Spirit Formation laid that was hidden from Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes.

"Brother, I have waited dozens of years for this day, and our ancestors are always watching us from above."

"Right now, we can finally open this place. We must be early with matters, so why not open it right now?" As the Ma family's master spoke, he took out a stone case from his Cosmos Sack. Although there wasn't anything special about the stone case, the patterns in the center of the stone case told Chu Feng it was not simple at all. The object inside the stone case was even less simple.

"Mm. Brother, you're correct. However, our ancestors had made it clear that it must be a World Spiritist who opens this place, but neither of us are a World Spiritist. Who should such an important responsibility be given to?" The Li family's master also took out an almost identical stone case.

"Brother. Although neither of us are qualified for this matter, right now, what we don't lack are people like World Spiritists in our families. However, such a significant duty can only be bore by a single person. Who exactly to send is a problem..."

"But the solution to that is very simple. From what I see, choose your Li family's most excellent World Spiritist, and I'll also choose a decent one from my Ma family."

“Let them two compare their Spirit Formation techniques, and the victor will bear this heavy responsibility. They will then open this place with both our keys. How about it?” The Ma family’s master smiled and said.

“Sure! Brother, we’ll follow your words.” The Li family’s master nodded his head in approval. Then, he looked at the Li family crowd behind him, and locked his gaze on Yuelao after lightly scanning over them. He said, “Yuelao, I’ll pass my Li family’s heavy responsibility to you.”

“Yes sir!” Seeing that, Yuelao hurriedly replied. He first tidied up the blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak on him, then complacently looked at the crowd. Particularly, he looked at Chu Feng with a special gaze, as if saying, “Little boy, can you do this? In this crucial moment, the one who represents the Li family is still me.”

“Mr. Gu, go.” At the same time, the Ma family’s master waved his hand.

Immediately after he finished speaking, an old man also wearing a blue-coloured World Spirit Cloak walked out from the Ma family’s mass of people.

Not only was the old man a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, his cultivation was not weaker than Yuelao, also having the cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, in comparison to Yuelao’s smugness, he seemed quite tranquil, but his gaze emanated absolute confidence.

“My friend, I wonder... How do you wish to compete?” After the old man called Mr. Gu walked out, he very politely asked Yuelao.

“Is there even a need to ask? Since it’s a spar between World Spiritists, naturally, we compete with Spirit Formation techniques.” However, Yuelao coldly snorted, then willed. With a “hmm”, boundless blue-coloured Spirit Formation power surged out from his body.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Afterwards, he moved his palms around, facing the sky and very quickly drawing. A large Spirit Formation was then erected in mid-air.

whoosh And when the boundless blue-coloured power coming from Yuelao’s body passed through the huge Spirit Formation he created in the

air, a blue-coloured sword of three-meters width and nine-meters height formed, and slashed down towards Mr. Gu.

It was not a martial skill, nor a Secret Skill. It was a special Spirit Formation formed by a combination of formation, so it had a certain amount of offensive nature. The blue-coloured huge sword that Yuelao formed was a rather brilliant method.

"As expected of Yuelao. Such a powerful Spirit Formation technique!" Indeed, after the blue-coloured huge sword appeared, all of the World Spiritists in the Li family couldn't help lighting up their eyes and praising, because they, who were also World Spiritists, absolutely could not do the thing that Yuelao did.

But even though the Li family's crowd was exclaiming in surprise, the World Spiritists from the Ma family were very calm, as if they had absolute confidence that they would win.

"My friend, you truly do have great methods, but sadly, if it is only a blue-coloured Spirit Formation, I'm afraid you will not be able to defeat me."

Just at that moment, Mr. Gu coldly smiled. Then, he raised a single hand and drew in the air. A purple-coloured Spirit Formation quickly condensed in front of him.

"What? How is that possible? He's a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?"

"Heavens! That too inconceivable! He's actually a Purple-cloak World Spiritist! Isn't that power only Martial Lords can grasp?"

After seeing the purple-coloured formation, the faces of the people from the Li family changed. Formerly very smug, their faces were now full of shock.

Normally speaking, purple-coloured Spirit Formation power should be power only Martial Lords could grasp. Those who became a Purple-cloak World Spiritist before being a Martial Lord could be said to be a dragon within men.

At present, Mr. Gu of the Ma family was obviously a person like that.

How could the Li family not be astonished? After all, there was an impassable distance between Blue-cloak World Spiritists and Purple-cloak World Spiritists. All of them knew that the Li family had lost.

Chapter 586: Chu Feng Enters the Stage

“Hmph. A Purple-cloak World Spiritist? So what? I don’t believe you will break my giant sword!”

Although he knew that the Spirit Formation power his opponent grasped completely surpassed his own, Yuelao was unwilling to admit defeat. Gritting his teeth, he channeled all his power into the formation.

With merely a blink, the blue-coloured large sword that was only nine meters long expended rapidly, and actually became over a dozen meters long. Even its might increased by several times.

But that Mr. Gu still did not fear such a change. Rather, within his smile, a trace of mocking leaked out.

“Grow!”

Suddenly, Mr. Gu loudly shouted. A purple-coloured formation towering in front of him spun quickly. Countless symbols swirled inside, forming a strange but gorgeous pattern. As radiance dazzled, powerful aura emanated from within.

boom

Just as Yuelao’s huge blue-coloured sword was going to near Mr. Gu, an explosion came from the purple-coloured Spirit Formation. Coinciding with such an event was a large purple-coloured hand abruptly stretching out from the same formation. Five fingers spread out, aiming to grab the huge sword.

The large hand was very huge. It was simply like the hand of a giant. Moreover, its speed was quick, and its might fierce. It grabbed onto the blue-coloured huge sword, and with a light clench, a bang burst out, the blue-coloured sword becoming fragments.

poof Simultaneous to the shattering of the blue-coloured huge sword, Yuelao’s complexion paled, his mouth widened, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out, staining his clothes. Then, his legs went limp, and he powerlessly fell down. If it weren’t for the people from the Li family

arriving on time, he would have definitely crashed onto the ground.

wuao

But as Yuelao was utterly defeated and suffered heavy injuries, a furious roar came from the purple-coloured formation. After such a roar, the huge hand that already appeared actually grew speedily. Under the crowd's gazes, a huge monster walked out.

That monster had a purple-coloured half-transparent body. It was formed by Spirit Formations. It was humanoid, but had a beast-like face. It was almost dozens of meters tall, and its aura was very powerful, its strength extraordinary as well. Despite being created by a Spirit Formation, it was very lifelike, as if it had intelligence. It struck fear into many people's hearts.

"So powerful. He has actually exhibited Spirit Formation techniques to such a realm." Seeing the enormous monster, the people on scene exclaimed endlessly, convinced by Mr. Gu's Spirit Formation techniques.

"Brother, it seems like this heavy responsibility of opening the treasure falls upon my Ma family's Mr. Gu for completion." At that instant, the Ma family's master spoke with a smile. His face and words were brimming with smugness.

"Haha, good good good! Brother, you've actually found such an excellent World Spiritist. I can see that you've put quite painstaking efforts in order to open this place. Brother, I truly thank you for the hard work."

But the Li family's master wasn't too displeased. Instead, he very happily laughed, and as he spoke, he and the Ma family's master walked together towards Mr. Gu, preparing to hand the stone cases in their hands to him.

Although on the surface, the Li family's master didn't seem to be concerned about the horrendous defeat of that fight, the other people in the Li family had very ugly faces on. They, who even had so many airs of arrogance before, were currently extremely downcast.

It was because the exchange just now did not only represent the

complete defeat of Yuelao, it also represented their Li family's complete defeat. That made the people of the Li family feel that they had no face, and were endlessly ashamed.

"Mr. Gu, you are truly very skilled. But I have also studied Spirit Formation techniques, so I wonder if you can give me some pointers on it, Mr. Gu?" But as the people from the Li family felt that everything was set, a loud and clear voice suddenly rang out from the ranks of the Li family.

"Who?" After that voice rang out, almost everyone on scene couldn't help being surprised. They quickly shot their gazes at the origin of the voice.

And when they saw him, their complexions changed once again because at that very instant, they could clearly see a handsome middle-aged man slowly walking out from the Li family's crowd. That person was none other than Wuqing, transformed from Chu Feng.

"Wuqing, what are you doing? Are you looking to die? Quickly get the hell back here, don't go out to lose face!"

"Bastard, does this guy want fame so much that he wants to go insane? Just look at his opponent. Even Yuelao could not defeat that Mr. Gu, yet he dares to walk out?"

"Ahh, this time, my Li family will truly lose a tremendous amount of face."

After discovering that it was Chu Feng who called out, many people in the Li family felt extremely helpless. Some even sent hidden mental messages to Chu Feng, telling him to get back to avoid any more embarrassment for the Li family.

Actually, not only those who didn't know Chu Feng acted like that. Even Li Chan and the Li family's master who knew Chu Feng slightly more currently frowned strongly, not knowing what action was best because they too did not feel that Chu Feng, who was only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, could defeat the Purple-cloak World Spiritist in the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

“My friend, you are quite courageous. May I have your name?” After derisively examining Chu Feng, Mr. Gu smiled lightly and spoke.

“I am Wuqing.” Chu Feng replied serenely.

“Ah, so it’s Wuqing. My friend Wuqing, do you truly want to have a Spirit Formation technique spar with me?” Mr. Gu very mockingly asked.

“Don’t tell me you do not dare?” Chu Feng replied with cold words.

“Haha, you jest. I don’t dare? Do you think I’m afraid of you?”

“Since you insist, I’ll grant your wish. However, the distance between our strengths is too big. If I truly attack, I’m afraid I will heavily injure you.”

“So, I won’t attack you. If you want to defeat me, that’s fine as well. So long as you use your strongest Spirit Formation technique to attack my Spirit Formation Giant and make it tremble, then it’s your win.” Mr. Gu smiled while looking at Chu Feng, his gaze full of disdain.

“Oh? Are your words really true? As long as I can cause the thing you made to shake, it’s my win?” Chu Feng loudly asked, almost disagreeing on the method of determining the victor.

“But of course. I’ve always kept true to my word. My friend Wuqing, please don’t think that I’m looking down on you. This is really for the sake of your safety. I have no other choice.” Mr. Gu spread open his hands, as though it truly did not matter for him.

“Then I must thank you for your kind intentions.” Wearing a light smile on his face that suddenly turned cold, Chu Feng opened up his arms, then rapidly waved them. Layers of odd symbols endlessly poured out and drilled into the air.

Chu Feng’s speed was extremely quick, so quick that one could not see his hands clearly, nor his movements. They could see only the countless afterimages formed by his arms as they kept on flashing in front of him.

In that situation, with Chu Feng in the middle, his surroundings started to change as well. At first, there were only bursts of rumblings, but then

the earth started to faintly tremble. At the end, innumerable shattered rocks rose from the ground, rising gradually and even the air around him twisted.

Chapter 587: The Domineering Chu Feng

“This is quite an imposing atmosphere. It seems like this guy can really play tricks.” Seeing the powerful might that Chu Feng generated, many people stared at the side with cold eyes and spoke only to scorn. No one believed that Chu Feng’s power was genuine, and instead felt Chu Feng was going to embellish the previous defeat with another one.

“Ahh, one cannot escape from the disaster they stirred up themself. He is truly preparing to embarrass the Li family!” And Yuelao who was heavily injured by Mr. Gu just now helplessly shook his head. After personally experiencing his power, he was pretty much sure of Chu Feng’s defeat.

hmm But just as everyone felt that Chu Feng was putting up false might, they saw him abruptly merge his blurred hands. In front of him, a dozen vortexes appeared. They spun around quickly, and like circular doors, stood in the air.

As the vortexes spiraled, purple-coloured lights emerged from them, along with countless blinding symbols. When the purple-coloured lights interweaved with the symbols, they formed strange and bright patterns. At the very end, the dozen vortexes transformed into purple-coloured Spirit Formations.

“Heavens! That is?!”

When everyone saw that, all of their expressions distorted. They were dumbstruck, and their glittering eyes were full of astonishment.

All of them were quite extraordinary people, so they could all tell what Chu Feng created were all purple-coloured Spirit Formations. Moreover, it was a dozen purple-coloured Spirit Formations. Chu Feng, the person only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, actually grasped purple-coloured Spirit Formation power as well.

“How is this possible? Can it be that he’s a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?!”

At that instant, many people who disliked Chu Feng were stupefied thoroughly by the scene in front of their eyes because they really did not dare to believe that Chu Feng was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

"Lord Benefactor Wuqing is actually?"

In reality, not only were those who were awaiting Chu Feng embarrassment stunned. Even Li Chan, the Li family's master, and the Ma family's crowd were baffled.

If one were to say that a person who obtained purple-coloured Spirit Formation power in the ninth level of the Heaven realm was a genius, then a person who obtained such power in the eighth level of the Heaven realm was a genius within geniuses.

"They are indeed purple-coloured Spirit Formations, that is true; but more importantly to World Spiritists is the control of those Spirit Formations and not merely false bravado. Can you control the dozen of Spirit Formations you opened simultaneously?"

Mr. Gu, who was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, had already confirmed Chu Feng's identity. However, he did not feel that Chu Feng could proficiently control the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and even more so, he didn't believe Chu Feng could successfully lay a dozen Spirit Formations.

Thinking back to when he first obtained the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, and when he skillfully grasped the power of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, the time he spent on doing both those things was a lot, and he had also worked very hard.

wuaooo~~~~~~~~~

But at that moment, within the dozen of purple-coloured Spirit Formations, deafening roars rang out concurrently. That noise was even more terrifying than the roar from the giant Mr. Gu formed earlier.

wuaooo~~~~~~~~~

However, that roar was merely the beginning. Within the unending roars, a dozen large and sturdy figures stepped out of the Spirit

Formations in succession. Everyone was thoroughly flabbergasted by that.

Not a single one of those figures was smaller than the one Mr. Gu formed, and looking at them in terms of might, every single one of them surpassed the giant beast that Mr. Gu made.

It was because they not only had large physiques, on their semi-transparent bodies, there was even a layer of domineering armor. With armor on their bodies, and huge axes in their hands, their imposing outer appearances made it difficult for anyone to determine whether they were giants or beasts. But, something unquestionable was that they were definitely near-invincible enormous warriors.

wuaoo~~~~~~~~~~

As everyone was submerged in shock, there came another deafening roar. Those dozen of enormous monsters, as commanded by Chu Feng, strode forward, dashing quickly towards Mr. Gu.

boom boom boom

As they madly ran, they kept on making thunder-like explosions. Not only did they stir up roiling dust, they even shook the mountains and earth. Moreover, their speeds were extremely quick, arriving in front of Mr. Gu after only a blink.

ao~~~~

boom~~~~

At that instant, the huge beast Mr. Gu formed had intentions of protecting Mr. Gu, but in an instant it was tore into pieces by the dozen of monsters Chu Feng formed. Ultimately, it reverted into purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, which then scatteredly floated in the air. The huge beast that Mr. Gu thought to be invincible could not even take a single blow in front of Chu Feng's giants.

"Damn brat, don't underestimate me!"

When the huge beast was torn into pieces, Mr. Gu immediately paled, but, he was not afraid. Rather, he howled at the sky with strong bloodlust.

He overlaid his palms, throwing out a very special hand seal. When that hand seal was completed, the earth underneath his feet also violently trembled. Countless cracks appeared, and at the end, the earth started to shatter and rise into the air.

“This horrifying power... Could it be that he wants to pour all he has, and is betting everything on this single strike?” Seeing the environmental change caused by Mr. Gu, Yuelao couldn’t help inhaling a breath of cool air. He, also a World Spiritist, seemed to have a premonition.

“Haa!”

Indeed, when the power in Mr. Gu’s body accumulated to a certain degree, he suddenly roared at the sky. Then, boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, like a volcano erupting, started to burst out of his body.

The purple-coloured Spirit Formation power rose into the sky and was exceptionally grand, but the most shocking thing was that the boundless power started to gather together, and formed a large snake that touched the sky.

That large snake was over two hundred meters long. It had sharp teeth in its mouth, and its eyes glowed with red. Not only was it lifelike, its might was even extremely powerful. Even a very arbitrarily movement in the sky gave rise to gales.

whoosh

boom boom boom boom boom

Suddenly, the large Spirit Formation snake’s tail suddenly moved, and like a whip it streaked downwards. In only an instant, it completely smashed the dozen of enormous monsters. Its strength was powerful, and was simply unstoppable.

“Hmph.”

However, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest as he faced the horrifying Spirit Formation snake. He snorted, coldly, then opened up his right hand, his left hand then quickly drawing a symbol in his right

hand's palm.

After drawing the symbol, Chu Feng raised his right hand slightly. At that instant, purple light swirled around in his palm. The symbol was speedily changing, becoming countless patterns surrounded by purple lights. They were like little snakes as they climbed Chu Feng's arm from his palm, and almost immediately, they covered the entirety of Chu Feng's right arm.

At that instant, on Chu Feng's right arm, the patterns surrounded by purple lights were oppressing, and frightening. But, that was only the beginning. Chu Feng waved his right arm slightly, and the Spirit Formation power that was smashed by the huge snake actually started to gather together, and became a huge hand even a bit larger than the huge snake.

The huge hand was purple-coloured and several hundred meters long. Its sinister appearance was simply akin to a devil's palm. But that wasn't even much. More importantly, in every single pore of that palm, sharp blades similar to teeth of saws extended outwards. With a glimpse, it made people shudder from fear and it chilled their spines.

Chapter 588: Opening the Treasure

"It seems like I have underestimated you. But, my full-powered strike may not lose to yours!" Seeing Chu Feng's attack, Mr. Gu was also aware of the unfavourable situation.

But he did not retreat. Instead, his hand seals changed again. The huge Spirit Formation snake "dancing" in the air shrieked, then it opened its horrifying huge mouth that was full of fangs and flew quickly towards Chu Feng.

He knew that his huge Spirit Formation snake would not be able to defeat Chu Feng's terrifying huge hand, so he didn't even plan to meet force with force. He wanted to put everything into one thing: to attack Chu Feng with the speed of the huge Spirit Formation snake.

"Naive." However, Chu Feng lightly chuckled at Mr. Gu's action. The radiance on his arm poured out, lightly trembling, then with a bang, the huge hand in the sky exploded, and disappeared.

"What happened? It is possible that the formation Wuqing made was too strong, and he couldn't control it, so it shattered?" Seeing the disappearance of the huge hand, people felt that there was a fault in Chu Feng's control, leading to the destruction of the formation. After all, there was too much Spirit Formation power contained in the huge hand, and it was indeed not something normal people could control.

"You know what they say: the old ones are the cunning ones. That Wuqing will be defeated." At the same time the huge hand disappeared, the Spirit Formation snake Mr. Gu formed was less than a thousand meters away from Chu Feng. It was almost instantly going to collide into Chu Feng and consume him.

hmm

But just as everyone felt that Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to be defeated, he coldly smiled, then his palm lightly trembled again. The space in front of him transformed, and when everyone came to their senses, the horrifying huge hand actually appeared in front of Chu Feng,

and stopped the huge snake's path.

As it turned out, the huge hand did not disappear, nor did it shatter. Everything just now was only an illusion that Chu Feng made. The huge hand could actually be controlled however his heart wished to.

wuao Mr. Gu, of course, wasn't a simple character either. Seeing the reappearance of the huge hand, he did not panic too much. His face gloomed, and with a thought, he controlled the huge snake, aiming to circle around the huge hand to attack Chu Feng again.

boom

However, Chu Feng did not give that chance to him. His right hand clenched suddenly, and the huge Spirit Formation hand clenched also with strong pressure. Moreover, it caught the huge snake. The hand's speed was quick, much quicker than the huge snake.

With a bang, the huge Spirit Formation snake that Mr. Gu created was shattered by Chu Feng huge hand.

"How is this possible? It's impossible! I've actually lost to a brat like him, I..."

poof~~~~~

Seeing his lifeblood crushed into pieces, Mr. Gu very bitterly howled at the sky, but before he could finish, his mouth widened, a mouthful of blood sprayed out.

Moreover, this time, not only was his face pale. His forehead was awash with sweat, and it was even like the skin on his body shrunk. In an instant, he aged dozens of years, and was like a person who was going to age to death. From that, it could be seen how much spirit he put into the Spirit Formation snake he formed just now.

But looking back at Chu Feng, his face was currently florid, and very casually, he dissolved the huge hand. He simply wasn't affected at all. Clearly, the attack just now wasn't his strongest killing move.

"How is that possible? This, this, this, this Wuqing is actually so

powerful?!"

"Where did the Li family get such a World Spiritist? He is truly young and has potential!" At that instant, not a single person didn't have a face full of shock. They were thoroughly convinced by Chu Feng's strength.

Especially the people who looked down on Chu Feng and wished he would mess up. At that instant, their faces were very ashamed because this time, their eyes were really mistaken. Not only was Chu Feng not merely an ordinary person, he was even an outstanding genius.

"Haha, my friend Wuqing, I never would have thought that you were a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and you are even so practiced with Spirit Formation techniques! The technique just now truly broadened our horizons!"

The Li family's master excitedly laughed loudly. This time, he was even happier. Clearly, it was a smile that came from his heart. After Chu Feng walked up to him, he even unrestrainedly praised.

As for the Ma family's master, Ma Yukun, the corners of his mouth twitched. Especially when he saw the Purple-cloak World Spiritist he spent great sums to invite no longer having any use, his fury was overflowing, and his bloodlust raged.

But, right now, he had no choice but to forcefully suppress the fury and murderous intents in his heart. He put on a very relieved and happily surprised expression and walked up to the Li family's master and Chu Feng.

"Brother, is this that Wuqing you told me before? Indeed, not simple at all." The Ma family's master first looked at the Li family's master before handing the stone case in his hands to Chu Feng, and said, "My friend, the heavy responsibility of opening this place rests upon your shoulders. Do not disappoint us!"

"Wuqing, my Li family and the Ma family has waited five hundred years for this day. Everything depends on you now." At the same time, the Li family's master also gave the stone case to Chu Feng.

“Don’t worry. I will definitely not disappoint everybody.” Chu Feng lightly smiled and accepted the two stone cases.

Holding the stone cases, Chu Feng could feel that there were special formations protecting the stone cases. Those formations were very powerful, and it could be said that the methods Chu Feng grasp simply could not open the stone cases.

But, that was not a problem for Chu Feng because he, who was sharp, immediately saw the way to open the stone cases. Moreover, there was only one method to do so. It was not to use the power of World Spiritists to open them, but to combine the two stone cases.

Indeed, after Chu Feng put the two stone cases together, two bangs rang out. The two stone cases then opened, but it was different from what he expected. Within the stone boxes, two normal Spirit Formation keys were not inside. There were actually two glowing objects.

swish swish

After the two objects of light appeared, they rapidly rose into the sky, then flew down again. Their speed was strangely quick, and when people came to their senses, the two objects started to quickly circle around the crowd, as if searching for something.

“Quick, catch it!”

At that instant, no matter if it was the people from the Li family or the people from the Ma family, they were endlessly excited. Some even thought that the two objects of light were treasures and wanted to catch them. Even the Li family’s master and the Ma family’s master made their move together.

But they could do nothing as the two objects of light were too fast. Even the two Martial Lords could not catch them. That couldn’t help making them panic.

whoosh whoosh

However, just as everyone expressed helplessness one after another, the two objects of light became two pencil-straight light, charging straight

into Chu Feng's brain.

"Ahh!"

At that instant, Chu Feng only felt a stabbing pain in his brain. A scorching current of air spread from his head, then it filled his entire body. When he endured the scorching current of air and opened his eyes, even if it was him, his pupils couldn't help shrinking, and his calm face couldn't help changing suddenly.

Chapter 589: Hong Qiang

"This is?"

At that very instant, Chu Feng astonishedly discovered that he was still standing within the ravine. The sceneries around him didn't change at all, but the people within the ravine did. Everyone from the Li and Ma family was completely gone.

At present, other than him, there was only one other person in the ravine. It was a middle-aged man. He wore plain cloth clothing, and stood nearby with his hands behind his back.

When a light breeze brushed past his body and blew his ink-like black hair as well as his clothing, Chu Feng could feel that his strength reached a point that he could not even touch.

"You are not from the Li family, nor from the Ma family." Suddenly, that person turned around, and at that instant, Chu Feng could also see that man's face.

His face was very ordinary, and in addition to his simple cloth clothing, he was simply as ordinary as one could get. But, in between his brows, the man had a hint of a unique demeanor. It was like the descent of a lord, and of an extremely valiant person. He was truly an exceptional expert.

Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew he entered an illusion.

Although the man in front of his eyes was very real, he was likely only a strand of awareness. As for why he seemed so real when gazed upon, it was because Chu Feng was currently located inside the illusion. He seemed real, but in reality, nothing was real in front of his eyes.

As for who that person was, it was not a difficult guess. He was likely the mysterious expert, that the Li and Ma family saved five hundred years ago.

"Senior, I am indeed not a part of the Li or Ma family. I am an assistant invited by the Li family, responsible for opening the treasure you left behind." Chu Feng replied truthfully because his opponent was too

powerful. Even though he was an awareness fragment left behind five hundred years ago, if he wanted to kill Chu Feng, it would definitely not take more effort than blowing dust.

"I left so many things for them back then, and even specially channeled Spirit power into the two of them, but the result is five hundred years later, they couldn't even develop a half-decent World Spiritist, and still have to rely on an outsider's help?" After hearing Chu Feng's words, the mysterious expert seemed rather helpless.

"Whatever, whatever. Their successors' incompetence is not related to me since the favours I owed were paid back five hundred years ago already." The mysterious expert seemed to be very disappointed at the Li and Ma family's successors. Only after sighing for a while did he raise his head again, look at Chu Feng, and ask, "Young man, what's your name?"

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's heart tightened. The man actually saw through his Transformational Mask, and knew that his real identity was a young man.

"Senior, I am called Chu Feng." After he was seen through, Chu Feng did not dare to hide anything, and could only speak his real name.

"Chu Feng, you have quite good talent. If the Eastern Sea Region was the same as five hundred years ago, then you would be seen as a rare genius. This land here would not have bound you."

"Whatever. Rather than leaving the treasure here for the Li and Ma family's ordinary people, why not give it to you for marriage costs or something. Perhaps in the future, in the Holy Land of Martialism, we could meet." The mysterious expert smiled and said.

"Senior, you're, you're in the Holy Land of Martialism?!" Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help being taken aback because the meaning behind his words did not only mean he was in the Holy Land of Martialism, it also meant that he was still alive. If he was already so powerful five hundred years ago, what realm would he be in five hundred years later? Most importantly, he's a person who has lived for over five hundred years?!

“Hoh. I was originally from the Holy Land of Martialism, and accidentally came to this place five hundred years ago. But, you don’t need to be too shocked. The natural energy in the Holy Land of Martialism is completely different from here. The average life of a person at that place is not low. As long as one becomes a Martial King in addition to large amounts of life prolongation resources, it isn’t hard to live for over a thousand years.”

“In the future, if you can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, then you will see everything. I will guarantee that you’ll like that place, because that place is more suitable for you.”

“And if you can come to the Holy Land of Martialism, you can find me at the Defoliation Bamboo Forest. Remember, my name is Hong Qiang.” The mysterious man smiled and spoke. It could be seen that he liked Chu Feng quite a bit.

“Senior Hong Qiang, thank you for your kind intentions. In the future, when I enter the Holy Land of Martialism, I will definitely pay a visit to you.” Chu Feng remembered that name because sooner or later, he was going to step into the Holy Land of Martialism, and if there were a person willing to help himself in that mysterious and unpredictable land, it was definitely something good.

“Judging by your talent, it shouldn’t be hard for you to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. I’ll wait for you here.” Hong Qing satisfiedly nodded his head, then said, “Chu Feng, listen well. This Wolf Ivory Mountain Range is a place where a Spiritual Being gathers, and five hundred years ago, I already found this place’s Spiritual Awareness.”

“At present, you’ve obtained the Spirit Formation I left behind. Exactly because of that, you can open the lock to the Spiritual Lair and enter it. Go along the Spiritual Veins inside, and you will find the Spiritual Awareness.”

“But with the time of five hundred years, the Spiritual Awareness has since have small achievements. It naturally also has its own intelligence and a certain amount of power. I predict that its current cultivation is in

the realm of a rank one Martial Lord."

"But you don't need to be afraid. Back then, taking advantage of the Spiritual Awareness' infant state when it had yet to have intelligence, I laid a formation in the area it congregated at. As long as you enter, you can use that formation and suppress everything that is in the formation."

"Okay. This awareness fragment has been here for too long. It cannot existence for lengthy periods of time, and will disperse soon."

"If we are fated to, let us meet in the Holy Land of Martialism." Finishing those words, the mysterious expert's body became a strand of rainbow light, then it charged into the sky and disappeared. Quickly after, the scenery around him also twisted and changed.

"Defoliation Bamboo Forest, Hong Qiang!" At that instant, Chu Feng shut his eyes, and deeply carved in his heart that mysterious expert's name and his place of residence.

Although they met only once, since that expert entrusted everything here to him, it could be counted giving him a favour. Chu Feng did not expect that the mysterious expert would help himself in the future, but he had to repay such a favour, so naturally, he had to visit him.

"Wuqing, what's with you? Are you okay?"

Just at that moment, Chu Feng kept on hearing nervous and anxious voices next to his ear. Opening his eyes to look, he saw the Li family's master, the Ma family's master, as well as the crowd of the Li and Ma family, surrounding him in circles while tightly staring at him.

As he faced the crowd's nervous gazes, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said to the two family masters, "Milords, don't worry. I know the method to open it."

After speaking, Chu Feng willed, then a golden pattern appeared on his forehead. After it appeared, it quickly transformed, spreading downwards from his forehead. Soon, it covered Chu Feng's entire body.

But that was not the end. The patterns continued climbing downwards, and actually went onto the surface of the ground along his body. Then, it

spread like a spider's web, and instantly spread throughout the entire ravine.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

At that instant, golden light shot everywhere in the ravine and rumbles sounded. Beneath such strange might, even the earth started to tear. An extremely special square entrance then emerged in the heart of the ravine.

Chapter 590: Fatal Change

"Haha, success! After waiting for five hundred years, the time has finally come!" Seeing the already opened entrance, the Ma family's master was unceasingly excited, immediately running in.

Quickly after, the Li family's master, Chu Feng, and the others followed closely in.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered that all around the Spiritual Veins were normal rocks. Even if he observed detailedly with his Spirit power, he could not see any abnormalities. But, when he attempted to break them, he found out that the normal rocks were unbreakable, and were unexpectedly very hard to move.

That was sufficient to prove the specialness of the Spiritual Being. Unless Chu Feng's Spirit power reached a very powerful stage, otherwise, only by using the Heaven's Eyes could he find the location of the Spiritual Veins.

And the reason why the rocks were so special was naturally because they were affected by the Spiritual Being. According to the Pulse Searching Method, Chu Feng also learnt that such a thing was a normal phenomenon. Depending on the different time lengths of Spiritual Being formation, mystical and dangerous things of different degrees would be created within the Spiritual Veins.

However, looking at the features of the rocks as well as the number of years that the Spiritual Being had been forming for, there was likely not too many dangers in the Spiritual Veins. The only danger should be the Spiritual Awareness that had intelligence.

"Wuqing, how did you do that? You've actually opened this place." After walking along the Spiritual Veins for a while and discovering that there were no aberrations, the Li family's master walked up to Chu Feng side, smiling and asking.

"Those two light objects were keys. After they entered my body, not only did they grant me power to open this place, they also reminded me what

to do." Chu Feng replied with a smile.

"Oh? Then did those two light objects point out anything else to you?" The Li family's master continued asking.

"They didn't. But milord, don't worry. This path leads straight to the location of the treasure, and there are no obstructions or anything challenging on it. However, the treasure is a living being, and it has a certain level of cultivation. Milord, although your cultivation is sufficient to take care of it, you must also be careful." Chu Feng responded.

"I see, I see. Ah Wuqing, thank you for the hard work on this journey." Hearing those words, the Li family's master satisfiedly nodded his head, but as he spoke, a hint of a cold smile flashed past his face.

whoosh Seeing a hint of dark smile, Chu Feng heart immediately tightened, and he subconsciously used a bodily martial skill, leaping backwards.

"Die." As expected, just as Chu Feng evaded, the Li family's master suddenly attacked. He slammed down with his palm, a layer of horrifying battle power exploding at the location Chu Feng was just at. Luckily, Chu Feng dodged it, or else that strike would have definitely heavily injured Chu Feng.

"Milord, what are you doing?" Although he was aware that the Li family's master had malicious intents towards him, when he truly threw an attack at him, Chu Feng still felt astonished, and very furiously questioned.

"Father, what are you doing?!" At the same time, Li Chan also questioned with a face of confusion. As she spoke, she even opened her arms and stood in front of Chu Feng. She was deeply afraid that her father would attack Chu Feng again.

"Chan'er, don't be tricked by him! I've already asked your Uncle Ma. He simply didn't use any Monstrous Beast against you, nor had he thought of doing anything to my Li family. All of those were lies fabricated by this Wuqing. He aims to use me and you so that my Li family and the Ma family kills each other, while he profits on the side!" The Li family's

master pointed at Chu Feng and furiously said.

"Father, what are you saying? Why can't I understand? Why would Wuqing harm my Li family? He's the person who saved me! He's a person who wants to help my Li family!" Li Chan did not know what to do.

"Sigh. Chan'er, how can you be so foolish? That Monstrous Beast was not even bound by any Spirit Formation, and the Shabi couple didn't betray our Li family either. Everything was set up by this Wuqing! That Monstrous Beast is an accomplice with this Wuqing! He is using you!" The Li family's master also explained to Li Chan very helplessly.

"How is that possible? Father, you must have made a mistake. Wuqing definitely wouldn't use me or harm my Li family. I believe that he is innocent!" Li Chan was still defending Chu Feng.

"My silly niece, don't tell me that you're willing to believe an outsider than your Uncle Ma? Do you really think that I will harm your Li family?"

"Don't be stupid. My Ma family and your Li family has been so close for so many years! How could I do anything disadvantageous to your Li family?" At that instant, the Ma family's master also spoke, and his face was full of innocence.

"Big Miss, wake up! Don't continue being tricked by this outsider!" At the same time, the Shabi couple also urged her.

"You! You two!" Seeing the several people in front of her, Li Chan couldn't help taking a few steps back. She was thoroughly frightened by the circumstantial change at that instant. So much that she almost fell to the ground. Luckily, Chu Feng behind her held her up.

The current Chu Feng was rather calm. He already saw through everything. Li Chan's father, the master of the Li family, was indeed as he thought. A person who reached the extremities of stupidity.

Very clearly, he secretly met the Ma family's master in these few days and questioned him, whether he controlled the Monstrous Beast to kill Li Chan, and whether he was planning to harm the Li family.

And the outcome was very obvious as well. The Ma family's master

made up some lies and put all of the accusations onto Chu Feng's head. The most speechless thing though, was that the Li family's master, the idiotic person, actually believed them all.

"Li Chan, you truly have a good father. It is quite the miracle for your Li family to have existed until now." Chu Feng smiled, relieved. As he spoke, he pulled Li Chan behind, then looked at the Li family's master and the Ma family's master, saying, "It seems like right now, you two feel that I no longer have any worth, and want to eliminate me?"

"It's not that you have no worth, it's that you should die in the first place." The Ma family's master fiercely said, as if Chu Feng truly wronged him, and that he was the real criminal.

"Ho, you can want to kill me, but whether you can or not will depend on your skills." Chu Feng coldly snorted, then leaped, and the azure-coloured huge dragon appeared underneath his feet. Then, a light flashed, and Chu Feng had already rushed deeper into the Spiritual Veins.

"Hmph. You are looking to die!" Seeing Chu Feng escape, the Ma family's master also stepped forward, and disappeared in an instant, chasing after Chu Feng.

"Brother, I'll give you a hand!" Quickly after, the Li family's master also chased after him, similarly, his bloodlust evident.

"Father, don't go! You can't attack Wuqing, don't be tricked by Ma Yukun!" Seeing that, Li Chan's face changed greatly, but just as she wanted to chase as well, two people appeared in front of her. It was the Shabi couple.

"Scram! Don't block my road!" Li Chan furiously shouted.

"Heh. Miss, don't be lost in his lies and have your heart muddle by that bastard. It's better to stay by our side and let us protect you." The Shabi couple coldly laughed, and as they spoke, they grabbed Li Chan's arm.

"Ahh!" At that instant, Li Chan felt two enormous bursts of Heaven power drilling into her body. Then, all of her strength was gone, and she lost her ability to move on her own.

Chapter 591: Phoenix of Ice

Underneath the Wolf Ivory Mountain, within the Spiritual Veins, with one in the front and one in the back, the Ma family's and the Li family's master were speedily flying.

They pretty much used their strongest bodily methods, but the two rank one Martial Lords could not even catch up to Chu Feng. They couldn't even see Chu Feng's back.

"Dammit! How can that guy be so fast?"

That situation was something the two family masters never expected, but they did not panic. After all, that path would end up at a wall, and as long as they continued chasing, catching Chu Feng was something that would happen sooner or later.

However, things were not as simple as they had imagined. When they madly flew to the end yet did not see Chu Feng, it was as if Chu Feng disappeared. He did not leave any traces behind.

But in that instant, the two family masters simply didn't have the heart to think where Chu Feng went. They were thoroughly absorbed by the scene in front of their eyes.

It was a square cave, and the walls at that place were not ordinary rocks like the ones within the Spiritual Veins. They were strange crystal-like and ice-cube-like things.

Yet, those things were not crystals, nor ice cubes. They were Ice Crystals, extremely strange and special objects in this world.

Ice Crystals were extremely hard objects, one of the best materials to use when making weapons. They were very rare, and very valuable. But at that place, Ice Crystals formed a vast rectangular palace. Moreover, in the center of such a strange palace, there was an object.

It was an egg, its diameter over ten meters. It was an egg formed by Ice Crystals. But, as the huge egg lay serenely in the center of the palace, faint blue-coloured light visible by the naked eye could be seen circling

around it. Moreover, it emanated energy that cultivators could clearly feel.

“Treasure! That’s the treasure in this place! It contains such powerful energy, and it is a very rare Natural Oddity. This makes my Ma family’s five hundred year long wait worth it.”

At that instant, the Ma family’s master was endlessly excited. With quick meteor-like steps, he flew, and in a blink, arrived in front of the Ice Crystal Egg, and wanted to take it.

hmm

However, just as his palm touched the Ice Crystal Egg, a burst of wild power spread from within. Catching him off guard, it actually threw the Ma family’s master, the rank one Martial Lord, away.

bzzz Simultaneously, thick cracks also started to appear, and they were rapidly spreading. With only an instant, the cracks covered the entire Ice Crystal Egg and finally, within “bzz” sounds, shattered

“Brother, careful! Quickly retreat!” At that instant, the expression of the Li family’s master couldn’t help changing greatly as he hurriedly called out loudly.

Because, at that very instant, at the location where the Ice Crystal Egg was, an enormous thing several meters tall appeared. It was a phoenix. A phoenix formed by Ice Crystals.

Although the Ice Crystal Phoenix’s body size was not very big, it gave off an extremely powerful aura. It had the strength of a rank one Martial Lord. However, that was not the important part. The important part was its incomparably noble demeanor. With a glimpse, one’s soul would tremble. They would also have the impulse to kneel and worship, as if it was an unoffendable holy existence.

“Brother, this is the treasure we must take down. How can we retreat? Quickly take it down with me. The energy it contains can definitely make my Ma family and your Li family prosper, and we can create an unprecedented flourishing age!”

In comparison to the Li family master's fear, the Ma family's master was extremely thrilled. Not only did he not shrink away, he even unrestrainedly released his powerful aura of a rank one Martial Lord, then like an arrow, shot towards the Ice Crystal Phoenix and started to fight against it.

aoo~~~~

boom boom boom

Two rank one Martial Lord existences clashed against one another, instantly giving rise to many frenzied ripples. Martial power only Martial Lords had merged with the power only the Ice Crystal Phoenix had. The entire vast Ice Crystal palace became their battlefield.

The Ice Crystal Phoenix was very strong. Although it did not speak, it emitted its extremely strong enmity. Every time its wings fluttered, extremely cold hurricanes formed. In addition to that, endless barrages of incomparably sharp Ice Crystal blades were shot out from its body. Every single of those could create extremely terrifying damage.

But evidently, the Ma family's master was not a simple character. He had an abundance of fighting experience, and he also grasped many mighty martial skills. As he used them skillfully, he actually fought evenly against the Ice Crystal Phoenix, the Spiritual Being.

"Heavens! Wha-wha-wha-what is this?!"

At that instant, the people from the Ma and Li family finally arrived as well. When they saw the Ice Crystal Phoenix that was like a deity, overflowing with light, they were also deeply astounded. All of them stood where they were, dumbstruck. No one dared to take a single step forth, and many people were gradually backing away as well.

"Brother, what are you looking at? Why aren't you subduing this monster with me?! My Ma family and your Li family's future is grasped within our hands!" The Ma family's master roared once again.

After a mental struggle, the Li family's master also, finally, howled, and with similarly powerful aura, he entered the circle of battle.

boom boom boom

Despite lacking experience, the Ice Crystal Phoenix was very strong. However, it could not fully exhibit such powerful strength. Only because of its innate strength could it be on even grounds against the old and cunning Ma family master.

But after the Li family's master entered, the Ice Crystal Phoenix could not fight against four hands with its two wings, and very quickly entered a disadvantageous situation. The two family masters' attacks then became more and more ferocious. Using all sorts of martial skills, they started to unceasingly throw those attacks on the body of the Ice Crystal Phoenix.

aooo~~~~~~~~ Finally, a heart-tearing and lung-splitting cry full of hatred rang out. The Ice Crystal Phoenix lost its fighting ability, and after the last ripple dissolved in the air, its enormous body actually started to shrink, and became an Ice Crystal Egg only the size of a watermelon.

That Ice Crystal Egg was completely different from the one before. Although its size was a lot smaller, the energy it contained was more pure.

"Haha, success! Brother, we've succeeded!" The Li family's master was endlessly ecstatic. He, who was the nearest to the Ice Crystal Egg, held it up first, and happily cheered.

puchi

But just at that moment, he suddenly felt pain in his chest. Following that was hot liquid endlessly flowing out of his chest. Casting his gaze downwards, his face involuntarily froze.

He discovered, aghast, that a three-foot azure blade pierced through his chest, and he recognized also that three-foot azure blade. It was the Mastered Elite Armament of his most trusted brother, the Ma family's master, Ma Yukun.

"You, you, you!!"

At that instant, the Li family's master quickly turned his head around, discovering that the Ma family's master was indeed, standing behind him.

Moreover, he was holding the Mastered Elite Armament that pierced through his chest.

Chapter 592: Less Than An Animal

"Ma Yukun you animal! My trust in you was in vain! You, you, you actually treat me like this!"

The Li family's master simply didn't dare to believe his own eyes. He didn't dare to believe that his own brother truly betrayed himself, but when everything happened, he had no choice but to believe it.

At that instant, he was furious, but even more so, he felt pain that came from his heart. The pain of being deceived by the brother he assumed to be close to him.

However, the Ma family's master did not care about the Li family master's reactions. He only sneered, then pulled out the Elite Armament and jabbed it again into the Li family master's chest. The power he put into that thrust was enormous, forcefully stabbing the Li family's master onto the ground.

When he fell, the Ice Crystal Egg was held within the Ma family master's hands. Only after glancing at it did he satisfiedly smile and look at the Li family's master, saying with a cold smile, "Brother, don't blame my ruthlessness and ignorance of brotherly camaraderie. You can only blame your excessive idiocy."

After speaking those words with extreme derision, the Ma family's master cast his gaze towards the Ma family crowd at the palace's entrance, then waved his sleeve, ordering, "Begin!"

boom boom boom

"Ah!"

"Ahh!"

After the Ma family's master spoke those words, the Ma family's crowd immediately overflowed with bloodlust, and without saying anything, started to immediately attack the Li family crowd. Not to mention they were caught off guard, even if they were to have a head-on-head confrontation, their strength was far inferior to the Ma family's strength.

So, as the two forces collided, the Li family was utterly defeated.

The thing that surprised the people from the Li family the most, however, was that the two Head Elders of the Li family, the Shabi couple, not only didn't fight against the people from the Ma family. Instead, they attacked those from the Li family, and were extremely merciless. Every single strike took their lives, and in a blink, several Li family members were already killed by the old couple. Their identity as traitors was full shown with nothing concealed.

As for the daughter of the Li family's master, Li Chan, although her life wasn't in danger, she was thoroughly subdued by the Ma family. She was tied up by a World Spiritist with a Spirit Formation Rope, and at that instant, she could not contribute to the battle at all. She could only watch as her own family fell one after the other in front of her.

"Ma Yukun you animal, you animal! Have you forgotten our ancestors' teachings? Has your heart been eaten by a dog?!"

Seeing his subordinates die successively from his own foolishness, the Li family's master was completely enraged. He ignored his own injures, forcefully endured the agony in his chest, and pounced towards the Ma family's master.

However, how could he, who was already heavily impaired, able to defeat the Ma family's master? With the raise of his leg and a kick, the Li family's master was once again thrown onto the ground. Furthermore, the Ma family's master fiercely stamped on his body, forcibly shattering his breastbone.

"Brother oh brother, what do you want me to say to you? What use are the ancestors' teachings? What use is brotherly camaraderie? Can they make my Ma family flourish? Can it make my Ma family monopolize this Wolf Ivory Mountain Range? Let me tell you, it cannot!"

"Nothing is useful in this world. Everything is crap. There is nothing that can change the truth of 'winners are kings and losers are thieves'. I am not afraid of bearing tainted names, and I'm also not afraid of being scorned by others, because when I triumph, no one will dare to point their

fingers at me."

"They will only serve me. They will only fear me. As for the successors, they will not remember what methods I used before. They will only remember the success that I, Ma Yukun, brought about. They will only remember the mighty achievements that I, Ma Yukun, left behind!" Ma Yukun insanely laughed. His laughter was very sinister, not feeling any shame for his actions, and instead felt glory.

"Animal, animal! I was truly blind! I only took you as a brother because I was blind! I only trusted you so much because I was blind! You, you animal! You animal, you are inferior to pigs and dogs!" The Li family's master gnashed his teeth in anger, his face flush with red. As he struggled, he loudly cursed.

"Animal? You say that I'm an animal? That's right. I don't mind telling you that I'm an animal." Being cursed like that by the Li family's master, Ma Yukun was not angry in the slightest. Instead, he chillingly smiled, then looked at Li Chan and said, "Bring her over here!"

"Let me go, let me go!"

After the Ma family's master spoke, those from the Ma family did not hesitate and hurried brought Li Chan to the Ma family's master.

"Ma Yukun, what are you doing? If you have anything you want to do, do it at me! Don't harm my Chan'er!" Seeing that, the Li family master's face was instantly pale from terror, deeply afraid that the Ma family's master would lay his poisonous hands on his daughter.

"Brother, what are you worried about? Would I harm Chan'er?"

"Chan'er, my beautiful niece. How could I bear hurting her? Don't worry, I will definitely not harm her. I will raise her well, I will treat her well."

The Ma family's master strangely smiled, then used his hand to hold up Li Chan's jaw. He said, eyes squinting, "My good niece, you're a lot smarter than your father, and I like that intelligence. Say, you've guarded your body for so many years and kept it as clean as jade, were you waiting

for me, your uncle?"

"Pah! You scum." Li Chan opened her mouth, spittle spraying on the Ma family master's face.

"Scum? That's right, I am scum. Today, I'll let you see how scum-like I am." Being spat on by Li Chan, the Ma family's master seemed as if he was aroused by that and actually ripped her skirt away, revealing her smooth and soft snow-white skin. Moreover, as he spoke, the Ma family's master pressed Li Chan underneath him.

"Ma Yukun, what are you doing? Chan'er is your niece, your niece!"

"You animal, let go! Bastard, let go!" Seeing the Ma family's master having desires to do that thing with his own daughter, the Li family master's heart could almost explode. As he climbed up, stumbling, he wanted to fight against him with his life.

"Lie down, you." However, the Ma family's master only waved his hand casually. The Li family's master then fiercely crashed onto the ground, a mouthful of blood spraying out. The bones in his entire body broke, and he was powerless to stand up again.

"Mm, that's more like it. Lie down there and don't move. See how I toy with your own daughter. Hahaha... On that topic, brother, our Chan'er still has a chaste body right? Truly, good things are not given to outsiders. Hahaha..." As the Ma family's master lasciviously laughed, he extended his vile palm to touch Li Chan's snow-white skin.

However, the Li family's master could do nothing about that scene. He could only watch as his own daughter was violated by his assumed-best brother.

At that very instant, he was extremely regretful. He loathed his stupidity when he believed a person he should not have believed.

If he had believed his own daughter, and believed Wuqing, the current events absolutely would not have happened.

But of all the things existing in this world, the one thing it lacked was medicine for regret. At present, he could only pay the price for his

actions. His daughter's disgrace, the Li family's eradication. Those were the prices that he had to bear.

As for Li Chan, she currently gave up any struggling because she did not have that ability. From the corners of her eyes flowed tears of her desire to die, but who could she blame? If she had to blame something, she could only blame herself for having such an idiotic father.

"Oh? I've seen quite a few scumbags, but I have never seen one who's so scummy."

But as the Li family was almost completely killed and Li Chan's chastity was going to be taken away, familiar voice to everyone to suddenly rang out in the palace.

Chapter 593: Everything In Control

"Wuqing?!"

After that voice rang out, everyone couldn't help stopping what they were doing and cast their gazes towards the origin of the voice. At that instant, they astonishedly discovered that currently, deep in the palace, there stood a single person. It was Chu Feng.

After seeing Chu Feng, almost everyone jumped from fright because clearly, they didn't see him before and even thought that he was killed. But now, Chu Feng appeared suddenly, which meant, obviously, that he wasn't killed yet.

But, since Chu Feng wasn't killed, where did he hide? How could he appear within the Ice Crystal palace without making any sound, and without anyone knowing? How did he do all that?

"Ma Yukun, you are truly an animal within animals, and scum within scum. It is quite difficult for anyone to top that."

Chu Feng did not pay attention to the crowd's shocked gazes, and first looked at the Ma family's master with a smile before looking at the Li family's master who lay on the ground and had a body full of wounds, and said, "Li family master, you now know your brother's real appearance right? How does it feel?"

"I..." His face was filled with shame, and he didn't know how to reply. He only lowered his head silently, because he had no words to face Chu Feng.

Now, he knew that Chu Feng truly wanted to help him, but not only did he not accept such kind intentions, he even planned to kill Chu Feng. That was simply a perfect example of repaying kindness with hatred. He was not able to determine what was right and what was wrong.

"Haha, you brat, you do have some skill to be able to escape my ears and eyes, but if I were you, I would have definitely not come out. I would have quietly escaped." The Ma family's master smiled darkly.

“Escape? Why do I need to escape? Facing a group of people that I can easily kill at any given time, is there a need to escape?” Hearing the Ma family master’s words, Chu Feng smiled mockingly.

“What? Kill us? With your cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm? You brat, you truly speak shameless words!” At that instant, the Ma family master’s face suddenly turned cold, then opened up his hand, and abruptly palmed.

The power of that palm was Martial power. It was very strong, absolutely superior to Heaven power. So when it was thrown out, the space between them cracked and twisted instantly.

It was simply unstoppable.

“Hmph.” However, Chu Feng stood where he was when facing such a horrifying attack. He did not even frown. Only when the berserk Martial power neared him did he snort coldly.

hmm

After that snort, the Ice Crystal Palace trembled intensely. At the same time, a dazzling golden light appeared as well. That light was too bright. It was like the radiance of the sun, blinding to the point that people did not dare to look straight at it, and could only look to the side.

Only after they felt that the dazzling golden radiance gradually disappeared did they dare to cast their gaze back at the Ice Crystal Palace, and when they saw the scene in front of them, all of them were dumbfounded. Astonished. Many people’s faces even greened from terror.

At that very instant, within the Ice Crystal Palace, not only was Chu Feng standing in the center of the palace, unharmed, the Ma family master’s horrifying palm from before was as if it hadn’t appeared at all before. Not to mention doing any damages, there simply weren’t any traces left behind.

But that was not the most ridiculous thing. The most inconceivable thing was that Li Chan, who was pressed under the Ma family’s master before, currently appeared behind Chu Feng. Even the Spirit Formation

that bound her was undone. She currently hid behind Chu Feng in panic, arranging her skirt to cover her skin.

“Brat, less of these deceptions! If you want to die, I can grant you that wish right now.” In reality, not only others, even the Ma family master’s face blued, a bit of fear emerging into his eyes.

But being afraid was being afraid. He didn’t believe in bad luck, so he howled as layers upon layers of Martial power surged within his body. When the Martial power gathered to a certain level, he threw out a first.

boom Even the Ice Crystal Palace trembled intensely when that fist was thrown. Quickly after, exploding from the boundless Martial power fist came a hundred-meter long leopard.

The huge leopard had all four limbs, was vivid and lifelike, and contained unparalleled divine might. As it ran in mid-air, it made roars that shook mountains, and with might that could trample over everything, it flew over to Chu Feng.

“Crap! That his strongest martial skill, the Flying Leopard Madly Runs!”

“Quickly retreat, or even we will be dragged down by it!”

At that instant, many people on scene furrowed their brows tightly. Fearfully, they backed away because all of them recognized that martial skill. They knew the power of that martial skill. If it truly exploded, even the ripples would injure them. On the light side, they would be heavily injured; on the heavy side, they would die.

hmm

However, just as the crowd felt they could not escape a disaster, the dazzling golden light appeared once again, and like before, it appeared for only an instant before vanishing.

“Heavens! What exactly is happening?!”

When everything was finished and when they cast their gazes back at the Ice Crystal Palace, this time, they were thoroughly stupefied.

Because, in front of their eyes, Chu Feng still stood there unharmed,

unmoved. The strongest martial skill of the Ma family's master, like the Martial power palm before, disappeared in the air.

The most inconceivable thing was that currently in Chu Feng's hand, there was an extra thing. It was the Ice Crystal Egg. The Ice Crystal Egg initially held in the Ma family master's hand presently appeared within Chu Feng hand.

At that moment, in the gazes that everyone looked at Chu Feng with more or less contained surprise and fear because in their perspectives, Chu Feng was simply like a monster. It was like he contained some unbelievable ability.

In reality, not even others, even Li Chan who stood behind Chu Feng had her eyes rounded widely, her eyes glittering with bewilderment and shock.

Even though she was so near to Chu Feng, she still didn't know how everything happened, or how Chu Feng did it.

"You bastard! Stop these deceits and if you have the guts, fight me head-on!" At that instant, the Ma family's master furiously roared, his face clearly showing fear.

"What? You're afraid?" Chu Feng lightly smiled, a bit of disdain in his eyes.

"Afraid? I, a Martial Lord, am afraid of a brat like you, who's only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm?!"

Despite being petrified, the Ma family's master was not a person who was willing to admit defeat. He opened his arms, and continuously exhibited several strong martial skills, throwing extremely powerful attacks at Chu Feng.

However, the outcome was exactly the same as before. After the glitter of the golden light, all of his attacks disappeared.

"You, you, you, are you even human?!" That time, even the Ma family's master panicked totally. As he panicked, he even nervously took a few steps back, almost tripping and falling to the ground.

Currently, he felt so powerless. Regardless of what attacks he threw out, they simply could not harm Chu Feng. But looking back at him, he was unfazed. From start to finish, he wore a smile on his face, giving off an appearance of complete control.

In that situation, in spite of being rank one Martial Lord, it was impossible to not be afraid because after experiencing all that, he felt, in his heart, that Chu Feng was even more powerful than him. He was absolutely not just a tiny bit stronger. He truly controlled everything.

Chapter 594: Must Die

"Do you still not see it?" Chu Feng said with a light smile.

"See what? What are you talking about? What the hell are you doing?"

The Ma family's master was truly terrified because regardless of how much stronger an expert was, it was impossible to block his attack without any sound and take away an object from his hands. So, he even suspected that Chu Feng simply wasn't human.

"I even thought that you were smart, but I didn't expect you to be as stupid and ignorant as your brother." Chu Feng smiled disdainfully, then with a thought, the Ice Crystal Palace was engulfed by golden radiance again.

However, this time, the golden radiance's dazzle was limited. Though still blinding, it didn't reach a level where people didn't dare to stare straight at it.

In a situation like that, finally, people could also see clearly the origin of the golden radiance. It came from inside the Ice Crystal Palace. Lines of golden patterns and symbols merged together, drawing a very grand formation. The Ice Crystal Palace was actually a formation itself.

"What a powerful formation. How can you control such a formation? Who exactly are you?!"

At that instant, the Ma family's master connected the dots. It wasn't Chu Feng who was powerful, but the formation that was powerful. The reason why Chu Feng could do such mystical actions just now was all because he relied on the power of the golden formation.

It was too powerful. The Spirit Formation was made by golden-coloured Spirit Formation power, and it was definitely the handiwork left behind by a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. Moreover, it was absolutely not a simple Gold-cloak World Spiritist who did such a thing.

In addition, since this place was always in a sealed state, the Ma family's master felt that it wasn't possible that Chu Feng laid it because

he did not have that ability. Most likely, the formation was laid by the mysterious expert five hundred years ago.

But, how could Chu Feng control the formation laid by the mysterious expert? That was the thing he could not understand.

"I say you're stupid, but you really are stupid. Can you still not see that it was the keys that gave me power to control this formation?"

Chu Feng indifferently smiled, then with a thought, boundless pressure came crashing down, and with a poof, the Ma family's master was forced to kneel on the ground. His face was full of pain. He simply didn't have the ability to fight against the formation.

"You shameless person, you dare to use the thing left behind by my Ma family's ancestor against me?!" The Ma family's master knew that his own end approached, so he didn't beg and instead, fiercely cursed.

"Shameless? Do you think a person like you can call others shameless?" Chu Feng laughed, then said, "Honestly speaking, I'll tell you this. The reason why I can control this formation is still all thanks to you. If it wasn't for all of your overly mediocrity and uselessness, Senior Hong Qiang wouldn't have told me the method to control this formation."

"What?! Lord Hong Qiang... Youyouyou, you actually know his name?!"

"Impossible, that's impossible! The Li and Ma family saved Hong Qiang's life! How can he repay our kindness with enmity and hand this formation over to my enemy?!" After knowing the truth, the Ma family master's gaze glittered and his face was like ash, unwilling to believe that fact.

"Repay kindness with enmity? Yes, your families' ancestors did indeed save Senior Hong Qiang, but the reason why your two families can have a day like today is because it was all granted by Senior Hong Qiang. He already doesn't owe your ancestors anything, and even more so, he does not owe any of you anything."

"Do you expect him to protect your family for generations and generations because of a small, tiny favour? Let alone that it isn't

realistic, even if Senior Hong Qiang has such desires, a despicable person like you is clearly not worthy."

"Die. Today, I will remove a contemptible successor such as you in place of your Ma family's ancestor, so your Ma family's ancestor will not bear all sorts of tainted names because of you." As Chu Feng spoke, his eyes flickered, and the pressure crushing the Ma family's master started to endlessly strengthen.

"Ahh~~~~~~~~"

Under such horrifying pressure, the Ma family's master had no ability to resist. He could only let the pressure press his body until it twisted and deformed. Then, his blood and flesh mashed together, and even his Consciousness was crushed into pieces. Even his Source Energy was absorbed by Chu Feng as the Ma family's master, thoroughly, became a pool of blood.

"This is no good. Run, run! That person has malicious intents! Even the family master was killed by him, so we cannot step into that Ice Crystal Formation!"

After seeing Chu Feng crush the Ma family's master into a pool of blood, the people from the Ma family were not lightly terrified. All of them no longer cared about killing the Li family's people, turning around and running. They wanted to leave that place which was full of trouble. If Chu Feng even killed the Ma family's master, god knows if he would attack them as well.

"Ahh!"

However, just as the crowd turned around and before they even took a few steps, a dragon's roar rang out suddenly. Quickly after, they saw a huge azure dragon descending from the sky, blocking their path of escape. And, Chu Feng was standing on the huge dragon.

"The people here were only listening to orders, so I can let them go alive. But not you two. What I, Wuqing, detest the most in my life is betrayal, so you must die." Chu Feng narrowed his eyes, tightly staring at the Shabi couple. However, his gaze was full of icy bloodlust.

“Hmph. Who do you think you are?! You think you can kill us whenever you want to? At the end, you are only a brat in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. After leaving that formation, what do you think you have?”

“Everyone, no need to be afraid. If we join hands and kill this boy, it is as simple as flipping one’s palm! At that time, the treasures here will belong to us! Everything that the Li family and Ma family has will belong to us!” Seeing Chu Feng leave the Ice Crystal Palace, the Shabi couple also found confidence and were actually luring the crowd to attack Chu Feng.

The crowd which had their path of escape blocked currently also felt that they had no other choice. Recalling that Chu Feng’s aura was truly in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, they involuntarily made preparations for a life and death battle against Chu Feng.

After all, if they lost, they would just die. But if they won, they would be thoroughly rich. Moreover, they felt that there was a greater probability of them winning, so it was simply not hard to make that decision.

whoosh

However, just as the Ma family crowd made such a decision, Chu Feng suddenly made his own move. Using the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, almost instantly, he arrived in front of the idiotic (shabi) Shabi couple.

boom

Then, a palm was suddenly thrown out, fiercely colliding into old man Sha’s body. Also with such a simple palm, the old man didn’t even get to cry out in pain before his soul was shattered by Chu Feng, his body becoming a mist of blood.

“Indeed, I only have the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, but do you think you’re fit to kill me?” After killing the old man Sha with lightning-like methods, Chu Feng spoke those words with contempt.

“Ahhhh~~~~~~ Bastard, I’ll kill you!” Seeing her husband killed by someone in front of her eyes, old woman Bi went into a rage, pouncing at

Chu Feng after fierce shout.

"Hmph. If you want to die, I'll grant you that wish." There was not the slightest bit of emotional change on Chu Feng's face when old woman Bi pounced at him, throwing her life away. Another palm was thrown out, and with a bang, old woman Bi, like her husband, ended up with a miserable death.

Chapter 595: Sixth Level of the Heaven Realm

“Young Hero Wuqing, have mercy, have mercy!”

When they personally saw the death of the Shabi couple, the Ma family crowd who even wanted to fight against Chu Feng with their lives before, now, no longer had any traces of preparing for such a reckless decision. At that very instant, no matter male, female, old, or young, all of them knelt onto the ground, unceasingly kowtowing.

They finally released how foolish their thoughts were. They finally knew that they underestimated the man in front of their eyes. Even if he left the horrifying formation, Chu Feng still had the strength to easily kill them. The man called Wuqing already reached an unimaginably powerful state.

whoosh whoosh

Quickly afterwards, Chu Feng waved his sleeve back and forth once, and the berserk gale blew once again. However, when the gale returned, several Cosmos Sacks appeared on Chu Feng’s palm.

And naturally, those Cosmos Sacks were taken from that group of people. After putting them away, without even glancing at them, Chu Feng said only one sentence, “Scram. Go back to where you came from!”

“Young hero, thank you for your mercy! Thank you for your mercy!” Seeing that, the Ma family’s crowd didn’t dare to hesitate and as they stumbled, they ran out.

“Young Hero Wuqing, thank you for saving us. We are very fortunate to have you, or else my Li family would have truly been in great peril!” After Chu Feng walked to the entrance of the Ice Crystal Palace, those who survived in the Li family thanked Chu Feng with faces full of gratitude.

However, facing such solicitous boot-licking people, Chu Feng didn’t even feel they were worthy of a glance. He waved his sleeve, gale swept out, and like the actions before to the people from the Ma family, he took

all of their Cosmos Sacks.

"Young Hero Wuqing, you..."

Chu Feng's action really made the people from the Li family shocked. Especially the experts invited by the Li family. The corners of their mouths twitched, and their hearts ached.

They weren't a part of the Li family, so there was no need for them to live and die with the Li family. They served the Li family only for money, yet at that instant, the rewards given by the Li family were not the only things in the Cosmos Sacks taken by Chu Feng. The personal wealth they accumulated for many years was also inside. This time, they had taken great losses.

And seeing their shocked reactions, Chu Feng smiled coldly and said, "Don't think that I'm obligated to save all of you. Just now, your Li family master wanted to kill me. If I hadn't dodged quickly, I would have died by his palm."

"So, please clear up the situation. I, Wuqing, am no longer allies with you. I am the same as the Ma family, an enemy." As Chu Feng spat out those words, he swept his icy gaze over the crowd.

"Young Hero, have mercy, have mercy! Take all the money, don't kill us!"

At that instant, the Li family's crowd couldn't help but tremble, then quickly knelt on the ground, and like the Ma family's people before, endlessly begged because just then, they felt murderous intents in Chu Feng's gaze.

At that instant, they definitely believed that Chu Feng would kill them if they dared to disobey in any way because that gaze was very terrifying. It was as if Chu Feng wasn't human, and was truly a cold-blooded demon.

After that, Chu Feng walked straight towards the Li family's master. And he seemed to have already expected such movements. So, at present, he seemed quite calm when he spoke to Chu Feng, "Wuqing, I was foolish. I couldn't differentiate between right and wrong, so that was why

I believed that animal Ma Yukun and betrayed your kind intents. I even wanted to kill you... Kill me. Kill me. I'll feel better in my heart."

"Wuqing, don't! Don't kill my father. I'm begging you, give him a chance." Just at that moment, Li Chan hurriedly ran over, and immediately came in front of her father. Then, she knelt in front of Chu Feng, and pleaded for her father.

"Big Miss, quickly rise." Seeing that, Chu Feng personally propped Li Chan up, then looked at the Li family's master and said, "Logically speaking, I should kill you because when you dared to attempt to kill me, that was a crime worthy of death already."

"But today, I won't kill you. Not because I pity you, but because you have a good daughter."

After speaking those words, only then did Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Li Chan and said, "Big Miss, I have use for the object discovered here. I will take it."

"However, since this is a place your Li family has guarded for many years, think of this as a loan. In the future, I will give a repayment of an equal price." After speaking, Chu Feng leaped, and without even looking back he stood on the azure dragon's head and left.

After Chu Feng left, it was like a burden lifted for the Li family crowd. They hurriedly rushed into the Ice Crystal Palace and started to heal the Li family master's injures. Only Li Chan gazed at the direction Chu Feng left in, and for a long time, remained in such a daze.

Chu Feng left the Spiritual Lair, but did not leave the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Holding the Ice Crystal Egg, he could truly feel that object's power.

Its cultivation was comparable to a rank one Martial Lord, but the energy it contained was absolutely not comparable to the Martial power a rank one Martial Lord had. It was a real Spiritual Object, a cultivation valuable.

Chu Feng impatiently wanted to refine it, so he found a concealed place,

and started the journey of refining the Ice Crystal Egg.

Although the egg was a Spiritual Being that congregated for over five hundred years, there was nothing threatening about it anymore. In addition, after becoming a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, Chu Feng could even more skillfully use absorption methods. Thus, after a short two hours, Chu Feng thoroughly refined the Spiritual Being.

After refining the egg, the Heaven power throughout Chu Feng's body changed. He successfully stepped into the sixth level, and if he were to use the three lightning, Chu Feng was equivalent to have entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm, only a step away from being a Martial Lord.

Less than a year had passed since Zi Ling was taken away. In less than a year, Chu Feng's cultivation rose from the eighth level of the Profound realm to the current sixth level of the Heaven realm. It was truly a heavenly quick speed of improvement, quite frightening as well.

"Ahh, indeed, if I want to make breakthroughs right now, the cultivation resources required are too terrifying. Even a Spiritual Being that took over five hundred years to form allows me to make only one level of breakthrough. If I refine only Heaven beads, how many would I need to break through?"

Although he succeeded in increasing his cultivation, Chu Feng was still dispirited because after using Spirit Formation Essence, the Son of Magma, and the Ice Crystal Egg, the three oddities, to break through, Chu Feng became more aware that the resources he required was very frightening.

If it weren't for those three oddities and if he had directly used widespread things such as Heaven beads for cultivation, even he didn't know how many would be required.

"Breaking into the sixth level of the Heaven realm is already quite good. Just be pleased with what you have." But just at that moment, Eggy spoke, giggling.

Chapter 596: Paying a Visit to the Lovers Terrace

"Eggy, it's a Spiritual Being that has gathered for over five hundred years! But it only allows me to make a single level of breakthrough. If it were Heaven beads instead, I truly do not dare to think how many I would need in order to enter the sixth level from the fifth level."

Chu Feng felt quite helpless. Despite already knowing that the cultivation resources he required would get more and more enormous as his cultivation reached higher and higher realms, when he truly faced such a situation, he still felt quite unspeakably bitter.

"Idiot. That Ice Crystal Egg is indeed a Spiritual Being, that is true; but it has only been congregating for five hundred years. You must know that powerful Spiritual Beings need to congregate for at least ten thousand years."

"Besides, you need to think like this. At present, you have found a Spiritual Being shortly after entering this Eastern Sea Region. From that, it can be seen that the Eastern Sea Region is indeed a place impregnated by oddities. At least, there's a lot more Natural Oddities here than in your continent of the Nine Provinces."

"As long as you reach a proficient level with the Pulse Searching Method, would you still worry having no cultivation resources? In this place, you are simply like a fish in water. There are infinite cultivation resources you can use." Eggy sweetly smiled and said.

"Mm, you do know how to comfort people, but you are correct. Whatever, it's time to go." Actually, Chu Feng already understood the things that Eggy said, but after hearing her speak them, he still felt quite a bit more comfortable.

"Where?" Eggy asked puzzledly.

"Of course, to the Lovers Terrace to find Qiushui Fuyan." Chu Feng smiled lightly, then leaped into the air and stepped onto the journey

towards the Lovers Terrace.

The Eastern Sea Region was very big, and the road to the Lovers Terrace was very far as well, so logically speaking, he had to spend quite a bit of time. However, after Chu Feng travelled for a while, he discovered a huge Teleport Formation within a vast city.

The Teleport Formation was very ancient, but it was a lot more profound that the ones in the Four Seas Academy. They were said to be left behind by powerful World Spiritists from past eras, so regardless if it was teleportation speed or number of people it could teleport, both were of very high levels.

But, the Teleport Formations from the Ancient era were all controlled by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. If one wished to use them, they had to pay high fees. Longer the distance teleported, higher the fee. Not to mention normal people, even ordinary cultivators could not take out such a sum.

Even if there were some people who could take out such money, they were not willing to spend them on such fees for travelling. Only true rich, noble clans could use them.

Although Chu Feng wasn't anything like that, he still had a large number of Heaven beads currently on him, and as the Heaven beads didn't have too much help towards his cultivation, it was good enough to be used for travelling.

So, with the assistance of the Ancient Teleport Formations, Chu Feng greatly reduced the time he needed to journey. Within a few short days, he arrived at the Lovers Terrace. It was dozens of times quicker than what he would have taken if he were to have flown himself.

"These Ancient Teleport Formations are truly not simple. They are even several times quicker than the ones in the Four Seas Academy. Eggy, from what you see, what kind of World Spiritist laid these antique formations?"

After walking out of the Teleport Formation, he was deeply stunned by its horrifying speed. To know that in a few short days, he had stepped over countless lands and sea regions.

Seeing such profound and powerful methods, Chu Feng, who was a World Spiritist, was involuntarily amazed because as a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, he had already learnt how to create a Teleport Formation as well, and from that, he knew clearly how skillful one needed to be in controlling Spirit Formations as well as the special methods required to lay such long-distance Teleport Formations.

"From my understanding, it should have been laid by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. But, as too much time has passed since the time it had been laid, the Teleport Formation has deteriorated. It requires long-term restoration by at least a Gold-cloak World Spiritist in order to continue using them."

"So, the Immortal Execution Archipelago cannot be blamed for demanding such high teleportation fees. After all, it costs quite a bit to get Gold-cloak World Spiritists to come repair these Teleport Formations often." Eggy explained.

"So Royal-cloak World Spiritists huh?"

"If Royal-cloak World Spiritists are already so powerful, what degree of strength would Immortal-cloak World Spiritists reach?"

Originally, Chu Feng thought such outstanding Teleport Formations were laid by an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist, but now, he knew that it was a Royal-cloak World Spiritists instead. Once again, he learnt of the unfathomableness of Immortal-cloak World Spiritists. No wonder it was a realm that required one to be at least a Martial Emperor to enter.

The Lovers Terrace was, in reality, an island in the ocean. Moreover, it was a huge island with an enormous surface area. The scenery on the island was beautiful, as if it were a paradise in the human realm. There were all sorts of strange flower and odd grasses. There were even mid-air waterfalls. It was very gorgeous.

But on such an island, there were no sects. It wasn't that sects didn't want to set up camp there, but that there were really too many experts on the island. Those expert lived in concealment and disliked rowdiness, so naturally, they did not allow the arrival of any powers.

The experts hiddenly living on the island already laid an invisible confinement formation that covered the skies and went deep underground. It sealed the entire Lovers Terrace, and in only in a few designated entrances could one enter.

"Halt!" Just as Chu Feng went up to the entrance, he was yelled at and stopped by a young man.

The young man was just over twenty years old, but had the cultivation of the third level of the Heaven realm. Usually speaking, that cultivation at his age was relatively good, but in front of Chu Feng, it was quite insignificant.

"Brother, I am here to see Lady Qiushui." Chu Feng very politely said.

Lady Qiushui was, in reality, Qiushui Fuyan, but she had already hid her name so even if it was the people from the Lovers Terrance, they might not know her to be the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. Chu Feng learnt all of that from his master, Qiu Canfeng.

"You're here to see Senior Qiushui? From what I see, you want to be her disciple?"

"Let alone that Senior Qiushui doesn't accept disciples anymore, even if she does, it wouldn't be your turn."

"Not to mention Senior Qiushui's disciple, you can't even become a disciple of any of the seniors in the Lovers Terrace. That's for no other reason but because you are not qualified. Quickly leave, don't taint this holy ground, the Lovers Terrace."

The young man's attitude was very arrogant. Although Chu Feng's cultivation was above his, in the gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was still full of disdain and contempt. As he spoke, he even pointed at a nearby stone tablet.

And only at that instant did Chu Feng discover on the stone tablet, several rows of big words were written: "Those twenty years old and above may not step upon this island and find a master; those yet to be twenty years old but haven't entered the Heaven realm may not step upon this

island and find a master!"

After seeing the stone tablet, everything clicked. Chu Feng then knew the method to enter the island, so he wasted no words. After a light smile, he turned around and left.

Chapter 597: Ten Women of the Ocean of Flowers

Coming to a desolate corner, Chu Feng changed his clothes, then with a thought, his Transformational Mask changed as well. From a middle-aged man's face, Chu Feng's face became a young man's face of roughly twenty years old.

Also, he removed the power of the lightning, so his cultivation also returned to the sixth level of the Heaven realm from the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

Quickly after, Chu Feng came back to the entrance where the young man before guarded at. This time, when he saw Chu Feng once again, his eyes immediately lit up, and not only did his former arrogance attitude completely disappear, he even had a very shocked appearance. After Chu Feng neared, he actually went up and asked, "Brother, this is the Lovers Terrance. I wonder... Have you come here to look for a master?"

The young man wore a light smile on his face, his manner extremely polite. The difference in treatment in comparison to before was like the distance between the heaven and the earth. As for the reason of such change, Chu Feng clearly knew why.

Although his cultivation just now was very high, after all, he came to that place with the status of a middle-aged man. When one reached the middle-ages, despite having cultivation in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, in the land of the Eastern Sea Region, it wasn't really much. After all, there were many Martial Lord experts. Only Martial Kings were the apical existences.

But Chu Feng's current identity was completely different. Although his cultivation was only the sixth level of the Heaven realm, his age had just reached twenty. Having that cultivation at that age meant that Chu Feng's talent was extremely good. At least a lot better than the young man in front of him.

A person like Chu Feng could be called a genius. Naturally, there would be many experts in the Lovers Terrace willing to take Chu Feng as a disciple. So, the young man did not dare to offend a person like Chu Feng.

"Senior, I am Wuqing. I've heard that Senior Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace is extremely outstanding, so I want to become her disciple and learn some abilities." Chu Feng replied.

"Senior Qiushui? Brother Wushang, the Senior Qiushui you're talking about, is it Senior Lady Qiushui?" The young man was slightly shocked.

"It is." Chu Feng nodded his head.

"Brother Wuqing, you are truly not simple. Senior Qiushui is very famous in the Lovers Terrace. Those who challenged her were all defeated, and she's titled as the number one expert within the Lovers Terrance."

"But because Senior Qiushui is very low-profile, the number of people who know Senior Qiushui outside of the Lovers Terrance is few within few. Seeing that you know Senior Qiushui, it seems like you have come prepared."

"But Senior Qiushui's disciple selection process has always been harsh. In addition, she only accepts females and not males. Brother Wuqing, although your talent is superb, I'm afraid you won't have much of a chance." The young man truthfully spoke.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng frowned lightly. He even thought the man was making up excuses to prevent him from entering the Lovers Terrace. But then unexpectedly, the man quickly added, "However, Brother Wuqing, you can indeed go in and try. After all, there are still many hidden experts in the Lovers Terrace. If Senior Qiushui is truly unwilling to accept you as her disciple, you can become disciple of others and it would still be quite satisfactory."

As the man spoke, he went to the side, and gave Chu Feng a path to enter the Lovers Terrace. He also gave Chu Feng a badge.

Accepting it and taking a look, the badge was not simple at all. From its

outer appearance, it looked like an ordinary wooden badge, but after Chu Feng used his Spirit power to examine it, he discovered that the wooden badge was made by a Spirit Formation. In the middle of the wooden badge, there was the word “Visiting” carved in it. Underneath the wooden badge, there was a date carved, and that date was exactly today.

“Brother Wuqing, this is a Visiting Badge. Holding the Visiting Badge, you can find a master you like in the Lovers Terrace, but the time limit is only ten days. After ten days, if you are you still unable to find a suitable master, you will be driven out of the Lovers Terrace.” The young man reminded.

“Senior, thank you for the reminder.”

Chu Feng clasped his hands, taking his leave. Afterwards, he entered the Lovers Terrace. It was very big, and every single hidden expert had land that belonged to themselves. However, there was no one living in areas with extremely pretty sceneries because those areas were not allowed to be owned. They were for the public.

As Chu Feng held the Visiting Badge, indeed, he was not stopped on the road. Moreover, very soon, he inquired Qiushui Fuyan’s residence.

“This place is truly like a paradise in the human realm.”

After arriving at Qiushui Fuyan’s residence, even Chu Feng couldn’t help exclaiming. Her territory was actually a vast ocean of flowers with all sorts of strange, fresh flowers spread widely. The luxurious and majestic residences belonging to her were built within the gorgeous ocean of flowers. It was extremely beautiful.

Logically speaking, an area with such a beautiful scenery should be for public use and shouldn’t be occupied by someone, but Qiushui Fuyan did exactly that. From this, it showed her strength, or else how could so many experts living hiddenly in the Lovers Terrace let Qiushui Fuyan have such an exception?

“Who are you? What business do you have here?” Chu Feng was currently admiring the beautiful scenery, but suddenly, from nearby, the fierce voice of a young woman rang out.

Looking over to the voice, Chu Feng discovered nearby, above the ocean of flowers, ten slender and graceful females stood. Those ten were quite young, and the oldest should just be a bit over twenty years of age, and the youngest was actually only fifteen.

Although the group of females was fairly young, their cultivations were not weak. The fifteen-year-old young woman was in the first level of the Heaven realm, and other than her, the rest were all also in the Heaven realm. The one just over twenty was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, even two levels higher than Chu Feng.

Moreover, not only were their cultivations extraordinary, all of them had very characteristical appearances. The only thing similar about them all was that they were all beauties. Especially the one with strength in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. Her appearance was very graceful.

Her fair skin, delicate face, and also her pair of not-too-big but very spirited eyes made people feel that she had a very cold yet beautiful demeanor.

But, she was clearly very prideful. The other few females were blinking their big eyes, curiously examining Chu Feng. Only she, from start to finish, didn't even glimpse at Chu Feng, and was only enjoying the ocean of flowers

"Oi! What are you looking at? I'm talking to you, are you deaf?!" Seeing Chu Feng staring at herself with unmoving eyes, one of the prideful ponytailed females very displeasedly spoke.

"Ah, ladies, I've come here because I wish to visit Senor Qiushui." Chu Feng scratched his head said with slight embarrassment.

"Pay a visit to Master? What business do you have?" Another female asked with a gentle tone.

"I must personally speak to Senior Qiushui regarding this matter." Chu Feng smiled and said.

"Hmph. Less of that. You clearly don't know my master. Your aim is to become her disciple right?" The proud female disdainfully said.

“Leave. My master is not here. Even if she is, she wouldn’t take you as her disciple because she only takes females and not males. Moreover, she said she would take only ten disciples, and now, that number has been reached. Even if you were a woman, she wouldn’t accept you.” Another female spoke.

As she spoke, that group turned around at the same time, and like fairies, drifted away above the ocean of flowers, returning to the palaces located in the center of the ocean of flowers.

Chapter 598: Fruit of Martialism

“Juniors, I have urgent business with Senior Qiushui. Please let me meet her.” Seeing that, Chu Feng continued begging. He came over here from so far away, so he didn’t want such a journey to be for nothing and return empty-handed.

“Scram.” But just at that time, the proud woman in the eighth level of the Heaven realm suddenly explosively shouted, and directly attacked.

She didn’t even look at Chu Feng as with Spirit power, she determined his location. Clearly, she too was a World Spiritist, but that was not the important part. The important part was that her strike was also Spirit Formation power. Purple-coloured Spirit Formations made by her merged together, becoming a purple-coloured Spirit Formation wall. It pressed towards Chu Feng. She was also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

“Truly arrogant and unreasonable.” Seeing that purple-coloured Spirit Formation wall pressing towards him, a hint of displeasure flashed into Chu Feng’s eyes. Although his opponents were all beauties, Chu Feng did not put them in his eyes. If he wasn’t requesting to see Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng would not be so polite with them.

And right now, that female was actually attacking him directly. Of course, Chu Feng would not just pettily endure that. He wanted to give that woman a lesson, or else by their natures, they would definitely stop Chu Feng outside the door.

wuao

However, just as Chu Feng was going to make his own move, a roar resounded behind him. That made Chu Feng furrow his brows lightly, dispelling his attacking intentions. Instead, he cast his gaze behind him, and only then did he discover the thing flying over was a huge purple-coloured Spirit Formation beast.

That huge beast stepped on air and flew over. After brushing past Chu Feng, it actually collided fiercely into the Spirit Formation wall.

boom

The two crashed into each other, and immediately an explosion resounded. Moreover, it generated a berserk ripple, and when that ripple disappeared, both the huge beast and huge wall condensed by purple-coloured Spirit Formations disappeared. They were mutually destroyed.

And at that instant, Chu Feng also saw the person who condensed the purple-coloured huge beast. It was an elegant young man. His appearance was quite nice, even comparable to the women.

But because his facial features were too delicate, in addition his skin was as white as snow, he did lose a man's imposingness and charm, and instead gained a hint of feminine air.

Although the man had a woman-like appearance, his cultivation was not weak. It was actually the same as the proud female, also in the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Moreover, behind the man were more men. Their cultivation was not weak either, and they could all be called dragon within men. However, the one who caught Chu Feng's attention the most wasn't them, but a middle-aged man with a face full of scars.

That big man intentionally concealed his aura, but he did not escape Chu Feng's detection. He discovered that the he was an expert in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, his aura was very thick, as he had infinitely neared being a Martial Lord. Looking at his appearance, he was truly only a string's width away from being a Martial Lord, and could very soon step into that realm.

"Xue Yi. I am forcing this person to leave. Why have you stopped me? Could it be... that you're with him?" After seeing that group of men, the prideful woman actually, unexpectedly, spoke. Although her attitude was still very overbearing, but speaking honestly, her voice was quite pleasant to the ears.

"Hehe, Lady Wanshi, don't misunderstand. I don't even know who this boy is. Just now, I wasn't planning to help him out of that situation, but it's just that... seeing you use your Spirit Formation technique, my hands

itched so I really wanted to spar a bit against you."

"Lady Wanshi, why are you so angry? Don't tell me this boy offended you and stirred up such fury?"

"Lady Wanshi, don't be mad. Since this boy cannot distinguish between right and wrong and dares to be disrespectful to Lady Wanshi, I, Xue Yi, shall give him a lesson in your place." Xue Yi first smiled obsequiously, then cast his icy gaze at Chu Feng, and as he spoke, he made movements to attack Chu Feng.

"No need. If you have anything you want to say, go ahead. Don't speak in circles." The proud woman coldly said.

"Hehe, Lady Wanshi is truly smart. I can't hide anything from you. That's fine, since even you have spoken like that, I won't talk in circles."

"This time, I've come here to take back the Fruit of Martialism I lost to you last time." Xue Yi smiled and said.

"Ho? So you're here for the Fruit of Martialism. The thing you lost to me last time when we had a Spirit Formation technique spar. You can indeed take it back if you want to, but you must defeat me."

The proud woman disdainfully smiled, and as she spoke, her Cosmos Sack flashed and a very strange three-inch long fruit appeared in her hand.

After that strange fruit appeared, even Chu Feng's eyes lit up. Putting aside the fact that the fruit had a peculiar outer appearance, it contained extremely powerful energy inside. It was clearly Martial power.

Everyone in the world knew that there were spiritual medicines, Profound medicines, and Heaven medicines. That strange fruit was, obviously, Martial medicine that contained Martial power. Also, from Chu Feng's analysis, the rank of that odd fruit was absolutely not low, likely a mid-rank Martial medicine.

"That's fine, but it's not me who will spar with you. It will be my cousin." Xue Yi lightly smiled, then pointed at the big man beside him whose face was full of scars.

“I am Xue Jian, Xue Yi’s cousin. I’ve heard that Lady Jiang, Jiang Wanshi of the Lovers Terrace is an exceptional genius and has extremely outstanding power in Spirit Formation technique control.”

“And I, Xue Jian, coincidentally enjoy studying Spirit Formation Technique usually as well. So, I wish to ask Lady Jiang for pointers.” The scarred big man took two steps forward, then clasped his hand and spoke to Jiang Wanshi with bell-like loud voice.

“Oi! Xue Yi, what’s the meaning of this? You can’t defeat my Senior Jiang so you’ve asked for reinforcements?”

“Your cousin isn’t from the Lovers Terrace right? Looking at his age, how can he enter the Lovers Terrace? Xue Yi, you have broke the rules of this place!” The ponytailed arrogant woman curled her lips and fiercely rebuked.

“This lady, you’re speaking quite ferociously! I’m sure you must be Lady Sun, Sun Yihan, that my cousin mentions often right?” Xue Jiang clasped his hands and asked.

“That’s right. That’s me.” Sun Yihan crossed her arms in front of her, very proudly sticking her bountiful chest outwards.

“Lady Sun, I am indeed not someone from the Lovers Terrace, but I am here to visit my cousin. That’s something reasonable I’m sure. Moreover, I am talking to Lady Jiang right now, please don’t barge in. If Lady Jiang says she’s afraid and doesn’t want to spar with me, then I’ll turn around leave, but you, on the other hand, are not qualified to speak to me.” Xue Jian loudly said.

“You...” After Xue Jian spoke, it did not lightly anger Sun Yihan. She pointed at Xue Jian and was going to let loose with curses.

“Yihan, stop!” But before letting her speak, Jiang Wanshi pressed Sun Yihan’s words, then beautifully smiled and said to Xue Jian, “A very good provocation, but it is useless against me.“

“If you want to spar with me, that is fine, but there’s a rule in sparing. If you want to take back the Fruit of Martialism Xue Yi lost to me, you must

take out an object of at least equivalent value as the Fruit of Martialism, or else please, leave now."

Chapter 599: Leaving in Utter Defeat

"Lady Jiang, where did that question even come from? Since we are having a bet while sparring, of course, I've come prepared." Xue Jian lightly smiled, and as he spoke, his palm flashed, then a medicinal grass having the appearance of a cat's claw appeared in his palm.

Though that medicine had an odd appearance, the power it contained was not the slightest bit inferior to the Fruit of Martialism in Jiang Wanshi's hand. It even surpassed it.

"This is a mid-rank Martial medicine, the Cat's Claw of Martialism. In terms of rarity, it is even rarer than the Fruit of Martialism in Lady Jiang's hand. Would this be sufficient for a bet?" Xue Jian smiled and said, but as he spoke, he gave off an abundant of confidence, as though he grasped victory in his hands already.

"Of course it will do." Jiang Wanshi smiled sweetly, similarly full of confidence.

"Lady Jiang, shall we use old rules and spar in the same way you sparred my cousin?" Xue Jian asked.

"There's no problem." Jiang Wanshi smiled and said.

"Then, Lady Jiang, I must offend." Suddenly, Xue Jian's expression changed and he immediately attacked.

His hand's speed was extremely quick, and in almost an instant, a boundless Spirit Formation was laid. And as he laid that Spirit Formation, Jiang Wanshi didn't do anything. She stood in the air, observing the changes.

wuao Suddenly, a roar resounded, then a purple-coloured bundle of light explosively shot out from the boundless formation. Its legs stepped on air, and as it made purple-coloured arcs from leaping continuously, it dashed quickly towards Jiang Wanshi.

Although that thing was very quick, no one there was ordinary. With their naked eyes they could see that object's shape. It was something akin

to both a leopard and a wolf. Though it had a very vivid shape, and seemed more like a Monstrous Beast; but, it was still made by Spirit Formations.

Moreover, its size was very small. Its body was less than two meters, and the power it emanated was average. It couldn't be said to be very strong. Other than its extremely quick speed, it had no other good point.

"You truly look down on people. You will definitely lose this Spirit Formation spar when you use such a feeble formation to fight against me."

"Whatever. Since you want to gift me a mid-rank Martial medicine, I'll gladly take it." Jiang Wanshi, also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, immediately saw that the thing Xue Jian made was very weak. So, she didn't put it in her heart. With light movements of her finger, she started to randomly lay a formation.

"Wait." But just at that moment, Chu Feng's gaze flashed, and he discovered something off. Although currently, the thing Xue Jian made was indeed very weak, the formation he laid gave off an enormous presence. Looking at it with Chu Feng's experience, Xue Jian had laid his formation with a concentration of extremely powerful Spirit Formation patterns. It was a very high-level method.

Yet, what was happening right now was: within a powerful formation, a very weak object ran out; but whether that object was really weak or just fake weal was indeterminate, and from what Chu Feng's saw, there was a trick.

"Lady Jiang, do not underestimate it. The formation Xue Jian laid is very powerful. It's impossible that an insignificant object like this appears. Do not be careless. It's better to use a high-level formation to defend against it." Discovering that something was wrong, Chu Feng did not keep it to himself. He hiddenly sent a mental message to Jiang Wanshi.

After all, the reason why he came to that place was to see Qiushui Fuyan, and even though Jiang Wanshi and the others had arrogant attitudes, they were still Qiushui Fuyan's disciples. Whether it was

because of sentiment or reason, Chu Feng didn't wish for her defeat.

Hearing Chu Feng's voice, Jiang Wanshi lightly knitted her brows, then after gazing at Chu Feng with contempt, she actually said disdainfully, "Noisy. In terms of Spirit Formation techniques, would I be inferior to you?"

After speaking, Jiang Wanshi did not change anything. She continued laying her formation, and with masterful hands, a large purple-coloured Spirit Formation appeared quickly.

But even though that formation was strong, it was not Jiang Wanshi's strongest method, so she clearly didn't heed Chu Feng's warning, and laid a formation that she felt could easily defeat the thing in front of her.

"Ahh, you ignore my words. A loss is in right front of your eyes. Go suffer." Seeing that, Chu Feng lightly chuckled. His expression didn't really change, and he only sat there, enjoying himself.

huu~~~ Just at that moment, bursts of sounds of wind rang out. From the formation Jiang Wanshi laid, a purple-coloured tornado emerged.

After the tornado appeared, the sky immediately changed colour. Everything gloomed. The energy it contained was indeed far above the object that Xue Jian's made. With rolling dark clouds and boundless might, it swept towards the tiny object.

"Haha, Senior Jiang is truly skillful. With this Spirit Formation tornado, it can simply destroy that ugly bastard's formation easily." At that instant, Jiang Wanshi's sisters thought that the outcome was set. They were extremely cheerful.

"Heh." But facing that situation, Xue Jian strangely smiled, then he overlaid his palms, changed his hand gestures, and with an "aoo~~~", overwhelming might burst out of the berserk object.

After that might appeared, the originally small object rapidly enlarged. In a blink, it became an enormous thing dozens of meters tall, even larger than the tornado.

"Crap!" At that instant, the expressions of Jiang Wanshi and the others

changed greatly. On their previous faces that were full of smiles were now full of fright.

But it was too late. The formation had already been created, and she could not turn back. The huge beast Xue Jian condensed opened its great mouth, and boundless suction came out from it, forcibly engulfing the tornado Jiang Wanshi created, destroying it completely.

boom After it was engulfed, a huge explosion also came from the formation Jiang Wanshi laid. It instantly shattered.

She lost. The Spirit Formation spar between Jiang Wanshi and Xue Jian ended up as Jiang Wanshi's complete defeat.

"Dammit! You bastard, you cheated!" Seeing to be unable to accept that result, Sun Yihan and Jiang Wanshi's other sisters loudly rebuked.

"Cheating? Ladies, may I know the reason of such accusations?" Xue Jian lightly smiled, feigning ignorance.

"Is there even a need to explain? You clearly laid a powerful formation, but intentionally hid your power. Is that not cheating?" Sun Yihan said.

"Haha, this is the first that I've heard concealing strength is cheating! Lady Sun, what a waste it was becoming a disciple of Senior Qiushui. You actually don't even know such a simple truth: 'deception may be used at any time during a battle'."

"Just now, your Senior Jiang was reluctant to make her move for quite some time. She only wanted to observe the changes calmly before doing the opposite later on. Yet, she did not know I was doing the exact same, and she became careless. It was her who fell for this trick. Who can that be blamed on?" Xue Jian coldly said.

"You, you are simply forcing these words on us!" Sun Yihan and the others gritted their teeth in anger, their faces flush with anger.

"Forcing words? Call it whatever you want to. But if you can't take the loss, you can just go ahead and say that." Xue Jian smiled and said.

"Yihan, all of you, shut up." Finally Jiang Wanshi spoke. Currently, her

face was a bit pale, as she had clearly received some damage. But, it wasn't like she couldn't take the loss. She flicked her hand, then the Fruit of Martialism rose into the sky, and became a rainbow, flying towards Xue Jian.

"Hehe." After receiving the Fruit of Martialism, Xue Jian first examined it, and only after confirming it was the same one that his cousin lost did he chuckle smugly, then said, "Lady Jiang, if you do not accept this loss, we can spar once again. Do you dare?"

Chapter 600: You Dare?

"Damn. You ugly bastard, you are quite arrogant! Senior, quickly give him a lesson. Let him know how high the heavens are and how thick the earth is."

"That's right. Senior, quickly give this ugly bastard a good lesson. Let him know how powerful you are when you get serious. If it weren't for that trick, he would have not defeated you."

Sun Yihan and the others felt that Xue Jian only won because of deception, so when he jeered, they felt the chance for revenge came. All of them loudly shouted, giving off a very grand atmosphere.

However, as they were endlessly calling out, Jiang Wanshi tightly knitted her brows, silent.

Although indeed, she lost because of carelessness in the spar just now against Xue Jian, as a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, she knew clearly being able to conceal a powerful formation the way Xue Jian did meant that he was very strong. At least, it was something she couldn't do.

Yet now, Xue Jian was provoking her in such a way. It could be seen that he was very confident he could defeat her again. One could say that it was another scheme...

Xue Jian defeated Jiang Wanshi with deception; but in reality, even if he were to attack openly, he could still, very likely, defeat Jiang Wanshi. Yet, he did not do exactly that. It was, of course, intentional.

He intentionally made Jiang Wanshi felt that she lost because of carelessness. With that, when Xue Jian provoked again, under normal circumstances, Jiang Wanshi would definitely agree to the battle. At that time, Xue Jian could use his powerful strength to defeat Jiang Wanshi again. She would then suffer great losses.

Although, at that very instant, Jiang Wanshi was indeed furious, she, who had seen Xue Jian's strength, also saw through his plans.

It had to be said that Jiang Wanshi sank into a predicament. She

couldn't agree, yet she couldn't refuse either. It was a truly difficult situation, and she did not know what to do at all.

"Lady Jiang, there's no harm in accepting the battle. I can defeat him in your place." But just at that moment, Chu Feng's voice entered Jiang Wanshi's ears.

"You? With your cultivation of the sixth level of the Heaven realm? Don't tell me you're also a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?"

Normally, Jiang Wanshi definitely wouldn't have paid attention to Chu Feng, but after the events that just happened, she had no choice but to look at him with new eyes as he, at the start, saw through Xue Jian's trick. He even reminded her, but she did not believe him. If she did, then the current scene would certainly be completely opposite.

So, though Chu Feng's cultivation wasn't very powerful in her eyes, she already felt that he was not a simple person. He should at least also be a World Spiritist.

"Lady Jiang, I ask you to please use Spirit power to examine my palm." Chu Feng sent a mental message with a smile.

hmm Hearing that, without delay, Jiang Wanshi quickly used her Spirit power in secret to observe Chu Feng's palm.

"This is?!" And when Jiang Wanshi's Spirit power arrived at Chu Feng's palm, her small and pretty eyes instantly flickered, an expression of disbelieving shock emerging.

At that very instant, Chu Feng was activating a formation in his palm. That formation could not be seen by the naked eye, but it could be felt by Spirit power.

The formation Chu Feng used told Jiang Wanshi two things. The first—Chu Feng was a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

And the second—Chu Feng's ability to control Spirit Formation techniques was really mystical and masterful. It surpassed Jiang Wanshi by a far margin. It was very powerful.

“What is your reason for helping me?” At that moment, Jiang Wanshi no longer doubted the level Chu Feng’s Spirit Formation techniques were at, but she did not know the reason why Chu Feng aimed to help her.

“I am entrusted by my master, and I have something to pass down to Senior Qiushui. I have come here for that reason.”

“My master and Senior Qiushui are old friends, so we are naturally on the same side. Since there is an enemy intruding, it is my duty to help,” replied Chu Feng with a smile.

“Who’s your master?” Jiang Wanshi followed up with a question.

“It is not convenient to reveal my master’s name. Anyhow, I won’t harm you. If you don’t believe me, I can’t do anything about it either,” said Chu Feng.

“Lady Jiang, why have you yet to respond? Could it be that... you are truly scared?” Just at that moment, Xue Jian once again shouted, having the intention to fight against Jiang Wanshi.

“Senior, why aren’t you agreeing to him? Give him a good lesson and let him know your power!”

“Senior, perhaps you’re out of things to bet? If that’s so, I have here a mid-rank Martial medicine Master left behind. I can lend it to you,” asked Jiang Wanshi’s juniors puzzledly, all at the same time.

“Xue Jiang, if you didn’t play tricks just now, how could you have defeated Lady Jiang? People like you are simply not worthy to exchange blows with Lady Jiang. Doing that will simply shame her name.

“If you are dissatisfied, I can spar against you. However, I just wonder if you dare or not.” Just at that moment, Chu Feng stood out without any instigation.

“What? You!” Chu Feng’s abruptly-arrived words stunned everyone on scene. If it weren’t for his loud yelling, everyone would have simply forgotten his existence. And, when Chu Feng spoke, he immediately provoked Xue Jian. That shocked everyone.

“Brat, who are you? Do you think you’re worthy to fight against my cousin? Looking at your cultivation, even if you’re a World Spiritist, you would only be a Blue-cloak. How do you think you are qualified to spar my cousin? Any one of us can easily beat you to death,” said Xue Yi, mocking disdainfully.

“That’s right. On what basis can you represent my senior to spar against that ugly bastard? We aren’t close to you anyway, so don’t lose our face. We can handle the matters here. There is no need for you to offer any assistance.”

In reality, it was not only Xue Yi and the others who looked down on Chu Feng. Even Sun Yihan and the others looked down on him. After Chu Feng stuck his head in, even they harshly insulted him.

“Haha. Boy, you’re quite interesting. You wanted to help them out and do some boot-licking, yet they simply disregarded those intentions. Quickly scram. Trash like you cannot interfere with the matters here.” At the same time, Xue Jian also spoke. He didn’t even look straight at Chu Feng. His contempt was very evident.

“Who said we disregard those intentions?” But just at that moment, Jiang Wanshi spoke too, then quickly after said to Xue Jian, “If you want to spar me again, that is fine.

“But you must first defeat him. If you can’t even defeat him, you would truly not be qualified to fight against me because I dislike sparring against people who specialize in deceit,” said Jiang Wanshi, pointing at Chu Feng.

“Senior, what are you saying? Are you really going to let him fight against that ugly bastard in your place? He is only in the sixth level of the Heaven realm!” At that moment, Sun Yihan and the others had astonished faces, unable to understand what Jiang Washi was thinking.

“All of you, shut up,” Jiang Wanshi secretly shouted at her sisters, then looked at Xue Jian, and asked, “Do you dare?”

Chapter 601: Disdainful Gesture

“Hahahaha! What a joke. How could I be afraid of a brat like him?

“Lady Jiang, I’m not criticizing you or anything, but if you want to find a meat shield, at least find a decent one! You actually take out a trash like him.

“But whatever. Since you wish for this, I’ll accommodate you. I’ll defeat this piece of garbage, then spar with you.” Xue Jian coldly smiled, then looked at Chu Feng and said, “Brat, since Lady Jiang has spoken, I’ll give you this chance.

“But, if you want to spar with me, you need to take out a decent thing to wager—at least a mid-rank Martial medicine. Can you take bring such a thing out?”

“Indeed, I don’t have a mid-rank Martial medicine, but I do have something I can take out in place of it,” said Chu Feng with a light smile on his face.

“What thing? Tell us. If it is truly priceless, I can consider it,” said Xue Jian.

“I will put my life out as the object of wager,” said Chu Feng.

“What? His life? Has he gone mad?” After Chu Feng spoke, it instantly stupefied Sun Yihan and the others, because in their perspectives, Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to be defeated, thus his current action was simply suiciding!

“You want to use your life in place of the mid-rank Martial medicine for the wager with me? Speaking honestly, your life is not equal to the mid-rank Martial medicine!” However, Xue Jian coldly smiled, mocking him extremely.

“What? You don’t dare? You’re afraid that you will lose by my hands, so you don’t dare to make a bet with me?” said Chu Feng with a sneer.

“Nonsense. Me, afraid of you? Why not look at your own cultivation! Is there anything that can make me afraid?” said Xue Jian.

“Since you’re not afraid, why don’t you dare to fight against me? From what I see, you fear losing to me but don’t dare to say that directly. Why find more excuses?” said Chu Feng with a cold smile.

“Quite a provocation! Since you insist on dying, today, I’ll grant you that wish.

“Those here will act as witnesses! This boy is wagering his life. If I kill him, it is within reason.”

Although he clearly knew Chu Feng was goading him, Xue Jian was still quite enraged. Given that he had enormous confidence, he naturally didn’t mind removing Chu Feng, an eyesore, from this world.

“That will still depend if you have the ability to take my life or not. One move will decide the outcome. Watch how I defeat a despicable person like you!”

Chu Feng chuckled, similarly brimming with confidence. Then, he willed. Boundless blue-coloured Spirit Formation power surged out, then he waved his fingers, starting to quickly lay a Spirit Formation.

“He’s indeed a Blue-cloak World Spiritist. Does this brat truly wish to die?” Seeing what Chu Feng was laying indeed being a blue-coloured Spirit Formation, Xue Yi expressed confusion because Blue-cloak World Spiritists simply couldn’t stand up against Purple-cloak World Spiritists. Chu Feng’s present action was simply striking a rock with an egg—looking to die!

“Sigh, this is horrible. This time, we will lose great face. At the end, he is still only a Blue-cloak World Spiritist! He can die if he wants to, but don’t represent us to fight! Isn’t he embarrassing us too?!” At the same time, Sun Yihan and the others were quite furious. They were concerned with only their face; no one cared about Chu Feng’s life.

“Hmph. Not only is he merely a Blue-cloak World Spiritist, his method of laying a formation is even so clumsy. What is this boy planning? Could it be that he wishes to fawn by death? Or, he knows that Jiang Wanshi and the others won’t do nothing and let him die, and will save him at a crucial moment?”

Xue Jian, as a person, was rather cautious. When Chu Feng laid the formation, he used Spirit power to tightly lock onto Chu Feng constantly, aiming to see if he was playing some trick.

But, he discovered there were no abnormalities with the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid. It was merely an ordinary blue-coloured Spirit Formation. To him, there was nothing threatening about it.

"Xue Jian, take this!"

Finally, after a lengthy process of laying the formation, Chu Feng's Spirit Formation was finally completed. But, although he yelled loudly, the thing that shot out of the formation made everyone's faces change greatly, astounding them endlessly.

Because, it was actually a tiny infant-like hand made by the blue-coloured Spirit Formation. That tiny hand, at a sluggish speed, flew towards Xue Jian. Although the hand was very unbearably slow, it made a very disdainful gesture towards Xue Jian.

"Hmph. You want to die? I'll let you. Don't hope that someone will save you. Even the gods can't stop me if I wish to kill you!" Xue Jian was successfully angered by Chu Feng. He jabbed the air, and a boundless purple-coloured formation was laid in a blink.

roar When that formation reached completion, the huge beast that defeated Jiang Wanshi previously rushed out. But this time, he did not conceal its shape. From the start, it had the shape of a huge beast, and also had horrifying might.

"What do we do? If we don't save him, he will truly be killed!" Seeing that, Sun Yihan's complexion changed suddenly. Despite cold taunting before, when Chu Feng truly faced a moment of life and death, her heart was still moved sympathetically.

"We cannot save him. If we do, we will then be required to give him a mid-rank Martial medicine for his life. He is simply not worth it," said a female.

"That's right. Let him die. If, by chance, he's with that Xue Jian and Xue

Yi, then he is aiming for our sympathy with this suicidal action. He wants us to be tricked and willingly take out a mid-rank Martial medicine," said another female ruthlessly.

"All of you shut up. Watch carefully."

However, just at that time, Jiang Wanshi coldly yelled. After her words were spoken, it made Sun Yihan's and the others' beautiful bodies quiver from fear. Although they did not understand why their senior trusted Chu Feng so much, they didn't dare to say anything more, and cast their gazes, once again, towards the circle of battle.

aoo

The Spirit Formation beast Xue Jian made had extremely quick speed. Although the tiny infant hand Chu Feng made was very slow, the beast still instantly arrived in front of the little hand, covering the distance between them immediately. Then, its mouth full of fangs widened, and swallowed the tiny infant hand.

But after swallowing the hand, the Spirit Formation beast did not stop its steps. It continued opening its mouth, dashing towards Chu Feng, aiming to swallow Chu Feng in one turn as well.

"Heh, it's the end." Looking at the scene, Xue Yi and the others smirked. Despite already knowing that Chu Feng was definitely going to be defeated, when the scene was imminent, they were still quite cheerful.

hmm However, just as the huge beast neared Chu Feng, he formed a hint of a cold smile, then changed his hand gestures. The blue-coloured Spirit Formation exploded with light, the symbols on it starting to alter. In an instant, from blue, it became purple, and its might increased by many times.

"Crap, this formation is deceptive!" Seeing Chu Feng's Spirit Formation changing, Xue Jian's expression changed as well, becoming aware of a dreadful situation.

boom

However, his realization came too late. An explosion rang out in the sky

—the purple-coloured beast Xue Jian made blew up, becoming fragments.

When the ripples of the explosion dispersed, a huge horrifying purple-coloured hand appeared into everyone's line of sight. Not only did the huge hand have a sinister appearance, it was enormous. The might it emanated was extremely terrifying as well.

Most importantly, the huge purple-coloured hand did the exact same disdainful gesture as the tiny infant hand towards Xue Jian.

Chapter 602: Fighting Again

"How is this possible? Cousin Xue Jian's formation was destroyed?" To the abrupt scene and dramatic change, Xue Yi and the others were dumbfounded. All of them had their eyes and mouths widened, stupefied.

"What happened? It was clearly only a blue-coloured Spirit Formation. Why did it suddenly become a purple-coloured Spirit Formation?"

"Also, what's with that huge hand? It actually broke that ugly bastard's formation so easily!"

Coincidently, Sun Yihan and the others also widened their eyes roundly and opened their mouths slightly. On their delicate faces, shock was filled. They were stunned by the sudden change.

"I never would have thought that his Spirit Formation technique reached this level of the strength. He can actually lay a Spirit Formation merged by two different powers! It was like crossing an ocean without the heavens knowing! It even tricked Xue Jian."

Jiang Wanshi had kept a close watch on the formation Chu Feng laid. She knew he was definitely going to use deception, but she didn't expect it to be used so perfectly. Even she was deeply frightened by Chu Feng's methods.

"Senior, what do you mean? Don't tell me that he is truly a Purple-cloak World Spiritist?" After hearing Jiang Wanshi's words, Sun Yihan's and the others' faces lost all colour because with their entire being, they looked down on Chu Feng, and didn't feel that he could possibly be a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

"Mm. Not only is he a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, his Spirit Formation techniques are far above mine, and also above that Xue Jian." Jiang Wanshi gave a firm reply.

"Heavens! He's that powerful!" Knowing the truth, the nine females, including Sun Yihan, could no longer remain calm. They couldn't help casting their gazes full of shock onto Chu Feng, re-examining the

handsome young man.

Already a Purple-cloak World Spiritist in the sixth level of the Heaven realm, and moreover, already grasped Spirit Formation techniques so skillfully. There was no need to use words to state what that meant.

“Brat, you are actually a Purple-cloak World Spiritist! Why did you pretend to be a Blue-cloak World Spiritist?!” Xue Jian came to his senses. He, who knew he was tricked, grinded his teeth in anger. His eyes were blood-red as he gave off strong fury and bloodlust.

“Only letting you have a taste of your own medicine.” Chu Feng smiled lightly, then said, “You lost, so take out a mid-rank Martial medicine.”

“Hmph. You won your life, but it won’t matter if you can’t keep it.” While Xue Jian spoke, even his teeth creaked from gnashing. But he still took the mid-rank Martial medicine, the Fruit of Martialism, and threw it to Chu Feng.

“Heh. No need for you to worry about that. If you don’t accept this loss, we can actually spar again,” said Chu Feng with a smile after catching the Fruit of Martialism.

“I have the exact same thoughts. But this time, not only am I wagering the Martial medicine in your hand, I also want your life. Do you dare?” said Xue Jian furiously.

“You want my life? You can, but with this, you need to take out two mid-rank Martial medicine for the wager. Do you have them?” asked Chu Feng in a very disdainful manner.

“Hmph. I’ve got plenty of Martial medicine. I just fear you don’t have enough lives!” Xue Jian coldly snorted. His palm lightly brushed past his Cosmos Sack, and two more mid-rank Martial medicine, the Cat’s Claw of Martialism, appeared in his hand.

“Heh, very good. Go ahead, but I’ll be taking these two Martial medicine!” Chu Feng smiled with confidence, as if the two mid-rank Martial medicine were objects inside his pocket.

“This time, I will definitely take your puny life.” Xue Jian, who already

loathed Chu Feng thoroughly, did not waste his breath. With a thought, a purple-coloured Spirit Formation appeared. But looking more carefully, everyone was involuntarily startled because it was not an ordinary Spirit Formation. It was a World Spirit Gate.

wuaoo~~~~~ After the World Spirit Gate appeared, a horrifying noise akin to wolves crying and ghosts howling came from it.

Quickly afterwards, dark-green gas surged outwards. The gas was extremely terrifying as it endlessly twisted and changed in mid-air.

Occasionally having a humanoid shape, occasionally becoming a bloody mouth, and occasionally, two blood-red eyes appeared. The most significant thing, however, was the dark-green gas exuding aura in the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

"A Ghost Spirit World's World Spirit! It's a Ghost World Spirit in the ninth level of the Heaven realm!"

Upon seeing the World Spirit, Jiang Wanshi's and the others' faces changed greatly because no matter what, they never would have thought that Xue Jian would stop creating formations, and directly use a World Spirit to fight Chu Feng.

World Spirits and Spirit Formations were completely different. No matter how much stronger Spirit Formations were, they were still formations. Especially for Spirit Formations made within a short amount of time, their might on the surface could be decent and it would indeed have some offensive strength; but in reality, those Spirit Formations would be destroyed quite easily by martial skills.

As for World Spirits, there was no need to talk about them. They were living organisms with special power. They were absolutely not something Spirit Formations could resist against. A World Spirit in the ninth level of the Heaven realm would have the strength to instantly kill Chu Feng.

After all, Chu Feng's physical body only had the cultivation of the sixth level of the Heaven realm. Compared to the ninth level of the Heaven realm, it was simply the distance between the heavens and the earth. It was no longer as simple as a Spirit Formation technique spar. It was a

spar with real power. What they were fighting with was their own body's power.

"Ugly bastard, you are being unreasonable! You said a Spirit Formation spar, so how can you summon a World Spirit?!" Seeing the general situation heading towards an unfavourable direction, Sun Yihan and the other sisters hurriedly pointed at Xue Jian and loudly rebuked.

"Hmph. Are World Spirits not in the same category as Spirit Formation techniques? If a person isn't a World Spiritist, can that person summon a World Spirit? Lady Jiang, you comment on this. Are World Spirits a part of Spirit Formation techniques?" asked Xue Jian loudly after a cold snort.

And at that instant, Jiang Wanshi tightly knitted her brows, unclear expressions on her face. But ultimately, she still helplessly nodded her head and said, "They are!"

"Then there's no need to waste any more words," snorted Xue Jian coldly again, then looked towards Chu Feng and shouted, "Brat, die!"

wuaoo~~~~~ At that instant, the Ghost World Spirit roared, then became a dark-green blur of light. With terrifying might, it flew quickly towards Chu Feng.

"Senior, what should we do?" Seeing that, Sun Yihan and the others tensed up. After knowing Chu Feng's extraordinary talent, they all did not hope Chu Feng would die in that manner for no reason.

"Observe silently at the changes. When needed, I will make my move." Though Jiang Wanshi said to "observe silently at the changes", she was already leaping towards Chu Feng. From that, it could be seen that she cared the most about Chu Feng's life.

"Hmph. Today, no one will be able to save him. Green Ghost, kill this brat! I'll reward you with a Source Energy feast!" shouted Xue Jian loudly.

"Kukuku...."

"Xue Jian, you better stay true to your words. I'll be taking this brat's head."

The Ghost World Spirit madly laughed sinisterly, then its body changed, and became a several-meter tall humanoid shape. However, its teeth were pointed, its eyes shined, and it held a sharp weapon. It had quite a frightening appearance.

Most importantly, currently, its speed increased by many times. It already surpassed Jiang Wanshi's speed by a huge margin, and in almost a blink, it came up to Chu Feng.

"Damn!" Seeing the horrible situation in front of her eyes, Jiang Wanshi also furiously yelled. Fear filled her face, as well as bitterness.

However, just as Jiang Wanshi and the others panicked and felt Chu Feng's end was nigh, he himself smiled lightly, then said, "Eggy, it's your turn!"

Chapter 603: Exceptional Beauty

“Hehe, quickly open the World Spirit Gate! My hands have been itching for action.” Next to Chu Feng’s ear rang Eggy’s sweet and light voice. Within pleasantness, there emitted some naughtiness as well.

“Heh. Go, my queen!” Chu Feng didn’t hesitate either. He willed, then a World Spirit Gate emerged in accordance with his thoughts.

“Brat, you still want to resist? In front of me, the Ghost King, you can only obediently die!” As the World Spirit Gate opened, the Ghost World Spirit had came up to Chu Feng, and slashed down with its fang-like weapon, creating a powerful dark-green blade of light.

hmm However, just as the dark-green light neared, black-coloured gas surged out of the World Spirit Gate in front of Chu Feng.

The black-coloured gas roiled out and interweaved perfectly with the blade of light. With a boom, not only was the light blade dispelled, even the Ghost World Spirit was pushed several meters away.

“What is happening?!” That sudden change made everyone shocked. Even the World Spirit’s expression shifted, and tightly furrowed its brows. It halted in mid-air, and used its blood-red eyes to tightly stare at the area of black gas, no longer daring to have even a vestige of carelessness.

The black-coloured gas was too peculiar. It gave off an aura that made even it, the Ghost World Spirit, disquieted. Logically speaking, a World Spirit from the Ghost Spirit World was the so-called “representation of darkness”, but at that very instant, the black-coloured gas that forced it back seemed to be several times darker than it. It made one feel reverence in their heart.

“Senior, what exactly is that? This aura is so strange. Why do I have a feeling of chilliness in my heart?”

“Yeah! Senior, what is that? It’s so scary.” At the same time, fear emerged into the eyes of Sun Yihan and the others. Although they were cultivators, after all, they were girls. When they met things that were too

strange, they became a bit timid.

"It is possibly a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World. To be able to completely suppress a Ghost Spirit World's World Spirit with the aura of darkness... It should be a Demon World Spirit," said Jiang Wanshi.

"What? Demon World Spirit? That's a very powerful World Spirit! This guy actually made a contract with a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World?"

Hearing those words, Sun Yihan and the others all couldn't help inhaling a breath of cool air. Once again, quite a bit of respect sprung up in the gaze they looked at Chu Feng with.

World Spirits from the Demon Spirit World could be comparable to World Spirits from the Fairy Spirit World. They were World Spirits extremely difficult to tame, and it was extremely challenging to make a contract with them. Those able to establish one with a Demon World Spirit meant they were people with extremely high potential, otherwise they wouldn't have been chosen by a Demon World Spirit.

"You've truly made a contract with a Demon World Spirit? More the reason that I must to kill you."

At the same time, judging by the aura, Xue Jian too determined that Chu Feng's World Spirit came from the Demon Spirit World. However, the black-coloured gas was too queer. Even he couldn't see through it with Spirit power, so he simply couldn't determine what realm Chu Feng's World Spirit was at.

"Kukuku. Could it be that it's really a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World? Quickly come out and let me see what damn ability a guy from the Demon Spirit World has!" The Ghost Spirit World's World Spirit stood in mid-air and loudly shouted.

Although it felt the strength of the gas, although its heart was very uneasy, after it stabilized its emotions, it didn't feel that it would lose. After all, since Chu Feng's cultivation was at such a lower level, normally speaking, Chu Feng's World Spirit's cultivation wouldn't be too powerful either.

“Demon Spirit World’s World Spirit? How could I possibly come from such a worthless place?” Finally, an extremely fierce yet very pleasant voice rang out from within the black-coloured gas.

At the same time, the boundless black gas, like rolling spoke, dispersed quickly, and at that very instant, an exceptional beauty appeared in the crowd’s line of sight.

An exquisite and delicate body, fair and smooth skin, cute and beautiful face . . . one could simply not find any blemishes on her body. She was absolutely perfect.

She wore a short skirt woven by black-coloured feathers, revealing slender legs underneath and snow-white shoulders above. She was alluring and charming, making one’s blood vessels simply burst with a glimpse, and could not even look away even if they wished to.

After that female appeared, Jiang Wanshi, Sun Yihan, and the others who stood above the ocean of flowers were instantly overshadowed. Naturally, she was the queen from the Asura Spirit World, Eggy.

“Wow! I even thought a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World would be even uglier than me. I never would have thought that it would be such a pretty beauty! In my life, this is the most beautiful beauty I have ever seen!”

After seeing Eggy’s complexion, the face of the World Spirit from the Ghost Spirit World changed greatly. Even its saliva flowed out, being deeply stunned by Eggy’s appearance.

“Senior, that’s a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World? So pretty!” Not to mention the males there, even Sun Yihan and the other females were deeply attracted to Eggy’s complexion, admiratively sighing on how could there be such perfect beauty.

“No. She isn’t a World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World. They definitely don’t have the same shape as a human.” However, Jiang Wanshi rejected the guess that Eggy was a Demon Spirit World’s World Spirit immediately when she saw her.

“Yeah! According to Master, World Spirits from the Demon Spirit World shouldn’t have a complete humanoid appearance! Is it possible that she’s a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World?” At that moment, Sun Yihan and the others also realized it.

“That’s not right either. How could a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World have such dark power?” Jiang Wanshi once again shook her head.

At that instant, the females knitted their brows and all of them went into silence. But after a while, their eyes lit up, extremely shocked gazes springing up, and they said together, “Heavens! Could it be that she’s a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?!”

“World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?!”

“Impossible! World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World are like legends! How can this brat make a contract with one of them? How is he worthy?”

At the same time, Xue Jian also thought of that possibility, but he quickly rejected it because the Asura Spirit World was a like a legend. It made him not dare to believe that Chu Feng was related to that legend.

“Kuku. Little girl from the Demon Spirit World, seeing that you have such a pretty appearance, I’ll give you a chance! As long as you are willing to serve me once, I’ll spare your life. How about it?” The Ghost Spirit World’s World Spirit licked its lips with its nasty tongue.

“Hmph.” However, just at that moment, Eggy’s eyes faintly lit up. Boundless black-coloured gas then explosively surged out of her body.

boom When that black gas surged out, even the sky darkened and gales blew madly. The ground tremble, as if the end of the world arrived. The might she showed was extremely frightening.

Chapter 604: Attitude Change

“Such powerful might. Could this World Spirit truly be from the Asura Spirit World?” exclaimed Sun Yihan and the others simultaneously.

“Unlikely. The Asura Spirit World is a legend. Even if she truly comes from the Asura Spirit World, his cultivation is only in the sixth level of the Heaven realm. No matter what, it is impossible for her to defeat that Ghost World Spirit. The distance between the two is too great. She will always be heading towards defeat as it is now.”

Jiang Wanshi shook her head, and as she spoke, she went a bit closer to Chu Feng. She predicted Chu Feng’s doubtless defeat, so in the moment his life becomes endangered, she would protect Chu Feng.

“Haha, interesting! Watch how I take care of a stubborn girl like you.”

The Ghost World Spirit laughed. Not only was it not afraid, it even leaped forward, becoming dark-green gas, and merged with the black-coloured gas Eggy emitted.

“Ahhhh~~~~~~~”

However, just as the two touched one another, the Ghost King of the Ghost Spirit World made a heartbreaking, extremely miserable shriek as the dark-green gas was engulfed by the black-coloured gas.

As the gas roiled around, the black-coloured gas became a huge black-coloured hand, and grasped within the huge hand was the body of the Ghost Spirit World’s World Spirit.

“Heavens! This is?” And when they saw the Ghost World Spirit once again, not a single person on scene wasn’t dumbfounded and tongue-tied. Their faces became full of shock.

The scene at that very instant completely turned over the crowd’s expectations. The Ghost World Spirit was currently being tightly grabbed by the huge black hand. It no longer had its former might.

It, at present, was like an old person who was going to die. Its body became unsightly, and as it cried out in misery and called for help, it

struggled with all it had. However, it could not escape. No matter if it was its cultivation or life, they were both being rapidly stripped away. They were being absorbed by the huge black-coloured hand and imbued into Eggy's body.

And looking at the Ghost Spirit World's World Spirit that was even toying with herself before, but was now unendingly begging for mercy, Eggy sweetly smiled, then said, "Remember. I do not come from the Demon Spirit World. I come from the Asura Spirit World!"

After speaking, Eggy's eyes lit up, a hint of bloodlust surging outward. Then, with a bang, the World Spirit from the Ghost Spirit World bursted, squeezed by the black-coloured hand. All remaining power was mercilessly consumed by Eggy.

"Heavens! That's too inconceivable! That Ghost World Spirit in the ninth level of the Heaven realm was killed by her!" Sun Yihan paled, not a single trace of blood could be seen on her face.

"So powerful. It was simply like an instant kill. So there's actually such powerful World Spirits in this world... No wonder Asura World Spirits became legends."

Another female also had a stunned complexion. When Eggy personally announced her identity and also exhibited her powerful strength, they had confirmed that Eggy was a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World.

"Impossible, impossible! That guy truly made a contract with an Asura World Spirit!" But in comparison to Sun Yihan and the others, Xue Yi and the others had very unsightly faces, unwilling to accept what happened.

From ancient times, those who could establish a contract with Asura World Spirits were all able to become a grand characters of a region, and they were powerful World Spiritists as well.

Although, up until now, an Asura World Spirit contractor had yet to truly appear in the Eastern Sea Region, there were many records regarding them as well as the strong powers of the Asura World Spirit contractors.

And, at present, Chu Feng was actually a World Spiritist who made a contract with an Asura World Spirit. How could the people there not be shocked? Especially so for those who conflicted with Chu Feng already— Xue Yi, Xue Jian, and the others. They felt great trepidation.

whoosh Just at that moment, Xue Jian suddenly waved his hand, then two blurs flew towards Chu Feng.

bam Chu Feng caught them, and discovered they were the mid-rank Martial medicine.

"Brother, you are powerful. I, Xue Jian, have lost!" After speaking those words, he looked at Jiang Wanshi, and said, "Lady Jiang. This time, your residence has an expert's assistance. I won't stay for long, but I, sooner or later, will return to ask for pointers. I hope at that time, your residence will still have an expert's assistance."

After finishing those words, Xue Jian waved his sleeve, turned around, and left. As for Xue Yi and the others, though they were bitter, they didn't stay behind. After meaningfully looking at Chu Feng, they followed Xue Jian with quick steps and left as well.

"Ahh, so boring. They gave up just like that!" Seeing that, Eggy stuck out her proud curve, opened up her arms, and after alluringly stretching, she turned around, became a strand of black light, and rushed into the World Spirit Gate.

"Waa, you're so powerful. You've actually made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World! You're the first person to ever do that in the history of the Eastern Sea Region!"

Just at that moment, Sun Yihan had came up to Chu Feng and looked at him with glowing eyes. That appearance made her seem like a completely different person. Before, it was all sorts of disdain; now, it was a face full of admiration.

"Thank you for coming and saving me. I am Jiang Wanshi. May I have your name?" Simultaneously, Jiang Wanshi and her sisters all came over.

Their expressions were in complete contrast to before. Jiang Wanshi

particularly. Previously, she did not even look straight at Chu Feng; but now, the gaze she looked at him was very complex. The strongest emotion inside her gaze was gratitude and adoration.

"Lady Jiang, no need to be polite. I've already said it. We are on the same side, and since there's an enemy intruding, it is my duty to fight against them together with you. As for my name, my master named me 'Wuqing'," said Chu Feng with a smile.

"So it's Junior Wuqing... Junior Wuqing, in terms of age, I should be above you. So if you can, there's no harm in calling me Senior," said Jiang Wanshi with a smile.

"I am also older than you. You also need to call me Senior!" interrupted Sun Yihan, giggling.

"Wuqing pays his respect to Seniors!" Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly wore a smile on his face and very politely bowed to Jiang Wanshi and the others.

But, as he spoke, he also put away the three mid-rank Martial medicine. Although one came from Jiang Wanshi, after all, Chu Feng was still the one who won it back, so he wasn't going to give it to her.

Although those things wouldn't improve Chu Feng's cultivation greatly, keeping them on him would definitely prove useful.

"Junior Wuqing, no need to be so courteous. I wonder... What business do you have with my master?" asked Jiang Wanshi.

"Under my master's order, I have come to pass something down to Senior Qiushui. However, my master instructed me, that other than Senior Qiushui, it may not be told to anyone else. So, I ask for your forgiveness Senior Jiang. I cannot tell you," said Chu Feng.

"That's fine, but my master has very few friends, and there are only a few that I know. So, Junior Wuqing, please reveal a tiny bit of information about your master. There's no need to reveal the full name, just a bit will suffice," asked Jiang Wanshi.

Chapter 605: Malignant

"My master's surname is Huangfu and he is a close friend with Senior Qiushui. I can only reveal that much, but if you let her know about that, she will know who my master is."

Chu Feng already made preparations. If he wanted to see Qiushui Fuyan, then he had to make himself related to Huangfu Haoyue. So, he intentionally weaved a lie and said Huangfu Haoyue was his master. Only then could he greatly increase the chance that Qiushui Fuyan would be willing to see himself.

After hearing Chu Feng's response, Jiang Wanshi's expression changed slightly and the gaze she looked at Chu Feng with couldn't help being complicated, as if she thought of something. Then, she said, "Junior Chu Feng, my master is indeed not here. If you wish to though, you can come back after a while."

Jiang Wanshi's appearance did not seem she was lying. So, Chu Feng asked, "Senior Jiang, do you know where Senior Qiushui has gone?"

"My master has went to the Everlasting Sea of Blood," said Jiang Wanshi.

"The Everlasting Sea of Blood... Where's that?" asked Chu Feng curiously.

"Is Junior Wuqing not from the Eastern Sea Region? Or else, how would you not know about the Everlasting Sea of Blood?" Jiang Wanshi lightly raised her brows, a bit of surprise springing into her eyes.

"Without hiding anything Senior Jiang, I am indeed not from the Eastern Sea Region. I've come here only to see Senior Qiushui," said Chu Feng with a smile.

"Then that's strange. That Everlasting Sea of Blood is a holy land for cultivation. Especially for cultivators under the Martial Lord realm, it has great cultivation effects.

"So, that's why large numbers of Heaven realm cultivators gather there

for cultivation all year long, but recently, a monster appeared in the Everlasting Sea of Blood."

"Monster?!"

"Mm. From what I've heard, that monster kills people as though they were hemp, and it appears very erratically. It cultivates using cultivators, making everyone very restless. Two seniors in the Lovers Terrace passed by the Everlasting Sea of Blood, and hearing of that matter, they went forth to capture the monster, aiming to eradicate the evil for everyone.

"But, they didn't expect the monster's strength to far surpass theirs. One died painfully and another luckily escaped, but was also heavily injured.

"After returning to the Lovers Terrace, that person told my master about it.

"Usually, my master doesn't like doing this sort of thing, but coincidentally, the senior who passed away was a bit of a friend to my master. She didn't want her to have died with such injustice, so she decided to remove that monster. This morning, she headed to the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Junior Wuqing, I'm sorry, you were just one step late.

"If you were a day earlier, you could have seen my master," said Jiang Wanshi with great regret.

"So it's like that. Then, Senior Jiang, do you know when Senior Qiushui will return?" asked Chu Feng quickly.

"I'm not too sure about that. If it's fast, then a few days; if it's slow, then a few months. My master is a very casual person. Even if she finishes up with that monster, she may not directly return to the Lovers Terrace.

"If, Junior Wuqing, you truly have something urgent to pass to my master, you can indeed try and head to the Everlasting Sea of Blood. The Ancient Teleport Formation outside my Lovers Terrace can directly bring you to the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Perhaps you can meet my master there," said Jiang Wanshi.

“Mm. Senior Jiang, thank you for the reminder. I did come here in the company of urgent business with Senior Qiushui. Then, I won’t disturb anymore, and I’ll take my leave.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then turned around and left.

“Senior, he said his name is Wuqing. Do you think that’s his real name?” asked Sun Yihan curiously as she blinked her big eyes, after Chu Feng left.

“No matter if it’s real name or not, he is so powerful. It’s already quite strong for him to have that cultivation at that age, but he has also made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World! I’m sure his master is also a very outstanding person,” said another female.

But at that moment, Jiang Wanshi was constantly staring in the direction Chu Feng left towards, silent for a long time, as though she was contemplating something. Suddenly, her visage contorted—her brows furrowed tightly and some worry emerged into her face. Quickly afterwards, she said to her sisters, “Stand guard in the place, I will return soon!”

whoosh As she was speaking, Jiang Wanshi had already leapt and rose into the air. As her skirt fluttered, she disappeared above the ocean of flowers.

“All of you, stay behind. Do not follow.” Seeing that, Sun Yihan’s big eyes rolled around as if she thought of something as well. Then, she smugly smiled, and leaped up, flying in Jiang Wanshi’s direction too.

Outside the Lovers Terrace, Chu Feng was heading towards the Ancient Teleport Formation. Because the Lovers Terrace was a forbidden area, despite being very famous, very few people would come to that place for no reason. Other than the decent scenery on the road, there were no other life forms around.

“Come out. Don’t follow sneakily.” Suddenly, Chu Feng halted and turned his gaze to his back with a light smile.

whoosh whoosh And just as Chu Feng finished speaking, two figures flew out and respectively sealed Chu Feng’s front and back path. Those

people were Xue Jian and Xue Yi, but currently, they were sneering and their gazes were full of bloodlust. Clearly, they came with malicious intents.

"You truly lack foresight. I just won two mid-rank Martial medicine, yet you come and follow me and want to kill me for revenge?" Chu Feng detected them already from the start, and also knew their plans.

"So you've already discovered us at the start. Since you did, why didn't you obediently return to the Lovers Terrace for help, and instead, continue going forward? Is it you're too confident with yourself and feel you could escape, or so stupid that you forgot to ask for help?" Xue Yi coldly examined Chu Feng. In his eyes, there was hatred and also derision, but even more, there was actually... admiration.

"Neither. I just feel that I can use your own plans against you and remove potential problems. Though, the two of you can't really count as any potential problems," said Chu Feng with a small smile. His demeanor was like he didn't even put the two in his eyes.

"Hoh. Your mouth is still as arrogant as usual. But you do have some qualifications in being arrogant. Speaking honestly, if you weren't related to those girls, I would truly want to befriend you.

"But since you are friends with them, I must kill you or else if a person like you continues becoming developed, the next time we see, I'm afraid you won't let us brothers go." As Xue Jian spoke, he was tightly staring at Chu Feng. He, who had fought against Chu Feng, wasn't as arrogant as Xue Yi. Instead, there was a bit of cautiousness.

"Heh, don't waste your breath. I still need to hurry here. Since you two have gotten tired of living, quickly hand your lives over."

Suddenly, Chu Feng's face chilled. While speaking, his gaze flashed and his aura rapidly climbed. In merely a blink, his cultivation rose from the sixth level of the Heaven realm to the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

"You, you, you actually concealed your cultivation!" Feeling Chu Feng's quickly increasing aura, Xue Yi's face changed immediately. His previous arrogance was no longer there, and replacing it was a type of endless fear.

Because, at such a distance, he could clearly feel how terrifying Chu Feng's aura was. It was simply an aura that he had never felt before within the Heaven realm. It was even more powerful than a rank one Martial lord.

Chapter 606: Everlasting Sea of Blood

"Crap! Cousin, run!" At that instant, even Xue Jian in the ninth level of the Heaven realm panicked because he too, like Xue Yi, felt Chu Feng's horrifying power. Moreover, being in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, he was able to truly experience that level of horror with his increased senses.

So, currently, he didn't think much and didn't even care about his cousin's life. After yelling, he turned around, wanting to escape.

"You wish to escape? Neither of you two will be able to." However, Chu Feng only sneered, and without even moving, a burst of berserk Heaven power surged out of his body. From formless, to a form, it became two huge sinister mouths and at the same time swallowed Xue Jian and Xue Yi.

"Ahhhh~~~~~~~~~~"

At that instant, Xue Jian and Xue Yi started to make heart-wrenching screams. If one saw through the frenzied Heaven power, they would discover that the brothers' bodies were presently enduring extremely cruel torture.

Not only were their physical bodies tearing bit by bit, even their Source Energy was taken away as they were alive. Moreover, before the completion of all of that, they were still kept alive. They truly felt the agony of being split into pieces.

The moment they stopped screaming was the moment they stopped breathing. To be more precise, their hearts, livers, gallbladders, lungs, and any bone remnants were all gone. Chu Feng had thoroughly stripped them away.

whoosh When the berserk Heaven power surged back to his body, two Cosmos Sacks also entered Chu Feng's hand. Then, he lightly tossed them into the air a few times before saying quite disappointedly, "They were bragging so greatly before, but it turns out they're two poor bastards."

There was some reason why Chu Feng spoke like that. Before, Xue Jian did say he had a lot of Martial medicine, but when Chu Feng examined their Cosmos Sacks, he discovered that despite having a few Martial medicine in them, they were all low-rank Martial medicine. There was no mid-rank Martial medicine.

Although there weren't any relatively valuable items such as mid-rank Martial medicine, in reality, there were still quite a few things in their Cosmos Sacks. To normal people, it could be said to be a great sum of wealth, but to Chu Feng, it was merely a small harvest.

After putting away the Cosmos Sacks, Chu Feng glanced back with the corner of his eye before lightly smiling and releasing the power of his three lightning. His aura returned to the sixth level of the Heaven realm once again, and he flew quickly towards the Ancient Teleport Formation.

When Chu Feng gradually distanced and his body completely disappeared, inside a nearby brush, two lithe figures stood up. It was Jiang Wanshi and Sun Yihan.

"My gods! He has the cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm, and his battle power reaches such an unbelievable level of strength! With his battle power, he can even fight equally against a rank one Martial Lord right?

"That is so inconceivable. He even concealed his strength so deeply, and not even a trace of it could be seen. No wonder. No wonder he's able to make a contract with an Asura World Spirit. He's simply a monster! It's the first time that I've seen such a ridiculous person in our generation!" Sun Yihan's little mouth was very widely opened, and her eyes were full of shock.

As for Jiang Wanshi, she continued staring in the direction Chu Feng departed towards. Although she didn't speak, within her little but bright eyes, not only was astonishment glittering, there was even a bit of shame.

Only after a long while did Jiang Wanshi come to her senses. The corners of her mouth curled up, and she bitterly chuckled. "We overestimate ourselves as geniuses and don't put those in the same

generation in our eyes. However, we were oblivious to the fact that some people hide their cultivation deep and don't reveal it, are strong but not arrogant. Although they seem very ordinary on the surface, in reality, they have already far surpassed us.

"Before, we even showed conceit in front of him and didn't put him in our eyes, but we knew not that in his heart, we were akin to trash, and could not even take a single of his attacks."

Hearing Jiang Wanshi's words, Sun Yihan's complexion changed slightly as well. Then, like she was enlightened, she said, "Senior, could it be that this is the thing master talked about: 'there's a person beyond a person, and a sky beyond a sky'?"

The reason why Jiang Wanshi and Sun Yihan followed Chu Feng was because they feared that Xue Jian and Xue Yi wouldn't forgive Chu Feng, judging by their natures. They wanted to hiddenly protect Chu Feng safely to the Ancient Teleport Formation, but didn't expect, unintentionally, to see Chu Feng's real strength. And, it had to be said that his real strength frightened them quite a bit.

Actually, Chu Feng's Spirit power not only detected the brothers Xue Jian and Xue Yi, naturally, it also detected Jiang Wanshi and Sun Yihan.

However, Chu Feng wanted to give them two face so he didn't call them out. But after feeling their shock, Chu Feng made a hidden decision in his heart.

Under certain circumstances, facing certain people, he shouldn't conceal his strength. After all, in this world, the strongest ruled supreme. Only powerful strength and outstanding talent could obtain other people's heartfelt respect; petty and weak strength, no matter how much more humble you were, would only obtain their disdain and contempt.

So, Chu Feng decided, in the future, he would roam through the Eastern Sea Region with his current young face on. No matter if he did extremely shocking actions, or made extremely horrid mistakes, he would have his current face on, and would only change his face when escaping a catastrophe or facing an undefeatable enemy.

But, he would still let the people from the Eastern Sea Region know that Wuqing isn't a person fun to offend. He would, one day, also make everyone know that Wuqing was nothing but a fake name, and that his real identity is Chu Feng.

However, at that time, it would definitely only be when he made certain no one could threaten his family and friends in the Eastern Sea Region, and also when he could put the enormous power, the Immortal Execution Archipelago, under his feet, and step upon it.

The Eastern Sea Region was big. Its land area was far less than the area of the sea, therefore its name, the Eastern Sea Region.

The Everlasting Sea of Blood was located in the heart of a sea region. It was quite far from land, so naturally, it was very far from the Lovers Terrace.

However, since the center zone of the Eastern Sea Region was covered by large numbers of Ancient Teleport Formations, as long as you had money, there would be no problem even if the distance was greater.

Although Chu Feng couldn't be said to be very wealthy, the mere fees to use the Ancient Teleport Formations was absolutely not a problem to him.

So, after a few days, Chu Feng arrived at the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

"No wonder it's called the Everlasting Sea of Blood. The seawater in this sea is truly blood-red." When Chu Feng gazed down from above, he couldn't help exclaiming. Normal seawater was blue, but the seawater of the Everlasting Sea of Blood was red, as if blood converged together and formed the sea.

But, although it was blood-red, when one looked at it, not only would they not feel any terror, instead, they would feel that it was very beautiful.

And the reason for that was because the seawater did not emit the stench of blood, but rather, faint fragrance.

Moreover, the winds and waves of the Eastern Sea Region were fierce. In the other sea regions, most of them had waves that could reach the skies,

so ordinary people couldn't approach them. However, in the Everlasting Sea of Blood, the seawater was abnormally calm. There was actually no waves, and the surface of the sea was truly like a mirror.

Especially being shined upon by the sun, a layer of faint red-coloured light appeared. It was incomparably beautiful, eye-grabbing, and dazzling. It made people endlessly sigh in admiration.

Chapter 607: Ancient Legend

hmm Suddenly, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows, a hint of displeasure emerging onto his face. He felt a burst of Spirit power currently examining his body.

Feeling such change, he hurriedly spun around and cast his alarmed gaze towards behind. Only then did he discover, nearby, an old man was flying towards him.

The old man was unexpectedly blind. Although he couldn't see, his clothes were very tidy. They weren't that gorgeous, but very clean.

Especially his snow-white long hair. It hung down like a waterfall, down straight to his heels. Although his beard wasn't as long as his hair, it was still not short. It was also as white as snow, and very clean too.

"Hehe, young man, it's the first time you've been to this Everlasting Sea of Blood right?" asked the blind old man with a smile as he came up to Chu Feng. He had the cultivation of the eighth level of the Heaven realm, and was clearly a World Spiritist.

His eyes could not see, so he used Spirit power to observe things. That was understandable, so Chu Feng's didn't blame him, and politely replied, "Senior, it is indeed the first time I've been here. I wonder, why is this place so special?"

"This place has existed since ancient times, and the specific origins of it cannot be tracked down. There are many versions people talk of: some people say it was naturally formed, some say it was formed by oddities... But, my favourite version comes from a legend of the Ancient Era," said the blind old man rather pleasedly as he stroked his snow-white beard.

"Oh? What kind of legend is it? Senior, can you tell me?"

Hearing him say "a legend of the Ancient Era", Chu Feng was instantly intrigued. After all, the Ancient Era from very distant times. It was several tens of thousands of years ago.

It was a completely different era from the current one—one when

martial cultivation just started to flourish, when experts emerged in greater and greater numbers, and when monsters walked upon the lands. It was a mysterious and unfathomable era filled with stories and legends.

It was said at that time, all sorts of species spread throughout the world, and the gods passed down the method of martial cultivation to the earthly world, allowing all species to study and comprehend it. Regardless if it were humans, monsters, animals, or even plants, all of them could attempt to understand the martial cultivation method.

And, with powerful intelligence, humans quickly grasped the methods and gained power. They obtained strength that put them above other species, and very soon became the kings of the world.

However, there was another species that grasped the martial cultivation method along with humans. They were different than Monstrous Beasts, different than Fierce Beasts, and even more so, different than wild beasts. They had intelligence no weaker than humans as well as noble bloodlines. They also enamored peace.

After they grasped the martial cultivation method, they didn't do the same as humans and use it for themselves. They started to spread their comprehension to various species, and it shook the overlord position that the humans had. However, the humans did not dare to do anything to them because from what they had heard, their strength was much more powerful than the humans'.

But, such a powerful and noble species went extinct after the Ancient Era, and no longer appeared again. So, people called them "Ancient Organisms".

Summing it up, the events in that era was filled with mystery, which also caused the people in the present to be very curious about the matters of that era.

Although the things spoken regarding that era couldn't be determined to be true or false, as most were passed down as stories or legends, most people still enjoyed listening about the Ancient Era. Even Chu Feng was no exception.

“Hehe, it’s a long story and it may completely overturn your knowledge about the Ancient Era. I’m afraid that even if I speak about it, you still may not believe it and will view me as rambling insane words,” said the old man with a smile.

“The matters of the Ancient Era come from very distant times. As for which are real and which are fake, who can validate them?” Chu Feng smiled, then added, “Senior, there’s no harm in telling me it. I am willing to listen.”

“Haha, not bad. Young man, you’re quite interesting. Since you’ve already said so, I can indeed tell you about it.

“It’s said in the Ancient Era, it was the Ancient Organisms’ world. They viewed other species as slaves, as toys, as pets; but since they were powerful, humans and other species could only remain submissive and live lives even inferior to pigs and dogs under the oppression of the Ancient Organisms.

“However, many people were not willing to live days like those. Of those people, one was very smart. He intentionally allowed himself to be caught by the Ancient Organisms and became their slave. But, using his intelligence, he very quickly seized their trust and became a servant of the Ancient King.

“In that era, a human obtaining such power and even stood above many Ancient Organisms was a very inconceivable thing. And all of that was because of his intelligence.

“But, his intelligence did not stop there, nor did his ambition stop there. He stayed by the Ancient King’s side as if he couldn’t determine day from night, and observed the Ancient King’s cultivation. Finally, one day, he grasped the king’s method of cultivation and created a cultivation method suitable for humans.

“He started to cultivate furtively and quickly gained power that the Ancient Organisms had. Moreover, he discovered another type of power—one that even the Ancient Organisms didn’t have.

“It was the power to enable one to open a gate to another world, and to

call upon that world's organisms over to theirs.

"However, that power wasn't something all people could obtain. One had to have a special type of connection method, and the generations to come named that connection method 'Spirit power', and named that power 'Spirit Formation techniques'," said the old man solemnly.

"Heavens! From what you've said, doesn't it mean that person was the first person to create the martial cultivation method and Spirit Formation technique?" Hearing to that point, Chu Feng was endlessly shocked because the old man's words were indeed completely different from what he'd heard. It did indeed overturn his knowledge.

"Sh, don't interrupt, let me finish." The old man put his finger at his mouth, telling Chu Feng to stay silent. Chu Feng also quickly quieted down and continued to listen closely.

"His power became stronger by the day, and finally, one day, his strength surpassed countless Ancient Organisms, and only the Ancient King could fight against him.

"He wanted humans to be on an equal level as Ancient Organisms, but obviously, the king was not willing to allow such a thing. So, an unavoidable battle exploded.

"It's said that the great battle lasted for several days. The sky and earth truly darkened, but ultimately, the Ancient King was defeated.

"After the king died, blood sprayed across the sea but for a long time, did not fade away and actually merged together with the seawater, making the sea eternally blood-red.

"However, the person who defeated the Ancient King also paid a certain price. One of his eyes was taken by the king and could never be restored."

Chapter 608: Fate Primogenitor

“Although he lost an eye, it did not make him lose any of his fighting intentions. Instead, it made him see the world clearer.

“So, he decided to liberate all humans in the world. He no longer wanted humans to stand equally with Ancient Organism. He wanted humans to become rulers of that land, to become the kings in the entire world!

“Thus, he started to pass down to humans the method of martial cultivation and trained a large batch of human cultivators who could fight against and were even more powerful than the Ancient Organisms. They started a campaign from the Eastern Sea Region, and finally eradicated all Ancient Organisms, creating an era that belonged to humans.

“And you are correct. He’s the person who created the method of martial cultivation as well as the Spirit Formation technique. However, his contributions were not only those. His true contribution was changing the fate of humans, so that’s why people of the later generation called him the Fate Primogenitor,” said the blind old man gravely. Moreover, his face was full of solemnity, as if he wasn’t narrating a legend but more of a fact.

“Fate Primogenitor? That means this Everlasting Sea of Blood is the place where the Fate Primogenitor defeated the Ancient King?” After hearing that story, Chu Feng was stunned and even his blood boiled.

The blind old man spoke very vividly and it was simply as if he was seeing the events of what happened back then again. Because of that, Chu Feng didn’t feel like it was a legend, and felt that it was something that realistically happened. If he could choose, Chu Feng, personally, would be more willing to believe the blind old man’s version, that his was the truth of the Ancient Era.

“Hehe. It is only a legend. Just listen for fun, no need to take it as true.

“But already having this cultivation at your age means that your talent is quite good. Cultivate well; this is a holy land of cultivation.

“Especially to us people in the Heaven realm, it has infinite beneficial effects. However, you cannot cultivate here for extended periods of time. If you feel that your body itches or if there’s a bit of pain, quickly leave. It is fine to come back in a year or half a year.

“Ah, that’s right. Recently, the Everlasting Sea of Blood isn’t too calm. Don’t go too deep in, and beware meeting the monster and being caught by it as a cultivation resource. Hehe.” The blind old man chuckled, then turned around and left.

Seeing the old man’s body that was going farther and farther away gradually, Chu Feng wasn’t able to come to his senses for a long time. He had used Spirit power to carefully examine the old man, and discovered he was truly only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. There was not a single trace of anything fake.

But for some reason, he felt that the blind old man was very abnormal. As for which part he was abnormal, even Chu Feng wasn’t too sure. It was all intuition.

“Oi! Brother, don’t listen to that blind old man’s mad babbling. He’s a madman.”

“That’s right. He has stayed here for the entire year, and when he meets new faces flying over from the Ancient Teleport Formation, he talks about this randomly weaved story.”

“Ah, with a glance, I can tell you’re a smart person. How could you believe that sort of thing? From what I see, all of you worry too much.”

“That’s right. This brother has such a wise appearance. How could he believe that blind old man’s wild jabbering? The method of martial cultivation is bestowed by the heavens. This is a fact that everyone knows. How could it have been created by a mortal man?”

Just at that moment, a group of young males and females flew over. Their ages were close to Chu Feng, most a few years older than him, but their cultivation reached only the beginning of the Heaven realm. The reason why they so warmly reminded Chu Feng was likely because they discovered his extraordinary talent and wanted to befriend him.

“The matters of the Ancient Era are so distant. Who can tell which ones are true and which ones are fake?” Chu Feng lightly smiled. He was too lazy to pay attention to those people who wanted to take advantage of him, so he leaped away and headed deeper into the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

“Damn. We kindly remind him, yet he actually refuses those kind intentions. He’s too arrogant.” Seeing Chu Feng leave just like that without even caring about them, one of the males was very displeased.

“The arrogant have the capabilities to be arrogant. Whatever, don’t mumble and say bad things about him. People like him likely come from quite a decent power, or have an extraordinary master. If he hears you speak those words about him, we won’t be able to save you then.”

“That’s right. Don’t drag me down because you couldn’t keep your mouth shut.”

The man’s companions mocked him, making him very speechless and lose all his anger. His companions were indeed not wrong. There were all sorts of people in a place such as that. Judging by their cultivation, they were simply the pettiest existences. They would be looked down on no matter where they went, and they wouldn’t dare to offend anyone no matter who they met.

The Everlasting Sea of Blood was very large, and inside the sea region, there were no more Teleport Formations that would allow him to directly reach the center zone. If Chu Feng wanted to find Qiushui Fuyan at the place where the monster appears, he would have to reach that center zone.

On the road, Chu Feng roughly understood the structure of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. There were no islands within the sea, and even Ancient Teleport Formations were built in the sky.

The residences at that place was very special. They were all special formations made by powerful World Spiritists. Floating little islands were created, and vast palaces stood upon the little islands.

A mirror-like blood-coloured surface of the sea below and floating little

islands within the clouds above. It had to be said that it was quite a rare beautiful scene.

However, although cultivating within the Everlasting Sea of Blood was free, if one wished to live in the floating little islands, they had to pay. And, those who came there cultivate had to live in the floating little islands, or else they would be driven out.

As for why, it was naturally because the Everlasting Sea of Blood was already controlled; and as for who, it was formerly the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but currently the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

From that, it could be seen that after the Crippling Night Demon Sect split up and the Burning Heaven Church left, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was indeed like a sun in the middle of the sky, becoming the boss of the Eastern Sea Region. The archipelago's foundation in the Eastern Sea Region was unfathomably deep.

"This is truly lively. As expected of this holy land of cultivation. I'm sure if the monster weren't spreading havoc here, there would be more people coming here to cultivate."

After several hours of hurrying, Chu Feng finally arrived at the middle area of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. That place could be said to be the region where the special energy was the densest.

However, because of the recent appearances of the monster, the people who dared to cultivate at that place was cut by over half, but even so, when Chu Feng cast his gaze over, he could still see countless figures above the sea of blood. Looking over, there were at least several thousand people, and that was still only those who could enter Chu Feng's range of vision.

rumble rumble rumble rumble But just at that time, bursts of rumbling suddenly rang out. Several miles away From Chu Feng, the calm seawater was surging upwards, and berserk ripples were making that place chaotic.

"Ahh, the monster's come! Run!"

whoosh~~~~

Upon discovering such a change, many people escaped for their lives. Many people also rose into the sky without moving horizontally, observing in silence. However, Chu Feng leaped forward, and flew towards the area where the waves rose to the sky.

Chapter 609: Doll within the Ocean

In the most center point of the Everlasting Sea of Blood, calm blood-coloured seawater rose up, forming huge waves that reached dozens of feet tall. They were like fierce beasts as they made deafening roars and surged about.

But the ones who caused the sea to be like that wasn't any horrifying monster. It was two people. Two middle-aged men.

Of those two middle-aged men, one had a large and heavy build, a face full of facial hair, and even on his hand there was black hair. If one looked carefully, they would see a person; otherwise, he was simply a huge gorilla.

But even though that person had a very rough and wild appearance, his cultivation was not weak. The power emanated from his body was Martial power. The big man who only reached the middle-ages was a rank one Martial Lord.

Although the other person was also a middle-aged man, he took quite good care of himself. His complexion was very young, and on the surface, he was definitely an elegant fair-faced tidy man. There was a very sharp contrast when compared to that wild big man in terms of outer appearances.

Although he had a very gentle appearance, he was absolutely not weak. Similarly, he was a rank one Martial Lord, and currently, he and the big middle-aged man were undergoing an intense fight. The changes happening to that place was all because of them two.

Although their battle was very fiery and the outcome was indeterminate, if one looked carefully, it was not hard to figure out that they were not enemies. They seemed more like sparring.

It was because their clothes were the same. Behind their robes' back, three big words were imprinted clearly and dazzling: "Immortal Execution Archipelago"!

“It’s people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?!”

Chu Feng even thought that the monster appeared so he speedily flew over, but after arriving he discovered that it was a spar between two rank one Martial Lords. Especially as he discovered they were people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he couldn’t help frowning, a hint of displeasure emerging into his eyes.

That place was the centermost point in the region of the sea, also the place where the largest number of people cultivated at. When the two fought there, with the power they grasped, they could injure quite a few people from by the remnants of their fight.

But clearly, they didn’t care about that. It could be seen despite the Immortal Execution Archipelago were called as people of righteousness, in reality, their characters were nothing good. At least, the two in front of their eyes weren’t much good.

“The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago are indeed powerful. This might is something our Heaven realm cannot be compared to. It is truly so damn cool!” A blindly idolizing female near Chu Feng was staring with her heart popping out. As she looked at the two experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, she was drooling, had a flushed face, and praised greatly.

“Hmph. When the monster appears, how come we didn’t see them appear? Now that the monster is not here, they’re here showing off. As managers in this place, it’s ignorable that they don’t maintain order in this place, but now they are even stirring up havoc themselves! This truly makes one displeased.”

But compared to some other people’s blind admiration and praise, many people also expressed dissatisfaction. Behind Chu Feng, a male drenched in seawater was cursing. Looking at his rough appearance, he was clearly affected by the remnants of their spar, as the fight made waves crash upon him.

“Hmph!”

But just at that moment, the fair-faced man coldly snorted and cast his

gaze towards the male behind Chu Feng. He actually heard his curses.

But that wasn't even much. When he turned his head around, he willed. Martial power was then born from his thought, and came sweeping over.

boom rumble rumble

Before the Martial power even arrived, its pressure came first. The berserk pressure instantly caused the seawater below to explode, creating a high blood-coloured wall dozens of feet tall, and it pressed towards Chu Feng and the others.

"God damn. You truly can't take any comments. Can't I even say a few words about you?!" At that instant, the male cursed, but turned around and ran. Although the sea wave wasn't strong, the Martial power was not something he could resist against. If he got struck by it, he would be heavily injured if it were a light strike, but he would be dead if it were a heavy one.

"Crap, run!" At the same time, everyone in that direction hurriedly used their all their powers to escape for their lives towards the distance. Even the blindly-idolizing female was no exception. She put all she had to escape for her life as well.

The fair-faced man was not only attacking the male who insulted him, but everyone in that direction. If they didn't quickly escape, they would be affected along with him.

"Truly domineering. So these are the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?!"

Who was Chu Feng? Immediately, he saw through the fair-faced man's goal. He didn't really plan to kill that male, or else with his strength, at such a distance, he would have absolutely no chance to escape.

Currently, the fair-faced man was only asserting his dominance and intentionally frightening that male, but Chu Feng didn't too like the method of assertion, of which dragged others into it.

Although he was very displeased at the middle-aged man, Chu Feng didn't want to have too great of a conflict against the people from the

Immortal Execution Archipelago so soon. After all, it was too enormous of a power, absolutely not something he could fight against at present.

So, thinking to that point, Chu Feng couldn't help enduring the displeasure in his heart, turned around, and prepared to leave.

"Yiya, yiya~~~"

"So fun! Hahaha~~~"

"Oi, don't run! This is super fun~"

But just as Chu Feng turned around and prepared to leave, he suddenly heard, from the constantly nearing huge wave, the voice of a child. That's right, that voice definitely belonged to a child.

"Wait a minute." Feeling that something was wrong, Chu Feng hurriedly turned his head around and looked. He discovered, on the huge waves that could touch the skies stirred up by Martial power, there was truly a little doll.

It was a girl, and looking at her young appearance she was not over three years old. Currently, she was above the huge wave; however, she didn't have the slightest trace of fear. Instead, she seemed very cheerful and was actually riding the wave, endlessly giggling.

Although the little girl had quite some courage, after Chu Feng examined her, he discovered that she was an ordinary child without any cultivation.

For a little girl like her, not to mention the Martial power that was imminent behind the huge wave, even if the enormous waves slammed down upon her, she would be crushed.

At that instant, Chu Feng's heart was moved by sympathy. If it were a normal cultivator, he would definitely not put his nose into that matter, but for such a tiny life, he had to.

whoosh Thinking to that point, Chu Feng didn't hesitate and not only did he not choose to evade the huge wave, he instead flew towards the wave.

wuao Chu Feng used the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. His speed was extraordinarily fast, and finally, he lifted the little girl from the seawater before the huge wave slammed down.

But, just as he carried the little girl up, the closely-following Martial power came straight at him. Moreover, it even increased in speed, Chu Feng could no longer evade it.

“Look! Has that person gone mad? Not only did he not run, he even rushed towards the Martial power!”

“Wait, it’s to save that little girl!”

“Ahh, he’s truly a good person, but sadly, the lives of good people are short!”

The surging of the Martial power had caught everyone’s attention, and Chu Feng’s actions were also caught by their eyes. So, all of them shook their eyes and sighed, feeling that Chu Feng and the little girl were undoubtedly going to die.

Chapter 610: Fighting Against a Martial Lord

But, in that situation, Chu Feng didn't panic too much. Although Martial power was very strong, with his strength, he was not unable to fight against it.

Thinking to that point, Chu Feng's eyes flickered. As three lightning surged, the power of the three lighting was given to his body. Then, Chu Feng clenched a single hand, and threw out a punch.

With a huge explosion, waves sprayed everywhere and the ripples made the water bubble. The enormous wave that could touch the sky, in addition to the berserk Martial power, under the gazes of the crowd, were destroyed by Chu Feng's punch.

"Heavens! Did you see that? The boy actually destroyed the attack of a Martial Lord!"

"Powerful! No matter how much stronger his cultivation is, he's only in the Heaven realm! How could he fight against the Martial power of a Martial Lord? After all, Martial power and Heaven power are on two completely different levels!"

Chu Feng action undoubtedly gave rise to a commotion. Everyone who saw that widened their mouths, dropped their jaws, and their eyes were full of amazement.

"Yiya, yiya, big brother, you're so strong!"

Looking at the splashes that filled the sky endlessly brush past yet never touched her, as she was covered by a layer of purple-coloured light, the little girl also blinked her big eyes and exclaimed.

However, Chu Feng didn't have time to care about the girl in his embrace because he already felt two very unkind gazes locked onto him.

Raising his head and looking, past the blood-coloured waters that sprayed down like a storm, Chu Feng could see the two Immortal

Execution Archipelago experts who were fighting halt their spar and look at Chu Feng with very displeased gazes.

"Brother. There's no enmity between us, so why did you attack me for no reason?" asked the fair-faced man suddenly with a tone filled with resentment as he clasped his hands together. Clearly, Chu Feng breaking his attack made him furious.

"You are truly forcing your words here. Clearly, you aimed to harm the innocent, and now, you say that I attacked you? If it weren't to save this doll, I would even be too lazy to pay attention to people like you." Chu Feng did not back down. Instead, he directly pointed at that man's face and rebuked. That was Chu Feng's nature.

Facing people more nice and reasonable, no matter how much weaker their strength was, Chu Feng would be polite; however, facing displeased people, no matter how much stronger their strength was, Chu Feng would not give them any good face.

It was especially so for people who had no kind intentions from the beginning. Chu Feng would not act weak in front of them. After all, no matter what you did, they wouldn't forgive you. Rather than belittling yourself, why not pull out some spirit.

"What an arrogant brat, you dare to speak to me like this?! If I don't give you a lesson, you will truly not put my Immortal Execution Archipelago in your eyes."

And just at that moment, the wild big man directly attacked. He threw out a palm. The skies instantly changed colours, and all of the observers' faces became astonished because the wild man's palm was a lot more powerful than the casual one by the fair-faced man just now. From that, one could see that that was the true strength of a Martial Lord. The one from the fair-faced man just now was, truly, only for exhibiting his strength.

But even so, Chu Feng was still not afraid. Although Martial power was very strong, according to his analysis, he might not be defeated by his opponent with his current strength. So, Heaven power surged in his body,

then he similarly threw out a palm.

Although what came out was Heaven power, no matter if it was might or power, Chu Feng's palm was not the slightest bit weaker than the wild man's.

boom The two collided, instantly creating a frenzied ripple. The outcome was actually not determined, as they equally canceled out each other.

"Wow! Did you see that! The guy over there truly dispelled the powerful attack of a rank one Martial Lord with his cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm!"

"So powerful. It seems like the strike just now was not an arbitrary one. That boy truly has strength that can fight against a Martial Lord! Who exactly is he, which sect and what place is he from? A character like him shouldn't be completely unknown. Why have I never heard of his grand name before?!"

Seeing such an unbelievable scene with their own eyes, the surrounding people exclaimed endlessly. There were even some people who started to take guesses at Chu Feng's identity. They all felt that he was not a simple existence, and that he possibly had a huge background.

"You haughty boy! I kindly ask who you are, yet you attack me, ignoring my question. If I don't give you a lesson, you will truly not know how high the sky and how thick the earth is." The praises from the surrounding crowd made the two Martial Lords even more furious. The fair-faced man no longer watched from the side, and also joined in the battle.

boom rumble rumble When the fair-faced man attacked, he used a martial skill. It was even a rank seven martial skill.

Immediately when it appeared the skies changed colour. In the air, Martial power visible by the naked eye surged out, sprayed down, and was used by the martial skill, becoming an Army of Millions.

Although the Martial power created millions of soldiers, hence the power was very spread out, their individual strength still wasn't

something ordinary Heaven realm experts were on equal grounds with. Their strength possibly even surpassed Heaven realm experts. On average, every single soldier's strength was around the seventh level of the Heaven realm. Perhaps a single one of it wouldn't be much, but when it reached the tens of millions, it was extremely terrifying.

"What a terrifying martial skill. It's said that the true power of martial skills and Elite Armaments can only be exhibited in the hands of Martial Lords. It seems like those words are indeed not false."

It had to be said that the martial skill the fair-faced man used was too powerful. Other than Martial Lords, not a single of the observers could fight against that kind of martial skill.

"Hoh. Army of Millions? I would quite like to see if my Spirit Formation wall can stop this!"

Seeing the Army of Millions that was surging forward in the air, Chu Feng's will to fight was ignited. Before, when he was in the ninth level of the Profound realm, there was simply no one who could defeat him before the third level of the Heaven realm.

But now, he, who was already in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, actually felt pressure when facing rank one Martial Lords. That also really showed the strength of Martial Lords and the specialness of Martial power. But, the more it was like that, the more Chu Feng wanted to give it a try—could he, in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, resist against rank one Martial Lords?

"Haa!"

Suddenly, Chu Feng opened up his arms, then abruptly raised them. At the same time, he explosively yelled. Purple-coloured Spirit Formation power, like a dammed flood released, burst out of his body. In only a blink, it became a purple-coloured Spirit Formation wall that connected the sky and the earth.

boom boom boom boom boom boom

When the Spirit Formation wall was created, the Army of Millions had

already arrived with explosions. In that instant, ripples were made everywhere and the entire world swayed. The clear sky entered complete chaos.

Many observers couldn't help backing away, deeply afraid they would be dragged into that horrifying circle of battle.

However, when the trembling slowly subsided, when the ripples gradually dispersed, everyone discovered, astonished, that the Army of Millions had disappeared.

Though the Spirit Formation wall was also full of cracks and heavily damaged, it wasn't broken through. Chu Feng had truly, with his own Spirit Formation, blocked the horrifying rank seven martial skill from a rank one Martial Lord.

Chapter 611: Suppression

"He blocked it. He blocked it again! What a powerful Spirit Formation. He's already a Purple-cloak World Spiritist at this age, and his Spirit Formation technique has already reached this level of strength, where it's able to block an attack from a Martial Lord?"

"It is so unbelievable. It is truly the first time that I've seen such an existence that can fight against a Martial Lord on an equal level." At that instant, the surrounding crowd could no longer remain collected. If it were a fluke before, then now, they knew that Chu Feng truly had the strength to fight against a Martial Lord.

"Heaven realm fighting against a Martial Lord? Truly funny. Let me see if you can really resist us."

Having their attacks being blocked again and again, the big wild man and the fair-faced man were thoroughly enraged because Chu Feng's actions were truly making them, two rank one Martial Lords, feel like their faces were used to sweep the ground.

whoosh whoosh Their palms radiated with light, and two Mastered Elite Armament appeared in them each.

The wild big man wielded a three-meter long blade. It was very domineering.

The fair-faced man wielded a green-coloured whip, which exuded an extremely powerful aura.

It was said the reason why Elite Armaments were strong was because Martial power unique to Martial Lords was merged with them. So, when they were in the hands of Martial Lords, their power could be truly shown.

And the things happening in front of their eyes told the crowd that the rumours were indeed true. After the two of them took out their Mastered Elite Armaments, their auras truly strengthened by many times. Standing in the air, they were like two unstoppable battle gods, really having an

atmosphere akin to the descent of a lord.

"You've come at a great time. Let me experience what level the Elite Armaments brandished by Martial Lords reach!"

If it were a normal person, if they were in that situation, fear would definitely bloom in their hearts. But, not only was Chu Feng not afraid, instead, he was extremely excited. He clenched tightly, and after the flash of light, the black-coloured Asura Ghost Axe appeared in his hand.

swish swish swish At the same time, Chu Feng strode and used the martial skill, the Imperial Sky Technique, and dashed towards the two Martial Lords.

"You truly reach the extremities of arrogance. Today, I will give you a lesson."

Seeing Chu Feng, against their expectations, actually dashing towards them, the two Martial Lords gritted their teeth in anger. They also didn't waste their breaths, and respectively took their Mastered Elite Armaments in their hands and fought against Chu Feng.

dong dong dong dong

boom boom boom boom

The three Mastered Elite Armaments were waved around in the air. Every single swing created enormous might; every single collision made deafening explosions.

As the three fought against one another, even the sky cracked, and even the air split. The skies where the three of them fought went into chaos with no end to the darkness. Only the area where the three of them were flashed with light and had extraordinary might. Chu Feng truly fought against two rank one Martial Lords with his own power.

"Heavens! He is actually fighting evenly against two Martial Lords! If it's already like this when fighting against two, if he fights against one, wouldn't he be able to defeat a Martial Lord?" Their circle of battle shocked the heavens and earth, and attracted countless people forward to observe. Those who saw that scene were deeply dumbfounded.

“Haha, so these are the extents of rank one Martial Lords.” Chu Feng fought more and more valiantly, and the general atmosphere at that moment looked like he was going to suppress them.

Looking at their very unsightly faces, Chu Feng determined that they had no more cards to play. If the current situation continued, in less than six hours, Chu Feng would defeat them. If Chu Feng broke past using the Elite Armament and used his Secret Skills, he could, right now, defeat the two of them.

“Who is it that dares to stir up trouble in my Immortal Execution Archipelago’s territory?!” But just at that moment, a loud and clear voice rang out, and boundless and powerful aura also descended from the sky.

“Crap.” At that instant, even Chu Feng’s face changed greatly. He hurriedly dashed and retreated backwards.

Only then did he discover a white-haired old man flying towards their circle of battle. That person also wore the special clothing of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and moreover, his aura belonged to a rank three Martial Lord.

“So it’s a brat. Although I don’t know where your master came from, there is no one in the Eastern Sea Region who dares to act so wildly in my Immortal Execution Archipelago’s territory. Right now, I’ll give a lesson to an ignorant boy like you in place of your master.”

After the old man appeared, he didn’t wait for any objections and immediately attacked Chu Feng. As he stuck out his palm, Chu Feng could truly feel boundless suction power surging in his surroundings, all of which headed towards the old man.

At the same time, the big wild man and the fair-faced man also waved the Elite Armaments in their hands, aggressively slashing their way towards Chu Feng.

Chu Feng knew he could definitely not defeat the old man, so he didn’t dare to hesitate and hurriedly used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, the supreme Secret Skill.

wuao

When the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique appeared, a dragon's roar immediately rang out. Then, it became a strand of light, and with speed uncapturable by the naked eye, he escaped to the distance.

"He runs away quite fast. If he were just a bit slower, I would have definitely sliced him into two." Looking in the direction Chu Feng escape towards, the wild man new he couldn't catch up. So, after spewing a big mouth of spittle, he very furiously howled.

"Shut up! We came here to catch the monster, not for you two to lose face. Your actions just now already had serious effects. Do you know what image outsiders have of the Immortal Execution Archipelago?!" The old man furiously rebuked.

"Elder, we just want to let the people here see the power of the Immortal Execution Archipelago! Who would have thought that some bastard would interrupt halfway?" explained the fair-faced man.

"See your power? From my eyes, it's more like see your embarrassment.

"Two rank one Martial Lords were actually suppressed by a brat in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. Do you still have any face to justify that?!" Mentioning that matter, the old man became even more furious.

"I, we..." As for the two of them, they couldn't put out any words, lost on how to defend themselves.

Being restrained by Chu Feng was a fact. Perhaps outsiders couldn't tell, but they knew that in the situation just now, they couldn't hide who had the advantage and who had the disadvantage from the elder.

"Listen. Lady Yafei was passing by here, and heard that a monster appeared. She is currently rushing over. After she arrives here and before she leaves, you two better not stir up any trouble for me, or else, I won't save you two at that time," warned the old man.

"Lady Yafei?" Hearing that name, emotions of yearning and excitement emerged onto their faces, then they nodded at the same time and guaranteed, "Elder, we will listen to your arrangements."

“Then obediently go down the sea and investigate. See if you can find any traces of that monster. If the monster can be caught before Lady Yafei arrives, that will be a great achievement,” ordered the old man.

“Yes sir!” Hearing that, the two did not dally any longer and with a leap, they became two rainbows and flew downwards. With two bangs and as sprayed splattered everywhere, the two had dashed into the sea of blood.

“Where exactly did that boy come from? To be able to fight against Martial Lords with that cultivation isn’t something that ordinary people can do.” And at that instant, the old man, the rank three Martial Lord, cast his gaze towards the direction Chu Feng departed at. He lightly knitted his brows, his gaze glittered, and he pondered.

Chapter 612: Little Fishy

"That was close, I didn't expect the Immortal Execution Archipelago to station so many Martial Lords in a place like this. It seems like they truly have quite the foundation. They are really not simple." Seeing that the rank three Martial Lord old man didn't chase after him, Chu Feng didn't head out too far and landed atop the sea surface.

"Yiyayiya, big brother, you're so strong! Just now, you flew so fast I couldn't even see the things around me!" Just at that moment, a voice as pleasant to hear as silver bells rang out in Chu Feng's embrace.

Lowering his head to look, the little girl he saved was currently hugging him tightly and watching him with her clear big eyes.

"Call me uncle, not big brother." Chu Feng willed, creating a layer of Spirit Formation on the surface of the sea, then put the little girl on it.

"No, no, big brother, you're so young! How can I call you uncle?" said the little girl very innocently as she blinked her spirited eyes.

Only then did Chu Feng discover that the little girl had quite a beautiful appearance. Her long brows, her skin as clear as jade, her mouth as small and delicate as a cherry, and also her innate curvy long hair. She was simply as cute as a doll.

But, her clothing was a bit revealing. She was almost completely bare, and only had a pink undergarment tied in front of her chest, covering her female's private areas. She didn't even have any shoes, and was barefooted.

But looking carefully, Chu Feng discovered on the girl's undergarment, there was a pattern imprinted. The pattern was very special—it seemed like a fish, yet it had wings. Regardless, it was very peculiar.

"Okay, I'll listen to you. Little sister, can you tell your big brother what your parents are called?"

After seriously examining her, Chu Feng found out that he quite liked the little girl, so he couldn't help asking a bit more deeply and wanted to

send her back to her parents. After all, at present, such a cute little girl was lost, so her parents were definitely very worried.

"Parents? Big brother, what are parents? Are they edible?" The little girl squinted her eyes, forming two curved crescent moons. She smiled very sweetly, and her completely innocent appearance made it look like as though everything she said came from her heart.

"Little sister, don't tell me you don't have parents?" Looking at the little girl's appearance, it made Chu Feng feel that she very possibly really didn't know what parents were.

"I don't have any parents. Big brother, do you have any? Can you give them to me for eating?" asked the little girl curiously.

"Ehh... About that... Parents are not for eating. Parents are people who give birth to you and raise you. Little sister, do you truly have no parents?" asked Chu Feng.

"I don't. I don't know who gave birth to me and raised me," she replied.

Hearing those words, Chu Feng lightly frowned, then asked, "Then, little sister, who brought you to this place?"

"No one brought me here. I swam here myself," she said.

"What? You swam here yourself?" Hearing those words involuntarily made Chu Feng a bit suspicious. He first thought was that he felt she was lying.

The Everlasting Sea of Blood was too vast. Let alone the little girl, even if cultivators under the Profound realm wished to come to the center of the sea, it was something impossible.

"Big brother, you don't believe me? You don't believe that I swam here myself?" The little girl blinked her big eyes, actually seeing his doubts.

whoosh

Then, just as she spoke, she turned around and suddenly leaped. Her tiny body was like a dragon as she jumped into the sea with an extremely perfect curve.

At first, Chu Feng was even a bit worried, but after seeing her jump into the water, didn't sink, and instead swam within the sea with an extremely quick speed, which was so fast that it even tied Chu Feng's tongue in a knot. Even those in the Profound realm might not be able to achieve such a rate of speed, yet such an ordinary little girl did.

Furthermore, the little girl got faster and faster in the water, and even surpassed some Heaven realm cultivators' speed while they were using bodily martial skills. It was simply so inconceivably fast.

hmm Feeling the little girl's abnormality, Chu Feng faintly waved his sleeve, fishing up the little girl from the sea and made her float in the air.

"Yiyayiya, I can fly, I can fly! Big brother, look! I can fly!" As the little girl was in mid-air, she still maintained her relaxed swimming form, and played quite elatedly.

But when Chu Feng used Spirit power to examine the little girl's body, something that made him quite surprised was that the girl clearly had aberrant abilities, yet Chu Feng could not detect any abnormalities.

And exactly because of that, Chu Feng determined that the little girl's origin was definitely not simple, because the better she concealed her strength, the more it spoke of her power. It was like Chu Feng's Divine Lightning. No matter how much stronger a person was, they would only find out some unusualness and could not detect the Divine Lightning in his dantian.

"Little lady, what's your name?" asked Chu Feng again.

"I'm called Little Fishy," said the little girl proudly as she stuck out her chest.

"Little Fishy? Who gave you that name?" asked Chu Feng immediately after. He wanted to "find the melons by going along the vines" and locate where the little girl came from.

"Ahh, who gave me my name? I forgot!" said the little girl very certainly.

Afterwards, Chu Feng asked her many questions, but could not obtain any answers. Finally, other than knowing the little girl was called Little

Fishy, he could unearth nothing else.

As he could do naught, Chu Feng started to carry the little girl and go around everywhere, inquiring. But, he found a shocking answer. There was truly no one who looked after the little girl, and no one knew who her family was.

The little girl actually didn't rely on the assistance of others to have lived up until now. She relied on herself—it was she who caught the fishes in the sea for eating and lived up until now. The little girl really ate raw fish and drank seawater until now.

In reality, the little girl's specialness had already attracted quite a few people's attention. Some people even wanted to secretly kidnap the little girl away and bring her back to develop.

But because her speed in the water was really too fast. there was actually no one who could catch up to her. So, up until now, no one could personally approach the little girl. It could be said that Chu Feng was the first person to walk so near to her.

When some people saw Chu Feng carry the little girl, and their chatting and smiling appearances, they really admired him. Especially women who were born extraordinarily. They even fought over to carry the little girl.

After all, she was so beautiful, so cute, even if she couldn't be developed, it would still be very nice to bring her back just to raise her. But it was useless as the girl was quite stubborn. Other than Chu Feng, she simply didn't allow anyone else to come near.

Really, if the little girl hadn't already appeared in the Everlasting Sea of Blood for over half a year, it was likely that many people would see her as the horrifying monster that caught people to cultivate. In reality, even now there were still quite a few people who felt that the little girl possibly was the monster.

Chapter 613: Monster

“Little Fishy, why do you like eating raw fish? Let me roast them. Cooked fish smells much better!” Chu Feng asked curiously when he saw Little Fishy, who was sitting next to him, handling a raw fish in a very orderly manner.

“Not yummy not yummy.” But after hearing Chu Feng’s question, Little Fishy hurriedly shook her head, then raised the cleaned raw fish in her hand and said, “This is yummy.”

ah-nom

After speaking, she opened her mouth, and started to eat while sounds of her lips smacking together were made. At that instant, Chu Feng found out that despite watching her eat raw fish, he did not feel any viciousness nor disgustingness. Rather, he even felt that she was very cute, and it even made some people envy her because she really ate in such an enticing way.

However, at that instant, a question was born in his heart. Little Fishy liked to eat raw foods, and could also survive by drinking seawater. Could she truly be related to the monster that recently came to stir up chaos in the Everlasting Sea of Blood?

ge ge ge ge ge...

But just at that moment, from the centermost area in the Everlasting Sea of Blood came a sound very special and strange. That sound seemed to be the creaking of a wooden bed swaying to and fro, but also seemed like the low roar of a certain organism. In any case, on first listen, one wouldn’t feel anything; but, if they listened carefully, their hairs would stand on end, and they would feel very uncomfortable.

“Yiya, yiya, the big monster’s come again! It’s going to catch people to eat again!

“Big brother, let’s go see the big monster eat people!” Hearing that sound, Little Fishy shouted excitedly. She even stopped eating the raw fish

in her hands.

"Little Fishy, what did you say? You said that this noise is made by that monster?" Chu Feng was surprised upon hearing those words.

"Huh? Monster? It's a monster, a monster that eats people! Every time it appears, it makes that sound, then many people afterwards get caught by it."

Little Fishy blinked and spoke with a giggle. To her, it seemed like people being eaten wasn't anything scary. Rather, it was like something very amusing.

"Little Fishy, stay here and wait for me. Don't leave, and especially, do not go towards where the monster is. Got it?" Chu Feng said seriously to Little Fishy as he stood up.

"Yiyayiya, mm~~" The initially happy face that Little Fishy had was instantly replaced by a hint of downcastness after she heard Chu Feng's words. But, she didn't say anything more. She bent her small legs and sat cross-legged on the Spirit Formation Chu Feng made, then after resentfully glaring at Chu Feng, she opened up her mouth and continued eating the raw fish.

Although Little Fishy had a very rebellious appearance, her actions told Chu Feng that she chose to listen to him and obediently stay behind.

"Good." Seeing her so compliant, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then leaped and quickly rushed towards the center of the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

The reason why Chu Feng came to that place wasn't to use the seawater of the Everlasting Sea of Blood for cultivation, because to Chu Feng, a cultivation resource of that level was simply not useful.

The reason why he came there was to find Qiushui Fuyan, and she came there to capture the monster. So, it was naturally easier to find her in the place where the monster appeared.

Flying quickly, Chu Feng soon returned to the center of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. However, before he even saw the monster, Chu Feng was dumbstruck by the scene at that place.

On the surface of the sea where he fought against the fair-faced and wild man before, a hurricane that pierced the skies appeared. There was also a whirlpool in the regions that the hurricane was at, and the area it covered was extremely enormous.

No one could escape in the places it covered. Chu Feng saw, with his own eyes, countless people engulfed by the hurricane and ultimately taken into the super-large whirlpool in the sea.

Even within the many figures that endlessly cried out in misery, Chu Feng saw three familiar people. They were the fair-faced man and the wild big man who exchanged blows with Chu Feng earlier. Even the rank three Martial Lord was there.

Facing the horrifying hurricane, the rank three Martial Lord old man even attempted to resist it, but it was useless as even he had not the slightest bit of power to fight against it. Like the crowd, he was swept into the hurricane and whirlpool.

“So powerful. Is this the monster that has been oppressing this place? What state has its power reached?!” Chu Feng stood in the air and was quite frightened. He, who was fearless, also didn’t dare to approach it.

The hurricane’s power was too terrifying, making Chu Feng feel that not only him, even those under the level of rank five Martial Lords had no strength to fight against the hurricane. As long as they neared, they would be easily pulled in.

“The monster has already appeared, so why hasn’t Qiushui Fuyan showed up yet? Logically, she should have arrived here before me.” Chu Feng’s gaze was not only focused on the hurricane. Even more, it was focused on the groups of people. He was searching for Qiushui Fuyan.

boom Suddenly, while Chu Feng was carefully observing, the hurricane, which had already covered everything within the circumference of ten million meters1, rapidly expanded. With unbelievable speed, it swept over everything.

“Crap.” At that instant, Chu Feng was greatly alarmed. Without even thinking he turned around and left, because he didn’t want to become the

horrifying monster's cultivation resource.

"Ahhhh~" However, the hurricane's speed was too quick. So quick that it far surpassed Chu Feng's imagination, and in almost the instant Chu Feng turned his head around, a huge wave that could touch the skies slammed down. At that moment, Chu Feng felt his mind daze before he completely lost consciousness and entered a coma.

After some unknown length of time, Chu Feng gradually recovered his awareness, and when he opened his weighty eyes and his line of sight restored, even he couldn't help inhaling a breath of air.

At that very instant, he was actually on the bottom of the ocean. The seawater at that place was already drawn out. It was a clearing shrouded by seawater.

In that clearing, there were several thousand people. All of them were cultivators; the ones with the weakest strength were still in the Heaven realm, and there were even three Martial Lords. Naturally, those three were the three from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Everyone's hands and feet were bound by special water grasses. Most were unconscious, and of the very few people who were awake, all of them had faces full of panic and fear. Some started to call out loudly for help, and some even sobbed from terror.

They sobbed from terror because underneath their feet, it wasn't simply broken rocks or dirt. It was bones. Bones of innumerable cultivators, and looking at the brightness composition of the bones, they could tell that when those people were alive, their cultivations were not weak, as well as the fact that they had just recently died.

And after Chu Feng examined them with his Spirit power, he also discovered that the Source Energy in the bones was already gone, all of them absorbed and refined by someone.

"Dammit, even my power's gone." At that instant, Chu Feng wanted to get rid of the water grasses that bound himself, but discovered that he lacked even the power to struggle.

Looking around him, Chu Feng knew that it was not only him. Everyone there likely also had their power seized away. After looked carefully, Chu Feng realized something. It wasn't that they lost their cultivation, it was that the area was special. The region shrouded by seawater was actually a formation, and it was the formation that took away their cultivation.

At that moment, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed. If they lacked even the power to free themselves from water grasses, didn't it mean they were like fish on the cutting board—they could do nothing but allow the monster to slice them up?

ge ge ge ge ge ge However, as he was worrying, the petrifying sound came from a distance, and, it was getting closer and closer.

*

1. For those curious, a circle with the circumference of ten million meters has a radius of roughly 1600 km.

Chapter 614: Combining Powers and Escaping

"AHH!"

When the strange sound appeared again, the fearful screams from the crowd instantly became many times louder.

The shrilling shrieks and sobbing woke up those who were unconscious. At that instant, at that place, an eerie, strange, and horrifying atmosphere thoroughly occupied that place.

But just as everyone struggled with all they had, or as they screamed, Chu Feng tightly locked his gaze in the direction the strange sound came from.

Finally, in the pitch-black corner, a figure emerged into his line of sight. It was an existence with two meters of height as well as water grasses all over its body.

One could simply not see its appearance clearly. They could only make out a pair of blood-red eyes, and though in terms of external appearance, the monster that made everyone endlessly fearful was not even as terrifying as some Monstrous or Fierce Beasts, the aura it emanated paralyzed all of them. A rank five Martial Lord. The brutally powerful monster was a rank five Martial Lord.

It slowly walked, as if it quite enjoyed everyone's screams and terrors. It only stopped after it came up to a middle-aged man, casting its deathly-cold gaze at him.

hmm

And when it cast its gaze towards the man, his surroundings immediately exuded a faint aura of light. Quickly afterwards, he gradually floated up, and drifted up to the monster.

"Don't kill me, don't kill me! I have parents, a wife, and a son I need to care! My entire family relies on me! I cannot die, I cannot die! Please,

grant some benevolence and have mercy!" The man was terrified as he endlessly begged.

aoo~~~~

But not only did the monster ignore him, it even made an ear-piercing howl. Then, absorption power visible by the naked eye wafted about in the air, surrounding the man.

"Ahh~~~"

After being wrapped around by the absorption power the man instantly made a ghost-like shriek that was also akin to a pig being slaughtered. Coincident with that, everyone's faces contorted into fright when they saw that scene. Even Chu Feng couldn't lightly frown, drips of cold sweat emerging onto his forehead.

They acted like so because the power was absorbing the man's everything. From out to in, it first stripped away his skin, then took away his muscles, then refined his meridians, and only after a set of bones was all that remained for the man did the absorption power finally disappear. But, the man had already thoroughly lost any signs of life. Not even any Source Energy was left behind.

Although the refining process was extremely quick, the man, without a doubt, endured indescribable agony. He died very miserably—so miserable that even cultivators who experienced many bloody battles paled from terror. Some even fainted away from the grisly sight.

"Ahh~~~"

However, that was merely the beginning. Just as the man's bones were thrown to the ground, a woman next to the man was lifted by the monster and it also started to refine her.

At the end, like the man before, she was absorbed and refined in an instant, leaving only a set of bones.

"Ahh~~~~"

Quickly after, another person was taken away by the monster and

refined. In a very short period of time, there were already dozens of people absorbed and refined, dying miserably by its hands.

"We're done, we're done! We are dead, we are all dead! We will all be refined alive by it!"

At that instant, many people's minds were near collapse. They finally learnt of the monster's cruel methods—first skinned, then their flesh was shaved away, then finally, their Source Energy was consumed. It was simply one of the most atrocious torments possible, as if it had great enmity towards humans; it intentionally made the person being refined suffer incomparable pain as it refined them.

"No, no, no! I cannot let it refine me! I cannot die just like this! Even I die, I do not want it to refine me!"

Some people's minds even collapsed to the point that they lost all intents to fight and chose to suicide. But it was useless as they already lost their power, and they didn't even have a chance to suicide. They could only await their slaughtering from the monster.

"Oi, that boy over there. If you don't want to die, come here secretly. I have a way to save your life."

But just at that moment, a mental message suddenly entered Chu Feng's ears. Looking over, it was the Immortal Execution Archipelago's old man with the strength of a rank three Martial Lord.

Moreover, it was not only him. Unknowingly, the wild big man and the fair-faced man also got close to the old man.

Seeing he could send him a mental message, Chu Feng also knew that despite their powers being deprived, the ability to send mental messages was still there. So, Chu Feng quickly replied, "What method do you have? There's no harm in saying it first."

"Boy, you should be a World Spiritist right? Just reply yes, or no. If yes, then I can save you," asked the old man very straightforwardly.

"Yes." Chu Feng nodded.

“Then get the hell over here. Any slower, we will die,” said the old man. Then, he turned his gaze and cast it towards a nearby black-haired old man. His age should have already passed a hundred, and he had the cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm. In addition, he was wearing a World Spirit Blue Cloak.

With a glance, Chu Feng could tell that the rank three Martial Lord of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was sending a mental message to the Blue-cloak World Spiritist. Although he didn’t know what tricks he was playing, he likely had a certain method to save them, and only World Spiritists could help him.

Furthermore, the current circumstances were perilous. Chu Feng didn’t think too much, and silently shifted his body, gradually coming near the three people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Simultaneously, there were a few more people who came close in a concealed manner. Without even thinking, Chu Feng knew they were all World Spiritists, and had very powerful Spirit power.

“Watch closely. I have here a treasure. It can break open this formation, but it requires channeling of strong Spirit power. Right now, we are time-pressed. Although that monster is cripplingly refining everybody one by one, judging by its strength, even if it does refine them one by one, it will have no problem cleaning us up within two hours. So, we must be quick. Don’t think too much about this; use your Spirit power and cast it into my treasure. If we don’t make the best of this time, we will all die.”

As the rank three Martial Lord spoke, he took out a little awl. The little awl seemed ordinary, but it was full of symbols. Chu Feng could tell that it was indeed a treasure, but its power could only be used after some accumulation of power. At present, no one had any power, so it seemed like Spirit power was the only thing that could be used. That was why the old man called only them there.

Speaking honestly, Chu Feng did not trust the three people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but seeing that those who were called to that place had already started to channel their Spirit power into the

awl, it wasn't too good for Chu Feng to just do nothing on the side. After all, regardless of it being true or false, that could really be said to be the only chance to save them at that moment.

Chapter 615: Familiar Person?

In a deep place like that, it was simply like a purgatory in the human realm. To normal people, personally seeing cultivators cruelly refined by the monster one after another was truly a type of torture by itself.

In a situation like that, perhaps death was a release so they wouldn't have to see such cruel refining and would have to hear the agonizing screeches. Hence, to them, the passing of time was really too slow.

But, to people such as Chu Feng who still had a smidgen of hope that escape was possible, they felt like time passed too quickly because only an hour had passed, yet most people were already refined by the monster out of the several thousands of people.

Even though they already moved locations furtively, to the safest area, if that continue, they would soon catch the eyes of the monster, and at that time, they would not avoid their fate of being refined.

"Ahh~~~"

Cries of pain rose up and down, continuing endlessly. But, at present, Chu Feng and the others no longer had time to think of the lives of others because after the conclusion of another scream, after a set of bones was thrown onto the ground, the monster finally locked its gaze onto their position.

"Crap, it has discovered us! Quickly use your treasure or else we will die!"

At that moment, they panicked. They subconsciously crawled back, deeply afraid they would become the monster's next target of refining.

"Bastard, shut up!" But just at that time, a powerful leg ferociously kicked the buttocks of the person who shouted out, casting him to the front of the crowd.

The one who kicked was a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the rank three Martial Lord old man.

"You, you, you..." Seeing himself betrayed, the person who was kicked

gnashed his teeth in anger, but before he could say anything more, the monster made him float in the air, and started its inhumane refining.

But that was only the start. After he was kicked out, the three from the Immortal Execution Archipelago actually, with their superior Martial Lord bodies, started to forcibly kick away the World Spiritists, one following the other, who channeled Spirit power for them.

“What are you doing? They helped you just now, yet you treat them like this? Are you even human?!” Chu Feng could not endure such behavior and rebuked.

“Brat, listen up. At a time like this, it is a must to perform some necessary sacrifices.

“Of the people here, other than me, only your Spirit power is the strongest. So, that’s why I kept you behind. You better obediently continue channeling your Spirit power or else the next one to be kicked out will be you,” said the old man from the Immortal Execution Archipelago fiercely.

“Spirit power? The two trash next to you don’t have any Spirit power. Why don’t you kick them out? And make them sacrifices?” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the wild big man and the fair-faced man. Although their cultivations were not bad, they were indeed not World Spiritists and had no Spirit power.

“Shut up! If you want to die, I can grant you that wish right now!” The old man was enraged. He pointed at Chu Feng and loudly howled.

“Screw that! You want me to be your stepping stone? You can dream less! If you don’t want us to live, you better not think of living either. If you want us to die, we all die together!” Chu Feng was also enraged. He suddenly stood up and howled at the old man furiously as he pointed at him.

“That’s right! We won’t be your stepping stones! If you want us to die, we all die together!”

“Damn Immortal Execution Archipelago! Righteous and benevolent on the surface, but it turns out that they are actually this despicable! Even if

I die, I will drag you down with me!”

At the same time, everyone saw through their plans and started to loudly rebuke. They wanted to let the monster hear that the three people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were scheming.

“God damn, you are all truly looking to die!” Seeing the unfolding events, the wild big man and the fair-faced man from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were enraged too. They actually, with their physical power, rent the water grasses that tied their hands and feet, then with several large strides, went up to Chu Feng and the others, grabbed them, and threw them next to the monster.

“Lord Monster, Lord Monster, those three animals from the Immortal Execution Archipelago are hiddenly plotting, aiming to harm you! Quickly stop th—Ahh~~~~”

Arriving next to the monster, seeing that their end was nigh, those who helped the three from Immortal Execution Archipelago gather Spirit power started to report their actions to the monster.

However, it was useless as the monster seemed to simply be unable to understand human speech. It actually ignored their words and started to refine those people first.

“Damn it.” At that instant, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. Although he could stand up, he didn’t have a Martial Lord’s physical power, so he was unable to forcefully tear open the water grasses. So, at that instant, he had already become the meal of the monster.

Especially when he turned his gaze back and saw their expressions of schadenfreude, that made him extremely displeased. But, who told the monster to be unable to understand human speech? In that situation, he could do nothing as well. His fate was left to the heavens.

“Ahh~~~”

Finally, another painful scream, another person refined. Within the vast space at the bottom of the ocean, only the monster, Chu Feng, and the three others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were left.

“Come at me idiotic thing! Let me see if you can take my bones and flesh!”

Feeling his body floating up and involuntarily nearing the monster, Chu Feng did not have a single trace of fear. Instead, he furiously howled at the monster.

hmm

However, when the monster saw Chu Feng’s face, its blood-red eyes actually lightly flickered. At that instant, Chu Feng could feel its body faintly quivering once.

Looking more carefully, Chu Feng even discovered fear surging within the monster’s blood-red eyes. Moreover, he also felt a near intangible familiar feeling from the monster’s eyes.

“Who are you?” That situation made a thought spring up in Chu Feng’s mind—the terrifying monster in front of his eyes was very possibly someone he knew.

bam But what Chu Feng didn’t expect was that despite not replying to his question, the monster threw Chu Feng, who was already floating, onto the ground. Then, it turned its gaze and walked towards the three people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“God damn, what is happening? Why is it walking towards us? Why didn’t it refine that brat?”

Seeing that scene, the wild big man and the fair-faced man were stupefied from fear because they could simply not understand why the monster didn’t kill Chu Feng, and instead, locked its eyes on them.

“Back.” Just at that moment, the rank three Martial Lord old man explosively yelled, then he walked in front of the wild big man and the fair-faced man. Concurrently, he opened his palms, the awl coming into view.

However, at that very instant, the symbols on the awl were lit up and swirling. It had an extraordinary atmosphere, and emanated extremely horrifying aura. He actually never planned to use that treasure and escape

that place. He wanted to use that treasure to undergo the final battle against the monster.

Chapter 616: Cruelty Is a Must

"Monster, die!" Suddenly, the old man fierily yelled out, then the awl treasure left his hand.

The awl, initially as big as a palm, after leaving his hand, immediately became several meters in size. It gave off dazzling golden light, and with extremely powerful might and with encircling, powerful symbols, it was fiercely shot towards the monster.

"Crap!"

At that instant, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed because with his sharp Spirit power, he was able to instantly determine that the awl wasn't a normal treasure but a special weapon made by a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

That weapon could be used only once, but its power was extremely frightening. In particular, the one that the old man had was not simple at all.

If it were before, perhaps Chu Feng would hope the old man could succeed. After all, as long as he could kill the monster, Chu Feng himself would also have a chance to escape. But now, it was the exact opposite.

He discovered that the monster seemed quite familiar, and was very possibly someone he knew. Or else, the monster wouldn't have let him go alive and instead, deal with the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

But now, only if nothing happened to the monster did Chu Feng have a chance to continue surviving. Otherwise, if something were to happen to the monster and the old man survived instead, then Chu Feng would undoubtedly die.

However, quite unexpectedly, as the monster faced such a horrifying Spirit Formation weapon, it didn't dodge nor did it defend itself. It just bluntly walked towards the Spirit Formation weapon, using its physical body to stop it.

boom Finally, the weapon crashed into the body of the monster, but it

only made a deafening explosion for a single moment. Although it did indeed create horrifying ripples, before those ripples even dispersed, they were absorbed by the monster.

That's right. The terrifying attack made by the Spirit Formation weapon was indeed absorbed by the monster. The weapon that the old man meticulously prepared was actually akin to an egg striking a rock—it could not damage the monster in the slightest.

"How can this be." Seeing that, even the old man himself was stupefied from fright. According to his understanding, the Spirit Formation weaponry had a possibility to heavily injure even rank five Martial Lords. The situation was something that shouldn't happen.

Unless... unless one's power truly reached an irrepressible state!

"Elder, what do we do? Even that weapon couldn't do anything!"

At the same time, the wild big man and the fair-faced man were completely terrified. That awl was their last chance, and now, that chance was destroyed. They really did have a feeling of despair, of having no more roads to walk.

"What else can we do? We can only wait to die." The old man coldly snorted, then a hint of fierceness flashed into his eyes. As he spoke, he grabbed both the wild man and the fair-faced man, and actually threw the two young ones, who were on the same side as him, in front of the monster.

hmm And just the two of them were tossed next to the monster, they were lifted up by the monster's unique power. It was the starting point of its refining rhythm.

"Milord, may I ask where you came from? But please, don't kill me! I am willing to follow you. Be it becoming a cow, horse, pig, dog... I have no problems. I will not say any grudgeful words, so please, milord, have mercy on me!"

"Have mercy, have mercy! Please don't kill me! I am willing to be your most loyal servant; I can search even more cultivation resources for you; I

can bait stronger cultivators and provide them to you for refining! Please don't kill me!"

The wild big man and the fair-faced man were completely terrified. They, who were cowards to death, started to shamelessly plead. Especially the fair-faced man—he even suggested that he would provide cultivation resources for the monster. They were inferior to even pigs and dogs. Animals.

"Ahh~~~"

However, the monster was not moved in the slightest by their imploration. Two heart-wrenching screams rang out, and the two started to suffer the cruelest torment.

Cruel. It was truly cruel. Although they were also enduring the pain of being refined, and the process of being refined was the exact same as other people, the time they spent in that condition was extremely long.

Indeed. The monster had the intent to torture them. It actually slowed the tormenting speed and at such a distance, Chu Feng could clearly see their skins becoming split, accompanied by streams of fresh red blood surging into the monster's body, getting absorbed and refined by it.

After fracturing their skin, next came flesh, bones, and inner organs. Before those even finished being refined though, the two of them remained alive. It could be seen how much agony they felt.

After a lengthy process of tormenting, only two sets of bones remained; but this time, the monster didn't do the same as before. It didn't just throw them to the side. It actually shattered their bones, then engulfed them.

The way it dealt with them did not just include the stretching of time. It also included the increase of tormenting strength, and it even consumed their bones. Truly not even any remnants remained.

"Haha, Chu Feng, look! This monster's method of doing things is very similar to yours! Fierce enough and cruel enough. I like it." At that instant, Eggy actually cheered happily with an anger-venting face.

“What? Am I normally that cruel?” asked Chu Feng after he heard those words, along with an innocent face.

“You? You’re a lot crueler than that thing. When you become enraged, you simply stop being human! Haha, but, I like exactly that. To be human is to be fierce. Particularly so when facing an enemy. Not only do you need to be cold-blooded and heartless, you must be insane and fierce. Only then could it make their hearts tremble upon hearing your name and lose all courage to fight against you,” said Eggy gigglingly.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt that he couldn’t really say anything back. It wasn’t like he was an idiot, so naturally, he knew what kind of person he was upon becoming mad. But, he had never regretted, and instead, felt that Eggy was very correct. Facing enemies, he had to be fierce and merciless, and become a demon without any traces of humanity.

So, after he saw, with his own eyes, the monster refining the wild big man and the fair-faced man with extremely cruel methods, not only did he not feel bad, he even felt refreshed because those two were his enemies.

No, not only those two, there was also the rank three Martial Lord.

“You’re, you’re, you’re with that thing! You’re, you’re, you’re with that monster!”

In comparison to Chu Feng’s calm countenance and his inside screaming refreshing!, the elder from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had a face as pale as paper. His body was endlessly trembling as well.

As he backed away, he pointed at Chu Feng. He already had a guess in his heart regarding the monster’s abnormal action—the brat, who was not simple at all, was on the same side as the monster. He, instead, was the one who was like a sheep entering a tiger’s mouth.

“Ahh~~`”

The monster didn’t give the old man too many chances to breathe. It willed, then the old man, like the wild big man and fair-faced man before,

started to receive a heartless torture.

However, compared to those two, the torment he endured was actually even more wretched, but to Chu Feng, the old man definitely got what he deserved.

Chapter 617: Who Exactly Is It

swish However, after the monster turned around, it only glimpsed at Chu Feng before it blurred, then disappeared.

And at that instant, Chu Feng also discovered astonishedly that his disappeared power started to return. Raising his head and looking, he found out that an entrance appeared in the sealed formation. The monster truly let Chu Feng go.

“Why is this feeling so familiar? Who exactly are you?” Chu Feng pondered a while, but ultimately, he was unable to recall when he had got to know an existence like that. So, the only thing he could do was to quickly leave that extremely troublesome place.

Chu Feng intentionally swam at the bottom of the ocean for a very long while before he dared to return to the surface. The reason he did that was to rid himself of all connections, avoiding letting others discover that he escaped from the hands of the monster.

After returning to the surface of the sea, the first thing Chu Feng did was not return to the scene where the monster ensnared everybody, but to where Little Fishy waited for him.

“Crap, where did Little Fishy go?” After he came back to the area where Little Fishy was waiting, Chu Feng couldn’t help tightly furrowing his brows. His heart trembled because even though the Spirit Formation he laid was still there, Little Fishy had disappeared.

That was the thing Chu Feng worried about the most. Little Fishy was so special, so really, many people who harboured malicious intents wanted to catch her. If she were taken away by a kind-hearted person, perhaps they would take good care of her, and possibly even carefully raised her; but if she were taken away by ruthless people, then they would very possibly perform experimentations on her, to study why she was so special. At that time, Little Fish would be in great misery.

“Big brother, yiyayiya!” But just at that moment, Chu Feng heard Little Fishy’s young and cheerful voice from afar.

Looking towards the voice, even Chu Feng couldn't help being a bit shocked. A turbulent wave appeared on the surface of the sea several miles away, and it was shooting straight at him like a sharp sword.

The terrifying speed made even Chu Feng tongue-tied. It surpassed the speed of Chu Feng's Azure Dragon Dashing Technique by a huge margin. At that instant, Chu Feng really saw how powerful Little Fishy was. The little doll was simply a genuine monster.

"Haha, big brother, you've finally come back! I haven't gone anywhere~ Aren't I obedient?" When Little Fishy came close, she shot out from the sea. Not a single drop of water stuck onto her as she fell into Chu Feng's embrace in complete dryness.

"Mm, you're very obedient. Little Fishy's the most obedient." Looking at the lively and jumpy girl in his bosom, Chu Feng's tense heart finally calmed down.

"This little one isn't simple. Chu Feng, her talent is a lot better than yours! At least, her speed while swimming in the water is a speed that you cannot reach. Hehe," said Eggy gigglingly as she examined Little Fishy who was being carried by Chu Feng.

"Eggy, do you know where this little girl came from?" asked Chu Feng curiously. Although Eggy was a World Spirit, she had seen and experienced a lot, and knew many things Chu Feng didn't know.

"Look at the symbol on her undergarment; that should be where she came from. As for the specific location, how should I know? It's not like I was born in your world," said Eggy coolly as she curled her lips.

Chu Feng realized it too at that moment. He quickly looked carefully at the symbol on Little Fishy's undergarment, but he had never seen it before. From what he knew, the current relatively famous powers in the Eastern Sea Region didn't have such a symbol as their representation.

"Could it be a power that ordinary people do not know in the Eastern Sea Region? Or perhaps Little Fishy isn't from the Eastern Sea Region, but from that mystical place, the Holy Land of Martialism?"

Chu Feng could not determine where Little Fishy came from, but he knew no matter where she did, that place was definitely very extraordinary.

Of course, Chu Feng could not determine that Little Fishy really did come from a strong power.

After all, the world was big, and there were all sorts of strange things. Moreover, Little Fishy was that special, so even one were to say that she was formed by the world itself and made by special oddities, Chu Feng would certainly believe it.

"Little Fishy, can you tell me where your undergarment came from?" asked Chu Feng curiously and suddenly.

"This? I don't know! It was here when I opened my eyes! Hehe," replied Little Fishy innocently after she stretched her pink-coloured undergarment.

Chu Feng could only lightly smile at such a response, thinking that indeed, he couldn't obtain any information from the girl.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, Chu Feng discovered a few people flying quickly from afar. All of them were Heaven realm experts. They didn't even look at Chu Feng and went straight towards the place where the monster was ensnaring people before.

Quickly after, a few more waves of people flew over Chu Feng's head. They were very excited, especially the males. They had flushed faces of excitement, as if they discovered some treasure.

From their conversations, Chu Feng learnt that a prominent person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had come, and that person was called Yafei.

Seeing that, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows because he knew the person called Yafei definitely came to capture the monster. If it were before, Chu Feng would simply not be concerned about that, but it was different now.

He kept on having a feeling that the monster was related to him, so before understanding who the monster was exactly, he couldn't do nothing and watch the monster die.

Thus, Chu Feng hurried dressed Little Fishy up so normal people wouldn't recognize that she was the famous and special girl, Little Fishy.

"Little Fishy, can you obediently stay in my embrace and not arbitrary speak or move?" asked Chu Feng with a smile after dressing Little Fishy up.

"Mm, mm, mm." Little Fishy repeatedly nodded three times; she was both cute and well-behaved. Seeing that, Chu Feng satisfiedly smiled, and while carrying her, he flew towards the place where a crowd was gathering.

Coming back to where the monster abducted people before, Chu Feng discovered that it was occupied by a large number of people already. Rough estimations told him there were almost ten thousand people.

Clearly, the monster abducting people was something that happened just now, yet so many people already learnt of it and arrived at that place so soon. Moreover, there were even more people than before, so from such things, it could be seen that Yafei brought quite a bit of attention along with her.

Moving through the crowd, Chu Feng could see in the centermost location of the crowd, there was a group of people formed by twenty females. They were all people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Furthermore, they had strong strength. They were actually all Martial Lords—twenty Martial Lords. Here and now, there were twenty in the realm that was like a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Although some of their cultivations were weak and some were strong, they were indeed all Martial Lords, no doubt. Most of them weren't too old either. The oldest was only in the middle-ages but still kept a rather young face. With a glance at the group, one saw nothing but beauties.

But currently, the most eye-grabbing of them all was not the twenty

females. Almost all of the observers' gazes were gathered upon the figure in front of the twenty females.

Chapter 618: Three Great Beauties

That figure belonged to a female. She also had a very beautiful appearance.

A tall and slender body, a bountiful bosom, and even though there was a skirt in between, one could still see how explosively impressive her behind was. She simply had perfect curves.

In addition, other than her fiery hot body, her face was also perfect. Long brows, lovely large eyes, and even though she didn't have a tiny cherry-like mouth, her red lips that curled up slightly were even more alluring.

Just speaking in terms of her appearance, that female already surpassed Su Rou and Su Mei. Only Zi Ling and Eggy could defeat her looks.

So, it couldn't be helped that the males at that place were so excited and happy because she was truly a beauty with a devastatingly pretty appearance.

However, although she was beautiful, the thing people focused on the most wasn't her alluring appearance. It was her strength. The aura she emanated belonged to a rank five Martial Lord.

Through Chu Feng's observations, that female was no older than twenty-something years old. At such an age with such a cultivation, accompanied by her absolutely beautiful appearance, she could truly be called as the pride of the heavens.

In front of her, even someone like Chu Feng was not worth a mention. She was a true genius.

Also, from the crowd's conversations, Chu Feng had learnt of her identity. She was Lady Yafei who came from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"I never expected the Lady Yafei everyone's talking about would be such a young and powerful female. It seems like the Immortal Execution Archipelago truly hides talent and has a very powerful foundation, or else

it wouldn't be possible for them to develop such a character."

After finding out about her, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling a breath of cool air as he, once again, saw how strong the Immortal Execution Archipelago was. He finally knew what a true enormous power represented.

"Waa, as expected of one of the Eastern Sea Region three great beauties! Her appearance is simply even more beautiful and attracting than females in paintings!"

As a big man next to Chu Feng rubbed his palms together, he tightly stared at Yafei's twin peaks, which were quite worthy of pride, as well as her exposed snow-white legs and every single inch of skin.

Looking at the upper section of his body, Chu Feng discovered that the big man was drooling; looking at the lower section of the body, a bulge appeared underneath. There was even an area of wetness; god knows how excited he was.

Chu Feng was truly lazy to pay attention such a vile person, but when heard "the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region", Chu Feng's heart became intrigued. So, he asked, "Brother, when you say the three great beauties, who are you talking about?"

"Little brother, you actually don't even know who the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region are? Are you even a man?!" The vile big man disdainfully looked at Chu Feng.

"That's not right! From what I've heard, isn't it the two great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region? When did it become three?" Another rather young man curiously came close after hearing their conversation.

"Hehe, you probably don't know about this then. A few months ago, it was still the two great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, but now, it's become the three great beauties," said the vile big man smugly upon seeing the curiosity of the young man.

"Three great beauties? Who exactly are those three beauties?" asked the young man with a face full of interest.

“One of the Eastern Sea Region’s two great beauties is the exceptional genius from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, simultaneously the young archipelago master’s fiancée, Lady Yafei,” said the big man.

“This Yafei is the fiancée of that young archipelago master?!” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s gaze flashed. A few more complicated emotions emerged when he looked towards Yafei.

It was because the person Chu Feng loved, Zi Ling, was forcibly taken back to the Eastern Sea Region because she became the fiancée of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s young master. That really made Chu Feng feel displeased. Even though he had yet to meet the so-called young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, their destinies were decided—Chu Feng was going to be his archenemy.

At present, before even seeing the young archipelago master, he saw one of his other fiancées. When it was even a female with such devastatingly powerful strength, Chu Feng’s heart was naturally quite knotty.

“As for the second beauty, on top of the Misty Peak, she’s Fairy Piaomiao’s third disciple, Lady Qiuzhu.

“According to rumours, Yafei’s beauty is like a blazing flame. Upon gazing at her complexion, one’s body would feel like it’s burning, and they wouldn’t even be able to look away.

“On the other hand, Qiuzhu’s beauty is like a chilling ice. One can only look from afar and not come into contact; she is holy and uninvadable.

“Looking at her today, Yafei is indeed as the rumours say. Her alluring face truly hooks onto one’s soul and makes people’s imagination involuntarily drift. I’m sure Qiuzhu’s beauty is the same as the rumours. I truly want to personally see it!”

As the big man spoke to an excited point, he cast his gaze again at Yafei. Unknown if it was intentionally or not, he actually extended his palm and rubbed the wet section of his clothes. It was very appalling.

“Brother, I already know the things you said. The two great beauties of

the Eastern Sea Region are Yafei from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the Misty Peak's Qiuzhu. What I want to know is who exactly is the third beauty you said," asked the young man closely and curiously.

"Hehe, the origin of this third beauty is not insignificant at all. She's the Divine Body that shocked the Eastern Sea Region over a dozen years ago— Lady Zi Ling of the Flower Valley's Zi family," said the vile big man pleasedly.

"Zi Ling?! It's Zi Ling!" Hearing those words, Chu Feng's pupils shrunk abruptly, and uncontrollably, his face changed.

Who was Zi Ling? She was Chu Feng's lover! The reasons why he came to the Eastern Sea Region was one, to become stronger, and another, was to unravel the mystery of his ancestry; but currently, what he wanted to do the most was actually to save his lover, Zi Ling.

"I know about the Divine Body of the Flower Valley's Zi family. Shortly after she was born, she became the fiancée of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's young master. Moreover, in all these years, she had always been in closed-door cultivation. There is simply no one who has seen her true face. But, isn't she called Zi Yu'er? You said she's Zi Ling? Could it be that she's come out from cultivation?" asked the young man with extreme shock.

"That's right. Zi Ling is Zi Yu'er. However, recently, the Flower Valley's Zi family announced to change her name to Zi Ling, and also, on that day, many people saw Lady Zi Ling, the other fiancée of the young archipelago master.

"From what I've heard, those who saw Lady Zi Ling described her as having an extremely extraordinary appearance despite being still being a young woman. She's simply like a fairy from the heavens. Her complexion shouldn't even appear in this world, because it's really too perfect. So perfect it's like they were in a dream.

"Those who saw Yafei and Qiuzhu said Zi Ling's beauty already surpassed theirs, and also that she deserved to be called the number one

beauty in the Eastern Sea Region."

Chapter 619: Monster Reappears

"What? She actually even prettier than Yafei and Qiuzhu? What kind of beauty is that Zi Ling? I truly want to see!" After hearing the vile big man's words, the young man's face was full of yearning.

"Hehe. It's still a rumour, and whether it's true or false is still indeterminate.

"But no matter what, for Zi Ling to be able to obtain such an evaluation means that she is likely also a great beauty," said the vile big man.

"Ahh, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago is truly lucky! Of the Eastern Sea Region's three great beauties, two of them are his fiancées. That's truly evokes envy." The young man had a face filled with admiration. To him, not to mention taking two great beauties as fiancées, even shooting a few more glimpses at one was a type of pleasure.

"Heh. Who do you think is that young archipelago master? He's the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region! He's also the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, which means he is the future overlord of the Eastern Sea Region!

"Isn't is within expectations that the most beautiful of the Eastern Sea Region are married to him? On the contrary, other than him, who's worthy enough for those three beauties?" As the vile big man spoke, his face was similarly full of admiration.

"Although that's true, from what I've heard, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago has actually once expressed his love to Lady Qiuzhu of the Misty Peak, but he was refused. From that, it could be seen that not necessarily all ladies would be willing to marry to him," said the young man.

"Ahh, that's definitely a lie. Looking at the young archipelago master's cultivation and appearance, which female could refuse him? I'm sure if he truly tries to pursue Lady Qiuzhu, even she would definitely agree without even thinking.

“The three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region will sooner or later belong to the young archipelago master. Not a single one can escape,” said the vile big man very certainly. It could be seen that he had great confidence in him.

bang bang bang bang bang

But just at that moment, on the calm surface of the sea below, dozens of water pillars suddenly shot out, and as the water pillars charged towards the sky, there were eighty young females emerging from the pillars, and at the end, arrived in front of Yafei.

Not only were those eighty females all people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they all had cultivation belonging to Martial Lords. In addition to the twenty Martial Lords earlier, Yafei’s following was actually formed by a hundred Martial Lords. It was truly extraordinary powerful, making one speechless.

Although they and Yafei were Martial Lords, the difference in their status was like the difference between the sky and the earth. After the eighty Martial Lords arrived in front of Yafei, all of them knelt down before her, and paid their respects.

“How about it? Any discoveries?” Yafei calmly spoke, but her voice was extremely pleasant to the ear. Not only did the beautiful female have a moving, beautiful appearance, even her voice was so alluring.

“Milady. At the bottom of the sea, there is a Concealment Spirit Formation. The formation is filled with bones, but we could not see any traces of the monster,” replied one of the females respectfully, who seemed to be a World Spiritist.

“I understand.” Yafei alluringly smiled, then swept her gaze over the crowd and said, “My apologies everyone. Because of my Immortal Execution Archipelago’s carelessness before, it caused many innocent people to be killed by the monster. For the ones who have died, My Immortal Execution Archipelago will provide a compensation for their families.

“But, I feel that the best compensation absolutely isn’t money, but

honor.

"So, I hereby guarantee to everyone: my Immortal Execution Archipelago will definitely eradicate that monster, and return a peaceful cultivation holy land for everyone."

"Good~~~"

"Long live Lady Yafei!"

"Lady Yafei, I love you!"

It had to be said that Yafei really knew how to allure a person's heart. With a few simple words, it completely ignited everyone's morale, leading them to seem like they could sacrifice their lives for Yafei. Of course, that alone was already the unique charm of beauties, so there was no need to even mention what a powerful beauty like Yafei would do.

Yafei seemed to have expected the crowd's reactions. So, her lovely smile didn't diminish, and instead, became more and more moving. She continued, "The monster is ruthless—it refines us cultivators as resources. I'm sure everyone here knows about that.

"And according to the behaviors of the recent emergences of this monster, it likes to move around the center zone of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Moreover, it only appears when there's a lot of people.

"So, if we want to capture the monster, we must 'lure the snake out of its cave'. I need everyone's combined assistance. I need everyone to cultivate at this place in order to lure the monster.

"But, no one worry. Since I, Yafei, am here, I can guarantee everyone's safety.

"Of course, if there's anyone here who doesn't trust in my strength, you can leave right now. I will not force anybody to stay behind."

"We will follow your arrangements, Lady Yafei."

"We believe in Lady Yafei."

"Monster eradication is everyone's responsibility!"

Under the enticement of Yafei, with the exception of a small group of people leaving, most of them stayed behind. Especially the males: nearly no one chose to leave.

Following that, they shed their clothings and jumped into the sea underneath, pretending to be cultivating in the sea. Unknown if it was planned or not, some people stripped themselves completely of clothing in front of Yafei and the other beauties, then went and did some naked swimming.

Facing such shameless people, Yafei and the others seemed not swayed by them. They simply ignored them. After laying a Concealment Spirit Formation in the sky, they jumped into it one after the other, waiting silently for the monster to appear.

However, compared to normal people, Chu Feng, currently also pretending to cultivate over the sea, had a few conflicting emotions.

On one hand, he didn't really hope that the monster would appear because he felt that Yafei wasn't a simple person, so she definitely came prepared. If the monster truly appeared, it might not be able to defeat Yafei.

But on the other hand, Chu Feng hoped the monster would appear because if it didn't, he wouldn't have the chance to figure out who exactly the monster was, and why it let him go alive.

He was truly curious. What relationship did he have with the powerful and frightening existence? Chu Feng had considered the possibility that the monster was, perhaps, related to his ancestry.

But the last answer wasn't something that could be found by Chu Feng guessing. He had to see the monster again.

However, regardless of how Chu Feng thought, if some things were meant to happen, they would happen, sooner or later. It was simply unavoidable.

So, after the passing of three full days and nights, over ten thousand cultivators had gathered in the center region of the Everlasting Sea of

Blood, and they were cultivating there.

They chatted and laughed, sparred and made noise. It was as though they had forgotten about the existence of the terrifying monster. They were at ease and happy, and the scene of cultivation before the monster attacked was even restored.

However, when a sound rang out from the bottom of sea, it destroyed that cheerful scene.

gegegegege

The strange and frightening noise resounded again. Everyone sank into terror; the ones who were lightly terrified broke out in cold sweat, while the ones who were heavily terrified trembled, and couldn't even speak clearly.

When the monster truly appeared, it horrified everyone. Even though they knew that Yafeiand the others were standing in midair within the Concealment Spirit Formation, awaiting the appearance of the monster, they didn't dare to continue staying over the sea. One after the other, they rose into the sky and left the surface of the sea, being deeply afraid of becoming food for the monster.

Chapter 620: The Powerful Yafei

pupupupu

The initially serene blood-coloured sea surface was no longer serene. Person after person, like inverted meteors, shot towards the blue sky. As they flew, vertical waves were made on the surface of the sea, alike to water dragons exiting the water. It was quite a grand appearance.

boom

However, they still underestimated that monster's power. As they arrived high in the sky, a burst of frenzied suction power came from the ocean. Quickly afterwards, a huge whirlpool appeared on the calm surface of the sea.

The whirlpool surged and swirled, making rumbling noises. As it spun about, its area was still enlarging, mixing the blood-red seawater to a complete mess.

Moreover, not only did the whirlpool twist the surface of the sea, it even covered the blue sky with the boundless suction power.

"Ahh~~~"

At that instant, even if people were in the air, they were unable to escape the powerful suction power that came from the bottom of the sea. They were all fettered by it and started to drop down one after the other, all of them being drawn into the sea.

Immediately, all sorts of heart-wrenching shrieks rang out endlessly and continuously. Facing the monster's powerful strength, everyone was terrified. The calmness before existed no longer.

boom

But in such a crucial moment, an explosion suddenly came from the sky. At the same time, a hundred beautiful bodies also appeared in midair. It was Yafei and the others.

"Insolent monster! You still care to stir up chaos in this place? Today, I

will put you to your place!"

Currently, Yafei's skirt was fluttering about, and her atmosphere was extraordinary. Although her loveliness didn't diminish, a hint of heroic spirit emerged onto her face.

However, the hint of heroic spirit in the perspective of outsiders was ferociousness in Chu Feng's eyes. It could be seen that the fiancée of the young archipelago master was indeed not a simple person. She was a fierce person.

"Ten Thousand Living Heaven Suction Formation!"

Suddenly, Yafei shouted loudly. Over her head, a silver-coloured vortex rapidly spread, and when the silver-coloured vortex appeared, boundless suction power also surged outwards. It actually pulled everyone who fell into the sea back up and into the silver-coloured vortex.

"What a powerful method." Seeing that, even Chu Feng was greatly shocked. It wasn't a Spirit Formation technique, but a martial skill. However, he had to admit that the martial skill Yafei used was indeed stronger than the whirlpool made by the monster.

With only a blink, Yafei turned the situation completely around. She pulled everyone back into the silver-coloured vortex towering in midair, placing them in a safe place.

boom

Just as the crowd was saved by Yafei, the center of the whirlpool in the sea abruptly exploded. At the same time, something shot out explosively as well.

It was over two meters tall, and water grasses covered its entire body. Its blood-red eyes were even brighter than lanterns. They emanated unending resentment and with a glance, Chu Feng recognized it as the human-cultivating monster.

aoo~~~

When the monster appeared, it instantly made a strange howl. Quickly

afterwards, a wild aura burst out from its body, gathering to form a half-transparent sharp blade. The blade seemed like a sword and also like an awl. It was several feet long, and it was rapidly expanding and shooting towards Yafei.

"It's also a rank five Martial Lord? Then you've definitely lost."

Feeling the aura the monster exuded, Yafei was actually not afraid and instead, happy. She, who was also a rank five Martial Lord, seemed to have absolute confidence that she could defeat the monster.

Facing the sharp blade that was condensed by Martial power and was shooting straight at her, Yafei's complexion remained calm and didn't perform any counter-attacks. Only when the sharp blade neared her did she extend her clean-white little hand and grabbed the incomparable sharp blade that contained strong Martial power.

"This isn't real is it? Does Lady Yafei not want her life?"

Seeing that, many people were petrified. Since the weakest at that place were still Heaven realm experts, they were able to feel the terror of the sharp blade.

But just as everyone broke out in cold sweat from fight, and even thought that Yafei's beautiful hand was going to be sliced off, radiance flashed in all directions from her palm, then with a bang, the huge sword split inch by inch, and at the end, became fragments.

The horrifying attack that the monster made was dispelled by Yafei with her physical body's power!

"World's Vines!"

After dissolving the monster's attack, not only did Yafei not stop, she even changed her attacks. Countless vines shot out from her sleeves, and as they densely twisted about, they surrounded the monster and attacked. Their speed was quick, and just while the monster detected the attack, it was already bound.

aoo~~~~

”At that instant, the monster started to make ear-piercing shrieks. Layers of berserk energy kept on coming out from the vines.

Everyone could tell that the monster was struggling, yet couldn’t rid itself of the vines Yafei sent out. It could only let the vines twist it layer by layer, wrapping it tighter and tighter.

“Waa, Lady Yafei is so powerful! This monster has done whatever it pleased to in the Everlasting Sea of Blood and no one could defeat it. I never have thought that immediately after Lady Yafei came here, she easily subdued it. Is this the difference in strength?”

Seeing Yafei suppress the monster in a very simple manner, everyone cheered madly.

But Chu Feng’s gaze was locked tightly on it, and he hiddenly said to himself, “No, it’s not that simple. The monster’s strength shouldn’t only be like this.”

Chu Feng, who had seen the monster’s strength, strongly knew how powerful it was. But currently, its performance didn’t really match its level of strength.

hmm

But just at that moment, a formless undulation rippled out from inside the monster’s body, straight until it reached the sea.

boom

After the undulation entered the sea, the calm seawater actually acted like an erupted volcano, surging upwards. Instantly, it engulfed the monster.

aoo

At that instant, the monster’s power actually increased explosively. With a furious howl, it drilled into the seawater with the vines over its entire body.

whoosh

At the same time, Yafei, who was on the other side of the vine, was also

dragged down from the formation high in the air by the powerful strength, straight towards the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

"Lady Yafei, be careful! The monster is even fiercer in the water! Avoid fighting against it while it is within." Seeing the scene, the crowd from the Immortal Execution Archipelago hurriedly reminded loudly.

"Hmph. You want to pull me into the water? Let me see how fierce you in the water are!"

But with Yafei's intelligence, how could she not know that the monster would become stronger upon touching water? However, she, who was full of confidence, didn't care about that. Not only did she not let go the vine in her hand, she even leaped, and rushed into the seawater.

whoosh whoosh

After Yafei entered the sea, Chu Feng could clearly feel that the two of them didn't further exchange any blows. Yafei was currently being dragged deep into the sea by the monster. To be more precise, they were heading towards another sea region. Yafei didn't struggle either and allowed herself to be pulled by the monster, following it wherever it went.

Chapter 621: Exposed

poof Seeing the two of them enter the sea, a thought sprung up in Chu Feng's head. After verifying the direction they were heading towards, he went around the crowd's line of sight and secretly submerged into the sea. He used the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and wanted to chase after them.

"Dammit, I can't catch up! They are really too quick." But it was useless as the difference in strength was too great. Even though Chu Feng had a supreme Secret Skill, he simply couldn't reach them.

"Yiyayiya, big brother, you want to catch up to those two?" But just as all of Chu Feng's hope was nearly lost, a pleasant voice suddenly rang out from his arms.

Lowering his head and looking, he saw the little special girl, Little Fishy, blinking with her clear and big eyes as she also looked at Chu Feng.

"Mm." Chu Feng subconsciously nodded his head.

Quite unexpectedly, Little Fishy suddenly smiled dazzlingly, revealing her row of pure white teeth, and said, "Big brother, hold onto my feet! Be sure told on tight~"

"Okay." Chu Feng knew that Little Fishy wanted to bring him after the monster and Yafei. So, he did not hesitate, and as he spoke, he grabbed Little Fishy's light little ankle.

swish However, just as Chu Feng grabbed her ankle, he felt an enormous force crashing straight towards him. The surrounding water currents actually became rows of white lines and endlessly brushed past him.

Little Fishy was swimming forward with speed far quicker than the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and because the speed was really too fast, even Chu Feng's face changed and he involuntarily gasped.

"Little Fishy's speed in water is actually this fast?"

Chu Feng was extremely shocked. Although he already knew that she

was very special, and that her swimming speed was extraordinarily quick, he never would have thought it reached that level of quickness. It simply surpassed his imagination.

At that instant, Chu Feng was more and more curious about Little Fishy's origin. Clearly, she seemed to be a very ordinary lady, as she had no discernible cultivation, so how could she have such frightening capabilities?

whoosh whoosh whoosh

"Yiya, yiya!"

Little Fishy was truly like a water dragon in the sea as she speedily swam. As she drifted through the water, she even made cheerful and happy sounds. And, in such a situation, Little Fishy soon caught up to Yafei and the monster.

boom boom boom

At that instant, Yafei and the monster were fighting against one another. Layers of wild ripples unceasingly dispersed seawater and rubble deep in the sea and they permeated that area.

The might of the battle between two rank five Martial Lords was too horrifying. Even Chu Feng didn't dare to come too close because if he were swept into it, even the remnants of the battle could possibly take away Chu Feng's puny life.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng could only use the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, the Secret Skill, to protect himself better and increase his safety.

Also, after locking onto the monster's position, Chu Feng started to communicate with the monster with mental messaging. But, it was useless as the monster simply didn't reply, as if it didn't even receive his messages

"Who are you? Why didn't you kill me before?

"You definitely know who I am! You saw through my mask and know

that I'm Chu Feng right?

"Who exactly are you? Why are you slaughtering the innocent at this place? Please reply to me. I have no inimical intentions, and perhaps I can even help you."

But, Chu Feng did not give up. He firmly believed that the monster heard his mental messages, and he also believed that the monster was intelligent.

But as moments and seconds passed, their circle of battle became more and more chaotic. Chu Feng was simply unable to lucidly see their actions. What he could see was only terrifying might, as well as the undersea world in complete havoc.

boom Suddenly, another explosion burst out and a figure shot out explosively from the battle. In a blink, it came up to Chu Feng. It was Yafei.

"Follow me." When Yafei came up to Chu Feng, she extended her hand, unexpectedly going straight through Chu Feng's Black Tortoise Armor Technique, and grabbed Chu Feng's shoulder.

whoosh Quickly afterwards, she said nothing else and dashed straight towards the surface of the sea as she had her hand on Chu Feng.

aoo~~~~~ At that instant, Chu Feng could hear endless bursts of furious howls resounding from below. An extremely powerful aura was rapidly nearing, and without even thinking, Chu Feng knew it was definitely the monster.

Although he didn't know why Yafei grabbed him, Chu Feng subconsciously knew that the events that were happening were heading towards a bad direction. So, he hurriedly sent a mental message to Little Fishy. "Escape!" As he sent her that, Chu Feng threw out Little Fishy from his arms.

"You!"

Seeing Chu Feng release Little Fishy, Yafei was enraged. But, she didn't chase after her and instead, with changes of her steps, increased her

forwarding speed.

With such speed, the sound puchi rang out as the two of them charged out of the sea, but Yafei didn't stop moving yet. Only upon entering the vast clouds did she stop, and she cast her gaze downwards, nervously surveying.

Also at that instant, Chu Feng discovered that Yafei was injured. Around her left shoulder, there were a few bloody wounds. The rank five Martial Lord was actually wounded from being clawed.

Yafei didn't pay attention to Chu Feng. She stared at the surface of the sea for quite a long while, and only after she found no traces of the monster chasing after them did she cast her fierce gaze at Chu Feng and started to carefully examine him. A gaze like that was simply as though she wanted to completely see through Chu Feng's entirety of a person.

"Crap, she's actually a World Spiritist as well! With her strength, she might have detected the mental message between me and the monster!" Feeling the strong gaze and powerful Spirit power, Chu Feng murmured in his heart.

Indeed, after carefully examining Chu Feng, Yafei suddenly asked fiercely, "You're on the same side as that monster?"

"What are you saying? How is it possible that I'm with that monster!" Chu Feng hurried denied. At present, he was within Yafei's hands, so naturally he couldn't admit that he was together with the monster, or else it would simply be like looking to die.

Besides, even he himself couldn't ascertain whether that monster was truly together with him, because he could not determine who that monster was.

"Hmph, less of this. Just now, the mental messages you hiddenly sent to that monster were all caught by me. I know everything you told it. You even dare to deny it?!" Yafei closely interrogated.

"Since you already know what I said to the monster, then even more so, you shouldn't be wronging me! Clearly, I was cursing that monster! Don't

tell me that cursing it means I'm together with it!" said Chu Feng cunningly.

Chu Feng was making a bet. What he bet was Yafei only detecting that he sent mental messages to the monster, but, not the things he told the monster.

The reason why Chu Feng made such a wager was because he did have some confidence. Although he knew that Yafei was also a World Spiritist and very possibly her Spirit Formation techniques were above his own, Chu Feng felt that even if his mental messages were picked up by Yafei, she might not have clearly heard what Chu Feng said.

Chapter 622: Hidden Poison

“You are quite sly. Just now, you were clearly not cursing the monster, but communicating with it.

“You’re on the same side as it, otherwise how were you able to have been with that peculiar little lady?

“That little lady is quite special. She clearly lacks cultivation, yet she grasps power that ordinary people do not have. Moreover, not a single living person can approach her. As such, I’ve determined that she’s with that monster.

“Yet! She walked along with you. That already says everything I need to know.” Yafei was not a simple person. She didn’t believe Chu Feng’s denial and continued questioning him.

“What are you talking about? Clearly, I was cursing the monster. My sworn brother died by its hands, so I hate everything about that monster! Although I know I can’t defeat it, can I not even curse it?

“As for Little Fishy, she is indeed very special, I admit that, but even I don’t know why she’s so attached to me. For some reason, I’m on quite good terms with that child.

“If, with only these things, you make a random conclusion, and insist on saying I’m on the same side as that monster, I really have no more words.

“It’s just that... you’re a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but you handle this matter so unfairly. What a waste it is for everyone to call you ‘Lady Yafei’.” Chu Feng knew that Yafei couldn’t make certain the relationship between him and the monster, so he just bluntly and obstinately said he was unrelated to the monster.

“Hoh.” But after hearing Chu Feng’s words, Yafei didn’t say anything more. Instead, she suddenly smiled, but her smile was very strange. It made Chu Feng’s heart involuntarily tremble, and he felt chills going down his spine.

“Well, it’s like that. If you don’t believe me, there’s nothing I can do.

Let's meet again." Feeling that something was wrong, Chu Feng wanted to slip away.

"Ahh!"

However, before even letting Chu Feng turn around, he heard the sound ka cha. His shoulder's bone was forcibly shattered by Yafei.

But that was not all. Chu Feng felt again layers and layers of immense power being imbued into his body without end, beginning to ruin his organs and physical body, and shaving away his own strength.

"Ahh~~~"

The intense agony made Chu Feng cry out loud. Actually, he wanted to cry out loud to attract other people's attention. More importantly, he hoped that the monster could come and save him.

But it didn't appear, nor did any other people hear him. Naturally, Yafei wouldn't stop because of Chu Feng's yelling. Instead, she smiled even more sinisterly, pulling her attracting lips next to Chu Feng's year, saying softly, "Do you think I would let you go because of your stubbornness? I will make you speak the truth."

"Ahhh~~~~"

After Yafei spoke, Chu Feng felt more successive layers of unendurable pain engulf his body. It quickly made sweat drench his head, and he lost the power to hold himself up. Finally, his eyes went dark, and he went unconscious.

After an unknown length of time, Chu Feng gradually recovered his awareness. However, upon opening his eyes, he discovered that he was located within a palace. It was a very gorgeous palace, like one specially made to bury kings.

However, at that instant, he was bound by some enormous power, and was tied on a cross.

Not too far from him, there was another person. It was an attractive female—she was none other than Yafei.

“Crap.” After seeing Yafei, and looking at the situation around him, Chu Feng hiddenly cursed. He felt that, very likely, Yafei was going to commence an excruciating interrogation.

“Oh? You’ve woken up from sleep?” Indeed, after finding out that Chu Feng awoke, Yafei slowly walked towards him while smiling strangely.

As she spoke, she lightly raised her slender and snow-white hand. A sharp little dagger formed by Martial power then appeared in her palm.

“What exactly are you planning?”

Chu Feng furrowed his brows. He knew that Yafei definitely planned to do harmful things to him, and his guess before was correct: Yafei was indeed not any good person. At least she was a person who didn’t care what she did before reaching her goals.

Not only was the female with outstanding prettiness and exceptional talent the alluring beauty and peerless genius in everybody’s eyes, she was true hidden poison.

“Heh. Afraid?” Yafei did not answer his question. After walking up to Chu Feng, she started to take the dagger in her hand and slid it around Chu Feng’s body. It was both seductive and dangerous.

“Afraid? Ever since I was born, I have never known how to write the word ‘afraid’.” Even after knowing that he could not escape such a calamity, Chu Feng didn’t back down.

“Oh? You’re quite unyielding. So you’ve done the preparations to remain silent?” asked Yafei with a strange smile.

“I’ve already said it. Right now, I have nothing to say to you. If you want to kill me, go ahead. If you want to skin me, go ahead. If I, Chu Feng, makes even half a bit of sound, then I’m your son.”

Being in Yafei’s hands, Chu Feng could only blame his own carelessness and his inferiority in ability. Even if she really killed him, he would not have the slight bit of resentment. So, at that instant, Chu Feng already anticipated the worse outcome.

“Then let me see how long you can endure this for.” Hearing Chu Feng’s words, Yafei’s face suddenly turned cold, then with a puchi, the dagger in her hand was ferociously jabbed into Chu Feng’s chest.

However, in the moment the sharp little dagger was pierced into his chest, Chu Feng clenched his teeth, and indeed, didn’t make any sound.

“Hmph.” Looking at Chu Feng, Yafei coldly snorted. Then, she waved her hand, and with a ripping sound, the dagger, in Chu Feng’s chest, ripped open a row of flesh, creating a big bloody wound.

No matter how pain-endurable Chu Feng was, after such an action, his face still turned deathly-pale and he broke out in cold sweat.

But even so, Chu Feng still didn’t make a sound. Instead, he forcefully bore the pain, coldly smiled, and said, “Is that all you’ve got? Women are still women. Do you need me to teach you how to torture people?”

“Hmph. Do you think I need you to teach me how to torture people?” As Yafei spoke, she flipped her palm, a little wooden box then appearing into her hand.

hmm

And when the wooden box was opened, it emitted faint radiance. It was a Spirit Formation, and within the Spirit Formation, there were countless blood-red insects the sizes of ants.

Those insects were very revolting. Though very small, they had many black-coloured claws and were unceasingly making jiji sounds. It was very horrifying as well.

After the appearance of such terrifying insects, Yafei ominously smiled, then said, “Do you think that I would be so stupid as to use this tiny dagger to torment your flesh? You’re wrong. I left this wound of blood only to satisfy them.

“Do you know what these are? They are Soul Eating Insects. They will enter your body, then take over your organs, take over your brain, and finally, take over your soul.

“At that time, no matter what question I ask, you will always answer me. No matter what actions I want you to do, they will be followed.

“But before that, you will bear the most unendurable pain. You will receive the cruelest torture: the anguish of your body being consumed bit by bit, all the way to your soul.

“Let me see whether or not you can endure this.”

Chapter 623: Divine Lightning Manifesting Its Might

jijiji

After speaking, a hint of sinister fierceness emerged abruptly on Yafei's beautiful face. With a thought, the Spirit Formation automatically opened, then the closely-packed Soul Eating Insects drilled into Chu Feng's body from the bloody wound as they were urged forward.

At that instant, Chu Feng truly experienced unbearable pain. It was simply indescribable. It would even be reasonable to say that it was the most unendurable anguish that he had experienced up until now.

But regardless of all that, Chu Feng endured. He gritted his teeth, glaring resentfully at Yafei. He decided if he were able to survive, he would definitely make that venomous female pay the price she deserved.

"Hmph. You are truly able to bear this, but no matter. Soon, you will be devoured by these Soul Eating Insect. At that time, you will become a puppet. You will do anything I tell you to.

"Actually, I don't care if you are related to that monster or not, because even without you, I can still kill it.

"There are only two reasons why I brought you back. First, the skills you exhibited before were very abnormal. I suspect they are Secret Skills. As for if that's true or not, it will naturally be revealed after killing you.

"But before killing you, I have another thing I need to do: to catch that girl called Little Fishy via you.

"Since that girl is so special, I'm interested in studying her for a while, to find out where exactly her power comes from. Though, I don't know if her little body's bones can take my torture.

"But really, that doesn't matter either. Even if I can't get her power, killing her means I have one less opponent to deal with. After all, for things like geniuses, the fewer the better, don't you think?"

Yafei looked at Chu Feng smilingly, and intentionally placed her alluring red lips very close to Chu Feng. But, at that instant, to Chu Feng, that woman did not have the slightest bit of attractiveness. What she had was nothing but danger.

The current Chu Feng was raining sweat, and even his body, involuntarily, was slightly trembling. The torment from the Soul Eating Insects was indeed something not ordinary people could endure.

But not only did Chu Feng endure it, he even smiled, and said to Yafei in a feeble voice, "You bastard. You better kill me now and don't give me any chances, or else I will make you pay the price for this."

"Oh? You are truly obstinate with your mouth. I have come to admire you more and more, but regretfully, the only way I can only catch that Little Fishy is through you, and I must obtain the Secret Skills that you have. Things like those are wasted on you, and only in my hands can their true power be displayed.

"Heh, but you don't need to worry. I, Yafei, swear to the heavens—after using you, I will make you die miserably, as that's the price for cursing me."

Yafei strangely smiled, then her hand, as beautiful as jade, suddenly whipped down, and with a bam, left behind a red handprint on Chu Feng's face.

After that slap, clearly, Yafei's fury had yet to be resolved, so she raised her palm again, and prepared to continue hitting Chu Feng.

dongdongdong dongdongdong However, just at that moment, door knocking sounds rang out from outside the palace.

"What is it?" With a thought, the doors emitted dazzling radiance, and what appeared at the end was a Spirit Formation door.

After that Spirit Formation door appeared, a female in the Martial Lord realm walked in. It was one of Yafei's subordinates, but at that instant, her face was fraught with panic, and she said, "Lady Yafei, the monster has appeared again! It's attacking our people!"

“Oh? So it’s taking its revenge?

“Coincidentally, I also have revenge to take!” After hearing those words, Yafei’s brows lightly knitted, a trace of bloodlust emerging within her eyes.

But before walking out of the Spirit Formation door, she looked back at Chu Feng, and said with a smile, “You must feel that you’ll have a chance to escape after I leave, right?

“You should never have such thoughts, because this place isn’t somewhere you can escape. Also, those Soul Eating Insects will soon take over your body. When I return, you will obsequiously become my puppet.

“Do you know what the first thing I’ll make you do after you become a puppet is? I will have you castrate yourself, so you never call yourself a man ever again. I will have you cut off the ‘root of your life’. You want dignity? I will not give that to you. That’s how you will end up as by opposing me. Hahaha...”

Accompanying the disappearance of the insane and ruthless laughter, Yafei departed along with her subordinate. No one was left behind to guard him, and in the vast palace, only Chu Feng remained.

But at present, not only was Chu Feng’s power restricted, even his body was currently being consumed by the Soul Eating Insects.

Those strange insects were too powerful. Even though Chu Feng could bear with that pain, he could not stop them from devouring his physical body. If that continued, he would truly become a puppet.

“Chu Feng, you cannot sit here and await death. Quickly think of a way to call upon the power of the Divine Lightning. Try to use it to destroy the bindings and drive out the Soul Eating Insects.” Just at that moment, Eggy, who had stayed silent, suddenly spoke and reminded.

After hearing those words, an epiphany came to Chu Feng. Before, he was only concerned about enduring the pain from the Soul Eating Insects and overlooked the Divine Lightning in his body. After all, the Divine Lighting was that powerful, so maybe it could even dispel the Soul Eating

Insects and break the bindings.

"Haa!" Thinking up to that point, Chu Feng delayed no longer and along with a thought, he started to grind his teeth, putting forth his entire body and heart to connect himself to the power of the three lightning.

roar~~~

By doing so, the power of the three lightning in Chu Feng's blood were like reawakened kings opening their domineering eyes. In the instant they were roused, they started to consume the Soul Eating Insect that were running around Chu Feng's blood and aiming to seize his body.

Moreover, the power of the lightning was simply unstoppable. As long as those Soul Eating Insects touched them, they were immediately consumed and refined, without any vestige of resistance.

jijiji

Facing such a ferocious lightning power, the strange Soul Eating Insects acted as though they were facing a ginormous enemy. They didn't have the might from before anymore, and like mice that saw a cat, they hurriedly escaped Chu Feng's body amidst the cries of panic.

Finally, most of the Soul Eating Insects that entered Chu Feng's body were engulfed by the lightning in Chu Feng's body. However, there was also a small portion of the Soul Eating Insects that successfully left Chu Feng's body and hid within the palace.

"Huu. I'm still unable to thoroughly grasp it. If I were able to control this power as I so wished, how good would that be..."

After the power of the three lightning banished the Soul Eating Insects from Chu Feng's body, his bound power was also restored. In that situation, although he took a breath of relief, there weren't many expressions of joy on his face.

The power of the three lightning had already left his dantian and entered his blood. To say it merged with Chu Feng's body into one would not be unreasonable, because Chu Feng could feel that the three lightning was different from the other lightning.

The Divine Lightning still in Chu Feng's dantian, despite being in Chu Feng's body, could not be used by him in any way.

Whereas the three lightning in his blood were completely different. They didn't seem to be living within Chu Feng body, but more like they truly coalesced into one with Chu Feng. Their power was Chu Feng's power.

Chapter 624: Opening the Spirit Formation

But the thing that Chu Feng could do nothing about was other than being able to borrow the power of the three lightning and raise his cultivation, he simply couldn't completely grasp the power of the three lightning.

It was as if despite being one, they still had their own lives and thoughts. Chu Feng merely awakened them. In reality, it was still themselves that were dispelling the Soul Eating Insects. Not Chu Feng's command.

But something Chu Feng could be certain of was that absolutely, cultivation increase wasn't all of the three lightning's power. If one day, he could control the lightning entirely, he would definitely be many times stronger.

whoosh whoosh

However, currently, Chu Feng couldn't think too much. He had to quickly lay a formation to undo the Spirit Formation rope that tied his hands and feet. He also had to stop his wound and prevent blood flowing for naught.

Logically speaking, with Chu Feng present strength, to wish to undo the bindings left by a rank five Martial Lord would truly be difficult atop difficult, a near impossibility.

But luckily, Yafei was really too confident with herself. She didn't think that Chu Feng could break her fetters and recover his cultivation. So, what she used to tie Chu Feng up wasn't any superb work. It was even very simple; a bind laid cursorily.

So, after a while of hard work from Chu Feng, he successfully broke away from her knots, and thus regained his freedom.

"Dammit! This door is fake! It should just be a double-layered door—a physical door outside and a Spirit Formation door inside—but a special Spirit Formation password has been added." Although he successfully

reclaimed his cultivation and escaped the bindings, Chu Feng discovered that the palace was not a simple one.

The walls of the entire palace were indestructible—likely reinforced with special Spirit Formation, strong ones at that. With the techniques Chu Feng currently grasped, he simply could not destroy them.

Even taking the Spirit Formation door that Yafei and the other one left in just now as an example. Chu Feng was currently standing at that place, but no matter how he used Spirit power to examine that location, he could not feel the Spirit Formation door, as if it weren't even there.

At that instant, Chu Feng determined that the Spirit Formation at that place was left behind by a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, or else it was impossible for it to be so powerful. He could not even detect anything from it.

"It seems like I can only try the Heaven's Eyes." In that situation, the final card Chu Feng had was the Heaven's Eyes of the Pulse Searching Method.

hmm

When he used the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng's gaze immediately changed. Sharp brilliance was revealed with nothing holding back. It was incomparably oppressive, as if they were two formless blades that could pierce through anything.

At that instant, if Chu Feng used such a gaze to look at those of the same cultivation, it could frighten them so much that their intents to fight would flee. As for those with cultivation under Chu Feng's, with merely a glance, Chu Feng could kill whoever he looked at. That was the Heaven's Eyes.

But the strong point of the Heaven's Eyes was not only restricted to determent. The most important thing about it was its sharp observation strength. Such power allowed him to see things that ordinary people, even ordinary World Spiritists, could not.

The inspection power of the Heaven's Eyes already surpassed the simple

Spirit power by far.

After Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes, the door in front of his eyes did indeed start to change. Hidden patterns and symbols came into view bit by bit, and they were also becoming clearer and clearer.

It was as Chu Feng predicted. The entire palace was a set of powerful formations, and the Spirit Formation door was hidden behind the fake palace door.

But the formation itself was too powerful. Even though Chu Feng was able to discover its existence, it wasn't something that Chu Feng could currently decipher and break down. Despite finding the exit, he was unable to leave that place because he really didn't have the ability to open the Spirit Formation.

"God damn. Will I, Chu Feng, truly die by that bastard's hands?!"

No matter how much calmer Chu Feng was, he could not avoid panicking a bit because he knew after Yafei returned, she would definitely not let him go. He truly didn't wish to sit and wait for death, yet there was nothing else he could do.

hmm However, just as Chu Feng reached a dead end, the sealed Spirit Formation door in front of his eyes was unexpected altered. Someone was opening it!

whoosh

That made Chu Feng tightly frown, and he subconsciously evaded to the side because instantly, he thought of two possibilities.

The first possibility was that Yafei returned. If Yafei truly returned, even though he regained his strength, he was definitely unable to defeat her. What awaited him was only a road of death.

The second possibility was that the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago opened the Spirit Formation door. There was a Spirit Formation password installed on the door, so those who knew the password certainly didn't have a low status, nor any weak strength. But, as long as it wasn't Yafei, Chu Feng had a string of chance. Perhaps he

could take that chance and flee.

wuaoo

At that instant, Chu Feng truly reached the extremities of anxiousness. He even used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique at the same time, raising his power to the most optimal state.

He had to face that situation seriously because his life was decided on the person who opened the Spirit Formation. To be more precise, it was decided on the instant the person entered.

hmm Finally, the light from the Spirit Formation shined brighter and brighter. As the Spirit Formation was swirling about, Chu Feng actually heard a familiar voice.

“Yiyayiya!” Along with a skittish cheer, a small figure jumped into the palace from the Spirit Formation.

“Little Fishy?!” Seeing the tiny body in front of him, Chu Feng was instantly taken aback. He simply didn’t dare to believe his own eyes.

“Yiyayiya! Big Brother, Little Fishy has finally found you! Haha, good, good!

“Little Fishy is really smart! Lalala!” And after seeing Chu Feng, Little Fishy also cheered excitedly and started to skip and jump to the center of the palace, then opened her arms and spun circles on one spot. Naive, carefree, and extremely cute.

jijiji

But just at that moment, from the corner of the palace, petrifying cries rang out. At the same time, a dense area of black-coloured objects were crawling towards Little Fishy. Their speed was so fast it could make one speechless.

“Crap! Little Fishy, quickly run!” Seeing such a scene, Chu Feng’s complexion changed greatly because he knew what those black-coloured objects were. They were Soul Eating Insects.

Although a large portion of the Soul Eating Insects that entered his body before was engulfed by the lightning, there was indeed a small portion that escaped.

And he never could have expected the Soul Eating Insects to be so ruthless and despicable. Although they feared Chu Feng, in the instant they saw Little Fishy, they attacked her.

Chu Feng had personally experienced the Soul Eating Insects' strength. Without the power of the lightning, it was possible that he would have already become a puppet.

So, he didn't dare to dally at all. As he urged the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique forward and flew towards Little Fishy, he willed, already releasing his pressure and wanted to use that to kill off the Soul Eating Insects.

Chapter 625: The Magical Little Fishy

jijiji

But Chu Feng still underestimated the Soul Eating Insects. They actually ignored his pressure, and their speed was so quick it surpassed his imagination. They actually came up to Little Fishy before Chu Feng and unhesitantly started fierce attacks. They wanted to drill into Little Fishy's body and make her into a puppet.

"Yiyayiya!"

At that instant, Chu Feng was originally incomparably panicked, but what he didn't expect was in front of the Soul Eating Insects that were of unknown origin and horrifying to him, Little Fishy was not afraid at all. Instead, she started to excitedly jump up and down where she stood.

Just as the Soul Eating Insects were going to come into contact with Little Fishy, blinding light came from her body and shot in all directions.

The light was really too dazzling. It was simply as if the sun had descended into the palace, preventing anyone from approaching.

Even Chu Feng's eyes were blinded to the point he could not open them. He was even forced several steps back by a burst of powerful might.

Only after feeling the radiance gradually fading away did Chu Feng slowly open his eyes. However, when he took in everything into his eyes, his face couldn't help but change.

He astonishedly discovered that currently, not only was Little Fishy standing where she was, undamaged at all, there were even black-coloured objects surrounding her. They were the Soul Eating Insects.

However, at that instant, the incomparably ruthless Soul Eating Insects no longer had any signs of life. What remained were only empty shells.

"Little Fishy, are you all right?!" Although the Soul Eating Insects had already died, Chu Feng was still very worried about Little Fishy. He came up to her, carried her up, and started to look up and down, examining her carefully and in detail.

After confirming that Little Fishy was unharmed, only then did he breathe a sigh of relief. Looking back at the Soul Eating Insects dead on the ground, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling a breath of air, then asked Little Fishy, "Little Fishy, tell Big Brother. What was the light from your body just now about?"

"Eh? Big Brother, you're talking about the light just now?

"Even I don't know what that's about. Every time Little Fishy sees something fun, it appears, then after it disappears, the fun stuff dies," said Little Fishy, like she was wronged, as she blinked.

"Whoa! Not simple. That girl is not a simple person at all.

"Chu Feng, you've picked up treasure this time! I initially thought she was only good at swimming, but as it turns out, she's hid so many outstanding abilities on her!

"The light just now clearly came from inside her body. It's the power that's protecting her. Moreover, it's extremely powerful. Things that wish to do harm onto her will all be eradicated by her guardian power.

"Chu Feng, in the future, just bring this girl along. You don't need to protect her, and instead, you can use her to protect you!

"If there's anyone who's inimical, just put this girl in front of them. At that time, not only will the troubles be gone, perhaps you can even use the power guarding this girl to kill the enemy!

"How is this girl even a burden? She's simply a rare attacking weapon!" Eggy said excitedly after seeing the power that protected Little Fishy.

Chu Feng was no idiot, so of course he knew what the light Little Fishy emitted did. However, he did not agree to Eggy's suggestion. So, he shook his head, and said hiddenly, "Your words make sense, but if you want me to take such a young child as a shield, I can't do it.

"Besides, she is only following me because she trusts and relies on me. How can I take advantage of her innocence?"

"Okay okay, suit yourself. I'd be too lazy to even care about you." Eggy

curled her lips, but really, she did understand Chu Feng. So, she didn't say anything more.

When he felt Eggy's reaction, Chu Feng also lightly smiled, then continued asking Little Fishy, "Little Fishy, how have you come here?"

"Yiya, yiya. Little Fishy knew that Big Brother has been caught, so I've come to find you!" she replied, giggling.

"But, Little Fishy, how did you know I was here?" Chu Feng continued asking.

"Hehe. Big Brother, you probably don't know right? Little Fishy is smart! I kept on secretly following you, so naturally I knew you were here," replied Little Fishy.

"What? Little Fishy, you were actually following us all along? Then, how did you come through that Spirit Formation door?" Chu Feng's eyes were full of surprise.

"Spirit Formation door?" Little Fishy's eyes spun around randomly, as if contemplating what Chu Feng was saying. But soon, a hint of joy flash into her eyes, then she hopped over to the door and lightly pressed with her palm. Not only did he hidden Spirit Formation door appear, she even deciphered the Spirit Formation password.

"Big Brother, you mean this?" asked Little Fishy.

"Yeah, it's that. Little Fishy, how did you do that?" Chu Feng hurriedly went up, and discovered that currently, the Spirit Formation door was truly opened by Little Fishy.

"Just touch it lightly and it appears! Little Fishy saw they did it, so I also did what they did. Big Brother, you try too!" As she spoke, she retracted her hand, and coincident with the withdrawal of her hand, the Spirit Formation door also disappeared.

Being spurred on by Little Fishy, Chu Feng also placed his palm in the same location as hers in an experimental manner, but there was not the slightest bit of change. Even while Chu Feng used Spirit Formation power there was no change, let alone opening the Spirit Formation door.

“Yiya. Why can’t Big Brother open it? So strange!” Little Fishy’s face was full of surprise and confusion, as if Chu Feng’s inability to open the Spirit Formation was the inconceivable thing.

And at that instant, Chu Feng didn’t really know what to do as, once again, it was the work from Little Fishy’s special power.

The little girl was truly too magical. Looking at her, she was clearly an ordinary girl, yet she grasped such powerful and unbelievable skills.

Luckily, people only knew that she had extraordinarily quick swimming speed. If people knew that she still had the ability to open Spirit Formations and automatically defend against dangerous objects, it would definitely shake the Eastern Sea Region. There would then definitely be many hidden great characters making their move. At that time, Little Fishy would truly enter a perilous situation.

“Little Fishy. I can’t open this Spirit Formation, so you do it. Quickly bring Big Brother away from here, otherwise when that woman called Yafei returns, both of us will be in trouble,” said Chu Feng.

“Okay, okay! Watch Little Fishy!” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, she obediently pressed with her hand. The Spirit Formation door then opened again, and Little Fishy truly went into it.

Seeing that, Chu Feng quickly followed. At first, there were still some bumps in his heart, but after going through the Spirit Formation door, his bumpy emotions were easily resolved.

However, in the instant he went through the Spirit Formation door, what appeared in front of Chu Feng’s eyes wasn’t another exit. It was a vast and luxurious palace.

Chapter 626: Seventh Level of the Heaven Realm

There was pretty much nothing different from this palace and the one Chu Feng was in before. The only difference was that in the current palace, his eyes were flooded by objects that emitted faint fragrance and dazzled with radiance. They were all cultivation resources.

Heaven beads. Casting one's gaze over, one could see nothing but the top-quality Heaven medicine, Heaven beads. The number was simply uncountable, and other than Heaven beads, there were even Martial medicines. Though there was a relatively fewer amount, and also that most were low-quality, and there were not many medium-quality ones, there was still quite a bit.

"This can't be real right? Could the reason why this place is so special be because this is the treasury, installed within the Everlasting Sea of Blood, that the Immortal Execution Archipelago stores their wealth in?!"

At that instant, even Chu Feng's heart couldn't help jumping against his chest because the amount of cultivation resources at that place was too enormous. It could be said to be the place where he had seen the most amount of cultivation resources in his entire life. So much that it completely exceeded his imagination.

Even to the point that Chu Feng felt if he could refine all of the cultivation resources at that place, there existed a possibility for him to make a breakthrough.

As long as he raised his cultivation by one more level, Chu Feng could step into the seventh level of the Heaven realm, and at that time, if he used the power of the lightning again, Chu Feng's cultivation could enter the Martial Lord realm.

After stepping over that gap, the difference in Chu Feng's power was like the difference between heaven and earth. If he fought against a Martial Lord again, he could definitely defeat a rank two Martial Lord, and

even he could even fight on a generally equal against a rank three Martial Lord.

"Yiya, yiya, Big Brother, there's another palace in front. There are even more beautiful things in that palace!" Seeing that Chu Feng liked those things a lot, the smart Little Fishy pointed at the palace door before them and spoke.

"Really? Bring me over to see!" After hearing Little Fishy's words, Chu Feng was elated.

Little Fishy also didn't delay and once again, opened another Spirit Formation door. After Chu Feng passed through it, the joy on his face immediately became even stronger.

Because, inside the third palace, it was exactly as Little Fishy said. It was truly filled with cultivation resources. There was even more in there than in the second palace. Other than a path going down the middle of the palace, both sides of the path were full of Heaven beads.

"It looks like I've guessed correctly. This is likely the treasury that the Immortal Execution Archipelago uses to store cultivation resources. These should be the fees they took from the Ancient Teleport Formations in the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

"No wonder after becoming the strongest force of power, the Immortal Execution Archipelago continues to grow stronger and stronger.

"Right now, they have almost taken over all of the Eastern Sea Region's channels of profit. They have limitless cultivation resources entering their pockets, so it is truly hard for them to not become stronger."

At that moment, Chu Feng was truly ecstatic. If Chu Feng only felt he could possibly make a breakthrough with the cultivation resources in the previous palace, then now, when the resources of the two palaces combined, they would definitely allow Chu Feng to break through.

"This won't work. There are too many cultivation resources here. Even if I have a few more Cosmos Sacks I can't move them all!" But soon, the joy on Chu Feng's face was instantly replaced by a baffling expression.

It was as Chu Feng said. There was really too much cultivation resources at that place. So much that Chu Feng himself could not move all of them away by himself. But, it was clearly also impossible for him to move them bit by bit away. After all, he could not be sure when Yafei would return.

"Chu Feng, this is exactly like the proverb 'wealth is found within risk'. Right now, you only have one path you can walk on." Just at that time, Eggy spoke once again.

"Eggy, could it be that you want me to refine the cultivation resources right here?" Chu Feng wasn't foolish, so he already thought of that before Eggy even spoke. However, like Eggy said, it was too risky.

"There's no other choice. Either refine these cultivation resources now, or quickly give them up and leave immediately. You can only choose one of the two.

"Of course, even if you leave now, you may not be guaranteed to safely escape. Perhaps you would even walk into Yafei.

"However, even if you run into Yafei, you may not be absolutely dead. Don't forget the girl Little Fishy. Not only is she special, she is also powerful. Maybe with her, even Yafei can't harm you. But the prerequisite for that is you must use her as a shield.

"Chu Feng, 'if you wish for great things, you must be prepared to be ruthless'. If you continue to concern yourself with trivial matters and remain hesitant and indecisive, no one can save you," reminded Eggy gravely, and as she spoke, there were even some intents of warning.

"Okay, I'll listen to you." A trace of fierceness suddenly appeared in Chu Feng's gaze. Then, without saying anything more, he sat, legs crossed, gesturing with his hands, then he widened his mouth, and used a skill that could swallow the mountains and rivers.

huu huu huu

After such a skill was used, frenzied wind immediately came from all directions. The cultivation resources piled within the palace, and like they

had gravity, rushed into Chu Feng's mouth.

For cultivation, Chu Feng decided to stake it all onto that. Since he couldn't take them away, he decided to refine all of the cultivation resources there.

Although refining required a certain amount of time, to the current Chu Feng, refining was actually a very simple matter.

Even though there were many cultivation resources at that place, after spending an hour, the cultivation resources in the third palace were all consumed and refined by Chu Feng. Moreover, at present, Chu Feng's cultivation rose greatly, and there was merely a thread's width between him and the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

Since things turned out the way they did, Chu Feng would naturally not back away after seeing a good situation unfolding and play it safe because of that. He returned to the second palace and continued to madly refine.

Since there weren't as many cultivation resources in the second palace as the third one, the refining speed was even quicker. But, what made Chu Feng rejoice was...

Chu Feng only refined two-thirds of the resources in the second palace, yet the Divine Lightning in his body already started to surge, and his power also instantly rose.

He made a breakthrough. Ever since using Natural Oddities, it was the first time he raised his cultivation by relying on a precious cultivation resource such as Heaven beads.

At present, Chu Feng's original body's cultivation had already reached the seventh level of the Heaven realm. If he used the power of the three lightning he could break the bindings of the Heaven realm, and step into the realm of a rank one Martial Lord.

And, with the methods Chu Feng grasped, it was likely he could even fight against a rank three Martial Lord. It had to be said that it was a great jump in quality.

It was equal to Chu Feng stepping onto a completely new world. The

strength he grasped was already legendary in the continent of the Nine Provinces, but in this place, it wasn't really even much.

But no matter what, to Chu Feng, that was still a historic moment. That breakthrough truly made Chu Feng endlessly excited, but after making his breakthrough, Chu Feng didn't stop refining, and continued refining another large portion of the cultivation resources.

Only until he felt that the remaining resources could all be put in his Cosmos Sack did Chu Feng finally stop.

"Hmph. Yafei locked me in this place definitely because this place is indestructible, but she didn't expect me to have Little Fishy's assistance. Not only did I successfully break away from my chains, I even plundered the cultivation resources in this place. Right now, the treasury is completely empty. Let me see how you explain this to the Immortal Execution Archipelago."

There were too many cultivation resources at that place, so Chu Feng felt that even to the Immortal Execution Archipelago it was not a small amount. Because of Yafei's blunder, the cultivation resources in the palaces were all lost. Yafei would hence likely be punished because of it.

Chapter 627: Battle of Martial Lords

Having such an exciting thought, Chu Feng had a whimsical urge, and with his fingers, he waved them around, using Spirit Formations to write large words in midair. In the end, he left behind: “I thank Beauty Yafei for her generous gift; Wuqing shall accept them all. In the future, Wuqing will definitely repay such a chest-rending favour by many times.”

After leaving those words, Chu Feng put away all the remaining cultivation resources into his Cosmos Sack. It had to be said that with the numbers of Heaven beads he had, Chu Feng could currently be called a genuine young wealthy person.

“Waa, Big Brother, you’re so strong! You really ate so many good looking things in one go! Big Brother, how did you do that? Can you teach Little Fishy?”

And just at that moment, Little Fishy, who had waited on the side obediently all that time, ran over skippingly and leaped into Chu Feng’s embrace while speaking adorably.

Seeing that, Chu Feng couldn’t help faintly smiling, and after he used his index finger to lightly tap Little Fishy’s forehead, he said, “Big Brother is a gourmand; I eat things too wolfishly. Little Fishy, do not imitate me! You’re a little beauty. You should eat things more slowly so you become more liked by others.”

“No!” However, Little Fishy pouted, shook her head, and said, “Little Fishy doesn’t want them to like me! They’re all bad people. None of them have good intentions when they come close to me. Only Big Brother truly wishes good for me. Little Fishy only wants Big Brother to like me.”

“Little Fishy, how would you know that Big Brother truly wishes good to you and doesn’t have any malicious intents?” asked Chu Feng with a smile.

“Heh, Little Fishy isn’t stupid, so of course I know clearly who’s good and who’s bad.” She stuck out her tongue to Chu Feng, then pulled his hand, ran out, and said, “Big Brother, let’s go! It’s boring to stay in there

for too long. Let's go out and play."

Upon hearing those words, Chu Feng was completely lost for words. He thought, he still underestimated the little girl. Although according to normal ages, a child as big as Little Fishy should be at the age where they knew nothing, yet she was obviously different. After all, she was alone in the outside world and lived for such a long period of time by herself. Who knew how many dangers she had met.

Besides, though she seemed to have a very young appearance, in reality, Chu Feng was unable to ascertain whether Little Fishy was truly as old as she was from her appearance. Perhaps she was even a Natural Oddity, a little monster that had lived for several thousands of years.

Afterwards, with Little Fishy leading the way, they very soon left that treasury. Chu Feng also discovered that it was a treasury built within the sea.

Furthermore, it was extremely intricately concealed. If Chu Feng did not use the Heaven's Eyes, he would not be able to see any inklings of something being there. Casting his gaze over, he saw only an ordinary huge rock at the bottom of the sea. Even using Spirit power to observe he felt nothing out of the ordinary.

From such, it could be seen that a Gold-cloak World Spiritist's skills were truly extraordinary. They were on a completely different level than Purple-cloak World Spiritists. If Little Fishy had not come out today, Chu Feng would truly have been unable to escape, with only death awaiting him.

"Little Fishy, where do you want to go? Big Brother will come and play with you, okay?" As Little Fishy saved Chu Feng, he felt very grateful, and the method to repay that little girl was also very simple too. It was just to accompany and play with her.

"Sure sure! Big Brother is going to play with Little Fishy! This is really too good!

"But where to go to play?" She put her hand under her chin, and her clear eyes were spinning about arbitrarily, pretending to be an important

person pondering as she thought deeply.

After a moment, her eyes suddenly lit up, then to Chu Feng, she said very happily, “That’s right! Big Brother, that bad Big Sister who took Big Brother away is fighting against that Man-eating Monster! Little Fishy wants to go and watch.”

“What? Yafei is really fighting against that monster?” Hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn’t help furrowing his brows.

Chu Feng who had just experienced a calamity still felt quite some fear towards Yafei, but after thinking carefully for a while, Chu Feng still grabbed Little Fishy’s feet, and said, “Sure. Little Fishy, bring Big Brother over to watch. But this time, let’s not go too close.”

“Mm.” Hearing Chu Feng’s agreement, Little Fishy strongly nodded in extreme happiness. Then, she became a blur of light. With unbelievable speed, she brought Chu Feng and swam to the distance.

boom boom boom boom boom

Above a certain region of sea in the Everlasting Sea of Blood’s center zone, explosions sounded everywhere, waves rolled about, and all sorts of energy were endlessly converging.

In the sky was complete chaos. Occasionally, dark clouds appeared, firing down a frightening strike of lightning.

Above the sea’s surface, waves surged wildly. Occasionally, they became surging huge beasts and made deafening furious roars.

As the two energy intersected, berserk ripple after ripple were being created unceasingly. That place had already become the most dangerous area. Those below Martial Lords would die if they approached.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Yafei stepped upon the clouds, her colourful skirt fluttering about. She was like a goddess as she commanded the changes in that land.

She held a pink longsword. It was no longer than three feet and it was as if it were weaved by petals, yet it emanated unbelievable power.

When Yafei grasped it within her hands, her might multiplied by many times. Every wave of her sword would cause the world to tremble, and the pink longsword even made pink petals appear and fall everywhere.

The petals fell like rain, but they contained terrifying power. Even the air would be sliced open, and all the areas they passed made space collapse and into havoc. It was extremely frightening.

It was definitely not a simple Elite Armament, as even if it were a Martial Lord who used a simple one would not be able to create such horrifying power.

But that monster was also not a simple character. Currently, it was pushing into the sea and moving, causing the blood-coloured seawater to be forced into the air. That scene was incomparably grand.

But that wasn't even much. The most important part was its powerful strength. It actually caused the normal seawater to have immensely strong power. Even a single droplet could pierce through the clouds and shoot into the sky, to say nothing of such a vast quantity of seawater all available for it to use.

So, even though the special and powerful armament in Yafei's hand was unendingly creating devastating attacks, she could only fight on an even level as the monster. The outcome was indeterminate.

"So powerful. Is this a real battle of Martial Lords?

"The monster is so powerful. It seems like its power can only increase greatly within the water. Borrowing the power of the seawater, it is truly unstoppable."

At that very instant, Chu Feng hid his aura well and were silently observing everything with Little Fishy in the faraway surging waves. After seeing their shocking battle, Chu Feng really couldn't help exclaiming. Exclaiming their powerfulness.

Although at present, as long as Chu Feng used the power of the three lightning, he had no problem becoming a rank one Martial Lord, and obtain strength that only Martial Lords had, and could use the Martial

power that existed in the world, Chu Feng knew very clearly that if he were to fight against the two in air, he would simply not even be able to take a single blow. Although they were both Martial Lords, they were on two completely different levels.

Chapter 628: Taboo Martial Skills

boom rumble rumble

Another incomparably deafening explosion that resonated to areas several miles away. Another intense clash between Yafei and the monster.

“A monster like this has actually wasted almost four hours of my time, yet I am still unable to suppress it. If this becomes widespread news, where will all my face go?!

“I cannot continue dragging this on. I must fight quick and end it quick, or else it will be disadvantageous to me!”

Suddenly, Yafei’s gaze changed. Right hand clenching sword, left hand moving about to cast techniques, and along with the changes happening to her, layers upon layers of mighty aura started to gather towards her body, and layers upon layers of faint radiance started to swirl around her beautiful body.

Yafei’s power was rising rapidly at that moment, and it was getting more and more powerful. It had already infinitely neared the realm of a rank six Martial Lord.

“Human Taboo—Illusory Sword Thrust!”

Suddenly, Yafei shouted explosively, then the pink longsword in her hand bursted with light. Then, she pointed it downwards, and with a boom, an enormous white light came slamming down.

The white light’s speed was extremely quick, and the area it covered was huge as well. Although if one looked at it from afar, it was like a frightening divine lightning descending from the heavens, but if one looked more carefully, they would discover that it was a sword. A super-large sword that contained boundless power and was made by white light.

hualalala

As though if felt how terrifying the huge white light sword was, the monster didn’t meet force with force and block that strike. It flashed away, and bore into the sea.

At the same time, the enormous waves also kept on changing. Originally, the blood-red seawater was roiling about, yet now, they became repetitive patterns, like a turtle's shell, and covered a region of the sea.

boom Just at that instant, the huge white light sword finally came down, and along with a huge explosion, the seawater burst everywhere, becoming wave after wave that surged outwards. The defense the monster made was actually destroyed so easily by the huge white light sword.

"So powerful. I have never seen such a mighty martial skill. Could it be that it's a rank nine martial skill?!" Chu Feng was shocked. Once again, he experienced how powerful Yafei was.

"No. This isn't a rank nine martial skill. It should be a Taboo martial skill," said Eggy.

"Taboo martial skill?!" Hearing those words shocked Chu Feng again. He had heard of Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, but it was the first time he heard of Taboo martial skills. So, he quickly followed with a question. "Eggy, what are talking about when you refer to the Taboo martial skills? Could it be the same as Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, something that is prohibited?"

"No. Though both Forbidden Mysterious Techniques and Taboo martial skills are both prohibited objects, there's an essential difference between the two.

"Martial skills are not powers from the physical body. It uses the energy in the world to create special abilities. Although those abilities are powerful, there's a limit—rank nine is the very end. After rank nine, humans start to receive backlash, injuries, and even death.

"So, martial skills above rank nine are titled as Taboo martial skills to tell humans that unless there is absolutely no other choice, you better not touch this taboo.

"And according to the difference in power, Taboo martial skills are also split into different levels.

“There are four levels I know of: Human Taboo, Earthen Taboo, Heaven Taboo, and Divine Taboo!

“Before, Yafei shouted out ‘Human Taboo’, and in addition to the might she gave off, I suspected that she was going to use a Taboo martial skill. After all, it’s not strange for Taboo martial skills to appear in a place like this. Especially as she is a genius who’s born in a peak and extraordinary power.

“After looking at the power of her martial skill, I am pretty much certain what she used was a Taboo martial skill,” said Eggy extremely surely.

“Eggy, from what you’ve said, doesn’t this mean that after using a Taboo martial skill, the person will definitely receive a backlash?! And how long before the backlash begins?” Chu Feng was quite intelligent; he already roughly understood what Taboo martial skills were. But, he still had to confirm the degree of backlash one obtained from them.

However, if the Taboo martial skill is truly fierce and if the person definitely receives a backlash after usage, then as long as the monster could defend against the Taboo martial skill Yafei currently used, after using it, Yafei would be defeated.

“The backlash of Taboo martial skills is unavoidable, or else they wouldn’t be called Taboo martial skills. Even the lowest level—Human Taboo—is unavoidable.

“If you want to use a Taboo martial skill and also decrease the degree of backlash the most, there are only two methods.

“First is the comprehension of the Taboo martial skill. Deeper the comprehension, the greater one can diminish the fierceness of the backlash.

“Second is to use other sources of powers to activate the Taboo martial skill. With that, even if there is backlash, it wouldn’t be too fierce.

“This Yafei is quite smart. She clearly used the second method—she used the special armament in her hand to activate the Taboo martial skill.

“Although by doing so, it’s possibly because she can’t activate the Taboo martial skill with her own power and has to use the armament, but it must be said that by doing so, it will indeed reduce the backlash she receives,” explained Eggy.

boom

boom

boom

...

As the two of them were talking, Yafei did not stop her attacks. Taboo martial skills were continued to be fired, and one after another, huge white-coloured swords dropped down from the sky.

Every time the sword appeared, it was like the descent of a sun, brightening the dusky world to an incomparably dazzling light. Moreover, every time it came down, a frenzied ripple would spread outwards, flipping everything upside-down.

The monster was clearly inferior to such a ferocious martial skill, but it could do nothing as the skill was too powerful. Yafei didn’t even give it a chance to escape. The only thing it could do was to defend continuously, but as it went on, it became more and more powerless.

boom Finally, with another deafening explosion, waves roared like wild beasts as they surged and water droplets that filled the sky were like sharp blades as they dropped straight down. The monster also made a painful cry as it sank into unconsciousness.

“Hmph. You’re already quite good to have stayed that long under my Human Taboo—Illusory Sword Thrust. But regretfully, you will still die by my hands.

“Let me see what kind of monster you are.” Seeing that she successfully struck the monster, the corners of Yafei’s mouth rose to form a hint of a pleased smile.

But she did not continue to attack and directly use her Taboo martial

skill to kill the monster. She stuck out her hand, causing boundless suction power to surge out. She wanted to draw out the monster from the sea.

"Crap! I can't let her catch the monster, or else who knows how this bastard will torment it!" At that instant, Chu Feng panicked. Although he didn't know who exactly the monster was, he did not wish for it to land into Yafei's hands.

Chapter 629: Instantly Stupefied

But Yafei was really too strong. So strong that he, at present, simply couldn't defeat her. Since he could do nothing, he could only cast his pleading gaze towards Little Fishy and ask, "Little Fishy, can you help Big Brother, and save that monster?"

"Save that man-eating monster? Okay okay! Watch Little Fishy!" After hearing his words, she hurriedly nodded. Not only was there not the slightest bit of fear, it instead looked like a lot of fun to her.

whoosh

At that instant, he saw his surroundings blur past him. Little Fishy's speed was even several times quicker than normal. Before Chu Feng even had a chance to feel what happened, he had appeared before the monster

bam In such a situation, Chu Feng didn't have time to admire Little Fishy's speed. He instantly grabbed the monster.

It was because in the area they were currently in was within Yafei's attacking range. The boundless suction power was not only directed towards the monster. Even they were being affected by the wild suction power as they were sucked upwards from the waves that were rising into the sky.

As for Little Fishy, she was very smart. In the instant Chu Feng grabbed the monster, she turned around, and once again used her light-like speed and swam deep under the sea. With inconceivable speed, they shook away Yafei's horrifying suction power.

"Dammit. I didn't provoke you yet you dare to come and ruin my business? You are indeed in the same group as that monster."

Although Little Fishy's speed was extremely quick, so quick that Yafei couldn't even see her face clearly, such mystical swimming speed made Yafei subconsciously confirm that the one who came and saved the monster was Little Fishy.

whoosh whoosh whoosh...

After going through quite a bit of trouble to defeat the monster yet it was saved in the crucial moment by some person. That made Yafei incomparably furious. She held her pink longsword and wildly jabbed at the sea surface under her.

boom boom boom

Countless petals shed from her sword and covered the surface of the sea beneath like a storm. Again and again they became terrifying ripples, causing maniacal ruin within the sea.

But it was useless, as no matter how much more violent Yafei's attacks were, they could not harm Little Fishy in the slightest because she already left that area and was currently escaping to a distant location.

"Running? Let me see if you are truly as fast as the legends say, that no one can catch up to you!" Feeling that Little Fishy had already left, Yafei coldly snorted, put away her pink longsword, leaped forward, and was prepared to chase after her.

"Mm!"

But just at that moment, her eyes suddenly flashed and her complexion changed greatly. Her originally rosy face instantly turned incomparably pale, lacking any traces of blood.

Even her lips became blue and purple, as though she were poisoned and heavily injured. It seems like death was going to come for her at any moment. It was definitely the backlash of the Taboo martial skill that came after her.

In a situation such as that, even Yafei didn't dare to continue chasing forcefully. She quickly first threw into her mouth a special pellet of medicine, then sat cross-legged in the air. Moving her hands around to activate a healing technique, she fought against the fierce backlash.

Only after a good while did Yafei's face turn for the better. Her pale-white complexion started to redden again, but it was still full of sweat. Even her clothes were drenched and her breathing because rough. It could be seen that the backlash she received was indeed nothing simple.

After the backlash, Yafei also exhaled deeply as if being free from a heavy weight. But, she was currently still a bit calmer than before. Looking at the water surface that had already returned to its serenity, she swept her eyes across the horizon that was, once again, veiled by sunlight, and said rather suspiciously, “There seemed to be two people who saved the monster just now. If one is Little Fishy, who’s the second one?”

Yafei seriously contemplated, yet could not obtain the answer. At the end, she lightly sighed. “That girl’s speed really isn’t exaggerated. There is definitely some sort of mystery on her. If I can get it, perhaps I can even surpass that bastard Murong Xun.

“Hmph. You truly think that I’m yours? Wait until my strength surpasses yours. Who cares if you’re the young archipelago master or not. I don’t want to marry, so I won’t. No one can stop me.” Speaking to there, Yafei suddenly smiled. It was so beautiful, enough to bewitch all of the living.

The reason she smiled was because she recalled something. So, she leaped forward, and as her skirt fluttered, she disappeared, leaving behind only faint bodily fragrance belonging to her.

The place Yafei headed towards was none other than the treasury she locked Chu Feng in. She was thinking that the current Chu Feng very likely had already become a puppet, just in time to be the bait to catch Little Fishy.

However, as she led a hundred Martial Lord subordinates and returned to the treasury, preparing to let them see the fruits of her harvest, her expression changed in an instant.

The treasury built within the Everlasting Sea of Blood was actually completely empty. Not even a single strand of hair remained. The treasury used to store their profits was obviously robbed.

“Who was it? Who dares to steal the things from my Immortal Execution Archipelago?! If I get hold of who did it, I will rend their corpse into ten thousand pieces!

“Men, check! Go check carefully! Investigate every single person who

has the Spirit Formation password to enter the treasury! The robber must be found!" shouted Yafei strictly. Because that place was extremely hidden and that the Spirit Formation was very powerful, her first thought was that someone in the internal parts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago robbed the treasury.

"As you order!" Hearing their commands, the hundred subordinates behind Yafei did not dare to dally at all. After all, the treasury being robbed was not a small matter. So, they quickly left to investigate who was the most suspicious.

After her subordinates left, Yafei continued forward with quick steps. Very soon, she arrived at the second palace. Initially, she hoped that the second palace would be in pristine condition, but after entering, her already furious expression became even stronger, because the second palace was also completely empty.

"God damn. I've only left for less than half a day. Who exactly can plunder so many cultivation resources in this treasury?" After successively seeing two palaces being robbed cleanly, though Yafei was angry, she was also very calm. Her gaze was looking about, and thinking who was the most suspicious.

As she thought, she did not stop walking and continued forward. She arrived at the final palace.

To her, although the treasury being robbed was something that made her extremely angry, in reality, to her or the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the amount of cultivation resources in the treasury still didn't count up to any divinely huge number.

Right now, the most important thing to her was Chu Feng. Only Chu Feng could allow her to more easily catch Little Fishy. In comparison to Little Fishy, the cultivation resources in the treasury weren't much. So, she had to make certain whether Chu Feng was still there or not.

"Heavens! This, this is?!"

However, when she crossed through the final Spirit Formation and entered the palace that should have locked Chu Feng in, her beautiful

face lost all colour, and she was instantly stupefied!

Chapter 630: Who Exactly Are You

At the same time, in the center of the palace, the cross that bound Chu Feng still remained, but no more traces of him did.

Although Chu Feng was gone, there were a few rows of words left in the center of the palace. They were words made by Spirit Formations, and the content was...

"I thank Beauty Yafei for her generous gift; Wuqing shall accept them all. In the future, Wuqing will definitely repay such a chest-rending favour by many times."

"Dammit. It was him!" The smart Yafei immediately understood the truth: the one who robbed the place wasn't a traitor in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It was the person she locked in the treasury.

She thought that this place was indestructible, so imprisoning Chu Feng here to make him a puppet was the best location. Yet, she never would have expected Chu Feng to use some unknown method to not only escape, but to also rob everything, making her take such a huge blow.

At that moment, Yafei gritted her teeth in anger. Even her chest could explode from fury, and she was so angry that smoke could be seen coming from her facial orifices. She clenched her fist tightly and ferociously said, "Wuqing, Wuqing, Wuqing! Damn Wuqing!

"So the one who saved the monster with Little Fishy was you! I've truly underestimated you. I didn't expect you to have this ability. Not only did you escape from this treasury, you even stole a year's worth of profit from my Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"But don't you worry. I have never suffered losses from anyone. Don't even think of being an exception.

"Do you truly think you can escape from my palms? I will let you know what I am capable of. It is something that you cannot even imagine. You will all die!!"

After speaking, Yafei suddenly willed, and formless aura instantly

spread everywhere. With a bang, the Spirit Formation words Chu Feng left behind were shattered, and simultaneously, strong bloodlust filled the entire palace.

As Yafei became enraged, Chu Feng and Little Fishy had already left the Everlasting Sea of Blood. The reason why they were so fast was naturally all because of Little Fishy's speed.

Although they had already left, for safety's sake, they did not remain on top of the sea surface. They entered the sea and laid a Concealment Spirit Formation.

"Who exactly are you?!"

At present, Chu Feng was carefully examining the monster. He then discovered that it was as if the densely-packed water grasses were merged with its body. And even with his Spirit power, he could not detect anything through them. He could not examine its condition. Even using the Heaven's Eyes he could not.

So, that made a thought enter his head—the monster was truly only a monster. Its appearance was indeed only of a special monster. Then yet, why did that monster have such a familiar feel to it? And why didn't it kill him?

whoosh

However, just as Chu Feng was patching up his guesses, the monster suddenly opened its eyes. Immediately as the blood-red eyes appeared, Chu Feng felt extremely dense bloodlust.

But the bloodlust only existed for a moment before disappearing into nothingness, as in the moment the monster saw Chu Feng, its blood-red eyes instantly brightened. Obviously, it recognized him.

"You really do recognize me? Who are you? Where did you come from?" Seeing such a reaction, Chu Feng hurriedly barraged it with questions. He truly wanted to know why the monster didn't kill him, exactly how it was related to him, and whether or not it was truly related to his ancestry.

wuao However, just at that moment, the monster hugged its head with

both hands and knelt on the floor. It started to cry in anguish. Its voice was loud, causing the Spirit Formation they were in to violently shake.

At first, Chu Feng panicked a bit as he faced such a change from the monster because he could not be sure if the monster was truly not going to harm him or not. With its strength, if it truly lost control and wished to harm Chu Feng, he would not be able to do anything at all.

But, Chu Feng gradually discovered that concurrent to the monster's cries of agony, its voice actually changed as well. From the low roar of something like a wild beast, it slowly became a human-like sound.

At the same time, the monster's appearance also changed. The long water grasses started to retract, then at the end, it became a humanoid shape.

It was a female, covered by blue-coloured scales all across her body. But, she still had blood-red eyes and her face was fraught with pain as she screamed miserably.

"It's you?!" After seeing that person, Chu Feng's expression changed greatly too as he felt such disbelief. Because, he had already recognized who the person in front of him was.

She was the number one disciple of the Jade Maiden School from the continent of the Nine Provinces, the one who had a relationship with Chu Feng, Yan Ruyu.

Although she looked nothing like before, as she lost all of her former beautiful complexion, Chu Feng was still able to determine that the female was Yan Ruyu.

Chu Feng was truly a bit befuddled at that moment. He had made many guesses, trying to speculate the identity of the monster, but it being Yan Ruyu didn't even cross his mind.

After all, the monster was currently so strong, yet Yan Ruyu's strength back then wasn't very strong. Even though she practiced Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, it shouldn't be possible for her to reach her present stage of strength.

“Scram! Quickly scram! Or else, I will kill you!”

Just at that moment, the monster suddenly roared furiously at Chu Feng. Though its voice was a bit rigid and full of resentment, the tone did indeed belong to Yan Ruyu, no doubt.

“Waa, now this is interesting. Chu Feng, this ruthless monster that refines humans is actually your former lover! No wonder she isn’t willing to kill you. Hehe.”

After recognizing Yan Ruyu, even Eggy was surprised. But, she was different from Chu Feng. As the bystander, she clearly had an attitude of schadenfreude as she looked at the drama, lacking any fear of aggravating the situation.

“Why has this happened? How can it be you?!” Upon recognizing Yan Ruyu, Chu Feng’s gaze glittered, his heart in complete disorder.

Because looking at it from a certain point of view, the reason why Yan Ruyu became what she is today was all because of Chu Feng. If Chu Feng hadn’t forced a “relationship” with Yan Ruyu, it wouldn’t have made the Forbidden Mysterious Technique she practiced in lose control.

Although it was Yan Ruyu in the wrong at first, after all, Chu Feng hadn’t had too severe of a loss. It was only because he wanted to vent his anger that he turned a female with quite a good future into her current appearance that looked neither like a human nor a ghost. Deep in Chu Feng’s heart, the only thing surging about was regret.

“Wa ha ha ha ha ha!

“How can’t it not be her?!”

However, just as Chu Feng’s heart was in chaos—having quite some trouble accepting the truth in front of his eyes—Yan Ruyu suddenly laughed sinisterly, and extremely strangely as well. Even her speaking voice became abnormally sharp.

Looking back at Yan Ruyu in front of his eyes, Chu Feng discovered that the scales on her body had already faded away, turning her back into the former alluring, great beauty.

Seductive curves, snow-white skin, pretty face, bright eyes, fiery, exceptional body, all of that was not covered by anything at present. In complete bare nakedness, it appeared before Chu Feng.

But facing such changes from Yan Ruyu, Chu Feng lightly furrowed his brows, as if he understood something, then fiercely and austerely asked, “Who exactly are you?!”

Chapter 631: It Will Be Very Miserable

“Wa ha ha ha!

“Who am I? Am I not Yan Ruyu?

“Don’t tell me you don’t recognize my appearance?” Yan Ruyu’s provocative body made a bewitching action at Chu Feng.

“You are not Yan Ruyu. Who are you?” Chu Feng firmly believed that the person in front of him wasn’t Yan Ruyu. At least her tone of speech didn’t seem like hers.

“Chu Feng, how can you be like this? Have you forgotten what you’ve done to me back then in the Azure Province?” Yan Ruyu had a face full of grievance, but her eyes glittered peculiarly.

“How do you know I’m Chu Feng?!” Chu Feng was many times more shocked. The person in front of him even saw through his Transformational Mask. Not only did she see his real appearance, she even knew his and Yan Ruyu’s past.

“Haha, it is merely a simple mask. It can trick ordinary humans, but it cannot trick this demon. I already recognize who you were in the first glance I cast at you.” Yan Ruyu then abruptly cackled complacently.

“You really aren’t Yan Ruyu. Who are you? Why are posing as her?” Chu Feng grasped the holes in her words and asked ferociously.

“I am indeed not Yan Ruyu; but now, I am Yan Ruyu because a long time ago I have merged into one with her.

“The reason why Yan Ruyu can have such powerful strength right now is all because of me. She will become even stronger because of me.

“As for you, although you’re the person who released me, since you know my secret, I will not allow you to continue surviving. Yan Ruyu isn’t willing to kill you, but I am.” As she spoke, Yan Ruyu’s complexion suddenly turned fierce. At the same time, boundless killing intent surged out, instantly enveloping Chu Feng inside.

“No!” However, just as the killing intent came it instantly vanished. Yan Ruyu suddenly hugged her head again and roared at Chu Feng, “Leave, scram!”

“God damn, you useless girl. Isn’t he the one who did this you? Didn’t you swear to kill him? Right now, he’s in front of you! Why aren’t you killing him? And why, again and again, are you forgiving him!” The sharp and chilly voice rang out again.

“Shut up! He isn’t the one who made me into this state, it’s you! I cannot continue allowing you to use my body to commit these heinous acts! I will kill you.”

“Kill me? To kill me is to kill you. Are you going to kill yourself? Because of the wicked humans, you’re going to kill yourself?”

“To prevent you from killing any more people, I am willing to commit suicide.”

“Haha, how righteous and benevolent! But sadly, this body no longer belongs to you. Watch obediently on how I slaughter this damn man who tainted you.”

Finally, Yan Ruyu’s real voice was suppressed, and the gaze full of coldness and killing intent was cast towards Chu Feng once again. “Brat, you’ve got quite the charm. You actually made that idiotic girl willing to oppose me.”

“Who are you. What do you want for you to let Yan Ruyu go?” Chu Feng was no idiot, so the scene that just happened already roughly told him about some things.

The one in front of his eyes was indeed Yan Ruyu, no doubt; but there seemed to be another existence that was occupying Yan Ruyu’s physical body. It was a very powerful existence, and it was the one that was doing all sorts of immoral acts such as refining humans and also the one that turned Yan Ruyu into such a monster.

“Who I am is not important, and no matter what I will not let Yan Ruyu go because she is already one with me. We live and die together. We exist

and perish together. I am her, and she is me.

“But, you don’t need to worry about anything because my existence will make this foolish, extremely ordinary, and completely unknown girl into a deity in this world. A ruler that will take over this land.

“The one you should worry about is yourself, and the little girl by your side. Both of you will be refined by me, and your powers will be used by me. Die!” Yan Ruyu’s gaze turned blood-red and her bloodlust was revealed. As she spoke, she aimed to attack Chu Feng.

hmm However, just at that moment, a faint light suddenly shone from Yan Ruyu’s stomach. Chu Feng saw it clearly: it was a mark.

“Ahh~~~” Coincident with the emergence of the mark, Yan Ruyu instantly cried out, as if she were bearing some sort of pain.

Simultaneously, Yan Ruyu’s entire body changed greatly once again. First were the blue-coloured scales. They grew and covered her snow-white skin again, then from the gaps between the scales, strands of water grasses sprung forth. In only a blink she returned to her former monster appearance.

boom Suddenly, a huge explosion rang out. The Concealment Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid was shattered, and as it shattered, boundless pressure also enveloped them, wrapping around Chu Feng, Little Fishy, and also the monster.

“It’s you?!” Raising his head and looking, Chu Feng’s pupils couldn’t help shrinking because through the seawater, he could see a beautiful body standing on the air atop the surface of the sea. It was Yafei.

“Hmph. Do you truly think you could escape from my hands?” Yafei held a pink longsword in her hand and her skirt fluttered despite the lack of wind. She gave off an impressive atmosphere while fully showing her killing intent.

“I didn’t expect her skills to be this high-level. She actually left behind a mark without anyone knowing on Yan Ruyu’s body.” At that instant, Chu Feng had a revelation. He knew that the mark on Yan Ruyu’s stomach

was definitely left behind by Yafei. That was also why Yafei could so quickly find them again and lock onto their position.

aooo~~~~ Transforming into monster state, Yan Ruyu seemed no longer able to use human words and after making a furious and bitter roar, it wanted to flee.

“Little Fishy, run!” At the same time, Chu Feng also quickly grabbed onto Little Fishy’s feet and wanted to immediately escape.

“You want to escape? I have come prepared today. Not a single one of you should even think of escaping.”

But as she looked at the three people who were going to escape, Yafei was not afraid in the slightest as she knew she had backing. Her hands intersected, then used a special technique. Afterwards, she lightly snorted, and shouted, “Seal!”

Then with a boom, radiance shone everywhere in that area. Countless symbols appeared and formed an enormous cage. It imprisoned Chu Feng and the others within, sealing all escape.

“Crap! Before she appeared, she already hiddenly laid an imprisonment formation!” shouted Chu Feng in his mind.

Although the monster still had very powerful strength, after all, its injuries caused by Yafei before had yet to be healed. Currently, its power was greatly diminished and it simply could not destroy the formation, let alone fight against Yafei.

As for Little Fishy, although, when she faced dangerous things, the guarding light would appear, the formation was only locking them in and not harming them. So, Little Fishy’s powerful and special power of protection had no chance to be used.

hualalala The formation started to shrink, and at the end, became a Spirit Formation cage that was just big enough to hold the three of them. It departed from the sea and arrived in front of Yafei.

After raising the Spirit Formation cage, Yafei laid more and more powerful Spirit Formations, making it so the cage was indestructible. At

least, Chu Feng and the others were unable to open it.

Only after doing all that did she strangely smile, and said while looking at the three in the cage, “The three of you will die very miserably.”

Chapter 632: Qiushui Fuyan

“Young lady, it’s fine if you want to kill that monster, but why involve others?

“Especially that little girl. She does not seem to even be over three years old. Are you going to kill her too?

“If you do this, what difference is there between you and that monster? As a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, you don’t feel ashamed?”

But just as Ya Fei felt she was going to have her way, a voice that wasn’t very loud yet entered everyone’s hearts and shook their souls suddenly rang out.

After hearing that voice, Chu Feng’s and the others’ faces couldn’t help changing as they started to look around everywhere because they could tell, from the voice alone, that the person who came was absolutely not a simple person.

“Who are you? Being so sneaky... Are you’re also with these monsters?” Ya Fei also looked around everywhere, but she could not discover traces of the speaker.

“You don’t need to ask me who am I. Regardless, let the three of the go and quickly leave.” That voice sounded once again. The domineeringness in it was fully explicit, looking down upon Ya Fei entirely.

“Hmph. Indeed, you’re with that monster. Don’t even think of hiding around and concealing yourself. If you want to save them, you must bring out some strength. Or else, your empty bluffing will not scare me.”

Although Ya Fei did say those words, clearly, she was also afraid. Taking steps forward, afterimages were instantly created. She used a powerful bodily martial skill, and like light, flew towards the distant horizon.

boom

“Ahh!”

However, when Ya Fei flew for less than several miles, she collided into an invisible wall. The forceful power bounced her back as a mouthful of blood was sprayed out of her mouth.

At the same time, a golden light flashed across in the place Ya Fei crashed into. Although it was only a flash, it was, doubtlessly, golden light. The thing blocking Ya Fei was a golden Spirit Formation.

“Dammit. Who are you? Do you dare to reveal yourself and let me see who exactly is protecting these heinous monsters?” Ya Fei panicked slightly. The realm of Gold-cloak World Spiritists wasn’t something that ordinary people could enter—it required one to be at least a rank nine Martial Lord.

At present, the person who was obstructing her was actually a Gold-cloak World Spiritists. It made her aware that the current situation was not going well because today, at least with her strength, she would not be able to take away Chu Feng, Little Fishy, and the monster.

But, that made her very bitter. So, she really wanted to know who the person was, so in the future it would assist her in taking revenge for today’s events.

“Little girl, you have a way with words. Since you want to know who I am so much, I’ll grant you your wish.” Finally, the voice rang out again, but this time, it actually came by Chu Feng’s side.

hmm At the same time the voice rang out, the Spirit Formation cage that imprisoned Chu Feng and the others actually broke on its own. Simultaneously, two people appeared beside Chu Feng.

When he turned his head to look, Chu Feng couldn’t help be greatly shocked. Currently, beside him were two females. One young and beautiful, and also had quite some gracefulness. That person Chu Feng recognized—Jiang Wanshi of the Lovers Terrace.

And by her side stood another female. She wore a white long skirt as well and the skirt’s appearance was very dignified, but it could still be seen that her figure was very good, not the slightest bit inferior to Yan Ruyu and Ya Fei.

However, a thin fabric was veiled over her face. Despite it being thin, it still covered her appearance, and only a pair of walnut-sized eyes could be seen.

Although it covered her face, from the outline it could still be seen that she was a beauty. At that instant, Jiang Wanshi, who had quite an outstanding appearance, as she stood next to her, clearly seemed quite overshadowed.

That wasn't because of her appearance. After all, she covered her face. Although one could conjecture that she was a beauty, there was no way to determine that her beauty truly prevailed over Jiang Wanshi's.

The thing she surpassed Jiang Wanshi with was her atmosphere only. Atmosphere that made her seem like she left the secular world. It was too striking. Even Ya Fei's devastatingly beautiful complexion could only remain equal before such a cultivated atmosphere, and not surpass it.

With such an outstanding appearance, such an outstanding atmosphere, such powerful strength, in addition to appearing along with Jiang Wanshi, and her being so respectful that woman, without even thinking, Chu Feng knew who she was. She was definitely the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, the most beautiful female back then that stunned the Eastern Sea Region, Qiushui Fuyan.

"Who are you? Do you dare to lift your veil and reveal your true appearance?" Chu Feng knew that she was Qiushui Fuyan, but Ya Fei clearly didn't. She, who was often arrogant, did not know her limits and questioned Qiushui Fuyan while pointing at her.

"Shut up! You think you can speak to my master like that?!" Just at that moment, Jiang Wanshi couldn't bear Ya Fei's ignorance any longer and shouted at her.

"Hmph. Do you think you, a little one in the Heaven realm, are worthy to speak to me like that?" Ya Fei was enraged. Without speaking any more, she prepared to attack Jiang Wanshi.

"Ahh!" However, before allowing Ya Fei to attack, Qiushui Fuyan's brows lightly knitted together. Formless power then explosively surged

out of her body, forcing Ya Fei, who was in the air, back several steps. Even on her pretty face emerged some paleness.

“Damn. You actually dare to attack me? Do you know who I am?” said Ya Fei fiercely as she was unwilling to accept the current situation.

“Hoh.” Qiushui Fuyan lightly smiled at Ya Fei’s heckling, then said, “Ya Fei, fiancée of the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun. Your parents have quite good positions in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and your grandfather, Ya Zongyun, is even less simple, being the head of the Nine Immortals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Am I correct?”

“Hmph. Since you know who I am, you still dare to be so impolite to me? Do you not fear my grandfather, nor the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” asked Ya Fei.

“Fear? You truly think that your Immortal Execution Archipelago is invincible in this world?” Suddenly, Qiushui Fuyan furrowed her brows, then a hint of a cold glare flashed into her eyes.

ta After the cold glare appeared, even Ya Fei’s complexion changed greatly and she couldn’t help taking one step back because within the cold glare, she felt killing intent.

“Remember. I am Daoist Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace. Today, I will take these three people away. If you have any dissatisfaction, you can return and report it.

“No matter if it’s your grandfather, or your Immortal Execution Archipelago, if any of you wish to find me for revenge, you can directly come to the Lovers Terrace to find me.

“But now, before I have a change of heart, you better scram!” shouted Qiushui Fuyan coldly.

“You...” Ya Fei was extremely displeased by being frightened by such a person, but recalling her cold glare in her gaze just now, as well as her attitude that didn’t put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in her eyes at all, she could only bite down on her teeth, then after shuffling her feet a

few times where she stood, she turned around, and flew back towards the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

Chapter 633: Ridding Monster

“Junior Wuqing pays his respect to Senior Qiushui!” After Ya Fei left, Chu Feng quickly turned around and saluted to Qiushui Fuyan.

“I know you have things you want to say, but now, I need to first take care of this monster. It will not be late to say those words later.” Qiushui Fuyan waved her hand at Chu Feng, indicating for him and Little Fishy to stay at farther distance from Jiang Wanshi.

“As you wish.” Seeing that, Chu Feng did not dare to move slowly as he knew that Qiushui Fuyan wanted to help Yan Ruyu. So, he quickly brought Little Fishy and backed away to the side.

“You wicked monster! You dare to perform abominable acts using a human’s body and hunt them for cultivation? Today, I will bring you to justice.” Qiushui Fuyan extended both hands and speedily moved them about to cast a technique. They were very quick, and Chu Feng couldn’t even see her movements clearly. He could only see countless blurs flash past. Her hand technique was profound, and simply unfathomable.

wuaooo~~~~

Seeing the disadvantageous situation, Yan Ruyu started to run around everywhere, but it was useless as the formation Qiushui Fuyan laid was really too strong. There was simply no chance for her to escape. At present, she could only bear the anguish of the formation Qiushui Fuyan laid and unceasingly cry out painfully.

“Junior Wuqing, I am truly sorry to have let you suffered. But, it was my master’s intents so I could not do anything at all.” Just at that moment, Jiang Wanshi walked up to Chu Feng’s side.

“Senior Jiang, what exactly happened?” asked Chu Feng puzzledly. He was really a bit confused.

“Hoh, so it’s like this. Actually, when Junior Wuqing came to the Lovers Terrace and asked to visit my master, she was there.

“But, my master didn’t want to see Junior Wuqing and even specially

told me hiddenly to tell you that she wasn't there, and that she had went to the Everlasting Sea of Blood to capture the monster.

"And shortly after Junior Wuqing left, my master brought me to this place and was hiddenly protecting you. Back then, when you were caught by the monster, my master and I were there. At first, she wanted to make her move and save you, and also eradicate the monster along the way.

"But, she didn't expect the monster to not kill Junior Wuqing. Seeing that there was something strange going on, she didn't show herself. Only until today when Ya Fei wanted to kill you was she willing to appear," said Jiang Wanshi, explaining.

"So it's like that." At that instant, Chu Feng felt rather helpless. He knew that Qiushui Fuyan didn't trust him and was intentionally observing him secretively. Likely, Qiushui Fuyan currently already knew that he was wearing the Transformational Mask to conceal his real face, and also knew that he was actually called Chu Feng.

But the thing he felt most helpless towards was that he didn't detect anything regarding Qiushui Fuyan's tracking. If he had to blame something he could only blame his own lack of strength. In front of a powerful expert, he was still too petty.

"Junior Wuqing, my master does have good intentions, so I hope you won't mind," advised Jiang Wanshi with a smile, as if she knew Chu Feng's thoughts. As she spoke, she even cast a glance at Little Fishy in Chu Feng's embrace. After seeing such a cute Little Fishy, she actually couldn't help extending her hand to touch her beautiful face. "This little girl is truly adorable. In the future, she will definitely grow up to be an exceptional great beauty."

"Pah!" However, before Jiang Wanshi touched Little Fishy, she abruptly evaded and even opened her small mouth and spat out some spittle at Jiang Wanshi. If she didn't have quick reactions, that large spit would have landed on her face.

"Little Fishy, don't be disrespectful." Seeing that, Chu Feng was very shocked. He never expected Little Fishy to be so impolite to others.

“Hmph.” Little Fishy disagreed with Chu Feng’s reprimand so she raised her head and pouted, exhibiting a cute appearance of you can’t tell me what to do.

“Hoh, this child is truly adorable.” But what surprised Chu Feng was that as she faced Little Fishy’s previous action, not only was Jiang Wanshi not angry, she even lightly chuckled as she covered her mouth. Her fondness of Little Fishy actually increased and didn’t diminish.

boom rumble rumble But just at that moment, an explosion came from the formation Qiushui Fuyan laid.

Looking towards the origin of the sound, Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi both couldn’t help but gasp. At that very instant, the formation was filled with golden Spirit Formation chains, and those chains were tightly binding Yan Ruyu.

But Yan Ruyu was even resisting against such a powerful formation. Chu Feng and the others could clearly see layers and layers of boundless power opposing the golden chains.

However, that wasn’t even much. Most importantly, the powerful Qiushui Fuyan actually had an expression of strain. Her forehead was full of bead-sized sweat droplets. Even her hands were lightly trembling, as if enduring some sort of pressure.

“Myriad Technique Demon Execution Formation, seal!” Suddenly, Qiushui Fuyan hands, which were casting a technique, changed from their usual pattern and she lightly yelled. The vast golden formation started to alter, becoming a small-scale cage that was rapidly shrinking. Finally, the cage became humanoid and locked Yan Ruyu inside like a coffin.

“Hahahahaha! Foolish humans! To want to exorcise me is not something you can do! We are already one. To kill me is to kill her, there is no other choice. Hahahaha...” But just at that moment, sharp and mad shouts came from the humanoid coffin. It was from the monster in Yan Ruyu’s body.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

However, Qiushui Fuyan ignored the monster's loud yells. With one hand, she drew something in the air. A golden symbol was then formed.

After the golden symbol landed on top of the humanoid coffin, from an initially quivering state it calmed down, and the monster's shouts also vanished.

"Wuqing thanks Senior for the help!" Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly went forward and paid his respects to Qiushui Fuyan.

"Wuqing? Aren't you called Chu Feng?!" However, hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan lightly frowned, and a hint of displeasure flashed past.

Chu Feng could do nothing about that situation, thinking that indeed, his conversation with Yan Ruyu before was all heard by Qiushui Fuyan.

But what happened had happened, and Chu Feng could not do anything about it. He could only say with an apologetic face, "This junior did not intend to offend, but my master gave me an order and Chu Feng didn't dare to betray it, so I could only walk in the Eastern Sea Region with a fake name."

"Hmph. Do you even need to hide it from me? Your master truly dotes on you huh?!"Qiushui Fuyan glared at Chu Feng once again, the jealousy in her words evident, but also containing a bit of suspicion.

"..." And as he faced Qiushui Fuyan words, Chu Feng was quite speechless and didn't know how to respond.

"You don't need to thank me. The monster in your friend's body is not simple at all. To want to kill me means that it must be expelled from your friend's body.

"But, it had already merged with her at an earlier time, and with my strength, I simply cannot force it to leave the body. So, I can only temporarily seal it," said Qiushui Fuyan.

"Senior Qiushui, is my friend all right now?" asked Chu Feng concernedly.

Chapter 634: Head of the Nine Immortals

“All right? You look at her. If she were all right, then she wouldn’t have been sealed by me. If you want her to be all right, the monster must be taken out of her body.

“But, you don’t need to worry. I have an old friend and her Spirit Formation techniques are quite superb. She also grasps techniques ordinary people do not know of, and she studies a lot about this kind of monster. Perhaps she could even help your friend,” said Qiushui Fuyan.

“Then sorry to trouble you, Senior.” Chu Feng hurried thanked her upon hearing her words.

If it were before, maybe Chu Feng wouldn’t have been so worried about Yan Ruyu’s life; however, after seeing the pain she had endured, and especially as she didn’t kill him, he truly wanted to help Yan Ruyu out. After all, looking at it from a certain perspective, the reason why Yan Ruyu turned into her current state was really because of him.

“First, stop feigning concern. Wanting to save her is fine, but before that, I still have some things I wish to ask you. Follow me.”

As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she flicked her hand, calling Chu Feng and the others all to her, and simultaneously, was already flying.

“Senior Qiushui, the Everlasting Sea of Blood is ahead. Could it be that you want to go there?” However, looking in the direction Qiushui Fuyan was heading towards, Chu Feng felt greatly confused.

“That’s right. I am heading to the Everlasting Sea of Blood for a night’s rest,” she answered.

“But…”

“But what? But that’s the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s territory?

“Hmph. Others fear the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but I do not.” Qiushui Fuyan coldly smiled. Judging by her tone she didn’t put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in her eyes at all.

And Chu Feng could understand why Qiushui Fuyan acted like so. After all, he had learnt some things from his master, Qiu Canfeng.

At present, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was indeed strong, that was something indisputable; but after all, in the times when the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church prospered, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wasn't really anything.

So, no matter how much stronger the Immortal Execution Archipelago became, in the eyes of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church, it was nothing more than a force that rose in power because of the lack of stronger forces in the Eastern Sea Region. Especially for people who had very high positions before in the Eastern Sea Region such as Qiushui Fuyan and Qiu Canfeng, to an even greater degree, they looked down on the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

But Chu Feng knew that it was indeed very strong. It was something he could see from what he gathered after arriving in the Eastern Sea Region.

And even though Qiushui Fuyan was powerful, in terms of aura, she was quite a distance from Qiu Canfeng and Huangfu Haoyue. It meant that even if she had entered the realm of Martial Kings, she likely didn't have a very high rank.

With her cultivation, no matter how one looked at it, declaring war at the Immortal Execution Archipelago was too far of a stretch. If it were one person, then it would be fine; but now, bringing them to the Everlasting Sea of Blood for a rest... If the Immortal Execution Archipelago coincidentally had reinforcements, then that would not be a good situation.

However, Qiushui Fuyan was a senior, after all, and her nature was very domineering. So even though Chu Feng felt that it wasn't a good arrangement, he couldn't say much else, and could only follow.

Like that, Chu Feng and the others swaggeringly entered the Everlasting Sea of Blood, and even rented a little floating island for resting.

News about this also quickly spread.

For the uninitiated, it wasn't really much, as it was only some important person who came to the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Some people even felt that it was good news because that person would definitely provide some assistance in catching the monster.

But to Ya Fei, she was so angry she couldn't sit relaxed. The angry her almost destroyed her own residence.

"Dammit, bastard, this is truly despicable! She even dares to come to my Everlasting Sea of Blood for a rest? She is goading me! She is goading my Immortal Execution Archipelago!

"Daoist Qiushui? Lovers Terrace? Pah!

"If you back me into a wall, I'll stamp your entire Lovers Terrace flat! Go ahead, be arrogant, be wild!" Ya Fei was so angry even her internal organs could explode. She, who had no place to vent her anger, could only roar and curse and smash and break things in her own room to release her fury.

"Lady Ya Fei, this servant wishes to see you for a matter." Though just at that moment, a female voice suddenly rang out from the outside.

"I won't listen to anything, scram right now!" Ya Fei was currently in a rage, so how could she be in the mood to listen to such troubling things? She howled furiously at the door, and as she howled, she attached a strand of pressure, which then pierced through the door, and forced the female, a rank three Martial Lord, away in the air, injuring her slightly.

A hint of displeasure and anger emerged onto the female's face when she was treated like that by Ya Fei. After all, she was a Martial Lord too, and her rank wasn't low. In front of Ya Fei perhaps she wasn't much, but in front of others she was definitely a great genius.

Resentment birthed from her heart when a person such as herself had to service another person like slave. But when she occasionally even needed to bear Ya Fei's bursts of anger, any person would feel displeased.

However, not only did she dare not let a hint of displeasure and anger manifest, those emotions even flashed by, and replacing them was her

usual smile of both respect and fear.

It was because as long as she thought of Ya Fei's position in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, she really didn't dare to show bad temper. Especially when she saw the letter currently in her hands, even more so, she didn't dare to show bad temper.

Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago was powerful at present, there were very, very few people who were like Ya Fei—having a hundred Martial Lords behind her, and all of them being young, beautiful, outstandingly talented females.

The reason why Ya Fei could have such treatment was not only because she was the fiancée of the young archipelago master, Murong Xun; more importantly, it was because Ya Fei had a powerful grandfather.

In the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the strongest person was the archipelago master. Other than him, there were also nine others who held extremely strong strength and controlled a region of land. These nine people were people who had accomplished great services and deeds for the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

People called the nine of them the Nine Immortals, and Ya Fei's grandfather was the head of the Nine Immortals. It could be said that her grandfather's position in the Immortal Execution Archipelago was "under one person and above ten thousand". Naturally, many people did not dare offend such a person. It was also the main reason why Ya Fei could be so arrogant and disdainful, without fearing others.

"Lady Ya Fei, it's a letter from Lord First Immortal." After organizing her emotions, the female, the rank three Martial Lord, once again spoke out with respect.

bam And upon hearing those words, the tightly shut door suddenly opened, and Ya Fei's beautiful body also appeared in front of the door.

After seeing the letter in the female's hands, Ya Fei immediately took it away, tore it open, and started reading.

The more she read, the more the fury on the face subsided. At the end,

she went from angry to joyful, as her face brimmed with an incomparably dazzling smile. She put away the letter, and said to the female, “Prepare well. Tonight, my grandfather will come. But remember, do not let anyone know about this. This news must remain a secret.”

Chapter 635: Inquiring Ancestry

"Yes ma'am!" Hearing that the head of the Nine Immortals was coming, the female's face instantly changed, and even her body couldn't help lightly trembling as she hurriedly excused herself and went to prepare for his arrival.

The head of the Nine Immortals was definitely a true important character in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In the entirety of the archipelago, other than the master, not a single person dared to be disrespectful to him. Even the currently flourishing young archipelago master had to face him with reverence and call him "Senior First Immortal", let alone a little insignificant person like her?

"Hmph. This damn Daoist Qiushui. You're not afraid of my Immortal Execution Archipelago, and not afraid of my grandfather, right? Let me see how haughty you can be when my grandfather appears in front of you tonight." At that instant, not only was there a bright smile on Ya Fei's face, there was even a hint of a sinister expression that yearned for what was to come.

Chu Feng and the others did not know that Ya Fei's grandfather, Ya Zongyun, was coming to the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

At present, Qiushui Fuyan had already called Chu Feng to her resting residence and chatted with him alone.

"Chu Feng, you said you're his disciple, but I cannot only trust your words. If you want to prove your identity, you must answer a few of my questions," asked Qiushui Fuyan with a soft but dignified voice as she sat on the middle seat in the living room.

"Senior Qiushui, please ask," replied Chu Feng respectfully while he stood in the center of the living room.

"Do you know my family and given name, and do you know your master's family and given name?" asked Qiushui Fuyan.

"My master is called Huangfu Haoyue, you are called Qiushui Fuyan.

The two of you were originally lovers, and respectively the Holy Son and Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church," replied Chu Feng.

Hearing those words, Qiushui Fuyan instantly knitted her brows, a hint of a special emotion emerging into her eyes, and with a swish, she stood up, came up to Chu Feng, and asked very forcefully, "Where is he right now? Is he still well?!"

"Eh..." Chu Feng was a bit speechless as Qiushui Fuyan acted like that. He could see she was very worried about Huangfu Haoyue and also missed him a lot. Their feelings were indeed not simple.

"What? Is he not well? Where is he right now, hurry up and tell me!" Qiushui Fuyan grabbed Chu Feng's shoulders and continued asking.

At that instant, he bit down on his teeth, and after readying himself, deciding to speak the truth, he deactivated his Transformational Mask, returning to his former young appearance, and said, "I am sorry, Senior Qiushui. Junior Chu Feng has lied to you."

"Lie? What do you mean?" Seeing Chu Feng's change, Qiushui Fuyan frowned lightly and couldn't help taking a few steps back and re-evaluated the current Chu Feng.

It was because even though Chu Feng, at present, still had the aura of a rank one Martial Lord, great changes occurred to his appearance—he seemed just like a young man. At his age, with his cultivation, it represented three words: extremely brilliant talent.

But the thing Qiushui Fuyan was most alert of wasn't Chu Feng's cultivation or talent, it was why he had to lie to her. She was thinking exactly what intents Chu Feng was hiding, and how he knew about the matter between her and Huangfu Haoyue.

"Senior Qiushui, although Huangfu Haoyue and I aren't master and disciple, we still have an inseparable relationship," said Chu Feng.

"What relationship? You better reply honestly, or else I will take your life at any time," said Qiushui Fuyan fiercely. Her distrust in Chu Feng currently reached the extremities.

“This junior grew up in the continent of the Nine Provinces, but I wasn’t born in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“I do not know who my biological parents are, and I only know that Senior Huangfu brought me to the continent of the Nine Provinces,” said Chu Feng.

“What? You are?” Hearing those words, Qiushui Fuyan’s gaze changed once again, but that special gaze only flashed by, then she asked fiercely again, “What relationship you have with Huangfu Haoyue is unrelated to me. Right now, you are posing as his disciple and coming to find me. What goal do you have?”

“Senior, I want to know who my parents are, but right now, I cannot find Senior Huangfu. So, I could only come and find you to ask. After all, you had such a close relationship with Senior Huangfu before, so I’ve thought that you possibly knew of my ancestry,” said Chu Feng.

“Then how did you know I was here? Huangfu Haoyue told you?” asked Qiushui Fuyan.

“No, it was another person.”

“Who?”

“Qiu Canfeng.”

“What? It’s him?” Upon hearing Qiu Canfeng’s name, a surprised expression emerged into Qiushui Fuyan’s eyes. Afterwards, she asked, “What relationship do you have with Qiu Canfeng?”

From start to finish, Chu Feng kept on looking at Qiushui Fuyan’s reactions. He discovered when he mentioned Qiu Canfeng, though she was shocked, there were no bad reactions. It could be seen that she did not dislike Qiu Canfeng, so Chu Feng said, “Without hiding anything, Qiu Canfeng is the one who’s my master.”

“You’re Qiu Canfeng’s disciple?

“Havoc, this is complete havoc. You were clearly brought to the Nine Provinces by Huangfu Haoyue, so how did you become Qiu Canfeng’s

disciple?" Qiushui Fuyan was very confused.

"Senior, you do know about my ancestry! Please, tell me." Hearing those words, Chu Feng quickly bowed with clasped hands.

"I don't know about your ancestry. I only know a few things about you. If you want me to tell you, that is fine, but before that, you must seriously answer a few of my questions."

After that, Qiushui Fuyan asked Chu Feng about many things. Chu Feng didn't hide anything, and told her how Huangfu Haoyue brought him to the Chu family, getting them to take care of Chu Feng, and also how he met Qiu Canfeng.

However, Chu Feng also cleverly concealed a bit of the truth. Although he said how he met Qiu Canfeng and how he took him as a disciple, Chu Feng didn't tell Qiushui Fuyan about him being in a bind.

As for Huangfu Haoyue going mad, naturally, Chu Feng didn't mention that. Most likely, the reason why Huangfu Haoyue went mad was because of his father, and since Qiushui Fuyan and Huangfu Haoyue were so close, if she knew Huangfu Haoyue went insane because of him, then he couldn't be certain whether Qiushui Fuyan would attack him to avenge Huangfu Haoyue.

"Ahh, I knew the Heavenly Road was nothing simple. But the Pope didn't listen to my advices, and even Huangfu Haoyue didn't believe me. Indeed, they encountered a great disaster in the Heavenly Road." After knowing everything, Qiushui Fuyan suddenly sighed, then looked at Chu Feng and said, "I know that when the Burning Heaven Church led the entire church to move into the Holy Land of Martialism yet were all annihilated. Only Huangfu Haoyue himself was able to escape, and as he escaped, he even brought out a child, and that child was you."

"They were all annihilated? On the Heavenly Road to the Holy Land of Martialism? Senior Qiushui, what exactly happened? Could you tell me?!" At that instant, Chu Feng was elated. He picked up a few things: his ancestry was very possibly related to the Holy Land of Martialism as well as the Heavenly Road.

“No, I don’t know much about your background, nor do I know what happened back then in the Heavenly Road. When Huangfu Haoyue went to find me, he only left behind a sentence then left.

“It was ‘Do not enter the Heavenly Road’,” said Qiushui Fuyan.

Chapter 636: Little Fishy Has Disappeared

"Only that one sentence? Senior Huangfu didn't say anything else to you?" asked Chu Feng, unsatisfied.

However, Qiushui Fuyan only shook her head and smiled. "He had always never feared anything. Although he was the Holy Son, his strength had already surpassed the Pope. Is there anyone in the Eastern Sea Region who could defeat him?

"But back then, when he saw me, his face was fraught with terror, as though he had taken a huge shock.

"I can't imagine what kind of thing, or what kind of event, was able to frighten him to that degree. However, I am sure that all the answers are in the Heavenly Road."

"I understand. Thank you, Senior, for your pointers." Chu Feng was no fool, so he understood the meaning behind Qiushui Fuyan's words. It was that regardless of what Huangfu Haoyue met, and exactly what Chu Feng's ancestry was, only by going into the Heavenly Road could they be revealed.

Although Qiushui Fuyan wasn't really able to give Chu Feng an answer, she provided him with an extremely important clue. As Chu Feng speculated, Huangfu Haoyue did indeed meet some sort of change in the Heavenly Road. His own ancestry most likely would be revealed in that place too.

"Okay, Chu Feng. It's no longer early, rest soon. Tomorrow morning, we will depart," said Qiushui Fuyan.

"Senior, may I ask where we are heading towards tomorrow?" asked Chu Feng.

"Have you heard of the Misty Peaks?" said Qiushui Fuyan.

"I have." Chu Feng nodded his head. Naturally, he'd heard of the Misty Peaks. He knew that there was a preeminent hidden expert at the top of the Misty Peaks called Lady Piaomiao.

Though the reason why Chu Feng heard of the Misty Peaks wasn't because of Lady Piaomiao, it was because of her four disciples.

Not only were Lady Piaomiao's four disciples cultivation geniuses, they were even four beauties with exceptional appearances. They were called Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue.1

Not only did those four women have outstanding cultivation, they were even skilled in the Four Arts as well as in singing and dancing. They were the perfect females in the hearts of countless males.

Especially that Qiu Zhu who was recognized as a beauty comparable to Ya Fei. She was praised as one of the three great beauties in the Eastern Sea Region.

"It's good that you've heard of her. Lady Piaomiao is my old friend. Moreover, she is very skilled in Spirit Formation techniques, and she also has a vast understanding regarding all sorts of peculiar monsters. I'm sure if it's her, she will be able to save your friend," said Qiushui Fuyan.

"Senior, I still have one thing I want to ask," said Chu Feng.

"Go ahead," said Qiushui Fuyan.

"I am not Senior Huangfu's disciple, so it can be said that I'm not too related to you. Right now, you already know the truth. Why are you still helping me?" asked Chu Feng.

"Hoh." After hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan smiled, then said, "Putting aside helping you or not, your friend has been bound by a monster, so regardless, it's my duty to help her. Even if I don't have the layer of relationship, I wouldn't just stand on the side and do nothing.

"Besides, even though you're not Huangfu Haoyue's disciple, you are Senior Qiu Canfeng's disciple. There is some friendship between him and I, so for his sake, I should take care of you."

"I understand." Chu Feng clasped his hands, then left the room.

But immediately after Chu Feng left, Qiushui Fuyan's expression suddenly changed. She first sighed, then looking in the direction Chu

Feng left at, she murmured to herself, “Back then, it was the first time I saw that type of fear in him.

“Although he didn’t say what he feared, I could tell he feared two things. One, he feared the Heavenly Road. Two, you, in his embrace.

“The two of you are connected by thousands and thousands of strands of relation. One of those must affect his life, so for the sake of his safety, I should protect you safely.”

A soundproof Spirit Formation was laid in Qiushui Fuyan’s room, so obviously, Chu Feng couldn’t hear her mutters. But, immediately after walking out of the palace Qiushui Fuyan lived in, Chu Feng saw a familiar figure. It was Jiang Wanshi.

“Senior Jiang, why are you here? Could it be that something happened?” Chu Feng saw Jiang Wanshi’s tense expression, and determined that something might have happened.

“Junior Wuqing, this isn’t good! Just now, I wanted to bring some sweets to Little Fishy, but discovered that she wasn’t in her room. Afterwards, I pretty much searched throughout the floating island, but I still couldn’t find her.” Currently, Chu Feng was already wearing the Transformational Mask, and had returned to Wuqing’s appearance. So, Jiang Wanshi instantly recognized Chu Feng.

“Little Fishy has disappeared?” asked Chu Feng calmly.

“Yeah, she is truly gone. I’ve already carefully looked all over the floating island, but I can’t find her.

“Moreover, a Spirit Formation has already been laid by my master on this floating island. Logically, she shouldn’t be able to leave, yet I was unable to find her within the island. Where could she have went?” said Jiang Wanshi very anxiously.

“Crap.” Hearing those words, Chu Feng’s heart also involuntarily trembled. Although Little Fishy was naturally naughty and had the ability to break open Spirit Formations, so she very possibly went out to play on her own, at present, they were in the Everlasting Sea of Blood! Ya Fei was

watching them like a tiger, so Chu Feng was very worried that Little Fishy was taken away by Ya Fei.

Although Chu Feng was worried, he still consoled Jiang Wanshi, saying, “Senior Jiang, don’t worry. Little Fishy has always been special so Spirit Formations cannot stop her. Moreover, she is innately playful, so I’m guessing that she went out to have fun.

“But, Ya Fei has always wanted to harm Little Fishy. If she’s taken away, then Little Fishy will be dead.”

“This won’t do. We must go out to find Little Fishy! Junior Wuqing, wait for me here. I’ll report this to my master now.” As Jiang Wanshi spoke, she ran towards Qiushui Fuyan’s palace.

And after knowing that Little Fishy disappeared, Qiushui Fuyan was very nervous too. Not only did she open the Spirit Formation, she even went out with Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi, and also looked for Little Fishy.

However, the more they searched, the more uneasy Chu Feng felt. It was because the Everlasting Sea of Blood was very large, and Little Fishy’s speed within water was very quick as well. He didn’t know where she went to play. Really, he could not confirm if Little Fishy was safe or not.

Under such uneasiness, time passed by bit by bit. The initially dark night turned bright, then was soon replaced by the night sky filled with starlight. Entering the nighttime, a strange beauty appeared in the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

Though when Chu Feng and the others were flying above the surface of the sea, they didn’t have the heart to admire the scenery because they were worrying, as they could not find Little Fishy.

Coinciding with all these events, a person with powerful strength had arrived in the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

In the living room with Ya Fei, a white-haired, brawny old man who neared three meters in height and was clad in gorgeous clothing sat at the head of the table.

That old man had eyes like an eagle's, snow-white sword-like brows, a pointed face, and unknowingly, emanated an untaintable domineeringness.

And that person was none other than the head of the Nine Immortals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Ya Fei's grandfather, Ya Zongyun.

*

1. Respectively, "Spring Dance", "Summer Rain", "Autumn Bamboo", and "Winter Snow".

Chapter 637: Lying to Others and Lying to Oneself

“Grandfather, you’re finally willing to see me! I even thought you’d forgotten about me.” When she saw her grandfather, Ya Fei was very happy. In a cute manner, she leaped into Ya Zongyun’s embrace.

“Haha, I only have one cute granddaughter, so how could I forget about you? I just came out of secluded cultivation. Before even seeing the archipelago master, I came to see you.” Ya Zongyun laughed, his eyes were full of love. His doting and spoiling on Ya Fei was infamous.

“Grandfather, you’ve made a breakthrough?” Hearing that her grandfather just came out of seclusion, Ya Fei widened her eyes, her face full of yearning.

“When has your grandfather ever failed in secluded cultivation?” Ya Zongyun chuckled, but gave Ya Fei a definite answer.

“That’s great! Grandfather has made a breakthrough again! Grandfather, then with your current cultivation, are you able to be on par with the archipelago master?!” Knowing the answer, the smile on Ya Fei’s face was even stronger. Her grandfather was her greatest backing. The stronger her grandfather became, the more unruly she could be.

“Foolish girl, how is the realm of the archipelago master something that I can compare to? But now, my position as the third strongest in the Immortal Execution Archipelago is definitely unshakeable now.” Ya Zongyun’s face was full of smiles. It could be seen that he was also truly happy.

As the proverbs say: “One feels refreshed upon meeting joyous occasions”, let alone a cultivation expert making a breakthrough?

“Third strongest? Wasn’t Grandfather always the second strongest in the Immortal Execution Archipelago? Could it be that other than the archipelago master, there’s a person even stronger than Grandfather?” Ya Fei lightly furrowed her brows. She seemed to not be too satisfied with

that result. She also didn't feel that there was anyone, other than the archipelago master, who had the qualifications to stand above her prided grandfather.

"Silly girl, have you forgotten my Immortal Execution Archipelago's former master, the current Supreme Elder?" asked Ya Zongyun with a smile.

"Supreme Elder? You mean Murong Yun's grandfather? Hasn't he already reached his final days? Is he not dead yet?" Ya Fei's face was full of shock because since she was young, she had seen the so-called Supreme Elder, but at that time, he was already like a dead person. Every day, he had to consume large amounts of precious medicine to prologue his life in order to continue surviving.

So many days had passed and she hadn't seen that Supreme Elder again, nor had anyone mentioned him. The current glory of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was all built up by the current archipelago master alone.

So, Ya Fei even thought that the Supreme Elder died. After all, he was already so feeble back then, not to mention that so many years had passed now.

"Ahh, my child, don't say those words everywhere arbitrarily. The Supreme Elder has always been living well." Hearing her words, Ya Zongyun hurriedly reminded solemnly.

"Could it be... Could it be that he has made a breakthrough again? So he obtained the chance to lengthen his life?" Ya Fei thought of the only possibility.

"Mm. The Supreme Elder already made a breakthrough a long time ago. Right now, the old man is constantly in secluded cultivation, and he is already on a completely new path.

"If he can, once again, successfully break through, even if the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect or that Burning Heaven Church's Huangfu Haoyue were here, they would absolutely not be able to defeat the Supreme Elder. He will truly be invincible in this world," said Ya

Zongyun.

“Grandfather, I’ve always heard you talk about the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church. Are those two powers that no longer exist truly that powerful?” asked Ya Fei curiously.

Although, when she was young, the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church were still there, she was really too young back then. All day, she cared only about playing and was completely ignorant to things such as the powers. Her grandfather and parents also never told her about those things, so she had never seen the glory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Burning Heaven Church.

“Ho, thinking back then, those two powers truly pressed my Immortal Execution Archipelago to the point we could not even breathe. But, those days of suffering have already passed.

“As long as the Supreme Elder can successfully make a breakthrough, then even if the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church are still here, they will still be stepped upon by my Immortal Execution Archipelago,” said Ya Zongyun very confidently.

“Then, Grandfather, is there great hope for him to make a breakthrough?” asked Ya Fei excitedly. As a person of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, although she hoped, even more, that her grandfather would become stronger, she also hoped that the Immortal Execution Archipelago would become stronger.

“There is, of course, hope, but the further one is in the realm of Martial Kings, the harder it is to make breakthroughs. The Supreme Elder’s rank is already in a very difficult to overcome bottleneck. Back then, the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Huangfu Haoyue, who shocked the world, also stopped on this realm.

“But, right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is safely in control over the Eastern Sea Region. As long as an ample amount of resources is collected, the chance that the Supreme Elder has to make a breakthrough is still very great,” said Ya Zongyun.

“Grandfather, if the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and

Huangfu Haoyue were still here, do you think they would have broke past the realm you talked about just now?" asked Ya Fei curiously. She had always heard her grandfather mention those two people, so Ya Fei knew, in her heart, that those two were definitely very powerful.

"This..." Ya Zongyun found it very difficult to respond to that question. After all, the two of them staying in that realm was already something over ten years ago.

Judging by their talent, especially Huangfu Haoyue's talent, it was very hard to estimate what realm they would be in over ten years later. He, at present, was only comparing the Supreme Elder's current cultivation with their former achievements. Actually, that kind of comparison was both lying to others, and lying to himself.

"I'm guessing that the two of them would definitely be unable to break through as well. Besides, they are no longer here. Right now, my Immortal Execution Archipelago is the strongest in this world. That is an undeniable fact.

"Back then, the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Burning Heaven Church split the world in half; but now, my Immortal Execution Archipelago monopolizes the world. Just on that point, they are inferior to my Immortal Execution Archipelago," said Ya Fei smartly as she quickly giggled, upon seemingly noticing her grandfather put in a difficult situation.

"Haha, that's right. My Fei'er is correct. The current achievements that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has isn't something that can be compared by the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Burning Heaven Church." Hearing Ya Fei's words, Ya Zongyun also happily laughed loudly again.

"Ah, but sadly, no matter how much stronger my Immortal Execution Archipelago is, there is always some people who think that they know it all and don't put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in their eyes." Just at that moment, Ya Fei suddenly turned strangely downcast.

"Mm? Fei'er, what do you mean?!" Seeing that, Ya Zongyun's brows

instantly inverted, a hint of displeasure emerging into his eyes because he could tell that surely, her obedient granddaughter was bullied by someone again.

"Grandfather, have you heard of Daoist Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace?" replied Ya Fei with a question.

"I do know of the Lovers Terrace. It's a place where a group of conceited trash live hiddenly in. As for that Daoist Qiushui, I have not heard of her." Ya Zongyun shook his head.

"Hmph. Is a nameless person. Grandfather, let me tell you. That person called Daoist Qiushui is so arrogant! Not only does she not put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in her eyes, she doesn't even put Grandfather in her eyes."

Seeing that, Ya Fei hurried took the chance to aggravate the situation. Not only did she speak her grievances, she even "added oil and vinegar", exaggerating Daoist Qiushui's arrogance. She wanted her grandfather to stand up and take revenge for her.

Chapter 638: Rending the Night Sky

However, after hearing Ya Fei's words, Ya Zongyun sank into contemplation. Only after a long while did he ask, "Fei'er, you said that this Daoist Qiushui is a Gold-cloak World Spiritist?"

"Mm." Ya Fei nodded her head in confirmation.

"Does she wear a white skirt?!" Ya Zongyun continued asking.

"Mm. Grandfather, how did you know? Could it be that you know her?" Ya Fei asked puzzledly.

"Fei'er, does that woman have an outstanding appearance? Although she nears the age of forty, does she still have a complexion and demeanor that is superior to others?" Ya Zongyun continued asking.

"She used a veil to cover her face, so I couldn't see, but looking at her figure and the outline of her face, I could see that she was decently pretty. As for her demeanor... Thinking about it, and from your words, she truly did have some unordinary demeanor that seemed as if she left the mortal world," Ya Fei replied.

"Judging by that, it's likely her." After hearing Ya Fei's words, Ya Zongyun lightly nodded his head, a hint of an interested smile appearing, as the corners of his mouth rose.

"Grandfather, who exactly is that Daoist Qiushui?" At that instant, Ya Fei confirmed that her grandfather definitely knew who Daoist Qiushui was, else he wouldn't have acted like so. Thus, she was also very curious as to who she was.

"If my guess is correct, then this 'Daoist Qiushui' is not a simple person at all. She should be the person who was called the number one beauty in the Eastern Sea Region back then, and at the same time, the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, Qiushui Fuyan," Ya Zongyun said.

"Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, Qiushui Fuyan?!

"Grandfather, she wouldn't be, right? Didn't you say that over ten years

ago, the Burning Heaven Church already led the entire church into the Heavenly Road, and moved to the Holy Land of Martialism?

"If so, how is it possible for Qiushui Fuyan, the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, to appear in the Eastern Sea Region?"

Ya Fei's face was full of shock. After all, Qiushui Fuyan's name was very well known in the Eastern Sea Region. Even though the Burning Heaven Church had disappeared for many years, many people could not forget her great name. She was a symbol of an era, a lover that countless people had in their dreams.

"Then you probably don't know about this. Back then, when the Burning Heaven Church was moving, I had sent them off along with the archipelago master. At that time, I had carefully observed the people from the Burning Heaven Church. I discovered that all famous experts were there, but only the Holy Daughter Qiushui Fuyan hadn't shown herself.

"At that time, I felt that she possibly hadn't left with the Burning Heaven Church. And now, the Daoist Qiushui you spoke of, no matter age or characteristics, are very close to Qiushui Fuyan. So, I determined that she is very likely Qiushui Fuyan," Ya Zongyun said.

"So that means she truly is Qiushui Fuyan? No wonder. No wonder she didn't even put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in her eyes. As the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, she does have such qualifications." Ya Fei sighed helplessly with a face of grievance.

"Silly girl, although the Burning Heaven Church is powerful, that was, after all, many years ago. Right now, the Burning Heaven Church exists no longer, and Qiushui Fuyan also doesn't have an enormous power protecting her. At most, she is an expert hidden away from the world. There is no need to fear her," Ya Zongyun said.

"But Grandfather, Qiushui Fuyan is still the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. She was already fairly strong back then, so now, I'm sure she's even stronger. It's better for you not to provoke her," Ya Fei advised intentionally. Though really, she was goading her grandfather to

make a move.

“Haha, my silly Fei’er, you truly overestimate that Qiushui Fuyan.

“The Holy Son of the Burning Heaven Church, Huangfu Haoyue, is indeed powerful, but the Holy Daughter Qiushui Fuyan is far from strong. Back then, she couldn’t even beat me, your grandfather, let alone now?

“From what you’ve said, she’s residing in the Everlasting Sea of Blood currently? Quickly bring me there. If I don’t give her a lesson, she truly will think that my precious granddaughter is fun to bully!” Ya Zongyun said while patting his chest. As expected, he believed Ya Fei’s words.

“That’s great! I knew my grandfather is the most powerful one.” Ya Fei happily skipped and jumped about. She was ecstatic. In front of her own grandfather, her arrogant attitude remained no more. She was like a child, even a bit cute.

bam But just at that moment, the tightly shut door was suddenly pushed opened by someone. A female servant, face fraught with panic, ran in and loudly said, “Lord First Immortal, Lady Ya Fei, this isn’t good!”

“Insolence! I’m talking with my grandfather. Who allowed you to intrude without reporting in?” Seeing her, Ya Fei became enraged, and as she pointed at the servant, she was going to hit her.

“Wait.” However, before letting her act, she was stopped by her grandfather, Ya Zongyun. After stopping her, he gravely asked, “What urgent matter do you have, say it directly.”

“Lord First Immortal, Lady Ya Fei.

“There is an abnormality in the sky outside, please come out and observe it,” the female servant replied tensely.

“What? Abnormality in the sky?” Hearing those words, Ya Zongyun’s and Ya Fei’s expressions changed slightly, then Ya Zongyun grabbed Ya Fei. Then his body moved slightly, and became a strand of light, arriving in the sky outside the palace.

At that instant, they discovered above the many floating islands, quite a

few people had risen to the sky, and were gazing at the night sky with faces full of surprise.

And when they raised their heads to see as well, even Ya Zongyun's and Ya Fei's faces changed greatly. Incomparable shock surged within their roundly widened eyes.

It was because at that very instant, in the sky full of stars, an abnormality truly appeared.

It was unknown how far it was from them, but it was definitely above the rivers of stars in the Nine Heavens where no one could reach. There, a tear appeared.

Indeed, it was a tear. Even though the night surrounded it, one could still see that it was a tear. That tear was gradually enlarging, as though the sky was ripped apart.

"Heavens! The sky has been torn! What is happening? Is this the apocalypse that the legends depict, and the sky will crash down upon us?!" Seeing the tear getting larger and larger, some people with weaker hearts started to yell this and that.

"Grandfather, what is happening? Could there be a Divine Body descending?" It wasn't the first time Ya Fei had seen such a situation. From when she was young, she had seen an abnormality in the sky, and at that time there was a Divine Body that came into the Eastern Sea Region. That Divine Body was Zi Ling.

"No. The phenomenon of the descent of a Divine Body always takes away one's eyes. It also represented the special Divine power that they would grasp.

"But this time, the scene is different. It doesn't seem like the descent of a Divine Body. It seems more like some terrifying existence is forcefully tearing the sky asunder.

"Fei'er, look carefully. Look at the shape of the tear. Doesn't it look like a person's using their hands to rend the sky apart?" Ya Zongyun asked as he pointed at the night sky.

After hearing her grandfather speak, Ya Fei looked in detail again, at the sides of the endlessly enlarging tear in the sky.

Though on the surface it seemed ordinary, indescribable terror instantly emerged onto her already shocked face. Even her body started lightly quivering, she then said with a very meek voice, “Grandfather... Wha-wha-what is that?!”

Chapter 639: Horrifying Huge Hand

In the bright night sky, suddenly there appeared a tear that looked as if a giant had ripped it opened with its hands. That made people shocked, terrified, and very uneasy.

It's because it was very, very high up in the sky. If that were truly a human act, how big of a body and how much power would they need to create such a tear?

None of them dared to imagine such a situation because the more they seriously thought about it, the more they felt their hairs stand on end with endless fear. They subconsciously felt that it simply wasn't something that a human did, because it was impossible for humans to have such power. Even cultivators could not.

Thus, everyone felt that it was either a demon, or it was a god. However, they were more willing to believe that it was only an abnormality, a phenomenon. That it was completely unrelated to them.

That scene was really too shocking, so much that it surpassed their bearable limits. They felt it wasn't something they could participate in, nor was it something they ever wanted to participate in.

Every single person in the entire Eastern Sea Region could see the tear in the sky, and almost everyone was stunned. Naturally, Chu Feng discovered it as well.

But Chu Feng didn't have the heart to admire it, nor could he be bothered to guess what was happening because at that instant, his mind was only thinking of one person—Little Fishy.

"Chu Feng." Suddenly, a voice rang out, and at the same time, a fairy-like beautiful figure appeared in front of Chu Feng, blocking his path. It was Qiushui Fuyan.

"Senior Qiushui, have you seen Little Fishy?" Chu Feng asked concernedly.

But Qiushui Fuyan shook her head, and said, "Chu Feng, continuing to

search like this isn't the way to go. The Eastern Sea Region is so vast, and Little Fishy's speed in water is also very quick. If she went out to play, she may not remain within the Everlasting Sea of Blood. With your speed, how could you find her?

"So, it's better for you to return and wait there. If Little Fishy finishes playing and returns, at least there will be a person to bring her back to the floating island.

"But don't worry about her being caught by Ya Fei. You know Little Fishy's speed. Ya Fei definitely doesn't have the ability to catch her."

After speaking, Qiushui Fuyan also couldn't help raising her head and look at the sky. She lightly sighed. "This night is truly unpeaceful." Afterwards, she leaped forward and like light, rushed towards the distance, and disappeared. At the same time, she also spread out her Spirit power, increasing her range of detection.

Seeing that, Chu Feng knew Qiushui Fuyan was continuing to look for Little Fishy. Thinking carefully, he felt that she was correct. If Little Fishy truly went out to play, to want to find her would truly be quite hard. But going out to play meant she would eventually come back, and if no one were waiting on the floating island when she came back, she would not be able to return onto the floating island. That would instead put her in danger.

So, Chu Feng no longer blindly searched for her. He used a bodily martial skill and flew back to the floating island that they resided in.

"Junior Wuqing, have you seen Little Fishy?" After returning to the floating island, Chu Feng discovered that Jiang Wanshi had returned as well. Likely, it was Qiushui Fuyan who sent her back.

Chu Feng shook his head, and said, "Senior Jiang, don't worry too much. I believe that Little Fishy will return soon. I'll wait for her under the island. It'll be fine if you wait on the island.

"That girl has many abilities, after all. Even I'm not sure if she will return flying in the air or not. If she does, she will definitely directly return to this island. At that time, Senior, just come down and tell me."

“Mm. Junior Wuqing is correct.” Jiang Wanshi nodded.

After that, Chu Feng said nothing more and leaped down from the floating island, landing above the blood-coloured sea surface.

Chu Feng stood above the sea, initially wanting to calm his heart and wait for Little Fishy; however, he was quite helpless as it was the center area of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Every person in the sea resided in that area.

And because an abnormality appeared in the sky, shouts and sighs rang out everywhere, even frightened wails and cries. Affected by the rowdiness, Chu Feng too couldn’t help looking at the night sky.

“Eggy, although this phenomenon is grandiose, even more so it is troubling. What exactly is it, do you know?” Chu Feng carefully examined it and also discovered that it was overly peculiar. Faintly, it made people uneasy, so he did not feel that it was something made by the birth and descent of a Divine Body.

“Heh. Although I have seen a lot, I have always stayed in the Asura Spirit World. The situation at present is also the first time I’ve seen it. Rather than you and me guessing, why not use the Heaven’s Eyes and observe it?” Eggy chuckled and did not directly answer his question.

Hearing that, without dawdling, Chu Feng used the Heaven’s Eyes. Instantly, his gaze was like a sword, and when he looked back at the sky, his complexion changed greatly. With the Heaven’s Eyes, he truly found a few problems.

In an ordinary person’s perspective, they only felt that the edges of the tear was similar to fingers pulling the tear open, so they felt that there was a person using their hands to rip open the sky.

But with Chu Feng’s Heaven’s Eyes, he actually saw a faint image. Though it was fairly indistinct, and one was even unable to determine if it were real or fake, that image was indeed a large hand piercing through and rending the sky.

“This...How has this happened?!” Seeing that, even Chu Feng couldn’t

remain calm and couldn't help being frightened.

Regardless of how strong cultivators were, there was always a limit. Even though they could walk on air and pass through layers of white clouds, they could never touch the stars and the moon, let alone the space above the stars and moon.

At that instant, there was truly a pair of hands that ripped the sky at that location. How could Chu Feng continue remaining collected?

He still could not imagine exactly how big the huge hand was and exactly what power it contained to be able to rip open the sky.

However, Chu Feng was able to imagine the entirety of the incomparably vast Eastern Sea Region becoming completely wiped out by not the descent of the huge hand, but of the press of a single finger.

Those two hands were too terrifying. So terrifying that they surpassed Chu Feng's range of comprehension. The owner of those hands must certainly be even more terrifying, and truly have might that could destroy the heavens and earth.

At that instant, Chu Feng, who didn't believe in the existence of god, for the first time, connected those hands with a word. God.

Could they be the hands of god? That was the greatest question currently in Chu Feng's heart.

"Eggy, do you see it?!" Chu Feng hurriedly asked Eggy while frightened. As they shared vision and hearing, the things he saw Eggy could as well.

"Mm. Looking at this, it is likely not fake." At that instant, even Eggy's tone became strangely serious. Her former naughtiness existed no longer.

"Eggy, what do you mean? Don't tell me that the illusion in between the tear is real?" Chu Feng became even more frightened upon obtaining Eggy's answer.

"If it's fortune, it will not be a disaster. If it's a disaster, it cannot be evaded. There's no use worrying about it when you can do nothing about it. I only hope that regardless of fortune or disaster, it will be unrelated to

you." After those words, Eggy went silent and said no more, as though even the great queen who feared nothing was frightened as well.

Chapter 640: Departure

When even Eggy became solemn as if frightened, Chu Feng became more uneasy. He had always known of the principle "There's a man beyond a man, and a sky beyond a sky".

But when he truly saw the unbelievable power from beyond the sky, Chu Feng involuntarily felt fear and anxiousness.

If everything in the sky at present was real, then Chu Feng and the people from the Eastern Sea Region—all the Martial Lords, Martial Kings, and even Martial Emperors—were too minuscule. Simply so minuscule that they were less than dust.

Was the road of martial cultivation truly endless and limitless? Beyond the Nine Heavens, was there truly some existence that had the divine power to rend the sky?

Were the so-called martial cultivation masters and peerless experts in the Eastern Sea Region, in their eyes, inferior to even dust, and were even less than fart?

"Yiyayiya! Big Brother!"

But just when Chu Feng was submerged in that shock, a sweet and mellifluous voice rang out unendingly from the distance.

Hearing that voice, Chu Feng's mood instantly exploded in elation. His worry and uneasiness before all disappeared like a whisper of smoke, and he quickly cast his gaze in the direction that the sound came from.

Indeed, he saw a straight wave explosively shooting towards him from the surface of the sea, and at the end, a cute little person jumped out and appeared before Chu Feng. She immediately leaped into Chu Feng's embrace, and she was none other than Little Fishy.

"Little Fishy, you've finally returned!" Seeing her, Chu Feng's tense heart finally relaxed. He didn't blame her at all, and what he had was only happiness and an eased heart.

"Hehe, Big Brother, were you worried about Little Fishy?" Little Fishy

asked cleverly and naughtily as she blinked.

"Of course I was worried! Little Fishy is Big Brother's angel! How could I not be worried when my angel's gone?" Chu Feng said gigglingly as he rubbed Little Fishy's jet-black hair. He truly liked that little girl so much he could not release her.

"Heh, Big Brother? Little Fishy's got to go," Little Fishy said suddenly.

"Go? Go where?!" Upon hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help but be surprised.

"Go to another place to play! Little Fishy has played enough here," Little Fishy said smilingly.

"Then when will Little Fishy come back?" Chu Feng asked.

"Come back? I think I won't come back. Little Fishy won't come back to play in a place where she has played enough. Little Fishy wants to go to a better place to play," Little Fishy said.

"Ehh... Then, Little Fishy, when are you prepared to leave?" Chu Feng asked.

"Right now!"

"Right now?"

"Mm." Little Fishy nodded her head firmly.

For some reason, as he looked at the cute little girl in front of his eyes, he felt his heart ache. He would really miss Little Fishy. Though they were only together for a very short period of time, in his heart, Chu Feng liked that child, and he wanted to protect that child.

However, Chu Feng could only think those thoughts because he also knew that he didn't have the strength to protect that child. So, that was the reason why he didn't speak to ask for her to stay behind, and also didn't say he wanted to accompany her.

Chu Feng actually knew already that Little Fishy was possibly only a passerby in his life. It was impossible for a special girl like her to always stay by his side.

Besides, Chu Feng himself had many things to do. He had a heavy responsibility on him. He could not always bring a girl to experience sufferings with him.

Even though Chu Feng knew they were going to separate eventually, he hadn't expected it to come so soon.

"Big Brother, Little Fishy has a present for you!" She giggled, then spread open her hands. A necklace appeared on her fair and tender hands.

When Chu Feng focused on it, he discovered that the necklace was truly interesting. It was a normal hemp rope tied around a small black-coloured rock.

Looking carefully, regardless if it was the rope or the rock, there were no special things about them. They were common objects. Not only were they common, the tying of the rope was even very rough.

"This was made by Little Fishy personally! Does it look good?" Little Fishy asked proudly as she put the rock necklace on her cupped hands.

"It does! I didn't expect my Little Fishy to be so adroit and could even make a necklace on her own!" Although it was poorly made, after all, it was made by a three-year-old child. Naturally, Chu Feng praised ceaselessly as he put on an appearance of extreme fondness.

"Hehe, then Big Brother, you must always wear it! Don't lose it, or else Little Fishy will be mad!" She stuffed the necklace into Chu Feng's hands.

"Little Fishy needs to leave now, but Big Brother also has a present to give to you." The number of treasures Chu Feng had on him was countless, but at that instant, he meticulously picked out a beautiful footlace and personally tied it on Little Fishy's ankle.

Not only was that footlace gorgeous, it was even a Strange Armament. It had the effect of automatically protecting its master.

"Yiyayiya! The gift Big Brother gave to Little Fishy is so beautiful! Little Fishy likes it a lot." Although she didn't know what Strange Armaments were, she currently skipped and jumped about in extreme happiness. Then, she leaped into the water and merrily swam around Chu Feng.

“Big Brother, Little Fishy will leave now!” However, after some unknown number of laps of swimming, Little Fishy finally stopped and said her farewells to Chu Feng.

“Mm. Little Fishy, good bye. Big Brother will miss you.” Chu Feng didn’t hold her back. He stood on the sea surface, enduring longing, and waved his hand at Little Fishy, who was in the sea, with a smile.

“Little Fishy will also miss you! Big Brother, good bye!” Little Fishy flashed a dazzling smile as she blinked, then turned around, and like a mermaid, swam away. With cheerful sounds of “yiyayiya”, she disappeared from Chu Feng’s line of sight.

He looked in the direction of Little Fishy’s departure. Only after a while did Chu Feng smile relievedly. He spread open his hands and once again looked at the necklace Little Fishy gave him. Then, he put it over his neck, and buried the rock under his clothes.

“This scene runs through the horizon. It may not be related to the Eastern Sea Region. Even if it related to this place, it may not be a bad thing. So, Fei’er, there is no need for you to be afraid.”

Simultaneously, in the centermost region of the Everlasting Sea of Blood, as Ya Zongyun gazed at the abnormality he consoled her granddaughter.

“Mm.” Although Ya Fei was indeed frightened by the tear, after a while of soothing, the fear gradually vanished. Especially as the abnormality remained for much longer yet there was nothing out of the ordinary there, she was even more at ease.

So, she said to Ya Zongyun, “Grandfather, since this phenomenon has appeared for such a long time yet nothing has happened, there is no need for us to continue observing. Right now, let’s go and take care of that Daoist Qiushui first in case she gets hold of news and knows that you’ve come to the Everlasting Sea of Blood then furtively escapes.”

“Mm. Fei’er is right. No matter what this abnormality is foretelling, it’s not something that we have control over. Let us first pay a visit to the Holy Daughter, a person that I haven’t seen in a long time.”

Ya Zongyun also nodded with a smile. In order to show his strength and majesty, he even brought a group of Immortal Execution Archipelago experts and went forth together to the Qiushui Fuyan's residence.

Chapter 641: Natural Disaster

After deciding, Ya Zongyun brought Ya Fei and Ya Fei's hundred servants, as well as the experts guarding the Immortal Execution Archipelago in the Everlasting Sea of Blood, and went forward to Daoist Qiushui's residence.

Ya Zongyun and Ya Fei didn't say why they were going to search for Daoist Qiushui, but the Immortal Execution Archipelago crowd still looked forward to seeing the might of the head of the Nine Immortals. After all, that old man was the second strongest person in the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

As for Ya Fei, her face was full of complacency. She, who had to bear Qiushui Fuyan's anger, already had a chance for revenge so soon. She truly couldn't wait to see Qiushui Fuyan's fearful reaction.

boom rumble rumble rumble

However, just as they started moving and before they arrived at the floating island Qiushui Fuyan was residing in, an explosion suddenly came from the night sky.

Raising their heads and looking, everyone's faces lost all colour. Their faces were overwhelmed with shock, and within their roundly widened eyes was nothing but fear.

"AHHH~~~"

At that instant, many people lacking in mental fortitude already started screaming. Some even loudly bailed.

At that very instant, above the Nine Heavens, within the enormous tear, an illusory huge hand that covered the sky came slamming down from above.

The hand occasionally appeared and disappeared. Symbols swirled all around it, making it difficult to determine what exactly that hand was. However, something undeniable was that everyone felt a horrifying aura that could destroy everything originating from the huge hand.

rumble rumble rumble rumble

In the instant the huge hand came down, everyone could clearly see the space collapsing inch by inch. One after another, stars were destroyed, and coincident with the destruction of the stars, a sky full of meteors started to come crashing down.

At that moment, the sky had crumbled. One could no longer see the sun, moon, or stars. They could only see the fragments of space.

But even so, the earth hadn't entered endless darkness. Instead, it became even brighter.

The reason it was like so was because of the sky full of meteors. There were countless of them and every single one had at least the volume of a continent. Every single one was lit with raging infernos.

And it was exactly the raging infernos that lit up the earth. It brightened it to a fiery-red from its pitch-blackness, and brightened the blood-red Everlasting Sea of Blood to as blinding as magma.

The always calm Everlasting Sea of Blood was no longer calm at present. It was bubbling like lava.

"Run! The apocalypse has truly arrived! Everybody run!"

Seeing that, everyone was petrified. They didn't even have time to think about other things, and the first reaction they had was to escape.

Escape! But putting aside the gradually descending illusory huge hand that covered the entirety of the sky, just the meteors that were ubiquitous already covered the entire Eastern Sea Region. Where could they escape to?

"Grandfather, what do we do?" Ya Fei had already lost her heart of revenge quite a while ago. She, who was usually arrogant, currently also had a face as pale as paper, an effect of her being terrified. Even her body was trembling slightly, and like a child she stayed in her grandfather's embrace, not daring to move at all.

"Fei'er, don't be afraid. With Grandfather here, even if I have given up

my final breath, I will definitely keep you safe."

With one hand, Ya Zongyun tightly hugged Ya Fei, and at the same time, with the other, laid a golden Spirit Formation.

The golden Spirit Formation did not veil over everyone who was there. It veiled over only himself and Ya Fei. Regardless of how the others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago begged, he was not willing to let anyone in.

The reason he did that was because he didn't want to disperse more of his power to protect others. In that instant, he only wanted to protect himself and his granddaughter.

Thus, even though the Spirit Formation Ya Zongyun currently laid didn't have too big of an area, it was formed with the entirety of his Spirit power. It almost exhausted all of his martial power, because in that situation, he really didn't dare to hold anything back.

Finally, with his full power, he successfully made a small golden tower less than five meters tall and two meters wide. Although the tower wasn't very big, it contained extremely strong Spirit Formation power. It was the strongest defense formation Ya Zongyun had.

boom rumble rumble

But just as the formation was successfully created, noise even more deafening than thunder rang out from the distance. At the same time, the air started to quiver, and the Everlasting Sea of Blood below was like an exploded pot. Water started to surge into the sky, and everything was in chaos.

boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom, boom

Afterwards, the explosions endlessly rang out, and the sounds came closer and closer. Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun were then able to see clearly that it was the meteors in the sky that were falling. It was the meteors that were making the explosions.

Dragging behind a tail of flame, they descended from above. After crashing into the ground, they would burst open and become extremely

ferocious shock waves, pushing outward ripples in a circular shape. The ripples would then be unstoppable as they passed through areas and destroyed anything that existed. Regardless of what it was, it would be killed by the ripples.

"Ahh~~~"

Finally, a meteor crashed into the Everlasting Sea of Blood. Instantly, the sea boiled and burst out water like a volcano erupting.

And when the shock waves swept past, other than Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun in the Spirit Formation, everyone else became ashes. No remains remained, dying extremely thoroughly.

But even though the Spirit Formation stopped one shock wave that slammed past, cracks appeared and its power greatly diminished.

"How is this happening? Why is this happening? My Immortal Execution Archipelago has just risen in power, and the Eastern Sea Region is already peaceful. Gods, why must you treat us like so? Have we done something wrong?"

Ya Zongyun looked at the sky and howled in quite a bit of confusion at the illusory huge hand that stopped in the air and enveloped the sky.

At that instant, he, who usually thought highly of himself, no longer had any traces of such an attitude, and he completely changed because he discovered even though he was the head of the Nine Immortals that everyone respected in the Eastern Sea Region, a martial cultivation master, when he faced a true disaster, he was so powerless. He didn't even have any strength to fight back.

"Grandfather, this isn't good!" But just at that moment, Ya Fei's incomparably terrified voice suddenly rang out.

When he turned his head and looked, Ya Zongyun's face changed greatly too because a super-huge meteor, with completely devastating power, was heading straight in their direction. Its speed was quick, and its area large—it almost covered that portion of the Everlasting Sea of Blood. They simply couldn't evade.

boom

Finally, a deafening explosion rang out, and at that instant, Ya Zongyun and Ya Fei felt their eyes go dark. All awareness vanished, and they went unconscious.

Only after some unknown length of time did Ya Fei gradually open her eyes. But after she did, she discovered that the world from her impressions completely changed.

The sky was blood-red and full of cracks. The earth was blood-red and full of surging magma. In between the sky and the earth, there was not a single trace of life. It was terrifyingly desolate.

“Could it be that I’ve already died?” was Ya Fei’s first thought. After experiencing everything that happened, she didn’t feel that she was able to survive.

Chapter 642: Warning

"That is?" However suddenly, Ya Fei's pupils suddenly shrunk, then she hurriedly flew downwards.

Because within the flowing magma which released a scathing heat, she saw a person—her grandfather Ya Zongyun.

"Grandfather!" Seeing her grandfather, Ya Fei was both surprised and joyed, and she hurriedly raised him up from the bubbling magma.

Only then did she discover that her grandfather, whom she had great pride in, was extremely weakened. However after her examination, she discovered that her grandfather still had a pulse and heartbeat; he hadn't died yet.

"Why is it like this? Have we not died yet?" After discovering her grandfather's anomaly, Ya Fei also examined herself. She found out that her pulse and heartbeat were very stable. These were the special characteristics of life that did not correspond to someone who was dead.

After all, she knew that dead people had no heartbeat nor pulse, and that the soul was actually just one's Consciousness. After humans died, it was tantamount to their Consciousness entering a different world; a very terrifying world. However, since her heart still beat, it meant that she had yet to die.

"Cough cough, Fei'er, are you all right?" Just at that moment, Ya Zongyun intensely coughed a few times. He actually awoke, and the first thing he did after awaking was to carefully examine his granddaughter. He was quite afraid that his granddaughter, whom he doted on, had any injuries.

"Grandfather, Fei'er is fine. How are you? Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?" Seeing her grandfather awaken, Ya Fei rejoiced and rushed into Ya Zongyun's embrace, wailing sorrowfully.

"Silly Fei'er, don't cry. Grandfather is perfectly fine. It's just that the Spirit Formation I laid before was a Taboo Formation so I lost too much

strength," Ya Zongyun explained.

"That means Grandfather isn't injured?" Ya Fei asked.

"Mm." Ya Zongyun nodded with a light smile.

And after hearing Ya Zongyun's words, Ya Fei was even happier. Although, at present, the sky was falling and the ground was crumbling, and the world looked nothing like before, not much had happened to her and her grandfather, and they survived. It was fortune within misfortune.

"Who is it?" However just at that moment, Ya Zongyun's eyes lit up and he put Ya Fei behind him as he loudly yelled in front of him.

Seeing that, Ya Fei also quickly cast her gaze in the direction Ya Zongyun shouted angrily at. Only then did she discover that several hundred meters away from them, out of the blue, there appeared a vast stretch of white mist. That mist was not present before.

At that instant, Ya Fei's anxiousness reached its peak because when she examined the mist, she simply couldn't detect anything. Yet at that very instant, from the mist, there came sharp and clear footstep sounds.

ta, ta, ta, ta, ta...

Those sound of footsteps arose one after another, and came closer and closer. Not only Ya Fei, even Ya Zongyun tightly furrowed his brows. His eyes glittered unstably and even his heart formed a lump at his throat.

They, who personally experienced the disaster, experienced the strength and terror of the huge hand in the sky. In a time like this, they could not determine exactly what thing was approaching them.

whoosh As the two were tightly staring, the mist finally dispersed and simultaneously, a person appeared in Ya Fei's and Ya Zongyun's line of sight.

Upon seeing that person, no matter if it was Ya Zongyun or Ya Fei, both of them were dumbstruck, their faces full of surprise.

At that very moment, the one who came forward in the air and gradually nearing them was a young woman.

She had jet-black hair that scattered behind her, as well as long brows, beautiful big eyes, tall nose, small cherry-like lips, and a youthful complexion. She simply reached the limits of beauty, and definitely surpassed Ya Fei's.

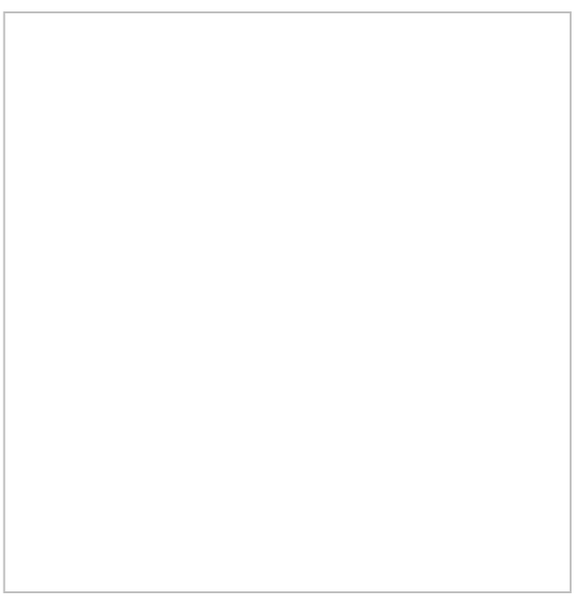
Especially her pure and charming demeanor. It was something that Ya Fei couldn't even compared to. She was simply like a fairy from the heavens—nearing perfection.

Not only did the young female have a fairy-like prettiness, her figure was also extremely good. Of her snow-white exterior, there was a faint rosiness, and her skin was also very glossy, like jade.

Though the thing that made Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun shocked wasn't her fairy-like appearance, it was the revealing clothes she wore.

She had such a beautiful appearance, such an alluring figure, but she wore extremely little. She was clad in only undergarments. Indeed, it was a pink bodice. [1]

[tl: [1] = Undergarment, aka bodice. Image Below https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Y%E1%BA%BFm]



It was worn in front of her chest, and even though it concealed all the private areas, a large area of snow-white skin was still shown. Especially her straight and slender legs, it was pretty much revealed completely in front of their eyes.

However other than the pink undergarment, the exceptionally beautiful

young female also had another ornament. There was a beautiful footlace tied around her ankle—it was a Strange Armament.

"You, you are?"

At that instant, Ya Fei was thoroughly stupefied because she recognized the pink undergarment. It was so familiar to her—the exact same as the one the special girl wore in the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

So, Ya Fei made a bold guess. The person that appeared in front of her eyes very possibly was the little girl who she wanted to catch even in her dreams, Little Fishy.

"Fei'er, you recognize her?" Ya Zongyun had never seen Little Fishy before, but he could see that his granddaughter possibly knew the mysterious young beauty.

The young woman did not have too great of a reaction as she gazed upon their stunned and fearful expressions. When there were still a hundred meters between her and the two of them, she stopped.

"Y-you, you are Little Fishy?" she questioned finally, with a tone of disbelief.

hmm

However, just at that moment, Little Fishy's clear eyes faintly shifted. Boundless pressure then came slamming from above, causing Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun to kneel in the air with a poof. The strong power even made the air they kneeled on crack.

At that instant, Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun felt their heads bearing irresistible power. Even breathing was a very hard task, as though they could die at any given moment. Their faces were also fraught with agony.

However, there was not a single trace of sympathy from her as she looked at their painful states. She first disdainfully looked at the two, then said with an absolute ordering tone, "Listen up. Do not attack Wuqing, and do not do anything detrimental to Wuqing. Otherwise, the ones who will die will definitely not only be the two of you, but the entire Eastern Sea Region."

hmm After speaking those words, a large area of white mist emerged around her again, and very soon, it veiled over her outstandingly beautiful body, then she disappeared.

Moreover, the mist was rapidly dispersing. It covered Ya Fei's and Ya Zongyun's line of sight, and at the same time, the unbearable power also faded like the clouds.

Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun hadn't recovered from the previously dangerous scene before they suddenly heard endlessly familiar voices.

"Lord First Immortal, Lord First Immortal!"

"Lady Ya Fei, Lady Ya Fei!"

Those voices were so familiar. They were the voices of Ya Fei's servants and the Immortal Execution Archipelago experts.

And along with the ringing of the voices, the mist surrounding them also began to slowly disintegrate. Then when the mist thoroughly disappeared, the two of them who experienced such a horrifying scene changed their faces greatly.

Chapter 643: Disappear

At that instant, the first things to enter Ya Fei's and Ya Zongyun's eyes were Ya Fei's hundred female servants, as well as the throng of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. All of them had faces rife with shock, and with their roundly widened eyes in confusion and fear, they closely stared at Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun.

Looking around them, the two discovered that the Everlasting Sea of Blood was as serene as usual. All of the floating islands were still undamaged, and upon raising their heads, gazing at the sky once more, despite the tear still being there, the sky full of stars were there as well.

Yet, when they gazed at themselves, their bodies were actually wet—it was the smell of seawater. They seemed to have fell into the Everlasting Sea of Blood below, and other than the seawater soaking their bodies, there was even cold sweat, Ya Fei especially. At that instant, she was still unable to control her quivering body.

"What exactly is going on here? What happened?" Ya Zongyun asked a person by his side when he saw the peculiar situation.

"Lord First Immortal, this..." The person who was asked had a face full of panic. There seemed to be some sort of unspeakable thing as she did not dare to say anything.

"Speak the truth!" Ya Zongyun forcefully asked.

"Lord First Immortal, before, we were following you and Lady Ya Fei, but suddenly, both of you looked at the sky with faces full of fear. Lady Ya Fei even shrieked and leaped into your embrace.

"Afterwards, you, Lord First Immortal, laid an extremely blinding Spirit Formation in the same place you stood. The formation was extremely powerful, simply something that this servant has never seen before. But soon, you released the Spirit Formation and jumped into the Everlasting Sea of Blood below.

"Seeing you enter the sea, Lady Ya Fei also quickly followed and brought

you up. Your conversation with her afterwards was something that we couldn't understand," the person replied seriously.

At that instant, Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun looked at each other, four eyes opposite to one another. Then, they looked at the crowd. Seeing that everyone nodded in agreement, that the person's words were truthful, both of them couldn't help furrowing their brows tightly, then sighed and said at the same time, "Could it be everything that just happened was only my imagination?"

"Look! The tear is closing!" Suddenly, from the distance came a loud shout.

Raising their heads to look, they indeed discovered that the tear appearing above the Nine Heavens was slowly closing.

"Grandfather, what do we do?" Ya Fei currently didn't know what to do, so she could only asked her grandfather for help.

Ya Zongyun first wiped the cold sweat on Ya Fei's face, then patted her shoulder and sent a mental message, saying, "Fei'er, first tell me what that Little Fishy is all about."

Ya Fei didn't dare to conceal anything. She simply and directly told Ya Zongyun about Little Fishy and Chu Feng. Of course, she also told him about the conflicts that happened between them.

After knowing about the things that happened, Ya Zongyun's complexion turned strangely grave. Then, he asked, "Fei'er, do you think everything that happened was real?"

"Mm. Being there personally, it's so real that it cannot be more real." Ya Fei nodded her head. In reality, even now she could not confirm whether it was just her imagination just now or it truly happened.

"Not to mention you, even I, as a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, could not feel anything being in that illusion. That already says how powerful the person who used the illusion on us is.

"Don't provoke that Wuqing anymore, and even more so, don't provoke that Little Fishy. Everybody who is related to them cannot be provoked."

Ya Zongyun said.

"Grandfather, could everything that happened just be some false might and fakery? Must they be let off because you and I were in the illusion?" Ya Fei was still a bit bitter.

"Idiot girl, you are still too young and lack an understanding of the situation's severity. The illusion just now was not some false might. If the person were willing to, we would have died already," Ya Zongyun said lightly through mental messaging.

gulp After hearing those words, Ya Fei couldn't help gulping and once again, broke out in cold sweat.

If even her grandfather was like that, it meant Little Fishy was truly not a simple person. At least, the person who made a move on her grandfather and herself was not simple at all.

In a situation like that, no matter how much unwilling Ya Fei was, she still feared in her heart. She had no choice but to give up finding Chu Feng, Daoist Qiushui and the others for revenge.

Afterwards, Ya Zongyun commanded the people who were there to not tell anyone about them losing control of themselves, and they, who already feared Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun, naturally dared not to reveal anything.

Just like that, the aggressive group of people, who initially planned to find Daoist Qiushui and Chu Feng for a debt, were forced to return in low spirits before they had even walked far.

Even though it was quite embarrassing to do so, Ya Fei and Ya Zongyun had no other choice. It didn't matter much for Ya Fei; after all, she was still a Martial Lord. However, as a Martial King, even Ya Zongyun felt the pressure from before. He knew there was an existence that he could not offend.

As he could do nothing, Ya Zongyun couldn't help but raise his head and look at the sky. He looked at the gradually closing tear above and knitted his brows tightly. He kept on feeling that the tear seemed to have

some sort of relation with the things that he met today.

However, he did not dare to continue thinking beyond that point. He did not dare to imagine what consequences there would be if he offended people related to the tear in the sky. Perhaps the entire Eastern Sea Region would truly be eradicated because of him.

At the same time, Chu Feng had returned to the floating island, and after telling Jiang Wanshi about Little Fishy leaving, he returned to his room to rest.

He did not continue observing the tear in the sky because he was no longer in the mood to. After Little Fishy left, for some reason Chu Feng felt a bit downcast.

Besides, Chu Feng also knew that even if the tear in the sky truly brought along something, it wasn't something that he could evade. So, he just looked away from it, so his heart was not troubled.

Just like that, as usual, the lengthy black night was finally replaced by the day again. As for the tear in the sky, it had already closed off completely before daylight, and vanished within the night.

Although it closed, there was nothing aberrant that happened in the Everlasting Sea of Blood. But, people were still awaiting news because they did not believe that such an anomaly would bring no abnormal things. Thus, everyone was waiting for the arrival of shocking news, and expecting a good show.

However, just as many people put forth their expectations and yearned for news related to the strange phenomenon last night, Chu Feng and the others had already left the Everlasting Sea of Blood, and went forward to a place called the Misty Peaks.

But, at the same time, in the deepest parts of the Everlasting Sea of Blood, there was a person speedily rushing about like light.

Finally, he stopped, and if one neared, they would see that it was the blind old man who Chu Feng met just as he entered the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

At present, the old man held in his hand an object wrapped by black cloth. After tightly clenching the object, an expression of incomparable panic surged upon his face, saying with a soundless wail, “How has this happened? Why can’t I feel the slightest bit of aura? It disappeared! It’s not in the Everlasting Sea of Blood! Where exactly did it go? Where did it go?!”

Chapter 644: Misty Peaks

After a while of hurrying, Chu Feng and the others finally arrived into the land of the Misty Peaks from the Everlasting Sea of Blood.

However, just as they walked out of the Ancient Teleportation Array and entered the land, they suddenly discovered vast black clouds appearing above the distant sea surface.

The black clouds covered a very broad area. It veiled over a small part of the world, and within the black clouds, sounds of thunder rang out without end. Moreover, they were very odd. The first feeling they gave people would be uneasiness, as though there were some ominous things within.

boom Suddenly, an explosion that shook the world burst out from the boundless black clouds. A golden shock wave appeared, and it swept through the horizon, shattering the air, and a few black clouds were also forcibly dispersed. However, the black clouds were really too vast and soon, they covered the sky again.

boom However, shortly afterwards, another explosion rang out. An even stronger shock wave emerged, but like before, it quickly became inundated by the black clouds.

It happened again and again. Unceasingly, explosions and shock waves came from the black clouds, and it even started to make extremely frightening shrieks. That sound did not seem like a normal wild beast's. It was extremely strange. Those who heard it felt inexplicably terrified as chills went down their spines.

"Heavens! What is happening over there? Such horrifying clouds, and such terrifying shrieks!" Outside the Teleportation Array there stood a few people. Naturally, such things also attracted their attention.

"There are definitely people intensely fighting within the black clouds, and their cultivations are very strong too." Chu Feng was also observing that. Judging by the distance from the clouds and here, in addition with the shock waves' curvature and reflection of light, the person who

attacked was at least an existence of a Martial King.

"Wanshi, bring Wuqing to the Misty Peaks first," Qiushui Fuyan suddenly said to Jiang Wanshi in a grave tone. Although she knew of Chu Feng's real name, after he was disguised, as well as in public circumstances, she would still call Chu Feng Wuqing in order to help him conceal his identity.

whoosh After speaking, Qiushui Fuyan waved her robe, rising into the air after becoming a rainbow. Her speed was quick and attracted endlessly exclamation from the bystanders. They all determined that Qiushui Fuyan was an unrivaled expert, and in the gaze they looked at Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi with also became very reverent.

Both of them couldn't even bother with such changes and stopped looking. They then flew in the direction of the Misty Peaks.

After Qiushui Fuyan left, Chu Feng actually didn't need to be that restrained and became affable. All of that was because of Qiushui Fuyan's excessive seriousness as well as her powerful strength. Chu Feng knew a person like that liked peacefulness, so their journey, for the sake of Qiushui Fuyan's feelings, he held himself back a bit.

"Junior Wuqing, you seem to be a bit afraid of my master?" Jiang Wanshi asked with a smile when she saw Chu Feng's change.

"Not afraid, just respect." Chu Feng smiled back, but it was the words of his heart.

"Junior Wuqing is quite smart. You've seen through my master's temper already! She does indeed dislike rowdiness and prefers silence. However, even though she is a bit strict normally, she has a very kind nature and treats others very well too," Jiang Wanshi said with a smile.

"Mm, of course. Senior Qiushui is a kind person, or else she wouldn't have helped me and Yan Ruyu. For example, the black clouds that we just saw. It is clearly not related to us, but Senior Qiushui went there to investigate. The reason is because she wants to remove an unnecessary disaster," Chu Feng said.

“Junior Wuqing, do you feel that something is wrong with the black clouds just now?” Jiang Wanshi asked with a smile.

“There is something very wrong about the black clouds. They seem a bit strange, and there must be great peril within,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Wuqing truly has great eyesight. It is an Evil Cloud, and there is definitely a demon inside,” Jiang Wanshi said.

“Demon?” Hearing that, Chu Feng couldn’t help being taken aback slightly, then praised, “Senior Jiang is the one who has great eyesight. You’ve actually analyzed it so in depth! Though, I wonder how you saw there was a demon inside, and what thing is this demon you talked about?”

“You jest, Junior Wuqing. How could I have such powerful eyesight? It’s only because I’ve accompanied Master many times to the Misty Peaks so I’ve seen this situation before. Any time we see it, Master always goes out.

“Afterwards, I did ask her once. She told me that the Misty Peaks is a land of immortals. It can be called the most special place in the Eastern Sea Region. However, it is also the strangest place, as a monster often appear.

“Although when the monster appears, it will not leave the land of the Misty Peaks, they must still be quickly eradicated or else it would harm the innocent who come to the Misty Peaks. As for what monster it is, I do not know,” Jiang Wanshi said.

“It’s actually that strange? No wonder I felt the black clouds to be so odd. They had an unspeakable feeling.” Chu Feng was very shocked. After arriving in the Eastern Sea Region, he experienced many things he had never heard of before, so he had really broadened his horizons.

“Hoh. Actually, in the Misty Peaks, there is a Demon Ambush Map. As long as the demon appears, the map will have an indication. So, if I’m not mistaken, the one fighting in the black clouds just now should be the master of the Misty Peaks, Senior Piaomiao. My master is heading over there only because she wants to lend her an arm,” Jiang Wanshi continued saying.

“I’ve heard that Lady Piaomiao is the number one hidden expert in the Eastern Sea Region. I wonder if that rumour is true or false. Is there truly a hidden expert that possesses a cultivation above Senior Qiushui’s?” Chu Feng asked with a smile. Before, he felt that the person fighting within the black clouds was very strong, and from Jiang Wanshi’s words, he could hear that the Lady Piaomiao seemed to be more powerful than Qiushui Fuyan, so Chu Feng really wanted to confirm.

“Of course Senior Piaomiao is stronger! The Misty Peaks is titled as the strangest land in the Eastern Sea Region. It contains limitless good things and the Immortal Execution Archipelago have had their eyes locked on it for a long time, but the reason why they didn’t dare to occupy it is only because they fear a single person,” Jiang Wanshi said.

“It’s Lady Piaomiao?!” Chu Feng asked.

“Exactly!” Jiang Wanshi replied.

“I didn’t expect Lady Piaomiao to reach this degree of strength. Even the Immortal Execution Archipelago fear her.”

Chu Feng felt stunned. Although he hadn’t been in the Eastern Sea Region for a long time, he had already, more or less, seen how powerful it was. One had to know that the enormous power, the Immortal Execution Archipelago, was indeed like the sun in the sky at present. Yet, Lady Piaomiao was able to make the Immortal Execution Archipelago afraid. From that, it could be seen how impressive of an existence she was.

“But of course! Senior Piaomiao is the chosen guardian of the Misty Peaks. Her cultivation talent is extremely high, and I’ve heard my master say that Senior Piaomiao nears a thousand years of age. Though, she is still healthy right now and there is no problem for her to live several hundred more years,” Jiang Wanshi said furtively, as though it was a secret.

“She has really lived that long? What cultivation does she have?”

After hearing those words, Chu Feng, again, was shocked. A person living almost a thousand years, and could continue living for several hundred years more. Wasn’t that person’s cultivation extremely high?

Otherwise, how could she have obtained such a long life?

"No." However, Jiang Wanshi shook her head to Chu Feng's question, then said, "Senior Piaomiao's cultivation is high, that's indisputable; but it isn't so high that she could obtain such a long life through cultivation.

"The reason she can, however, is all because of the Misty Peaks. Junior Wuqing, like I said, the Misty Peaks is the strangest land in the Eastern Sea Region, and it is called the land of immortals. You must know that the word 'immortals' isn't spoken casually."

Chapter 645: Martial Marking Immortal Realm

“The Misty Peak truly seems very special. Senior Jiang, please explain them so this junior can have a better understanding.” Hearing to that point, Chu Feng had a complete new comprehension of the Misty Peak.

Before, he even thought that the Misty Peak was only an ordinary peak, and it was only famous because hidden experts lived here, along with one of the great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, Qiu Zhu.

But looking at it now, it seemed completely different. Chu Feng also knew that there were reasons why special places were special. Therefore, he felt that if the Misty Peak was truly as Jiang Wanshi said, then it was very likely that it concealed great possibilities.

“Actually, I don’t understand this place too much and I only heard my master say a few things about it. As for its origin, no one knows exactly. They only know that there are many special things in this place and it can even prolong one’s life. So, that’s why it’s called the strangest land in the Eastern Sea Region.

“According to my master, the Misty Peak is actually more like a super-huge sealing formation. Closed within is a demon that people lack comprehension over. It is unknown who sealed the demon there, but occasionally, it shoots out some phantoms to make trouble.

“The demon’s phantoms are the black clouds we saw before. Although they are only phantoms, and they cannot leave the land of the Misty Peak, if we ignore them it’s likely that it will completely unseal the monster. So, the Misty Peak requires a guardian responsible to eradicate the demons that are born at any time.

“This guardian is said to be chosen by the Misty Peak itself, and only females can hold the position. Right now, the guardian is Senior Piaomiao, and I’m sure the future guardian will be birthed from one of the four seniors,” Jiang Wanshi explained.

“It’s actually that mystical? Then who’s the first guardian of the Misty Peak?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Wuqing, you want to ask who the first owner of this Misty Peak is right?” Jiang Wanshi smiled.

Chu Feng scratched his head when Jiang Wanshi saw through his intentions, and said with a smile, “Heh, yeah. Hearing Senior Jiang’s words, even though I haven’t seen the Misty Peak yet, I already feel that place is impressive.

“If it is truly as Senior Jiang says, that the Misty Peak is, in reality, a huge sealing formation, then I’m sure that the owner of this place must be an extremely outstanding existence. Otherwise, how could they have such a great handiwork? If I don’t know the grand name of such a person, it would truly be a type of regret!”

At that instant, Jiang Wanshi shook her head, and said, “The Misty Peak has existed for many generations, and no one knows who the first owner is. However, from what I’ve heard, on the Misty Peak there are some murals engraved, and looking from some of the markings and symbols in the formation, the Misty Peak should have come from the Ancient Era.”

“Ancient Era? That means this Misty Peak is truly mysterious. More and more, I want to see what exactly it looks like.” After hearing those words, yearning surged in Chu Feng’s eyes.

“Don’t worry. The Misty Peak will absolutely not disappoint you.” Jiang Wanshi smiled very confidently.

After more quick journeying, Chu Feng discovered that they entered a vast and endless region of sea once again. Thinking back when Jiang Wanshi said the Misty Peak was not too far away, Chu Feng couldn’t help thinking that it very possibly was a beautiful island.

However, Chu Feng soon found out that he was wrong because the thing that finally appeared in front of him was an enormous area of white clouds.

The area of the white clouds was huge, and its shape was very beautiful,

as though it were formed by countless super-sized cotton candy blankets. It would even be reasonable to say it was the most beautiful white cloud he had ever seen.

And after going through the endless white clouds, Chu Feng was involuntarily dumbstruck, and couldn't avoid inhaling a breath of air.

It was because he astonishedly discovered in the distant white clouds, there stood a floating mountain range. The mountain range was not a steep one that penetrated through the white clouds. It actually grew atop the white clouds.

Moreover, that mountain range was very pretty. There were countless peaks within and waterfalls as well that cascaded down. They were like white-coloured water dragons as they entered the white clouds from the mountain peaks, giving rise to large splashes and projecting many rainbows.

Yet, when Chu Feng was still under the white clouds, he clearly didn't see a single drop of water. Which meant the water that flowed down from the waterfalls, despite landing in the clouds, hadn't seeped through them and sprayed down.

Chu Feng had seen floating islands. As long as an appropriate amount of formations was added, it was actually not hard. The Everlasting Sea of Blood had plenty of them.

However, it was the first time Chu Feng saw such an enormous mountain range floating. He simply didn't dare to imagine what sort of formation was required to maintain it. He only knew that an extremely powerful technique was needed, and in short, it was something he could not even touch.

Most importantly, the Misty Peak was already built above the white clouds, but at that moment, as they stepped on the peak of the white clouds and looked up, Chu Feng amazedly discovered that in the distant sky upwards, there were still more beautiful white clouds.

The clouds were positioned too high and even though Chu Feng could already fly, he also knew that with his current strength, he could still not

reach that height

Furthermore, although the white clouds were slowly drifting about, they still lingered on the Misty Peak. It meant that the white clouds might not be naturally formed, but from some sort of powerful formation.

It had to be said that even though he already knew how special the Misty Peak was before even arriving, when he truly saw it, Chu Feng still felt the scene to be extremely pleasant. At the same time, Chu Feng was even more curious as to whose great creation it was.

"How is this the Misty Peak? From what I see, it should be called the Floating Mountain Range," Chu Feng jokingly said after praising.

"Junior Wuqing is truly comedic." After hearing Chu Feng's words, Jiang Wanshi couldn't help laughing while covering her mouth. Then, she said, "The mysticality of the Misty Peak does not stop there. Junior Wuqing, you see the white clouds above right? Those clouds and the ones under our feet are a part of the Misty Peak's formation.

"The white clouds floating in the air will produce different temperatures according to the difference in time. That causes the Misty Peak to have the rare change in the four seasons.

"Usually speaking, this area is warm throughout the year. It's quite evident when spring, summer, and autumn appears, but winter is, in reality, non-existent."

"Using a formation to create change in the four seasons? That is truly impressive!" The more he heard Jiang Wanshi's explanation, the more Chu Feng praised how special that place was, and more so, he knew what it was called the strangest land in the Eastern Sea Region.

"That's right! Senior Jiang, isn't the Misty Peak the place where Lady Piaomiao lives in isolation? Why are there so many young cultivators on the road here? Could it be that they are all coming for Lady Piaomiao, wanting her to be their master? Yet this amount is a bit too much isn't it?"

Suddenly, Chu Feng asked curiously because on the road there, he really

did see many cultivators with decent cultivation. Within, many were Martial Lords and only a small amount was in the Heaven realm. Moreover, they were not old: not a single one was over thirty years of age. That made Chu Feng suspicious.

At first, Chu Feng assumed those people only came to find a master; after all, Lady Piaomiao's name was so widespread. But the nearer they got to the Misty peak, the more Chu Feng felt that something was wrong.

Putting aside that the people who were there could be called the "dragon within men"—young ages yet having extremely powerful cultivation—just the amount alone meant that something wrong, because there was really too many.

"Hoh." Jiang Wanshi first chuckled with her mouth covered when she heard Chu Feng question, then said to Chu Feng with suspense, "It seems like Junior Wuqing still doesn't know too much about the things in the Eastern Sea Region."

"Senior Jiang, what exactly is happening?" Chu Feng asked curiously as he was successfully caught by tension.

"They should all be coming for the Martial Marking Immortal Realm!" Jiang Wanshi said.

Chapter 646: Men Beating on Woman

“Martial Marking Immortal Realm.” Chu Feng was even more intrigued upon hearing those words.

“Junior Wuqing, didn’t I tell you that this Misty Peak is very special. This Martial Marking Immortal Realm is one of the representations of the Misty Peak,” Jiang Wanshi said with a smile.

“Senior Jiang, don’t keep me in the dark anymore. What exactly is so special about this Martial Marking Immortal Realm that has attracted so many young geniuses here? From what I see, all of the Eastern Sea Region’s geniuses have come, right?”

Chu Feng stood there observing, and had already discovered quite a few geniuses with outstanding cultivation. He believed that in the Eastern Sea Region, these geniuses were absolutely the apical ones. And since so many geniuses had appeared at this place, it meant one thing—there must be some sort of great benefit for the cultivators of the young generation contained within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

“The Martial Marking Immortal Realm is a completely different world. The entrance of this world is on top of the Misty Peak. However, the gate of this entrance opens every six years, and those over the age of thirty cannot enter.

“Also, within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there are mystical Martial Markings. After entering, one can collect these markings. From what I’ve heard, the Martial Markings collected can be exchanged in the Misty Peak’s Martial Skill Building for an equivalent martial skill.

“In the Martial Skill Building, the worst skills are still rank seven martial skills. As long as you collect many markings, you can even obtain a Taboo martial skill.”

“Taboo martial skill?!” Interest immediately came to Chu Feng upon hearing those words because from Ya Fei, he had experienced a Taboo martial skill first-hand. He knew that despite possessing the danger of backlash, Taboo martial skills still had unordinary power.

Although the Secret Skills Chu Feng grasped were powerful, they had to grow bit by bit. But Taboo martial skills did not need to. As long as one successfully cultivated them, they could obtain powerful strength. So, Chu Feng was very interested in the Taboo martial skills.

"That's right. It's the Taboo martial skills. They are priceless treasures, and in the entire Eastern Sea Region right now, the number of people who grasp Taboo martial skills are few within few. Even the ones that the Immortal Execution Archipelago own can only be learnt by the peak of geniuses. Thus, the price of Taboo martial skills is extremely high.

"And in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there exists a chance to obtain Taboo martial skills. Naturally, it makes the powers of various places gaze at it with greed. So, every time the Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens, every power will send their most excellent people in the younger generation to this place.

"But sadly, up until now, there are very, very few people who were able to obtain a Taboo martial skill in that place. For example, in the last time the Martial Marking Immortal realm was open, only one person obtained a Taboo martial skill—the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun," Jiang Wanshi said.

"Murong Xun?" Hearing that name, Chu Feng's gaze couldn't help but slightly flicker. It wasn't the first time he had heard that name after coming to the Eastern Sea Region, and naturally, he knew who Murong Xun was: the man who was going to marry Zi Ling.

"Junior Wuqing, you also know of Murong Xun? He is indeed quite a character, so young yet already possessing a sense-defying level of cultivation. He can put up a fight against those in the older generation, and he's the publicly recognized number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region.

"There are even some people who say that Murong Xun's talent far surpasses the exceptional genius back then whose name stunned the Eastern Sea Region, Huangfu Haoyue.

"However, regretfully, Murong Xun is exactly thirty this year, and

already exceeds the limit to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"Otherwise, with his current cultivation, I'm sure he would reap even greater rewards if he were to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm again. After all, he was already so outstanding six years ago." When Murong Xun was mentioned, Jiang Wanshi also praised without end, her face full of reverence.

Chu Feng only smiled faintly at Jiang Wanshi's action without even an iota of blame. Even though Murong Xun was his archenemy, that was completely unrelated to Jiang Wanshi. Besides, females liked excellent males, and naturally Jiang Wanshi was no exception. There was nothing wrong about that.

"Run? Keep on running! Let me see how far you can run for? When I catch you, I will definitely cripple you!"

But just at that moment, from the direction of the Misty Peak, there suddenly came bursts of yells. Looking towards the origin of the sound, several people were flying over with quick speed.

The one in the front was a female who wore cloth clothing and looked like a beggar. She was too dirty: chaotic hair and mud all over her body. Who knew how long she hadn't bathed for, and if weren't for the decent curve in front of her chest, it was likely that no one could recognize that she was a woman.

But even though the female was dirty and looked like a beggar, she had the cultivation of the ninth level of the Heaven realm, even a bit stronger than Jiang Wanshi.

At that very instant, she was using a very special bodily martial skill and crazily dashed towards them.

Behind the woman followed five men. The cultivation of the five men was not weak; they were all Martial Lords, four of whom were rank one Martial Lords, and one slightly fat man was a rank two Martial Lord.

The speed of the five men was extremely fast as well, especially so, for the slightly fat man who was a rank two Martial Lord. His speed far

surpassed the other four, and at that instant, he was also using a fairly strong bodily martial skill.

As he chased, no matter how much more profound the unclean woman's bodily martial skill was, it mattered not as the difference between a Martial Lord and the Heaven realm was too great. Gradually, she was getting caught up.

"Still escaping? Let me see where you can escape to!" Suddenly, the rank two Martial Lord explosively shouted. Boundless purple-coloured gas then surged out of his body.

It was a Spirit Formation. It covered the sky and earth, instantly wrapping around the woman. Finally, it became a cage, imprisoning her.

At first, the woman tried to use martial skills to break open the Spirit Formation, but it was useless as it was one laid by a Martial Lord. How could she, a mere person in the Heaven realm, break through it? So, as she could do nothing, she started to loudly curse, "God damn, let me out! You five bastards, on what basis are you catching me for? I came here to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm! By treating me like this you are violating the rules of the Misty Peak! Are you not afraid that Lady Piaomiao will punish all of you?!"

"Hmph. Entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm? You, with your Heaven realm cultivation, think you're qualified? Besides, not only did you create fake Misty Badges, you even dared to sell them to us, causing us to be humiliated and lose face within many of the same generation. If I don't give you a lesson, you will truly think us to be fools!" the rank two Martial Lord shouted loudly as he held a strange badge in his hand.

"I only said it was a Misty Badge, but I never said that it's the same one as the Misty Badge of the Misty Peak! Moreover, it wasn't I who forced the deal, but all of you who obstinately wanted me to sell them to you. What does that have to do with me?" the young woman said cunningly while forcing reason with her hands on her waist.

"Damn. You even dare to refute? Today, bitch, I will beat you to death!" Seeming to be quite infuriated by her, one of the rank one Martial Lords

waved his hand, and sent a slap through the air.

whoosh However, the unexpected thing was as she faced the attack from a rank one Martial Lord, she slanted her body slightly and actually evaded it. In addition, she started to use her Heaven power and shouted loudly to her surroundings, “Help! Five men are beating a woman, everyone come see!”

Chapter 647: Seeing Unfairness on the Road

At that instant, the distance to the Misty Peak was no longer far so the number of people there was not few. Hearing such a yell, all of them couldn't help casting their gazes to the origin, seeing what exactly was happening.

However, seeing such a scene, the rank two Martial Lord widened his eyes and coldly shouted, "I am the young master of the Domineering Tiger Villa, Tie Fan.

"This woman cheated away my money, and I am only demanding it back. In addition, as only a warning, I advise my friends here to not be too nosy." Even though Tie Fan's tone seemed polite, in reality it was full of cautionary intentions.

Everyone who had the ability to come to this place did not have weak cultivation, but at present, of the nearby people the strongest were only rank one Martial Lords. In addition, the Domineering Tiger Villa did have some position and power in the Eastern Sea Region.

So, after knowing Tie Fan's identity, those who were watching the liveliness all increased their forwarding speed, not a single one preparing to butt into this matter.

Seeing the cold human emotions and the fickle-minded world—even though there were many passing by, there was simply no one willing to help herself—the arrogant airs that she had earlier instantly vanished, and she said with a frivolous smile, "Hey hey hey, it is only a few low-rank Martial medicine. Isn't it fine if I just give it back?"

"Hmph. Of course you will give back our Martial medicine, but do you really think so long as you give us back our Martial medicine you can make fools of us for nothing? You truly have too great of an imagination." Tie Fan coldly snorted, then leaped forward and rushed into the Spirit Formation. At the same time, his hand was already squeezing the

woman's throat.

"Mm!" At that instant, she did all she could to struggle—waving her hands, powerfully hammering Tie Fan's arm—but it was useless and it could not move Tie Fan. She only felt the hand that squeezed her throat getting tighter and tighter. Not only was she unable to breathe, she even felt that her neck was going to be forcibly snapped off. Her face was fraught with pain.

boom However, just as the woman thought she was going to die, an explosion suddenly burst out, and at the same time, a powerful current of air descended from above.

The strength of the air current blew the four rank one Martial Lords several thousand meters away, and even the rank two Martial Lord, Tie Fan, changed his expression. However, he did not back away, and instead, strengthened the hand that he was squeezing the woman's neck with.

bam Just at that moment, another hand abruptly appeared and landed on Tie Fan's wrist. With a cracking sound, Tie Fan felt his wrist go soft, leaving him no choice but to loosen his clenching hand.

Only after taking several steps back did Tie Fan discover a person appearing by the woman's side. And of course, that person was Chu Feng.

"Who are you?" Tie Fan coldly shouted, his eyes full of enmity. It was because he discovered that even though Chu Feng was strong, he was no more than a rank one Martial Lord. Being struck back by a rank one Martial Lord made him very displeased.

"It is not important who I am. The important thing is that I am not very used to men hitting women," Chu Feng said with a light smile, but his eyes were full of derision.

Simultaneously, Jiang Wanshi also came up to Chu Feng's side, supporting the female who was rapidly gasping.

"Damn, such nerves! Do you know who we are? You dare to meddle into our matter?!" And at that instant, the four rank one Martial Lords who were pushed back by Chu Feng had already charged up with stomachs

full of fury, and also started to attack him.

Even though the four attacks were not martial skills, they could not be underestimated. After all, the strength of Martial power could fragment the air, and in reality, facing the four bursts of auras that were coming straight at them, fear emerged onto the faces of Jiang Wanshi and that woman.

Especially for Jiang Wanshi, she couldn't help but pull the woman back because she, who was only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, simply had no way of fighting against that aura. Even if she used her strongest technique she couldn't. That was the difference between the Heaven realm and a Martial Lord.

Seeing Jiang Wanshi's timid reaction, the rank one Martial Lords who joined up to attack curled up their mouths to form a smile, and brimmed with pride. However, when Jiang Wanshi feared their attack, they didn't expect Chu Feng to have not the slightest bit of dread.

"Scram." Chu Feng stood where he was without even moving. With an explosively shout, powerful might burst out and a formless shock wave swept out, engulfing the four people. The strong power not only shattered their attacks, it even pushed them back again.

"Are you truly looking to die!" Seeing that, Tie Fan no longer watched and did nothing on the side. He threw out an abrupt punch, attacking Chu Feng.

boom When it was thrown, the sky instantly changed colour. Just the might alone caused the surrounding air to have cracks like a shattered mirror. It was not an ordinary attack, but a very powerful martial skill.

"Hmph." However, Chu Feng was still not afraid by that punch. He raised his own fist, and actually threw it out similarly. Moreover, he didn't use any martial skills. It was a very ordinary punch that only contained Martial power.

boom rumble rumble rumble

The collision of the two fists instantly made a deafening explosion. A

berserk shock wave rippled out, sweeping through the horizon. The air cracked above, and the water boiled below. The atmosphere produced was very terrifying.

Being affected by such horrifying might, Tie Fan slipped and was forced back several steps. Yet, looking back at Chu Feng, he did not even move an inch, and was still standing there, unmoved.

"How is this happening? That guy is clearly only a rank one Martial Lord. How can he have such strength?" Only then did the four people struck back by Chu Feng come to a revelation, realizing that Chu Feng wasn't as simple as he seemed.

As for Tie Fan, his face was similarly grave as he was in quite a difficult situation. He asked coldly, "No wonder this girl dares to be so arrogant. So she has helpers. There will always be consequences for people who do culpable things. Since you dare to help this woman, do you dare to report your name?"

"Hmph. Trash like you usually do not deserve to know my name, but today my mood is extremely good. I'll make an exception and give you a chance.

"Raise your ears and listen up! I am called Wuqing, belonging to no school nor sect, I walk alone. In the future, if you want revenge, come straight at me!" Chu Feng's words were full of disdain, and he did indeed not put any of them in his eyes.

"You... you have guts. You'll have things coming in the future." Being looked down upon by Chu Feng, Tie Fan gnashed his teeth in anger. But, he could do nothing, so he turned around, and left.

He did so because the exchange just now allowed him to see how powerful Chu Feng was. If he fought more against him, he had no confidence that he could defeat Chu Feng.

It was fine if he were to defeat Chu Feng; after all, he, as a rank two Martial Lord, should defeat a rank one Martial Lord. However, if he were to lose to Chu Feng, that would be too shameful. So, currently, he had no more plans to fight against Chu Feng.

“Brother Tie Fan, you’re letting him go just like that?” Tie Fan’s several companions felt very confused when he actually let Chu Feng go.

“It is already late now. If we don’t head to the Misty Peak, we won’t be able to get in. None of you would want to pass the night above this ocean right?

“Besides, even though that girl is damnable, she’s a female, after all. Just now, we’ve already attracted some people’s attention. If there’s one that blabs about and pulls some nosy people, it will be disadvantageous to us.” Tie Fan naturally had to find an excuse for his cowardice.

“Brother Tie Fan is reasonable. It will not be too late to give a person like him a lesson later.” Hearing that, even though the four others knew what he was thinking, it wasn’t good for them to shame him further, so they could only leave just like that.

Chapter 648: The Woman Repaying the Favour

"You're too handsome sir! To repay this life-saving favour, I am willing to give my everything to you." After Tie Fan left, Chu Feng suddenly felt a softness behind his back. Turning his head around, he saw the woman leap towards him from behind and tightly hug him.

At that instant, Chu Feng discovered that she was truly dirty to an unordinary degree. Aside from her big eyes and white teeth that she revealed when she smiled, she was simply black all over. In addition, her dark skin wasn't a natural colour, it was the accumulation of grime and dirty stains, along with the smell of a sewer.

It had to be said that her gift of hugging did not give Chu Feng any bit of comfortableness. Instead, it made him feel slightly awkward because she was really too dirty.

However, Chu Feng, who was cultured and refined, did not push her away when he was toyed by her. He waved his hand and flung her away.

Then, he said to her, "If you do many unrighteous things you are only committing suicide. Although they are wrong by being greedy of small advantages, you are also wrong by selling fake badges. This is in the territory of the Misty Peak. If you allow them to know about this, I'm sure you will face a great disaster. So, it's best for you to quickly leave."

Only after saying that to her did Chu Feng look at Jiang Wanshi and said, "Senior Jiang, let's go."

"Mm." Jiang Wanshi nodded, then followed him. At that moment, even more complex expressions appeared on her eyes as she gazed at Chu Feng.

Previously, she personally saw Chu Feng defeat four rank one Martial Lords without even moving, and moreover, after defeating a rank two Martial Lord, Jiang Wanshi praised Chu Feng's powerful strength even more.

They were both disciples of famous masters, but thinking of the differences between her and Chu Feng, and recollecting when she even put up an arrogant attitude when they first met, she couldn't help feeling a bit ashamed.

"Sir, wait!" But just at that moment, that woman ran over again. However, this time, she didn't hug Chu Feng and stopped a meter away from him. Spreading open her hands, she gave a badge to Chu Feng, saying, "Sir, this Martial Marking Immortal Realm only opens once every six years. At present, almost all of the peak geniuses of the Eastern Sea Region have come here and they are lining up outside right now. All of their identities must be individually examined, or else they are not allowed entry. Just now, you said you belong to no school nor sect, so I'm afraid you won't be able to enter.

"However, as long as you hold this badge, you have no need to queue up and can enter."

"Lady, there is no need for you to worry. The two of us can definitely enter," Jiang Wanshi said extremely confidently.

"You seem to be very confident, and I'm sure you must have some sort of background. However, the Misty Peak has always viewed all equally. Right now, of the so many peak geniuses at this place, which one of them doesn't have some background?

"All of them are obediently waiting in line. On what basis are you allowed in? Or perhaps you are an outstanding genius, and have already received the Misty Badge that the Misty Peak sent out? And that you can receive the best treatment and directly enter?" the woman asked tauntingly as she waved the badge around in her hand.

"You!" Hearing her speak like that, Jiang Wanshi was slightly infuriated, but very soon she controlled her emotions. Rather than showing anger she smiled, and said to her, "I have indeed not received a Misty Badge, but I have no need for your counterfeit."

"Oi oi oi, how do you know mine is a counterfeit? Have you truly seen the Misty Badge? Besides, I am giving it to this sir, who helped me. What

are you doing, being so blabby?" The woman was very domineering and had actually forgotten all about Jiang Wanshi supporting her up as she fiercely refuted her.

As the two of them were having a war of words, Chu Feng was instead carefully examining that badge. He discovered that its shape was very beautiful, as if it were the wings of a swan. Moreover, within contained indescribable strange gas. Although, from the external appearance, it was not different at all than the ones Tie Fan and the others had, but looking into it, there was an enormous difference.

Looking back at the woman's logical and mighty appearance, Chu Feng felt more and more that she was not a simple person. So, he stopped Jiang Wanshi, and said to the woman, "That's fine, I'll believe you once. I hope you aren't troubling me." As he spoke, Chu Feng accepted the badge.

"Don't worry, why would I trick you? Hehe." The woman grinned and even cast Chu Feng a lascivious look. However, with dignity like hers, it really couldn't create any power of attraction to Chu Feng.

The woman was quite tactful, however, and immediately left after giving the badge to Chu Feng without any more nagging.

Although Jiang Wanshi expressed confusion over Chu Feng's action of taking the woman's badge, she didn't say anything. Thus, Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi flew towards the Misty Peak that they nearly reached.

The Misty Peak was, in reality, a vast mountain range. The area it covered was broad and made people praise at its perfection. But, there was only one entrance to that vast mountain range.

It was because there was an invisible Spirit Formation covering the entire mountain range. Up until now, there hadn't been a single person who could break through that Spirit Formation. To want to enter the Misty Peak meant one had to enter through the Spirit Formation entrance.

When they arrived at the entrance of the Misty Peak, Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi discovered that it was as the woman said: at present, there really was a large number of groups gathering at that place. They were all of the younger generation, and were all from famous sects or were

disciples of famous masters. The weakest was in the ninth level of the Heaven realm, but even more of them were Martial Lords.

Even though most of them were rank one Martial Lords, they were in realms akin to legends in the continent of the Nine Provinces. At present, there were actually so many who appeared there, and most were even young Martial Lords below the age of thirty.

That was enough to state one thing. Putting aside the limited resources in the continent of the Nine Provinces, with just talent alone, there were huge differences. The people in the Nine Provinces were unable to step into the Martial Lord realm was more because of their own lack of comprehension ability than the lack of resources.

So, it couldn't be helped when Chu Feng and the others were so overpowering in the Nine Provinces yet after arriving in the Eastern Sea Region, their overpowering strength was greatly diminished.

The people in the Eastern Sea Region were not the lackluster people of the Nine Provinces. At least, if one randomly released any of the people who currently appeared in the Misty Peak to the continent of the Nine Provinces, that person would become an exceptional genius whose name would be passed down the generations.

However, even though these geniuses were strong, there was still some distance between them and Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng was not complacent because of his aptitude. Instead, he pondered. If the geniuses of the Eastern Sea Region were already like that, how powerful would the geniuses in the Holy Land of Martialism be? Perhaps they would surpass himself by a large margin right?

Then no wonder the Holy Land of Martialism became the holy land of cultivators. Perhaps in their eyes, Chu Feng and the others were truly no more than garbage unsuitable for cultivation.

"Dammit, I didn't expect the opening of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm to attract so many people! It's reasonable for the geniuses of the Martial Lord realm, but even people in the ninth level of the Heaven realm near the age of thirty are here too? Do they truly think they have

the qualifications to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?

"With so many people lining up for their identities to be examined, when it's our turn, the night will probably be dark! It seems like we can only wait for my master to come."

Looking at that scene, Jiang Wanshi lost all spirit. Although she had come to the Misty Peak a few times with Qiushui Fuyan, it was all when she directly brought her in. Other than Lady Piaomiao and the people with rather prestigious statuses in the Misty Peak, there was simply no one who recognized her.

And, the ones guarding the entrance at present were ordinary servants in the Misty Peak. Although they had decent cultivation, they were no more than servants. They didn't recognize Jiang Wanshi, so she couldn't do anything either. They could only wait for Qiushui Fuyan to take care of the demon quicker and bring them in then.

Chapter 649: Real or Fake Badge

"Brother Tie Fan, look! Isn't that the damn brat who nosed into our matter?" Suddenly, from the latter half of the line of people, someone pointed the sky and exclaimed. It was the several people who clashed against Chu Feng discovering him and Jiang Wanshi.

"Hmph. Who told him to be so meddlesome. It looks like they will sleep outside the Misty Peak tonight," Tie Fan said and smiled in a schadenfreude manner.

The Misty Peak closed their entrance before the sun set, and judging by the number of people in line as well as the examination speed, they were able to enter just before sunset. But if Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi wanted to queue up now, they no longer had the chance to enter before nightfall.

However, had Chu Feng not interfered and immediately came to line up, it would have been them who were in front currently. So, that was why they took joy in their misfortune, and felt that it was well-deserved.

"Look! What's that thing in that boy's hand?"

"Damn! Isn't it the Misty Badge? It was definitely given to him by that damn woman."

"That's true! It's the exact same as the ones in ours hands! He wouldn't be trying to use that fake badge to mix in right?"

"He shouldn't. No matter how much more stupid that boy is, he wouldn't reach this degree of stupidity," Tie Fan and the others discussed as they looked at the Misty Badge in Chu Feng's hand.

"Senior Jiang, normally speaking, how long does Senior Piaomiao need to handle that demon?" Chu Feng asked Jiang Wanshi above the horizon.

"I'm truly unsure. If it's quick, then just a moment; but if it's long, then several days. According to my master, even though Senior Piaomiao has overwhelming strength, she had once fought against the demon for several days, and even returned with injuries," Jiang Wanshi replied.

"It's that powerful?" Hearing those words, Chu Feng felt greatly

shocked. If what Jiang Wanshi was true, then wasn't the demon sealed by the Misty Peak a bit too powerful? Merely an illusion projected out could injure Lady Piaomiao. What if it were its original body? How powerful would it be then?

But being shocked was being shocked. A matter like that wasn't something Chu Feng could interfere in with his cultivation. So, he said to Jiang Wanshi, "Senior Jiang, doesn't this mean that we don't know when Senior Qiushui will return? If she can't return today, won't we have to stay out for a night?"

"This..." Jiang Wanshi mulled over it, but she indeed did not know when Qiushui Fuyan was going to return.

"What I think is...let's try out this Misty Badge." Chu Feng smiled as he held the badge in his hand.

"Junior Chu Feng, you should absolutely not do this! Do you believe this badge is genuine?" Hearing that, Jiang Wanshi's face changed greatly and she hurried spoke to stop him.

However, Chu Feng lightly smiled and said, "No matter if it's real or fake, we'll know with a try. For some reason, I feel like that girl won't do anything detrimental to me.

"Besides, so what if it's a fake? At most, the crowd will laugh at us for a while. Afterwards, we'll just go and line up. Senior Jiang cares about the eyes of men, but I, Wuqing, do not. You don't need to accompany me; I'll just go alone." After speaking, Chu Feng leaped forward and flew towards the entrance.

"Junior Wuqing, wai—" At that instant, Jiang Wanshi had planned to chase after him, but ultimately, after pressing her lips together, she retracted the foot that had already stepped out and did not continue following because she believed firmly that the badge was definitely a fake.

Although she, Jiang Wanshi, wasn't much in comparison to the geniuses there, after all, she was a disciple of a famous master. Of the many experts' disciples in the Lovers Terrace, she was still one of the

persons at the top. So, she didn't want to lose face.

"Brother Tie Fan, look! That guy is actually flying towards the entrance! He wouldn't truly want to use that fake badge to try and get in amidst the busyness right?" One of the rank one Martial Lords Chu Feng struck back before spoke as he pointed at the sky.

"It's unlikely, unless his brain's been squashed from before. Only then would he do such an idiotic action." Tie Fan shook his head. He didn't feel that Chu Feng seemed to be a person with no intelligence.

"He's really doing it! Look, he is truly going over!" the person continued.

"Damn! This isn't true is it? Could it be that he is truly a fool?" And seeing, with his own eyes, Chu Feng landing at the forefront of the queue, even Tie Fan jumped from fright with his face full of disbelief.

"Oi? What are you doing? Why aren't you waiting in line and have stood in front of me? Now scram to the end of the line!"

The one who stood at the front of the line was a rank one Martial Lord. The person before him just entered, and it was his turn to take out his identification objects to be examined. However, he didn't expect Chu Feng to suddenly come down from above and land right in front of him. That made him furious.

"That's right? Where did such an uncivilized thing come from? Haven't you seen everyone else queueing up here? Who do you think you are to dare not to wait in line?" At the same time, the people behind the man were also angry. After all, they had arrived painfully at that location through a lengthy wait.

The one currently guarding the Spirit Formation entrance was a white- and grey-haired old man. He was also a Martial Lord, but his cultivation was very high—he was a rank six Martial Lord. It was even one rank higher than the outstanding genius of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Ya Fei.

He examined Chu Feng. However, he didn't feel that Chu Feng, with his cultivation, was able to receive the Misty Badge. So, he very strictly said,

“Return to the line right this instant! If you break the rules, regardless of where you come from, do not blame me for being impolite!”

“Oi? I have the Misty Badge. Do I still need to wait in line?” Chu Feng calmly smiled at the old man’s rebuke, then flashed the badge in this hand.

“Hahaha, Misty Badge? A person like you, receiving a Misty Badge? From what I see, you bought it from that beggar woman just now right?” But after seeing the badge in Chu Feng’s hand, before the old man even spoke, the crowd behind him started to loudly jeer and laugh, all of them feeling that the badge in Chu Feng’s hand was fake.

As for the old man, he didn’t look straight at the badge in Chu Feng’s hand either. He coldly shouted, “You truly know not of repent. I’ve already warned that you cannot take a fake badge and try to mix through, yet you remain so ignorant and view my words as wind brushing past your ears. It seems like today, I must give you a lesson.”

As he spoke, the old man’s sword-like brows inverted, boundless pressure then surging out straight towards Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng feared naught when he faced such danger head-on. He held the badge and said to the old man, “You didn’t even see and already know that this is fake?”

hmm And also at that moment, a formless forced burst out of the badge in Chu Feng’s hand. Not only did it engulf the old man’s pressure in an instant, it even forced him over several steps back.

The old man’s face couldn’t help changing greatly, and when he looked back at the badge in Chu Feng’s hand, his eyes were full of shock.

He then hurriedly stood back to where he was, bowed and saluted respectfully to Chu Feng, and said,

“This one has been a fool and hadn’t seen it was the true Misty Badge! I ask you for forgiveness!”

Chapter 650: Lady Piaomiao

"What? The Misty Badge in that boy's hand is actually authentic?" The group of people watching the action behind Chu Feng dropped their jaws at the old man's sudden change of attitude.

"Senior, you were only being dutiful. However, I still have a senior who is with me. I wonder...can we enter together?"

Chu Feng lightly smiled. Although the old man was unkind a moment ago, Chu Feng didn't make things too difficult for him. After all, he had such strong cultivation. No matter what position he held in the Misty Peak, just based off of the difference in their cultivation, Chu Feng couldn't make him lose face in front of so many people by insulting him.

"If I may ask, what is the name of your senior, and where did she come from?" Indeed, when Chu Feng was so polite, the old man very satisfiedly smiled, and his attitude and treatment towards Chu Feng became even more kind.

Simultaneously, the old man stated to flip through the thick book in his hand. Every single person's name from all sorts of schools and sects in the Eastern Sea Region was densely recorded within. It was for verifying identities.

"My Senior's name is Jiang Wanshi. She is the disciple of Lady Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace," Chu Feng said truthfully.

"Oh? So it's Lady Qiushui's disciple. She is a close friend of Lady Piaomiao, and before she left, she had specially stated that if Lady Qiushui and her disciple comes, they can directly enter with no need for any badges. Only a proof of identity is required," the old man said slightly surprisedly.

"Then thank you, Senior." As for Chu Feng, he too didn't expect Lady Piaomiao to have already left a message behind. So, he quickly called Jiang Wanshi over. After a simple examination of identity, the two of them were gazed at by countless numbers of people as they stepped into the Misty Peak.

“Damn, really? That boy and girl have actually managed to enter? They’ve truly cut the queue and entered!”

“How is this possible? Could it be that the Misty Badge he had was real? But with his cultivation, how could he have had the qualifications to receive one?”

Almost every single person was dumbfounded by that scene. Especially Tie Fan and the others who had clashed with Chu Feng. All of them stared with widened eyes, their faces full of the most extreme of expressions.

After entering the Misty Peak, Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi were brought to a peak for resting.

There were several palaces on that peak, and even though it wasn’t that luxurious, there was a special sort of charm. Refreshing and natural structures perfectly harmonized with the beautiful sceneries of the Misty Peak.

Although the residential conditions were quite nice, there was no freedom of movement. On the way, Chu Feng discovered that there were truly quite a few Misty Peak experts. Moreover, in many places, there were people guarding. Aside from the specially set residential regions, it was forbidden to stroll about on their own. Even guests who received the best treatments such as Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi could not.

“The guards in this place are truly not simple. They are actually all Martial Lords!” Chu Feng exclaimed in the palace.

“But of course. The Misty Peak is, after all, the strange land that can prolong one’s life. That’s also the main reason why many hidden experts are willing to come to this place and serve Lady Piaomiao.

“However, even though they have decent cultivation, they don’t have much of a status in the Misty Peak. Other than Lady Piaomiao, the Four Season Seniors’ position is the highest. All others are servants that they can order around,” Jiang Wanshi said.

“So that means other than Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue,

Lady Piaomiao hasn't accepted any other disciples?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"Mm. These four seniors are disciples Senior Piaomiao meticulously selected. All of them are true geniuses, something that is far from being comparable to my sisters." When the four people, Chun, Xia, Qiu, and Dong, were mentioned, there involuntarily appeared some shame on Jiang Wanshi's face.

"Senior Jiang's talent is already very outstanding. In a few years, you may even surpass them," Chu Feng consoled when he saw Jiang Wanshi's feeling of inferiority.

"Junior Wuqing, you think too highly of me. Others do not know, but I do. We sisters cannot be discussed on the same level as the four of them.

"They are geniuses carefully chosen by Senior Piaomiao. Not only in terms of talent, even in terms of beauty they are superior. They are the people beyond the masses, the geniuses within geniuses.

"As for us, we are no more than orphans kindly raised by Master. If it weren't for our master's devoted development, it would be impossible for us to have our current achievements. Even the Spirit power we have was passed down by Master from her great, painstaking efforts."

Speaking to that point, she seemed even more ashamed because in her heart, she knew clearly that she was no more than a genius—she could even barely call herself that—that wasted large amounts of resources. If her master weren't Qiushui Fuyan, then her current achievements would most definitely be as ordinary as possible.

"Senior Jiang, please don't think like that. Even though large amounts of cultivation resources can indeed make a person have greater accomplishments, if a person has mediocre aptitude, their accomplishments will still be limited.

"Senior Jiang already has such cultivation at such an age. Becoming a Martial Lord is only a matter of time.

"You need to know that in the place where I grew up, almost no one

could become a Martial Lord. At that place, Martial Lords were legends. To be able to enter the Heaven realm meant you were a peak genius.

"But do you know how many people there are in that continent? Any random power has several million disciples, and for slightly larger ones they even have several tens of millions of disciples. However, even so, a very few number of people could enter the Heaven realm. Most all halted in the Profound realm.

"If Senior Jiang's cultivation is ordinary, then what would those people count as?" Chu Feng said in comfort.

"Really?" Indeed, after hearing Chu Feng's words, a trace of her expression turning to joy appeared on Jiang Wanshi's face.

"Of course it's true. If Senior Jiang doesn't believe me, then in the future, I can bring you to the continent of the Nine Provinces for a stroll and bring you to see the place I grew up in," Chu Feng said with a certain face.

"Okay! Junior Wuqing, this is something that you promised me! Don't go back on your words!"

"I will absolutely not."

"Heh."

Despite knowing clearly that Chu Feng's words were to soothe her, Jiang Wanshi's heart still felt quite a bit more comfortable. Afterwards, the two chatted for quite a while more and even ate dinner together. Only after night came, and Qiushui Fuyan had yet to come and find them, did Jiang Wanshi return to her own resting area.

As for Chu Feng, he didn't worry much. Although Yan Ruyu was in Qiushui Fuyan's hands, he believed that she had the ability to protect Yan Ruyu well.

Next morning, Chu Feng's door was knocked. Opening it, he saw that it was actually Qiushui Fuyan and Jiang Wanshi. However, other than them, there was another grand character. Naturally, it was the owner of the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao.

According to Jiang Wanshi, Lady Piaomiao had lived for almost a thousand years. So, Chu Feng initially thought that she was an old lady that could not be older than she already was.

However, in reality, from Lady Piaomiao's external appearance, she seemed to not even pass the middle-ages. Although her image was not outstanding, and could be said to be quite ordinary, there was a unique demeanor on her body. Overall, that woman's strength absolutely reached an extremely terrifying state.

After she saw Chu Feng, her eyes flashed. Two fierce gazes pierced through Chu Feng's body like invisible blades, beginning to carefully examine him. Not only did they want to see through Chu Feng's cultivation, it was as if they also wanted to see through Chu Feng's nature.

At that moment, even Chu Feng couldn't help feeling chills going down his spine, because when the gaze permeated his body, he truly experienced how powerful that old monster was. She was even on a completely different level than Qiushui Fuyan, and was a true unrivaled expert.

Chapter 651: A Strand of Chance to Survive

But luckily, no matter how much fiercer Lady Piaomiao's gaze was, it could not see the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian. She could at most find out that there was special power within Chu Feng's blood, and that sort of specialness wouldn't make others feel that Chu Feng was strange. Instead, it would make them feel he was very strong.

The reason for this is because it was a power that ordinary people did not possess. Moreover, it was power that had absolutely no repercussions. It was something that truly belonged to Chu Feng, and moreover, it seemed like a type of power that could accompany Chu Feng's growth. It meant that Chu Feng's cultivation talent was extremely high!

As for Lady Piaomiao, although she could see that Chu Feng was different from the others, her face was still tranquil, lacking the slightest bit of change. She calmly asked, "You're Qiu Canfeng's disciple?"

"Senior, this junior is Chu Feng, and correct, Qiu Canfeng's disciple," Chu Feng replied truthfully with clasped hands.

"Why have you not shown your true countenance?" Lady Piaomiao saw through the mask Chu Feng wore to conceal his face, but it seemed like she hadn't seen Chu Feng's real appearance.

"Senior, this is my master's wish. However, I do not dare to hide anything from Senior." As Chu Feng spoke, he took the Transformational Mask off his face and revealed his actual appearance.

"Junior Wuqing, you..." After seeing Chu Feng's real appearance, Lady Piaomiao did not have much of a reaction; Jiang Wanshi, however, had a face full of amazement.

Although she already knew that Wuqing wasn't Chu Feng's real name and that he also concealed his actual appearance, it was still her first time seeing his real face.

Before, she assumed that Chu Feng's face wouldn't have too great of a

difference than the current him, but now, she discovered that it was completely different from her imagination.

Although the real Chu Feng, in terms of looks, couldn't be said to be too handsome, there was a hint of a unique courage in between his brows. Looking at him, it was a lot more pleasing and comfortable to the eyes in comparison to his guise. It also made people feel that he would have great achievements in the future with only a glance at his complexion.

But what made Jiang Wanshi shocked was Chu Feng's actual age. Judging by his complexion, he clearly wasn't even a young adult. It'd be more accurate to describe as a youth.

A youth stepping into the Martial Lord realm. That was simply unheard of, which made Jiang Wanshi involuntarily exclaim and wonder what realm Chu Feng's cultivation talent reached.

"Although in terms of cultivation, you aren't at the peak, your aptitude is still fairly good. Qiu Canfeng has a very good eye.

"In a few days, my Misty Peak's Martial Marking Immortal Realm will open. Are you willing to enter?" Lady Piaomiao asked.

"I am." It was a rare chance, so there was no reason to refuse.

"Put this in a safe spot. When the Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens, you will not need to pass through examinations and can directly enter. Also, in the future, you can come into my Misty Peak whenever you want to." As she spoke, Lady Piaomiao gave a badge to Chu Feng. It was the Misty Badge.

"Chu Feng thanks Senior." Although Chu Feng already had such a badge, to be able to obtain one personally granted by Lady Piaomiao was still a type of honour.

"Wanshi, how old are you this year?" Lady Piaomiao looked at Jiang Wanshi.

"Senior Piaomiao, Wanshi is exactly twenty-two years old this year," Jiang Wanshi replied respectfully.

"Mm. From your aptitude, six years later you should have no problem entering the Martial Marking Immoral Realm. However, to succeed you must continue working hard. Do not disgrace your master's name," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Wanshi will definitely work several times harder."

Although there was still a smile worn on Jiang Wanshi's face, Chu Feng could tell that she was feeling huge pressure.

Lady Piaomiao granted Chu Feng the Misty Badge when she met him the first time, but Jiang Wanshi, as Qiushui Fuyan's proudest disciple, had yet to obtain the Misty Badge even by coming there so often. It meant that Lady Piaomiao had yet to approve of her.

"Qiushui, I'll leave first. Talk to Chu Feng about that child's matter." After leaving those words behind, Lady Piaomiao disappeared. She didn't even pass through the door.

Afterwards, Qiushui Fuyan brought Jiang Wanshi into the palace Chu Feng was in, and only after closing the door did she say to the two of them, "Lady Piaomiao's character is like this, but she has a good nature. Don't mind her."

Chu Feng smiled lightly at her words. People were different from one another. Some seemed very kind on the surface, but in reality had venomous hearts. Virtuous and righteous on the surface, but committing all horrid things possible.

However, some people were not affable in their speech and gave others a feeling of coldness, yet had a heart that saves those in pain and trouble. He felt that Lady Piaomiao was such a person. So, he didn't mind and asked, "Senior Qiushui, was the child Senior Piaomiao referring to just now, Yan Ruyu?"

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan seemed a bit odd. Then she said with a smile, "You are very smart. Lady Piaomiao has already seen Yan Ruyu and not only is she in her hands, she even spent the entire night yesterday trying to exorcise the demon in her body. Regretfully, the demon in Yan Ruyu's body isn't that easy to exorcise.

“I heard her say that the demon in Yan Ruyu’s body likely came from the Ancient Era and was initially in a formless state; however, Yan Ruyu should have cultivated some sort of special technique so it caused the formless heart demon to be rebirthed in her body.”

“Yes. Yan Ruyu had cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique once. It is possible that the demon occupying her physical body revived through that?” Chu Feng asked with a bit of shock.

“It’s most likely that. Although it seems outrageous and unbelievable, from what Lady Piaomiao said, there was indeed a wicked demon like that in the Ancient Era who used that method to revive.

“However, that demon could only revive in the body of the person who first cultivated that technique. Thus, from the start when Yan Ruyu cultivated that technique, the demon had already entered her body.

“From what she said, this demon has likely always been like a parasite in Yan Ruyu’s body. It let her slowly grow as it gradually consumed the entirety of Yan Ruyu. Then, when the time is ripe, it takes over Yan Ruyu’s body with a quick swipe and completely revives then.

“However, the current situation is obviously a bit special. Most likely some incident happened causing the demon to be unable to continue its concealment and unavoidably, it had to appear. That’s why Yan Ruyu’s awareness still exists and the current situation—the demon struggling to usurp her body—is happening.

“And I’m thinking that the person who caused this incident to happen is you, right?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“It is likely me.” Chu Feng nodded his head embarrassedly.

“Ah you…” Seeing Chu Feng nod his head, admitting. Qiushui Fuyan’s eyes glittered as a hint of a faint smiling expression emerged. It was as though she knew what the reason that forced the demon to appear was.

However, Qiushui Fuyan did not blame him, nor reveal it. She said to Chu Feng, “Although you have wronged, you don’t need to blame yourself because if it weren’t for you, awaiting Yan Ruyu would only be a road of

death and the string of survival she has right now can be said to be fought for by you."

Chapter 652: Pleasing Palace

“Senior Qiushui, does that mean even Lady Piaomiao cannot save Yan Ruyu?” Chu Feng caught a few things from her words, causing worry to appear on his face.

“Would demons from the Ancient Era be weak? If its physical body had yet to disappear, or if it were to entirely revive, not to mention us, even Lady Piaomiao definitely wouldn’t be able to defeat it. The entire Eastern Sea Region would be in ruins as well,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Then what should we do? Are we going to let it consume Yan Ruyu’s awareness and take over her body?” Chu Feng became more and more worried, but then, he thought of something, and said even more worriedly, “Lady Piaomiao isn’t planning to kill Yan Ruyu, right?”

“She will not. Although that demon is very difficult to deal with, it’s not like it’s impossible. Right now, there is a method that can take care of it, but one object is required for assistance,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What object?” Chu Feng asked.

“Martial Marking Immortal Lotus,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Is the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, you are correct. The Martial Marking Immortal Lotus is an extremely rare object, and at present, it can only be found within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

“Moreover, this Martial Marking Immortal Lotus is very difficult to find. After entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, every single person will do their best to find Martial Markings, so if you want to find Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses, you can only rely on yourself. No one will help you,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“That means Senior Piaomiao granted this Misty Badge to me because you want me to search for Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses?” Chu Feng looked at the badge in his hand, his eyes unavoidably containing a few

more complex expressions.

“It’s not completely that. However, there is such a reason within. Anyway, the one who gave Yan Ruyu a chance at survival is you, and right now, the person who can thoroughly save her is also you.

“That’s right. There’s another thing I have to say to you,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s that after the demon in Yan Ruyu’s body is successfully exorcised, Lady Piaomiao will take her as her disciple.

“I am only notifying you about this, because since Lady Piaomiao wants to take her as a disciple, not to mention you, even Yan Ruyu herself has no choice,” Qiushui Fuyan said very gravely. Implicitly, she also told Chu Feng how domineering Lady Piaomiao was.

“To be able to have such an extraordinary master such as Lady Piaomiao is the dream of countless number of people. I’m sure Yan Ruyu will be honoured,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Then great. The people who will enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm still need to be filtered. In these days, rest well.” After leaving those words behind, Qiushui Fuyan brought Jiang Wanshi and left.

dong dong dong

However, just as Qiushui Fuyan and Jiang Wanshi left, Chu Feng’s door was knocked. After opening, he discovered that it was a young female. She had very plain clothings and had quite a refined and pure look. Although she wasn’t really some devastating beauty, she was very pleasing to the eyes. Most importantly, that female’s cultivation was actually in the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

“Miss, is there something?” Chu Feng asked politely.

“Sir Wuqing, right? I am a servant in the Misty Peak. By the Lady’s order, I bring you, Sir, to the Pleasing Palace to view the painting of a Martial Marking Immortal Lotus,” the woman said very respectfully.

"I see. Then I'll be troubling you to lead the way." Chu Feng lightly smiled after hearing those words, but in reality, he was quite shocked inside.

Even though he knew that experts were as common as the clouds in the Misty Peak, he didn't expect that even a servant had the cultivation of the seventh level of the Heaven realm. It couldn't be helped, then, that Lady Piaomiao didn't have good impressions of Jiang Wanshi.

Doing a comparison, Jiang Wanshi was truly not any genius. This was also the so-called "You only gloom yourself when you compare yourself to others." It couldn't be blamed that Jiang Wanshi had too weak of a talent. It could only be said that there were really too many experts on the Misty Peak.

"Miss, are you also a disciple of the Lady?" Chu Feng asked curiously on the way, because he was very confused.

In order to prolong their lives, those old people with powerful strengths pledged their loyalty to the Misty Peak. That, Chu Feng could understand.

However, this female had a young age. She should have a great future, and regardless of which sect she went, she should receive quite decent treatments. Why the pain? Why be a servant here and serve others?

"Sir, you think too highly of me. With my talent, how could I possibly be the Lady's disciple? I am truly only a servant. But, even though I'm a servant, the Lady does not treat us poorly.

"Not only do we get extraordinary cultivation resources, we can even get pointers from the Four Season Ladies, sometimes even from Lady Piaomiao herself. So, even though we are doing work of servants here, in reality, we can enjoy the treatment that others dream to have," the servant explained detailedly, as if she saw Chu Feng's confusion. Not only did she not feel shamed from being a servant, she felt proud.

"So it's like this. I understand." Chu Feng nodded his head. Her words had already resolved all doubts in his heart.

In the Misty Peak, there was only one true master, Lady Piaomiao

herself, and her only disciples, the Four Seasons. Their positions were the second-highest in the entire Misty Peak and even though everyone else was no more than guards and servants, those guards and servants could enjoy the Misty Peak's unique cultivation methods as well as its unique cultivation resources. That's also why so many experts were willing to put down their statuses and bear such a lowly position. Their goal was very simple: to walk better and farther on the road of cultivation.

On the surface, the positions they held were very low, but in reality, they received enviable treatment. It was likely that even the guards and servants of the Misty Peak were figures of admirations by those who knew of the situation.

Afterwards, being led by the servant, Chu Feng passed through layers of roads that were usually prohibited, and finally, arrived upon a peak. Mist and fog lingered around that peak and waterfalls surged greatly. The elegance of the environment was as though it were a realm of immortals.

Moreover, atop the peak there was a grandiose and gorgeous palace constructed by white bricks and tiles. On the board above the palace door, there were two big words: "Pleasing Palace".

"Sir, it is here. In this Pleasing Palace, there are many records related to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm as well as murals of Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses. However, this place is one that we servants are not permitted to enter, so I can only lead you up to here," the servant said.

"Thanks for your trouble." Chu Feng lightly smiled, then walked towards the Pleasing Palace.

However, before even entering, Chu Feng discovered at least twenty people already inside. They were all young, and were all Martial Lords. The ones with the weakest cultivation were rank two Martial Lords, while the ones with the strongest strength were rank five Martial Lords—as strong as Ya Fei.

However, Chu Feng's didn't mind that and walked straight towards the palace.

“Halt. Do you think this place is one that even you can enter?”

But before Chu Feng even entered, a fierce shout rang out from the entrance. Focusing his gaze over, it was two young males. They wore splendidly and had the cultivation of rank two Martial Lords. However, Chu Feng could determine they were definitely not people of the Misty Peak.

Chapter 653: Chun Wu

“Who are you? How are you qualified to stop me?” Chu Feng disdainfully swept his gaze over the two of them.

“Who are we? We are people who received the Misty Badge,” one of them said.

“That’s right. This is the Pleasing Palace! Those who hadn’t received the Misty Badge cannot enter,” said the other, in also an arrogant manner.

“What’s the matter here?” Seeing an anomaly at the palace entrance, another male with cultivation of a rank two Martial Lord came over.

“Oh, so it’s Sir Lin. I don’t know how this guy came over here, but he actually wants to slip into the Pleasing Palace. We are only giving him a warning,” the two men said simultaneously.

“Why the need to waste your breath with people like him? Just call the Misty Peak guard and drive him out.” However, the so-called Sir Lin didn’t even look straight at Chu Feng. He was even more arrogant than the two of them.

Chu Feng never feared people like him. Just as he prepared to take out the Misty Badge and fiercely embarrass themselves, his eyes lit up because he saw a person currently approaching.

“Junior Wuqing, you’ve come!” Coincident with the ringing of a mellifluous voice was a person, like a fluttering butterfly, passing the three people and arriving before Chu Feng.

It was a young and beautiful woman. Not only did she have pretty looks, she even wore a sunlike smile on her face. She was clad in a pink-coloured skirt, embellishing her sunlike smile to an even more dazzling degree. Moreover, that young woman was a rank four Martial Lord; her cultivation was far above the three men.

“Lady Chun Wu, you know him?!” Seeing her, the three were taken aback, and their faces surged with different degrees of shock.

And after hearing the men’s words, Chu Feng’s complexion, as well,

couldn't help changing slightly because from that, he knew who the woman was. She was one of Lady Piaomiao's four proud disciples, Chun Wu.

"This is Junior Wuqing. My master invited him here. What are you three doing?" Chun Wu smiled and scanned over the three people, but within her gaze there was a hint of fierceness. It was completely different from the one she looked at Chu Feng with.

"Eh, this..."

Hearing that, their expressions changed. They had no clue how to explain because never once did they imagine that the seemingly ordinary brat had some sort of unusual origin—he was personally invited here by Lady Piaomiao.

Moreover, looking at Chun Wu's cheerfulness, they could also tell that his identity was absolutely not simple because they had never seen her so enthusiastic about other people.

At that instant, all three of them curved subconsciously. They knew they offended someone that they shouldn't have.

"No matter, but it's just these three brothers assumed I didn't have a Misty Badge and entered by circumstance. They were even just preparing to drive me out." Chu Feng had a light smile on his face, as though he spoke of a minuscule matter. In reality, however, he already told Chun Wu about their nastiness.

"This, n-no, it's a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding!" The men's faces immediately paled upon hearing Chu Feng's words. They were so frightened their bodies trembled once, intensely. Streams of cold sweat slid down their faces, clueless on how to explain themselves.

"Hmph. Three arrogant people. You think Junior Wuqing is someone you can stop?" Chun Wu coldly glanced at the three, but didn't bother with them too much. She said to Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, pay them no mind. Quickly follow me, I'll bring you to see the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus." After speaking, she started to bring Chu Feng to the Pleasing Palace.

Looking at the departing backs of Chu Feng and Chun Wu, the expressions of the three standing at the entrance changed in bursts. In their hearts, there was unspeakable hatred. Although they did indeed receive the Misty Badge and the approval of the Misty Peak, they knew clearly in their hearts that they were no more than three existences at the very bottom. They initially planned to drive away an intruder to gain some good favours, but they didn't expect to clash with various chances, and as a result, disastrously offended a person.

So, in their hearts, they knew they were finished. They offended Lady Chun Wu, so their future days there would definitely bear zero good fruits.

Chu Feng didn't even bother paying attention to the changes in their hearts. At present, he was currently led by Chun Wu and walking towards the mural of a Martial Marking Immortal Lotus.

On the way, Chu Feng also discovered that the Pleasing Palace was very large, and there was not only one palace. Mainly, it recorded some situations within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm so people here could have a greater understanding of that place. However, only those who received the Misty Badge could enter.

In comparison to those things, however, Chu Feng was currently more intrigued by Chun Wu. He had clearly never seen her before, yet it seemed that she already knew who he was. She even treated him with great friendliness.

As for the people on the road who saw him and Chun Wu walking shoulder-to-shoulder, they couldn't help casting strange gazes. Especially so for the males—within their eyes there were hidden jealousy and anger.

"Here, this is the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus." After a short while of turning here and there, the two of them finally arrived in front of a huge mural.

A golden lotus flower was drawn on the mural. Not only was it beautiful, even more so it was domineering because above the golden petals, densely-packed runes and markings were carved. They were also

golden, but they were very distinct. With a glance, one could tell that it was not an ordinary object.

"It is truly pretty. Now I also want to personally see the true Martial Marking Immortal Lotus." When Chu Feng was engraving the specialness of the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus into his heart, Chun Wu too was gazing at the mural, but in comparison to Chu Feng, she was only admiring. In addition, there was a bit of yearning.

"Senior Chun Wu, have we met before?" Out of curiosity, Chu Feng finally asked that question because he clearly remembered that he hadn't see Chun Wu before, yet she obviously recognized him.

pu Chun Wu let out a faint chuckle with her hands over her mouth. It was quite moving, and afterwards, she spread open her fair, jade-like hand, put it in front of Chu Feng and said, "Since you've entered and also gained my master's blessing, return my Misty Badge back to me."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng's eyes lit up and he couldn't help re-examining the beautiful female in front of his eyes. Shortly after, he asked in amazement, "Senior Chun Wu, you wouldn't be that..."

"You truly don't recognize it? It seems like the Easy Transfiguring Pellet is truly impressive! Hehe.

"That's right. I was the dirty woman back then who was selling fake badges." Chun Wu sweetly smiled, her face still brimming with an expression full of complacency.

And after knowing the truth, Chu Feng couldn't help breathing a sigh of relief, saying hiddenly, "No wonder Chun Wu treated me so warmly. So she was the dirty woman then!"

"Wuqing has been foolish. Yesterday, I was unable to recognize Senior Chun Wu. I have offended greatly, so I ask Senior Chun Wu for forgiveness." Chu Feng bowed respectfully, and at the same time, he gave Chun Wu back the Misty Badge she gifted him yesterday.

Chapter 654: Map of Unpredictability

"Heh, it's nothing, it's nothing. I was intentionally dressing up so naturally none of you could recognize me. If you were able to, then how could I continue stirring up trouble?" Chun Wu naughtily smiled. After putting away the badge she asked Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, have you remembered what this Martial Marking Immortal Lotus looks like?"

"Mm. If I see it, I will definitely recognize it." Chu Feng nodded his head.

"Then let's not continue staying here. I'll bring you to see my three seniors. I heard my eldest senior brought something very fun from my master today!" As she spoke, Chun Wu extended her hand and grabbed Chu Feng's. She pulled Chu Feng along and started running towards another palace.

"Three seniors? Senior Chun Wu, didn't Lady Piaomiao only take in four disciples? Where did these three seniors come from?" Chu Feng asked in confusion on the way.

"Yes, it's four disciples!" Chun Wu first nodded, then came to a realization. So, she dazzling smiled and said, "Ah~ I know. You must think that the Four Seasons are Chun (Spring), Xia (Summer), Qiu (Autumn), and Dong (Winter), thus I'm the eldest, and as a result, I should have three juniors. I just said three seniors, so instead, you don't understand, right?"

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded.

"I'll tell you the truth. What you just said were from people who don't know the facts and are just randomly guessing. Of us four sisters, Xia Yu is the eldest. Dong Xue is the second eldest, Qiu Zhu is the third eldest, and in the eyes of outsiders, I, the so-called eldest senior, is in reality, the youngest junior.

"I'm only twenty-two years old. How do I even look like the eldest senior?" Speaking to that point, Chun Wu pouted, her face full of childishness and cuteness. She was very alluring and attractive.

The official disciple of Lady Piaomiao completely surpassed Chu Feng's imaginations. Originally, Chu Feng thought that as Lady Piaomiao's disciple, she would definitely be boundlessly arrogant, but he didn't expect Chun Wu to be such a naughty and cute woman. Actually, it'd be more accurate to call her a girl. Anyway, Chun Wu's attitude, Chu Feng liked.

With Chun Wu's lead, Chu Feng's arrived at a palace that wasn't very spacious, but was very straight. In the center of the palace there was a table made of jade, and surrounding the table were five men and three women.

The five men had very majestic appearances and extraordinary strength. Four of them were rank three Martial Lords, and one strapping man was even a rank four Martial Lord.

In comparison to those five men, the three women were even more outstanding. Two were rank four Martial Lords, and one was even a rank five Martial Lord. Obviously, she was the strongest existence Chu Feng felt before when he was outside the palace.

Putting aside strength, their outer appearances were even more angelic. They could all be called outstanding beauties, especially so for the woman with the cultivation of a rank five Martial Lord. Although in terms of her facial features, she was not necessarily much better than Chun Wu, her unique demeanor enhanced her appearance perfectly. But, it was also exactly her demeanor that gave others an untouchable distant feeling.

No matter if it was strength, or beauty, that woman was indeed superior to the other two, including Chun Wu. So, without even thinking, Chu Feng knew who she was. Without a doubt, the great beauty whose name spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, Qiu Zhu.

"Senior Xia Yu, Senior Dong Xue, Senior Qiu Zhu, look who I've brought!" Chun Wu yelled gigglingly after entering the palace.

After they cast their gazes over, varying degrees of surprise and shock emerged onto their faces. Especially that Senior Xia Yue. She put on a stern face and coldly shouted, "Little Wu, men and women do not touch

one another. You are pulling him and shouting here and there. Where have your manners gone?"

"Eiya, Senior Xia Yu, I've never pulled anyone..." Seeing that, Chun Wu hurriedly released the hand she was using to hold Chu Feng. Then, she cutely smiled, pointed at Chu Feng, and said, "This is Wuqing, he came along with Senior Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace. Master granted him a Misty Badge, so he can enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm with us."

"Oh?" Hearing those words, everyone's gazes changed again and they couldn't help reassessing Chu Feng. However, when they discovered Chu Feng's cultivation of a rank one Martial Lord, disappointment surged in all of their eyes.

What Chu Feng wore was the Transformational Mask. Even his eyes could be concealed, and since they couldn't see Chu Feng's actual eyes, naturally, they couldn't see the three lightnings condensed within them at present. Thus, they could also not see that Chu Feng's current cultivation of a rank one Martial Lord was because he used a special power. As a result, all of them felt that Chu Feng was extremely ordinary. At least, he could not even be compared to them, so they didn't put Chu Feng in their eyes.

Hence, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue didn't speak to Chu Feng and just turned around. As for the other five men, they greeted Chun Wu with faces full of fawning. However, none paid attention to Chu Feng.

He had already gotten used to a situation like that. In this world, the strongest were supreme. In the eyes of experts, weak ones were simply unworthy to be their friends. Especially for these geniuses. They were exactly that.

So, Chu Feng didn't blame them or anything. After all, that was a normal human reaction. If Chun Wu hadn't met him before, perhaps she would have had the same disdainful attitude when they met today.

"Senior Xia Yu, didn't you say you have some fun thing? Quickly take it out!" Chun Wu came over with skips and jumps, and very impatiently

pulled Xia Yu's sleeve.

"You girl, you only know how to play. Here, this is it." Xia Yu pointed at a white sheet on the table.

"What is this?" Chun Wu blinked and curiously looked at it.

"This is the Map of Unpredictability. It is our master's treasure, and it helps World Spiritists greatly.

"Today, she gave this map to me and had me bring it here for everyone to play," Xia Yu explained.

"Oh? What's special about this map?" Chun Wu continued asking.

"So special it surpasses your imagination." Xia Yu smugly smiled, then with a thought, a strand of Spirit power was imbued into that white paper.

hmm

When Spirit power entered, the white paper instantly changed. Lines of markings appeared, and very quickly, they formed a landscape painting. At the same time, there was even a row of words. It was: "How many waterfalls are in this painting?"

"How many waterfalls? What does this mean?" Chun Wu continued asking.

"There are waterfalls hidden in his painting, and each one is more difficult to find than the previous. Only powerful World Spiritists can see them.

"After seeing them, you can use your finger to write the answer on this painting. If the answer's correct, then you will get a special power that would strengthen your Spirit power. If the answer's wrong, you will also get a special power; however, not only will that special power not strengthen your Spirit power, it will diminish it," Xia Yu explained.

"It's that interesting?" After hearing Xia Yu's explanation, Chun Wu was so happy she could dance on the spot. With widened eyes, she started to carefully look at it.

At the same time, almost everyone there went up to the paining, detailedly examining the so-called Map of Unpredictability.

Chapter 655: Zhu Tianming

“This map is indeed quite mystical. Let me give it a try.” Just as everyone studied it seriously, a fair-faced rank three Martial Lord went up, and without even thinking, he wrote the character “one” above the waterfalls.

zzzzz

However, when he finished writing and just as he released his hand, the painting flashed with light, and a flash of lightning struck out of the painting, entering his body from his finger.

boom

A muffled sound rang out in the man’s brain, and simultaneously he was forced several steps back. His legs almost went limp, which would cause him to fall to the ground. Looking at his complexion, it was already pale white, akin to the colour of paper. Even his gaze became dulled. He was clearly greatly affected.

As she looked at the man’s circumstances, not only did Xia Yu not have a single trace of sympathy, she shook her head, seeming quite angry, and said, “Sir Li, did you do such a thing because you looked down on my master’s Map of Unpredictability?”

“I do not dare.” Seeing that Xia Yu was a bit anger, that Sir Li gradually came to his senses and apologized to her.

However, Xia Yu did not take that apology, and said in a chilly voice, “Just now, not to mention observing carefully, you didn’t even use Spirit power. Obviously, you randomly wrote a number, because you wanted to test if this map is mystical or not.

“However, no need to be complacent. The lightning just now has already eternally weakened your Spirit power. If you don’t consume precious supplemental medicines to recover, I’m afraid your attainments in Spirit Formation techniques will forever stop at this point. This is the price for doing such a sacrilegious action.”

“Lady Xia Yu, please have mercy. I really did not have the intention to commit such an offense! Lady Xia Yu, please give me another chance.” Hearing those words, Sir Li instantly panicked. He quickly bowed with clasped hands in front, and almost even kneeled for forgiveness.

After all, to a genius like him, being a World Spiritist was his pride. If, in the future, he could barely improve in terms of Spirit Formation techniques, it could really be said to be a fatal blow to him.

“This is your punishment from the Map of Unpredictability. Not to mention me, even my master cannot help you. Think of a way yourself to recover your Spirit power.” Xia Yu waved her hand.

“Brother Li, not that I want to criticize you, but you are in the wrong this time. Before, Lady Xia Yu already clearly stated the areas of mysticality in this Map of Unpredictability. But, you did not believe in such a thing, and now, you received the punishment. Who can this be blamed on?”

“Yeah! Regarding this matter, it’s best for you to return to your master and explain the situation. He will definitely help you, but do know that after your actions, I’m sure even your master will not easily forgive you, because in the entire Eastern Sea Region, there is none who dares to be disrespectful to Senior Piaomiao’s treasure,” said two men as they went up at the same time.

After hearing those words, that Sir Li’s face became ashen. He knew that this time, he really made a disastrous mistake, and was fated to have horrid luck.

“Hehe, it looks like Master’s Map of Unpredictability is truly quite mystical. Let me try and see how it goes.” Just at that moment, Chun Wu gigglingly jumped in front of the painting and with a hand extended, she was going to write a number on the painting.

“Chun Wu, stop.” However, before letting her do anything, Xia Yu who was on the side, quickly pulled her back. Her face was full of strictness as her lips moved a bit. It seemed like she was saying some warning words to Chun Wu, causing her to instantly look like a ball that lost all air and

backed away to the side, silent.

"Everyone, can you see how many waterfalls are in his painting?" After stopping Chun Wu, Xia Yu smiled and presented a question to the crowd.

"This..." After seeing how powerful the Map of Unpredictability was, who would even dare to go forward and try? They really feared landing in the same situation Sir Li did.

"Sir Gao Xiong, I've heard that your Spirit Formation techniques are very outstanding. You became a Purple-cloak World Spiritist at quite an early time, when you were in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. I wonder... can you see through the mysteriousness of this painting?" Seeing no one responding, Xia Yu cast her gaze towards the man who had the cultivation of a rank four Martial Lord.

In comparison to others, the one called Gao Xiong didn't have many changes on his face. He said, very calmly, "This Map of Unpredictability is truly extraordinary, as expected of Senior Piaomiao's treasure. Please forgive my lack of talent; I cannot see through this painting's obscurity.

"However, I do know of one person. He's Temple Head Wuya's proudest disciple, and Temple Head Wuya is also a rare and powerful World Spiritist in the Eastern Sea Region. I'm sure his disciple will be able to see through some of this profoundness," Gao Xiong said.

"Is the person you're talking about Zhu Tianming?" Dong Xue interrupted.

"Lady Dong Xue, it is indeed Zhu Tianming. Although Junior Zhu is exactly twenty-three years old, his Spirit Formation techniques are exceptional. I've heard that he became a Purple-cloak World Spiritist when he was in the seventh level of the Heaven realm, and at present, even though my cultivation is higher than his, my Spirit Formation techniques are inferior to his.

"Junior Zhu also received Senior Piaomiao's badge, and right now, he's in the Misty Peak. If you don't mind, why not invite him over? Perhaps he will be able to solve this Map of Unpredictability," Gao Xiong recommended.

“We have never seen Sir Zhu before, so inviting him so suddenly seems a bit inappropriate.” Dong Xue was a bit hesitant. Xia Yu and Qiu Zhu had the same expression.

“That’s fine. There’s a bit of a friendship between me and Junior Zhu. I can accompany Lady Dong Xue and invite Junior Zhu together,” Gao Xiong said.

“That would be the best.” Dong Xue was joyed, and as she spoke, she left along with Gao Xiong. Shortly after, the two of them returned, and a person also followed them.

That man had an ordinary appearance, superior to none currently in the palace. His cultivation was also inferior to Gao Xiong, being a rank three Martial Lord. However, his attitude was not the slightest bit worse than Gao Xiong—he was full of arrogance, and full of confidence. When he looked at Chu Feng and the others, his eyes more or less contained some disdain.

“Sir Zhu, do you see anything?” Xia Yu asked. It seemed like she hoped very much that someone could see through the Map of Unpredictability.

“To be honest, Lady Xia Yu, I have cultivated a special Spirit Formation technique since I was young, and I can concentrate my Spirit power into my eyes, allowing me to see things that ordinary people cannot see.

“Moreover, after many years of cultivation, I have some small achievements. This Map of Unpredictability shouldn’t be too difficult for me,” Zhu Tianming said, brimming with confidence.

“That’s great! May I ask Sir Zhu to show us your special Spirit Formation technique?” Xia Yu asked with a smile. Her attitude was very polite.

“Of course.” Zhu Tianming lightly smiled, then his gaze suddenly changed and actually shot out two barely perceivable light rays. After those light rays swept around in a circle over the Map of Unpredictability, his gaze changed again, returning to its former state.

However, the current him now knew what to do. Without wasting any

words, he extended his finger and waved it about on the Map of Unpredictability, ultimately writing the character “six”.

At that instant, other than Chu Feng, every single person on scene had their nerves tensed up. Without blinking, they stared at the Map of Unpredictability. The atmosphere was nervous, and one could even hear people’s heartbeats.

hmm Just at that moment, the Map of Unpredictability changed and six waterfalls appeared. Simultaneously, a strand of light explosively shot out, and while following the finger, entered Zhu Tianming’s body.

Chapter 656: Chu Feng Speaks

When the strand entered his body, Zhu Tianming's expression changed greatly. However, it was completely different than Sir Li from before.

Zhu Tianming had a face of pain, but he was also elated. Even his expression reddened quite nicely, saying shortly after, "It is indeed mystical. As expected of Senior Piaomiao's treasure."

whoosh When such changes were happening to Zhu Tianming, the Map of Unpredictability once again became a sheet of white paper.

When they saw such change, everyone knew the result. Zhu Tianming truly saw through the Map of Unpredictability and received unordinary benefits.

"Sir Zhu, you've succeeded? How's the feeling?!" Although they already clearly knew, Xia Yu still asked. At the same time, the others were staring at Zhu Tianming intently, awaiting his response.

"I feel very good, and my Spirit power has indeed been strengthened. However, this burst of power is really too strong. Obtaining it once will help greatly towards one's Spirit power, but if obtained again, I'm afraid the result will be the opposite."

"Sir Zhu's words are extremely correct. My master has also said that the benefits of this Map of Unpredictability can only be received once. Otherwise, if one exceeded the limit, there will be very serious consequences.

"And since Sir Zhu can see through this Map of Unpredictability, could you complete the wish of others and allow us to also enjoy the benefits of this Map of Unpredictability?" Xia Yu asked with a smile. Within her eyes, there was actually a bit of pleading.

"Since Lady Xia has spoken, of course I have no problem with it." Zhu Tianming agreed without any hesitation.

"Then sorry to trouble you, Sir Zhu." Hearing that, smiled bloomed on Xia Yu's face, and with a thought, she shot another strand of Spirit power

into the Map of Unpredictability. Instantly, a painting full of weapons appeared, and on the painting, there again appeared the words similar to the previous ones, something about “how many axes”.

hmm Zhu Tianming’s gaze let out light, and after scanning it, he said to Xia Yu, “Lady Xia, one axe.”

“Junior Wuqing, are you a World Spiritist?” After knowing the answer, Xia Yu did not immediately go up and solve the puzzle, but looked towards Chu Feng instead.

“Senior Xia Yu, Wuqing is indeed a World Spiritist,” Chu Feng replied with a smile. Not humble, nor arrogant.

“That’s great! There’s a saying that goes ‘those who hear can have a part’. Since Sir Zhu is so willing to help others, I feel that the people here today should enjoy this mystical power from the Map of Unpredictability.

“Junior Wuqing, in here, your cultivation is the weakest. I’ll give this chance to you first,” Xia Yu said to Chu Feng with a face full of smiles.

However, at that very instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help cursing in his heart: “Bastard.”

It was because Chu Feng did not feel that Xia Yu would be that kindhearted as to give that chance to him first randomly. Clearly, she didn’t completely trust in Zhu Tianming’s strength and feared walking on the same path as that Sir Li. So, she wanted Chu Feng to test the waters.

“Senior Xia Yu, I think you’re not correct about that. Since Junior Wuqing’s cultivation is the weakest, naturally, he cannot enjoy such a good thing first. From what I see, this chance should be given to Sir Gao Xiong.” But just at that moment, Chun Wu suddenly spoke up with giggles. Although that girl seemed a bit slow-witted, in reality, she was very smart. She too looked through Xia Yu’s scheme, so she helped Chu Feng break out of the difficult situation.

“This...” Hearing those words, Gao Xiong’s face instantly changed. Those who were there were all intelligent people, so of course they knew what dangers the so-called chance concealed.

“Brother Gao, go ahead. Do you still not believe my strength?” Zhu Tianming said very confidently.

“This... Then fine. Since it is like so, I, Gao Xiong, will take this opportunity.” In a situation like that, it wasn’t too great for Gao Xiong to say much. So, he could only write the character “one” on the Map of Unpredictability.

After writing, a strand of light instantly flew up and rushed into Gao Xiong’s body. As for his reaction, it was the exact same as Zhu Tianming before. His former nervousness disappeared like a whisper of smoke, and replacing it was unspeakable joy.

“Mystical! Truly mystical! This Map of Unpredictability is truly a divine object.

“Lady Xia Yu, Lady Chun Wu, Lady Dong Xue, Lady Qiu Zhu, Brother Zhu, many thanks.” Gao Xiong was endlessly excited when he obtained such a benefit, and he expressed his thanks to all of them.

“Sir Zhu’s special Spirit Formation technique is indeed outstanding, we sisters express admirations from the bottom of our hearts. However, we must trouble Sir Zhu for a bit longer.” Xia Yu had very deep thoughts and after a while of praising, without letting Zhu Tianming catch a breath, she got him to continue solving the Map of Unpredictability and continued using him.

However, Xia Yu hadn’t completely believed Zhu Tianming’s abilities. Afterwards, she had two more people try it out, and only after seeing the successes was she convinced and started to personally go up to the map. She followed Zhu Tianming’s instructions and solved the Map of Unpredictability.

But during that time, Chu Feng, who was always behind the crowd and not focused on, also secretly used his Heaven’s Eyes to observe the Map of Unpredictability. He even observed Zhu Tianming.

He discovered that the so-called special Spirit Formation technique, even though it was unique, seemed to be very draining.

Moreover, the painting shown on the Map of Unpredictability became more and more complex. It was much more harder than before, and in that situation, Zhu Tianming's power started to faintly jumble up. However, for the sake of face, he said nothing, and continued solving the paintings.

After Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others successively solved the Map of Unpredictability, the people there didn't doubt Zhu Tianming in the slightest.

Finally, Qiu Zhu, titled as one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, came forth. She stood before the painting, and while doing that she truly appeared beautiful, akin to a fairy walking in the legends. She was very attracting as well.

However, when she extended her hand, preparing to solve the puzzle by Zhu Tianming's instructions, Chu Feng suddenly said, "Stop!"

whoosh The sudden shout surprised everyone on scene. All of them cast their gazes towards Chu Feng.

"Wuqing, what are you doing?" Xia Yu asked with great displeasure. Her tone was full of fierceness.

"Senior Xia Yu, Senior Qiu Zhu, the number Sir Zhu said is incorrect. There are not four in this painting, but five. If Senior Qiu Zhu writes the number four, she will receive the backlash of the Map of Unpredictability," Chu Feng calmly said.

"Rubbish! What ability do you have to dare and say what I've seen is incorrect?" Hearing those words, Zhu Tianming was instantly enraged. He pointed at Chu Feng and started loudly cursing.

"This brother is called Wuqing, right? Not denouncing you or anything, but if you want to 'act the hero and save the beauty', you should switch the method up. You are not helping Lady Qiu Zhu now, you are harming her."

"That's right! Even if you want to set up a connection you can't do it like this. If Lady Qiu Zhu does as you say and writes the number 'five', then

receives the backlash of the map, can you bear that responsibility?" At the same time, Gao Xiong and the others also started to taunt Chu Feng. At the same time they taunted, there was even faint smiling expressions on their faces, as though they were looking at a joke.

"Junior Wuqing, since you were brought here by Senior Qiushui, I will not argue this, but Sir Zhu's special Spirit Formation technique is indeed very strong. We have already personally verified this.

"So, I ask you to not think that you are smart, or else don't blame me for not holding myself back," Xia Yu coldly shouted while pointing at Chu Feng.

Chapter 657: I Believe in Him

"Hoho." Chu Feng was not angry nor annoyed at the crowd's laughter and humiliation. He lightly smiled, and very casually said, "I've already said the things that I should have said. It's up to you whether you believe it or not.

"However, Senior Qiu Zhu, I'd advise you to think this over or else with your talent, if your Spirit power is damaged, that would truly be a shame."

"No need for you to worry, Junior Wuqing. I believe that Sir Zhu will not be wrong." However, Qiu Zhu did not accept Chu Feng's advice. Although she wore a faint smile on her face, it could be seen that in her heart, she too looked down on Chu Feng.

Afterwards, she waved her beautiful little hand that was as pretty as a jade, and wrote "four" on the painting.

zzzzz

But immediately after the number was written, the painting flashed with light, a strand of lightning then shot out and bore into Qiu Zhu's finger. Following a bang, a muffled explosion burst out in Qiu Zhu's head. The cold beauty then took several steps back, and at the same time, on her beautiful face, there lacked any trace of blood.

"Why is it like this?!" Seeing that, the faces of Zhu Tianming, Gao Xiong, and the others changed greatly. They did not expect Zhu Tianming to have seen the wrong answer.

"Qiu Zhu, are you okay?"

"Qiu Zhu, what's the matter?"

"Senior, are you injured?"

At the same time, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Chun Wu, the three beauties, panicked. They quickly went to Qiu Zhu's side and asked in concern.

"Senior Xia Yu, my Spirit power is damaged! I can feel it, my Spirit power is damaged!" At that very instant, Qiu Zhu's complexion was very

unsightly. But no matter how much more unsightly it became, her fearful expression overrode it. To a genius like her, Spirit power was something that could never, ever, be damaged.

"Zhu Tianming, what did you do? Were you intentionally harming her?!" At that instant, Dong Xue was instantly enraged. She pointed at Zhu Tianming and started loudly cursing.

"This, this, I..."

Zhu Tianming never expected he would miscalculate. So at present, even he himself knew not what to do about such an important matter such as Qiu Zhu's Spirit power being damaged. Even if Lady Piaomiao did not blame him and let him go, if news of this were to spread outside, only God would know how many people who admired Qiu Zhu would come and take care of him.

"Qiu Zhu, don't worry. Master once told me that the powers in this painting cancel each other out. If one is weakened by the painting, as long as they obtain another strengthening, they can nullify the harmful effect.

"Besides, there are countless treasures in the Misty Peak. Even if you cannot restore your power through the painting, Master can still use other precious objects to heal you. Don't be too worried," Xia Yu consoled.

"Senior, is what you said true?" After hearing Xia Yu's words, the fearful expression on Qiu Zhu's face couldn't help but diminish quite a bit.

"Of course it's true? When have I ever tricked you?" Although Xia Yu suspected outsiders greatly, it could be seen from her treatment of Qiu Zhu that she truly cared about her.

"Zhu Tianming, what are you staring at? Why aren't you looking carefully and seeing what the answer is?!" Dong Xue shouted while pointing at Zhu Tianming.

"Lady Dong Xue, don't worry. Let me examine it in detail." At that very instant, Zhu Tianming's face was drenched in cold sweat from fear. However, he dared not to dally, and after wiping away the sweat on his

face, he stared to observe the painting once again.

That time, Zhu Tianming did not dare to have a single trace of carelessness. He looked back and forth at every aspect over and over again. However, the more he looked, the more his heart panicked. Not only did the cold sweat on his face not diminish, there was even more. It simply poured down like the rain, and even his body began to tremble.

"You've looked for so long! Do you have a definite answer or not?!" Dong Xue shouted loudly again.

"Yes, yes, yes!" Zhu Tianming was truly afraid at that moment. Daring not to hesitate, he hurriedly nodded his head.

"What is it, speak!!" Dong Xue fiercely pressed forward.

However, Zhu Tianming's face was still full of anxiousness as his eyes glittered unstably. His expression was dreadful and full of horror. At the end, he spoke, stutteringly. "It's, it's, it's four!"

"What?! Are you trying to make a fool of me?!" When she heard those words, Dong Xue immediately became infuriated. Boundless blue-coloured gas swept out, causing the entire palace to be instantly covered by a thick layer of ice and snow. The coldness was oppressing and extremely terrifying. Dong Xue's ability in battle absolutely surpassed Zhu Tianming by a huge margin.

"Lady Dong Xue, please settle your anger!" Seeing this, Gao Xiong hurriedly stood before Zhu Tianming, and only with his aura of a rank four Martial Lord did he block Dong Xue's horrifying pressure. Afterwards, he gravely asked Zhu Tianming, "Brother Zhu, you cannot make more jokes about Lady Qiu Zhu's Spirit power. Exactly how many are there. Speak the truth."

"Brother Gao, with my special Spirit Formation technique, I've carefully observed and found that it truly is four! I don't feel that it's possible for my special Spirit Formation technique to fail, so possibly something's wrong with this Map of Unpredictability," Zhu Tianming said, quivering.

"Shut up! Not only have you harmed my senior, you even dare to insult

my master's treasure? I see that you tire of living." Dong Xue's eyes could spit fire while her words were ferocious. How did she even look like the civilized, polite, and elegant lady from before? It was as though she were an old woman who had a wild nature.

In that critical moment, Chun Wu suddenly stood up and asked Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, what was the number in the answer you spoke of just now?"

At present, Chu Feng had a relaxed appearance and a light smile on his face. He was focusing and watching the good show, and had initially planned to ignore that matter. However seeing as Chun Wu spoke, he had to nose into it. So, he said, still with a smile, "Senior Chun Wu, it is five!"

"Let me try." After confirming the answer, Chun Wu turned around, and beyond anyone's expectations, walked towards the Map of Unpredictability. She raised her hand, and prepared to write the answer.

"Little Wu, have you gone mad? You actually trust in his words?!" Seeing this, Dong Xue hurriedly went to stop her. Although currently, Zhu Tianming had determined the incorrect answer, she definitely did not believe that the answer Chu Feng gave was correct.

"Yeah! Lady Chun Wu, this is not a game, you must think this over!" Coincident with that, Gao Xiong and the others all spoke out and urged her otherwise. They all felt that Chun Wu was taking her own future as a joke.

"I believe in him." However, Chun Wu beautifully smiled. Then, while disregarding Dong Xue's obstruction, she forcefully pressed her finger down, writing "five" on the scroll of painting.

At that instant, almost everyone held their breath, preparing themselves for the punishment Chun Wu would receive. Even Dong Xue quickly let go of Chun Wu and took several steps back. She feared that she would be affected as well.

hmm However, just at that moment, light instantly flashed on the painting and a strand of light rushed into Chun Wu's body. At the same time, her complexion rosed quite a bit as well.

“Heavens? This isn’t real, is it?!” Seeing such a scene, almost everybody was stupefied. They were even more stunned than before when Qiu Zhu was struck by lightning, because no matter what, they didn’t expect that the answer spoken by Chu Feng, a rank one Martial Lord, would actually be correct.

“How is this possible, how is this possible? I’ve looked so many times, so carefully! It is clearly four. How can it be five?” As for Zhu Tianming, to a greater degree, his face was full of disbelief. He felt that it made absolutely no sense.

Chapter 658: Chu Feng's Courage

"Junior Wuqing, you really are the best!" At that instant, Chun Wu even danced in joy. As her skirt fluttered, she leapt and fell into Chu Feng's embrace. Under the eyes of the crowd, she fiercely kissed Chu Feng on the cheek.

And judging from her elated response, Chu Feng could tell that in reality, Chun Wu wasn't completely confident in her heart, and that exact result made even herself feel surprised. That was why she was so excited.

Although he knew that Chun Wu didn't trust him entirely at the start, it must be said when Chun Wu's soft red lips touched his face, undulations rippled out in his heart. He felt quite comfortable, and just because of that, Chu Feng decided to forgive her.

"Senior Qiu Zhu, quickly come over! Junior Wuqing can solve this Map of Unpredictability. He can help you recover your Spirit power." After giving Chu Feng a kiss, Chun Wu ignored the shocked gazes of others and hurriedly pulled Qiu Zhu to the front of the Map of Unpredictability.

Like Xia Yu before, after Chun Wu imbued Spirit power into the map, the paper-like painting instantly became a painting of a scenery. Moreover, the same words as before appeared.

"Junior Wuqing, sorry to trouble you," Chun Wu said gigglingly after the Map of Unpredictability changed. At that instant, she had no the single trace of doubt towards Chu Feng, trusting him completely.

Naturally, Chu Feng would not refuse Chun Wu's request. Using his Heaven's Eyes, his fierce gaze was instantly emitted. Only then did everyone notice that Chu Feng indeed grasped a special method as well. It was a different gaze compared to others.

Moreover, Chu Feng's current gaze was completely different from Zhu Tianming's special Spirit Formation technique. His technique was directly shooting two rays of light from his eyes, akin to the sharpness and fierceness of a martial skill. With a glimpse, one could tell it was not a simple technique.

However, Chu Feng only turned his gaze differently. If one didn't look carefully, they simply wouldn't see anything special. Yet, the gaze appeared to be nothing special. It could be called a type of deterrence, but to people who had cultivation above Chu Feng's, that deterrence wasn't useful in any way.

As World Spiritists, Chun Wu and the others, more or less, could feel that Chu Feng's current gaze was not simple. As for which part, they didn't know exactly either. However, it had to be said that Chu Feng's gaze made them look at him with new lens.

"Three." Chu Feng only swept his gaze over it once before putting away his Heaven's Eyes and giving the answer.

"Junior Wuqing, you've seen it clearly?" Chun Wu asked.

"I am absolutely sure," Chu Feng said confidently.

However, Qiu Zhu and the others seemed to not believe Chu Feng's answer, which also caused her to tightly frown. She was very hesitant and she didn't dare to easily write the answer. After all, if she got it wrong once again, to her, it was fatal.

hmm But just at that moment, Zhu Tianming used his special Spirit Formation technique again and carefully observed the painting. When he put away his special gaze, he said to Qiu Zhu, "Lady Qiu Zhu, do not believe him. The answer is two, not three."

"Shut up!" At that instant, Xia Yu who had stayed quiet for so long finally spoke. After yelling at Zhu Tianming to silence him, she said to Qiu Zhu, "Junior, Master will definitely restore your damaged Spirit power. There is no need to take a risk and try. Let's find Master instead."

After hearing Xia Yu's words, Qiu Zhu was, once again, hesitant. In reality, she really wanted to heal her Spirit power through the Map of Unpredictability. After all, if she was successful the first time, she could strengthen herself during the second time. She did not want to miss such a rare chance.

But on the other side, she didn't trust Chu Feng completely. So, at that

instant, she was endlessly struggling in her heart and entered an impasse.

"It doesn't matter if you don't believe me because your life and death has never been related to me. The actions that I, Wuqing, have done are all for Lady Chun Wu's sake.

"So, open your eyes widely and look carefully. See if my answer is correct or not."

Just at that moment, Chu Feng walked forward with a smile. He arrived by Qiu Zhu and Chun Wu's side, extended his finger, and put "three" on the painting.

hmm When that number appeared, instantly a strand of light shot into his body. Chu Feng's complexion also turned a bit brighter.

"It's actually right again?!" Seeing this scene, everyone on scene was tongue-tied and dumbfounded. They never expected Chu Feng to solve the Map of Unpredictability two times in a row. Moreover, he succeeded when Zhu Tianming thought oppositely.

"Haha, Junior Wuqing, you really are the best!" As for Chun Wu, she jumped about like a bird by Chu Feng's side, and cheered.

"Senior Qiu Zhu, Spirit power being damaged is no small matter. I'm sure you understand your current situation the best. Even if special medicines can heal you, it definitely won't succeed after one or two days.

"Yet right now, there is a chance. Not only can it heal your Spirit power, it can even raise it to another level. But you just aren't taking that chance and forcing yourself to exhaust large amounts of precious treasures. Do you think that this is an intelligent move?" Chu Feng smiled at Qiu Zhu.

"You're describing it quite easily, but even though you've successfully solved two of the paintings, who can guarantee you will succeed on your third, fourth time?

"Who can guarantee you won't make a blunder like Zhu Tianming after a few successes? At that time, if you harm my Junior Qiu Zhu and damage her Spirit power again, can you bear such a responsibility?" Dong Xue fiercely questioned.

“If I make a blunder, then I’ll cut off my own head. How about it?” Chu Feng lightly smiled. After he spoke, everyone’s hearts couldn’t help trembling, feeling the bone-chilling words.

Taking one’s own life to guarantee a matter. It meant that the person had great confidence in themself. It meant that such a person had an extremely insane nature. Though regardless of the reason, it was absolutely not an action that an ordinary person dared to do. At least, of the people there, not a single person had Chu Feng’s courage.

“Junior Chun Wu, it seems like your eyesight is quite good.” At that instant, Qiu Zhu first smiled at Chun Wu in an admirative manner, then looked at Chu Feng, saying with a slight apologetic tone, “Junior Wuqing, before, I was wrong. If there are any places I’ve offended you in, Junior Wuqing, I hope you can forgive me.”

Qiu Zhu’s attitude towards Chu Feng changed completely. It was not only because Chu Feng solved the Map of Unpredictability two times in a row, it was more because of Chu Feng’s fearless and confident attitude

Chu Feng’s character and bravery made her feel that despite having slightly weaker cultivation, he was definitely going to be exceptional in the future. The demeanor he had was something none of the males there had.

Chapter 659: Demon

Thus, Qiu Zhu didn't hesitate any longer. With a thought, she made the Map of Unpredictability change again. Afterwards, she said to Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, my fate is now in your hands."

As for Chu Feng, he confidently smiled, and after sweeping over it with his Heaven's Eyes, he said, "Senior Qiu Zhu, please write 'six'."

whoosh whoosh With not the slightest bit of pause after hearing those words, she waved her hand about and lightly wrote with her finger. In only a blink, an elegant but fierce character was written on the painting.

hmm When the number six appeared, light instantly shone everywhere and a strand entered Qiu Zhu's body. At that instant, when they looked at Qiu Zhu, her pale complexion immediately returned to normal. Moreover, her visage was extremely beautiful, and on her icy cold face, there appeared a hint of a rare bewitching smile.

"Qiu Zhu."

"Senior."

"Junior, it's a success?!" At the same time, Xia Yu, Chun Wu, and Dong Xue quickly came up to her asking with faces full of joy.

"Mm. My Spirit power has been repaired; it is the exact same as before. This Map of Unpredictability is truly too mystical." Qiu Zhu nodded her head in confirmation. Simultaneously, she still wore her captivating smile. It could be seen that she truly was happy. The joy came from her own heart.

"As expected of the person brought by Senior Qiushui. Junior Wuqing, you've truly concealed your ability deeply. I, Xia Yu, express my admiration." Seeing Chu Feng successfully help Qu Zhu, Xia Yu's attitude also did a complete turnaround. She actually bowed and thanked Chu Feng.

"Junior Wuqing, I was really too worried for Junior Qiu Zhu just now and have offended with my words. I hope that you don't think too much

of it." Dong Xue also solemnly thanked Chu Feng.

"Seniors, you are really too polite. To be able to help Senior Qiu Zhu is my honour." Even though Chu Feng did not like Xia Yu and Dong Xue, he was able to analyze the situation clearly. At present, they were in the Misty Peak. He had no need to pave a path of enmity.

Since they were able to put away their attitudes and admit their wrongs, no matter if they truly meant it or not, Chu Feng was always willing to be magnanimous and let bygones be bygones, and not make things difficult for them.

Afterwards, Chu Feng solved the Map of Unpredictability once again, and this time, it was still Qiu Zhu who reaped the reward. As for the result, not only was it successful, she even obtained the mystical power that could strengthen one's Spirit power from the Map of Unpredictability.

"Junior Wuqing, it's all thanks to you this time. I, Qiu Zhu, truly don't know how I can repay you." Currently, not only was her damaged Spirit power repaired, it even increased in strength. Qiu Zhu's mood was great, and she was more and more affable when facing Chu Feng.

"Senior Qiu Zhu, you are really too polite. Since this Map of Unpredictability is Senior Piaomiao's treasure, I'm sure she is able to solve it. Just now, I was only showing what little I can do. Even without me, I'm sure Senior Piaomiao would have used this Map of Unpredictability to allow Senior Qiu Zhu's Spirit power to strengthen," Chu Feng said very humbly.

"Junior Wuqing is truly modest. Indeed, Master can solve this Map of Unpredictability, but she has said she won't grant us the power in this Map of Unpredictability. If we want to obtain it, we can only rely on ourselves to think of ways.

"Right now, in the same generation, only you, Junior Wuqing, can solve it. On this point alone, you have surpassed all of us. I'm sure in the future, your attainments in Spirit Formation techniques will be superior to us all." Xia Yu had a light smile on her face, but finally, also spoke of

the truth.

Today, the only reason why she brought the Map of Unpredictability here, in addition to also inviting several people in the same generation who had high comprehension in Spirit Formation techniques, was because she wanted to rely on the power of others to solve the painting and reap the benefits obtained from within.

"Brother Wuqing, you've truly concealed your abilities quite deeply! I didn't expect your Spirit Formation techniques to have reached this stage at such a young age. Before, I, Gao Xiong, truly had eyes but could not recognize Mount Tai. I apologize to you here, Junior Wuqing." Just at that moment, the person called Gao Xiong also walked up and apologized to Chu Feng face-to-face.

Actually, not only Gao Xiong, even several others men started to think of ways to get themselves closer to Chu Feng because the Heaven's Eyes Chu Feng showed just now had already thoroughly convinced them. In their hearts, Chu Feng now had the qualifications to befriend them.

However, they didn't know that in Chu Feng's heart, for all of eternity, they were not qualified to be Chu Feng's friends, because what he hated the most were ingratiating people who made friends only for advantages.

As everyone was conversing with Chu Feng, in the corner of the palace, Zhu Tianming on the other hand clenched his fists tightly and gritted his teeth. With a very hateful and begrudging gaze, he glared at Chu Feng. Only after a good while did he coldly snort, turn around, and left.

After that, Xia Yu put away the Map of Unpredictability. After strengthening all four of their Spirit power, she did not give others a chance to obtain that benefit, nor did she allow Chu Feng to help the person who touched the Map of Unpredictability first, Sir Li, whose Spirit power was weakened.

From that, it could be seen that not only did Xia Yu have deep schemes, as a person, she was even crueler. Those who were there all saw her nature, and knew that she was not a good person to anger. So, when she put away the Map of Unpredictability, there was no one who dared to say

anything. As for that Sir Li, he could only curse his own luck.

After those things, Chu Feng had planned to leave and return to his place for resting, but he could do nothing, as Chun Wu stuck onto him and was unwilling to let him go. No matter what he said, she dragged Chu Feng to gaze at the beautiful sceneries of the Misty Peak with her.

It was difficult to refuse such kindness, in addition, Chu Feng wanted to walk around in the Misty Peak as well. So, with the company of a beauty like Chun Wu, they began to stroll around banned areas that prohibited outsiders.

Though the stroll didn't seem like much, Chu Feng exclaimed more and more on how complex the Misty Peak was. Putting aside that the plants there were very special—outsiders had never seen them before—complicated symbols and marks were engraved on many large rocks.

They were all symbols and markings for formations. Moreover, they were extremely powerful ones. The more he observed in detail and used his heart to study, the more Chu Feng felt his soul shake because they were really too powerful. He could not even imagine what kind of formation it would be if he were to write the symbols down himself.

"Eggy, you see it right? Do you recognize the thing on top of the Misty Peak?" Chu Feng couldn't help asking Eggy after exclaiming.

"I see it. It does indeed come from the Ancient Era, and they were indeed markings for a sealing formation. It seems like this Misty Peak is truly a remnant of the Ancient Era, and a very terrifying demon is suppressed within," said Eggy with a very lazy tone, as though she had just awoke.

"It is truly a demon?"

"Of course it's a demon. Furthermore, it should also be a very ferocious demon. Although I don't really understand the symbols and markings here mean, I can roughly determine that one type of formation it produces is one that has extremely powerful killing strength. Yet the formation that these markings create can only seal it. You say, do you really think it would be something simple?" Eggy answered with a question.

“Then, how powerful do you think the demon’s power would be if it were released?” Chu Feng asked.

“Heh, destroying this Eastern Sea Region should be a very simple action for it,” Eggy said with a smile.

Chapter 660: Temple Head Wuya

"Junior Wuqing, Junior Chun Wu." After the sun set in the west, Dong Xue came over from afar. After nearing, she first took a long relaxing breath, and then said, "I've finally found you two."

"Senior Dong Xue, what's the matter? Looking at your worried face, have you been thinking of me?" Chun Wu asked while giggling. Her naughtiness was akin to a child's.

"You girl, you're bringing Junior Wuqing everywhere! I had quite some trouble trying to find you." Dong Xue smiled while casting Chun Wu a glance, as if she was already used to her little junior acting so improper.

"Oh? So Senior Dong Xue wants to take away my Junior Wuqing! That won't do. I won't give Junior Wuqing to you..." Chun Wu pouted and actually placed her hands around one of Chu Feng's arm. She had an extremely intimate appearance.

Of course, Chu Feng didn't refuse Chun Wu's action. First of all, not only did he have a very good impression regarding Chun Wu, just her beautiful appearance alone gave Chu Feng no reason to refuse.

"Oh you, stop disturbing me. I have something serious I need to tell Junior Wuqing." Dong Xue helplessly sighed, then said to Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, tonight, my master is setting up a banquet to treat some old friends. Senior Qiushui will also come, and you can come too!"

"Really? That's great! When does it start?" Hearing that there was a banquet, Chun Wu immediately jumped up and down, clapping and cheering. It was as though she had never had a banquet before.

"It will be starting soon, so both of you, follow me." Dong Xue sweetly smiled. It was a very moving smile, as if it were the hint of sunlight during wintertime. When gazed upon, it made one's heart warm.

From such, it could be seen that the beauty of the Four Seasons was truly not exaggerated. However, Chu Feng had already seen Dong Xue's true face. Thus, he knew clearly that Dong Xue was absolutely not as

benignant as she appeared on the surface.

Being led by Dong Xue, Chu Feng arrived atop a peak. At that instant, the banquet was already laid out on the peak. Moreover, several people had already arrived.

However, the guests who arrived weren't all young geniuses. The banquet was to welcome some old friends of Lady Piaomiao's. Hence, the main guests were some experts in the older generation. As for the ones who could attend the banquet along with them, they were naturally people who were related to said experts; most of whom were disciples.

Chu Feng roughly examined and discovered that even though the ones who arrived were experts of the older generation, grand characters that had made a name for themselves in the Eastern Sea Region, they were only Martial Lords. Ones with slightly better cultivation were at the peak of the Martial Lord realm; however, none of them were Martial Kings.

From that, one could see that even in the Eastern Sea Region, the realm of Martial Kings was still a very powerful realm. One could say that only those who could enter that realm were counted as true experts.

And just then, Chu Feng spotted two familiar people. It was Gao Xiong and Zhu Tianming.

Gao Xiong's master surpassed Chu Feng's imagination. It was actually an old woman with white hair. Who knew how many months and years that old woman had lived for. Her face was full of wrinkles and full of spots. Although her hair was snow-white, since she had lost her hair like the sprinkling of rain, barely any strands remained. She looked akin to a living corpse; it was quite frightening.

Possibly because Gao Xiong told her some things about Chu Feng, the old woman actually bent her waist, leaned on her cane, and brought Gao Xiong over on her own accord and greeted Chu Feng.

"This is the hidden expert of Centipede Hill. People call her Old Lady Wugong (centipede). She only took in one disciple: Gao Xiong. She loves him as if he were her own grandson. She gives all her resources to Gao Xiong, so that's why he has his current cultivation. It can be said that his

cultivation is entirely raised by cultivation resources.

"Even though Old Lady Wugong has a scary appearance, I heard my master say that as a person, she's actually not bad. She often travels the Eastern Sea to save others." From start to finish, Chun Wu stayed by Chu Feng's side, and every time Chu Feng cast his gaze towards a person, she explained that person's origin for Chu Feng.

Of course, having the special treatment of a beauty accompanying him attracted quite a few people's envy, especially men of the same generation. When they saw a great beauty like Chun Wu together so closely with a rank one Martial Lord, they, who saw themselves as exceptional, felt hugely displeased at Chu Feng. They all thought, Even I can't enjoy such a treatment. Why can he, with his cultivation?

Particularly so for Zhu Tianming. At that instant, as he looked at Chu Feng, his gaze was like a blade. He wished he could kill Chu Feng with only his gaze, and the reason he had such thoughts was naturally not due to envy alone. The greater reason was the humiliation Chu Feng made him feel in the Pleasing Palace, giving rise to his hatred.

"What are you looking at?! Have you never looked with your eyes before?" Chun Wu also noticed Zhu Tianming's unkind gaze. She put her hands on her waist and howled at him.

When such a sound emerged, it instantly attracted the attention of everyone there. All of them cast their gazes towards Zhu Tianming, and even though Zhu Tianming's face was unsightly, he dared not to do anything to Chun Wu. He could only shift his gaze and walk onto the road towards the mountain peak.

"Junior Wuqing, with one glance this Zhu Tianming is not any good person. He seems a lot like his master, Temple Head Wuya: a despicable person with a narrow mind. In the future, if you meet him alone, you must be careful," said Chun Wu with a secret mental message to Chu Feng.

"Huh, he's come just as he was mentioned. Look, that's Zhu Tianming's master, the head of the Limitless (Wuya) Temple. He's an animal with a

venomous inner heart and feigns benevolence and righteousness. If he hadn't helped my master with a tiny matter before, she would never have invited him.

"That's right! The brat behind Temple Head Wuya is Zhu Tianming's brother Zhu Diguang. Those two brothers are Temple Head Wuya's proudest disciples.

"However, Zhu Diguang's cultivation is a bit inferior, and since there's a limited number of spots for giving out the Misty Badges, only Zhu Tianming received one. Zhu Diguang, on the other hand, must pass the screening before he can enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm." Chun Wu suddenly cast her gaze towards the two people walking over from the bottom of the peak.

Chu Feng focused his gaze over, and discovered that Temple Head Wuya wasn't too old. He only seemed to be roughly fifty or sixty; however, his cultivation was not weak. It was likely at the peak of the Martial Lord realm, and judging by his age, perhaps he could become a Martial King some time in his life.

As for Zhu Diguang, he truly looked similar to Zhu Tianming, but was just a bit uglier than him. If one said Zhu Tianming's appearance was acceptable, then Zhu Diguang's appearance could only be counted as very ordinary.

Regarding his cultivation, it was indeed a bit weaker than Zhu Tianming's: he was a rank two Martial Lord.

However, at present, no matter if it was Temple Head Wuya or Zhu Diguang, their gazes when looking at Chu Feng more or less contained ill-intents. Although Temple Head Wuya concealed his quite deeply, Chu Feng still caught it.

From that, it could be seen that the two of them likely also knew what happened to Zhu Tianming in the Pleasing Palace.

"Senior Chun Wu, just now, you said there's a limited number of Misty Badges that get sent out. Then, how many in total have been dispatched?" Chu Feng asked curiously. In reality, on the side, he wanted to know if the

people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had received the Misty Badge or not.

After all, he was fated to have a great war against that enormous power. So, he was very concerned about the situations regarding the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chapter 661: Using a Topic to Stir up Trouble

“There are sixty badges in total. Pretty much most peak geniuses who haven’t reached the age of thirty received the invitation.

“However, nearly half of the Misty Badges were sent to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It can’t be helped because there are indeed many geniuses at that place. After all, they’re the current ruler of the Eastern Sea Region,” Chun Wu explained with a smile.

After hearing that answer, Chu Feng couldn’t help furrow his brows tightly. The number of geniuses in the Immortal Execution Archipelago were half of the entire Eastern Sea Region’s. That implicitly stated how powerful they were.

He didn’t dare to say anything now, but when their generation grew up, the Immortal Execution Archipelago at that time would be undefeatable by any force, unless all of the powers in the Eastern Sea Region joined hands.

“However, those guys from the Immortal Execution Archipelago are too arrogant. Up until now, not a single one has come to the Misty Peak. I’m sure they’ll only come when the screening finishes and when the Martial Marking Immortal Realm officially starts,” Chun Wu added with a bit of disgust. It could be seen that she too disliked the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“When will the screening start, and how many spots are there?” Chu Feng asked.

“Then screening starts tomorrow, and in two days of time, forty people must be chosen since only a hundred people can enter every time the Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens. Looking at former calculations, in the day after the conclusion of the screening, the Martial Marking Immortal Realm will automatically open.

“However, there are over a thousand people who haven’t received a

Misty Badge, yet have come to the Misty Peak. But at the end, those who can stay behind must at least be a Martial Lord. So, I feel that this time, the minimum to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm requires one to be at least a rank two Martial Lord," Chun Wu explained in detail; however, she quickly added, "But Junior Wuqing, you're an exception. I have personally seen how you defeated that rank two Martial Lord! Hehe."

Looking at Chun Wu's smirk, Chu Feng couldn't help asking, "What happened to the several people who made a move on you back then?"

"Heh, a secret." Chun Wu rubbed her nose, then smiled smugly.

Although she said nothing, Chu Feng roughly knew the answer already. Judging by Chun Wu's character, those who attacked Chun Wu must have gotten some sort of revenge, yet they had absolutely no clue of the reason.

"Junior Wuqing." Just at that moment, a familiar voice rang out. It was Jiang Wanshi who arrived there.

"Oh? It's Junior Jiang. Truly, long time no see. I've missed you! That's right, why isn't Senior Qiushui here with you? I also miss her~" Seeing Jiang Wanshi, Chun Wu actually went ahead before Chu Feng and greeted her.

Such affable enthusiasm caused Chu Feng to involuntarily think of the scene when Chun Wu and Jiang Wanshi argued against one another outside the Misty Peak. So, Chu Feng knew that Chun Wu didn't truly like Jiang Wanshi. It was entirely for show.

"Senior Chun Wu, Senior Piaomiao called my master over, so she possibly won't come today. Even if she will, it will be at a later time.

"Also, Senior Piaomiao also told me to inform the other seniors that she has a sudden matter to attend to and will not participate in today's banquet. She wants the seniors to help her welcome the others."

Jiang Wanshi instantly recognized Chun Wu when she saw her. In terms of age, perhaps Chun Wu wasn't older than Jiang Wanshi, but she still treated Chun Wu very respectfully. One could even say fearfully.

And when she saw Jiang Wanshi who acted like that, Chu Feng couldn't help but smile lightly. He thought to himself, If Jiang Wanshi knows that the dirty woman she cursed back then was actually Chun Wu, I wonder how she would feel right now.

"Ahh, Master is really not too reliable, but this does match her style of doing things. However, this does a bit of injustice to the people who waited here and hoped to see her to reminisce a bit of the old times." Chun Wu smiled, and with a very sympathetic gaze, she looked at the senior experts who were greeting one another.

Afterwards, Chun Wu told Xia Yu about Lady Piaomiao not coming, and clearly, Xia Yu was used to things like this, and moreover, had the ability to solve that issue.

With her soft and mellifluous tone, as well as a mysterious reason, she told the crowd about Lady Piaomiao's inability to appear at the banquet. It did indeed gain the forgiveness of the crowd, and thus, the banquet officially started.

"Lady Xia Yu, as the guardian of the Misty Peak, does Lady Piaomiao have a certain requirement for releasing Misty Badges, or does she just release them on her own whim?" asked Zhu Tianming's master, Temple Head Wuya, with a smile while they were in the banquet.

"Senior Wuya, there are certain requirements for my master to release Misty Badges. Those who receive them are all people who satisfy them," Xia Yu replied with a faint smile.

"Oh? Then that's strange. My disciple, Zhu Diguang, is a rank two Martial Lord. He did not receive a Misty Badge, so therefore, I assumed only young rank three Martial Lords had such a qualification.

"However, I've heard that of the people who are entering the Martial Marking Immoral Realm this year, there seems to be a young rank one Martial Lord who received the Misty Badge. So, that's why I thought the release of Misty Badges was according to Lady Piaomiao's personal interest without any other requirements nor restrictions," said Temple Head Wuya smilingly.

“Oh? There’s actually something like this? Temple Head Wuya, do not speak arbitrarily! Lady Piaomiao has always handled matters upright and fair. How could she do such a thing?”

“Yeah! Although my disciple isn’t any genius, he still has the cultivation of a rank two Martial Lord! If we talk of relations, Lady Piaomiao should give my disciple a Misty Badge, yet she didn’t. Doesn’t that mean she does things fairly? Everyone, what do you think?”

“Yeah yeah yeah! If we talk in terms of closeness, then all of the disciples here should receive a Misty Badge.”

“Temple Head Wuya, your words are akin to insulting Lady Piaomiao! Although there are quite good relationships between us, if you continue to talk about Lady Piaomiao like this, don’t blame us for not holding ourselves back.”

After Temple Head Wuya spoke, it was instantly like a “small lobbed rock giving rise to an enormous wave”—a small event instigating a huge one. Many people who were uninitiated started to speak and refute Temple Head Wuya’s words. Some were even infuriated. From that, it could be seen that Lady Piaomiao had a very high position in their hearts.

But those who knew the truth—Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and the others—couldn’t help knitting their brows lightly. It was because they all knew that he was intentionally trying to stir up trouble from that topic. Not only did he want to put Chu Feng in a difficult spot, he also wanted the people there to grow doubt in their hearts towards Lady Piaomiao.

“Hoho, everyone, please calm down. How could I dare to insult Lady Piaomiao? But, I’ve truly heard that there is a young rank one Martial Lord in this year’s Martial Marking Immortal Realm who received a Misty Badge. Breaking precedents, he doesn’t need to pass any screenings and can directly enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

“Logically speaking, as the guardian of the Misty Peak, naturally, what Lady Piaomiao says goes for the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. No matter what she does, it is never our turn to doubt her.

“So, for the release of this Misty Badge, I am only asking whether it is

because of some special request, or a whim of the lady. I mean no harm." Temple Head Wuya lightly smiled, and as he spoke, he cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

Chapter 662: Taunting Back

bang Just at that moment, an explosion rang out. There was a person who suddenly stood up with a powerful might, and pointed at Temple Head Wuya.

“Wuya, I don’t care about rumours, but if you dare to suspect Lady Piaomiao again, do not blame me for not holding myself back!” It was an old man with a large and tall body. His face was full of righteousness. After hearing Temple Head Wuya’s words, he was so infuriated even his body was trembling. Looking at him, he looked a lot like he was going to attack Temple Head Wuya.

“Mr. Zhao, I know you feel great respect towards Lady Piaomiao, but do I not too?

“It’s just that it wasn’t a rumour, nor was it a lie. Everything I’ve said is the truth. Everyone, if you don’t believe me, you can ask Lady Piaomiao’s four disciples. Lady Xia Yu, what say you?” Temple Head Wuya said with a smile.

Everyone uniformly cast their gazes towards Xia Yu when they heard those words.

And when she faced such a situation, her complexion was not great either. She was really endlessly angry at Temple Head Wuya’s action, but she could do nothing as he was a senior. She didn’t know what to do about it, since she could not lash out in front of so many other seniors.

“That’s right. Master has indeed given Junior Wuqing a Misty Badge, but don’t be mistaken. Even though he is a rank one Martial Lord, he absolutely has the qualifications to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.” Just at that moment, Chun Wu suddenly stood out and while she spoke, she even pointed towards Wuqing who was by her side.

“There’s actually something like this? How can this be?”

“Yeah! Even rank two Martial Lords have to be in the screening. How can a rank one Martial Lord obtain a Misty Badge?”

When those words were spoken, the banquet immediately went into an uproar. Many expressed surprise regarding that matter, but that was that. There was no one who dared to express displeasure towards Lady Piaomiao. So, they involuntarily redirected all of it to Wuqing.

"Lady Chun Wu, you said he has the qualifications of entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. However, how can it be proven?" Indeed, some people who were unwilling to accept that started to question her.

After all, in terms of relation, they were indeed a bit related to Lady Piaomiao, and in terms of cultivation, their disciples' cultivation was stronger than Chu Feng's. So, they were very bitter. Bitter that Chu Feng received a Misty Badge, yet none of their disciples did.

"Proof? My master's invitation has proven everything. With your attitude, are you suspecting my master's decision?" Chun Wu said fiercely, her tone full of domineeringness.

Perhaps if she were facing those of the same generation, her attitude would be useful, at present, however, those she was facing were all her seniors. Naturally, those who had some sort of relationship with her master would not fear Chun Wu.

"Lady Chun Wu really does make sense. The so-called 'famous masters produces great disciples', huh? Perhaps it may be because of his master of exceptional status, that he receives such special treatment?" someone mocked.

"Hmph. Exceptional status? Which one of us doesn't have status? On what basis can he have such a different treatment?" Indeed, someone was made displeased.

"That's right. You said his master's powerful, so let me ask Lady Chun Wu this: what sort of divine figure is this master such that it can make Lady Piaomiao make an exception like this, and give him such a special treatment?" asked Temple Head Wuya with a smile.

"This..." At that instant, even Chun Wu didn't know how to speak out for Chu Feng. She could only cast her gaze at him, and immediately, he

became the focus of the entire banquet.

But while he faced such a situation, Chu Feng was calm and composed. He stood up, looked around at the crowd, and said with a light smile, “It is not convenient to reveal my master’s name, and to be honest, certain people here are not worthy of my master’s grand name. Because they simply cannot be compared to my master.

“However, I, Wuqing, can give you an answer regarding your suspicions.”

“Answer? How would you give that?” Temple Head Wuya asked with a sneer.

“You’ve said so much useless words, asked so many questions, isn’t it only because you want to tell everyone that I’m not worthy to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm? But I want to ask something too. Do you feel that the two disciples currently by your side are worthy to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?” Chu Feng asked with a smile, and replied with a question.

“Hmph. Tianming is a rank three Martial Lord and he has already received a Misty Badge. You say it yourself: is he worthy or not?

“As for Diguang, he is a rank two Martial Lord. Judging by his cultivation, even though he hasn’t received a Misty Badge, he can easily advance from the screening.” Temple Head Wuya said very confidently.

“Mm. Senior Zhu Tianming is indeed strong, especially so regarding his attainment in Spirit Formation techniques. It really does make others look at him in a different light.

“Before, we were in the Pleasing Palace with the four seniors, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu, trying to solve one of Senior Piaomiao’s invaluable treasure.

“Not only did Senior Zhu Tianming help the other seniors obtain benefits from it, he even caused Senior Qiu Zhu’s Spirit power to be damaged, and it was nearly a permanent impairment. I, Wuqing, express admiration towards such abilities, and feel myself to be inferior.” Chu

Feng coldly grinned at Zhu Tianming. On the surface, he seemed to be praising, but in reality, he was ridiculing him.

"Yeah! Sir Zhu is truly impressive, as expected of Senior Wuya's proudest disciple. In terms of Spirit Formation techniques, he has received Senior Wuya's...sensational legacy.

"If it weren't for Junior Wuqing, who, by using a powerful Spirit Formation technique to solve my master's treasure again, helped my Senior Qiu Zhu recover her Spirit power, then thanks to Sir Zhu, I'm afraid her Spirit power would have been eternally damaged, causing her advancements in Spirit Formation techniques to halt in the future." Hearing his words, Chun Wu hurriedly flashed an insincere smile and "added oil and vinegar", spicing up the story, and at the same time humiliated the very actions Zhu Tianming did in the Pleasing Palace.

"You..." Hearing those words, Temple Head Wuya's complexion immediately greened. He never expected that Chu Feng would talk about that matter. After all, his Spirit Formation techniques were famous in the Eastern Sea Region. He became a Gold-cloak World Spiritist at the peak of the Martial Lord realm; that itself spoke of how powerful his Spirit Formation techniques were.

Yet, today, the things Zhu Tianming did in the Pleasing Palace clearly embarrassed his master and himself.

"What? There's actually something like this? Doesn't Temple Head Wuya's disciple have extremely powerful Spirit Formation techniques, and is titled as the genius in Spirit Formations? How did he make such a huge mistake, and almost destroyed Lady Qiu Zhu's future?"

"Yeah! That's unbelievable! I wonder if it's true or false... If it's true, then doesn't it mean this boy called Wuqing is very powerful? That at least, in terms of Spirit Formation techniques, he's already surpassed Temple Head Wuya's disciple?" Indeed, Chu Feng's and Chun Wu's words made the crowd greatly shocked. All of them looked at one another. They never would have thought Chu Feng's attainments in Spirit Formation techniques would be that high-leveled.

“This is true. My disciple, Gao Xiong, was there to see today’s matter. He can verify.

“Indeed, because of a miscalculation, Zhu Tianming caused Lady Qiu Zhu’s Spirit power to be damaged. If Wuqing hadn’t used his special Spirit Formation technique to save her, it is truly unimaginable what would have happened instead.

“After all, Lady Qiu Zhu is a first-rate genius in the Eastern Sea Region. If anything happens to her, it is a loss for the entire Eastern Sea Region.” Just at that moment, Gao Xiong’s master, Old Lady Wugong, surprisingly stood out and spoke out for Chu Feng.

Chapter 663: Price

"Doesn't that mean it's true?"

"Heavens! That's so dangerous! If something bad had truly happened to Lady Qiu Zhu, Lady Piaomiao would have definitely been infuriated."

"Yeah! Temple Head Wuya, you should truly thank this Wuqing. If he didn't nullify today's danger, I'm afraid your proud disciple would have had a disaster coming his way." After hearing Old Lady Wugong's words, everyone looked at Chu Feng differently. Some even urged Temple Head Wuya to instead express gratitude towards Chu Feng.

"I thought that Temple Head Wuya's Spirit Formation technique was already very outstanding, but looking at it now, it seems that Wuqing's master is definitely even stronger. Otherwise, he wouldn't be so familiar to such an extraordinary Spirit Formation technique." There were even some people who started to praise Chu Feng and lower Temple Head Wuya's status.

Such a dramatic change made his expression even more unsightly. He never would have thought that he, who initially wanted to make things difficult for Chu Feng and vent anger for his disciple, would actually be put in such an embarrassing situation along with his disciples because of Chu Feng's words.

Thus, at that very instant, he truly gnashed his teeth in anger while fury took over his mind. Ignoring the crowd's reactions, he pointed at Chu Feng, coldly snorted, and said, "So what if you have strong Spirit Formation techniques? The screening is about strength in cultivation, not Spirit Formation techniques. You think you can pass the screening because your Spirit Formation techniques are superior to other cultivators?"

"Hoh. Temple Head Wuya, your words are quite strange. I didn't think that you, as a World Spiritist, would look down on World Spiritists so much!" Chu Feng wore a light smile on his face as he shook his head. However, the mocking in his words was evident without explicit

expression.

"Yeah! What about World Spiritists? World Spiritists are the dragon within men, and their Spirit power is bestowed by the Heavens. Those who are both cultivators and possess Spirit power will, without a doubt, be superior to those without Spirit power."

"That's right. Powerful World Spiritists have no problem summoning strong World Spirits, and some World Spiritist's World Spirits are even stronger than themselves. In the legends, mighty World Spiritists are able to summon an army of World Spirits, and alone, fight against a grand army of several tens of thousands. How can such battle strength even be compared to ordinary cultivators?"

There were many World Spiritists there, so Chu Feng's words echoed throughout many people. Once again, they pushed Temple Head Wuya towards an unrecoverable situation.

"Everyone, don't misunderstand. It's not that I look down on World Spiritists. How could I, as a World Spiritist, not know how powerful World Spiritists are?

"However, the strength of a World Spiritist is closely related to their own cultivation. I do not believe that this Wuqing, with his cultivation of a rank one Martial lord, can defeat cultivators with cultivation above his.

"If he hadn't received a Misty Badge, I dare to guarantee that definitely, he will not be able to pass the screening and gain the qualification to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm." Temple Head Wuya also felt pressure when facing the crowd's berating. However, he still clung onto Chu Feng and did not release him.

"That's fine. Since Temple Head Wuya doubts me, Wuqing, so much, I can indeed give you a method of testing." As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his own Misty Badge, then actually threw the badge on top of the banquet table in front of the crowd.

"I, Wuqing, will spar with Temple Head Wuya's disciple, Zhu Diguang. If I lose, I am willing to give up this Misty Badge and moreover, not participate in tomorrow's screening. I will leave the Misty Peak today and

not enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"However, if I win, I hope that Senior Zhu Diguang can do the same decision as I—not participate in tomorrow's screening, and give up the chance to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"This is the price you will pay for your master suspecting whether I, Wuqing, have the qualifications to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm," Chu Feng said to Zhu Diguang.

"Huu~~~" When those words were spoken, an uproar instantly arose. When everyone looked at Chu Feng, their eyes couldn't help turning complicated. They never would have thought Chu Feng would have such courage, but something undoubtable was Chu Feng's bravery alone made them look at him completely differently.

That was especially so for Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu. After the various events that happened before, when they personally saw Chu Feng, with his own strength, not only turn a risky situation into a safe one, and even shaming an existence like Temple head Wuya, making it so he would be questioned by the crowd, they started to admire Chu Feng more and more. Even though Chu Feng's current cultivation was far weaker than theirs, they still saw how Chu Feng wasn't a simple person at all. At least, even they didn't have such a bearing.

"Junior Wuqing, do not act rash! If you cannot enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, who will save Lady Yan Ruyu?" But at that moment, Jiang Wanshi's expression changed greatly. On the side, she secretly tugged Chu Feng's sleeve and advised him to not do such a thing via mental messaging.

However, Chu Feng simply paid no attention to Jiang Wanshi and continued asking Zhu Diguang, "What? You don't dare?!"

"DIGUANG!" At that instant, Temple Head Wuya was enraged. He had no choice but to howl at Zhu Diguang who was standing still and staring at the scene in a bit of a blank manner.

It was because at that very instant, Chu Feng wasn't provoking Zhu Diguang, but Temple Head Wuya. If Zhu Diguang refused, he wasn't

losing his own face, but his master's.

"Eh..."

Only after hearing his master's howl did Zhu Diguang gradually come to his senses. To be truthful, he was really a bit scared. After all, he had heard that Chu Feng grasped special methods that enabled him to solve the Map of Unpredictability, which even his elder brother could not solve. So, he subconsciously felt that Chu Feng was not simple. At least, he was different than an ordinary rank one Martial Lord.

If he could choose, he would have definitely chosen to refuse. However, while being threatened by his master, he dared not to back away. So, preparing himself, he said to Chu Feng, "If you want to fight, then let's fight! How could I, Zhu Diguang, be afraid of you?"

whoosh Immediately after Zhu Diguang finished speaking, a strong gale arose from the location Chu Feng was at, and looking at where he stood after the wind subsided, he had disappeared. He was standing in the sky that was full of stars, directing his finger at Zhu Diguang below, and said, "Please give me pointers."

"Hmph." Even though Zhu Diguang had no confidence when provoked by Chu Feng like that, he still decided to give it his all to fight in a fit of rage. After a cold snort, he rose into the air.

At the same time, not only did he emanate his aura of a rank two Martial Lord, he even activated an extremely powerful martial skill.

huu huu huu

The martial skill formed by Martial power became fireballs that flooded the air. Flames surged about and shot into the night sky, akin to a meteor shower flying backwards. Not only was it dazzling and eye-grabbing and lit up the night sky, it even had an extraordinary might and contained terrifying power.

"Such powerful techniques... He can actually use a martial skill like this in such a situation. Truly, as expected of one of Temple Head Wuya's proudest disciples." Seeing that martial skill, those in the same

generation praised endlessly. Even senior experts nodded faintly.

But in comparison to the observers who were purely watching for fun, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and Jiang Wanshi lightly knitted their brows and broke out in cold sweat for Chu Feng. They could tell that Zhu Diguang's strike was not a simple one—it was a rank eight martial skill!

Chapter 664: Sky Breaking Sword Thrust

boom boom boom

The powerful martial skill ignited the night sky. The strength of a Martial Lord was truly extremely powerful. If he were willing to, with that martial skill, it would be a simple action to turn a normal mountain range into ruins.

However, even so, Chu Feng didn't fear it in the slightest. As he stood on air, his eyes were like a torch. His hands quickly moved about, then boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation power gushed out of his body. In only an instant, it became a Spirit Formation.

"Hmph. You want to use a Spirit Formation to block my Flaming Meteor Shower? Truly naive!"

If Chu Feng used a martial skill to counterattack, perhaps Zhu Diguang would feel a bit of trepidation. However, seeing as Chu Feng actually chose to use a Spirit Formation to oppose his martial skill, he instead felt confident. The Martial power in his body circulated, and he currently started to channel his full strength into the rank eight martial skill, the Flaming Meteor Shower. He wanted to use the martial skill alone to defeat Chu Feng.

"Heh."

However, when facing Zhu Diguang's powerful martial skill, Chu Feng merely smiled. When the sky full of flaming meteors shot up from below, his hands suddenly changed and formless power was sent into the Spirit Formation.

poof poof poof poof poof

At that instant, there was no expected huge explosion, nor the imagined terrifying shockwaves and infernos. It was as though the many powerful balls of fire fell into water—they were actually all absorbed into the Spirit Formation in front of Chu Feng.

"How can this be?" Seeing this, Zhu Diguang's expression changed

greatly. He never would have thought that the martial skill he was most skilled in was not only unable to injure Chu Feng, it did not even create a tiny bit of deterrence.

"What is this situation? That isn't a simple Spirit Formation! It actually forcibly consumed a rank eight martial skill?" In reality, not only was Zhu Diguang shocked, those of the same generation were all dumbfounded. They were stupefied by Chu Feng's techniques.

"This formation, could it be...?"

"Impossible. He is still only a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, and right now his opponent is a rank two Martial Lord. How is it possible that he successfully executed this formation?" However, in comparison to those of the younger generation, the eyes of many of the senior experts lit up as they thought of a possibility.

Only, such thoughts merely darted past as they felt Chu Feng could not complete such a formation with his cultivation, nor could he use that formation to defeat Zhu Diguang who was an entire realm above him.

"Senior Zhu, you give off a decent atmosphere, but you're a bit lacking in power. Let me help you out once and make up for your deficiency in this martial skill."

Chu Feng, who was in the sky, sneered, and at the same time, the purple-coloured Spirit Formation also started to continue swirling. It even rumbled and violently trembled. In that situation, the radiance from the formation became brighter and brighter. Purple-coloured light started to expand in all directions, making it seem as though a purple-coloured sun was hung upon the night sky.

wuao

Suddenly, successive fierce cries rang out continuously. Boundless flames surged out of the purple-coloured Spirit Formation, and when those flames were spurted out, they became countless flaming birds.

A sky full of flaming birds descended from above. Not only did they make ear-piercing sounds, they even had horrifying might. That scene,

that power, it was extremely similar to the Flaming Meteor Shower Zhu Diguang used before.

However, one thing that was completely different were the Flaming Meteors becoming Flaming Birds. Not only did they have intelligence, even in terms of the atmosphere they gave off, they were quite a bit stronger.

"Heavens! It truly is the Reversal Formation! How can he grasp this formation at such an age, and even use it so skillfully!" Some experts in the older generation couldn't help exclaiming when they saw that scene. Their aged faces were full of shock.

"Master, what formation is this? It's so powerful!" Gao Xiong asked his master, Old Lady Wugong, curiously. He too was currently stunned by the scene in the air.

"This is the Reversal Formation. It can absorb and change the attack of one's opponent. Moreover, it can strengthen the attack, and return it back to them.

"This formation has extremely high requirements in Spirit power and control in formation markings. Usually, it can only be used on opponents weaker than themself, to give them 'a taste of their own medicine'.

"However, not only has this Wuqing used it so proficiently, he even used it on a Martial Lord an entire realm above himself. He is truly not a simple person." Old Lady Wugong spoke to that point, then shot Gao Xiong a glance and said, "Gao Xiong, you're a Purple-cloak World Spiritist too, and your cultivation is even three levels above that of Wuqing's. However, at present, he has already so ably grasped the Reversal Formation, yet you have not even heard of it. As one in the same generation, do you not feel ashamed?"

"I..." Being judged by his master in such a manner, Gao Xiong's countenance instantly became a bit red. Shortly after, he looked back at the sky. His respect towards Chu Feng had become even stronger, because he knew that Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were indeed very outstanding and superior to his own.

boom boom boom boom

While Old Lady Wugong and Gao Xiong were conversing, Chu Feng's counterattack had arrived. Zhu Diguang was currently using a powerful rank eight martial skill to defend himself against it.

However, he didn't expect Chu Feng's attack to be so powerful. He, as a rank two Martial Lord, even while using a rank eight martial skill to block, was gradually losing.

As he had no other choice, he clenched his teeth and roared explosively. Radiance flashed in his palm, as a silver longsword appeared within his hand.

It was an Elite Armament, but that was not the important part. The important part was that currently, the power revolving in Zhu Diguang's body pretty much exhausted all his Martial power. An extremely powerful aura was coalescing.

"Is it possible that Zhu Diguang wants to use that?!"

Seeing him grasp an Elite Armament and condensing the power in his body, Chun Wu's pupils abruptly shrunk. The worry on her face instantly became several times stronger.

"Senior Chun Wu, what is he planning to use?" Jiang Wanshi asked with concern.

"Temple head Wuya created a rank nine martial skill called the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust.

"However, this rank nine martial skill is different from ordinary ones. Its precondition of usage is that one must wield a sword Elite Armament.

"After usage, the power of the rank nine martial skill increases greatly, comparable to even Mortal Taboo martial skills. Temple Head Wuya had used this technique to defeat many experts of his generation.

"Looking at Zhu Diguang's current action, he has clearly already cultivated this martial skill successfully. He is aiming to give this his everything, and decide the outcome of this fight against Junior Wuqing

with this martial skill," Chun Wu explained.

"What? Comparable to Mortal Taboo martial skills?" Jiang Wanshi's expression changed greatly as well upon hearing those words. Having been with Qiushui Fuyan for such a long time, she had not only heard of the four types of Taboo martial skills—Mortal, Earthen, Heaven, and Divine—she had also personally witnessed the Mortal Taboo martial skill Qiushui Fuyan used.

That level of devastating, incomparable power was still vivid in her current memories. So, as long as she imagined Zhu Diguang actually using a technique comparable to a Mortal Taboo martial skill, she felt Chu Feng was in immediate peril.

"Sky Breaking Sword Thrust!"

And just at that moment, Zhu Diguang suddenly roared. He pointed at the sky with the Elite Armament in his hand, then a blinding pillar of light rose from the ground into the air, and shot straight towards Chu Feng!

Chapter 665: I Want Your Life

As the light soared into the sky, it became a huge dazzling, silver sword.

The size of the sword was akin to a mountain peak being pulled out of the ground. Not only did it have an extraordinary atmosphere, its power was very terrifying.

The areas it passed—air—shattered. Cracks appeared in the sky, becoming tens of thousands of pierces of fragments. It was as if there were nothing that could stop its attack.

When it appeared, not a single person on scene wasn't shocked because the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust did indeed surpass an ordinary rank nine martial skill, and was truly comparable to a Mortal Taboo martial skill.

"Good sword!" However, when facing such an attack, not only was Chu Feng fearless, he was instead elated.

whoosh whoosh

Chu Feng's palms overlaid, and with a glint flashing in his eyes, the purple-coloured Spirit Formation, once again, emitted blinding light.

hmm Being veiled by that purple-coloured light, the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust actually took the same course of action as the Flaming Meteor Shower before—it was completely absorbed into Chu Feng's Reversal Formation.

"How is this possible? Even an attack like that was blocked?" At that instant, not to mention Zhu Diguang, even the experts of the older generation were endlessly shocked.

Although Zhu Diguang had yet to thoroughly exhibit the power of the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, that strike alone could wipe out, with no problem, rank two Martial Lords of the same generation. There was no pressure to him at all.

Yet, such an attack was blocked by Chu Feng, a rank one Martial Lord. Naturally, that made people endlessly shocked because it did not only mean that Chu Feng's Spirit Formation technique was powerful.

Regardless of how much more powerful one's Spirit Formation techniques were, they were still Spirit Formation techniques. Without strong cultivation as support, it would all be for naught.

Chu Feng being able to do such a thing meant one thing: his battle prowess was extremely horrifying, and has already surpassed a rank two Martial Lord.

"Temple Head Wuya, you said with Spirit Formation techniques one cannot defeat those stronger than themself. Today, I'll let you see whether my Spirit Formation technique can defeat your disciple, a rank two Martial Lord."

In the air, a smile was worn on Chu Feng's face, but his gaze had already turned cold. His palms suddenly rushed down, then the Reversal Formation explosively shot out a strand of light.

It was the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, and its radiance in comparison to before was even more blinding, and its atmosphere was even more mighty. It was a lot more powerful than the one Zhu Diguang used before.

"Impossible! How can he also use the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust?!"

When he saw the huge sword descending from the sky, Zhu Diguang was instantly stupefied from terror. Since he still didn't know what Chu Feng used was a Reversal Formation, in his eyes, Chu Feng also knew how to use the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, and it was even more powerful than his own.

However, that was not the important part. After using the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, Zhu Diguang's strength was completely exhausted. At present, his face was pale and he was drenched in sweat. How could he, who was already extremely weak, find the power to defend against a strike that was even more powerful than one he put his full strength into?

If this situation continued, his life would be in peril. Chu Feng's attack had absolutely no problem killing him.

whoosh

Just at that moment, a person suddenly appeared before Zhu Diguang. It was his elder brother, Zhu Tianming.

He clenched one of his hands into a fist, and threw it outward. Boundless Martial power soared into the sky, and with that punch, he shattered the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust descending quickly from the sky.

"So powerful. Brother Zhu's battle power is indeed very strong." Seeing that, Gao Xiong who already knew Zhu Tianming at an earlier date couldn't help but nod his head.

"Ahh~~~" However, in comparison to Gao Xiong, everyone on scene shook their heads and sighed because they all knew when Zhu Tianming came out, it meant that Zhu Diguang had lost.

A rank two Martial Lord lost to a rank one Martial Lord. It must be said it was quite an embarrassing thing.

Especially when their master shamelessly mocked Chu Feng before the battle. At that very instant, invisibly, Temple head Wuya and his two disciples had been slapped on the face, and it was even a very resounding slap.

"Temple Head Wuya, it looks like I've won." Chu Feng seemed to have expected Zhu Tianming's assistance. So he, at present, didn't pay attention to Zhu Diguang and just spoke directly to Temple Head Wuya.

To Chu Feng, there was only one goal he had by choosing to fight against Zhu Diguang. Regardless if it was to take away Zhu Diguang's chance to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, or to defeat him by using Spirit Formation techniques, either reason was to slap Temple Head Wuya's face. Such was the price of making things difficult for Chu Feng publicly.

And after Chu Feng spoke, everyone's gazes were cast towards Temple Head Wuya. Some expressed sympathy, but even more people had ridiculing smiles on their faces. They were mocking him for the boastful words he said earlier, enjoying his appearance of embarrassment.

As for Temple Head Wuya himself, his face was ashen. Even his lips

were quivering, and if he could, right now, he would find a hole in the ground and bore himself into it. However, he could not, nor did he know how to reply to Chu Feng. So, he could only endure everything that was happening in front of his eyes.

"Wuqing, don't even think of speaking such words. My brother is perfectly all right here. How has he been defeated by you?" Zhu Tianming shouted at Chu Feng suddenly as he pointed at him.

"What a joke. Do you not know whether your brother has been defeated or not? If a hindering dog like you hadn't interfered halfway, do you think he can still stand behind you safely?"

Chu Feng sneered, his tone lacking any politeness. Since the pillars of enmity had already been set and they were also so shameless, Chu Feng had no need to be courteous to a person like him at all.

"God damn, who are you saying is a dog?!" Being insulted in front of the crowd, Zhu Tianming became even more enraged.

"He's saying you are. The winner's the king and the loser's the thief. What is there to argue about this? Do you think that the people here are all blind?!" This time, before letting Chu Feng refute, Chun Wu pointed at Zhu Tianming in the air and started to curse him as well. She really could not get used to seeing Zhu Tianming's shamelessness.

"That's right. I didn't expect the brilliant Temple Head Wuya's proudest disciple to be such a shameless person." At the same time, even some of the older generation jabbed at him with sarcasm.

Of course, Zhu Tianming didn't dare to do anything to Chun Wu's and the others' insults, so he could only, once again, point at Chu Feng in the air and shout, "Even if my brother lost to you, so what? Do you dare to fight me?"

"Oh? The younger brother can't do it, so the older one comes out? A rank three Martial Lord challenging a rank one Martial Lord? You truly feel no shame." Chu Feng laughed, his words full of derision.

At the same time, many people on scene shook their heads helplessly.

Some even spoke and criticized. They criticized Zhu Tianming's action that cared nothing about face.

However, at present, Zhu Tianming who had his mind clouded over by fury simply paid no heed to those things, because he could not tolerate someone taking away his younger brother's chance to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

So, ignoring the words of the crowd, he continued saying to Chu Feng, "If you don't dare, then just say so!!!"

"Ho? Don't dare? You truly think I will be afraid of you?" Chu Feng lightly smiled. There was not a single trace of fear on his face, then he said, "However, if I just agree to some unreasonable provocation from you, wouldn't the people in this world think that I, Wuqing, am a person fun to bully? If you want to fight me, that is fine. But you must pay some sort of price!"

"If I lose, I'll give up the chance to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Now, do you dare?" As Zhu Tianming spoke, he took out his own Misty Badge.

"No. That's the price your brother ought to pay. Right now, you are challenging me on your own accord. You think you can do that with just a Misty Badge? That will not do." Chu Feng shook his head.

"Then what do you want?!" Zhu Tianming loudly asked. He impatiently wanted to fight Chu Feng. One, to avenge his brother; two, to take back some face for his master.

And while facing Zhu Tianming's questioning, Chu Feng had already worn a smile on his face, and said, "If you lose, then I want your life!"

Chapter 666: Unrivaled Genius

"What? Betting lives?!"

When Chu Feng's words were spoken, it undoubtedly gave rise to another commotion. A rank one Martial Lord was requesting, on his own accord, a duel to the death with a rank three Martial Lord. It had to be said that everyone on scene were terrified by his words.

"Junior Wuqing, have you gone mad? He's a rank three Martial Lord!" Chun Wu even hiddenly sent a mental message, wanting to stop Chu Feng's insane course of action.

However, Chu Feng did not pay any attention to the crowd's discussion, nor to Chun Wu's warning. He said to Zhu Tianming who was below him, "Do you dare?"

"Haha, what a joke! If I don't dare, I'm your grandson!" Zhu Diguang laughed. From his perspective, it was impossible for Chu Feng to defeat him. In addition, he hated Chu Feng to the bone. At present, Chu Feng was actually committing suicide on his own. What reason would he have to refuse?

So, not only did he agree, he even clasped his hands at the people below, and said with a bow, "Seniors, Wuqing wants to wager his life with me; he said this himself. So, I ask you, seniors, to be witnesses in case he doesn't admit his loss."

"This..."

Up until now, most people stood on Chu Feng's side. They could all see that Chu Feng was a genius, and moreover, it was indeed Temple Head Wuya and the others who were in the wrong at first. So, they didn't want Chu Feng sending his life away for nothing just like that. Thus, there was no one who responded to Zhu Tianming.

"Sir Zhu, Junior Wuqing, you are here today because of your parents; do not use your life as mere games." Xia Yu also spoke to advise him otherwise. After seeing Chu Feng's talent, she naturally didn't want

anything to happen to him.

"I'll be troubling you, seniors." However, since Zhu Tianming had the intent to take Chu Feng's life, how could he pay attention to Xia Yu? Disregarding the reactions of the people below, he stood in the air and saluted. He pointed at Chu Feng, and said, "You are arrogant and conceited, and have no one in your eyes. Today, I will give you a good lesson for the seniors here."

boom

As he spoke, Zhu Tianming had already attacked. However, it was different than his younger brother, Zhu Diguang. What he used was not a martial skill, nor did it use any Martial power. It was a Spirit Formation.

The Spirit Formation was indestructible, and was called the strongest defensive method. However, in Zhu Tianming's hands, that power of indestructibility could also become a ferocious attack.

Although the Spirit Formation was used, it was not a wall. It became many pointed blades, and it could even pierce through space. It could even rend apart the air, and such strength was not the slightest bit weaker than Martial power.

"You want to have a battle in Spirit Formation techniques, to fight back some face for your master?"

"Naive. It is a rank three fighting a rank one. In the instant you attack, you have already lost."

Chu Feng saw through Zhu Tianming's plans, however, he did not back away. Similarly, he willed, then boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation became tens of thousands of sharp blades as well. In a tight-packed manner, they fell down from the sky, and flew quickly towards Zhu Tianming.

bang bang bang

The Spirit Formations collided into one another, and shockwaves rippled in all directions. They were as beautiful as fireworks, but everyone knew what sort of terrifying power was contained within the purple-coloured

aureoles.

"You have a bit of skill, but if you fight against me with Spirit Formation techniques, you will undoubtedly lose."

Seeing Chu Feng block his attack, Zhu Tianming's hands waved about. Under his command, countless symbols and markings appeared, then he drew a gorgeous Spirit Formation in front of him.

wuao When the formation appeared, a fierce roar immediately rang out. Countless huge beasts were condensed by a Spirit Formation and while stepping on the air, they soared into the sky and surged forward.

"Chu Feng, do not be careless. In terms of Spirit Formation technique, yours is absolutely superior to his; however, he is a rank three Martial Lord. With the support of his cultivation, his Spirit Formation will not be weaker than yours, possibly even stronger." At that instant, Eggy, who had stayed silent for quite a while, reminded Chu Feng gravely.

"Don't worry." Of course, Chu Feng could feel as well that Zhu Tianming had very powerful strength. But even so, Chu Feng would not admit defeat. Since he wanted to fight with Spirit Formation techniques, then he would use Spirit Formation techniques to crush him.

Chu Feng willed, and similarly, a powerful Spirit Formation birth upon his thoughts. In the same manner, several huge beasts, coalesced by Spirit Formations, leaped outwards. They fought against each other in the air, but like before, it still ended up as a draw.

So, more and more powerful formations emerged and a myriad of strange battles appeared before everyone.

Blades, swords, water, fire, wild beasts, plants, all things that exist in the world were all manifested in the fight between Chu Feng and Zhu Tianming.

"So powerful. So this is the battle between World Spiritists. Millions of changes, containing all imaginable oddities. Truly wonderful," one senior expert exclaimed involuntarily. Since cultivators were skilled in martial skills, even World Spiritists normally used only defensive Spirit

Formations and martial skills to attack. It was very rare to see such a thorough battle in Spirit Formations.

"No. The one powerful should be Wuqing. With the strength of a rank one Martial Lord, he is able to avoid being defeated while fighting a rank three Martial Lord. That alone says how powerful this child is," another senior expert said.

"Mm. Your words reminded me that the situation is indeed as you say. This child's Spirit power is very strong, and he uses Spirit Formation techniques as his heart wishes to. If both of them were in the same level of cultivation, Zhu Tianming definitely would have been defeated." Hearing those words, the senior expert before nodded too and praised.

boom Just at that moment, another explosion that shook the world rang out in the sky. As dazzling radiance flashed, people astonishedly discovered that the Spirit Formation attack Chu Feng had created spread to Zhu Tianming's location. Moreover, it engulfed him.

But soon, boundless Martial power burst out, dissolving Chu Feng's Spirit Formation attack. However, when the Spirit Formation dispersed, everyone's faces couldn't help changing.

At that very instant, the Zhu Tianming that appeared before their eyes had chaotic and untidy hair. There were even some traces of blood on his face. Clearly, he was injured by the Spirit Formation attack by Chu Feng earlier.

"He was actually defeated! Wuqing, a rank one Martial Lord, actually wounded Zhu Tianming, a rank three Martial Lord, with Spirit Formation techniques! The outcome of this Spirit Formation battle has been determined."

That scene made everyone shocked again, because in their eyes, being able to fight evenly against Zhu Tianming meant Chu Feng was extremely impressive. That not only meant his battle power was overwhelmingly powerful, even more so it meant that his talent was extraordinary, and grasped extremely powerful Spirit Formation techniques.

However, they never would have expected Chu Feng to actually defeat Zhu Tianming. That greatly stunned everyone, and it had to be said it was akin to a miracle. After all, the distance between the two was a full two ranks.

The Martial Lord realm was different than the four realms before—the Spirit realm, Origin realm, Profound realm, and Heaven realm. There was a huge difference in every rank, comparable to the distance between heaven and earth.

Normally speaking, to be able to defeat those in the same rank meant they were an expert with outstanding talent. To be able to defeat those one rank above meant they were a rare genius. To be able to defeat those two ranks above meant they were an exceptional genius.

Chapter 667: Fighting to the Death

"Zhu Tianming, you've lost." Chu Feng, too, ignored the discussions of the crowd. With a light smile, he looked at Zhu Tianming in the distance, who had an ashen complexion.

"Lost? The one who's lost is you!" However, that battle was about life and death, so how could Zhu Tianming admit his loss so easily? With the flip of his palm, a large golden sword appeared within his palm.

It was a Mastered Elite Armament. Moreover, the quality of it was superb; it was a lot more powerful than his brother's silver Elite Armament. It could even be compared to Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe.

When that Elite Armament was taken out, Zhu Tianming's atmosphere instantly increased by many times. Then, as he held the golden sword, he headed straight towards Chu Feng. He truly had the demeanor of a lord descending into the world, and was over several times stronger than when he previously used the Spirit Formation techniques.

Facing Zhu Tianming at present, even Chu Feng felt huge pressure. It had to be said that to Chu Feng, a rank three Martial Lord was still very challenging.

But even so, Chu Feng did not cower. Instead, he curled his lips up, forming a hint of a smile. Shortly after, radiance flashed in his right hand. The Asura Ghost Axe appeared within his palm.

ta ta After the axe appeared, he stepped on air and rushed towards Zhu Tianming. In only a blink, the two of them had come together and were fighting.

whoosh After Zhu Tianming neared Chu Feng, he waved his arm. A slash of a sword came slicing by, aiming straight at Chu Feng's neck. He aimed to take Chu Feng's life.

However, Chu Feng did not evade Zhu Tianming's ferocious attack. Instead, he turned the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand and cleaved down from above, wanting to rend Zhu Tianming's head into two.

At first, Zhu Tianming only sneered at Chu Feng's suicidal method of fighting and felt he reached the extremity of stupidity. After all, he was a rank three Martial Lord. In terms of Spirit Formation techniques, Chu Feng could use his more practiced skills to patch the distance in strength.

But if they had a battle of Martial power, when Chu Feng was being supported by cultivation two full ranks below, Zhu Tianming felt Chu Feng simply had no chance to defeat him. So, he prepared to use his lightning-like speed of a rank three Martial Lord, as well as Chu Feng's foolishness, to immediately strike Chu Feng to death with that one strike, to retrieve the lost face.

However, what he didn't expect was Chu Feng's speed to also be extremely quick. It was actually not the slightest bit inferior to his, and in that situation, if he continued, he would only suffer injuries along with Chu Feng, possibly even die alongside him.

whoosh whoosh So, at that instant, he dared not to continue fighting to the death. He could only dash away, and simultaneously retract his attack to dodge Chu Feng's own attack. However, he could do nothing about Chu Feng's axe being too fast and its power being extremely strong. Zhu Tianming feared that matter, and already, he couldn't evade in time.

So, with a ripping sound, Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe passed through his left arm. The powerful might actually scraped Zhu Tianming's left arm, and despite being only a light flesh wound, quite a bit of blood still flowed out.

"God damn, you want to fight to the death? Fine, I will!"

When he was injured after the first exchange of Elite Armaments, it made Zhu Tianming, who already had a stomach full of anger, even more furious. The golden sword in his hand sliced past, intending to slice Chu Feng's waist into two.

whoosh However, Chu Feng, still, didn't care about Zhu Tianming's attack. Just as he retracted the Asura Ghost Axe, without an iota of hesitation, he prepared to smash it again at Zhu Tianming's head from above.

“Damn your mother. You truly think I am afraid of you? Do you think my body of a rank three Martial Lord is not as hard as yours? Today, I will fight you to the death. Let’s see who will die first!!”

Zhu Tianming truly became furious. This time, he actually didn’t retract his attack and dodge. Instead, he willed, then a bright golden veil was born from his body.

That was a defensive martial skill, at least a rank eight. Zhu Tianming had firmly decided to fight to the death with Chu Feng.

“Heh.”

However, in such a crucial moment, Chu Fen smiled faintly. The Black Tortoise Armor Technique birthed with his thought, and at the same time, a large area of white mist spread out, instantly overrunning that land, and covered Zhu Tianming’s line of sight.

whoosh In the instant that white mist appeared, Zhu Tianming felt his brain tremble slightly, as though it dulled for a moment. However, he didn’t dare to be certain of it.

The only thing he could be sure of right now was Chu Feng’s Asura Ghost Axe cleaving down above his head. So, without hesitation, he continued sweeping his golden sword over. He was truly aiming to take Chu Feng’s life as Chu Feng took his, fighting straight until one was dead.

whoosh However, he only heard the sound of his sword slashing the air. Zhu Tianming’s face instantly changed greatly. He had actually slashed the air! Chu Feng was obviously no longer standing where he was just now.

And at that moment, the white mist started to slightly dissipate. Zhu Tianming discovered that there was indeed a change of Chu Feng’s location—he was standing by his side. Moreover, the Asura Ghost Axe Chu Feng held in his hand had fallen down.

The might of the Asura Ghost Axe was unstoppable. With a dang, it collided into the golden shield above Zhu Tianming’s head. The strong

power instantly deformed the shield, then at the end, it actually burst open.

"Dammit." At that instant, Zhu Tianming subconsciously dodged, but it was just a bit too late. Although a large portion of the power had been canceled away from Chu Feng's Asura Ghost Axe, it still contained very powerful strength.

The axe slid across Zhu Tianming's face, and with a whoosh, his left ear was sliced off. However, that was not all. Continuing the momentum, the Asura Ghost Axe continued downward, and with a puchi, it ferociously cut into Zhu Tianming's left shoulder.

"Ahh!" At that instant, Zhu Tianming made a heart-wrenching cry. It was even more unpleasant than a pig's cry.

Putting aside the fact that he lost an ear, at present, half of his shoulder was cut; it was almost chopped off.

However, Zhu Tianming was not a simple person. Although the pain was unbearable, he still forcefully bore with it. Not only that, he stepped, and flashed away. His entire body became a strand of light, flying back quickly.

"Heavens! The two of them just started exchanging blows, yet Zhu Tianming has already been heavily injured? This Wuqing is a bit too strong, isn't he?"

Since Zhu Tianming had left the range of the Black Tortoise Armor Technique's Illusion Formation, everyone could clearly see his current appearance.

When they saw the rank three Martial Lord with blood all over his face and body, lacking even an ear, everyone was greatly shocked. Although they already knew how powerful Chu Feng was, they never would have thought that Chu Feng actually reached that degree of strength.

"Heh. You thought I was giving my life up for yours, but you didn't know I had a definite certainty that I could dodge your fatal attack.

"I initially thought that only your Spirit Formation techniques were

weak, but I didn't expect your intelligence to be that low too. I must say that a person like you is truly unworthy of your body of cultivation." Chu Feng rested the Asura Ghost Axe on his shoulder and looked at Zhu Tianming with a smile, continuing to ridicule him.

Before, the reason why he attacked with no regards for his life was because he had the supreme Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique, protecting him. Not only could the Black Tortoise Armor Technique block Zhu Tianming's attack, it could even confuse him with illusions. Although it lasted for merely an instant, it was sufficient to allow Chu Feng to obtain a huge advantage.

The facts proved that Chu Feng was right. Zhu Tianming, who was angered by Chu Feng, lost his rationality a lot time ago. Even though he was still a powerful World Spiritist, he still made a fatal mistake.

Chapter 668: The Outcome Has Been Determined

“Wuqing, today, I, Zhu Tianming, will rip your corpse into ten thousand pieces!” When he received such humiliation in front of so many people, Zhu Tianming was ready to explode. With the flip of his palm, a medicinal pellet appeared on it.

The medicinal pellet had light swirling around it. Moreover, it was the three colours black, white, and purple. It emanated a powerful and strange aura, and it was actually able to automatically absorb the auras of the world.

“Three-coloured Forbidden Medicine?!” Everyone’s expression changed when they saw that Forbidden Medicine. The medicinal power was determined by colours. The deeper the colour, the stronger the medicine power. The more colours there were, the more ferocious the medicine power got.

The Black and White Rakshasa was a two-coloured Forbidden Medicine, but it was still able to cause a Martial Lord’s strength to increase greatly. Yet, at that instant, Zhu Tianming actually took out a three-coloured Forbidden Medicine. Its medicinal power was far above the Black and White Rakshasa’, and if one consumed it, it wasn’t impossible for their strength to enter the realm of rank four Martial Lords.

whoosh When the pellet was taken out, Zhu Tianming had consumed it. When the pellet entered his mouth, instantly, three strange gases—black, white, and purple—gushed out of his body.

huu huu huu~~

The three gases were like flames, burning within his body. Not only did it bestow upon him power infinitely near a rank four Martial Lord, it even instantly healed his wound. The immense power of the three-coloured Forbidden Medicine was currently fully manifested.

“Temple Head Wuya, it is only a spar between those in the younger

generation. There is no need to have a fight to the death," Old Lady Wugong urged Temple Head Wuya.

"It's that brat called Wuqing who precisely wants to have a fight to the death, not that I want him to.

"If you want me to tell Tianming, at this time, to stop, is that not equal to admitting defeat? If that Wuqing, regardless of what, uses that as a reason and wants to put Tianming to death, can you bear that responsibility?" At the same time Temple head Wuya coldly snorted, he also fiercely glared at Old Lady Wugong. He disliked very much that she was being so chatty at that time.

"Yes, that is true, but your disciple is a rank three Martial Lord. Right now, fighting against a rank one Martial Lord is already bullying the weak as the strong, yet he even consumes a three-coloured Forbidden Medicine. Even if he wins, it is not a proud victory. Quickly tell him to stop!" Old Lady Wugong continued urging him.

"The winner is the king, and the loser the thief. The three-coloured Forbidden Medicine Tianming used is his own. If that Wuqing can, he's free to use it as well! Not to mention three-coloured Forbidden Medicine, even if he uses a four-coloured Forbidden Medicine, I will absolutely not care about it. I'm only afraid he has none," Temple Head Wuya said while curling his lips. He, who had already lost all face, no longer talked reason.

"You... There is truly no medicine that can save you." Old Lady Wugong was also endlessly furious with Temple Head Wuya's attitude, but she could do nothing.

"Hmph. Everyone, that Wuqing wants to have a fight to the death with my disciple. I would advise that no one to interfere."

In addition, the thing most unexpected was that Temple Head Wuya not only allowed Zhu Tianming to use Forbidden Medicine, he even stood up and threatened the crowd, warning them not to act foolhardy and try to save Chu Feng.

"It looks like he's going to use the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust."

Chu Feng observed the change in Zhu Tianming's body, and discovered at present, the motion in his body was the exact same as his brother, Zhu Diguang, earlier. However, the power was many times stronger. That was indeed the prelude to coalescing the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust.

whoosh

Upon discovering that Zhu Tianming was clearly going to use the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, Chu Feng did not dodge, and instead, strode forward. Stepping on the air, he moved quickly towards Zhu Tianming.

"Seeing that Tianming will use the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, so you want to stop him? Truly idiotic. Do you really think Tianming has the same strength as Diguang? I don't mind telling you that Tianming's Sky Breaking Sword Thrust can definitely make you die with no corpse!" Below, Temple Head Wuya loudly shouted. His tone was full of ridicule.

"Truly shameless." Chun Wu and the others gritted their teeth in anger when they saw Temple Head Wuya's actions. They, however, could do nothing. Since his strength was too powerful, and Lady Piaomiao was currently not there, no matter how much more furious they were, they were absolutely powerless.

"Come! Let me see how strong your Sky Breaking Sword Thrust is!"

Even though Temple Head Wuya was mocking him, Chu Feng did not slow his speed; instead, he flew quicker and quicker. Moreover, he started to provoke Zhu Tianming.

Many people could not understand Chu Feng's move. They felt he was simply looking to commit suicide; however, no one noticed that the Asura Ghost Axe in Chu Feng's right hand had been put away. Moreover, a special and strong power was currently gathering in his palm.

"Haha, you do quite have the guts. Since you're so impatient to die, I'll grant you that wish!"

Zhu Tianming, who used the Forbidden Medicine, was brimming with confidence. He felt that Chu Feng was undoubtedly dead. His loud laughter grew maniacal, and with the golden sword in his hand, he

pointed it abruptly at Chu Feng. With a humming sound, a strand of light, full of limitless power, convened and shot explosively towards Chu Feng. Although, at present, it had yet to take form, it was indeed the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust.

"Then I must also let you see my own technique." Chu Feng sneered. He suddenly threw out his right palm, and with an aoo—a roar—a wave of light covered in black stripes shot out from his palm. It was the supreme Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

boom At that instant, the distance between Chu Feng and Zhu Tianming was too close. Before the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust and White Tiger Slaughtering Technique even took shape, they collided into one another.

Instantly, a deafening explosion rang out when the two smashed together. A powerful shockwave swept through the world, and even the mountain peak below was engulfed. If it weren't for the senior experts shielding it, likely, the banquet atop the peak would have been ruined.

Even though there were Spirit Formations from senior experts, everyone was still able to see how horrifying the berserk ripples were outside. Even though the battle between Chu Feng and Zhu Tianming hadn't reached the level of rank four Martial Lords, it had already infinitely neared such a level.

Finally, when the never-ending ripples gradually faded away and the sky mended from its shattered state, caused by the explosion, the ripples, too, slowly dissipated.

When everything returned to their initial state, everybody on the mountain peak was dumbfounded. At that very instant, Chu Feng stood in the air. Although his clothes were a bit ruined, there were a few injuries on his face, and his face was a bit pale, he was still able to stand in the air.

Zhu Tianming, on the other hand, when others looked at him, not only did he have a body covered with wounds and dripping with blood, he was currently held by Chu Feng with his hands. The outcome of that battle

had been decided.

"Powerful. The martial skill Wuqing used just now was powerful. Could that be a Mortal Taboo martial skill?"

"No. It doesn't seem like a Mortal Taboo martial skill. To be more precise, it's likely that it isn't a martial skill, but the Secret Skill from the legends."

"What? Secret Skill!"

"Mm. It's not only the one just now. Before when he fought against Zhu Tianming, the shield he used is likely also a Secret Skill." There were no ordinary people on scene, so in an instant, someone had recognized the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique Chu Feng used.

"Really? Having one Secret Skill is already outstanding. This child actually has two?!

"Does that mean he has an extraordinary origin, and that his master is incomparably powerful?"

Chapter 669: Completely Shameless

“That is indeed the truth. Right now, I am truly curious what sort of divine figure this Wuqing’s master is, to be able to pass down such abilities.”

“Defeating a rank three as a rank one, he is truly an exceptional genius! In the future, his achievements are immeasurable. It seems that in many years, there will be another Martial King born in the Eastern Sea Region!”

After confirming what Chu Feng had used was a Secret Skill, even the senior experts were endlessly shocked. In their eyes, not only was there amazement, more or less, some admiration also surged. After all, Secret Skills were powerful legendary existences. Who wouldn’t wish to have them?

However, even though they admired, there was no one who dared to have any malicious thoughts. If Chu Feng was already so outstanding, the master behind his back would definitely be even more powerful, an existence they could absolutely not offend.

boom Just at that moment, a person suddenly fell from the sky and crashed into the mountain peak. The strong force shattered the banquet table on the peak into pieces.

Focusing their gazes and looking, they saw it was Zhu Tianming. However, he, at present, was truly heavily injured. He lacked even the strength to stand up, and other than the blood all over his body, he was also covered in food. He was in an extremely sorry state.

“Big Brother!” Seeing his elder brother in such a miserable condition, Zhu Diguang cried out and rushed forward. He wanted to help Zhu Tianming help.

whoosh However, before letting him approach, a person, like a lightning bolt, came from the sky. Not only did it stand by Zhu Tianming’s side, a foot even stepped on his head. That person was exactly Chu Feng.

“You bastard, stay away from my brother!” Seeing his elder brother

humiliated in such a manner by Chu Feng, Zhu Diguang furiously dashed forward.

"Scram." However, Chu Feng who had already used his real strength simply didn't put Zhu Diguang in his eyes. With the wave of his big sleeve, he forced Zhu Diguang away through the air.

"God damn, I will kill you!" Zhu Tianming ferociously said when he heard his younger brother's shout.

But before letting him continue speaking, Chu Feng suddenly put strength into his right foot and with a cracking sound, Zhu Tianming's nose was snapped.

"Ahh~~~"

That pain made Zhu Tianming shriek, but there was not the slightest trace of sympathy on Chu Feng face upon hearing that sound. Instead, he coldly asked, "Shall I do it, or will you do it yourself?"

"He isn't truly planning to kill Zhu Tianming, right?" Many people were frightened when they saw Chu Feng's action. They didn't expect Chu Feng to be so coldhearted: he was really going to kill Temple Head Wuya's most valued disciple in from of him. That was simply equal to not putting Wuya in his eyes at all.

"If you dare to even touch him again, I will skin you alive!" Indeed, Temple Head Wuya wouldn't just watch Zhu Tianming die like that. He pointed at Chu Feng and explosively yelled. At the same time, he emanated his aura of a peak Martial Lord.

The powerful aura was like the attack of a storm. The entire mountain peak sank into chaos, and slightly weaker people in the younger generation were getting destabilized and could not stand normally. Even Chu Feng felt huge pressure.

But even so, his face did not change. Instead, he laughed loudly, and said, "So, Temple Lord Wuya, you're this kind of person. Before, you mocked that I, Wuqing, wasn't worthy to receive the misty Badge, and now, with the defeat of this fight, you are going to go back on your word.

No wonder your disciples were so shameless and despicable. It seems that they learnt it from you, their master."

"Brat, don't think that spitting words at me will do anything. It is only a matter of seconds if I want to kill you.

"However, for Lady Piaomiao's sake, I now give you a chance. Quickly release Tianming, or else don't blame me for not holding myself back."

Temple Head Wuya's face was ashen. At present, he didn't even care about having face or no face. He only knew that he could not allow Chu Feng to take away Zhu Tianming's life just like that.

"Temple Head Wuya, it is a pity that you are such an esteemed master and a senior. How can you be so unreasonable? When Zhu Tianming and Junior Wuqing made the bet, you did not stop him; when Zhu Tianming used the Forbidden Medicine, you did not stop him; yet now, you're stopping Junior Wuqing? Do you have no shame?" Just at that moment, Chun Wu stood out, pointed at Temple Head Wuya, and fiercely rebuked.

"Temple Head Wuya, it's not that I, Xia Yu, have no respect for you, but your very actions right now are truly inappropriate for your status," Xia Yu also dissuaded.

"Senior Wuya, I urge you to think over this." Even Qiu Zhu, the one with fairy-like beauty, dissuaded with her pleasant voice.

"Wuqing, you're still not stopping? It looks like you are truly looking to die." Temple Head Wuya paid no attention to the crowd. He waved his sleeve, then formless shockwaves rippled outwards.

hmm At that instant, Chu Feng felt a bad situation approaching. Even though the shockwaves were formless, Chu Feng could still feel pressure that was akin to mountains toppling and oceans overflowing. In a situation like that, he could only will his supreme Secret Skill—the Black Tortoise Armor Technique—to protect himself.

boom However, Temple Head Wuya was too powerful. It was on a completely different level than Chu Feng's strength. Just as the shockwave neared, it threw Chu Feng back into the air.

“Kneel down.” But that was not the end. Just as Chu Feng was thrown into the air, Temple Head Wuya’s palm abruptly flew downwards. With a bang, Chu Feng crashed into the ground.

Even though Chu Feng had the Black Tortoise Armor Technique protecting his body, a mouthful of blood was still forced out. However, Chu Feng knew that Temple Head Wuya didn’t have killing intent. Or else, his strike could have definitely turned Chu Feng into ashes. In the eyes of a peak Martial Lord, he, a mere rank one Martial Lord, was akin to an ant.

“Temple Head Wuya, what are you doing?!” Seeing that scene, Chun Wu and the others were furious.

“Wuya, as a senior, how can you treat a junior in such a way? You have gone too far with your current actions,” Old Lady Wugong rebuked as well.

“Yeah! Wuya, you love your disciple closely, so sure, save Zhu Tianming. However, you are in the wrong by harming Wuqing.”

“That’s right. I’ve seen shameless and despicable people, but it is still the first time I’ve seen a person like you.” Temple Head Wuya’s actions stirred up the crowd’s anger. Almost all of the seniors there spoke to rebuke his actions. Even the younger ones stared at the three of them with disdainful gazes. No matter what after today, Temple Head Wuya’s horrid name was going to be spread for far.

“All of you shut the hell up! If there’s anyone who dares to speak any more useless words, I’ll kill them.” However, Temple Head Wuya suddenly shouted loudly, and at the same time, his palm flashed, a longsword then appeared in his palm.

That sword was not very broad, but it was very long. Moreover, it was exquisite and beautiful. The body of the sword was golden, and on it special markings were engraved. Most importantly was the aura that sword gave off. It was completely different from an ordinary Elite Armament, and it was more similar to the pink flower sword Ya Fei used before.

After the golden longsword appeared, the aura of the entirety of Temple Head Wuya became even stronger. A hurricane formed by martial power swirled endlessly with him as the core. The horrifying pressure had already engulfed the entire mountain peak.

Chapter 670: Cannot Even Take a Single Strike

"You..."

When the golden longsword appeared, the complexions of all the senior experts on scene changed. More or less, displeased expressions emerged onto their faces.

They all knew the origin of the sword in Temple Head Wuya's hand. It was a very special weapon. To be more precise, it wasn't an Elite Armament, but a semi-complete Imperial Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword.

Although it was only a semi-complete Imperial Armament and was greatly different from an actual Imperial Armament, it surpassed Elite Armaments by a huge margin. It was also a very rare treasure in the Eastern Sea Region.

The semi-complete Imperial Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword, was Temple Head Wuya's precious treasure. It was also the weapon he used to be invincible in the realm of Martial Lords. Hence, after he took out the semi-complete Imperial Armament, everyone knew that he was serious. To protect his disciple's life, perhaps he would truly commence a slaughter.

If the senior experts on scene joined hands and fought Temple Head Wuya together, they could certainly suppress him. However, they wouldn't confront Temple Head Wuya, who took out his real weapon, for the sake of Wuqing, a person completely unrelated to themselves.

Even though they greatly disliked seeing Temple Head Wuya's haughty actions and felt even more displeased at his condescending attitude towards them, no one went up to stop him.

As for Chun Wu and the others, despite really wanting to help Chu Feng, Temple Head Wuya was really too strong. At that very instant, they had the desire but not the strength. After all, no matter how much more

experts there were on the Misty Peak, they were only Martial Lords. Evidently, they were no match for Temple Head Wuya.

"Wuqing, kneel and admit your wrongs right now, then perhaps I can consider giving you a chance. Or else, even god won't be able to save you." Temple Head Wuya no longer cared about face when everything developed to that stage. He, who was initially in the wrong, actually wanted Chu Feng to kneel and admit his wrongs!

"That's quite the tone you have. Today, let's see if there's anyone who can protect Wuqing."

But just at that moment, a thunder-like voice suddenly exploded in the air. At the same time, a person descended from the sky and landed before Chu Feng.

It was Qiushui Fuyan. After she appeared, Temple Head Wuya's pressure was immediately forced back. The peak also returned to its former state; it was even more serene and peaceful.

When Qiushui Fuyan appeared, everyone was shocked because her demeanor was really very special. She was simply like a fairy, untainted by the mortal world. Even though a veil covered her face, one could still see that she was a very rare beauty.

Most importantly, they could not see through Qiushui Fuyan's aura, but seeing as she suppressed Temple Head Wuya near perfectly, they could still tell that she was a true expert, possibly a Martial King.

"Who are you?" Indeed, after Qiushui Fuyan appeared, Temple Head Wuya's former arrogant atmosphere existed no longer as he asked very gravely.

At the same time, many people on scene stared at Qiushui Fuyan with unmoving eyes. They wanted to know where exactly she came from because at present, she was very low-profile and there weren't many people who recognized her.

"Lovers Terrace, Lady Qiushui," she replied very calmly.

"I have indeed heard of the Lovers Terrace, but it is merely a place

where a group of conceited people live in. I do know a few with the most powerful strengths, but I have not heard of Lady Qiushui."

After knowing Qiushui Fuyan came from the Lovers Terrace, Temple Head Wuya regathered his arrogant air because he knew despite there were many elite people living hiddenly in the Lovers Terrace, he didn't even put the more famous ones in his eyes, let alone Lady Qiushui, one he had never heard of before.

So, he felt no matter how much stronger Lady Qiushui was, she would only be the same as him—a peak Martial Lord. Whilst holding the Dragon Marking Sword as well as grasping the Sky Breaking Sword Thrust, he felt he could definitely defeat Lady Qiushui. Thus, he said, "You and I do not know each other, but since you are Lady Piaomiao's friend, I urge you to not be too nosy."

"Nosy? Wuqing is the disciple of my friend, and right now, my friend is not here. When my friend's disciple is being bullied, say, as a senior, where is the reason for me to not be nosy?!" As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, her eyes suddenly became fierce. The, the crowd had yet to react to what had happened.

With a poof, Temple Head Wuya knelt onto the ground. The powerful force actually made cracks appear on the peak that was covered by protective markings. Moreover, at present, his complexion was as pale as paper. He broke out in cold sweat, and even his body was quivering. His gaze glittered unstably, filled with the expression of horror.

"How can this be? Is it possible that... she is truly a Martial King?"

Looking at that scene, almost everyone was dumbfounded. When they looked back at Qiushui Fuyan, in their eyes there appeared a bit more reverence.

They knew it was Qiushui Fuyan who did that. Without any changes in expression, to be able to force Temple Head Wuya, a peak-level Martial Lord, to that state spoke how powerful she was. She had to be at least a rank one Martial King in order to perform such a feat.

And Temple Head Wuya, as the victim of that situation, immediately

reacted. The pressure on his body told him that his opponent was an existence he could absolutely not offend—his opponent was actually a Martial King.

"Why have you suddenly knelt? Where has your former arrogance went? Didn't you say, 'If there's anyone who dares to speak any more useless words, I'll kill them, and even god won't be able to save you'?" Qiushui Fuyan coldly smiled. In the gaze she looked at Temple Head Wuya with was full of ridicule.

And at that instant, it was silent on the entire mountain peak. So quiet one could even hear the sound of heartbeat and breathing.

None of them expected there to be a Martial King within the Lovers Terrace.

However, they knew that the Martial King would definitely not leave that matter—Temple Head Wuya abusing Wuqing—alone. They knew there was going to be a good show to watch soon.

In addition, Temple Head Wuya's actions before made them very furious. As a result, no one spoke up for him, and all of them wanted to see how he was going to suffer.

"Wuqing, what was the agreement before you and he fought?" Seeing Temple Head Wuya kneeling with an ashen complexion, unmoved from his original spot, and didn't answer her, Qiushui Fuyan looked at Chu Feng.

"Senior Qiushui. Before, it was agreed prior to the fight that the loser dies," Chu Feng replied respectfully.

"Then what are you still hesitating for? Since he's unwilling to follow the agreement, why aren't you helping him out?" said Qiushui Fuyan.

"Yes." Hearing those words, Chu Feng first clasped his hands, then without hesitation, under the eyes of the crowd, he walked towards Zhu Tianming, one step after the other.

There was a reason why Chu Feng was so fearless and waged his life with Zhu Tianming in front of so many people.

It was because after defeating Zhu Diguang, he received a mental message. It was Qiushui Fuyan's.

And she only said a few words to Chu Feng: "Fight to the death. I take responsibility for any incidents."

With Qiushui Fuyan as backup, Chu Feng naturally filled up with confidence. So, that's why he was so rampant and simply ignored what reactions Temple Head Wuya had.

At present, Qiushui Fuyan had revealed herself, so obviously, Chu Feng was even more fearless. Light flashed in his right hand, the Asura Ghost Axe appearing within his palm.

At that instant, Zhu Tianming knew that a disaster had arrived. He used his full strength and was doing his best to climb up, but just as he arose, Chu Feng had neared. As he approached, he kicked Zhu Tianming's face, throwing him back onto the ground.

"STOP!" Seeing that Chu Feng was about to kill his loved disciple, Temple Head Wuya suddenly exploded and let out a roar towards Chu Feng.

"Scram!" However, just as his words came out of his mouth, Qiushui Fuyan lightly waved her hand, and with a bam, he flew backwards.

When he landed on the ground, not only was blood flowing out of his nose and mouth, everyone could even see the side of his face swelling highly, and a red-coloured handprint on his face.

In front of Qiushui Fuyan, the arrogant Temple Head Wuya could not take even a single strike.

Chapter 671: Warning

"Wuqing, do it!" Qiushui Fuyan loudly shouted after fanning Temple Head Wuya to the side.

"No, please!" Hearing that, with no regards for his injuries, Temple Head Wuya wiped away the blood stuck on his mouth, and howled hysterically.

However, how could Chu Feng, who had Qiushui Fuyan as support, care about what reactions Temple Head Wuya currently had? He raised the Asura Ghost Axe in his hand, and was preparing to smash it towards Zhu Tianming on the ground.

"Wuqing! If you must kill, kill me!" However, in order to save Zhu Tianming's life, Temple Head Wuya actually offered his own life in exchange. That was something Chu Feng did not anticipate. When one looked back at him, his old tears streamed down his face. His appearance of snot mixing with tears truly reached the extremities of pitifulness.

"Kill you? It wasn't you who made a wager with me. Why should I kill you? Give me a reason!" Chu Feng was slightly moved. He didn't expect Temple Head Wuya, such a despicable, shameless person to also have a selfless side. He actually wished to exchange his life for his disciple's.

But even so, Chu Feng would not easily let Zhu Tianming go because he personally witnessed how appalling this master and two disciples were. His current wretched state was likely only a pretense. If Qiushui Fuyan hadn't come out, then the one with that appearance would very likely be himself.

"He, he is my son! Tianming and Diguang are my sons! The faults of the son shall be repaid by the father. Kill me, don't kill Tianming!" Temple Head Wuya implored, and actually prostrated and begged Chu Feng.

"Huaaa~~~~~" And when those words were spoken, a commotion arose from the crowd.

"What? Zhu Tianming and Zhu Diguang are Temple Head Wuya's sons?" Many people expressed astonishment at that because it was the

first time they heard he had sons. On the surface, he had never married and was always single. Where could the aforementioned children come from?

"I see. No wonder he puts such importance on Zhu Tianming and Zhu Diguang and even brought the two of them to any occasion. After all this, it's because they're his sons that he put such emphasis on their development." There were some smart ones who thought of the details of the situation. However, after thinking it through, they looked at Temple Head Wuya with even more disdain.

"Master! Ar-ar-are your words true? You are truly our father? Didn't you say our father passed away already?!" Not to mention others, at that instant, even the two brothers Zhu Tianming and Zhu Diguang were stupefied.

"Children, I am truly your father. However, I tricked and lied to you because I wanted you to focus cultivating and not rely on me. I did this for your sake."

Temple Head Wuya wiped away his tears, then slowly stood up and walked towards Chu Feng. However, when he was ten meters away from him, he knelt to the ground with a poof and said with a face full of sincerity, "Kill me! The father will atone for his son's sins!"

At that instant, Chu Feng was really a bit moved. Although Temple Head Wuya and his sons weren't any good people, the feelings between father and son really made Chu Feng quite touched. So, he did not continue doing anything to Zhu Tianming and cast his gaze towards Qiushui Fuyan.

At that instant, the fierceness in her eyes was no more. It could be seen that she felt surprised when a person like Temple Head Wuya could give up his life for his son. However, she did not easily say anything. Hiddenly, she sent a mental message to Chu Feng, saying, "If, other than his life, you were to choose one thing he has, what do you want?"

"Senior. If I have to choose something in exchange for his life, from what I see, that Dragon Marking Sword is not bad." Chu Feng's hearing

was outstanding, so as he heard the crowd's discussions, he knew that Temple Head Wuya's Dragon Marking Sword was not simple. He also knew that surprisingly, it was not an Elite Armament, but an Incomplete Royal Armament.

That thing was a lot stronger than his Asura Ghost Axe. Although his axe had the special ability to train his Spirit power, in regards to actual power, it was clearly quite a distance away from the Dragon Marking Sword. If he had that sword, Chu Feng's battle power would increase greatly.

Although, in terms of fighting strength, Chu Feng already had his Secret Skills, he still did not like to use them unless it was at a critical moment because Secret Skills were too troublesome. If he let a malicious expert know of them, it'd be very possible he would get killed.

"Although an Incomplete Royal Armament isn't a true Royal Armament, it is still created by the coalescence of Martial power that only Martial Kings grasp. Its power isn't something on a comparable level with Elite Armaments. This thing is very precious, and it's likely that Temple Head Wuya's most valuable treasure. Boy, your eyesight is quite harsh."

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan lightly smiled, but did not refuse the request. She then said to Temple Head Wuya, "Seeing as he's your own flesh and bones and you are willing to exchange your life for his, I will give you a chance.

"Give that Dragon Marking Sword to Wuqing and apologize to him. Then, I will act as though I have seen nothing today."

"What? You want Master's Dragon Marking Sword? Don't even think about it!" Zhu Diguang howled before Temple Head Wuya even responded.

"My master exchanged this Royal Armament with countless treasures and painstaking efforts. He will not give it to you. If you want to kill me, kill me. If you want to skin me, skin me. But don't even think of taking my master's Dragon Marking Sword." At the same time, Zhu Tianming who

feared death also summoned some courage.

"Shut up!" This time, however, Temple Head Wuya exploded. After howling at the two of them, he sent the Dragon Marking Sword up to Chu Feng and said, "My friend, Wuqing, we master and disciple were in the wrong before. I hope you can be magnanimous and give up a chance.

"I wish you can start anew and not always bully others. This world is so big and you are not the strongest here. If you continue acting so arrogant, the ones who will suffer will only be yourselves."

Chu Feng wore a light smile and accepted the Dragon Marking Sword. He could see that Temple Head Wuya was really unwilling to give it up, and even more so, he could tell that it was a good sword. As expected of an Incomplete Royal Armament. It was indeed not something Elite Armaments could be compared to.

"Wuqing, Wanshi, let's go. There is nothing to stay for in this banquet that lacks Lady Piaomiao's presence." After Chu Feng received the Dragon Marking Sword, Qiushui Fuyan turned around and left. Chu Feng and Jiang Wanshi closely followed.

However, after arriving at the path that led to the foot of the peak, Qiushui Fuyan stopped, turned her head around, and said to Temple Head Wuya, "You should rejoice that the one who appeared today is me, and not Wuqing' master. Otherwise, not to mention you, judging by his master's nature, your entire Limitless Temple would be eradicated."

After leaving those words behind, Qiushui Fuyan left with a lofty bearing. However, that Temple Head Wuya had an ashen face and a face full of fear. After experiencing such a thing, he already believed that Chu Feng had an extraordinary origin, and even more so, knew that Chu Feng wasn't a person he should offend.

In reality, not even him, almost everyone on scene could tell that Qiushui Fuyan's words didn't seem to be spoken in jest.

They could also tell that Qiushui Fuyan was not warning only Temple Head Wuya. At the same time, she was warning everyone. Warning that they better not have any malicious intents towards Chu Feng, otherwise,

Temple Head Wuya's state today was absolutely not the most miserable state they could end up as.

Chapter 672: Dragon Marking Sword Technique

After returning to his residence, the first thing Chu Feng did was to use his Heaven's Eyes to carefully examine the Incomplete Royal Armament he obtained from Temple Head Wuya.

"This is?"

However, something Chu Feng did not expect was when he used the Heaven's Eyes to study how the Incomplete Royal Armament was created, he accidentally discovered that the markings on the Dragon Marking Sword were faintly changing under the gaze of his Heaven's Eyes.

"Really?! This is actually a technique!"

Finally, Chu Feng found out that there was a technique concealed within the markings. Moreover, that technique had a name: the Dragon Marking Sword Technique.

The Dragon Marking Sword Technique was very special. Rather than calling it a technique alone, it would be better to call it a sword technique. However, something undeniable was its powerful strength. One could even say it surpassed ordinary rank nine martial skills, and comparable to even Mortal Taboo martial skills.

But the Dragon Marking Sword Technique could only be used if one had the Dragon Marking Sword. It could be said to be a custom-made sword technique specifically for the Dragon Marking Sword. If Chu Feng were to learn that sword technique, he would be unstoppable.

"This Dragon Marking Sword has had a long history, it's likely it wasn't made by modern people. I wonder if that Temple Head Wuya discovered the Dragon Marking Sword Technique hidden in this Dragon Marking Sword." Chu Feng was even more elated upon an inadvertent harvest.

"He definitely hasn't discovered it yet. Although that Temple Head Wuya seems to grasp a special Spirit Formation technique, how can it be compared to the Heaven's Eyes?" Eggy said very certainly.

“Heh, that’s true. Regardless, right now, this Dragon Marking Sword is mine, so of course this Dragon Marking Sword Technique is mine too.”

Thus, after Chu Feng, who hadn’t learnt any new methods in a long while, discovered the sword technique within the Dragon Marking Sword, he started to train in it without sleeping. With superior cultivation talent and powerful comprehension abilities, Chu Feng grasped the Dragon Marking Sword Technique in a short two days.

After two full sleepless and restless days of sword training, even Chu Feng was left a bit fatigued. However, just as he entered slumber, he was awakened by urgent knocks on his door.

“Who is it? It’s so early in the morning, why aren’t you letting me sleep?!” When he woke up, he discovered that the night was no more and it was already bright outside. However, the sky just lit up. He, who had just sleep for a short while, was very furious.

However, when Chu Feng prepared to open the door and send out a barrage of insults, he was taken aback. Immediately after seeing the people behind the entryway, he forcefully stuffed back in all the insults he prepared.

At that very instant, outside his palace stood four lithe beauties. They were none other than Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue.

The four of them all wore the same patterned yet different coloured skirts. Not only were they beautiful, they were also a feast for the eyes.

They were like four flowers that had just blossomed after a morning shower. It made people involuntarily wish to near them.

So, even Chu Feng lit up his eyes at that moment. The drowsiness lingering around his brain also instantly disappeared like a whisper of smoke.

“You’re still sleeping, what time is it? You are truly a pig-like man!” Chun Wu was the first to speak. With a smile, she cast a glimpse at Chu Feng, as if she were venting her displeasure because of Chu Feng’s earlier howls and roars in the palace.

“Junior Wuqing, today is the day that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens! Although the specific time it opens isn’t certain, it’s always better to head there earlier. Or else, if you miss it, that would be quite a shame,” Xia Yu said.

“Today’s the day that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens?” A revelation came to Chu Feng when he heard those words. In the past two days, he had been training hard with the Dragon Marking Sword Technique, and almost forgot about that important event.

“Oi oi oi, you idiot! You haven’t forgotten that today’s the Martial Marking Immortal Realm’s opening day that occurs only once every six years, right?” Chun Wu asked pouting when she saw Chu Feng’s reaction.

“Eh… I…” Chu Feng didn’t know how to respond because indeed, he had forgotten.

“Hoh, I’ve heard that Junior Wuqing’s been in closed-door cultivation in these past two days. It’s quite normal to have forgotten the time and date.” Xia Yu very smoothly helped Chu Feng out of that situation. As for Qu Zhu and Dong Xue, the two beauties, they stood unmoving and in silent, giggling while looking at the good show.

“Okay, okay. Let’s go now! Today, everyone who has received the Misty Badge and passed the screening will appear. I’m a bit impatient to see what abilities those arrogant people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago have,” Chun Wu said with a face of expectation.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago, huh? I wonder if the one titled as the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region, Murong Xun, will come or not,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s unlikely. The Martial Marking Immortal Realm only opens once every six years, and every time only a hundred people can enter. Moreover, those over and including the age of thirty cannot enter, and Murong Xun is exactly thirty years old. So, my master didn’t send him a Misty Badge to invite him to come.

“On the other hand, his younger sister, Murong Wan, and his fiancée, Ya Fei, as well as many geniuses from the Immortal Execution

Archipelago have received the Misty Badge. As for whether he will accompany his fiancée here, I do not know. But even if he did, it would be useless as his age prevents him from entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"But to him, there's probably not much bitterness he'd feel whether he enters or not. After all, the one who possess the current best record is him —120 Immortal Markings. That is indeed very impressive," Xia Yu patiently explained, but when Murong Xun's record he left behind was mentioned, admiration unwittingly emerged onto her face.

"With 120 Immortal Markings one can exchange them for a Mortal Taboo martial skill, huh? I wonder, are there Earthen Taboo martial skills?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"To be more precise, a hundred Immortal Markings is sufficient for a Mortal Taboo martial skill, but as for Earthen Taboo martial skills... To be honest, even I don't know if there are or not. Many things in the Misty Peak are operated automatically. They are not something that we can control.

"Not to mention thoroughly governing the Misty Immortal Formation, if we can open this Martial Marking Immortal Realm whenever we wish to, then the Misty Peak will have a great increase in strength," Xia Yu explained with a smile.

"Junior Wuqing, you wouldn't be wanting to exchanging markings for an Earthen Taboo martial skill, right? Not trying to lower your confidence, but the Martial Markings in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm aren't that easily obtained. Every time the realm is opened, there are a hundred people that enter. However, for most of them, getting several is already quite good. Some people can't even get one and returned with empty hands.

"So, people like Murong Xun are already very outstanding. A hundred twenty Immortal Markings... Even thinking about it I feel it to be unbelievable. The appellation of the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region is quite genuine."

At that moment, Dong Xue spoke. From her words, not only could one tell that the Martial Markings in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm were very difficult to obtain, she personally also seemed to like Murong Xun quite a bit.

“So what if he’s more powerful? At the end, didn’t he fall before my Senior Qiu Zhu?” Chun Wu suddenly spoke at that moment.

And hearing those words, Xia Yu’s and Dong Xue’s face instantly changed, and then asked simultaneously, “Little Wu, what do you mean?”

“Little Wu, you... Don’t speak of random things.” At the same time, Qiu Zhu’s beautiful face lost colour as she secretly tugged Chun Wu’s skirt.

“Eiya, Senior Qiu Zhu, what is there to not talk about? Isn’t it just you rejecting Murong Xun’s confession?

“Hmph. After being turned down, he even told you to not tell others about this matter. From what I see, this sort of person who dares to do but not bear the consequences is no more than a hypocrite,” Chun Wu said with her lips curled.

Chapter 673: Protecting a Secret

After hearing Chun Wu's words, the shocked expressions on Xia Yu's and Dong Xue's face became even stronger. They cast their gazes at Qiu Zhu together and asked, "Qiu Zhu, is that true?"

At that instant, there was a bit of awkwardness on Qiu Zhu's face. After shooting a quite helpless glance at Chun Wu, she said, "Last year, Chun Wu and I went training via experiencing the world. Indeed, we met Murong Xun." Although Qiu Zhu hadn't explicitly said it, she still implicitly confirmed that it was true.

huu~ After the confirmation, Xia Yu made a long relaxing sigh, then said, "It is adequate for only us few to know of this. Chun Wu, don't mention this to outsiders, and Junior Wuqing, I ask you to also keep this a secret."

"Seniors, don't worry. Although I may not have many merits, I am first-rate in keeping secrets for others," Chu Feng guaranteed with a smile.

"Mm. Actually, there's nothing much, but if something like this is spread, it would be hard to avoid it being used by those who harbor malicious thoughts. If a conflict is stirred up between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Misty Peak because of this matter, that would create quite some losses." Xia Yu seemed to fear that Chu Feng was displeased so she expanded the reason why she wanted to keep it a secret.

Afterwards, with four great beauties accompanying him, Chu Feng arrived at a very vast mountain peak. In the center of the peak was a square.

At that instant, in the square, there were already quite a few people. It was due to today being the day the Martial Marking Immortal Realm would open. The experts in the older generation who already had the permission to enter the Misty Peak congregated there to witness the event that happens only once every six years.

In comparison to the older generation, however, there were quite fewer

people in the younger generation. It was for no other reason but because many areas in the Misty Peak were forbidden areas. That specific mountain peak was the forbidden within forbiddens. Other than those who had the qualifications to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there was simply no one else who could step into that square.

This also caused the younger generation who appeared there to have extraordinary strength. The weakest was a rank one Martial Lord, and some who were brutally powerful stepped into the realm of rank four Martial Lords.

“Look! Are those the Four Seasons Beauties?”

“Waa, they’re the four disciples that the Misty Peak is proud of? Not only do they have appearances akin to the beauty of flowers, comparable to saints from the world of fairies, their strength is very strong as well.”

“The one wearing the green-coloured skirt is Lady Qiu Zhu, right? She is too beautiful. As expected from one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region. Whoever is able to marry her must have the accumulation of luck from three lifetimes. They would have no regrets for the rest of their life, and after a night with her, even dying would be worth it.”

“You truly have quite the imagination. Not to mention Lady Qiu Zhu, even if you give me any one of the three others ladies, I would be willing to abandon my everything and give her all my heart to treat her, love her.”

“God damn, you all really know how to dream! These four beauties aim for only the highest. They can only be gazed upon and not blasphemed.”

The appearance of the four attracted quite a few people’s attention. It was exactly the so-called “Everyone has a heart that loves beauties”. Even so for cultivation geniuses with exceptional statuses.

“Wait. Who’s the person standing within the Four Seasons?” But soon, some with sharp eyes noticed Chu Feng who was standing and walking within the four beauties as well as chatting and having fun.

That situation made many people displeased in their hearts. Instantly,

multitudinous gazes of envy and hatred were cast towards Chu Feng.

"That person is Wuqing. He's the only rank one Martial Lord who has received a Misty Badge. But even though he is a rank one Martial Lord, he is very powerful," explained a young man who appeared at the banquet that day to a furious rank two Martial Lord who passed through screening to obtain qualification.

"No matter how much stronger he is, he is only a rank one Martial Lord. He can't be that strong to cause the four beauties to fawn over him right?" the rank two Martial Lord said coldly. Within his tone, there was jealousy, and also displeasure.

"Hoh, Brother, you should not do that. Do you know why the total number of slots in the screening phase suddenly changed from forty to forty-one?" the young man asked with a smile.

"Could it be... you know?" the rank two Martial Lord asked curiously. To people who participated in the screening, the slot that suddenly appeared was indeed something they were curious about.

"One day before the screening, Lady Piaomiao set up a banquet to welcome her old friends.

"Coincidentally, my master was within the ranks of those invited. I also had the luck to join the banquet, and similarly, this Wuqing appeared in the banquet," said the young man.

"Then what?" Knowing that Chu Feng and the young man actually took part in such a special banquet made the man very admirative. At the same time, a few more points of respect entered his gaze as he looked at the young man.

"Temple Head Wuya. Have you heard of that person?" The young man did not continue narrating, and instead, answered the question with a question.

"Of course I've heard of Temple Head Wuya. He is a senior expert, and from what I've heard, he is a Spirit Formation genius. He is one of the few who became Gold-cloak World Spiritists before becoming a Martial King.

“With his powerful strength and his Dragon Marking Sword, he is invincible within Martial Lords. My master had an arm snapped because of him.

“Although an arm was snapped, my master did not hate Temple Head Wuya because he lost truly convinced. Even my master felt Temple Head Wuya was the strongest Martial Lord in the Eastern Sea Region.” That man very proudly narrated the achievements of Temple Head Wuya, as though being related to him in any way was a very honourable thing.

“Hoh. During the banquet, Temple Head Wuya suspected that Wuqing didn’t have the qualifications to obtain the Misty Badge.

“And in order to proof he did have the qualifications, Wuqing set up a battle between him and Temple Head Wuya’s two disciples with the agreement that the loser gives up his Misty Badge. Then at the end, under the gazes of the crowd, Wuqing defeated Temple Head Wuya’s disciples in succession with his power of a rank one Martial Lord, and took away their right to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm,” the young man said gravely.

“Really? I’ve heard that the disciple Temple Head Wuya is most proud of, Zhu Tianming, is a rank three Martial Lord. He received the Misty Badge... Eh, that isn’t true, right? Are you trying to say that Zhu Tianming, in addition to Zhu Diguang, was also defeated by that Wuqing, so that’s why there was an extra slot in the screening?” The rank two Martial Lord suddenly understood, but his face was still full of shock, unwilling to believe that fact.

“Hoh. Not only that. Wuqing’s master is a hidden expert with an unknown identity. He also has the support of Lady Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace.

“You don’t know who Lady Qiushui is, right? That person is very low-profile, and the number of people who know her are very few. However, I can specifically tell you that Lady Qiushui is a Martial King. In the day of the banquet, she almost killed Temple Head Wuya, only because he made things difficult for Wuqing. But, at the end, Temple Head Wuya gifted his

Dragon Marking Sword as compensation and apologized to Wuqing. Only then was he able to escape such a calamity.

"Moreover, she even warned the crowd and advised them to not have any ill-intents towards Wuqing because his master would not only kill without even blinking, he even had more powerful strength than Lady Qiushui," the young man continued saying.

Chapter 674: Ten-day Limit

"Brother, is that true? You know you cannot lie about these things right?" The rank two Martial Lord's current complexion was a bit pale, as though he was terrified.

"It's so true that it cannot be more true! If you don't believe me, go ask around. The people who were in the banquet that night personally saw it all," the young man guaranteed.

gulp Hearing this, the rank two Martial Lord swallowed some spittle from fear. Even cold sweat appeared on his face, then he said no more. There was no longer any hatred in his eyes when he gazed at Chu Feng. Replacing it was only deep trepidation.

In reality, similar events such as this not only occurred there. Many others who had seen Chu Feng's strength were also spreading it. In an instant, Chu Feng indeed became everyone's focus of attention. He became an existence that made others both envy, and fear.

As a World Spiritist, Chu Feng could naturally see and hear very attentively. Especially after arriving atop the mountain peak, he observed the crowd in a special manner. Thus, he naturally heard these discussions.

However, Chu Feng only lightly smiled at those comments and didn't pay too much attention to them. However, something undeniable was the events in the prior banquet made him famous.

For all things there were two sides: good and bad. Many people were afraid of him, but at the same time, there were also many people holding onto malicious thoughts, aiming to make a move for his Dragon Marking Sword.

Since what happened had already happened, Chu Feng was too lazy to care about those things. After all, the world was never peaceful. Unless there came a power that was superior to all, no one should think of maintaining tranquility.

“Junior Wuqing, that’s the entrance to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. There are two entrances—one for collecting Martial Markings, the other for exchanging them for martial skills.

“The first entrance opens today. It will remain open for two hours, and afterwards, it will close. As for the second entrance, it opens ten days later, the opening time being a single day.”

Xia Yu pointed at the center of the square. There were two formations there with slightly weak radiance. However, Chu Feng could tell they were indeed two formations. Moreover, they were very profound, containing symbols and markings he could not understand.

“That means one can only stay in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm for ten days, and after ten days, they must come out, or else they will miss the chance to exchange Martial Markings?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm. It is indeed like so.” Xia Yu nodded.

“Senior Xia Yu, then is it possible to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm then not come out to search for Martial Markings, and only exit six years later? At that time, I’m sure many more Martial Markings will be stored up, and one can exchange them for even better martial skills,” Chu Feng asked.

“Hoh, Junior Wuqing, you truly think too much. There have been people who has done this before, but really, it is a very idiotic action because six years later, not even any remnants remain of those people. Only the Immortal Talisman they wore when entering was still there. Do you know why this is?” Xia Yu asked.

Chu Feng shook his head, then asked, “Why?”

“It’s because the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is a very dangerous place. Almost no one can survive in that environment, and only in these ten days is the realm relatively peaceful. Remember, only relatively peaceful. Similarly, danger still exists.

“Moreover, after entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there is no exit. That’s why there are only a hundred slots every time the realm

opens—one is required to bring an Immortal Talisman into the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"The Immortal Talisman is an exit that can send a person out of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. However, there are only a hundred Immortal Talismans and they cannot be reproduced. So, that's why only a hundred can enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm," Xia Yu explained.

"So it's like that. Thank you, Senior Xia Yu, for your guidance." Chu Feng finally understood the mysticality of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

"So, Junior Wuqing, after entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, let's walk together! Perhaps that way, we can guard your safety," Chun Wu said.

"Yeah! Junior Wuqing, one more person one more part of safety. It will be better if the five of us are together," Dong Xue and Xia Yu said at the same time. As for Qiu Zhu, even though she hadn't said anything, she still wore a light smile, as though inviting Chu Feng.

"Seniors, thank you." It was exactly the so-called 'hard to refuse great kindness', so naturally, Chu Feng wouldn't refuse the invitation of the four beauties. In reality, Chu Feng agreed because it was true that by being with them he would be safer.

Putting aside the fact that many of the people there possessed wicked hearts, there were many people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who were entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.. Even Ya Fei was there. If they meet her within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Chu Feng did not dare to guarantee that—judging by her vile nature—whether she will attack him.

Even with the Immortal Talisman, he could send himself out of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm at an necessary time, but it would be quite the loss if he missed the chance to procure large amounts of Martial Markings because of such a thing.

So, being able to go together with the Four Seasons was the best

possible choice. After all, the four of them were not weak, Qiu Zhu especially. She had strength—a rank five Martial Lord's strength—that was as powerful as Ya Fei. Within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, she could definitely protect Chu Feng.

"Junior Wuqing, Ladies, you've come! Let me introduce to you my best friends.

"Qin Yu, Lan Xi, Wang Long: the three of them are the representative disciples of the Four Seas Academy. Although they will leave it next year, they are, at least right now, the Four Seas Academy's most powerful disciples."

Just at that moment, Gao Xiong walked over. Furthermore, two men and one woman followed by his side. A rather handsome male was called Qin Yu, the tall, big, and strong man was called Wang Long, and the graceful woman with a small figure was called Lan Xi.

The three of them were rank four Martial Lords. Although they had neared the age of thirty, that level of strength was quite powerful.

"I am Wuqing. It is an honour to meet all of you." The first Eastern Sea Region power Chu Feng knew was the Four Seas Academy. In addition, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and Su Mei were all cultivating in the Four Seas Academy, so Chu Feng had a fairly good feeling towards those from the Four Seas Academy.

As for those three, as disciples of the Four Seas Academy, although they had already cultivated for almost four years, to be able to acquire their current realm did show that they had impressive aptitudes.

But Chu Feng heard that thirty people had come from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not only did they all come via the acceptance of Misty Badges, the weakest were rank four Martial Lords.

So, in comparison to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, when the Four Seas Academy—a power that accepted people from the Four Seas—had only three rank four Martial Lords as their strongest disciples, it had to be said it was really a bit weaker.

But that couldn't be helped. No matter how much more powerful the Four Seas Academy was, it could only be counted a mere strong power. When likened to such an overlord-level enormous power such as the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it was too much weaker.

As for Qin Yu, Wang Long, and Lang Xi, they had very affable attitudes when facing Chu Feng. In reality, they had also heard Gao Xiong mention Chu Feng's achievements and felt he was a very rare genius, so they wanted to befriend him.

However, in comparison to Chu Feng, the Four Season beauties were quite cold, to the point that they didn't even want to converse with the three from the Four Seas Academy. The pride the four genuis beauties had current reached its apex.

Chapter 675: Gathering of Elites

"Look! It's the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago! Waa, who's that beauty? She's so pretty!"

"Yeah! She is simply comparable to the Four Seasons! I didn't expect the Immortal Execution Archipelago to also have beauties like her!"

"You idiots! Quiet down! That's the daughter of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's master, Murong Xun's younger sister, Murong Wan. Do you want to die by talking behind her back like this?"

Suddenly, a commotion arose from the square. Focusing and looking over, one saw a group formed by several females appearing above the square, and judging by their clothing, one knew they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The cultivation that group had was all very strong. Indeed, as it was known, the weakest was a rank four Martial Lord. Moreover, they were not very old, and the one who led was even a rank five Martial Lord.

Not only did the rank five Martial Lord have powerful strength, her appearance was outstanding too. It seemed that she wasn't too old, and at most, she had recently passed the age of twenty. Looking at her youthful and pure countenance, one could even say she was a young lady.

Moreover, from the respectful and fearful looks that the Immortal Execution Archipelago geniuses behind her gave, Chu Feng knew, from guessing, that she was Murong Xun's younger sister, Murong Wan.

"I-i-isn't that Ya Fei? The fiancée of the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, one of the Eastern Sea Region's three great beauties, Ya Fei?" Very soon, another group of people formed by beauties appeared, and a few, to Chu Feng, were familiar faces.

The woman who led was incomparably beautiful. She was seductive and hot, and when one looked at her bulging two peaks, slender long legs, lustre and snow-white skin, their blood vessels burst and they couldn't even look away. The only person on scene that could be comparable to

her was Qiu Zhu, and that woman was naturally Ya Fei.

As for those behind her, all of them were her attendants. However, those who came here today were all rank four Martial Lords.

"It's said that Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu have the same level of fame, and looking at them today, they are indeed outstanding. Truly rarely seen great beauty." When he saw Ya Fei, Gao Xiong and the other males were quite moved.

"I've heard that Lady Qiu Zhu's beauty is like ice, whereas Ya Fei's beauty is like fire. It seems like the rumours are true! This Ya Fei is truly like a flame—with a glance, it makes one's blood boil and one would even want to get intimate with her. Hehe." The disciple from the Four Seas Academy called Wang Long even shamelessly licked his lips.

"Hmph. She dresses up like a woman from a brothel. How can she be compared to my Senior Qiu Zhu?" Chun Wu coldly snorted, then shot a glance at Wang Long.

"Ehh, hehe, Lady Chun Wu is right, Lady Chun Wu is right. That Ya Fei looks decent at a glimpse, but she is truly inferior to Lady Qiu Zhu when looked at in more detail. Lady Chun Wu is more beautiful than her too!" Wang Long had a face full of solicitousness.

"Hmph." However, facing people like Wang Long, Chun Wu once again coldly snorted, the disdain in her gaze not diminishing, but instead, increased.

Nevertheless, regardless of what Chun Wu thought, it had to be admitted that the commotion made by Ya Fei's appearance indeed overshadowed Murong Wan's. The title of the number one beauty was indeed powerful, especially Ya Fei's allure that made one's mood explode. Her level of attraction was even higher than Qiu Zhu.

Instantly, many people started to compare Ya Fei's and Qiu Zhu's appearance, but no matter the result, the males on scene had feasted their eyes fully by the concurrent appearance of the two great beauties.

"That Murong Wan doesn't seem to like her future sister-in-law that

much, huh." As the crowd was focused on Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Murong Wan. He could see that the young lady had an unsightly face at that moment. When she looked at Ya Fei, there seemed to be a bit of enmity.

"I've heard that there's been some clashes between Murong Wan and Ya Fei, and looking at their attitudes today, it seems like that rumour is true," Xia Yu said with a smile, as if she really liked the conflict between the two.

"Look! More people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago have come! They are truly interesting... Obviously, they've come together, yet they don't come together." Just at that moment, another group of people walked over from the bottom of the mountain peak. Like before, they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

There were also several people in that group, but there was both men and women. The one who led, like before, was also a rank five Martial Lord, but it wasn't a beauty. It was a young man.

"That person is called Zhan Feng. He's the son of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Second Immortal, Zhan Jiuxiao and is one of the top geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Although he may look young, he does things ruthlessly, doesn't care what method he uses, and doesn't care about the consequences. In comparison to Murong Wan and Ya Fei, that person requires extra caution," said Xia Yu to Chu Feng and the others via mental messaging.

"Zhan Feng, huh? He really does look like a ruthless person." After hearing Xia Yu's words, Chu Feng examined him in detail and discovered that innately, that person had a sinister appearance. The type that could make a child cry just by looking at his outer appearance.

However, Chu Feng knew that Zhan Feng's sinisterness did not only come from his appearance. From the faintly detectable aura on his body, Chu Feng could feel that his hands had been tainted by quite a bit of blood. The number of people who died by his hands numbered at least several tens of thousands. Indeed, he was a great demon who killed

without even blinking.

Afterwards, people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago appeared in succession. Some came alone, some came in pairs, side-by-side, some formed groups of three or five, but other than Murong Wan, Ya Fei, and Zhan Feng, there was nothing special to notice.

After all of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago arrived, pretty much everyone who had the qualifications to enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was present. Chu Feng initially wanted to peacefully await the opening of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, but he could do nothing about that as a very unkind gaze locked onto him. It was Ya Fei. Not only did she discover Chu Feng, she even told her group of subordinates to stay behind, and aggressively walked towards Chu Feng.

"Look! Ya Fei is coming over!"

"Waa, this great beauty is actually walking towards me on her own accord!"

Seeing Ya Fei walk towards them, everyone who stood together with Chu Feng were very confused. They couldn't think of a reason why Ya Fei came to them because clearly, no one knew Ya Fei.

Finally, they made a guess that Ya Fei very likely came for Qiu Zhu to greet her. After all, as the "great beauties" of the Eastern Sea Region, the two of them, regardless of cultivation or appearance, were very similar. They were always figures of comparison, and unknowingly, the two of them became rivals.

However, the crowd did not expect that after Ya Fei neared, she simply paid no attention to Qiu Zhu and directly walked up to Chu Feng, saying with a light smile, "What a coincidence! I didn't think I would meet you here too."

"It is really quite a coincidence." Chu Feng smiled faintly, though there weren't many changes on his face.

"What, you've also gotten the qualifications to enter the Martial

Marking Immortal Realm? You've passed through the screening to do that, right?" Ya Fei asked with a smile.

"Oh, I'm sorry, you've guessed wrong. I've gotten the qualifications because I received a Misty Badge." As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his own Misty Badge.

After seeing the badge in Chu Feng's hand, Ya Fei was taken aback. However, she was not that shocked and only said, "I've heard that it's quite dangerous in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. After entering, you must be a bit more careful." After leaving those words behind, she turned around and left. From the very start, she had never even looked at anybody else.

Chapter 676: Entering the Immortal Realm

"Waa, Brother Wuqing, you're truly not a simple person! You even know this Ya Fei?" After Ya Fei walked away, Wang Long came close with his face full of all sorts of admiration.

Because Ya Fei had always worn a smile on her face and her gaze was quite soft, from her appearance, she looked as if she were talking to an old friend. One could simply not see her hatred towards Chu Feng.

"Hoh..." Chu Feng only smiled lightly but did not reply when he heard Wong Long's question. He felt that even though Wang Long had decent cultivation, he clearly didn't have enough intelligence. Chu Feng "wasn't speaking the same language" as him.

"Junior Wuqing, there seems to be some sort of conflict between you and Ya Fei?" As expected, people like Xia Yu, who had meticulous hearts, instantly saw the strife between Chu Feng and Ya Fei. She hiddenly sent a mental message asking him about it, and at the same time, Chun Wu and the others were doing the same.

"There were indeed some small incidents, but it's not worth mentioning." Of course, Chu Feng wouldn't tell Xia Yu and the others about the matter because he didn't completely trust them.

"Junior Wuqing, regardless of anything, just follow us into the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and everything will be fine. With us here, no matter who it is they won't dare to do anything to you. This is the territory of the Misty Peak, after all." Chun Wu, too, sent a mental message.

rumble rumble rumble

Just at that moment, rumbling sounds suddenly came from the center of the square. The entire mountain peak started to intensely shake. In that situation, everyone could see clearly a shining silhouette appearing from the square, gradually rising and ultimately becoming a solid gate.

The gate was a hundred meters tall with radiance pouring everywhere.

It was grandiose, mighty, and incomparably domineering. Moreover, at that moment, the gate was slowly opening. Strands of colourful and peculiar mist akin to celestial air swirled around the gate as it came out.

And through the colourful mist, everyone could see, within the gate, mist lingering about, peaks that could touch the sky, ranks of cranes flying, waterfalls cascading.... It was not only a stand-alone world, it seemed more like a realm for immortals.

"The Martial Marking Immortal Realm is the Holy Land of Martialism! I've waited for so many years, and finally, I have the chance to enter this cultivation holy land! Wahahaha..."

Suddenly, insane laughter rang out. An old woman flew up from a mountain peak, and arrived in the center of the square. Looking at her clothing, everyone could recognize her to be one of the guardians of the Misty Peak.

"What is she saying? How can the Martial Marking Immortal Realm be the Holy Land of Martialism?" Hearing that person's words, discussions arose and everyone was feeling disbelief.

Just then, however, that person did an action that went beyond any person's imagination. As she yelled, "Holy Land of Martialism, here I come!", she flew up and directly into the opened gate.

boom

But just as she touched the colourful mist, with a boom, a loud sound rang out. That person actually exploded there and then, becoming a mist of blood, which dissipated within everyone's line of sight.

"Heavens! What's with that person? Was she looking to die? Only those under the age of thirty can enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, or else they would explode and die!" Seeing that, they were even more shocked and felt that simply, that person was ill.

"Ahh, another one who doesn't want their life." At that instant, Xia Yu helplessly shook her head.

"Senior Xia Yu, what happened? Wasn't that a person from the Misty

Peak? She should know that she couldn't enter the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Why did she still do such a mad act?" Chu Feng curiously asked.

"Honestly speaking, some people think that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is the entrance to the Holy Land of Martialism. So, there are always people thinking of ways to enter the Misty Peak, and when then Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens, they, with no regards for their life, charge straight into it," Xia Yu explained.

"So that means from the start, you knew she was going to die. Why didn't you stop her?" Chu Feng asked again in confusion. Even though the old woman was strong, she was only a rank three Martial Lord. However, Xia Yu was a rank four Martial Lord. If she stopped her at the start, the old woman wouldn't have died.

"Every time tragic events such as these happen, there is no way to stop it because some people have already cultivated to an insane stage. They only feel that their own estimations are correct. No matter what others say, they don't believe it. I'm afraid even if they die, they would still be thinking that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is truly the entrance to the Holy Land of Martialism.

"So instead of stopping them, it'd be better to just let them die. That way, at least their death can warn those in the future. Otherwise, those who enter the Misty Peak with other goals will not be forgiven by my master even if they don't die," Xia Yu explained.

Only upon hearing those words did Chu Feng understand what Xia Yu meant. Perhaps Lady Piaomiao, judging by her nature, would truly not easily forgive who came to the Misty Peak with malicious goals. So, Chu Feng understood why Xia Yu and the others didn't stop her.

"Children from the Eastern Sea Region. The gate to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm has been opened. Are you prepared?"

Suddenly, a soft voice filled with strong might rang out. Looking towards the origin of the voice, one could see a person appearing silently on top of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm's gate. That person was Lady

Piaomiao.

whoosh After Lady Piaomiao appeared, she waved her sleeve. A hundred strands of light flew out and shot towards those in the young generation.

“Junior Wuqing, quickly catch them! Those are Immortal Talismans.” Xia Yu hurriedly reminded Chu Feng when she saw such a scene. At the same time, she, as well as Chun Wu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu opened up their palms to catch the gradually flying strands of light.

Chu Feng did not dally and similarly, opened up his palms to catch the strands of light.

sii~~

After the strand of light entered his hand, Chu Feng felt heat spreading and then, shortly after, such a feeling disappeared. Opening up his palms to take a look, he saw a special symbol on his palm. Moreover, it was as though it had life—it was slowly wiggling about.

“These are Immortal Talisman, the exit to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. When faced with undefeatable danger, or when one wishes to leave the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, imbue Martial power into it. It can bring you away from the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and back to this place.

“Lastly, I will warn all of you again. The Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens for a limit of ten days. Within ten days, you must leave the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, or else what you will meet is only certain death.

“Go. New miracles are waiting to be created by you. Do you wish to obtain martial skills you yearn for? Then take out your strength, and rely on yourself to obtain them.” Lady Piaomiao’s words were engraved on everyone’s hearts, making it so no one dared to go against them.

Immediately after she finished speaking, almost everyone who had an Immortal Talisman in the mountain peak became strands of light and started to fly up. Like meteors, they shot into the gate.

“Junior Wuqing, hold onto my hand or else after entering, we will be

split up by the Spirit Formation," Chun Wu reminded suddenly just as Chu Feng was going to move.

Looking over, only then did Chu Feng discover Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu, the four beauties, holding each other's hands tightly. Furthermore, Chun Wu was extending her pure-white hand to him.

Seeing that, Chu Feng lightly smiled and delayed no longer. He stretched out his arm and tightly grabbed Chun Wu's soft hand. Then, with the company of four beauties, and under the admirative gazes of countless males, they charged into the gate of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

However, just as Chu Feng and the others entered, within the square, Ya Fei, too, was holding hands with her subordinates. However, she was in no rush to move. Instead, she was glaring at the place Chu Feng disappeared in, and said in a low voice, "Damned bastard. Don't think that a dream like that can scare me. You better keep on following those four girls, or else if you meet me alone, I will make you wish you were dead."

Chapter 677: The Heaven's Eyes Showing Their Might

When he went through the gate, Chu Feng felt his eyes going blurry and when his vision returned to normal, he was located in another world.

It was not the beautiful realm of immortals he saw before, but a continuous stretch of a mountain range. It seemed to span infinitely, and the end could not be seen. Moreover, that mountain range was very odd. It lacked any peaks, and consisted of hills upon hills, bare of life.

Indeed, they were hills. Rock hills akin to steamed buns, and there weren't even any weeds. Moreover, the strangest thing within the mountain range were the occasionally gusts of wind appearing. Within the gales there were even specks of sand. It was extremely, extremely strange.

"This is the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?" Chu Feng felt quite surprised. How did that even look like a realm of immortals? It was simply a desolate place that could not be even more desolate.

"This is the true Martial Marking Immortal Realm. The scene we saw outside was no more than an illusion," Xia Yu explained.

"Then how would one obtain Martial Markings?" Chu Feng had already spread out his Spirit power, but found other than bare hills and strange sand-specked winds, there wasn't even a single hair.

"If Martial Markings were this easy to find, then they wouldn't be Martial Markings. Just come with us." Xia Yu lightly smiled, then rose into the air. Chun Wu and the others closely followed.

Those four grew up in the Misty Peak, so most likely, there was no one who knew the Martial Marking Immortal Realm clearer than them. So, Chu Feng didn't express any objections and followed the four of them, flying above the seemingly limitless and borderless strange mountain range.

On their journey of flying, they did meet others. Chu Feng could see the

confusion on their faces. Being in an environment like that, seeing not the slightest trace of Martial Markings, everyone felt huge pressure. After all, it was not easy coming to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Not a single person wanted to return empty-handedly.

So, in a situation like this, the people who saw Chu Feng and the others acted as if they saw a savior. Shamelessly, they wanted to travel alongside them, but were denied by Xia Yu and the others.

As they searched blindly, within the yellow sand that flew past, Chu Feng and the others suddenly discovered a strange symbol. It was as big as a mature pigeon, and it also had a pair of golden dazzling wings. It was flying within the gale of sand, and it was very sharp, its speed extremely quick as well.

"It's a Martial Marking! Quickly!" Seeing it, the eyes of Xia Yu and the others lit up. Shortly after, the four of them went at the same time, instantly sealing the escape of the Martial Marking. Very easily and casually, they captured the Martial Marking.

"Senior Xia Yu, let the five of us split them equally. You take this first Martial Marking," said Chun Wu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu at the same time after catching the Martial marking.

"Mm, sure." Xia Yu did not refuse the idea, and using her right hand, she grabbed the Martial Marking and lightly clenched. A dazzling light surged into her body from her palm, and ultimately, arrived at her arm before dimming down.

"Look, it's a success!" Afterwards, Xia Yu even pulled up her sleeve, revealing her snow-white arm. At that instant, Chu Feng and the others could see, on her arm, that a small golden marking appeared. Just like that, it was imprinted on her arm.

And after the first success, Xia Yu and the others were elated. They started to continue searching, and obviously, the four of them had finished their preparations. Whenever they found Martial Markings, they would be caught by their lightning-fast techniques.

The markings caught were evenly split by the five of them. Although

Chu Feng didn't put much effort, he still had a split that belonged to him. Moreover, the four females did not have a single word of objection. Instead, they felt it was within reason.

Chu Feng and the others searched for almost an entire day and night. However, just as the colour of night was about to fade away, only then did Xia Yu and the others decide to take a small nap until daytime before continuing their search.

Seeing the four beauties sleeping by his side, and also looking at the two Martial Markings imprinted on his arm, Chu Feng hadn't gone to sleep yet.

In a day's time, the five of them caught ten Martial Markings in total. Evenly dividing them resulted in two for each. Extrapolating, ten days later, each one of them would procure twenty Martial Markings. That result was actually not bad, but it wasn't something Chu Feng wished for.

"Heh, obviously these girls saw your potential, so they willingly sacrificed their benefits to bring you here and enjoy their harvest.

"Right now, what you are eating is equivalent to a free lunch. But I'm guessing you are really unwilling to let this go on, right?" Just at that moment, Eggy's sweet voice suddenly rang out in Chu Feng's head.

"Eggy, can you see the origins of these Martial Markings?" asked Chu Feng hurriedly. Eggy's range of knowledge spanned wider than his, and even though she came from the Asura Spirit World, she still knew many things he did not.

"I can't, but you can give the Heaven's Eyes a try. Although the Heaven's Eyes is a World Spiritist technique, it is different from Spirit power. Perhaps there would be some discovery," Eggy said.

"That's right! The Heaven's Eyes! How did I forget about it?" A revelation came to Chu Feng after hearing Eggy's words. After entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, he had always used his Spirit power to observe the realm, but there was nothing.

So, he subconsciously felt that there were no advantages in being a

World Spiritist in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, which indirectly led to him forgetting about his Heaven's Eyes.

After receiving Eggy's reminder, Chu Feng dallied no longer, and without caring whether the Heaven's Eyes would work, he had to at least give them a try.

In the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, during the day the sun lit up everything, but during the night no moonlight nor stars could be seen. It could be said to be pitch-black, but when Chu Feng used his Heaven's Eyes, his eyes instantly lit up. Everything before his eyes were as though they were seen during daytime.

After a while of detailed searching, Chu Feng, to his surprise and joy, discovered on a nearby mountain head, there was a small-scale symbolic formation. Although it was very weak, so weak one that it was flickering in and out of existence, it was indeed a formation.

At that instant, Chu Feng first took down his Heaven's Eyes. He then discovered that the formation disappeared, and after using the Heaven's Eyes again, the formation reappeared.

Chu Feng carefully walked over and used Spirit power to examine it. He pretty much could not feel anything that differentiated it from its surroundings, as if it were an ordinary rock. However, when he used his Heaven's Eyes to examining it, he discovered that it was like the formation had life. Indeed, only by using the Heaven's Eyes could he see this thing.

"Chu Feng, lay an Opening Formation for a try. For some reason, I feel that the thing inside is very possibly a Martial Marking," Eggy reminded.

"Mm." Truthfully, Chu Feng had already thought of that too. With a thought, he first laid a Sealing Formation in his surroundings, then only after did he lay an Opening Formation.

"Open." After the Opening Formation was operated, the symbolic formation quickly transformed and in the end, it actually transformed into an appearance of a Martial Marking. Moreover, it flew out of the rock, wanting to escape.

Chapter 678: Nature Exposed

However, Chu Feng had already made his preparations. How could he allow it the chance to escape? He willed the Sealing Formation to quickly shrink, and in the end, the Martial Marking had no place to escape. It could only obediently come forth towards Chu Feng. Thus, it was easily caught by him as it entered into his palm.

hmm

After the Martial Marking entered his hand, Chu Feng opened it slightly and felt the marking instantly disappear. It became a golden light, and through his palm, it bore into his body, stopping finally on his arm.

When he pulled back his sleeve, Chu Feng couldn't help but feel elated. He saw that the number of Martial Markings on his arm became three from two. The symbolic formations concealed on the hills were truly the Martial Markings they were so painstakingly searching for.

"Haha, I didn't expect the Heaven's Eyes to have such a great effect! It can actually find the hiding location of Martial Markings!"

At that instant, Chu Feng was truly overjoyed. He already found a Martial Marking at such a short distance, and since the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was so large, there were definitely even more Martial Markings for him to look for.

Moreover, since he felt that Spirit power had no effect, perhaps only he himself was the only one able to find the hidden Martial Markings in the hills. Him being in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm would then be like a fish obtaining water—he would obtain huge harvests.

Afterwards, Chu Feng examined the area he was in with the Heaven's Eyes. After discovering there were no symbolic formations nearby, he returned to Xia Yu and the others. He did not make any noise, and just closed his eyes for a brief rest.

"Junior Wuqing, wake up~ We only have ten days of time. Right now, a day has passed already, and we need to use more time to search for

Martial Markings, you know? You lazy pig! Quickly wake up!" However, Chu Feng felt Chun Wu's voice ringing endlessly around his ears shortly after he had closed his eyes. Moreover, there was even some pain coming from his ears.

Opening his eyes, he discovered that Chun Wu was currently using her pure-white hands to twist his ear. Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu had already awoke and were fixing up some food nearby. Seeing his dazed appearance, they couldn't help giggling immediately.

Chu Feng rose and looked into the distance. He saw that the sky had only started to let out light, but it wasn't too bright yet. According to his estimations, he should have only slept for less than an hour.

But that was fine. In the realm that Chu Feng and the others belonged in, it was alright even if they skipped sleeping for several days and nights. At most, they would be a bit absent-minded. So, the hour of sleep was sufficient to restore Chu Feng's energy.

"Let's go. After a day of searching, I'm sure many people already know that Martial Markings are hidden within the sand winds. If we want to find more Martial Markings than others, we must be more hardworking than others." After eating the prepared rations, Xia Yu and the rest of them rose into the air in succession, preparing to continue searching for Martial Markings.

"Junior Wuqing, fly higher. Martial Markings are very cunning; they will not hide in the low region of the sand winds. They will usually conceal themselves high in the sky amongst the wind," Dong Xue reminded involuntarily when she saw that Chu Feng was flying very low.

"Seniors, I'll be honest here. Last night, I've already discovered a new method of finding Martial Markings. Seniors, follow me. There will definitely be greater harvests," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Junior Wuqing, don't joke around. My master personally told me that Martial Markings are hidden within the sandy winds high in the sky. Thus, if we want to find Martial Markings, it is best to search up high. How could you possibly find them by flying so low?" Dong Xue said with a

faint smile, but within her voice, there was a bit of ridicule.

"Seniors, if you don't believe me, you can look at this." Chu Feng did not commence an argument when Dong Xue expressed her doubt. He pulled the sleeve above his left arm and showed it to the four beauties.

Actually, at present, if Chu Feng wanted to search alone, there would be no need to split the Martial Markings he gained evenly with them. With that, Chu Feng's harvest would simply be unimaginable.

However, because Xia Yu and the others hadn't abandoned Chu Feng and unconditionally shared their harvest with Chu Feng, naturally, Chu Feng could not be so disloyal. After all, in Chu Feng's heart, friendship was more important than benefit.

For that reason alone, he did not conceal his unique method and, from the beginning, decided to share the Martial Markings with Xia Yu and the others.

"Really? Junior Wuqing, when did you catch yourself another Martial Marking?" Indeed, upon seeing that there were actually three Martial Markings imprinted on Chu Feng's arm, the four beauties were all shocked.

"Seniors, last night, this is the Martial Marking I caught by myself last night. However, the method used is completely different from the one you used yesterday. I'm certain that only I can use this method, so that is why its efficiency will be higher," Chu Feng said.

"Junior Wuqing, you should stop joking. Martial Markings are extremely cunning. Even the four of us must move together in order to guarantee a capture. A single person catching them really is too difficult of a job. Unless one has good luck, it's impossible." Dong Xue did not believe Chu Feng too much and felt that Chu Feng likely relied on luck in order to catch a Martial Marking on his own.

"Senior Dong Xue is very correct. The speed of Martial Markings is extremely quick. If it's discovered in the air, its four sides of escape must be sealed with the cooperation of multiple people in order to have a greater chance of capturing it."

“However, if we already know where the Martial Marking appears beforehand and a Sealing Spirit Formation is laid there, we only need to await its emergence to capture it immediately, and prevent the Martial Marking from escaping,” Chu Feng said with light smile.

“Hoho. Junior Wuqing, please don’t tell me you already know where Martial Markings will appear ahead of time!” Dong Xue suspiciously looked at Chu Feng. The derision in her eyes became stronger.

“As one would say, ‘The things you see yourself is the truth’. Right now, it’s reasonable that Senior Dong Xue does not believe me. However, if you personally see a display, you will believe me,” Chu Feng explained with a smile.

“Taking a while for testing? The Martial Marking Immortal Realm only opens for ten days. Right now, a day has passed already. What we must do next is to make every single minute and second count. Where do we have time to let you test?” Dong Xue said, sounding very displeased. At present, she was already a bit impatient.

From her perspective, Spirit Formation techniques were useless in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. So, judging by Chu Feng’s strength, he simply did not have the ability to capture Martial Markings himself. The third one in his hands was definitely due to luck, and, right now, Chu Feng was lying.

“The Martial Marking on my arms already proves everything. If you don’t believe me, then I can’t do anything about it. Looking at it, we can only go our own ways because the method I use to search for Martial Markings is different from yours.” Chu Feng, too, was very displeased at Dong Xue’s doubt towards him.

“Junior Wuqing, you wouldn’t be thinking that I’m afraid of splitting up with you? Look at the Martial Markings on your arm carefully. Although you yourself have captured one, do not forget where the two others came from. If we did not give them to you, you would not have even gotten a strand of hair.”

Dong Xue’s countenance changed very abruptly upon hearing Chu

Feng's words. The former kindness was no more, and replacing it was a face flooded by fury and displeasure. This woman was indeed not as simple as she seemed on the surface.

Chapter 679: Each Going Their Ways

"Senior Dong Xue, what are you doing? Junior Wuqing is only thinking for our sakes. No matter if it's useful or not, won't we know if we give it a try? Why must you speak such ugly words?" At that instant, Chun Wu's complexion changed as well. For Chu Feng, she, unexpectedly, reprimanded Dong Xue.

"Is it because I'm heartless, or is it because he lacks a conscience? If it were only the four of us, I dare to guarantee that our harvest would be greater.

"But right now, who are we doing this for? Is it not for him? Yet he talks to me like this, and even threatens me with 'going our own ways'. What a joke. Do you truly think I'm afraid of splitting up with him?

"Chun Wu, if you didn't plead to bring this Wuqing together with us that day, I would have never been willing to bring such a useless leech. So what if he's good with Spirit Formation techniques? In this place, Spirit Formation techniques are absolutely useless," said Dong Xue furiously, showing the displeasure in her heart. She was not as uncaring as it appeared on the surface regarding the matter of sharing Martial Markings with Chu Feng. Quite oppositely, she cared very much.

And at that instant, Chu Feng's complexion became very unsightly as well because he finally learnt of the truth. Initially, he even thought Dong Xue and the others sincerely wanted to help him; however, looking at it now, it was completely different. At least in Dong Xue's heart, not only did she feel bitter because of sharing Martial Markings with Chu Feng, even more so, she felt that Chu Feng was a leech; a burden. This was the reason why she was venting so much anger towards Chu Feng right now. It was because already at an earlier time, she disliked Chu Feng.

The thing Chu Feng could not believe the most was their "willingness" to bring and protect him was the result of Chun Wu's imploration. As a result, Chu Feng's heart became quite complicated. The good feelings that recently arisen for Dong Xue instantly vanished like a whisper of

smoke.

"Senior Dong Xue, you're wrong. That day... yes, I did suggest bringing Junior Wuqing with us, but I did not plead any of you. Clearly, all of you voluntarily agreed with me.

"Don't think I don't know what your thoughts were. When you agreed, back then, it was for no other reason but because you had your eyes on Junior Wuqing's Spirit Formation techniques. You wanted to rely on them to obtain more Martial Markings.

"However, after arriving in this place, you discovered that Spirit Formation techniques were simply useless. No matter how powerful one's Spirit power was, it would not be of any use, and rather, the method Master said was most direct and effective. You all felt that Junior Wuqing had no more value. You felt him to be a burden. How can you say something like this? If I am of no more value to you one day, will I become your burden as well?" Chun Wu, too, asked fiercely.

"Chun Wu, pay attention to your tone. Is this how you speak to your senior?" Dong Xue furiously rebuked.

"Chun Wu, silent. How can you be so impolite." At the same time, Xia Yu also spoke and rebuked Chun Wu.

Only Qiu Zhu, at present, was in an awkward position. She advised quietly, "Senior Dong Xue, Junior Chun Wu, one less word from each of you, don't argue anymore."

"Hoho." But just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly chuckled. He clasped his hands towards Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu, then politely said, "Seniors, Wuqing expresses his thanks for the care yesterday. I give my endless gratitude for it, and if there's a chance in the future, I will definitely repay all of you."

"Junior Wuqing, don't say it like that. This is something that we should be doing. What's this about repaying or not repaying? If you must insist on repayment, then it should be me repaying you. After all, if it weren't for you that day, my Spirit power very possibly wouldn't have recovered, let alone be strengthened." There was a bit of shame on Qiu Zhu's face.

“Junior Wuqing, please don’t be angry. Although Dong Xue’s words before were a bit excessive, you don’t need to take them to heart. Her temper actually contains no malicious intent.” Xia Yu also spoke and urged, but very evidently, she stood completely on Dong Xue’s side.

At that very instant, although Xia Yu’s appearance was not clear, Chu Feng could tell that Xia Yu and Dong Xue were of the same temperament. Although kind normally, if they met a situation that related to their own benefit, they would change into another person.

Chu Feng did not have anything to say to those kinds of people. He sneered, then said, “Senior Xia Yu, you don’t need to say anything. I understand what you mean, but I, Wuqing, do not want to be any leech, nor anyone’s burden. I will take my leave here.”

As he spoke, Chu Feng rose into the air and flew towards the distance. At present, he did not care whether he would meet Ya Fei because he only knew that he did not want to stay behind and endure their vexation.

“Junior Wuqing! Wait for me!” But shortly after Chu Feng flew up, he heard Chun Wu’s voice from behind. Turning his head around to look, it was indeed Chun Wu who caught up to him.

“Senior Chun Wu, why have you come?” Chu Feng was a bit surprised when he saw Chun Wu.

“Since I felt Senior Dong Xue and the others are in the wrong, I want to follow you,” Chun Wu said.

“But Senior Chun Wu, are you not afraid that I was just boasting and in reality, I don’t actually have the strength to capture Martial Markings?” Chu Feng chuckled as he replied.

“So what? Do you think I can’t survive after leaving them?” Chun Wu’s face rose and slanted to the side—it was full of confidence. Afterwards, she quietly neared Chu Feng’s ear and said in a low voice, “I’ll secretly tell you this: I have five World Spirits and they are all in the Martial Lord realm!

“Although my cultivation is far from equal to my three seniors, there is

still power in numbers! With them helping, I too can catch Martial Markings. At that time, you don't even need to do anything. It would be fine to just observe on the side.

"So don't worry. With your Senior Chun Wu, I guarantee you won't return empty-handed. We can't get Forbidden martial skills, but at least we need to get a rank nine martial skill, right? You must know that the martial skills in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm comes from the Ancient Era. Even if it's a rank nine martial skill, its power is not something that can be comparable to a modern rank nine martial skill!" said Chun Wu with a light smile on her face as she patted her chest in assurance.

Seeing Chun Wu acting like this, though Chu Feng did not say much, his heart was warm. No matter how Chun Wu treated others, to himself, she was sincere and could talk about anything.

At that very instant, Chu Feng already truly, wholeheartedly, considered Chun Wu as a good friend. After all, "human hearts are made of flesh"—not rocks, otherwise they'd be coldhearted—and Chu Feng was a person who put emphasis on camaraderie. If others gave him a foot of respect, he would give them ten feet of respect. If others gave him a drop of water, he would give them an entire river.

So, Chu Feng determined not only to evenly split the Martial Markings he obtains in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, in the future, as long as Chun Wu needed it, regardless of what issue it was, Chu Feng would help her.

In the place before where they were arguing, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu still remained standing where they were, unmoved. Qiu Zhu continued gazing in the direction of Chun Wu's departure, knitting her brows slightly, and said very worriedly, "Senior Xia Yu, Senior Dong Xue, how can you two let them leave just like that?"

Chapter 680: Splitting Fortune When It Exists

“It’s quite good for that Wuqing to have left. Actually, even if Junior Dong Xue didn’t drive him away, I would have thought of something too. After all, this Martial Marking Immortal Realm opens only once every six years. I don’t want to be delayed because of him.

“As for that girl Chun Wu, she is indeed too willful. However, she herself chose this road, so it can’t be blamed on others. Without our help, she simply cannot achieve much greatness.

“At the time when the Martial Marking Immortal Realm closes and she can only exchange some low-rank martial skills, let her regret then.” The kind smile on Xia Yu’s face was no more, and actually became the same face as Dong Xue’s; maybe even more sinister.

“But the Martial Marking Immortal Realm’s danger is unpredictable, and Junior Wuqing has had some conflicts with Ya Fei. If they meet the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, wouldn’t the two of them be…?” Qiu Zhu was still a bit worried.

“I say, Junior Qiu Zhu, you have too kind of a nature. You always consider others, but who will consider you? Don’t forget that the world of cultivation is a world where people eat people. If you go on like this, I’m afraid you wouldn’t even know if you were sold off to someone one day,” Dong Xue said a bit displeasedly.

“Okay, okay. Don’t be so noisy because of a Wuqing. Although we don’t have him dragging us behind, we must still conserve time. Qiu Zhu, you don’t want the number of Martial Markings you obtain this time to be lower than Ya Fei, right?” Xia Yu asked Qiu Zhu.

“I…” Qiu Zhu did not reply, but her appearance gave Xia Yu an answer.

“Then stop staring and let’s quickly move.” As Xia Yu spoke, she already flew towards the distant sky. As for Dong Xue, she too followed quickly after.

Seeing this, Qiu Zhu bit down on her lips and hesitated a short while. However, ultimately, she flew after the two of them.

At the same time, Chu Feng and Chun Wu had flown down from the low sky and arrived atop a bare hill...

"Junior Wuqing, why have you come down? Martial Markings cannot be found on this mountain range." Seeing Chu Feng gazing at the bare little hill with a face full of happiness, Chun Wu felt very confused.

"Shh." Chu Feng indicated for her to be quiet, then with a thought, opened a Sealing Spirit Formation. Shortly after, he started to lay an Opening Spirit Formation with extremely skilled techniques.

At first, Chun Wu blinked when looking at Chu Feng's actions, her eyes full of surprise and became increasingly bewildered because she simply could not understand what Chu Feng was doing. If she were unacquainted with him, and saw some person doing that sort of thing on a bare hill, she would have definitely thought that person to be mentally ill.

However, after Chu Feng laid an Opening Spirit Formation with lightning quick methods and lightly yelled "Open"...

With a swish, a golden light shot out from that formation and with a bang, it crashed into the Sealing Spirit Formation.

"Heavens! Th-th-this is actually a Martial Marking! What's going on? Where did it come from?" At that instant, Chun Wu was stupefied because she could see the object that had collided into the Spirit Formation was a Martial Marking.

But that place had already been sealed shut, so where did the Martial Marking come from? Thinking back and forth, Chun Wu's eyes suddenly lit up, then shortly after, she cast her gaze towards the bare hill on which Chu Feng laid an Opening Spirit Formation, and asked with a face full of shock, "Junior Wuqing, you wouldn't have forced this Martial Marking out from that hill, right?"

"Senior Chun Wu is truly smart. Truthfully, I can see things that others cannot, and this seemingly normal small hill is, in reality, a place that

Martial Marking live in. That's also why I had to fly low and sweep my gaze constantly at the mountain range below," Chu Feng explained with a smile. At the same time, he willed the Sealing Spirit Formation to force the Martial Marking before Chun Wu, and added, "Senior Chun Wu, I already have a third Martial Marking. This one is yours."

"Giving it to me... Really? But this is..." Seeing that Chu Feng actually planned to give the Martial Marking to her, Chun Wu was both surprised and joyed; however, she was a bit embarrassed.

"Senior Chun Wu, I'm guessing if you also had this ability, you would definitely do the same as me. Right now, you and I are journeying together, so reasonably, we share both fortune and difficulties when they arise."

Seeing Chu Feng insist in such a manner, Chun Wu could not decline and could only open up her hand and crush the Martial Marking, sending it into her arm.

Seeing the third Martial Marking appearing on her snow-like arm, Chun Wu's heart was very complicated. However, she could confirm that coming after Chu Feng was a very correct decision. She seemed to be able to see the result of her bountiful harvest as well as her three seniors' endlessly shocked faces upon the completion of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

Indeed, Chu Feng did not disappoint Chun Wu. As everyone was searching for and fighting over Martial Markings in the air, only Chu Feng and Chun Wu searched above the mountain ranges. Moreover, the harvest they got made Chun Wu pleasantly surprised, and ecstatic.

On the eighth day of the opening of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there appeared eighty Martial Markings on her arm. A harvest like this was something she did not even dare to imagine before. Prior to entering, the best harvest she anticipated was no more than fifty Martial Markings.

Yet, at present, the Martial Marking Immortal Realm event hadn't even ended, yet she had already gained far more than she expected. Other than

feeling excitement and happiness, what she felt more was admiration towards Chu Feng because he truly was very special. So special he nearly surpassed what she could think of.

"Senior Chun Wu, what are you thinking about? This Martial Marking is yours," said Chu Feng as he pointed at the Martial Marking that was just forced out and was currently sealed by a Spirit Formation.

"Junior Wuqing, I don't need it. In the past few days, it's all because of you that I can obtain so many Martial Markings. To me, this is already enough.

"You don't need to split the Martial Marking you get from now on with me. Use them yourself. With that, not only would you be able exchange them for a Forbidden martial skill, you even have a chance to break the record Murong Xun set," Chun Wu advised.

"Ho..." However, Chu Feng only lightly smiled at Chun Wu's words, then said, "It really isn't easy to break his record, but that is not something I wish to do.

"Right now, I only want to do one thing. It's to share evenly with you all the Martial Markings found within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. I've already said that we share both fortune and difficulties. You've done the 'difficulties' part, so I must also do the 'fortune' part."

"Junior Wuqing, you..." After hearing Chu Feng's words, though Chun Wu's heart was warm, it ached at the same time. Her beautiful eyes were actually a bit wet as they glittered with sparking tears.

hmm Just at that moment, the Martial Marking was forced before Chun Wu, and Chu Feng said with a smile, "Senior Chun Wu, Forbidden martial skills are indeed my goal, but my goal is for both of us to obtain Forbidden martial skills. You must help me complete it!"

And when she looked at Chu Feng's dazzling smile as well as his sincere gaze, Chun Wu really could not find any reason to refuse. She could only wipe away the tears from the corners of her eyes, curl her lips up to form a sweet smile, nod, and say, "Mm."

Chapter 681: Region on the Edge

After that, because of Chu Feng's great benevolence, Chun Wu could only continue sharing Martial Markings with Chu Feng.

And because they were getting tighter and tighter on time, they even stopped eating and sleeping. Without rest, they searched for Martial Markings.

In a situation like this, on the eighth day's night, Chu Feng and Chun Wu both had ninety Martial Markings. If this trend continued, obtaining a hundred Martial Marking before leaving was pretty much not a problem at all.

But even so, Chu Feng could really not feel happy. For him, the thing he was most concerned about currently was not Martial Markings. It was another even more important thing. It could be said to be the true goal he entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm for—the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus.

However, it was already the eighth day since they entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Chu Feng nearly walked everywhere up in the sky and down on the earth, yet he hadn't found the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus. That made Chu Feng very dispirited. The worry and nervousness could be clearly seen on his face.

He could not be blamed for his emotions being too obvious since if he could really not find the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus, he would be unable to save Yan Ruyu's life.

"Junior Wuqing, don't worry. If there are no Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses in the center area of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, I'm guessing they will definitely be near the border regions of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm," said Chun Wu, who saw through Chu Feng's worries, with a smile.

"There are borders to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?" Chu Feng felt a bit surprised. He had travelled in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm for so many days and always felt that it was a place with no edges.

How could there be borders?

"Junior Wuqing, don't forget that the entire Misty Peak is a formation. Since the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is clearly one as well, since it is also created by a formation, no matter how much bigger it is how can there truly be no ends to it?

"Everyone feels that there are no edges to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, but it is an illusion totally. Otherwise, it would be impossible to often meet people who similarly entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm in this vast land.

"We were actually always wandering in a preset circle, and the reason why there is no feeling of familiarity in the areas we passed by, feeling as if it were the first time, is because everything in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm formlessly changes. That's why we could not realize that we were only walking in circles," Chun Wu explained.

"No wonder." Hearing up to that point, Chu Feng, too, came to a realization.

Actually, when Chu Feng again and again felt others flying above him up high, he had suspected that the hundred people who entered the realm were, in reality, confined within a restricted region. Otherwise, with only a hundred people in such a vast Martial Marking Immortal Realm, how was it possible to have such a great chance of meeting one another?

But because he could find no similarities from the places he passed by, and rather, they were all new, foreign environments, he felt that perhaps it was just him overthinking.

Looking at it now, however, his suspicions back then were correct. They were indeed walking in circles. However, the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was too profound. So much that even Chu Feng could see through nothing.

"Senior Chun Wu, within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Spirit power is basically useless and no change can be detected. Do you know how to reach the border regions of the Martial marking Immortal Realm?" asked Chu Feng.

“This… Master only told me there were border regions in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and that those places contain opportunities and oddities. However, similarly, they contain fatal dangers. As for the method to reach that place, she truly did not tell me.

“Aiya, Master always enjoys being like this. It’s like that Map of Unpredictability. She can clearly just give us the benefit of strengthening our Spirit power, but she doesn’t and forces us to take the chance and think of ways ourselves.”

Chun Wu was a bit annoyed because she truly wanted to help Chu Feng, but indeed, she could think of nothing. After all, within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Spirit power could not differentiate anything.

“I’ve got it! Our senses are being confused and we cannot determine the direction, but the World Spirit Compass wouldn’t also be confused, right?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s eyes lit up, then shortly after he took out a World Spirit Compass.

“World Spirit Compass? Junior Wuqing, in this place even Spirit power is useless. How could this thing be useful?” Chun Wu felt quite astonished when she looked at the World Spirit Compass in Chu Feng’s hand.

“We’ll know whether it is useful or not when we give it a try.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then used his Spirit power and imbued it into the compass.

The World Spirit Compass could determine even concealed dangers, let alone direction. So, when Chu Feng channeled Spirit power into it, very soon, the four directional indications—north, east, south, west—appeared.

“Will… this truly work?” Although the World Spirit Compass had clearly given out the directions, Chun Wu still had her doubts. After all, the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was an enormous formation that came from the Ancient Era. Using such a simple method such as the World Spirit Compass to want to unravel its secrets was really too naive.

“Heh, like I said, we’ll know when we try.” Chu Feng did not explain and first chuckled, then followed the World Spirit Compass’s indication and walked forward in one direction.

“Ahh.” Seeing that, though Chun Wu felt uncomfortable, she herself could not think of any other effective way so she could only fly over alongside Chu Feng.

As the two of them speedily flew, after a short two hours, before him was no longer the vast and endless mountain range, but mist.

That mist was golden, and it covered both the sky and the earth. It veiled over everything in front of him; however, if one looked from a distance, the mist seemed more like another type of Spirit Formation that sealed the world in that region.

“Heavens! It actually succeeded! Junior Wuqing, you are really too smart! It’s fortunate that you thought of using the World Spirit Compass.”

Arriving at that point, Chun Wu was also incomparably excited. She had thought of countless methods but ultimately thought them all to be useless. She never would have expected to a World Spiritist like Chu Feng, the most basic method was actually effective.

“Heh, sometimes, the simplest way is the best way. Let’s go, Senior Chun Wu. Let us see what oddities there are on the borders of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.”

After Chu Feng said those words, he rushed into the golden mist. Chu Feng actually had no interest in other oddities. At present, the thing he wanted to find the most was the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus.

And after entering the mist, Chu Feng and Chun Wu very soon felt a burst of strange power. It was the aura of danger, and the deeper they went in, the stronger that aura of danger became.

After they walked for an hour in the mist, it reached a point when the gradually heard strange sounds. Moreover, those sounds became clearer and clearer. At the end, in front of them, all sorts of noises continuously echoed out.

With sharp ear strength, Chu Feng could determine that it was the sobbing of a woman. It was a very miserable cry, and there were even the

howls of unknown entities.

"Junior Wuqing, this place is too peculiar. Let's not continue walking any deeper." At that instant, Chun Wu tightly hugged onto Chu Feng's arms. The girl who feared not the heavens nor the earth unexpected acted timidly.

Looking at Chun Wu's pale-white complexion and glittering eyes, as well as her slightly quivering body, Chu Feng hesitated a bit. But when he recalled that he had yet to find the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus, he did not wish to retreat just like that.

So, Chu Feng willed his Heaven's Eyes to open, and with the Heaven's Eyes' unique gaze, he looked deep into the mist.

"Heavens! What is that thing?!" But such a seemingly insignificant event made Chu Feng's pupils abruptly shrink. His countenance too couldn't help changing greatly. Even the hairs on his body stood on end, and large volumes of cold sweat directly seeped through his forehead.

Chapter 682: Temple of Reproduction

It had to be said that the Heaven's Eyes was very strong, and through constant usage, Chu Feng became more and more practiced. He actually saw the distance through the layers of vision-blocking golden mist.

However, to the current Chu Feng, the Heaven's Eyes seemed to have helped greatly. Through their gaze, Chu Feng was astonished to discover a humanoid organism in the distant mist.

Its height reached ten thousand feet, akin to a giant peak. It was so unbelievably large. Moreover, it had blood-red hair all over its body. The hair was very peculiar, as if it had been dyed by fresh blood, causing those who cast their eyes upon it to feel chills go down their spine.

Furthermore, its blood-red hair covered its entire body, preventing Chu Feng from seeing its face. He could only see a pair of eyes as big as a sun—yet completely empty—emanating overwhelming bloodlust.

Currently, the huge humanoid organism was standing in the distance, using its horrifying gaze to fiercely look at Chu Feng.

He also noticed that the organism's right hand was holding an incomparably large sickle. On the sickle, traces of blood were all over it. There was even a large amount of blood that trickled down along the sharp sickle, making rain-pouring sounds.

In the left hand of the humanoid organism, it was carrying a vast palace-sized cage. Within the cage, it was filled with things; however, looking more carefully, Chu Feng felt chills go down his spine, and with swishes, he broke out in a cold sweat. Within the large cage, it was actually full of human heads. Moreover, the number was huge—there were more than several tens of thousands.

At that instant, Chu Feng was truly terrified because he could feel how horrifying that humanoid organism was. If it wanted to kill him, he would not have the slightest chance of escaping.

aoo But just at that moment, the humanoid organism suddenly cried

out, as though it was frightened, and with a flash, it actually disappeared, as if it had never appeared. No traces were left behind other than the still echoing fearful howl.

"Heavens! What is that? What is making that sound? It's so terrifying!" At the same time, Chun Wu also cried out. She, as a rank four Martial Lord, was currently akin to a startled little bird. She tightly curled up in Chu Feng's embrace.

But it could not be blamed on her because the cry of the humanoid organism was indeed, very terrifying. So much that it was indescribable, and this was for those who were brave. Those who weren't could perhaps even be frightened to death.

Judging by Chun Wu's reaction of glancing everywhere, Chu Feng could see that she simply did not see the appearance of the humanoid organism. However, this could be counted as a type of fortune. Otherwise, it was likely that the beauty would be even more afraid.

After all, even Chu Feng felt chills go down his spine when he saw the humanoid organism, and what has Chu Feng not seen with all his experience? But the number of things that could make him terrified to such a degree were few within few.

"Senior Chun Wu, we should not stay long in this area. Let's not continue deeper. Since this mist surrounds the entire Martial Marking Immortal Realm, perhaps only searching around the outside will allow us to acquire harvests."

After seeing the humanoid organism, Chu Feng couldn't help associating it with an organism of the Ancient Era. He finally knew how dangerous the deeper part of the mist was, and gradually became aware that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was not a simple place at all. So, even the usually fearless him dared not to continue deeper in.

Continuing to force oneself forward into extreme danger without an absolute guarantee on one's safety was not an intelligent move. Even if Chu Feng wanted to help Yan Ruyu, he would not take his life for a joke. Besides, he was not certain that there were definitely Martial Marking

Immortal Lotuses in the deeper areas.

"Mm." Chun Wu nodded repeatedly after hearing Chu Feng's words.

Quickly after, Chun Wu and Chu Feng went back where they came from. Only when the aura of anger diluted and the strange noises vanished did the two of them thoroughly relax.

Afterwards, they continued searching within the mist. Though it did obstruct their vision, Chu Feng luckily had the Heaven's Eyes. Even the night sky could be turned into a bright day, let alone mere mist.

However, things were not as simple as they seemed. In the mist, although he could find symbolic formations that Martial Markings hid themselves in, and though they were in greater numbers in comparison to the mountain ranges, he had yet to see any traces of Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses. Looking at the already darkened day, the limit of ten days approached closer and closer. Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows, his expression twisting up.

"How can this be? Master clearly said Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses were in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Why can't we find them after searching the entire Martial Marking Immortal Realm?" Chun Wu, too, felt anxious when she saw Chu Feng in such a difficult state.

However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's complexion suddenly changed because he discovered an enormous symbolic formation appearing before him. It was completely different from the ones that hid Martial Marking, because in the center of the formation, there were even three big words: "Temple of Reproduction".

At that instant, Chu Feng first looked at Chun Wu. He saw that there were no changes on her face, which meant that the formation was concealed too; Chun Wu could not see it.

Thus, Chu Feng asked, "Senior Chun Wu, have you heard of the Temple of Reproduction?"

"Temple of Reproduction? Junior Wuqing, you've also heard of the Temple of Reproduction?" A bit of surprise emerged on Chun Wu's face

upon hearing such words.

"The Temple of Reproduction truly exists?" Chu Feng followed up with another question.

"I have heard my Master mention the Temple of Reproduction. I've heard that it's in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and it contains a large amount of Martial Markings inside. However, there has never been anyone who's discovered it, so outsiders shouldn't know of it. Junior Wuqing, where did you hear of it?" Chun Wu asked very curiously.

"Senior Chun Wu, if I tell you right now that there's a formation in front of us and 'Reproduction Formation' is written on that formation, would you believe me?" Chu Feng smilingly said.

"Heavens! Junior Wuqing, is what you said true? The Temple of Reproduction is not only a place where Martial Markings are created, almost all objects within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm are produced in that place. If it truly exists, then it will definitely have the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus!" At that instant, Chun Wu was incomparably moved, and her face was full of excitement.

After hearing Chun Wu's words, Chu Feng was elated as well. He hurriedly nodded his head and said, "This Temple of Reproduction is right before my eyes. Right now, I will be opening it."

Upon knowing that the Temple of Reproduction was actually the largest treasure trove in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, and not only did it contain precious Martial Markings, there were even odd and special objects such as Martial Marking Immortal Lotuses, Chu Feng dallied not and willed purple-coloured Spirit Formation to surge out. He started to lay an Opening Spirit Formation.

At the same time, Chun Wu helped out as well. Since the Temple of Reproduction's formation was too large, to want to open it was not a simple task. They had to use a slight bit more effort.

And after the two of them worked busily for two whole hours, the Opening Spirit Formation was finally completed. However, when they activated the Opening Spirit Formation to open the Temple of

Reproduction, a scene they did not expect suddenly occurred.

hmm

A boundless pillar of light suddenly shot explosively from the location of the Temple of Reproduction. Not only did it rise into the air, it was illuminating, lighting up the darkness of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm into a brightness similar to day.

Such an abrupt change of environment instantly attracted everybody's attention. Those who were situated in all sorts of places within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm cast their gazes in the direction of Chu Feng and Chun Wu, all at the same time.

Chapter 683: Everybody Hurrying Over

The Martial Marking Immortal Realm reached its final stages. Pretty much everyone knew that Martial Markings were hidden within the sandy winds up high. So, when a hundred people were confined within an area, it was hard to avoid battles fighting over Martial Markings, and they got only more and more intense.

In fact, at present, even Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue—the three disciples of Lady Piaomiao—were fighting others. Moreover, their opponents were not simple at all either. They were Murong Xun's younger sister, Murong Wan, as well as her four guards.

Eight beautiful women fighting in one place, none allowing any advantage over the other, reaching the extremities of ferociousness. It attracted quite a few passerby to witness.

hmm However, just as they were in a state of inseparability, a light was suddenly let out in the distance. It thoroughly lit up the Martial Marking Immortal Realm that had already entered the night.

Such a change attracted everyone's attention. Even Xia Yu, Murong Wan, and the others who were fighting to the death temporarily halted their battles and cast their gazes towards the location that the light came from.

Though such a glance seemed insignificant, the faces of everyone on scene changed greatly because it was a boundless pillar of light that rose into the sky. Moreover, there were two big words written on the pillar of light: Temple of Reproduction.

"It's the Temple of Reproduction? The temple from the legends has truly appeared?!" Seeing the three words "Temple of Reproduction", Xia Yu's and the others' eyes instantly lit up. Others knew not what the Temple of Reproduction was, but they did.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Thus, the three of them looked at one another, and without saying anything more, they leaped forward, and flew quickly in the direction of the Temple of Reproduction.

“Miss, where have they left?” asked Murong Wan’s subordinates confusedly as they hurriedly seized the Martial Marking upon seeing Xia Yu and the others leave, then presented it before Murong Wan.

Even though Murong Wan was young, she was a smart person. After crushing the Martial Marking her subordinate grabbed, she said in a low voice, “That pillar of light is really mystical. No matter what it is, since it made Xia Yu and the others fly there immediately, disregarding even the Martial Marking, there must be good things happening at that place. Following me closely. We cannot let them have an advantage.”

After speaking, Murong Wan leaped forward as well. While her skirt fluttered about, she was already chasing after them.

At the same time, those who did not suffer heavy injuries within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, or those who still had freedom over their movement, were attracted by the pillar of light and flew over with every fiber of their being.

On the other hand, Chun Wu who was currently in front of the pillar of light had a face full of panic. She said very worriedly, “This isn’t good. Why is the Temple of Reproduction like this? Will this not attract everyone in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm over?

“Dammit. Where’s the entrance? We must enter first, or else we won’t have the advantage of being early.” Other than being worried, however, Chun Wu started to carefully search. She wanted to find the entrance that would lead them directly in.

However, not only was the pillar of light bright, it even contained indestructible power. Even if it was Chun Wu’s most powerful attack it was completely useless which truly made her restless.

“Senior Chun Wu, don’t approach that pillar of light. It is like this because this place has already been opened. It is the intent of the Temple of Reproduction to attract everyone over. No matter what you do, it will be useless, and instead, you will only waste your strength for nothing.”

As Chun Wu’s head was drenched with sweat by panic, thinking of ways to enter, Chu Feng was very calmly circling around the pillar of

light, looking at it.

Moreover, Chu Feng was using the Heaven's Eyes to gaze. The reason for this was naturally due to the reason that his Heaven's Eyes could see things ordinary people could not. Currently, the pillar of light was the same.

Perhaps normal people could see no more than the two big words, "Temple of Reproduction", but Chu Feng was different. He could still see other content and indications, and it was also why he was currently so calm.

"Junior Wuqing, what do you see? Is this truly the Temple of Reproduction? Or is it just a display or trap that's only for attracting one's gaze?" Chun Wu asked curiously when she saw Chu Feng seriously examine it.

"It is undoubtedly the Temple of Reproduction, and the entrance is within the pillar of light. However, it will only disappear after four hours," Chu Feng explained.

"Doesn't that mean we will truly share everything in the Temple of Reproduction with them? This is not fair at all! It was clearly discovered by you and we opened it together, so why do we have to share it with others?" Chun Wu said, venting her displeasure at the unfairness.

However, Chu Feng wore a light smile on his face from start to finish, lacking the slightest trace of worry. He only said indifferently, "This is the scene that the creator laid. It is his intention, so we cannot do anything at all."

"Ahh~~~~" In a situation such as that, Chun Wu too could think of nothing. So, she could only sit down cross-legged, awaiting the dissipation of the pillar of light.

While they waited, very soon several figures flew over. At the same time, those people had powerful auras, causing the entire world to tremble. Zhan Feng and the others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had arrived.

When Zhan Feng came to that place and discovered there were actually people who reached there first, a hint of killing intent flashed past his icy gaze. However, when he saw Chun Wu and Chu Feng both waiting outside the pillar of light with their appearances of helplessness, only then did a cold smile appear on his mouth. Shortly after, he asked Chun Wu, “Lady Chun Wu, do you know what this Temple of Reproduction is?”

“Don’t know.” Chun Wu fiercely glared at Zhan Feng, then no longer paid any attention to him.

Zhan Feng was not angry at Chun Wu’s appearance because the more she was angry, the more he confirmed that despite arriving first, Chun Wu and Chu Feng hadn’t obtained any advantages. This resulted in her displeasure after he himself arrived there.

swish swish swish... Not too long after Zhan Feng reached that place, very quickly several more people flew over. It was Ya Fei and the others.

“Oh? Wuqing, what a coincidence meeting you here.” Ya Fei’s face instantly became joyed when she saw Chu Feng. To her, it seemed that Chu Feng was more captivating than the pillar of light.

“Ya Fei, what are you thinking about? This is the Misty Peak; I’d advise you to not act rashly.” Seeing her, Chun Wu quickly rose into the air, stopping before Chu Feng, deeply afraid that Ya Fei would harm Chu Feng.

“Oh? There’s a person protecting you already, and it’s even a small beauty. Wuqing, you’re quite impressive~” Ya Fei coldly smiled. She simply didn’t put Chun Wu in her eyes.

“Ya Fei, it seems that you’ve had some conflicts with this brat called Wuqing. With I, Zhan Feng, there is no need for you to do anything. I’ll capture him, then give him to you for punishment!”

An unexpected event was when Zhan Feng saw Ya Fei face Chu Feng unkindly, he actually provided his service on his own accord and wanted to attack Chu Feng for Ya Fei.

However, Ya Fei narrowed her eyes slightly, charmingly smiled, and

loudly said, against Zhan Feng's expectations, "Truly annoying and nosey."

"You..."

Zhan Feng's complexion changed greatly upon hearing those words. He never would have thought that when he so kindheartedly offered his assistance, Ya Fei slapped his face in front of so many people.

"Junior Chun Wu, Junior Wuqing!" Just at that moment, a mellifluous voice suddenly rang out. Looking towards the origin, in the distant horizon, several people were flying over. Qiu Zhu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, as well as Murong Wan and the others, had arrived.

Chapter 684: The Temple Opening

The arrival of Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue made Ya Fei tightly furrow her brows. After all, she could ignore Chun Wu, but Qiu Zhu, as a rank five Martial Lord as well, could not be ignored.

Besides, Murong Wan was there too. Recollecting on how Murong Wan was always in discord with her, and that she disliked Zhan Feng very much, since Ya Fei did not want to owe him any favours, she knew that most likely, she had no more chances to make a move on Chu Feng.

“Senior Chun Wu, Junior Wuqing, we finally meet again! How are you in the past few days? Were there anyone who bullied you?”

Seeming to feel shame in her heart, after seeing Chun Wu and Chu Feng, Qiu Zhu changed her usual cold attitude and actually came up and warmly inquired of their status. Looking at her appearance, she actually cared about Chu Feng and Chun Wu from her heart.

“Junior Chun Wu, I didn’t expect both of you to have arrived before us.” Seeing Chun Wu, Dong Xue’s face was full of surprise and there, perhaps, was a bit of sourness in her tone. It could be see that she was still angry because Chun Wu argued with her.

“Those words are quite interesting. Senior Dong Xue, do you know where this Temple of Reproduction came from?” Chun Wu coldly asked, curling her lips.

“Do you know?” Dong Xue chillingly smiled as well.

“I don’t know? This place was discovered by Junior Wuqing. It was opened by us both, and if it weren’t for us, how could you be looking at a sight like this Temple of Reproduction?” Chun Wu loudly asked.

“What did you say? This was opened by the two of you?” Hearing those words, everyone on scene were stunned. Especially after they learnt that a place such as the Temple of Reproduction was discovered by Chu Feng, they looked at him with even more complicated gazes.

After all, Chu Feng had only the strength of a rank one Martial Lord.

However, with a glimpse, one could tell that the origin of the Temple of Reproduction was not simple at all. Yet against their expectations, it was Chu Feng who discovered it. That made people feel disbelief.

"Junior Wuqing can use a special Spirit Formation technique, allowing him to see things ordinary people cannot. For example, that Map of Unpredictability. Wasn't it only Junior Wuqing who could accurately determine the numbers? Senor Qiu Zhu, you should realize that the most, right?" Chun Wu cast her gaze towards Qiu Zhu.

"Mm. Junior Wuqing's Spirit Formation techniques are indeed superb. It is on a completely different level than ours, and that is not only shown through the Map of Unpredictability. Back then, during the banquet, the various Spirit Formation techniques he displayed showed his power." Qiu Zhu nodded her head in strong agreement.

"Hmph. Even if he was the one who discovered it, so what? Right now, is he able to let us in?" Dong Xue had already cut all ties with Chu Feng, so she no longer played to befriend him. Facing the enemy, she would only speak to provoke, not praise.

"In another two hours, the pillar of light will disappear. The entrance to the Temple of Reproduction will then appear," Chu Feng said calmly with a light smile worn on his face.

"You are certain?" But Chu Feng's calmly spoken words gave rise to a commotion in the crowd. Almost everyone's gazes were cast towards Chu Feng once again, especially so for Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu, who knew what the Temple of Reproduction was. On their faces, excited expressions more or less emerged onto their faces.

"It's your choice to believe me or not." Chu Feng indifferently smiled. He did not explain, and with the wave of his hand, he laid a Spirit Formation in the air and sat atop it. Seeing that, Chun Wu too sat by Chu Feng's side.

"Lady Xia Yu, I wonder... What exactly is this Temple of Reproduction?" Zhan Feng asked with a smile. He was truly curious as to what kind of place the temple was. Moreover, from Xia Yu's and the others' reactions,

he could tell that they definitely knew something.

"I haven't heard of this Temple of Reproduction either, but Sir Zhan Feng, no need to be impatient. If Junior Wuqing's words are true, then two hours later, we will naturally know what it is.

"However, I've heard my master say that there are many dangerous places in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. So, I'd advise everyone to be a bit more careful if you are planning to enter the temple."

Naturally, with Xia Yu's deep scheming mind, she would not easily tell Zhan Feng and the others that the Temple of Reproduction was a place that produced Martial Markings and all sorts of other oddities. Even more so, they would tell them what it was a fabled huge treasure trove.

"Thank you, Senior Xia Yu, for the reminder. However, though I, Zhan Feng, don't have many good qualities, I do have great courage. Perilous places are the places I enjoy challenging the most." Zhan Tian was also not a simpleminded person. He knew Xia Yu was intentionally frightening him, so he spoke to provoke her.

"Hoh." But Xia Yu didn't even bother with a battle of words. She only smiled lightly, then said nothing more.

After the peak geniuses arrived, there were more people who hurried over continually. At the end, of the hundred geniuses who entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, there were eighty-three who arrived.

After the eighty-three arrived, it was just in time for—according to Chu Feng—the pillar of light to disappear.

The most surprising thing was that Chu Feng's words were completely on point. The pillar of light truly started to gradually fade away, and a Spirit Formation gate with a boundless atmosphere appeared before the crowd's eyes.

At that instant, everyone was stupefied because it not only meant that Chu Feng's words before were absolutely correct, it also meant that he was, indeed, the person who unlocked the Temple of Reproduction.

Most importantly, on the two sides of the overbearing Spirit Formation

gate, there were several rows of domineering words written:

THE TEMPLE OF REPRODUCTION IS THE PROVENANCE OF MARTIAL MARKINGS.

THERE EXISTS COUNTLESS MARTIAL MARKINGS WITHIN, MANY ODDITIES AS WELL.

REGARDLESS OF THE NUMEROUS TREASURES, THERE IS, UNFAILINGLY, A LIMIT.

THE NUMBER OF PEOPLE WHO MAY ENTER, TOO, IS RESTRICTED.

AFTER THE TENTH PERSON STEPS BEYOND THIS GATE, IT WILL AUTOMATICALLY CLOSE.

OPPORTUNITIES AND PERILS COEXIST. BEWARE, BEWARE!

whoosh whoosh whoosh

After reading up to that point, almost everyone moved at the same time. As if they were insane, they wanted to enter because not only did they see that the Temple of Reproduction was a huge treasure trove, it was limited to only ten people.

At that instant, not to mention others, even Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, Murong Wan, and Qiu Zhu, the four rank five Martial Lords, did all they could, used their quickest bodily martial skills, to fight for first entry.

whoosh However, something unexpected was after the first person flashed before the gate, it did not enter immediately Instead, it stood outside the gate and laid a Spirit Formation, sealing the entrance, and stopping everyone's paths.

Focusing and looking over, it was the cold woman with beauty akin to a

fairy, Qiu Zhu.

"Qiu Zhu, what are you doing?!" shouted Ya Fei and the others with a cold tone when they saw that. Their eyes were full of displeasure.

"Everyone, as the proverbs say, 'do not forget the one who dug the well upon drinking water'. This place was discovered by Junior Wuqing first, and was opened together with Junior Chun Wu. However, this place is limited to only ten people. If it is fought over based off of strength, I'm afraid Junior Wuqing and Junior Chun Wu will be unable to enter.

"Do you think that this is fair? To know that without Junior Wuqing, you wouldn't even have the chance to look at this entrance. However, not only has any words of gratitude been said, you are even preparing to take away their qualification. Do you not feel ashamed? Do you not think yourself to be shameless?"

Qiu Zhu completely changed from her usual silence and actually, with a face of seriousness and a ferocious tone, replied to the question at the crowd.

Chapter 685: Beneficiary

When he saw that, Chu Feng's heart couldn't help warming up. Qiu Zhu had already gotten first and if she rushed in first, she would have definitely obtained an advantage of being first. However, she did not and instead, blocked the entrance to fight for Chu Feng's sake.

No matter what she did before, her very actions right now made Chu Feng quite moved. It made Chu Feng know that even though Qiu Zhu was different from Chun Wu, she was also completely different from Xia Yu and Dong Xue.

"Lady Qiu Zhu, when you say it like that, you are wrong. You said this Temple of Reproduction was discovered and opened by Wuqing; however, do you have proof?" Zhan Feng asked with a firm tone.

"Just now, Junior Wuqing accurately stated when this pillar of light would disappear, and you've said it as well. Junior Wuqing and Junior Chun Wu were the people who appeared here first. Is that not sufficient proof?" Qiu Zhu justified.

"They indeed arrived here first, but what does that even mean? Perhaps they had good luck and located closer to this place.

"Moreover, before, he did accurately state the opening time of this Temple of Reproduction, but who can say he didn't see a hint because he arrived here first?

"If this place was truly opened by him, why was there a need to wait for us to arrive? Why couldn't he just open the entrance and enter? Everyone, am I right?" Zhan Feng loudly said.

"Yes!" Immediately after he spoke, the crowd all nodded and response. Especially so for those from the Immortal Execution Archipelago—their yell was loud and clear.

"You are forcing reason and being thankless!" Chun Wu roared furiously. As one of the people who opened the temple, seeing those people with no gratitude really made it unbearable for her.

“Lady Chun Wu, don’t be angry. If you want us to believe that this was opened by you and Wuqing, that’s fine. Right now, go open another entrance! If you can, we’ll believe you. But honestly speaking, if you truly had that ability, why would you fight over the ten slots with us?” Zhan Feng said very mockingly.

“That’s right. If you truly had that ability, go open another one yourself! Don’t fight over these ten slots with us!” At the same time, almost everyone else was stirred up by Zhan Feng.

During the period of time Qiu Zhu sealed the entrance, almost all of them arrived there. As long as Qiu Zhu deactivated the Sealing Spirit Formation she laid, pretty much everyone had a chance to enter. So, who would be willing to give up those two slots? It was simply diminishing their chances to be able to enter.

“Qiu Zhu, Chun Wu, don’t make a racket here. As the proverbs say: ‘Let those able do the work’. For matters such as this one, it cannot be dealt with ‘first come, first serve’. Besides, before the face of benefits, who would give up their part?

“Do not forget that the ‘strong eats and the weak’s meat’ is the rule of the cultivation world. Virtue and righteousness cannot allow one to be superior to others.” Just at that moment, Xia Yu spoke. However, she was standing by Zhan Feng’s side.

“Mm. Lady Xia Yu’s the one who’s logically sound.” Zhan Feng clapped his hand in agreement. Then, he loudly said, “How about this. Since the four of you are the masters of this Misty Peak, of the ten slots, four will be given to you.”

“As for the other six, naturally, they will be given to the strongest people in this place. And, in terms of who’s the strongest, I’m sure no one here believes they can defeat the people from my Immortal Execution Archipelago, right?” As Zhan Feng spoke, he cast his lightly squinted eyes at the people there. However, they contained clear threatening intents.

“This…” At that instant, everyone truly dared not to oppose his words. They never would have thought that a single sentence from him would

immediately kill off all of their chances.

Moreover, the three rank five Martial Lords at that place were people from the Misty Peak and Immortal Execution Archipelago. If there were anyone who dared to go against their word... the outcome could be imagined. So, even though blazing fury was ignited within the crowd's hearts, they all lowered their heads and said nothing, silently agreeing to Zhan Feng's intentions.

"You all..." Seeing Zhan Feng lock in the ten slots with a few words—also completely dismissing Chu Feng in the process—Chun Wu's face reddened with anger. She initially wanted to say something more, but...

"Senior Chun Wu, it's fine. After entering the Temple of Reproduction, it would be hard to avoid a battle. With my strength, even if I come it will be useless. Rather than taking away a position, it's better for you to represent me and enter instead," Chu Feng said hiddenly via mental messaging.

Seeing Chu Feng, who wore a light smile on his face and lacked the slightest change in emotion, Chun Wu swallowed back the words in her mouth, then sent a mental message back, saying, "Junior Wuqing, don't worry. I will definitely help you get the Martial marking Immortal Lotus."

"Hoh. Senior Chun Wu, Senior Qiu Zhu, thank you for fighting for my sake. I, Wuqing, have remembered the favour today.

"However, dangers exists in that Temple of Reproduction. If you believe me, do not be the first to run out upon seeing large amounts of Martial Markings. Don't fight for any opportunities either." Chu Feng hiddenly sent mental messages, but only to Qiu Zhu and Chun Wu.

After hearing Chu Feng's messages, the two of them both nodded their heads. Qiu Zhu also put away the Sealing Spirit Formation she laid. When things had developed to that point, she could only choose to compromise.

Afterwards, the four beauties of the Misty Peak, as well as six people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago—including Murong Wan, Ya Fei, and Zhan Feng—all entered the Temple of Reproduction. After the

tenth person entered, the entrance of the temple indeed instantly closed, as though it had never appeared. Once again, that area was submerged by golden mist.

"Ahh, what has the world come to? This Zhan Feng is simply too domineering.

"Junior Wuqing, we truly cry out injustice in your place! This place was clearly discovered by you first. How could they be the ones to enter and obtain benefits?"

After the entrance to the Temple of Reproduction closed, many people who disbelieved that Chu Feng was the person who opened the temple now shamelessly mourned for Chu Feng.

"Actually, this is fine. Those people have left, so in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, the number of many powerful contenders have decreased. It will also be a bit easier for us to capture Martial Markings."

"That's right. Junior Wuqing, do you want to travel alongside us?"

Gao Xiong and the others even invited Chu Feng to go with them; however, Chu Feng could tell that they were not sincere. They were only showing sympathy on the surface.

Chu Feng didn't even bother speaking to those who shifted their allegiance according to power only. So, he returned a smile, then paid no more attention to them. He put their actions today all into his heart. Those people will eternally never become Chu Feng's friend.

"Since it's like this, Junior Wuqing, let us meet in the future!" Seeing that, Gao Xiong and the others left one after the other, and with only a short moment, of the originally rowdy border region, only Chu Feng himself remained.

However, after everyone left, Chu Feng wore a light smile on his face and came up to the already closed entrance, saying with a faint smile, "You shameless people. Do you truly think you can kick me away just like that? I will immediately let you know who will be the greatest beneficiary in this Temple of Reproduction."

Chapter 686: Horrifying Huge Face

hmm Chu Feng waved his hands about when he spoke, and laid again, another Opening Spirit Formation. In comparison to the one he and Chun Wu joined hands to lay, this one was a lot simpler. So, with only an instant of work, Chu Feng had finished.

Shortly after, with a light yell, “Open!”, layers of golden light were uprooted, ultimately becoming a small-scale Spirit Formation door.

Although only one person could fit through that door, above it two big words were similarly written: “Temple of Reproduction”.

After the door appeared, there wasn’t even an iota of change on Chu Feng’s face. However, his smile became just the slightest bit more dazzling.

The reason why he did not fight before, and allowed Zhan Feng and their shameless group of people to kick him, the one who performed such a meritorious deed, away was because from the start, Chu Feng knew there were two doors to the Temple of Reproduction.

The first was the one that allowed ten people to pass. That was indeed the entrance to the Temple of Reproduction. However, one would need to experience some obstructions and tests before finally obtaining the harvest.

As for the second door, it too led to the Temple of Reproduction, but the only difference from the first door was that one’s harvests would be even greater after entering its door. It was the true shortcut to the Temple of Reproduction. However, it allowed only one person to pass through—the person who could see through the indication within the pillar of light, the person who was truly fated for the Temple of Reproduction.

With a light smile, Chu Feng stepped in. Immediately after doing so, the Spirit formation door vanished.

At the same time, Chu Feng’s line of sight was fuzzy. He had already entered into another space, but when he saw everything in his

surroundings clearly, even he couldn't help retracting his pupils and becoming dumbfounded. In his eyes, a shocked expression emerged.

At that very instant, Chu Feng was located within a mountain and sea of corpses. White bones stretching out forever spread to the ends of his sight beneath his feet. Some were lain flat, some stacked to form tall hills, and some even entered the clouds.

There were too many corpses in this place. So much it surpassed one's imagination. However, something that could be ascertained was that none of them was a human corpse. Their shapes were very peculiar, and could be confirmed to be some sort of beast's.

But some corpses were unimaginably enormous, akin to a huge peak lying on the earth. Their large sizes made Chu Feng associate them with the figure he saw before deep in the golden mist—the horrifying humanoid organism.

Most importantly, corpses of the same huge sizes were innumerous as well. Only the heavens knew how many there were at this place. Even Chu Feng could not count them all.

Other than the corpses on the ground, however, strange dark clouds covered the sky. The reason why these dark clouds were called strange was because they were clearly black, yet golden light seeped through them. Regardless, this world, no matter the location, had an indescribable oppressive atmosphere.

"What place is this? Why are there so many bones? What exactly happened here?" Chu Feng was stunned. With his sharp Spirit power, he could determine how genuine the bones were. At least, with his current strength, all the bones were from actual existences.

"Ahh, it is truly a shame. A devastating huge battle had actually occurred here and so many organisms were sent to their deaths, but regretfully, their Source Energy was all absorbed by someone. Otherwise, my cultivation would have increased greatly."

Eggy exclaimed as well. Although, at present, she was quite sorrowful that all the remains had their Source Energy sucked away, preventing her

from obtaining anything from them, her shock was greater than her regret.

From her experience, she could tell the bones at that place, when alive, were not simple existences at all. Even though their Source Energy was no more, just looking at their outer appearances, one could tell how powerful the bones' organisms were before death.

And since so many exceptional existences died in this place, one had no problem imagining what sort of horrifying battle had happened here once. The Misty Peak concealing a secret like this made Chu Feng and Eggy feel more and more that it was not a simple place. The formation from the Ancient Era indeed surpassed one's expectations.

They all said modern cultivation methods had reached the apex, but looking at it now, the cultivators during the Ancient Era seemed more impressive. At least, after entering the Eastern Sea Region, all of the things Chu Feng got in contact with relating to the Ancient Era were inconceivable.

huu~~~

Just at that moment, the strange dark clouds in the sky started to violently surge about. As it did, it actually started to transform, and in the end, became a huge face that covered the enter sky.

That huge face was odd—it kept on changing, and simply had no final state. Logically speaking, that face was very horrifying, but Chu Feng strangely had no such feeling. Instead, he felt that it was incomparably divine, akin to a god.

Weakness. An unprecedented feeling of weakness. Even within the Imperial Tomb Chu Feng had not discovered he was so weak. As he confronted the coalescence of dark clouds in the sky—the huge face that veiled the sky—Chu Feng felt himself to be akin to a speck of dust. So insignificant, so unworthy of mentioning.

But at that very instant, the pair of huge eyes on the huge face were staring at Chu Feng's small body. Moreover, it made a voice more deafening than thunder, as if it were going to pierce through the heavens.

“I never would have thought humans these days were so weak. I waited for so long to see who could see through my formation, yet it’s such a puny existence.

“Whatever, whatever. No matter what, you still saw through some truths and because of that, I must give you some reward.

“However, if one does not experience tribulations in the journey of cultivation, they are fated to fail in becoming anyone useful. I grant you temporary power, but not power that will make you superior to all. As for whether you can obtain everything in the Temple of Reproduction, that will depend on yourself.”

hmm The voice that shook the heavens fell upon him, and a strand of golden light shot down from the sky, into Chu Feng’s body.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt only a warm current flowing into his body. His own aura also rapidly rose, and instantly, reached the level of a rank three Martial Lord.

However, Chu Feng knew that his current cultivation was not real. It was temporary because at that very instant, a golden aura was surrounding his body, and his increased cultivation came from that aura. If it weren’t there, then his cultivation would turn back into a rank one Martial Lord.

However, something that made Chu Feng amazed was after obtaining the strand of golden light, the scenery around him immediately changed as well. At present, he was no longer within the endless sea of corpses, but an exquisite and ancient palace.

Chu Feng swept his gaze over it, discovering that the palace was actually sealed. Moreover, it was completely empty, containing nothing inside.

“Strange. Since he bestowed upon me power, he should want me to fight Zhan Feng and the others over the treasures in this place.

“But why did he only give me power of a rank three Martial Lord? Could it be that he knows my cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord is exactly

sufficient to fight a rank five Martial Lord? And that if I pass rank three, Zhan Feng will have no chance of defeating me?

"If that is truly so, doesn't it mean it has saw through my entirety? That's very terrifying. What exactly was it? Is it the creator of the Misty Peak or the ancient demon imprisoned in this place?"

Chu Feng was endlessly shocked. Everything just now happened too quickly and he pretty much had no chance of talking to the powerful existence before arriving at this place. But no matter what, Chu Feng knew that the sky-covering huge face definitely reached the extremities of terror.

Chapter 687: Despicable and Shameless

Thinking of the various things he discovered after arriving at the Misty Peak, Chu Feng felt an increasing degree of unfathomability lingering about this place. It truly did not seem as simple as it appeared on the surface. There was undoubtedly a secret concealed within it, unknown to any, or an event that happened yet no one knew. However, as for what exactly it was, with his current cultivation he simply could not even touch upon the matter.

hmm

Just at that moment, a strand of light suddenly appeared within the palace. Quickly following it was the appearance of a Spirit Formation gate that stood erect above the center of the large palace, in the air.

swish Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly rose into the sky, came close, and carefully observed.

Through the Spirit Formation gate, Chu Feng was able to see another vast palace. That, however, was a palace dazzling in gold and jade, filled with strange and special treasures.

Large amounts of Martial Markings were wafting about within the palace, and many oddities were placed there as well. One of them lit up Chu Feng's eyes, because it was the oddity Chu Feng painstakingly searched for yet could not find—the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus.

At that instant, Chu Feng truly was elated because on the other side of the Spirit Formation gate was the actual Temple of Reproduction. Inside, there was something he wanted.

However, just as Chu Feng was going to enter, he stopped, his gaze turning serious. Through the Spirit Formation gate, he could see a group of people from the other side of the palace entering. It was the four Misty Peak beauties as well as the six people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

At that instant, Chu Feng did not rush in because he found out even

though he stood at the other entrance to the palace and could clearly see their every action, they seemed to be unable to do the same.

So, Chu Feng felt that the Spirit Formation entrance was concealed. Rather than immediately showing himself and forcing a battle with them, fighting over the treasures, why not remain silent and observe the changes, probing out their true thoughts?

“The Temple of Reproduction is truly as the legends say. There are so many Martial Marking here, and even if we evenly split them up it would be a simple thing to exchange them for Forbidden martial skills!” At that instant, Dong Xue smiled like a flower blossoming, truly being extremely beautiful.

There were really too many Martial Markings within the Temple of Reproduction—there were more than several thousand. Even if the ten of them divided them evenly each person could still obtain several hundred. Several hundred... That greatly surpassed the record Murong Xun left behind.

As long as they thought of being able to break the record set by Murong Xun, it really made them ecstatic. After all, he was the current number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region!

And other than Martial Markings, at that place there were also many rare treasures never seen before. However, for some treasures, one could tell they were cultivation oddities with a glimpse. It had to be said that it was truly a huge treasure trove.

“Divide evenly? Lady Dong Xue, I think you’re thinking a bit too much, right?” However, just as Dong Xue thought the suffering was gone and in came the sweetness, daydreaming of the wondrous future, Zhan Feng smiled maliciously. His eyes were also filled with unkindness.

“Zhan Feng, you aren’t planning to destroy the bridge after crossing the river, right?” Xia Yu chillingly asked, as she had already seen through the intentions behind Zhan Feng’s words.

“Destroying the bridge after crossing the river? Lady Xia Yu, please don’t misunderstand. Am I, Zhan Feng, that kind of person?

“However, you’ve said it before. In the world of cultivators, benefits are paramount, and those with power are supreme. Righteousness and virtue cannot allow one to be superior to others.

“Right now, in this Temple of Reproduction, with so many benefits before our eyes, do you think we truly have a need to split them evenly with you?” As Zhan Feng spoke, he shot a glance at Ya Fei and Murong Wan.

Hearing his words, though they didn’t reply, they wore light smiles on their faces. They walked with Zhan Feng and sealed the four beauties’ path to the palace.

As for the other three from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were the same. At that instant, the six of them stood in a row and blocked the path. Their intentions were very clear: they were not preparing, in the slightest, to split the things within the Temple of Reproduction with the four Misty Peak beauties.

“Dammit. Your Immortal Execution Archipelago is really titled falsely as ‘righteous warriors who remove demons and guard the light’. I would not have thought you would do such low-class and shameless things. You invited the four of us to this place, yet push us on the side and enjoy the treasures in this place by yourselves. If this matter is known to the outside world, are you not afraid you would be laughed at by the world, and spat on for your despicable behaviors?” Qiu Zhu rebuked furiously and loudly.

“Haha! Lady Qiu Zhu, you are truly naive. Or too innocent?

“Only the ten of us know of today’s matter. Do you think anyone will believe you if you say all of that? From what I see, it would be quite decent of others to not take your words as slander.” Zhan Feng laughed loudly, reaching the extremities of shamelessness.

“God damn, so you’ve already made plans beforehand. From the start, you have never planned to share the Martial Markings in the Temple of Reproduction with us. What a disgrace it is for us to have believed you and helped you solve the barriers before,” Dong Xue reprimanded fiercely,

gritting her teeth in anger.

"Zhan Feng, you better not do things too excessively. Do not forget this is still within the territory of the Misty Peak. This Temple of Reproduction is a part of the Misty Peak as well."

"The Misty Peak invited all of you with kind hearts, allowing you to obtain the treasures of the Misty Peak. Yet now, you want them all for yourselves? Do you not fear being punished by my master, Lady Piaomiao, upon leaving this area?" Xia Yu was the smartest out of them. She immediately used Lady Piaomiao's name to try and scare Zhan Feng and the others.

"Xia Yu, who do you think you're frightening? Who doesn't know that you all are only occupying the Misty Peak, but have no control over it? If you truly did, is there a need for you to fight over this place with us? Why did you not just go and take the martial skills?

"Moreover, don't even think of using Lady Piaomiao to threaten us. Our Immortal Execution Archipelago simply doesn't fear your Misty peak. If Lady Piaomiao dares to even touch us, I guarantee in less than a month, your Misty Peak will be flattened with no one alive." Murong Wan spoke as well, her eyes full of disdain.

"Okay, okay. Why waste your breath with them? Since they are not willing to back away on their own, let us help them out." Ya Fei charmingly smiled, but her gaze was full of malevolence. She did not speak many words, and was the most direct.

"If you want to force us away, that will depend whether you have the strength or not." Qiu Zhu was enraged as well. She, as a rank five Martial Lord, was not afraid of Zhan Feng and the others.

"Haha, Lady Qiu Zhu, not to mention me joining hands with Ya Fei, I myself can defeat you alone. However, I see you have soft and weak skin, so I don't want to harm you. It'd be better if you crushed your talisman and returned on your own." Zhan Feng coldly smiled, not putting Qiu Zhu in his eyes completely.

"Then try and see," Xia Yu loudly yelled, then attacked. Although she

knew with her power, she could not defeat Zhan Feng and the others, and even when attacking she had to rely on Qiu Zhu, before so many Martial Markings and oddities, she did not want to give up just like that.

Thus, Qiu Zhu, Xia Yu, and Dong Xue moved at the same time, taking the initiative and throwing attacks at Zhan Feng and the others, wanting to find victory within risk.

But it was useless as the thought was good, but reality was cruel. The difference in both sides' strength was too large. No matter how much stronger Qiu Zhu was, she was inferior to the combination of Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, and Murong Wan. As for the other three from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were not inferior to Dong Xue and Xia Yu.

So, after only a blink, the outcome of the battle was determined. Qiu Zhu, Xia Yu, and Dong Xue were all defeated.

Chapter 688: Cleanout

After the intense battle, Qiu Zhu, Xia Yu, and Dong Xue all suffered some injuries. Everything was set; they were no longer able to fight against Zhan Feng and the others.

As if intentionally humiliating them, Zhan Feng, Ya Fei, and Murong Wan did not do anything worse, nor did they force them to use their Immortal Talismans to leave the area.

They used powerful Spirit Formation techniques to temporarily seal their cultivation. Moreover, the three of them were locked into a Spirit Formation cage. Ya Fei and the others wanted them to look as they captured Martial Markings and snatched oddities, all the while powerless to do anything.

"Zhan Feng, may you have a horrible death!" At that instant, Dong Xue was truly furious. So furious her heart and lungs could explode. At a time like this, if she had a choice, she was truly willing to just crush the Immortal Talisman and leave this place; she did not wish to receive such humiliation.

But she could do nothing, as Zhan Feng and the others had already tightly bound her. At present, she lacked even the opportunity to break the Immortal Talisman. She could do naught but gaze at Zhan Feng and the others as they, without restraint, captured Martial Markings and gathered oddities.

"Lady Dong Xue, you are truly uncivilized. How can you curse someone after your inability to beat them?

"Don't forget that the ones who attacked first were you. We were merely fairly returning blows.

"In comparison to you three greedy ones, Lady Chun Wu is a lot more interesting. You should really learn from her," Zhan Feng ridiculed. As he spoke, he looked towards Chun Wu.

At that instant, Chun Wu was still standing at the entrance of the

palace. Before, she did not participate in the battle so at present, not only was she uninjured, she wasn't bound by Zhan Feng and the others either. As if she were an observer, she only looked at everything.

"Junior Chun Wu, what are you doing? Just now, why did you not join in the battle with us? Have you forgotten the oath that the four of us will live and die together?"

Only then did Xia Yu and Dong Xue realize as they were intensely fighting, Chun Wu was actually doing nothing on the side, only watching.

Especially when they recalled that Chun Wu normally had the most explosive temper out of the four of them, yet did not even make a sound when facing Zhan Feng and the others' shameless behavior, it made Xia Yu and Dong Xue furious. They even thought that Chun Wu backed out from cowardice.

However, Chun Wu only shot them a glance as they yelled at her but did not pay them much heed. She faced Zhan Feng and the others, then kindly said, "I do not want to fight against you, nor will I fight against you. However, there is one thing here that I must obtain.

"You can ask for a condition, any condition. As long as you can give that item to me, regardless of the condition I will agree to it."

Chun Wu's attitude was very gentle, even a bit lowly. It did not match her nature at all, but in order to help Chu Feng get the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus, she forcefully suppressed the anger in her heart, and lowered her head at the people she hated the most.

"Lady Chun Wu, what are you saying? Logically speaking, this is the Misty Peak, it is your territory! Don't you just take the things within the Temple of Reproduction as you wish?" Zhan Feng first laughed, then his tone changed sharply, and said very sinisterly, "But sadly, in this place, what we say, goes. Seeing that you were quite orderly just now, we will not make things difficult for you. Just stand over there and watch. Watch how we collect the things in this place. However, you should not even think of taking anything in this place."

"You've truly gone too far!" Hearing those words, Chun Wu's

complexion finally changed greatly. However, she did not curse them but used a bodily martial skill and flew, like the wind, deeper into the palace, in the direction of the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus.

"Haha, Lady Chun Wu, you wouldn't be thinking to forcefully take it away, right? With your cultivation of a rank four Martial Lord? Hahaha..."

Seeing Chun Wu aiming to forcefully take away the oddity, not a single person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago's group stopped her. Instead, they stood still, and laughed loudly.

Only when Chun Wu passed them, flew deep into the palace, and was about to near the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus did Zhan Feng finally yell, "It seems that you also don't know what good and bad. If I don't give you a lesson, you will not follow the rules."

After speaking, Zhan Feng leaped forward and flew out like the light. He actually, with a blink, arrived above Chun Wu, and at the same time, grabbed down with his large hand, aiming for Chun Wu's hair.

"Dammit!" At that instant, Chun Wu was terrified. She, too, finally realized how big the difference in power was between her and Zhan Feng. For him to want to harm her was simply a matter of a finger flick.

At that moment, Chun Wu had already closed her eyes, preparing to receive Zhan Feng's strike, awaiting the arrival of pain.

Zhan Feng, on the other hand, laughed continuously. He was incomparably arrogant, and his unruly laughter announced his power. However, he did not have the slightest trace of caring for a woman.

Thus, although Ya Fei, Murong Wan, and the others did not like Zhan Feng's actions too much—in reality, they did not like Zhan Feng himself too much either—at that instant, they were, after all, standing on the same side. They did not want others fighting over the things at that place, so they did not interfere. With emotionless faces, they silently looked at it all.

"What is that?"

But suddenly, Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's pupils shrank and their eyes

were widened roundly because they astonishedly discovered that as Zhan Feng was about to make a move on Chun Wu, on the other side of the palace, a person actually flew out of the wall. Their speed was quick, instantly coming before Zhan Feng.

"Who?" Zhan Feng too was surprised by such a sudden change. He hurriedly raised his head to look in front of him.

"Scram." But just at that moment, the person had arrived with a great atmosphere. An iron fist with plentiful power had been thrown with a strong gale. In the instant Zhan Feng raised his head, the punch had landed on his face.

bang The fist collided, firmly hitting Zhan Feng's face. The strong power not only made him fly, it even made his entire body spin a few circles in the air before finally he stabilized himself.

At that instant, everyone could also clearly see who the person was that suddenly appeared and struck Zhan Feng back.

However, when they saw that person, the shocked expressions on their faces rose to astonishment. They exclaimed simultaneously, "It's you?!"

"Junior Wuqing?" Feeling the danger over her head resolved, Chun Wu raised her head in a daze, and only then did she find out another person standing above her. That person was Chu Feng.

"What? Surprised?

"Surprised that I, Wuqing, would appear here?" Chu Feng swept his gaze over the crowd derisively. Particularly, after meaningfully looking at Xia Yu and Dong Xue who were imprisoned within Spirit Formation, he flew down and said to Chun Wu very gratefully, "Senior Chun Wu, I thank you for everything you've done for me, Wuqing. However, right now, I ask you to back away a bit. It is not safe here."

As Chu Feng spoke, he willed a purple-coloured Spirit formation to be laid. It covered Chun Wu, then with the wave of his hand, the Spirit Formation, with Chun Wu, drifted to a corner of the palace.

At that instant, Chun Wu's beautiful face changed once again because

she astoundingly discovered that the Spirit Formation laid by Chu Feng, whose cultivation was far below hers, was unbreakable even by her. It was simply incomparably firm.

"Wuqing, what are you doing?" Finally, Ya Fei and the others gravely spoke.

They could all feel Chu Feng's change, especially the golden aura surrounding his body. It was as though it came from the Temple of Reproduction itself, making them feel unfathomable uneasiness.

And when he faced Ya Fei's question, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then his gaze became incomparably fierce, and he said, indifferently, "Cleanout!"

Chapter 689: Overwhelming Battle Strength

“Cleanout? You?

“I don’t care what methods you used to have raised your cultivation to a rank three Martial Lord, but let alone rank three, even if you’re a rank five Martial Lord, I would still be able to easily wipe you out.”

Zhan Feng who took a punch from Chu Feng felt he lost all face. His fury was overflowing, and when Chu Feng, at that instant, still spoke such arrogant words before them, he could not continue bearing it.

So, without caring what the golden aura surrounding Chu Feng’s body was, or how he arrived at that place, with a furious roar, he exploded his aura of a rank five Martial Lord and immediately threw an attack at Chu Feng.

boom Zhan Feng attacked. Though he was standing in the air and hadn’t moved, his boundless aura surged forth from his body. Instantly, it engulfed the entire palace.

At that very instant, almost everything in the palace was controlled by him. That was the terror of rank five Martial Lords. Even if they sat and guarded at one place, they could still attack cities, raid lands, and sweep through the world.

boom

However, just as the Temple of Reproduction was inundated with Zhan Feng pressure, Chu Feng’s eyes flashed and his body trembled slightly. He then burst out his aura of a rank three Martial Lord

Not only did it act the exact same way as Zhan Feng’s—instantly enveloping the entire Temple of Reproduction—Chu Feng’s aura even equally matched Zhan Feng’s, perhaps it was even slightly superior. There was a strong trend of it suppressing Zhan Feng’s aura back down.

“How can this be? This guy called Wuqing... How is his aura so

powerful? It can actually compete with Zhan Feng's?!" Seeing that, Murong Wan's alluring little mouth slightly widened. Her beautiful eyes were roundly enlarged as well, and her unendingly quivering brows exhibited her current shock.

"Miss, the golden aura surrounding Wuqing's body is very strange. It has a very similar feeling with this Temple of Reproduction. I'm sure he must have gotten something in here so that's why his current strength is so strong." The woman behind Murong Wan replied respectfully.

"Doesn't that mean this temple was truly opened by him?" When Murong Wan looked at Chu Feng, the expression in her gaze became even more complicated.

"I don't know about that, but I've heard that this Wuqing's Spirit Formation techniques are indeed very powerful. Though his cultivation isn't too high level, his courage and abilities are not to be underestimated," replied the woman, a rank four Martial Lord.

Murong Wan's brows knitted slightly upon hearing those words, and said in a low voice, "I didn't expect such a top-level character to have appeared in the Eastern Sea Region. Why has he been so unknown, and why has no one heard of his name?"

boom As they discussed, Zhan Feng had attacked once again, going straight to using a rank nine martial skill.

Rank nine martial skills were already very powerful. With the exception of Forbidden martial skills, they were the strongest attacks possible. When such a martial skill was in Zhan Feng's hands, the power displayed surpassed one's imaginations.

ji ji ji ji

Boundless Martial power was emanated, becoming countless black-coloured symbols. The shapes of the symbols were all sorts of peculiar, and they gave off strange black-coloured light. Moreover, as if they were alive, they made extremely odd ear-piercing cries.

That sound was too strange. After hearing it, it would make one's heart

feel confused. It was even hard to concentrate one's Spirit power, as their nerves would be left disturbed.

Moreover, symbols increasingly began appearing, and in the end, they were spiraling about in a circular motion, becoming an enormous black-coloured formation. It was as if the formation could destroy everything—even the air from the places it passed were crushed into fragments.

Logically speaking, a martial skill like that would be extremely horrifying. If the Temple of Reproduction didn't have a special composition, it was likely that the temple would have been thoroughly ruined just through the atmosphere of the martial skill.

"It's the rank nine martial skill, Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation! It looks like this Zhan Feng has also discovered that Wuqing is not a simple person, so he's serious now," Ya Fei said with a dazzling smile upon seeing that. She, at present, did not have the slightest plans to attack. Like an observer, she focused on watching the show.

"Hmph. It's just taking care of a mere rank three Martial Lord, yet he needs to make such a huge mess out of it. If he can't use that skill to defeat that brat Wuqing, from what I see, he should just leave my Immortal Execution Archipelago. Otherwise, he would lose all of our face." Murong Wan curled her lips. She seemed to be very dissatisfied that Zhan Feng used a method such as the "Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation" to take care of Chu Feng.

In reality, when the Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation appeared, Chu Feng knew that the martial skill was not simple.

Although it was a rank nine martial skill, it was definitely a top-quality martial skill within rank nine martial skills. Not only did it have ferocious power, it even contained a few illusory techniques. It could confuse one's nerves, and cast their minds into disarray. If a person with inferior cultivation faced that martial skill, it was like they would immediately lose their ability to resist and become ashes.

It had to be said that the Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation Zhan Feng used was truly very strong. However, since he used such a powerful skill,

it meant that Zhan Feng, in reality, feared Chu Feng's strength a lot. Otherwise, he wouldn't have immediately used such a strong attack. Very evidently, he prepared to use it to obtain victory.

But it was useless, as he still underestimated Chu Feng. The power of Chu Feng's battle prowess surpassed his imagination by a huge margin. Although he was only a rank three Martial Lord, when facing a rank five Martial Lord, Chu Feng had absolute confidence that he could win.

So, just as the Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation was going to collide into him, Chu Feng turned his wrist. The Incomplete Royal Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword, had appeared within his palm.

whoosh

When the Royal Armament appeared, who would go head to head against him? Chu Feng slashed downward with his sword. A golden blade of light containing countless symbols—as well as Martial power of the King level—struck outwards.

The two forces collided, and with a breaking sound, kacha, it actually cut Zhan Feng's Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation into two sections. The powerful rank nine martial skill, before Chu Feng, prior to being even proved useful, was destroyed just like that.

"That's the Dragon Marking Sword?" Every single person in the temple was a knowledgeable person. Seeing the Incomplete Royal Armament within Chu Feng's hand, they instantly recognized it to be Temple Head Wuya's most precious treasure, the Dragon Marking Sword.

"It seems that the rumours are true. He has actually defeated Temple Head Wuya's rank three Martial Lord disciple with the power of a rank one Martial Lord, and as a result, won the Temple Head's Dragon Marking Sword."

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago lit up their eyes. They now knew that the rumour was true. The rumour also meant that Chu Feng battle power was truly very outstanding. No wonder the current Chu Feng could slice open Zhan Feng's Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation with a slash from the Dragon Marking Sword.

One had to know that if it were an ordinary rank three Martial Lord, even with an Incomplete Royal Armament, it would be impossible for them to defeat Zhan Feng. One could even say there was no chance of victory.

Yet, at present, Chu Feng truly—with the power of a rank three Martial Lord—used the Incomplete Royal Armament and slashed Zhan Feng's rank nine martial skill, the Sky Devouring Spiraling Formation, into two. That clearly meant one thing: Chu Feng's battle prowess truly went through the roof. He was able to fight equally—even defeat—an expert two ranks above himself.

At that instant, no matter if it was Ya Fei or Murong Wan, or the three other geniuses from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, all of them frowned tightly.

They did that because if even Zhan Feng could not defeat Chu Feng, then they would likely have great troubles even if they joined hands. Chu Feng, who was only a rank three Martial Lord, had truly threatened the six of them, the peak geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chapter 690: An Unresolvable Onslaught

"It looks like you've gotten quite a bit from this Temple of Reproduction. You've actually obtained such overwhelming strength.

"However, external power will always be external—it will never be comparable to true strength cultivated by yourself. Today, I will let you know what a true expert is!"

Even though he had also witnessed Chu Feng's power, a conceited person such as Zhan Feng was naturally not willing to admit that Chu Feng's own battle prowess was truly powerful. That he, as a rank five Martial Lord, was suppressed by Chu Feng, a mere rank three Martial Lord.

So, he identified Chu Feng's current astounding power as an advantage he obtained from the Temple of Reproduction. With that, not only did it no longer seem that he was too weak. It instead made it look as if Chu Feng were the one who used evil and despicable methods, indirectly degrading him.

"Hoh. You do quite know how to console yourself. I don't need you to judge how my own strength is. Right now, my cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord is indeed bestowed by the Temple of Reproduction; however, at the moment, I am the one defeating you. What can you do to me?" Chu Feng coldly smiled, his eyes full of ridicule.

Zhan Feng was arrogant and looked down on everyone. Moreover, not only did he handle matters ruthlessly, he was even more despicable. Particularly when Chu Feng recalled that he was going to attack Chun Wu, he was enraged and had already planned to give him a good lesson.

"What can I do to you? If I was serious, I could take care of you within seconds!

"What? Do you truly think you're invincible after taking out an Incomplete Royal Armament? I'll let you know what 'There's a sky beyond the skies and people beyond the people' means. You are not the only one with an Incomplete Royal Armament."

Zhan Feng flipped his palm, then a three-meter greatsword appeared in his hand. The sword had a body of silver and flashed with radiance. Moreover, with only a glimpse, one could tell it was very heavy.

After the silver greatsword appeared, the strength of Zhan Feng's aura instantly rose as well. From his body, Martial power of the King level also faintly surged about. Without even thinking, Chu Feng already knew that the silver greatsword was an Incomplete Royal Armament as well.

"Die!"

Zhan Feng could not bear Chu Feng anymore. As he spoke, he flashed forward, and like a ghost, immediately appeared before Chu Feng.

huu The swinging of the greatsword made sounds of gales. Even the surrounding air started to twist and change, being affected by the powerful strength.

"Hmph." But no matter how much more powerful Zhan Feng's bravado was, Chu Feng still disdainfully smiled. The Dragon Marking Sword in his hand trembled lightly, then instantly became a pencil-straight golden light. With the fierce howling sound of winds, it jabbed straight towards Zhan Feng's chest.

Quick, extremely quick!

Fierce, extremely fierce!

Chu Feng did not defend. Did not resist. Even more so, did not evade, but with lightning quick speed, he threw a fatal attack towards Zhan Feng.

It was not a simple attack but a deep and profound Dragon Marking Sword Technique. Not only did it have powerful strength, it even contained innumerable changes, and was supremely profound.

"You!"

At that instant, Zhan Feng was abruptly alarmed. He was instantly frightened because Chu Feng's jab was too sudden. It completely went beyond his expectations. Moreover, it was a very cunning jab. If handled improperly, it would truly be able to kill him.

Thinking up to then, how would Zhan Feng dare to continue hesitating? Gritting his teeth, enduring the fury in his heart, he retracted his attack and coincident with that, dashed to the side, aiming to evade Chu Feng's strike.

"Naive."

However, Chu Feng seemed to have already expected Zhan Feng's action. Before the golden light pierced into Zhan Feng's chest, Chu Feng's wrist moved slightly. The Dragon Marking Sword in his hand suddenly changed again. Before one strike struck, another came. With the sound of a gale, whoosh, the Dragon Marking Sword became a golden crescent blade of light, slashing towards Zhan Feng.

In a situation like this, Zhan Feng had no choice. He could only use his greatsword to block, defending against Chu Feng's fierce attack.

whoosh whoosh

But it was useless. Before Chu Feng's attack struck again, it suddenly changed again. It did not directly collide with Zhan Feng's silver greatsword, but changed directions and stabbed at one of Zhan Feng's fatal regions.

"Damn!"

At that moment, Zhan Feng completely panicked. He never would have thought Chu Feng's actions to be so quick and his attacks to be so cunning. It was as though Chu Feng had thought of every counter to him. Chu Feng was the first to strike, which prevented Zhan Feng from obtaining any sort of momentum.

In that situation, sweat came out of Zhan Feng's face. Originally, he thought after taking out the Incomplete Royal Armament and with his cultivation of a rank five Martial Lord. He believed there would be no problem in defeating Chu Feng with his understanding of the Incomplete Royal Armament. He also thought of picking up the face he just lost.

But who expected that Chu Feng would be this powerful? Just now, after making his move, he was suppressed yet again. Moreover, he had no

chance to retaliate. The control over the fight was firmly grasped by Chu Feng.

"How is this happening? Big Brother Zhan Feng is actually being strongly bound by that Wuqing!" At that instant, one of Zhan Feng's subordinates had a face full of shock. The other two rank four Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were the same.

Murong Wan's eyes glittered as well. Her expression was unstable, and she quietly said, "What a ferocious attack. It is simply unpredictable. One cannot guess what his next move will be.

"The Dragon Marking Sword in his hands is actually being handled even better than Temple Head Wuya himself. He's beautifully displaying the power of the Incomplete Royal Armament. However, are these weapons so easily used? Wuqing has just gotten this sword, right? How exactly is he doing these things at present?"

Even Ya Fei frowned lightly. On her little alluring face, there appeared a hint of worry. She muttered to herself, "I didn't think this Wuqing would grasp methods like these. It seems like we've truly underestimated him. If this person develops in the future, will he not become a great enemy of mine?

Ya Fei and Murong Wan sank into contemplation when they saw Zhan Feng's actions. They clearly had an understanding of his strength; it could be said it was not the slightest bit weaker than them.

So, at that very moment, they were thinking if they were in Zhan Feng's place, and were the ones fighting against Chu Feng one-on-one, how would they deal with Chu Feng's fierce attacks? However, the more the two of them pondered, the tighter they furrowed their brows. Even their complexion began changing into a pale white, because the answer they had concluded to was actually "unresolvable".

"So powerful. Junior Wuqing is truly powerful. Previously, when he defeated Zhu Tianming, a rank three Martial Lord, as a rank one Martial Lord, I thought there was some luck involved. However, looking at it now, this is true strength.

“After all, this Zhan Feng is a very famous genius in the entire Eastern Sea Region. I’ve heard that he is one of the most excellent in the younger generation before the age of thirty.

“From what I see, Junior Chu Feng truly is the powerful one. If he had the same cultivation as Zhan Feng, how would he appear then? Perhaps Zhan Feng would have no way of defeating Junior Wuqing.”

Qiu Zhu similarly had a face full of shock upon witnessing such a scene. She—also as a rank five Martial Lord—discovered her own strength in the exchange between Zhan Feng and the others. There was barely any difference, however, her own was still a bit weaker.

And when even Zhan Feng could not defeat Chu Feng, she knew in her heart that if it were her, she would have even less of a chance to defeat Chu Feng. The strength he showed not only made her feel admiration, it even made her exclaim at her own inferiority.

Chapter 691: The Final Trump Card

However, Xia Yu and Dong Xue tightly furrowed their brows upon hearing Qiu Zhu's words, disquiet and fear emerging onto their faces. Wuqing's talent was too terrifying; again and again he continued to surpass their imaginations. At present, they could almost confirm that he was certainly, a true genius.

They clearly had a chance to befriend such a genius, yet they did not. Instead, due to their aim for selfish gain, they could no longer be on good terms as a result of their actions. They felt both regret and fear.

Regret—they shouldn't have treated Chu Feng in such a way because of some minuscule benefit. They wasted the chance to befriend him, and missed the chance to be good acquaintances with a rare genius.

Fear—after seeing Chu Feng's way of handling matters, they had to be fearful. If Chu Feng truly developed and clung onto past grudges because of their prior actions, a disaster would strike them sooner or later.

At that instant, Dong Xue and Xia Yu couldn't help gazing at one another. Their eyes were both inundated with strong regret, yet they could do nothing. Ultimately, they could only lightly sigh and bear the consequences for their actions.

Just as the crowd looked at Chu Feng in a new light, and were astounded by his powerful fighting strength and profound attacks—whilst exclaiming without end—Zhan Feng's forehead began permeating with perspiration from being suppressed by Chu Feng. He gasped roughly for air, seeming no longer be able to prop himself up.

In a situation like this, he too could no longer bear it. Disregarding any care for face, he turned his head back, and loudly shouted towards Ya Fei and Murong Wan, "You two, how long are you going to keep on looking for?! This child has obtained something great in this place; his power is strange and abnormal. If you keep on doing nothing and only watch on the side, after he defeats me, the ones who will be next are the two of you!"

Hearing those words, Murong Wan and Ya Fei looked at one another, and after communicating with the expressions in their eyes, they flipped their palms and both whipped out their Incomplete Royal Armament, pouncing towards Chu Feng.

At first, they truly wanted to do nothing and reap the harvests—after Zhan Feng defeat Chu Feng, they would go and collect the fruits of the Temple of Reproduction—but they did not expect Chu Feng to reach such a level of strength.

When things progressed to their current state, they could indeed no longer stand by and gazed at the sidelines. They had to quickly start and end the fight, otherwise, there would be a shift in power.

whoosh whoosh

boom boom boom

After Ya Fei entered the circle of battle, she started to throw fierce attacks at Chu Feng. The pink longsword in her hand was also an Incomplete Royal Armament, so its strength was similarly powerful.

As for Murong Wan, her Incomplete Royal Armament was relatively special. It was not in the shape of a weapon, but a zither.

The zither had the colour of emerald, as if it were forged by special jade. Circling about it was blinding light, and the zither flitted through the air, lying flat before Murong Wan.

When she strummed the strings of the zither, what came from the zither was a mellifluous and pleasant sound; however, appearing together with the sound were dark-green beams of various shapes.

The dark-green beams could turn into sharp blades, and into lightning bolts. Not only were they peculiar, they contained horrifying might. If Chu Feng were struck by them, even if he stayed alive, he would be crippled.

When Ya Fei and Murong Wan joined the fight, it had to be said that even Chu Feng felt an enormous pressure. After all, those two girls had very powerful strengths. There was absolutely no problem fighting

against them one-on-one, but if he fought against these three alone, there would be pressure.

But even so, Chu Feng had not entered a disadvantageous state. With the profound Dragon Marking Sword Techniques, Chu Feng brought defense with his attacks. After experiencing the initial pressure, he had actually gotten gradually used to the rhythm. Boldly, he strengthened his attacks, and while fighting against three alone, he was, unexpectedly, on the superior side.

"Heavens! That guy called Wuqing is too terrifying, isn't he? With his power alone, he's suppressed the three peak geniuses of my Immortal Execution Archipelago!"

Seeing the combination of Zhan Feng, Ya Fei, and Murong Wan could still not defeat Chu Feng, the three rank four Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago observing on the side were dumbfounded. They were thoroughly shocked.

As people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were also born as geniuses. Thus, they deeply knew what sort of people Ya Fei, Murong Wan, and Zhan Feng were. They were true geniuses! The strongest youths under the age of thirty in the entire Immortal Execution Archipelago!

Yet, such exceptional people were currently suppressed to such a degree by a rank three Martial Lord. How could they not be stunned? If they hadn't personally witnessed such an event, they would definitely not have believed it.

"Impossible, impossible. It must the power the Temple of Reproduction granted him! Otherwise, how could someone suppress those three with the strength of a rank three Martial Lord?!" In reality, they were not willing to believe this was true, even after personally seeing it.

As for whether Chu Feng's strength was genuine, perhaps only Ya Fei, Murong Wan, and Zhan Feng knew best, because if one were to say Chu Feng felt pressure while fighting against the three of them, then they felt even more pressure fighting against Chu Feng alone.

At present, Ya Fei's charming face was full of seriousness. She, who found difficulty in being defeated by those in the same realm, regardless of strength, did not dare to be any bit incautious and had to put forth her full strength.

As for Murong Wan, she pursed her lips, her pure face full of bitter agony. Although she held an Incomplete Royal Armament and threw attacks at Chu Feng from a distance, she was still unable to move Chu Feng. Not only were her attacks dissolved by Chu Feng again and again, he would even occasionally shoot surprise attacks at her, almost causing injury upon her.

Before, when she saw the exchange in blows between Zhan Feng and Chu Feng, despite already discovering Chu Feng's power, after all, she was only watching.

At present, she was in the very situation she had been observing. Only now did she truly experience how terrifying of an opponent Chu Feng was. Fortunately, it was currently three against one; otherwise, she would have definitely been defeated.

As for Chu Feng, even though he had occupied the advantage, he did not dare to have the slightest trace of carelessness. Rather, there was a near undetectable hint of worry.

Although, if he continued like this, he would have no problem defeating the three of them, Chu Feng knew all of them had trump cards. They were none other than the Mortal Taboo martial skill Chu Feng had personally witnessed Ya Fei using back then.

The strength of the Mortal Taboo martial skill simply exceeded one's imagination. Moreover, if Ya Fei grasped a martial skill like that, he believed Murong Wan and Zhan Feng also grasped a similar martial skill, judging by their statuses.

If one of them used a Forbidden martial skill, then Chu Feng, with the Dragon Marking Sword, could obviously not defend against it.

However, Chu Feng did not fear. After all, he still controlled three supreme Secret Skills. They became stronger along with the user

becoming stronger. Their power would be completely different as well. So, that was why Chu Feng dared to be so arrogant. It was because from the start, he had already prepared a trump card for every retaliation.

"Zhan Feng, Murong Wan, we cannot continue exhausting our strength against him. The three of us will use a Forbidden martial skill at the same time to remove this blight from our eyes." Indeed, just as Chu Feng had such thoughts, Ya Fei finally spoke.

Chapter 692: Undoubtedly Dead?

"Right, attack together. Don't hide any more cards. In a time like this, if we don't work together and remain selfish, we will allow this brat to pick up so many things for nothing.

"Right now, before us are several thousand Martial Markings! If we collect them, perhaps we can exchange them for the legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill on the Misty Peak. Are you willing to miss out on that chance?"

Zhan Feng spoke as well. His words also made Chu Feng understand why they were only planning to use Mortal Taboo martial skills now after dragging out the fight for so long.

Although they were on the same side before the face of the enemy, their interpersonal relationships were not peaceful. One could even say they were hostile with one another.

After all, besides status, as the most excellent geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they always competed in all sorts of areas. So, unavoidably, they were innate opponents with one another.

Although Mortal Taboo martial skills were powerful, enormous backlashes would always be brought about after using them. So, they had kept on delaying its usage because they didn't want to lose out on the ability to fight against one another for the treasures after defeating Chu Feng with Mortal Taboo martial skills.

That was also why Ya Fei, from the start, suggested the three of them to use Mortal Taboo martial skills at the same time. It was she knew why Zhan Feng and Murong Wan hadn't used them yet.

"Fine, we attack together. Whoever doesn't, I will have my brother fiercely give that person a lesson after leaving this place." At that instant, Murong Wan spoke as well. As she did, she had already started.

Left hand strumming the zither, right hand using hand techniques. Boundless power coalesced continuously in her body. Her aura started to

rapidly rise, and had already infinitely neared the realm of a rank six Martial Lord.

At the same time, Ya Fei's and Zhan Feng's eyes changed. Clenching a sword in their right hand, they used hand techniques with their left. Along with the chance that was occurring to Murong Wan, powerful aura started to coalesce towards their bodies as well. Layers and layers of faint radiance began to swirl about their bodies.

At that instant, Ya Fei's and Zhan Feng's power started to quickly soar as well. Moreover, it became stronger and stronger. In the end, akin to Murong Wan, they had infinitely neared the realm of a rank six Martial Lord.

"Mortal Taboo—Illusory Sword Thrust!"

Suddenly, Ya Fei shouted explosively. Quickly after, the pink longsword in her hand brimmed with light. She thrust it towards Chu Feng abruptly, and with a boom, an incomparably large white light shot out, flying straight towards Chu Feng.

The boundless white light contained power fatal to Chu Feng. Although, at present, its state was only white light, Chu Feng knew that it was really a giant sword of light. Back then, Ya Fei used this technique to defeat Yan Ruyu who had her body occupied.

"Mortal Taboo—Illusory Sword Thrust!!"

At the same time, Muong Wan and Zhan Feng shouted simultaneously. Similarly, white light shot out from their Incomplete Royal Armaments as they used the same Mortal Taboo martial skill as Ya Fei.

Their Mortal Taboo martial skills, from the start of coalescence to launch, happened in but an instant.

However, in spite of all that, Chu Feng could still see them with absolute clarity. So, at that very instant, Chu Feng had already made the counter preparations. One hand, he held his Dragon Marking Sword tightly. Even with the King level Martial power contained within the Incomplete Royal Armament, he used it to raise his fighting ability. With

the other hand, he threw out three consecutive palm strikes.

wuaoo

wuaoo

wuaoo

When the three palm strikes emerged, three huge white tigers leapt out instant. Though their shapes were blurry, their deafening roars and horrifying might showed they were the supreme Secret Skills, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was peerless in attack and unstoppable by any. So, when the three White Tiger Slaughtering Technique strikes came out, not to mention the bystanders, even the expressions of Ya Fei and the others who used a Mortal Taboo martial skill changed greatly.

“That’s... a Secret Skill!”

The three of them were shocked. They were no idiots, so they instantly determined that the attack Chu Feng sent was not a normal martial skill. From the knowledge they gasped, they immediately determined it was the legendary Secret Skill.

Secret Skills were things even more powerful than Mortal Taboo martial skills! Even they had none, yet Chu Feng did. Moreover, he even used it so naturally. How could they not be shocked?

However, being shocked was being shocked. They did not fall limp. Although Secret Skills were powerful, they knew that they had to grow alongside the master. At his current realm, with Chu Feng’s current strength, the power of Secret Skills could not be truly exhibited. It was simply inferior to their Mortal Taboo martial skill.

boom

boom

boom

Finally, three ear-splitting explosions rang out, and horrifying shock

waves swept throughout the entire palace. Even though the palace was indestructible, one could still hear creaking noises, and faint trembling.

The powerful force even shattered the air. After fragmenting, it slowly returned to normal.

“It was actually defeated?”

However, what came as a surprise to Chu Feng was that clearly his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was very powerful, but before their Mortal Taboo martial skill, it did not occupy the slightest bit of advantage, and was defeated.

It was the first time Chu Feng’s White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was defeated by the martial skill of others. It also proved how powerful Forbidden martial skills were. Indeed, they were not something that could be discussed on an equal level with normal martial skills.

Seeing the three Illusory Sword Thrusts that had neared them, despite surprised, Chu Feng was not overly shocked. Even though Illusory Sword Thrusts defeated his White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, it had still diminished a large portion of the Illusory Sword Thrusts’ power.

As a result, the current Illusory Sword Thrusts were inferior to before, but Chu Feng still had another backup—the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

hmm

Who would dare to hesitate in critical moments? Chu Feng almost took out all his power, used his full strength, to activate the Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

He knew after using the Mortal Taboo martial skill, Ya Fei’s and the others’ strength would be greatly decreased, and would possibly even lose the ability to fight temporarily. That would be his chance. If he could not stay alive up to that point, there was no point to anything.

Chu Feng could not care that much. Since the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was ineffective, he had to put all he had into the Black Tortoise Armor Technique to defend against their attacks.

BOOM A deafening, devastating explosion rang out. As expected, their Illusory Sword Thrusts struck Chu Feng.

“Junior Wuqing!”

Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu almost called out at the same time upon seeing that. They, as World Spiritists, used Spirit power to closely observe that battle. Even though Chu Feng’s location was covered by the berserk ripples, they could still feel that he was there. Chu Feng still remained.

That meant while facing such a dangerous situation, Chu Feng didn’t choose to crush the Immortal Talisman. He did not choose to leave, and actually chose to defend.

However, one had to know that those were Mortal Taboo martial skills. Three Mortal Taboo martial skills! Almost no one felt Chu Feng could truly defend against them, and no one felt that Chu Feng could survive. If he did not choose to crush the Immortal Talisman, he would undoubtedly die.

Chapter 693: Barely Victorious

At first, everyone felt Chu Feng was most definitely dead. However, along with the elapse of time, they couldn't help gradually change such thoughts.

The three Mortal Taboo martial skill were extremely powerful, and the shock waves they formed were devastating; a glimpse would make one's heart quiver from fear. However, at that instant, Chu Feng was really still in the center of the shock waves, and had really defended against three Illusory Sword Thrusts. This made everyone even more shocked.

They were Mortal Taboo martial skills. Mortal Taboo martial skills! Even though Chu Feng's Secret Skill negated a portion of the martial skills' power, they were still Mortal Taboo martial skills. Moreover, three rank five Martial Lords were clearly putting their full strength into the martial skills. How did Chu Feng block them with his physical body?

In a situation like that, everyone had to carefully observe Chu Feng's state of being through Spirit power. Only then did they discover a powerful shield surrounding Chu Feng's body. It was the shield that stopped the wild power of the Mortal Taboo martial skills.

"A Secret Skill! It's another Secret Skill! This guy actually grasps another Secret Skill! How is this possible? What sort of chance encounter did he stumble upon to procure such a harvest?"

After confirming the reason behind Chu Feng's ability to stop the attack, everyone was even more shocked. Secret Skills were so exceptional, yet Chu Feng actually grasped two of them. How were they supposed to not be shocked?

However, when others felt shock upon discovered Chu Feng grasped two Secret Skills, Ya Fei's expression was much more complicated because she knew other than the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique before, as well as the Black Tortoise Armor Technique now, Chu Feng still grasped a third Secret Skill.

When things progressed up to this point, even she had to look at Chu

Feng in a new perspective because his fighting strength and methods grasped truly surpassed her imagination. She had to look at him with serious eyes.

“Let me see how long you can persevere for.

“Ya Fei, Murong Wan, use your full strength. We must defeat this child.” Zhan Feng gnashed his teeth and shouted loudly. Then, he put forth all his power into the Illusory Sword Thrust, swearing to defeat Chu Feng.

As for Ya Fei and Muong Wan, naturally they didn’t dare to dally either. Gritting their teeth, they exhausted their final pieces of power. Risking their lives, they had to defeat Chu Feng Black Tortoise Armor Technique.

They had no choice but to act, because it was their final chance. It would never come again.

However, as time passed bit by bit, the power of the Illusory Sword Thrust had become weaker and weaker. The complexions of Ya Fei and the others were pale white. They were soaked in sweat, and had appearances akin to a dried out oil lamp. Yet, Chu Feng’s Black Tortoise Armor Technique did not break.

“Dammit! I do not accept thissss!!!”

Suddenly, Zhan Feng furiously howled with his head raised and shortly after, he actually put away the silver greatsword in his hand. At the same time, his Illusory Sword Technique disappeared and his entire body swayed a bit in the air, then fell downwards.

“Lord Zhan Feng!” Seeing that, Zhan Feng’s rank four Martial Lord companion hurriedly flew over and caught him. Otherwise, he would have crashed onto the ground. At that instant, he didn’t even have strength to stand up.

“Lady Ya Fei!”

“Miss Murong!”

Simultaneously, Ya Fei and Murong Wan were completely drained of

strength. Like Zhan Feng, they didn't even have the power to stand in the air and fell one after the other. They were caught by their companions and only then did they not fall onto the ground.

At that moment, looking back at Chu Feng, though his Black Tortoise Armor Technique was slightly fainter in colour, it was still activated.

Seeing that, Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu both had faces full of joy. They were elated. Chu Feng truly defeated three peak geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago with his own strength. If that were to spread outside, it would definitely shake the entire Eastern Sea Region.

hmm

Just at that moment, the Black Tortoise Armor Technique abruptly dissipated. Chu Feng's whole appearance finally emerged before the crowd as well.

However, he at present did not have too great of a countenance either. Similarly, his face was deathly-white, lacking the slightly hint of blood. In comparison to before, his entire person seemed a lot skinnier. He even seemed that he was about to fall at any moment.

It could be seen that despite successfully defending against their attacks, Chu Feng himself still paid an enormous price.

"Quick! Quickly go and kill this Wuqing! He no longer has any power, no ability to fight! Quickly kill him!" Seeing that, Zhan Feng rejoiced. He hurried commanded his companions to take care of Chu Feng. When things arrived at that point, he hated every fibre of Chu Feng's being.

"Go, kill him!" At the same time, Ya Fei and Murong Wan also used fatigued voices to command their servants to finish Chu Feng off.

The three rank four Martial Lords were smart people so they naturally saw that Chu Feng was completely worn out and had no strength to fight.

So, after laying a Spirit Formation, surrounding Ya Fei, Murong Wan, and Zhan Feng in it, they rushed towards Chu Feng.

"Hahaha, even your masters cannot defeat me, yet you dare to be so

insolent? You are truly looking to die!"

However, just as the three, with powerful might, were about to near Chu Feng, his eyes flashed with a cold glare, then boundless Spirit Formation power surged out of his body.

The purple-coloured Spirit Formation power came pouncing over with aggressiveness, akin to a demon that could engulf everything. In only an instant, it surrounded the three rank four Martial Lords.

"Crap, he still has such terrifying power!"

"Run, or else we will die!"

At that instant, the three of them were alarmed. Without even thinking, they quickly crushed their Immortal Talismans because if they didn't do that, they felt their lives would be gone.

After doing so, radiance flickered about their bodies, then they disappeared. They were sent back to the Misty Peak.

poof

In the instant the three of them disappeared, however, the blurry huge beast Chu Feng made from purple-coloured Spirit Formation actually disappeared like a whisper of smoke in the wind.

At that moment, Chu Feng's body fell down as well. In the end, he fiercely crashed onto the ground. But even so, a smug smile was still formed by Chu Feng's mouth.

"God damn, they were tricked, This guy used only an illusion." Seeing that, Murong Wan suddenly realized what happened and quivered in anger.

"Damn, those three cowards! They were actually frightened by something like this and left us behind. When I return, I'll take care of them." As for Zhan Feng, he gritted his teeth in immense fury. So much it overwhelmed him, causing him to spray out of a mouthful of blood.

"Junior Wuqing!" Seeing Chu Feng fall, Chun Wu was instantly terrified. However, she could do nothing as the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid was

too powerful; she could simply not break it.

hmm But just at that moment, Chu Feng willed it to disappeared, and Chun Wu finally regained her freedom. She immediately came by Chu Feng's side, and first fed him healing medicine, then worriedly asked, "Junior Wuqing, how are you? Look, I've gotten the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus."

Accepting the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus from Chun Wu's hands, Chu Feng shook his head, then said with a light smile, "Senior Chun Wu, don't panic, I'm fine. Go release Senior Qiu Zhu. Both of you have a portion of the Martial Markings in this place. Take them as you wish."

hmm Only after seeing that Chu Feng—despite languid—was fine did Chun Wu nod. She then came up to Qiu Zhu and the others, unraveling the Spirit Formation binding them.

"Junior Wuqing, luckily we have you, otherwise today those despicable people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago would have gotten their way."

"Yeah! Junior Wuqing, I didn't expect you to be that powerful! You truly obtained great things in this Temple of Reproduction."

"Ahh, 'Great favours are not repaid in words of thanks'. Junior Wuqing, we four sisters have remembered what you've done today. In the future, we will definitely pay you back."

After escaping the binding, Xia Yu and Dong Xue changed their previous sinister faces and expressed their gratitude at Chu Feng with faces full of smile. Their appearances were called benignant and close, shameless and not caring about face. It was as though they had completely forgotten how they treated Chu Feng before.

Moreover, as they were speaking, they smiled pleasantly, then rose into the air and flew deeper into the Temple of Reproduction. They wanted to capture the Martial Markings flittering about deep in as well as the various Natural Oddities.

However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's face turned cold and he

loudly yelled, “If you wish to die, then go and take one!”

Chapter 694: A Confident Smile

"You..."

When they heard those words, Dong Xue's and Xia Yu's initially joyous face changed with a whoosh. They never would have expected Chu Feng to treat them like this.

At that instant, Dong Xue and Xia Yu could really be said to be furious. They wanted to say something, but when they turned their eyes around and looked at Chu Feng, they instantly halted. Cold sweat immediately poured out from the forehead and streamed down.

At that very instant, Chu Feng's gaze was full of killing intent. It was truly not a joke. If they dared to move on their own, it was likely Chu Feng would really kill them.

Originally, when they saw Chu Feng in a feeble state, Xia Yu and Dong Xue even wanted to go against Chu Feng's words forcefully, but when they thought of Chu Feng's actions before—even three peak geniuses were defeated by Chu Feng—they had no choice but to dispel that thought.

At the end, Xia Yu and Dong Xue—extremely arrogant, conceited, and forgetting camaraderie in the face of benefits—stood blankly in the air. They didn't even move, and really didn't do anything to the Martial Markings.

"This..." Seeing that, Qiu Zhu felt sympathy. She originally wanted to say something, but was interrupted by Chun Wu by her side.

"They are getting what they deserve. Before, they treated Junior Wuqing in that manner, yet now, they even want to be the fishermen that reap the benefits. They are simply dreaming," said Chun Wu secretly as she pulled Qiu Zhu.

After hearing Chun Wu's words, then looking at Chu Feng—pale-faced, who was sitting cross-legged on the ground with his eyes now shut, resting—she also felt Chun Wu was very correct.

The situation at present was all fought for by Chu Feng alone with his

life. Before, due to how Xia Yu and Dong Xue treated Chu Feng before, they were indeed unworthy to collect the Martial markings and oddities at that place. So, she put away the words she wanted to say, and did not try to convince Chu Feng.

Afterwards, the two of them started to catch Martial Markings. Though they were very special—so special they could not be destroyed regardless of the strength in power—as long as one grasped them in their palm and lightly crushed, it would directly enter their bodies, and become markings that appeared on their arm.

Martial Markings seemed to have intelligence and their speed was extremely quick. They could even be said to be very sly and not easy to catch.

However, it was useless as there were many Martial Markings at that place. Regardless of how much faster they were or their ability to run, they were, in the end, confined within the palace. So, with Qiu Zhu's and Chun Wu's techniques, it was quite easy for them to catch the markings.

Seeing Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu taking in one Martial Marking after the other into their bodies, and with only a blink, had already captured over a dozen of Martial Markings, Dong Xue and Xia Yu were infuriated.

But even they could do nothing. Who told them to 'have eyes but could not see'? They looked at Chu Feng wrong. Because of a tiny bit of selfish benefit, they pushed Chu Feng aside.

One could say it was all because of themselves that they were standing there longing to go, but only able to watch Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu capture Martial Marking.

Regarding that point, the two of them knew and understood it clearly. So, other than admiration towards Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu, the greater emotions they felt were regret and resentment. They regretted their prior actions and were resentful of themselves for how they treated Chu Feng. They hiddenly decided if everything could restart, they would absolutely not do that. However, the only thing the world lacked was medicine for regret. Everything that had happened could not be redone.

In comparison to those two, however, Zhan Feng's, Ya Fei's, and Murong Wan's faces were fiery red. Their eyes could nearly spit out fire.

Things that originally belonged to them yet were taken away by others. How could they bear that?

"Aiyayaya, shooting through the Martial Marking Immortal Realm for so many days yet only now discovering that these Martial Markings are so easy to catch. I can't even catch them all! Hehehe..."

As if feeling their admirative and furious gazes, Chun Wu, the naughty girl, showed off smugly as she caught the Martial Markings.

When he saw that, even the root of Zhan Feng's teeth itched from anger. In the entire Temple of Reproduction, one could hear Zhan Feng's teeth gritting, making creaking sounds.

"Prepared?" Suddenly, Ya Fei's gaze changed, then looked at Zhan Feng and Murong Wan.

"Mm. Others should not even think of obtaining the things we cannot." Murong Wan and Zhan Feng both needed.

"Crap!" When Chu Feng heard those words, his shut eyes suddenly opened and he quickly cast his fierce gaze at Zhan Feng, Ya Fei, and Murong Wan.

Also at that moment, Chu Feng could see clearly that they were staring at him as well. Moreover, a light smile of mocking arose on their mouths.

Quickly after, the three of them crushed their Immortal Talismans. They became strands of light which flashed, then instantly disappeared.

"What going on? They couldn't get the provocation so they gave up on their own accord?" Seeing that, Chun Wu's face was full of confusion.

"Wait, what's that?!" But suddenly, Qiu Zhu's complexion changed greatly because she discovered within the Spirit Formation Zhan Feng and the others were in, a round disk was left behind.

On top of the round disk were countless symbols. Those symbols were connected in rows, creating an extremely complex pattern. At that

instant, the round risk was giving off blinding brilliance, and it was getting brighter and brighter. At the same time, an extremely horrifying aura emanated from it.

"Heavens! It's an Explosion Talisman! It is extremely powerful, and will likely destroy this place!" At that instant, Dong Xue and Xia Yu exclaimed at the same time, and unhesitantly crushed the Immortal Talismans in their hands. Similarly, they became strands of light and disappeared.

"Senior Chun Wu, Junior Wuqing, quickly go! That talisman isn't something we can endure. Don't think about the treasures in this place! If we do not leave right now, we will lose our lives!" Seeing that, Qiu Zhu shouted loudly as well. Quickly afterwards, she too crushed the Immortal Talisman and escaped.

"Dammit, that is truly despicable!" Chun Wu, as a World Spiritist, naturally could feel how horrifying the round disk with symbols was. It was an Explosion Talisman used to drag one down with their enemy, and was probably something created by a very powerful World Spiritist.

Judging by the power contained within, perhaps even rank eight Martial Lords would be heavily injured. Those under rank eight would have no way of defending against it, let alone herself, a mere rank four Martial Lord.

So, Chun Wu did not hesitate either. She shouted loudly at Chu Feng, "Junior Wuqing, quickly crush your Immortal Talisman! We cannot stay any longer here!" After speaking, Chun Wu became a strand of light and disappeared as well.

At that very moment, within the entire Temple of Reproduction, only Chu Feng remained. In almost an instant, everyone had escaped.

Chu Feng looked at the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus in his hand, then turned around and looked deep into the palace, at the several thousands of Martial Markings, as well as various types of Natural Oddities that would assist his cultivation greatly. Chu Feng did not choose to leave. With a light smile on his face, he said, very respectfully, "Senior, I do not know who you are, but I do not believe you will allow that

thing to destroy your Temple of Reproduction, nor do I believe you will allow that thing to kill the one who is related to you by fate."

As he spoke, Chu Feng closed his eyes, but a hint of a confident smile was still worn on his face. As though he was certain he would not die.

boom~

Just at that moment, a deafening explosion rang out. At the same time, scorching white light filled the entire Temple of Reproduction, and berserk shock waves started to wreak havoc madly.

Chapter 695: Wuqing Has Died?

The Misty Peak consisted of countless peaks; however, most of them were forbidden regions. Even people from the Misty Peak could not step into those lands without permission.

The peak that led to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was one of them.

However, at present, the peak was not a forbidden area. Rather, quite a few people had congregated at that location.

It was all because of the opening of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. The people who gathered at that place were companions of the geniuses who entered the realm—the experts of the older generation.

There was still a day to the closing of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, so many of the senior experts atop the peak sat on the ground cross-legged, resting with eyes closed. The place did seem quite serene.

However, an event that had just occurred made the entire peak lively. Everyone wore stunned expressions, some even had curiosity and confusion filled in their eyes.

It was because just now, three geniuses from the Immortal Execution Archipelago crushed their Immortal Talismans, sending them back from the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

Such a change attracted everyone's attention. One had to know that the preset time to leave the Martial Marking Immortal Realm had yet to arrive. At a time like this, it should be when they put their all into obtaining Martial Markings. Who would, for no reason at all, crush their Immortal Talisman in advance?

Besides, their faces were even full of fear, as though they were horrified by something.

So, the people inferred that they might have encountered peril so were thus forced to crush their Immortal Talismans and return. However, what sort of person could make the people from the Immortal Execution

Archipelago escape, and what sort of person dared to make a move on the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?

As they crowd were guessing this and that, very soon three more people appeared. It was even more impressive that time, as they were the three peak geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago whose name resounded throughout the Eastern Sea Region.

One of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, the granddaughter of the head of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Nine Immortals, Ya Fei.

Daughter of the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the sister of the Eastern Sea Region's number one genius, Murong Xun, Murong Wan.

As well as the son of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Second Immortal, Zhan Jiuxiao, Zhan Feng.

"Why have these three geniuses appeared as well?" At that instant, discussions arose within the people. Everyone was making guesses.

After all, when the three geniuses from before appeared, perhaps there existed some sort of reasonable excuse; though they were strong, they were not the strongest. However, at that instant, the three others were different.

It would be fair to say that those there were the strongest of those who entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Who could threaten the three of them? That truly made everyone imaginations drift about, yet no result could be concluded.

But just as the people atop the peak were throwing guesses about, something they did not anticipate at all was four more people appearing on the peak. Unexpectedly, they were the four disciples of Lady Piaomiao, the Four Seasons.

This time, the entire mountain peak exploded. What the hell was happening? Why have the several strongest people in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm come out? What exactly happened?

“Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, Murong Wan! You three are truly shameless, contemptible, and of extreme low-class! You can’t fight with fair battles, so you use despicable methods. Do you even want face?” After Chun Wu came out, she was instantly enraged. She pointed at Ya Fei and the others and cursed fiercely.

“Chun Wu, although I don’t know what you’re saying, I advise you to pay heed to your words. If you dare to slander me like that again, careful… as I might not hold myself back against you.” Ya Fei did not back down, and instead, threatened Chun Wu, as if she were the one who wronged her.

“What? You’re not admitting it? Or do you not dare? From what I see, you fear embarrassment, right?”

“Fine. You fear embarrassment, so that’s exactly what I will give you. You don’t want to let others know of the things that happened in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, so I will let them know exactly that.”

When Ya Fei and the others actually did not admit to the actions they committed, Chun Wu curled her lips, then looked at the crowd and loudly said, “Seniors. The six geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago simply reach the extremities of despicableness and shamelessness. In the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, for fighting over benefits, they can be said to have used up all possible loathsome methods…”

After that, Chun Wu detailedly told—especially everything that happened within the Temple of Reproduction—the crowd about the matters that happened within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

“Huaa~~~~~~”

And after Chun Wu finished narrating, the people on scene were simply so shocked that they couldn’t be more shocked. Putting aside the things Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, Murong Wan, and the others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago did, a small character like Wuqing not only opened the Temple of Reproduction from the legends, he even defeated—with his own strength—the three peak geniuses from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That was simply unimaginable.

“That isn’t true, is it? How is that possible?”

“Yeah! Even if that Wuqing brat obtained benefits in the Temple of Reproduction, he only has the cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord. How could he defeat Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, and Murong Wan?” Due to the fact that it was too inconceivable, many people did not easily believe Chun Wu’s words, and expressed doubt.

“Chun Wu, although I don’t know how we offended you, do you not feel ashamed by ‘spewing out lies like a river flowing’, and ‘spraying blood upon a person and calling it murder’?

“I admit, we indeed entered the Temple of Reproduction at the same time as you, but the things you said are simply not true.” Ya Fei firmly denied the charges, not admitting to anything. How could she possibly admit to the actions performed in the Temple of Reproduction?

“Yeah! Lady Chun Wu, you have such a beautiful appearance, but I didn’t expect your heart to be akin to vipers and scorpions. That Temple of Reproduction clearly exploded on its own. How could you frame us and say it was we who did something?” Zhan Feng refuted as well.

“Hmph. You can argue quite well. Indeed, all of you are shameless.”

Chun Wu’s face reddened from anger. The six of them would absolutely deny the accusations, and the words the four of them said might not be believed by outsiders. If they did not admit anything no matter what, she truly could do nothing to them.

However, she, who originally had the chance to obtain large amounts of Martial Markings, because of Ya Fei and the others’ actions, lost such a rare chance. Naturally, she was very bitter. So, even if they were not willing to admit it, she had to uncover everything.

“Junior Chun Wu, don’t argue anymore. Up until now, Junior Wuqing still hasn’t come out yet!” But just at that moment, Qiu Zhu secretly pulled Chun Wu’s skirt.

“What? Junior Wuqing hasn’t come out yet?!” Hearing those words, Chun Wu was instantly shocked. Her originally flush-red face

immediately turned pale. Especially when she was looking around her, and even sent out her Spirit power to scan the entire mountain peak, yet could not even find Chu Feng's shadow, she was terrified there and then.

Because it meant that Chu Feng hadn't been able to escape the Temple of Reproduction. At that very instant, he was very possibly buried within.

"Dammit." Only after being shocked for quite a while did Chun Wu react. She pointed at Ya Fei and the others and cursed, "If anything happens to Junior Wuqing, I will not be done with you." After speaking, Chun Wu rose into the sky, and flew down the peak.

"Junior Chun Wu, wait for me!" Seeing that Qiu Zhu hurriedly followed.

"Hmph. Has he died? Well deserved!"

At that instant, Xia Yu and Dong Xue gazed at one another. Not only was there not the slightest trace of worry or panic on their faces, they even felt hiddenly refreshed. They, who had been in a poor relationship with Chu Feng, truly wished Chu Feng died in the Temple of Reproduction. With that, not only could the hatred in their hearts be resolved, they would have even removed a potential great enemy.

But being hiddenly refreshed was being hiddenly refreshed. They still had to put on an act on the surface, so after knowing that Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu went for Lady Piaomiao for help, they did not stop and also leaped, chasing after them.

Chapter 696: Reward

"It looks like that Wuqing is a person who wants money but not life. He actually dares to arrogantly think that he can defend against my Explosion Talisman. It was something my grandfather spent a whole month to successfully create. Even a rank eight Martial Lord cannot defend against it, let alone him," muttered Ya Fei quietly. Her face was full of complacency.

"He is indeed a genius, but sadly, he has lost the big things due to aiming for the small." In comparison to Ya Fei's complacency, however, Murong Wan lightly sighed. Though she was defeated by Chu Feng's hands as well, and was very furious that Chu Feng took away everything that originally belonged to them, she had to admit that Chu Feng was truly very powerful. She had already looked at Chu Feng differently.

"Genius? Pah! If he didn't rely on the benefits obtained in the Temple of Reproduction, he is nothing!" However, Zhan Feng who hated Chu Feng immensely did not completely agree with Murong Wan thoughts.

"Hoh. Whether he is a genius or not, I'm sure you know best, right?" Ya Fei lightly smiled, and when she looked at Zhan Feng, her eyes were filled with complicated emotions. Although she too did not like Chu Feng all that much, she agreed very much with Murong Wan's perspective.

"Hmph." Hearing that, Zhan Feng coldly snorted and said no more, because he did know best regarding Chu Feng's strength. Previously, the reason why he emphasized Chu Feng's power was bestowed by the Temple of Reproduction was only for giving himself some face, and because he was bitter that he lost to Chu Feng.

The others could not hear their discussion, and at that very instant, everyone was focused on discussing the things regarding the Temple of Reproduction. Even though they did not believe the matter of Chu Feng defeating the three peak geniuses, they were endlessly curious about the appearance of the Temple of Reproduction.

Because it meant more and more that the Misty Peak was not simple.

There were actually so many Martial Marking within the Temple of Reproduction! If there were truly someone who could obtain all of them, would they not have the chance to exchange them for the fabled Earthen Taboo martial skill? An Earthen Taboo martial skill was something that did not even appear in the entire Eastern Sea Region!

But sadly, the Temple of Reproduction seemed to intentionally forbid people from taking the Martial Marking—it self-destructed. It almost buried the peak geniuses within, unwittingly making the senior experts feel regret.

After all, Earthen Taboo martial skills were that outstanding. No matter who were to obtain it, it would be a great thing to the Eastern Sea Region.

However, how would they know that the Temple of Reproduction self-destructing was only a lie. The real thing that happened was the exact words Chun Wu said.

At the same time, Chun Wu and the others had arrived at Lady Piaomiao's residence.

It was a large palace, but it seemed like another world within the large palace. Above the palace was a vast blue sky, and even white clouds drifted about.

The surroundings of the palace was a beautiful scenery. Not only was there wind blowing the trees, one could even see a few small animals leaping out suddenly from bushes and leaves as well as hear the cry of birds and the growling of beasts.

As for Lady Piaomiao, she was standing within such a strange place. When she did so, she did not seem like an ordinary person, but more like a goddess.

"Xia Yu, Dong Xue.

"Are Qiu Zhu and Chun Wu's words true?" Lady Piaomiao asked calmly after hearing Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu's narration.

"Master, it is absolutely true. Please save Junior Wuqing." Xia Yu and Dong Xue were no fools; would they dare to lie in front of their immensely

powerful master? Not only did they not lie, they were even incomparably false and spoke for Chu Feng's sake.

"Master, Junior Wuqing is in his current state because he saved us. You must save him!" Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu requested as well.

"That's right. Master, there are also the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago! They dare to run rampant in the Misty Peak... You must give them a good lesson!" Chun Wu added fiercely shortly after.

But at that instant, Lady Piaomiao was emotionless. She indifferently said, "I am no more than the guardian of the Misty Peak. Everything in this place is only formations. The operation of formations is not something I can interfere in, let alone Wuqing being locked within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. I cannot help him.

"As for the matters regarding Ya Fei and the others, just keep them in your mind. Do not mention them again to outsiders, or else if they don't believe it, they will feel you are spouting defamations. It will then also have an effect on the Misty Peak.

"Do not forget that the four of you are my successors. Like myself, all of you represent the Misty Peak. You must be cautious while handling matters, and do not be an object of derision."

"But Master, are we truly just going to leave Junior Wuqing and not care about him? He did this for the sake of saving us!" Chun Wu was very bitter. She could ignore Ya Fei and the others, but she could not bear Chu Feng dying for nothing.

"It's not that I don't want to save him, but I am really powerless to do so." Lady Piaomiao shook her head, and at the same time, actually let out a hint of a sigh. It was a very rare emotion she showed.

Seeing that, all of them remained silent because they knew their master truly could not save Chu Feng, otherwise she would not be like this.

So, in the end, with bitterness and ten thousand sorrows they left because all of them thought Chu Feng had very possibly died.

Of course, the ones truly sad were only Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu—Xia Yu

and Dong Xue were merely acting on the surface. One did not even need to mention how happy they were in their hearts.

However, Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu still carried a trace of hope in their hearts. So, they kept on waiting—waiting for Chu Feng's appearance atop the peak. But reality conflicted with their hopes, as with the passing of time, more and more people started to crush their Immortal Talismans, which sent them back to the mountain peak.

But when the ninety-ninth person appeared, when the ten-day limit had passed, Chu Feng still had yet to appear.

That result made the hopes of Chun Wu, Qiu Zhu, Jiang Wanshi, and even Qiushui Fuyan turn into ashes, because it meant Chu Feng truly encountered an unexpected circumstance.

However, as everyone felt that Chu Feng had died within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, another scene was occurring at that moment.

Though, to be more precise, it was not the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, because his current location was within a peculiar world with bones littering the land and the sky full of dark clouds.

Chu Feng was standing at such a place. He felt himself in a daze, and a long time seemed to have passed. At that instant, he had recovered his awareness, but discovered he was no longer within the Temple of Reproduction.

Yet, the confident smile on his face still remained because he knew he did not die. He knew he had made the correct guess—the mysterious and powerful existence indeed would not let him die.

huu Just at that moment, howling winds rang in the sky, and the mystical huge face full of majesty appeared once again.

When the gaze descended from the sky and focused upon Chu Feng's body, the voice that was sufficient to pierce through the heavens rang out once again, "You are very courageous, and also very intelligent. But regretfully, you did not thoroughly defeat your opponent, causing you to nearly die.

“As a result, I cannot give everything in the Temple of Reproduction to you; however, the reward I give you here should be ample.”

hmm As it spoke, a beam of light came down from the sky, and like before, shot straight into Chu Feng, merging into his body.

Chapter 697: Shocking Everyone

No one on the Misty Peak knew of the things Chu Feng experienced within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. All of them believed Chu Feng had already died.

Though Chu Feng's death made a few people grieved, a large portion of the people were not concerned with the matter because another gate of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm had opened—the entrance to exchange Martial Markings for martial skills.

At that very instant, many people had already entered in a stream to exchange their marks for martial skills. When a person entered, a number would appear on the entrance's Spirit Formation gate. The number represented the amount of Martial Markings the person obtained. As for what sort of martial skill was obtained, this would not appear.

"Waa, seventy Martial Markings! As expected of Murong Xun's younger sister. Truly, 'like brother, like sister'." After Murong Wan entered, the number "seventy" appeared. No matter male, female, old, or young, all of the people on top of the peak let out exclamations.

In comparison to the number of Martial Markings from others, seventy Martial Markings was definitely an impressive number. Although to Zhan Feng's ninety Martial Markings from before, it was quite a bit inferior, it was extremely exceptional to the people on the peak.

"Lady Murong, not bad! You've actually gotten seventy Martial Markings! Quite a bountiful harvest, huh? You should have obtained quite a decent rank nine martial skill, right?" After Murong Wan walked out of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Zhan Feng smugly smiled.

"Zhan Feng, don't be so complacent. If you didn't take all of your subordinates' portion, could you capture ninety Martial Markings? Can you capture so many alone?

"Back then, my second brother did not rely on anybody, nor did he pocket away his companions' portion. He relied on himself to capture a hundred twenty Martial Markings. In comparison to him, you are very far

away," Murong Wan said in a very derisive manner.

Zhan Feng's complexion was very unsightly upon hearing those words, because as Murong Wan said, the reason he had his achievement of ninety Martial Markings was because he did not equally divide Martial Markings with his subordinates, and indeed monopolized a large portion for himself. Otherwise, it'd be impossible for him to have such a number.

"So what? The winners are declared kings and the losers are made thieves. The one in first place in this Martial Marking Immortal Realm is me, not you." Seeing his actions exposed, Zhan Feng denied nothing and just bluntly admitted it. Since he was also a peak genius of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, from the bottom of his heart, he did not fear Murong Wan.

"Hmph. Shameless person." Murong Wan coldly snorted and paid attention to him no longer. Although they were both from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, she had always felt disgusted at Zhan Feng's style of doing certain things. Although she had also taken away her subordinates' Martial Markings, she definitely would not have been as excessive as Zhan Feng.

"Look! It's ninety-eight markings! It would have reached a hundred Martial Markings with just a tiny bit more!"

"Impressive, truly impressive! With just two more she could have exchanged the markings for a Mortal Taboo martial skill!"

"Ya Fei is indeed Ya Fei. No wonder she's called the strongest genius in the Immortal Execution Archipelago with the exception of Murong Xun. Looking at her today, the rumours were indeed true."

"It looks like first place in this event will belong to none other than her!"

Suddenly, bursts of yells rang out from the crowds; Ya Fei was actually able to capture ninety-eight Martial Markings.

"Haha, who just said he was first?" Seeing that, Murong Wan laughed loudly. Although she did not like Ya Fei that much, since she was her

second brother's fiancée, she did not dislike her as much as Zhan Feng. So, if she had the choice, she would rather Ya Fei be first rather than Zhan Feng.

"You..." At that instant, Zhan Feng's face became ashen. He had just finished boasting, yet now, he was surpassed by Ya Fei. It was tantamount to being slapped before the crowd, making him embarrassed in public.

Afterwards, the others entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm in succession. Apart from the three peak geniuses from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue had obtained quite some achievements.

Xia Yu and Dong Xue both captured thirty-five Martial Markings. Although this was not something that could be compared on the same level as Ya Fei and the others, it was relatively decent.

As for Qiu Zhu, she had captured seventy Martial Markings. The reason she had more than Xia Yu and Dong Xue was because both of them, in order so she wouldn't lose to Ya Fei, intentionally gave more to Qiu Zhu. In reality, when the three of them captured Martial Markings together, Qiu Zhu was the one who put more effort. She laboured more so thus she obtained more, so it was reasonable.

But actually, the reason why Qiu Zhu had the achievement of obtaining seventy Martial Marking was more so because she collected quite a few within the Temple of Reproduction. However, even so, there was still a very large distance between her and Ya Fei.

After all, Xia Yu and Dong Xue weren't as selfless as Ya Fei's subordinates, who gave their portion of Martial Markings all to Qiu Zhu.

"Junior Chun Wu, people cannot revive after death. I feel very sorrowful at Junior Wuqing's death, but you must be stronger," Qiu Zhu advised Chun Wu after coming out of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

At that instant, actually, everyone's gazes were cast towards Chun Wu. After assuming Chu Feng had passed away, Chun Wu was very saddened. Tears constantly appeared streaming down on her face, and even her eyes swelled from the sobbing. This made her feel disinterest towards the most

important section of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

At present, everyone who had entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm to capture Martial Markings already exchanged martial skills belonging to themselves. Only Chun Wu herself had not entered yet.

"Chun Wu, go ahead." Just at that moment, Lady Piaomiao spoke.

The heartbroken Chun Wu, though silent, took one step after the other into the Martial Marking Immortal Realm for exchanging martial skills.

"Heavens! This..."

In the instant Chun Wu stepped into that place, however, everyone's expression changed greatly. Even surprise appeared on Lady Piaomiao's visage.

Because at that very instant, the number appearing at the Spirit Formation entrance was "one hundred and eight"!

"Heavens! It's a hundred and eight Martial Markings! There's only a difference of twelve markings to the record Murong Xun maintained!"

"Impressive. We thought the situation had already be set, but in the end, the most impressive one is actually Lady Chun Wu. A hundred and eight Martial Markings! That should already be enough for a Mortal Taboo martial skill, right?"

The originally tranquil mountain peak boiled up in excitement again. No matter who, they did not expect Chun Wu to give them such a great surprise. A hundred and eight markings! That was really too surprising. To know, in comparison to Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, Murong Wan, Qiu Zhu, and the others, Chun Wu was an entire level below them! She was only a rank four Martial Lord!

At that instant, the others and even Ya Fei had faces full of astonishment. No matter what, she would not have thought in the end, she was defeated by Chun Wu, a rank four Martial Lord, even though Qiu Zhu did not surpass her, and Zhan Feng was inferior to her!

In reality, in comparison to Ya Fei and the others, Xia Yu and Dong Xue

were more shocked because they had personally saw Chun Wu only capturing around a dozen Martial Markings within the Temple of Reproduction. Logically speaking, she shouldn't have so many Martial Markings. What exactly was going on?

Chapter 698: Eighth Level of the Heaven Realm

At that instant, the entire mountain peak burst out into discussion. No one ever expected, in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm that occurred once every six years, Chun Wu would be the one who obtained the best result.

In reality, even on the face of the pinnacle character, Lady Piaomiao, there appeared a rare faint smile. From that, it could be seen that she was extremely happy.

After all, the Misty Peak was her territory. She, as her master, naturally felt proud that her own disciple could attain the result of first place.

Under the countless admirative gazes, Chun Wu quickly walked out. Clearly, with the hundred and eight Martial Markings, she was able to secure a Mortal Taboo martial skill. On her face, however, there were not many joyous expressions.

“Junior Chun Wu, what is this? How did you gather so many Martial Markings?”

“Yeah! Junior Chun Wu, where did you get so many Martial Markings?” Seeing Chun Wu walk out, Xia Yu and Dong Xue immediately surrounded her, pulled Chun Wu to the side, and asked her questions.

“Hoh? Curious?” Chun Wu raised her head, and with a very disdainful gaze, she swept her eyes over Xia Yu and Dong Xue, then said, mockingly, and with a smile, “I don’t mind telling you. Back then, after I walked away with Junior Wuqing, I did not personally go capture a single Martial Marking. Other than the eighteen Martial Markings I caught myself within the Temple of Reproduction, of the ninety other Martial markings I have, eighty-eight were caught by Junior Wuqing alone, and he gave them to me.

“Perhaps you won’t believe me when I say it like this, but I can tell you that Junior Wuqing did indeed discover a new method to search for

Martial Markings. The method is completely unique, and its efficiency rate is extremely high. However, only he can use that method.

"At the beginning, he wanted to share the Martial Markings with us four sisters. However, not only did you distrust him, you even spoke and insulted him, driving him away of our group.

"The Mortal Taboo I've obtained right now is all because of Junior Wuqing. Back then, if you had believed him, you would have also had the harvests I had. But you did not. So, no need to admire me, nor envy me, because you deserve it." Chun Wu's words were spoken very loudly. She intentionally let everyone hear them, and intentionally embarrassed her two seniors.

Although they were sisters who had lived together for many years, in the past few days, she had clearly seen their true appearance and learnt what sort of people they were.

"What? Lady Chun Wu's harvests were actually all given by this person called Wuqing?"

Indeed, after hearing Chun Wu's words, the people on scene exclaimed endlessly. So it turned out that Chun Wu had such an achievement because it was bestowed upon her by a person called Wuqing.

And similarly, the Temple of Reproduction seemed to have been discovered by Wuqing as well. Associating that thought with the various things Wuqing did before, all of them couldn't help reexamining him. All of them felt if all of it were real, then Wuqing was truly quite an outstanding genius.

However, as long as they recollected that such a genius had already died, many people on scene involuntarily shook their heads and sighed. This was because Wuqing's death was not only his master's loss, it was even a loss for the entire Eastern Sea Region.

At that instant, Xia Yu and Dong Xue not only turned ashen, even their intestines greened from regret. It had to be said that Chun Wu's words struck them heavily, and deeply pricked their minds.

All of the things Chu Feng said before was true? He was truly able to capture Martial Markings with his own strength?

They initially doubted, but upon a careful thought, Chun Wu seemed to not have such an ability, so she could not possibly capture so many Martial Markings on her own. Which means only Wuqing was left. So, even if they didn't want to believe, they had no choice.

And once they believed, they had an urge to fiercely slap themselves two times. They hated themselves for not believing Chu Feng from the start, and harmed themselves by losing such a great chance.

Chu Feng did not know Xia Yu's and Dong Xue's regret because at present, he had already left the strange world, and returned within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

The current realm was abnormally quiet. Even the sandy winds disappeared. It was strangely silently, making one uneasy.

Chu Feng was standing on top of a high dirt-yellow hill with a face full of elation. In the instant the beam of light entered his body, his cultivation was raised. He actually rose to be a rank two Martial Lord directly from a rank one Martial Lord.

Chu Feng removed the power of the three lightning, and discovered his actual cultivation indeed became the eighth level of the Heaven realm from the seventh level of the Heaven realm. That cultivation was actually given by the beam of light.

The thing that made Chu Feng exclaim the most was the power of the existence. It could just casually give a person cultivation? What sort of existence was it?

"Haha, Chu Feng, I've broke through, my cultivation has broken through!" Just at that moment, another thing Chu Feng didn't expect was Eggy cheerfully yelling.

And when Chu Feng examined her cultivation, though he did not expect much, he was really shocked. Eggy's cultivation had actually entered the realm of Martial Lords! A rank one Martial Lord, Eggy was now a rank one

Martial Lord!

"Eggy, your cultivation has increased as well?" Chu Feng was extremely shocked. His own power strengthening was one thing, but Eggy, whose cultivation only increased through Source Energy, gained more power as well. Moreover, she rose quite a bit higher than him—directly becoming a rank one Martial Lord. That was simply unbelievable.

"Heh, it seems that the person there is truly not simple. Although it didn't help you too greatly, helping me is equal to helping you as well! My rank one Martial Lord cultivation is a lot more powerful than your rank two Martial Lord cultivation! Heh..." A flower could even bloom when a smile appeared on Eggy's sweet little face. There was no need to even mention how beautiful she was, and it could be seen that she was truly ecstatic.

Since they hadn't found a powerful Source Energy in a very long time, her cultivation had stagnated for a long time, not making progress at all. Today, she actually immediately became a rank one Martial Lord. It could even be said to be a leap in nature. Even if she didn't want to happy she could not.

"It is indeed not simple. Even you, who's in my body, was discovered by it. I wonder if it also discovered the Divine Lightning in my dantian," Chu Feng said hiddenly in his heart while looking up.

"That may not be so. Although I'm your World Spirit and live within your Spiritual World, it isn't difficult for people with absolute power to see through your Spiritual World.

"However, the Divine Lightning in your dantian is different. It is intentionally concealing itself, and the power it contains is similarly unfathomably deep. It's likely that even the existence in this place isn't able to discover it, right?" Eggy explained.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, expressing his agreement. The Divine Lightning in his body was indeed mysterious and immeasurable. Even he, at present, could not ascertain what exactly the Divine Lightning was, let alone others?

“Okay, Chu Feng. Quickly look at your arm. That existence said he would give you advantages, so I’m guessing other than granting you cultivation, something that it will not lack is Martial Markings,” Eggy reminded.

Chapter 699: Wuqing Arriving

"Right, how did I even forget about that?"

Chu Feng came to a realization after hearing Eggy's reminder. He hurriedly pulled back one of his sleeves, yet the result from such a seemingly insignificant action made even Chu Feng himself astounded. Martial Markings were densely imprinted all over his left arm. There were actually three thousand markings.

But that wasn't all... After Chu Feng pulled back his other sleeve, he became thoroughly dumbfounded because on his other arm, similarly, Martial Markings were imprinted densely upon it. Like before, there were three thousand.

"Six thousand Martial Markings! My gods! Chu Feng, you're rich!" Seeing those Martial Markings, even Eggy couldn't help exclaiming out loud. Obviously, the queen, who possessed vast experience, was shocked as well.

A hundred Martial Markings was already enough for a Mortal Taboo martial skill. What sort of martial skill, then, could he exchange six thousand Martial Markings for?

At present, on top of the mountain peak, no one knew that Chu Feng hadn't died yet and even obtained six thousand Martial Markings.

They only knew after Chun Wu walked out of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm after exchanging the markings for a Mortal Taboo martial skill, the event that happened only once per six years had completed.

So, at that instant, the final conclusion had arrived. It was for the master of the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao, to give out rewards for the first place.

Within the Misty Peak, there were countless oddities. As a result, everyone was very curious what reward Lady Piaomiao would give Chun Wu.

Seeming to understand the crowd's thoughts, she wore a light smile on her face, seeming profound and unfathomable. The atmosphere of a peak character such as her was indeed extremely grandiose.

Quickly after, she lightly flung her sleeve, then a Cosmos Sack appeared in her palm.

"Chun Wu, since you've obtained first place, this is yours." As Lady Piaomiao spoke, the Cosmos Sack in her hand had automatically risen into the air, and gradually floated towards Chun Wu.

Chun Wu, the sharp and intelligent girl, instantly understood her master's intents. She had a noble status, thus it was inconvenient to show off the things she rewarded to others. Chun Wu, on the other hand, was different. If it was inconvenient for the master to show off, she could instead.

So, before the crowd's faces, Chun Wu opened the Cosmos Sack. It flashed, and instantly a colourful palm-size mushroom floated out. In the instant the mushroom appeared, the entire mountain peak could smell a pungent fragrance. Moreover, the people who were there all felt their minds rejuvenating.

"It's the high-rank Martial Medicine, Immortal Mushroom of Martialism!" Many people revealed stunned expressions upon seeing that strange mushroom.

Martial Medicines were originally precious, so high-rank Martial Medicines reached the pinnacle of preciousness. In the entire Eastern Sea Region, they could be counted as treasures very rarely obtained. As for the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, it could be said to be the best within high-rank Martial Medicines.

The Martial power within it was not only strong, it was also very easy to absorb. Moreover, there were no backlash effects. If those under the rank of Martial Lord used it, their cultivation would increase several levels within a short amount of time; this was simply not a dream, but reality.

If one in the ninth level of the Heaven realm used it before making a breakthrough to the realm of Martial Lords, they would have a great

increase in success rate. Even if those within the Martial Lord realm consumed the medicine, it would have enormous effects.

Most importantly, one could not find the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism anywhere else. Nor was there anyone who knew how to grow them. Only the Misty Peak had them, but even within the Misty Peak, it was a very rarely seen oddity.

So, after the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism appeared, everyone was endlessly shocked. Their faces surged with longing. Even Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu, people who grew up in the Misty Peak, had faces of admiration because the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was really too precious. Even they could not enjoy their use casually.

hmm However, just at that moment, the Cosmos Sack in Chun Wu's hand glittered continuously and five more high-rank Martial Medicine—the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism—appeared.

There were six Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism. Six full Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism! At that instant, let alone the youths, even some older experts couldn't help taking in a breath of air whilst astonishment emerged onto their faces.

A single Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was already so precious, yet now, Lady Piaomiao rewarded six! It had to be said it was quite a large spending.

But as everyone was using admirative and envious gazes to look at herself, Chun Wu was not too happy because she knew those did not belong to her, but to Chu Feng.

At that very instant, within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Chu Feng was elated because he obtained six thousand Martial Markings.

"It's time to go back, and I've got to conceal my cultivation a bit."

At present, Chu Feng's cultivation was the eighth level of the Heaven realm. If he used the three lightnings, he would be a rank two Martial Lord. However, he did not want to make too big of a show, so he only used two lightnings, returning his cultivation back to a rank one Martial Lord

which he used before the crowds.

Feeling himself freely control his cultivation, and recollecting the six thousand Martial Markings on his arm, Chu Feng couldn't help smugly smile. The journey to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was truly all worth it.

BOOM

BOOM

BOOM

But just at that moment, explosions rang out from afar. The noise was as if it were the crashing of a five-thousand-kilogram boulder. The effect it had on the ground was ordinary, but it shook the earth very heavily.

At the same time, the land beneath Chu Feng's feet, along with the explosions, started to violently tremble.

One explosion. Two explosions. Three explosions. The trembling became stronger and stronger, and the explosions became louder and louder. In a situation like this, Chu Feng discovered astonishedly that an incomparably large blurred image, akin to a mountain, appeared afar. However, not only was the image moving, it was nearing. In the end, its silhouette finally appeared. Only then did Chu Feng discover it was a humanoid organism with a sickle in its left hand and a head in its right hand.

aooo

Suddenly, an ear-piercing cry rang out from the distance. Another image appeared above the earth, and like a black cloud, it shrouded the lands and was quickly moving.

Chu Feng was frightened when he raised his head to look. Over there was a huge bird. A huge bird that was unbelievably large and could cover the sky.

The huge bird's body was black, and on its body were thick lightning. Along with the flapping of its giant wings, several lightnings would strike

down as well. The areas it passed made even the sky collapse, and the ground was even taken over by the light of lightning.

At the same time, all sorts of deafening roars rang out incessantly. All sorts of grand atmospheres, all sorts of odd shapes... Huge beasts Chu Feng had never seen before appeared one another the other, and quickly took over that world.

"What place is this? Could it be that they are the demons sealed in his place?" At that instant, Chu Feng was thoroughly stupefied. He could not be certain what exactly they were, but he could be certain that any one of those organisms had the strength to easily destroy him.

Minuscule. Truly minuscule. Not only the difference in size, it was more so the difference in strength.

At that instant, Chu Feng understood. He finally knew why those who remained within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm after the ten-day limit would only have a single road to walk on—the road of death. He also finally knew why the Martial Marking Immortal Realm was so desolate and not even an inch of grass grew.

It was because this place seemed to be the land where this group of strange organisms lived. With those monsters living here, it would be strange if things could grow there.

However, the stranger thing was that the powerful organisms seemed to have no plans to attack Chu Feng, Otherwise, with their strengths, how could Chu Feng even have a chance to escape?

It wasn't hard for Chu Feng to comprehend why such a situation occurred. Very likely, it was a special order from the mysterious existence that bestowed cultivation upon him, so that was why the powerful organisms did not dare to do anything to him.

Chu Feng could already see how much those things wanted to eat him from their eyes. It could even be said they had great enmity towards him.

hmm

Although he knew the organisms wouldn't harm him, Chu Feng did not

dare to remain too long at that place. After all, it was getting late. If he continued dallying, he would lose the chance to exchange his markings for a martial skill. Thinking up to there, Chu Feng quickly crushed the Immortal Talisman in his hand, and left that place.

At the same time, atop the peak, after Chun Wu gained the rewards of being first place, the curtains to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm event had fallen as well. Although the gate to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm hadn't closed yet, the banquet had ended. So, everyone was preparing to leave.

hmm

However, just as they were preparing, a dazzling radiance appeared in the center of the mountain peak. Especially when the sun had set in the west and the sky was gradually dimming down, the radiance seemed particularly blinding. As such, it naturally attracted everyone's eyes.

When the radiance disappeared, they discovered in amazement that there was a person. It was a young man who appeared in the air.

Not only did that man have an incomparably handsome appearance, there was still a faint smile worn on his face. However, after everyone saw his appearance, not a single one was not stunned. Extreme surprise emerged onto both their faces and eyes.

They had already recognized that the person who appeared on top of the peak at that very instant was that man called Wuqing.

And while looking at the crowd's shocked gazes, the smile on Chu Feng's face became wider, and he said calmly, "My apologies, I've made all of you wait for long."

Chapter 700: Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash

"Wuqing?!"

At that instant, everybody was stunned. Especially so for Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, as well as Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others. On their faces, there was not only shock. More so, there were complex emotions.

Before, they not only believed Chu Feng had died, they even hoped Chu Feng had died. But just as they thought their wishes were granted, when they thought Chu Feng had died, he actually appeared before them in a perfect state of being. It was completely opposite to their hopes, causing to be taken aback. They were not willing to accept that fact.

"Junior Wuqing!" In comparison to Zhan Feng's group, however, Chun Wu, Qiu Zhu, Jiang Wanshi and others had faces full of elation. Especially so for Chun Wu. She didn't even dare to believe her eyes. She first firmly rubbed them, and only then did she confirm that Chu Feng returned. That Chu Feng truly did not die.

The three beauties leapt up together and almost ran up to Chu Feng at the same time. That sort of fondness could make people die from admiration.

Chun Wu was the most extreme. She grabbed Chu Feng's clothes and jumped up and down. If there weren't too many people there, her master one of them, she would have definitely just bore into Chu Feng's embrace.

"Junior Wuqing, you're fine? This is truly great! Why have you come out only after such a long time? Where exactly did you go? Don't you know we were worried?" asked Qiu Zhu and the others.

"Yeah! Look at Senior Chun Wu! Look at how she looks from crying!" Jiang Wanshi even pointed at Chun Wu's slightly swollen red and tearful eyes.

Seeing that, Chu Feng's heart soured. Without even thinking, he knew why Chun Wu was like that. It was definitely because she felt extreme

sorrow when she assumed Chu Feng had died.

That also let Chu Feng know that Chun Wu cared about him a lot. In reality, Chu Feng could see that as well. Jiang Wanshi too had cried, even Qiu Zhu should have secretly shed tears, but obviously, it was not as intense as Chun Wu, nor as evident.

But no matter what,

However, regardless of anything, Chu Feng had an understanding in his heart. He also had some sort of judgement in his mind regarding who truly cared about him, and who were only ingratiating themselves with Chu Feng.

“I am really sorry that I’ve made you all worried. The reason why I haven’t come out in such a long time is because I was always in the Temple of Reproduction,” Chu Feng said very ashamedly.

“Temple of Reproduction? But Ya Fei clearly set off an Explosion Talisman! How did you escape such a calamity?” Chun Wu was very shocked, and at the same time also very curious.

“Hoh.” Chu Feng first lightly smiled when faced with that matter, then said, “Everything in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is incomparably profound. We being in there are simply akin to ants. A few ants actually dare to want to dent unbreakable walls? To use an Explosion Talisman to destroy the Temple of Reproduction? The only thing I can say is that those people are too naive.”

Although Chu Feng did not state who used the Explosion Talisman, as he spoke, he had looked at Ya Fei and the others.

Such a gaze made Ya Fei’s initially shocked face even more twisted because she knew clearly that Chu Feng was humiliating her.

“Really? That means everything in the Temple of Reproduction did not receive any damage?” Chun Wu very happily followed up with a question.

“Of course. Don’t you see me being perfectly fine here?” said Chu Feng with a smile.

“That is really great!” Hearing everything up to that point, Chun Wu understood everything. So, as she skipped about in cheers, she even urged, “Junior Wuqing, the entrance to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm will close soon! You should quickly enter and exchange your markings for a martial skill!

“I will be holding on this first place reward for you~” Chun Wu flaunted the Cosmos Sack in her hand while speaking.

Chu Feng was quite an intelligent person so instantly he knew that it was definitely Chun Wu who obtained first place, so she received the reward for first place. However, Chun Wu knew that the number of Martial Markings Chu Feng currently had certainly surpassed hers. That was why she spoke those words.

Chu Feng did not hesitate any longer. At present, he had six thousand Martial Markings within his hands! For so many Martial Markings, he could definitely be able to exchange them for a decent martial skill. He obviously did not want to be late and waste all the markings, and especially after he experienced the horrifying power of Taboo martial skills, he wanted to get one at this place.

At the same time, when Chu Feng walked into the entrance, every single gaze on stop of the mountain peak was locked tightly on him.

If it were before, Chu Feng definitely wouldn’t have attracted such attention. Even if others were to see what sort of achievement he attained, they would not be as expectant as they were currently.

But after knowing the various things that happened within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, everyone looked at Chu Feng in another light. They felt even though that youth couldn’t be said to have peak cultivation, he grasped exceptional Spirit Formation techniques and had abilities that others did not. He was a genius.

So, right now, almost everyone were waiting and watching. They were guessing whether Chu Feng would surpass Chun Wu, and guessing if he would surpass the record left behind by Murong Xun.

Just like that, under the gaze of the crowd, Chu Feng walked towards

the entrance with pronounced steps. Every single one was so clear because the peak had reached the extremities of silence. Other than the sound of footsteps, the only other thing they could hear were their heartbeats and breathing.

Finally, Chu Feng walked in. And soon, a number appeared at the Spirit Formation entrance. However, after everyone saw that number, almost all of them were wide-eyed and dumbfounded. Many people sucked in a breath of air from being deeply frightened, and some people's feet even swayed, almost tripping from such a stimulation of emotions, and just sat onto the ground.

"6000!" That was the number that appeared at the Spirit Formation entrance after Chu Feng stepped in.

Beforehand, people had guessed countless numbers. Seventy, eighty, ninety, a hundred... Some people even felt if Chu Feng truly made gains in the Temple of Reproduction, he could very possibly surpass the record Murong Xun left behind.

However, absolutely no one expected Chu Feng to have gotten six thousand Martial Markings. Even Ya Fei and the others who experienced the Temple of Reproduction did not.

Six thousand Martial Markings. Exactly six thousand Martial Markings! It was an inconceivable number. One had to know of the people who entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, who wasn't a young genius? Who wasn't a peak genius? Any one of them had the cultivation of a Martial Lord.

However, how many people stayed in there for ten full days yet only returned with a few Martial Markings? How many people stayed there for ten days yet couldn't even capture a single Martial Marking?

But Chu Feng, a rank one Martial Lord, with his own strength, actually captured six thousand Martial Markings. That was several times more than the total the previous ninety-nine people obtained! It was really too astonishing.

"Unbelievable, truly unbelievable! This is simply a miracle!"

An old man used his trembling hand to stroke his few strands of his dry goatee. As he spoke, even his lip were trembling. Even though he was only an observer, he was excited by the number Chu Feng showed because in his perspective, it was a miracle, and he was one of the people who witnessed such a miracle.

“From what I’ve heard, Martial Markings are extremely difficult to capture. My disciple entered and joined up with several good friends, yet failed multiple times and were unable to successfully capture them.

“Even if the fabled Temple of Reproduction contains large amounts of Martial Markings, I’ve heard that you still need to capture them personally. This Wuqing has only the strength of a rank one Martial Lord. How exactly did he do it?” But other than shock, many more people were guessing—guessing how Chu Feng procured so many Martial Markings.

However, the more they guessed, the more they were astounded because they thought of many methods yet felt they could not happen. Other than if Chu Feng really did have overwhelming battle strength like Chun Wu and the others said, otherwise it would be impossible for him to have accomplished such a feat.

However, if Chun Wu’s words were all true, then Chu Feng would really be too powerful. So powerful they dared not to imagine.

Even Lady Piaomiao who was usually indifferent no longer had a calm face. Her eyes glittered unstably, complicated emotions filled within, as if she was pondering something.

And just as everyone was shocked, Chu Feng had arrived within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Although it was also the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, it was completely different from the one before.

In that place, it was akin the beginning of creation. It could be said to be pitch-black, and other than the entrance behind him, he could pretty much see nothing else.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Just at that moment, countless golden light dots shot out of Chu Feng's arms like raindrops. After the golden light dots floated in the air, it made a sharp contrast with the surrounding darkness. Not only was it bright, it was also beautiful.

Finally, the golden light dots converged into four big words and were neatly lay before Chu Feng.

Fixing his eyes upon them, even Chu Feng's gaze couldn't help brightening up and feel his heartbeat quicken—because those four big words were:

"Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash!"

Chapter 701: Created by a Martial Emperor

"Earthen Taboo martial skill!"

"It's truly an Earthen Taboo martial skill!"

"Not only did I raise my cultivation after coming into the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Eggy's cultivation was also raised into a rank one Martial Lord. Right now, I even obtained an Earthen Taboo martial skill. Truly not a wasted journey!"

Chu Feng was elated. However, if it were before, he would have definitely not have such a reaction. After all, a hundred Martial Markings could be exchanged for a Mortal Taboo martial skill, so if six thousand Martial Markings were only enough for an Earthen Taboo martial skill, that would be quite a swindle.

Before entering, both Eggy and Chu Feng felt he could obtain a Heaven Taboo martial skill, but after carefully thinking, not only did Eggy change that thought, she even flung a bucket of cold water on Chu Feng's head.

It was because she suddenly thought of something. From her understanding, Mortal Taboo martial skills could definitely only be created by peak Martial Kings. As for Earthen Taboo martial skills, only peak Martial Emperors could create them.

Although there was only a single word of difference between Mortal Taboo and Earthen Taboo, how could Martial Kings and Martial Emperors be compared on the same level?

Just their creators alone decided that the difference between Mortal Taboo and Earthen Taboo would be incomparable.

Even within ten thousand Martial Kings, there might not appear a Martial Emperor, let alone a person at the peak? The realm of Martial Emperors was a very powerful realm! Unless one had exceptional talent, or pinnacle bloodlines, or Divine Bodies, they should not even think of entering that realm. No matter how much more hardworking they were, it was impossible.

As for Heaven Taboo martial skills, they were even more impressive. Only those above the realm of Martial Emperors could create them, and as for Divine Taboo martial skill, those were true legendary items. No one even knew if the world had such a martial skill.

However, the thing worth mentioning was the Earthen Taboo martial skill would not be weaker than Secret Skills. If there was anyone in the world who successfully mastered the Earthen Taboo martial skill, then in his hands, the martial skill was about to have devastating power. Even before Secret Skills, it could hold its own up against them.

As a result, when she thought of that, Eggy felt disquieted. She was truly worried whether Chu Feng's six thousand Martial Markings was sufficient for an Earthen Taboo martial skill because they were too precious. At least, six thousand Martial Kings could not defeat a single Martial Emperor.

That worry spread to Chu Feng. After entering the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, he was very restless. He feared heavily that the six thousand Martial Markings were only enough for sixty Mortal Taboo martial skills. However, what use was there giving him so many? They were simply incomparable to a single Earthen Taboo martial skill.

But at present, Chu Feng truly obtained an Earthen Taboo martial skill. How could he not be excited? One had to know that, from what he heard, not a single person had an Earthen Taboo martial skill in the entire Eastern Sea Region. Yet, he did. How could he not be happy? How could he not be excited?

hmm Just at that moment, the golden dots in the air formed by the Martial Markings interweaved, lined up orderly, and like a golden dragon, shot into Chu Feng's forehead.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt a pricking pain in his brain, but quickly after, his eyes couldn't help light up because the cultivation method of the Firmament Slash had already entered his brain.

However, there was a special seal over the Firmament Slash. It could only exist within Chu Feng's brain. He could not write it out or teach it to

others.

Very clearly, the martial skills at that place were only bestowed to those who they belonged to. Others could not obtain them, nor could they cultivate them.

But Chu Feng did not care about that. At that moment, he was focused on reading the introduction regarding the Firmament Slash as well as its specific way of cultivation:

EARTHEN TABOO—FIRMAMENT SLASH.

CREATED BY EMPEROR FIRMAMENT AT THE AGE OF TWO THOUSAND.

CONJURING ENERGY OF THE FIRMAMENTS, GRANTING POWER TO BRING RUIN TO THE WORLD.

IT IS WORK OF THE HIGHEST QUALITY WITHIN EARTHEN TABOO MARTIAL SKILLS.

VIGOROUS BODIES ARE REQUIRED FOR THOSE WHO CULTIVATE THIS TECHNIQUE.

A BODY CONSISTING OF MARTIAL POWER OF THE KING LEVEL IS ESSENTIAL.

THOSE BELOW MARTIAL KINGS ARE FORBIDDEN FROM CULTIVATION.

IF THESE WARNINGS ARE NOT HEEDED, THERE WILL BE BACKLASH.

IF SUPERFICIAL, THERE WILL BE DISEASES NEAR INCURABLE.

IF SERIOUS, ONE'S SOUL WILL SCATTER, DEATH FALLING IMMEDIATELY UPON THEM.

"Really? The requirements are actually that high?!"

As he read, Chu Feng was stupefied. That sort of feeling was akin to the blood throughout his body boiling, feeling his entire body being ablaze. Yet, shortly after, he felt as though he was dropped into bone-piercing

chilly water. How tortuous.

After so much trouble, he finally got an Earthen Taboo martial skill that could be called legendary, yet in the end, he was actually not allowed to train in it. Could anyone even survive from such a sickening thing?

"Chu Feng, don't panic. Earthen Taboo martial skills always had extremely high requirements. Besides, this Firmament Slash is of highest quality, so its requirement should be even higher.

"However, although it cannot be cultivated by those below Martial Kings, that applies only for ordinary people. The mysterious Divine Lightning is concealed within you, so your body has always been stronger than others. Besides, your cultivation of a Martial Lord is reached by using the lightnings. You have yet to truly step into the realm of Martial Lords.

"When you do, however, enter such a realm, and obtain the fourth lightning as a result, that's when you truly comprehend the realm of Martial Lords. I'm sure at that time, your body will be indescribable with words.

"When you reach such a state, your body will then be able to endure my power. I can transfer my power to you, and in terms of your body's physical strength, even if it's not on a level of a Martial King, there will be nearly no difference. Naturally, at that time, you will be able to use this Firmament Slash," Eggy reminded.

"Is that true? You can transfer your power to me?" Chu Feng was ecstatic upon hearing those words.

He had seen Eggy's strength, and also felt her unique aura. The burst of matchless powerful strength simply made even Chu Feng envious. If he could obtain Eggy's power, Chu Feng's battle strength was obviously going to step into a completely new realm.

Seeming to know what Chu Feng was thinking, Eggy indifferently smiled, then mercilessly doused Chu Feng's excited emotions and said, "What are you thinking about? Do you think my power can be used by you? I can indeed transfer my power to you, but it will only strengthen

your physical body, not raise your battle strength.

"Of course, originally, one needed to be at least a Gold-cloak World Spiritist in order for them to use this method of transferring a World Spirit's power to them.

"But the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World are different. We can more perfectly control our power, so when you are still a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, I can transfer my power to you.

"Obviously, it also has high body requirements. If your body is too weak, even if I lower my power to the extreme, you will not be able to endure the frenzy in my power."

"Heh, I understand." Although he was fiercely dispirited, Chu Feng was still unable to control his cheerful emotions. As if to him, the power Eggy grasped was more attractive than the Firmament Slash.

As though feeling Chu Feng's emotional changes and thought process, Eggy proudly smiled and said hiddenly in her heart, "At least you know what's good for you."

Chapter 702: Conclusion

hmm Just at that moment, the entrance behind Chu Feng slightly trembled, seeming that it was about to close.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help smiling, then said, "It's time to head out."

Once Chu Feng stepped out, the entrance to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm closed in an instant. The entire mountain peak returned to its former state.

But the current peak was not quiet. In the eyes of almost everyone who looked at Chu Feng was full of strong amazement. There were even some of the same generation who looked at Chu Feng with a few bits of admiration or idolization.

Chu Feng had already anticipated such a scene. Back then, six thousand Martial Markings made even him very shocked, let alone them. Certainly, at that very moment, some people were guessing what sort of Taboo martial skill he got.

"Junior Wuqing, you're too awesome! All of the Martial Markings in the Temple of Reproduction were captured by you, right? How did you do that?" Chun Wu said after running over with a face full of joy. As she spoke, she even gave the Cosmos Sack in her hand to Chu Feng.

"Senior Chun Wu, you should keep this," Chu Feng refused with a smile.

"How can that do? This is your reward, how can I accept it? That does not comply with the rules!

"Besides, Junior Wuqing, although you are very powerful, you still need to work hard on your cultivation! And this, can help you." Chun Wu forcefully opened up Chu Feng's palm, then stuffed the Cosmos Sack into his hands.

Seeing that, Chu Feng examined the Cosmos Sack and his eyes involuntarily lit up instantly. He hurriedly asked, "Senior Chun Wu, what exactly are these? The Martial power inside is so gentle! They are such

rare cultivation treasures!"

"These are the high-rank Martial Medicine, the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism. However, they are not ordinary high-rank Martial medicine. They are unique Martial Medicine that only the Misty Peak has. Moreover, their growth cannot be sped up and only when they mature on their own could they be picked. Their price far surpasses beyond normal high-rank Martial Medicine, and are even more precious than top-rank Martial Medicine—Martial Beads.

"Although the Martial power in the top-rank Martial Medicine 'Martial Bead' is far above the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, after all, those under the rank of Martial Lord cannot cultivate them. This Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, however, is different. Even those in the Heaven realm can cultivate them, and there are even good effects after cultivation," Chun Wu explained patiently.

"It's that mystical?"

Chu Feng's heart was even more joyed when he heard those words. No matter what, he did not expect the first-place reward for the Martial Marking Immortal Realm would be that bountiful.

With Chu Feng's Spirit power, he could feel how powerful the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was. Not only did it contain powerful Martial power, it was even very gentle. And, the gentler the Martial power, it represented greater ease in refining.

Especially to those in the Heaven realm, it had great effects. Even with a single Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, it would absolutely be no problem to continuously make breakthrough past many realms. It was a true Natural Oddity, a cultivation treasure.

If Chu Feng wanted to make breakthroughs now, the Martial power required was very enormous. Thus, the six Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism would not have much of an effect. However, if Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang refined them, the effects would be unimaginable.

So, that was why Chu Feng was so elated. It was because the six

Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism would help greatly towards Su Rou's, Su Mei's, and the others' cultivation. As the closest people to him currently in the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng had always wanted to help them. And now, he finally had such a chance.

"Wuqing, it seems that your harvests in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm are quite good. I wonder... Have you gotten the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus?"

Just at that moment, Lady Piaomiao also walked over. When she looked at Chu Feng, her eyes actually contained a bit of amiability. It could be said to be a few times more benignant than before. After seeing Chu Feng's strength, she did look at him with new lens.

"Senior Piaomiao, I have gotten the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus." As Chu Feng spoke, he gave the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus Chun Wu helped him collect to Lady Piaomiao.

"Mm." Seeing the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus, a rare expression of joy appeared on Lady Piaomiao's face. One could see that she too really wanted to save Yan Ruyu.

Afterwards, in Chun Wu, Jiang Wanshi, and the other beauty's company, under countless admirative and envious gazes, Chu Feng left the mountain peak and returned to his place of residence.

But even after returning, Chu Feng could not rest well because he, who had collected six thousand Martial Markings, already showed his powerful side and exceptional talent.

Almost all the youths who knew of that matter wanted to befriend Chu Feng. There were even some young females who sent messages to Chu Feng, expressing their love towards him. It reached a point where even some old experts wished to see Chu Feng and chat with him.

But how could Chu Feng, who had already seen people who acted like that within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, give them the chance? So, other than Chun Wu and others who had rather closer relationships with him, Chu Feng closed his door to all and was not willing to see them. No matter who it was, he gave no face.

And because the Martial Marking Immortal Realm event had concluded, the Misty Peak would not leave those people there as guests for long periods of time. So, pretty much other than Chu Feng as well as Qiushui Fuyan and Jiang Wanshi, everyone was politely sent down the Misty Peak.

Although the people who were bothering had gone, the current Chu Feng instead became more restless. He could not even sit in peace.

The reason for that was because he heard that Lady Piaomiao had already used the Martial Marking Immortal Lotus to officially dispel the demon in Yan Ruyu's body.

And after several long days of torture, Qiushui Fuyan who went to help Lady Piaomiao finally appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight.

"Senior Qiushui, how was it? Yan Ruyu is fine, right?" Chu Feng anxiously asked when he saw Qiushui Fuyan.

"Hoh." Seeing Chu Feng with a face full of disquiet, Qiushui Fuyan charmingly smiled, then said, "I didn't think you would be so worried for her. Is the relationship between the two of you good?"

"Eh..." Chu Feng hesitated a bit, then shook his head and said, "No, my relationship with her isn't good, but the reason why she was in that state was, after all, related to me. If she could not be healed, I cannot feel calmness in my heart."

"Don't worry. The Martial Marking Immortal Lotus is a sealing oddity. Although that demon was powerful, it has been completely exorcised. Right now, that girl Yan Ruyu not only has no worries for her health, she has also thoroughly obtained that demon's unique power.

"That power is not simple. It can even be said to be extremely powerful, possibly no weaker than a Divine Body's power. In the future, her potential is unlimited. It may not be an impossibility for her to surpass Murong Xun one day." As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, there was even a bit of admiration on her face. As if she was admiring Lady Piaomiao able to take in such an outstanding disciple.

"However, Chu Feng, she seemed to have quite an opinion on you, so

she does not wish to see you," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile. It seemed that she had hiddenly guessed of something.

Chu Feng did not mind Yan Ruyu not willing to see him. After hearing that she was not only completely fine, and even obtained power comparable to Divine Bodies, Chu Feng felt happy for her. Perhaps it was the so-called "all's well that ends well".

Seeing Chu Feng's relieved complexion, Qiushui Fuyan satisfiedly smiled. She had better and better thoughts about Chu Feng. Not only did he have outstanding talent, exceptional courage, he even had a very suave air. From all sides, he surpassed those of the same generation by huge margins. So, she asked again, "Chu Feng, the Martial Marking Immortal Realm has ended now, and we should be leaving soon. Do you have plans regarding your destination?"

"Senior Qiushui, do you know where Senior Fu Liansheng, one of the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, is?" Chu Feng asked.

Chapter 703: A Long Wait

"Fu Liansheng?" Qiushui Fuyan shook her head when she heard those words, and said, "I've had extremely few contact with the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Besides, after the sect disbanded, traces of many great characters who influenced the Eastern Sea Region disappeared. There are also no news regarding the Four Protectors, as if they had just evaporated off the face of the world.

"However, I have heard people occasionally say the descendants of the Four Protectors appearing in succession. Moreover, that they would have a contest two months later in the Depraved Ravine."

"The descendants of the Four Protectors?" Chu Feng couldn't help be taken aback.

"To be more precise, it's the descendants of the Three Protectors because you, the descendant of the head of the Four Protectors, clearly don't know anything about the arranged battle with the other three." Qiushui Fuyan smiled. She could instantly see Chu Feng, as Qiu Canfeng's only disciple, did not know anything about that matter.

"I indeed know nothing about it. Before, I have always been in the continent of the Nine Provinces and after coming to this place, I immediately came to find you, Senior Qiushui. I know very little about the things in the Eastern Sea Region.

"Not to mention this arranged battle, I don't even know who the descendants of the three other protectors are," Chu Feng said truthfully.

"It can't be blamed on you. Although the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect are strong, they have never been on good terms with one another. So, judging by your master's character, he shouldn't have told you things regarding the relationship between them, nor would he have mentioned their disciples.

"But, since you have something you need to find Fu Liansheng for, no matter if the news is true or false, I feel that you can check out the Depraved Ravine two months later. After all, Fu Liansheng's disciple will

definitely know where his master is, right?" Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Mm. Thank you for your guidance, Senior Qiushui. This news is too important to me."

Chu Feng nodded. Fu Liansheng was the crucial person who could save his master, and Qiu Canfeng also grasped all the treasures within that Imperial Tomb, and those, on the other hand, were crucial things that could raise his cultivation, so he could save Zi Ling.

So, the most important mission Chu Feng came to the Eastern Sea Region for was to find Fu Liansheng. No matter if the arranged battle at the Depraved Ravine was true or false, he had to go.

"Chu Feng, the actions you took in the Misty Peak are fated to be spread everywhere. At least, your face, your name, Wuqing, will soon spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region.

"However, the world is big. There is every sort of people, and after knowing you've gotten great things from the Misty Peak, there will always be people who have malicious intents towards you.

"You can use your mask to change your face and set up another name for yourself—making it so 'Wuqing' thus disappears from this world, which would be a simple and effective way of evading the peril—it is, however, not the best way of resolving this problem. Running away from danger isn't a solution; only when facing danger can one grow," Qiushui Fuyan said smilingly.

"Senior Qiushui, it's not that I, Chu Feng, don't dare to show my actual appearance to others or fear to face danger, it's just that I have several very important friends in the Four Seas Academy.

"I don't want them to be affected because of me. That's why I completely buried my name. When the time is ripe, I will announce my identity to the world, but that is only a time when I can guarantee no one can harm them.

"As for the dangers submerged outside, the ones that will come will come eventually. I know it is useless regardless how well I hide myself, so

after leaving this place, I will still face others with the face of 'Wuqing'. Even though I know my current cultivation is very weak, it won't be easy if they want to take care of me," Chu Feng replied.

"So it's like that. It seems like I've misunderstood you. Actually, the reason why I told you this isn't because I want you to meet force with force against existences you cannot defend yourself against. After all, that is equal to committing suicide; an unintelligent approach.

"The reason why I told you this is only because I want you to learn how to face your dangers. But when facing undefeatable dangers, when you should escape, you must escape. After all, great men ought to bow when needed, and stand straight when needed. Looking at it now, however, it's not necessary for me to tell you all this."

Qiushui Fuyan faintly smiled. She, who originally wanted to teach Chu Feng some truths, did not expect that he had hidden troubles. It involuntarily made her feel a bit embarrassed. But shortly after, she did an action that made Chu Feng surprised.

The Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church, the former greatest beauty in the Eastern Sea Region, leaned over slightly, put her veiled red lips next to Chu Feng's ear, and softly said some words.

After hearing those words, Chu Feng's expression couldn't help changing slightly, then he said, "Thank you, Senior Qiushui."

On that day, Chu Feng decided to leave the Misty Peak, and Qiushui Fuyan decided to stay for a few more days.

Outside the Misty Peak, Chun Wu, Qiu Zhu, Jiang Wanshi, and Qiushui Fuyan all came to send him off.

For Chun Wu particularly, when she looked at Chu Feng, her eyes were full of unwillingness. If it weren't for Lady Piaomiao's request, disallowing her from leaving the Misty Peak, she would have definitely wanted to leave with Chu Feng.

"Senior Chun Wu, Senior Qiu Zhu, Yan Ruyu is my friend. Right now, she has also become Lady Piaomiao's disciple, so I hope you can take

good care of her." Before leaving, Chu Feng did not forget to tell Chun Wu and Qiu Zhu that.

After all, from what he knew, Yan Ruyu had a slightly timid nature. She completely followed her seniors' words, and since Xia Yu and Dong Xue were so oppressive, Chu Feng worried they would make things difficult for Yan Ruyu.

"Junior Wuqing, don't worry. With me and Senior Qiu Zhu, no one will dare to bully Senior Yan," Chun Wu guaranteed with a pat of her chest, immediately understanding Chu Feng intentions.

"We will take good care of Senior Yan," Qiu Zhu said with a warm smile as well.

"Sorry to trouble you two then."

Hearing those words, Chu Feng too peacefully smiled. Chun Wu had always kept her word and was worthy of his trust. So, Chu Feng dallied for no longer, and while being sent off by the gazes of Chun Wu and the others, he left the Misty Peak, flying towards an Ancient Teleportation Arrays.

At that very instant, however, at the exit of the Misty Peak, there stood a straight and jade-like figure, who similarly gazed upon Chu Feng departing back.

That female had an exceptional appearance, absolutely not inferior to Chun Wu and the others. Moreover, she had a very special bearing. It was a very strange one. It would make others involuntarily feel affable, but a powerful expert could tell that bearing did not match a human's. Naturally, that person was Yan Ruyu, who obtained the demon's power.

She had very complicated emotions, but looked at Chu Feng back without blinking. Only when Chu Feng disappeared in the vast horizon did she say quietly, "Thanks!"

Although the territory of the Misty Peak was large, the people within the Misty Peak only moved within the peaks. As a result, the other areas of the Misty Peak's land was, in reality, empty.

It was especially so since some time had passed since the conclusion of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. Pretty much everyone other than Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and the others had left already. So, in the regions outside the Misty Peak itself were so peaceful, it was slightly strange.

The only exit Chu Feng had to leave by was to pass through Ancient Teleportation Arrays; however, just as he arrived at one, before entering, the space before him trembled. Quickly after, four aged figures appeared, sealing Chu Feng's escape.

The ages of those four were very high—they were at least over a hundred years—nor were their cultivations weak: all peak Martial Lords.

Chu Feng had seen them once in the Misty Peak. Although he did not know their specific names, he did know they were senior experts whose names were famous at certain areas.

However, at that instant, when the four looked at Chu Feng, their eyes were not kind at all. One of them even said with a strange tone, "My friend Wuqing, you've finally come. You've made us wait for quite a long time!"

Chapter 704: Killing Three to Warn a Myriad

Seeing this, Chu Feng already knew something was wrong. However, he didn't panic, nor was there a change in his expression. In an indifferent tone, he said, "Seniors, what business do you have with me?"

"Heh, it's not much, just a small matter we want you to help us out with," said one of the old men with malicious intents.

"What is it? Just speak your mind," Chu Feng replied.

"Wuqing, this time around you've gone to the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and obtained six thousand Martial Markings. Surely, you've exchanged them for a pretty decent martial skill.

"However, we have also heard the martial skills within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm are bound to one's brain. They cannot be spoken out, nor can they be recorded. Only their owner can cultivate them.

"However, the martial skill exchanged for six thousand Martial Markings must certainly be extraordinary. It'd be quite a waste if you enjoyed its use all by yourself. So, the four of us wish to help you and see if we can take the Taboo martial skill out of your brain. That way, we can share it all together," said the old man, beaming with smiles.

"Hoh. You think I'm an idiot? If you want to kill and rob, then just say so. You even act so grand and dignified. The skin on your face is truly quite thick—so thick, you feel no shame. I see you've spent all your years on your face, huh?" Chu Feng disdainfully smiled. Not only was he fearless, he was even ridiculing and looking down on them.

"You sharp-tongued brat! You can say whatever you want to, but today, you should erase any thoughts of leaving peacefully."

As the old man spoke, he walked upon the air towards Chu Feng. At the same time, the three others had also secretly sealed off Chu Feng's escape. The four peak Martial Lords enveloped him with might from all

sides. Instantly, Chu Feng felt enormous pressure and could no longer move even an inch.

“This area is within the Misty Peak’s territory. Are you not afraid of Lady Piaomiao punishing all of you for doing this?” Chu Feng indifferently swept his gaze over the four people. No matter how much stronger the pressure enveloping him became, he still did not fear in the face of danger.

“Hmph. This is indeed within the territory of the Misty Peak, but it is not the Misty Peak. Although Lady Piaomiao guards the peak, she does not care about this land. Right now, you have already left the Misty Peak. Even if we kill you, judging by Lady Piaomiao’s nature, she will definitely not ask any questions,” the old man said after a cold snort.

“WHO SAID I WON’T ASK ANY QUESTIONS?!” But just at that moment, suddenly, a voice filled with might sounded. At the same time, the entire world seemed to tremble, as though it were about to collapse.

Under the veil of such a powerful pressure, the four old men’s faces immediately turned ashen, because they could feel how horrifying that strength was. At that very instant, under such pressure, they were as weak as ants, as if any slight movement their opponent made would make them disappear like a whisper of smoke within a gale.

hmm Just at that moment, two people, like ghosts, appeared before Chu Feng. They were Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan.

Chu Feng had expected such a scene. The reason why he choose to leave today was because Lady Piaomiao discovered people walking to and fro near the Ancient Teleportation Array while he was still within the Misty Peak. They seemed to be waiting for something.

So, she told Qiushui Fuyan to have Chu Feng be more cautious. The words Qiushui Fuyan had spoken to Chu Feng before were to inform him that he should leave immediately—today—just to see if those people were waiting for exactly him.

If there were really people who had ill-intents towards Chu Feng, then Lady Piaomiao would make her move—she would kill these people. “To

warn a hundred by killing one". [1] To let the people of the world know that Chu Feng not only had the protection of Qiushui Fuyan, he also had the protection of Lady Piaomiao. No matter who wanted to touch him, they should examine their own strength before doing so."

[tl: [1] = The title is a variation on this common saying.]

"La-La-Lady Piaomiao, we meant no offense! We were only making a joke with Junior Wuqing!"

Although they were all senior experts, the difference in seniority between them and Lady Piaomiao was too great. In addition to the disparity in strength, after they saw Lady Piaomiao, they immediately quivered from fear, and even stuttered when they spoke.

Although they were well-known in certain parts of the Eastern Sea Region and were seniors whom many people revered in their hearts, when facing a life-threatening danger, they would show their cowardly side.

bang, bang, bang Suddenly, Lady Piaomiao willed three of them to become mists of blood. After three muffled explosions, the mist floated through the air, and the strong pungent stench of blood wafted over instantly. They truly vanished into thin air, leaving not even a single piece of clothing. The only items that remained were their three Cosmos Sacks.

"Chu Feng, quickly help me absorb their Source Energy! Although their bodies have already disintegrated, the Source Energy still remains. Quick! Three peak Martial Lords are a huge supplement for me!" Seeing that, Eggy was elated. As a World Spirit, she had extremely sharp observational power regarding Source Energy. After seeing three people killed, the first thing she thought of was Source Energy.

whoosh However, before letting Chu Feng make his move, the three mists of blood floating in the air had already shot towards Lady Piaomiao. She actually absorbed their Source Energy.

"God damn, a step too late. What is this dog butt fairy? Can fairies so casually absorb Source Energy? Not only that, she absorbed their entire bodies! That's too disgusting. From what I see, she's not a fairy, but a demon." At that moment, Eggy threw curses here and there, gritting her

teeth in anger. If she could, she would truly go and claw Lady Piaomiao madly.

"Have mercy, have mercy!" At that moment as well, the remaining person's face turned blue from fear. After seeing Lady Piaomiao's work, he too felt he was undoubtedly dead.

However, unexpectedly, Lady Piaomiao did not kill him. Instead, she said with an extremely icy tone, "Scram. If you dare to act with such insolence in my Misty Peak again, I will slaughter a path to your sect, and destroy its several thousand years of foundation."

"Thank you merciful Lady, thank you merciful Lady!"

Hearing those words, that person quickly knelt in midair and kowtowed and bowed towards her. How did he even have the bearing of a powerful senior? It was as though he were a timid brat who feared death.

Shortly after, that person dared not to continue loitering. He turned around, and prepared to leave.

"Halt." But just at that moment, Qiushui Fuyan spoke. With a chilly tone, she said, "She won't lower herself to deal with you, but I won't let you go so easily. By attacking Wuqing, you are not putting me in your eyes at all"

whoosh As she spoke, Qiushui Fuyan suddenly made her move. After her fair hand as beautiful as jade was extended, she lightly clenched her fist. With two bangs, one of the old man's arm and leg had exploded.

"MM!" The pain of his arm and leg breaking made the old man gnash his teeth and instantly, sweat poured out of his head. However, he was, after all, quite a high-level expert. He forcibly endured the agony and did not make a sound. Instead, he said with a very humble tone, "My gratitude for your mercy."

"If you want to leave, that is fine. Hand over your Cosmos Sack," Qiushui Fuyan said again.

He furrowed his brows lightly upon hearing those words. Originally, he thought he could safely leave after being crippled, but he did not think

she would still demand him to give his Cosmos Sack to her. They failed a robbery, and instead were being robbed! He, who initially wanted to net some benefits from Chu Feng, was extremely depressed.

But recalling how his three others old friends ended up as, he already felt that the result was excellent. So, he did not hesitate much and quickly, with reverence, threw his Cosmos Sack to Qiushui Fuyan.

“Scram.” After taking the Cosmos Sack, Qiushui Fuyan first examined the items within, then shouted with a cold tone.

The old man couldn’t help rejoicing, thinking he could finally keep his life. Without even more thoughts, he turned around, and was about to enter the Ancient Teleportation Array.

However, before letting him enter, a sentence from Qiushui Fuyan threw him in despair.

“You cannot heal your broken arm and leg. For the remainder of your life, you must face others with this appearance. If I were to discover one day you restored your broken arm and leg, I will chop off all four of your limbs and throw you into a pit of manure, where you shall live the rest of your life.”

Chapter 705: Esteemed Mother

Although the old man was bitter, due to Qiushui Fuyan's powerful strength, he could only leave dispirited.

In reality, he too understood living the rest of his life with only one arm and leg was very embarrassing. He would feel even more embarrassed when people asked how the arm and leg were lost, and why they were not healed.

But as the proverbs say: "Better to be living than dead". If he had to blame something, he could only blame himself for thinking to attack Chu Feng. If greed did not exist in his heart, it'd be impossible for him to be in such a miserable state right now. Also, as the proverbs say: "One cannot escape the consequences for their crimes." His punishment was well-deserved.

"He's let go, just like that? He should be killed, then his Source Energy should be given to me for refining," Eggy said in confusion when she looked at the old man walking into the Ancient Teleportation Array.

"I'm guessing she let one go because she wants the world to know of this matter. After all, the reason why Senior Qiushui wanted me to leave first is because she wanted to 'bait the snake out of the hole', then exert her dominance upon them, as a result, allowing those who harbour malicious intents towards me to have some sort of understanding. To let them know if they want to touch me, Chu Feng, they would have to judge their own power first," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Even if she wants to show her power, she should still kill him then let Lady Piaomiao spread the news. Would that not be better? After all, he was killed by her. There should be nothing she wants to hide, right?" Eggy asked.

"No matter. I'm sure he has also gotten the lesson he deserved. Continuing to live like this isn't something an ordinary person can do. After all, if this were to be known, even his sect would likely not be able to keep him there, right?" Chu Feng smiled, as if he could already see the

tragic scene of the person who left just now being betrayed by his comrades and families, and being looked down upon by the people of the world.

"Wuqing, you keep this." Suddenly, Qiushui Fuyan waved her hand faintly, throwing the Cosmos Sack in her hand to Chu Feng.

"Senior Qiushui, thank you." Chu Feng felt his heart birthing to joy when he caught the Cosmos Sack because there were quite a few treasures within it. There were countless Heaven beads and Elite Armaments—low-rank goods—as well as several hundred low-rank Martial Medicines and mid-rank Martial Medicines.

There were even a good few high-rank Martial Medicines. Even though their quality was far from equal with the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism, they were, after all, high-rank Martial Medicines. They were priceless objects. Chu Feng had to admit: the objects in the Cosmos Sack alone could turn him into a small wealthy person.

"Also take these three." Just at that moment, there were four beams of light that flew over from Lady Piaomiao's hand which immediately entered Chu Feng's palm.

"Senior Piaomiao, thank you." At that moment, Chu Feng was even more elated because the four beams were not only three Cosmos Sacks similarly full of treasures, one of them was even a Misty Badge.

After the Martial Marking Immortal Realm concluded, those who received the Misty Badge had to return them when they left. When Chu Feng departed, he was no exception.

When Lady Piaomiao gave Chu Feng the Misty Badge again, it meant she viewed Chu Feng with quite a bit of importance, allowing him to have the qualification to enter the Misty Peak at any time.

"I've heard Fuyan say you have business, so I won't keep you here. But if you have time in the future, my Misty Peak welcomes your presence at any time," Lady Piaomiao said. Moreover, on her face, a rare faint smile appeared.

“Seniors, then Chu Feng will take his leave now.” This time, Chu Feng said his real name.

Lady Piaomiao’s expression was very calm upon hearing the two words “Chu Feng”, as if she had already knew Wuqing was a fake name, and only Chu Feng was the real one.

After Chu Feng left, Qiushui Fuyan suddenly took off the veil covering her visage, revealing an extremely beautiful appearance. Although her age neared forty, her complexion was akin to a young female’s, as though time had left no blemishes on her face.

It had to be said the former greatest beauty in the Eastern Sea Region was not inferior to Ya Fei or Qiu Zhu even now. However, the thing worth mentioning was even though Qiushui Fuyan had a very beautiful countenance, so beautiful that it made Lady Piaomiao’s, whose appearance was ordinary, seem a bit ugly, in certain areas there were actually some close similarities.

“Esteemed Mother, it seems that you look at Chu Feng quite highly. I have never seen you granting any person in the younger generation a Misty Badge before. Even Murong Xun and Huangfu Haoyue back then received no such treatment.” Qiushui Fuyan spoke and actually stated a shocking secret—Lady Piaomiao, who had such a significant status, was actually her mother.

“Murong Xun is a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago so how could I grant him a Misty Badge? As for Huangfu Haoyue, even though he was quite extraordinary, he too did not possess the qualifications.

“However, Chu Feng is different from them all. It was no mere coincidence that he could escape near-death in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and even obtain six thousand Martial Markings. From what I see, he has definitely received the approval of that mysterious existence in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Approval? Esteemed Mother, is the mysterious existence you speak of the demon sealed in the Misty Peak, or the master of the Misty Peak?”

Qiushui Fuyan asked curiously.

"I've guarded this place for almost a thousand years. I only know that the Martial Marking Immortal Realm is the core of the Misty Peak, that there is an extraordinary existence within, and, even to some degree, that the existence controls the Misty Peak.

"But despite many attempts to increase the connection between us, they were all ineffective. It's not that I cannot send my words to it, it's just that it does not care about me.

"Although I've gotten enormous gains by guarding this place, in reality, the appellation of guardian is no more than an empty title.

"At present, the influence of the Immortal Execution Archipelago is getting larger and larger. It has also laid its eyes upon the Misty Peak and, if one day, the Immortal Execution Archipelago comes invading, and the mysterious existence within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm isn't willing to help me, I will definitely lose the Misty Peak.

"But this child called Chu Feng... If he truly obtained the approval of that mysterious existence, perhaps at that time, he can be of help," Lady Piaomiao said flatly. But, there was a scent of guile and scheming emerging on her face.

"Then no wonder even Esteemed Mother personally came out to protect Chu Feng. Since he is viewed so highly, do you need me to protect him in the dark?" Qiushui Fuyan said.

"No need. If he has truly gained the mysterious existence's approval, I'm sure it would not wish for us to protect him. It would want us to let him develop on his own, so the talent he has can be pillared down more firmly."

Lady Piaomiao shook her head, then asked Qiushui Fuyan, "Fuyan, how about... you don't leave this time and stay behind? After all, sooner or later, this Misty Peak will be handed over to you."

"I can't, Esteemed Mother. I think that the Lovers Terrace is more suitable for me. Besides, don't you have the Four Seasons and Yan Ruyu,

five disciples, right now? I think it'd be better to hand the Misty Peak over to them." Qiushui Fuyan shook her head.

Lady Piaomiao couldn't help sighing upon hearing those words, then said, "You aren't still blaming me for prohibiting you to enter the Heavenly Road with the Burning Heaven Church, right?"

At that instant, Qiushui Fuyan's body involuntarily trembled slightly. Several complex changes occurred on her face, but in the end, she still wore a light smile and said, "How would I? If Esteemed Mother did not stop me, perhaps I would already be dead by now."

Chapter 706: Paying a Visit to the Li Family

Before Chu Feng entered the Ancient Teleportation Array, he already had a clear destination.

There were still two months until the arranged battle between the disciples of the Three Protectors in the Depraved Ravine. At present, Chu Feng prepared to head towards the Four Seas Academy to visit his two fiancées—Su Rou and Su Mei—as well as his two brothers—Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang.

After all, as long as he gave them the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism, their cultivations would rise greatly. Although they might not catch up to the current him, the mushrooms would at least allow them to reside in the Four Seas Academy better.

But before that, Chu Feng wanted to head towards another location—the Li family at the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Back then, when Chu Feng took away the Ice Crystal Egg, he had told Li Chan he was only borrowing it and that in the future, he would repay her with an object of equal value.

Although, to Chu Feng, the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was just the slightest bit inferior to the Ice Crystal Egg, to Li Chan, the price of the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism would be clearly much higher than the Ice Crystal Egg. It'd be just right to repay her with that object.

After some hurrying, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Wolf Ivory Mountain. He was walking on air, atop the clouds, with extremely quick speed.

But before he neared the Li family's residence, Chu Feng heard bursts of rowdy noises. Looking downwards from above, he discovered a large crowd of people congregated on the vast ground outside the gate of the Li family.

"It seems that something has happened!"

Chu Feng could instantly tell that the people gathered there were not

all people from the Li family. Many were outsiders, so something definitely happened at the Li family.

In order to avoid attention, Chu Feng did not take on the appearance of Wuqing. But, he wore a conical hat and concealed his aura. Only then did he fly down and land onto open land. However, after landing, Chu Feng felt a creeping feeling that something was wrong.

On the vast open space, many people gathered. They were cheering and yelling, so it was obvious something was happening in the middle.

Moreover, Chu Feng discovered most importantly, the crowd was divided into two. On one side, there were the people from the Li family, and on the other, there were people donned with grey-coloured robes. It was unclear which school or sect they came from, but they were obviously people from some sort of sect.

Other than those people, there were many people who belonged to neither side. They were obviously there for the liveliness.

Only after closely approaching did he discover in the center of everyone, a large and broad fighting stage was built. On the stage, a man and a woman were currently sparring, and the woman was, unexpectedly, Li Chan.

The person sparring against Li Chan was a middle-aged man. He too wore a grey-coloured robe, held an Elite Armament longsword in his hand, and had the same cultivation as Li Chan—the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

At that moment, the two were intensely fighting against one another. However, not only was Li Chan's cultivation of the seventh level of the Heaven realm at the peak, her attacks even flowed smoothly and she had thoroughly held the advantage.

"Brother, why is it so lively here? What happened?" Chu Feng asked a big man.

After examining Chu Feng, the man asked, "You aren't a local, right?"

"Just passing," said Chu Feng. He concealed his aura so others would

not fear him. Since he asked on his own accord, Chu Feng's tone was very polite.

"No wonder. But if you don't know, that's fine. I'll give you an introduction.

"Do you see her? The woman on the stage with a few bits of grace is called Li Chan. She is the eldest daughter of the Li family, and this Li family is the overlord of this region. The entirety of the Wolf Ivory Mountain is managed by the Li family.

"As for the person sparring Li Chan, he is the number one disciple of Painting Sect," the big man explained.

"Painting Sect? What's the Painting Sect?" Chu Feng asked in confusion. However, as those words were spoken, it attracted many surrounding people's attention. Almost everyone's eyes were full of unkindness when they looked at Chu Feng.

"Ehh... Brother, you actually don't even know Painting Sect?!" Hearing those words, the big man quickly looked at Chu Feng with disdain. At the same time, he also winked at Chu Feng a few times, indicating him to remain silent because at that instant, many people there were from the Painting Sect.

Only after those people cast their gazes back at the fighting stage did the big man say in a low voice, "Actually, I didn't know what the Painting Sect was before either.

"However, I've heard that the Painting Sect is preparing to establish a sect in the Wolf Ivory Mountain. However, this mountain is within the Li family's territory! Of course, the Li family said it was unfair.

"However, the master of the Li family seemed to have drank wine with the head of the Painting Sect, and at the drinking table, he promised the Painting Sect could build a sect in the Wolf Ivory Mountain. At that time, many people were witnesses, and one of them was even the head of the Flash Gold Temple.

"You haven't heard of the Painting Sect, but you've definitely heard of

the Flash Gold Temple, right? It's the strongest power in this region, and its head is even a rank three Martial Lord!

"Although the master of the Li family does not wish to admit it, since the head of the Flash Gold Temple was a witness, he had no choice but to admit it. He immediately put himself into an impasse.

"In the end, someone suggested a method that would be perfect for both sides. It was to lay down this sparring stage and rely on the strengths of the younger generation to fight over the Wolf Ivory Mountain."

"So this is trouble stirred up by that foolish family master again?"

After knowing everything, Chu Feng couldn't help looking in the direction of the Li family. At that place, on the peak of palace, a group of people stood. They had rather high cultivation. One of them was the Li family's master, and by his side there was an old man who wore a grey robe. That person also had the cultivation of a rank one Martial Lord, and was obviously a senior expert from the Painting Sect.

"Ahh!"

Just at that moment, a cry rang out from the stage. The person who was fighting against Li Chan had fallen onto the ground, defeated.

But Li Chan did not do anything worse and stopped when appropriate. So, that person only suffered some light superficial wounds. However, Li Chan was quite intelligent and knew to not let him go so easily. So, she cut off the top portion of that person's hair, putting him in a very sorry state with an appearance of defeat.

After defeating that person, Li Chan did not say much. She turned around, bowed to the palace where the master of the Li family and the others were at, and loudly said, "Sect Head Ouyang, though I am untalented, I am just slightly more skillful and defeated him. As per the agreement, please bring your Painting Sect's disciples away from the Wolf Ivory Mountain and never return again."

"Haha! The eldest daughter of the Li family is indeed powerful! However, the contest is not finished here, so where did victory and defeat

come from?" The old man who stood by the master of the Li family was the Painting Sect's head. However, judging by his current expression, he obviously did not prepare to admit defeat.

"Sect Head Ouyang, did we not agree before that the loser of the younger generation's sparring will leave the Wolf Ivory Mountain? Right now, the strongest disciple from your Painting Sect has been defeated by my daughter. Are you saying, you, the Painting Sect, have even stronger disciples?" the master of the Li family asked with slight displeasure upon seeing Sect Head Ouyang's unwillingness to admit defeat.

"There are indeed no stronger disciples in the Painting Sect's younger generation who are stronger than your Li family's daughter. However, within the Flash Gold Temple, the Painting Sect's ally, there are." The head of the Painting Sect strangely smiled, and as he spoke, he cast his gaze back at the fighting stage.

whoosh Just at that moment, a person suddenly leapt up from the crowd, then landed onto the stage.

It was a monk clad in a golden kasaya. There were barely any differences in his age and Li Chan's, but he also had the cultivation of the seventh level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, his aura was clearly stronger than Li Chan's. Likely, he was just about to enter the realm of the eighth level of the Heaven realm. After stepping upon the stage, he spoke no useless words. After clasping his hands and saluting to Li Chan, he said, "Lady Li. This one is Flash Gold Temple's second disciple, Dao Yuan. I represent the Painting Sect for a spar against you."

Chapter 707: Despicable and Shameless

“Represent? Sir, today’s fight is a battle for land between my Li family and the Painting Sect. As a person of the Flash Gold Temple, how can you interfere?” Li Chan fiercely asked.

The monk interestingly did not explain much. Instead, he said very forcefully, “Lady Li, you are incorrect. The Flash Gold Temple and the Painting Sect are allies. As an ally, it is very normal to fight for my own ally, the Painting Sect.

“Lady Li, if you are afraid, you are free to concede. With that, you can also avoid physical pain. However, do not say that I lack the qualifications to interfere.”

“You…” Li Chan’s complexion instantly changed when she heard those words. They were simply unreasonable! As a result, she could only cast her gaze towards her father, asking for assistance from him.

At present, the master of the Li family was quite furious as well. He pointed at Sect Head Ouyang and shouted, “Sect Head Ouyang, you are violating the rules by doing this!”

“Family Master Li, is there a problem with your ears? I’ve already said it. The Flash Gold Temple is my Painting Sect’s ally. Is it against the rules for an ally to help an ally? If you feel this to be a violation of the rules, I must ask for the head of the Flash Gold Temple to discuss this issue with you then.

“Back then, during the banquet, you clearly promised that my Painting Sect can establish a sect on the Wolf Ivory Mountain. Yet afterwards, you refuse. If not for the face of the head of the Flash Gold Temple, my Painting Sect wouldn’t have set up this fight with you. I have no problem just coming to the Wolf Ivory Mountain and setting up a sect. What can you do then?

“I speak reason yet you don’t care about that. In terms of strength, I have the assistance of the Flash Gold Temple. Your Li family simply cannot fight against my Painting Sect,” Sect Head Ouyang said after a cold

snort.

After those words, all of the higher-ups of the Li family had unsightly faces because it was clear he gave absolutely no care to face. He had told the Li family that they were going to take over it regardless of any situation. The current fight was no more than an interlude, and the outcome was actually already determined.

At that instant, the head of the Li family as well as the people with high ranks in the Li family felt great fury. They wished they could fight to the death with the Painting Sect, but so long as they recalled the Painting Sect had the backup of the Flash Gold Temple, they had no choice but to endure the anger and silently bear it.

Although they did not fear the Painting Sect, they had to fear the Flash Gold Temple. The Li family could truly do nothing to the Painting Sect, who had the Flash Gold Temple behind them.

Seeing the Li family enraged yet dared not to vent their rage, Sect Head Ouyang felt even more smug, and said with a chuckle, “Family Master Li, although you were in the wrong at first, since we set this arranged battle with you, I, the Painting Sect, will follow the rules.

“If your Li family has an appropriate ally, you can also invite them! As long as they are younger than forty, we can count them as a youth and allow them to join this fight.

“But carefully think about it. In this area, which youth is stronger than the Flash Gold Temple’s youths? Hahaha...”

Sect Head Ouyang madly laughed. So much that the face of the Li family’s master turned ashen. The fists concealed within his robe creaked from tight clenching because the sect head was so nakedly mocking them. Mocking that his Li family had no powerful shield behind them and could only give up.

“Lady Li, excuse me for this offense.” At the same time, the monk named Dao Yuan attacked.

He did not use any gorgeous skill, but it flowed very consummately,

smoothly, and the atmosphere it gave off was extraordinary. Boundless Heaven power was operated as per his thoughts, and went straight towards Li Chan. It was like a metal wall—indestructible, and unstoppable. With overwhelming might it destructively made its way towards Li Chan.

"Dammit."

At that instant, Li Chan did not dare to hesitate. She quickly backed away and did not dare to meet force with force. Her opponent was really too strong. Although they were both in the seventh level of the Heaven realm, his strength was clearly above hers. At that instant, his seemingly simple skill was actually a top-level martial skill. Moreover, it was cultivated to a very practiced level.

"Truly shameless. A monk hitting a woman, and even uses such a ruthless attack. These bald donkeys' usual claim of benevolence has gone completely to waste." Chu Feng curled his lips with a face full of mocking.

"God damn, what are you saying? You dare to disrespect Senior Dao Yuan? Do you want to die?!" Chu Feng's words attracted the furious gazes from the people of the Painting Sect. All of them pulled up their sleeves and wanted to give Chu Feng a lesson.

However, Chu Feng did not choose to ignore them this time. He suddenly raised the conical hat he was wearing. From his eyes shot a chilling glare that was like a sharp blade. He said icily, "If all of you wish to die, I don't mind sending you on a journey."

"You..."

At that instant, almost everyone who saw Chu Feng's gaze took several steps back in fear. Involuntarily, large amounts of cold sweat flowed down their bodies.

With that glimpse alone, it was as if they fell into an infinitely deep abyss, entered hell, and reincarnated back. It was too terrifying. The killing intent in his gaze was something they had simply never seen before.

And when they thought about their inability to see what level his cultivation was, they couldn't help but fear him.

Because that meant there were only two possibilities. The first was that he carried a treasure which concealed his cultivation very, very deeply. The other was that his cultivation was too powerful, and with their strength, they could not fathom it.

Even though they too felt disbelief, as long as they thought of the horrifying gaze just now, they couldn't help believing the second possibility. So, all of them no longer spoke, and turned their heads around in silence. They continued to look at the fighting stage and also secretly pulled apart the distance between them and Chu Feng, staying far from that uncertain, terrifying existence.

"This..." The big man who was explaining the situation Chu Feng also noticed such a change. Amazement and surprise filled the man's eyes. From his experience, he determined that the young man with a suave appearance and an age less than twenty was clearly not an ordinary person.

boom

"Ahh!"

Just at that moment, an explosion suddenly rang out on the fighting stage. The monk called Dao Yuan used a very powerful martial skill. Although Li Chan evaded it, she was still struck by the remnant shock waves. After Li Chan was struck, she flew through the air, and lay on the corner of the fighting stage. Her face was pale-white, akin to paper, and the blood on her left arm flowed incessantly. The outcome had been determined.

"He won. The monk of the Flash Gold Temple is indeed powerful. As expected of the strongest force of power in this region!" Seeing such a scene, many outsiders who were watching the show exclaimed endlessly. They were not concerned who won or who lost. They were only concerned with the excitement level of that fight.

swish But even when everyone knew the outcome had been firmly set,

the monk called Dao Yuan did not stop. Like a leopard, he leaped and actually attacked the incomparably weak Li Chan. Judging by his momentum, he planned to take Li Chan's life.

"Stop!" The people from the Li family all panicked when they saw that. Especially so for the master of the Li family. He leaped forward and wanted to stop him himself.

However, just at that moment, a hand grabbed his shoulder and stopped him. It was Sect Head Ouyang.

At that instant, his face was full of smugness and he wore a despicable smile on his face. He said indifferently, "Family Master Li, we agreed this would be a fight between the younger generation! As a senior, how can you interfere? Do not break the rules!"

Chapter 708: Chu Feng Making His Move

"Sect Head Ouyang, you..." When he heard those words, the Li family's master thoroughly panicked. Particularly so when he turned around and discovered all his Li family's experts were bound by the Painting Sect's people, and as a result, no one could resolve Li Chan's plight.

His face was truly dead as ash, and his heart felt as though blades were cutting it. They had clearly plotted this for a long time, and at that instant, he finally understood their intentions. With the relationship the Painting Sect had with the Flash Gold Temple, they had absolutely no problem waltzing over to the Wolf Ivory Mountain and establishing a sect. He could do nothing to stop them.

As for the reason why they set up a fighting stage, they wanted him to personally witness his precious daughter beaten to death while remaining powerless to stop them. They wanted him to pay such a price for refusing their demand.

At that instant, the Li family's master, as well as everyone else from the Li family, couldn't help closing their eyes. They really could not bear seeing the scene of Li Chan being killed.

Seeing Dao Yuan attacking with power she was unable to defend against, Li Chan knew her life had reached its end as well. So, she did not harbour any hopes, and similarly, closed her eyes. However, she was different from others. It wasn't that she feared facing it, but because she had already given up.

When he saw this, Sect Head Ouyang was even smugger. He didn't believe the people observing outside the fighting stage would come out and help. After all, even if someone did, they would be committing suicide due to their strengths being much weaker. At present, his scheme had prevailed, so naturally, he was elated.

whoosh

However, just as everyone felt Li Chan was undoubtedly dead, a person leapt from the crowd. Not only did he stand stably atop the stage, he even

landed before Li Chan. That person was, of course, Chu Feng.

"Even the people from the Li family don't care, yet you, an outsider, are looking to die. No problem, I will grant you your wish."

Determining that Chu Feng wasn't a person from the Li family by his clothes, not only did the monk called Dao Yuan not retract his attack, he even strengthened its power. The fist descended straight for Chu Feng's throat. He wanted to use such a punch to shatter Chu Feng's head.

"Hmph." But why would Chu Feng, who had used the power of two lightnings and possessed the cultivation of a rank one Martial Lord, fear the puny attack of the seventh level of the Heaven realm? Chu Feng stood where he landed, and did not even move a tiny bit, allowing the monk's attack to arrive.

dang When the fist crashed into Chu Feng, Dao Yuan's face changed greatly because when it slammed into Chu Feng, not only did his neck not burst like tofu, it was as if his own fist slammed into an unbreakable steel wall. His fist actually shattered with a puchi sound.

"AHH~~~" Seeing his completely broken hand with blood and flesh mashed together, Dao Yuan instantly let out a miserable shriek akin to the crying of wolves and ghosts. Simultaneously, he took several steps back. When he looked at Chu Feng, his eyes were full of fear.

Such a change also made Li Chan and the others from the Li family aware that something was wrong. They all opened their eyes, and only then did they discover a person standing before Li Chan.

That person was no more than twenty, but he had an unspeakable aura. Although one could not determine what level of cultivation he had, at that instant, the monk called Dao Yuan clearly took quite a hit from him.

Such a change made everyone stunned, especially for the people from the Painting Sect. Even their faces greened. After taking Dao Yuan's punch head-on, not only did nothing happen to him, it even brought ruin to Dao Yuan's hand. That was quite twisted.

They felt even more stunned when they saw Chu Feng, despite his

young appearance, actually possessing such strength. It involuntarily made their hearts tremble and chills go down their spine.

"Who are you? Why have you interfered in the sparring between my Painting Sect and the Li family?" Sect Head Ouyang asked because he astonishedly discovered even with his own cultivation, he could not determine Chu Feng's strength. Subconsciously, it made him feel that the youth before him was not a simple at all.

"I am Wuqing, Miss Li Chan's friend. Today, there is only one reason why I am here. I've come to drive you shameless dogs away for the Li family."

whoosh As he spoke, Chu Feng suddenly moved and dashed towards Dao Yuan. At the same time, his fist came rushing down, and pierced through Dao Yuan's dantian.

"AHH~~~" Dao Yuan could not even endure the agony of his hand being destroyed, let alone his dantian. What was the dantian? It was the life of a cultivator! The destruction of one's dantian was equal to the destruction of one's cultivation! Multitudinous years of cultivating, all for naught! It was not only physical pain he felt. More so, it was pain in his soul.

"Junior Dao Yuan!" Just as Dao Yuan howled with tears and rolled around the floor, a person suddenly flew out from the crowd. He was also a monk, and he was a bit older than Dao Yuan. Moreover, his cultivation was stronger than Dao Yuan—the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

After he appeared, he sat Dao Yuan up. He also started to heal Dao Yuan's dantian to prevent too much Heaven power from flowing out. He was saving Dao Yuan so he could preserve as much cultivation as possible.

"That's the strongest disciple in the Flash Gold Temple, Dao Cheng!" After seeing the monk's appearance, the crowd exclaimed because in comparison to Dao Yuan, Dao Cheng was very famous in the area. After all, he was the strongest disciple within the Flash Gold Temple, and the future temple head. Many accomplishments related to the Flash Gold Temple were done by him. Not only did he have powerful strength, his

name spread far.

"I didn't expect even Dao Cheng to have come. It seems that the relationship between the Flash Gold Temple and the Painting Sect is not ordinary. They really are helping the Painting Sect take over the Wolf Ivory Mountain!" After recognizing Dao Cheng, everyone understood the Flash Gold Temple's intentions. After all, not just any person could invite a person like Dao Cheng.

"You dare to cripple my junior's cultivation? I will have your life!" After a quick healing of Dao Yuan's dantian, extremely sinister expressions emerged onto Dao Cheng's face.

aoo

Then, he moved and actually let out a fierce beastly roar. At that instant, Dao Cheng did not even seem like a person. He seemed more like an incomparably powerful fierce beast. One that could shatter the mountains with a single punch and stop the flow of rivers with a single step. He looked extremely ferocious.

When such might burst out, even the people below the stage were affected. Everyone was forced back by such bursts of might, and some people even threw up blood from the shock, suffering heavy injuries in turn.

"Ahh!" At the same time, even Li Chan standing behind Chu Feng couldn't help shrieking from fright. She could feel that Dao Cheng truly reached an extremely horrifying state of power.

But as everyone was terrified by Dao Cheng's strike, Chu Feng still stood there without moving. He allowed the power, that swept over towards him like a gale, to blow his clothes and hair, and he was not the slightest bit fearful.

Only when the fist carrying horrifying power was about to contact his face did Chu Feng extend his palm and cover it over Dao Cheng's fist.

Then, he performed an action that terrified everyone so much their souls left their bodies: he waved his arm up, lifting Dao Cheng's body like

a scarecrow high into the air, then flung his arm down. A pu was heard.

The strongest disciple of the Flash Gold Temple, the future temple head, was forcefully crushed into a meat patty.

Chapter 709: Die, No Exception

“Heavens! This, this, this...”

Looking at the meat pulp on the fighting stage, nearly everyone was stupefied from shock. The grand, strongest disciple of the Flash Gold Temple was actually killed just like that. He even died so miserably. That was simply unacceptable. After all, he was a famous person whose name spread throughout that area.

“W-wh-who are you? You dare to kill my senior? Are you not afraid of my master, Monk Huang Jin? [1]” When he saw even his senior transformed into a paste of flesh, Dao Yuan seemed to have forgotten the pain on his body and quivered in terror. He even threw out his master’s name.

[tl: [1] = TN: Huang Jin = Flash Gold]

He was truly worried. Worried that the youth before his eyes would kill him. After all, he even dared to kill his senior, so it was not out of the question for him to be killed as well.

But, after all, his master was the head of the Flash Gold Temple. After all, his master was a rank three Martial Lord. So, he felt if he gave his master’s name, the person in front of him would, more or less, be slightly afraid. At present, as long as he could stay alive, it would not be too late for revenge in the future when he went to find his master.

But no matter what, he didn’t think Chu Feng would lack the slightest bit of reaction to “Monk Huang Jin”. Instead, he said very calmly, “Who’s Monk Huang Jin?”

“Really? He doesn’t even know who Monk Huang Jin is?” When Chu Feng words came out of his mouth, everyone couldn’t help sucking in a breath of air because even all of them knew who Monk Huang Jin was.

“Monk Huang Jin is my master, the head of the Flash Gold Temple, a rank three Martial Lord.” Dao Yuan even emphasized his master’s cultivation.

However, the words Chu Feng spoke next made him immediately speechless, removing him of any course of action.

“Oh, the head of the Flash Gold Temple. So you have the support of that bastard, and that’s why you dare to rampage here in the Li family?

“Good. Very good. You, scram right now. Go tell your dog butt master I, Wuqing, will come to his Flash Gold Temple and collect his head.”

huaaa~~~~

A commotion instantly arose from the crowd after hearing those words. Everyone felt shock from Chu Feng’s words.

Dao Yuan had clearly stated his master’s identity and told Chu Feng his cultivation. But not only did he not fear, he even said such words. Even if they didn’t want to be shocked, they had no choice.

Overbearingness—extreme overbearingness.

Arrogance—but he most certainly had the qualifications to be arrogant.

At that instant, everyone felt the man called Wuqing must have come from an extraordinary place. Otherwise, it’d be impossible he would act so wildly.

At that moment, everyone was thinking where Wuqing came from, as he actually did not even put the Flash Gold Temple in his eyes. After all, the temple, in their perspective, was an existence that could not be desecrated. It was the king of many powers in that region.

“What a savage brat. I don’t know what school nor sect you come from, but since you dare to attack Monk Huang Jin’s disciples, it is equal to attacking my, Sect Head Ouyang’s, disciples! Today, I will bring you to justice!”

Just at that moment, Sect Head Ouyang suddenly yelled, then leapt up, and like a dragon streaking through the air, he flew over.

He attacked, because he had no choice. After all, Dao Yuan and Dao Cheng came here for the Painting Sect’s sake. At present, Dao Cheng was killed, and even killed right before his very own eyes. If he did not do

something now, then he would not be able to give Monk Huang Jin an explanation. So, he had to attack.

Whenever a rank one Martial Lord attacked, the colours of the weather would change and the earth would tremble. The Martial power Martial Lords had was really too strong. It was a divide between realms, a realm that cultivators dreamt of reaching. Not only did one's power surge greatly after entering that realm, their lives could be prolonged.

So, Sect Head Ouyang's attack made everyone beneath the stage scutter about in fear, deeply afraid they'd be affected by his attacks and die.

In reality, before Sect Head Ouyang attacked, he had already enveloped the entire fighting stage with his might. He wanted to seal off Chu Feng's path to prevent him from escaping.

However, as he felt the pressure surrounding him formlessly attacking, Chu Feng did not move in the slightest, nor was he affected by anything in the slightest. To him, such pressure was akin to air. It did not even present an iota of threat to him.

"How can this be? This brat can actually resist my pressure?" Seeing that, Sect Head Ouyang tightly furrowed his brows and further confirmed that Chu Feng was not a simple person. He did not dare to be careless, so with a flash of light in his palm, a great blade—an Elite Armament—appeared within his hand.

whoosh With the Elite Armament in hand, he seemed as if he could rule the world. When it slashed down suddenly, a blinding half-moon blade of light appeared.

The blade of light seemed as though it could slice through anything. Even a deep black gap was slashed open in the air, and even the sky and earth turned dim. At that instant, what lit up that earth was no longer the sun, but the half-moon blade of light from the Elite Armament.

"Break!" However, as the blade of light came down, Chu Feng explosively shouted. That yell alone actually shattered the blade of light into pieces, dispersed the dark clouds above his head, and drove away all the enveloping dust that rose into the air from Sect Head Ouyang's might.

But that was not all. Seeing the Elite Armament quickly chopping downwards, Chu Feng still did not dodge. Only when it was about to touch him did he suddenly extend his hand and actually caught the blade that could slice open space.

"You..." At that instant, Sect Head Ouyang was dumbfounded. His old face turned deathly-white from fear because he discovered in astonishment that it was as if his Mastered Elite Armament was stuck in Chu Feng's hand. Not only was it unable to injure Chu Feng, he could not even move it a tiny bit.

But the thing that made him most shocked came afterwards. With a light smile on his face, Chu Feng put a slight bit of force into his hand, and pinched. Just like that, with a snapping sound, his Mastered Elite Armament had turned into fragments.

"How is this possible? You are only a rank one Martial Lord, how can you have this power?!" At that instant, Sect Head Ouyang finally felt Chu Feng's aura. He determined that Chu Feng was no more than a rank one Martial Lord, yet how could someone like him have such strength? He actually shattered the Elite Armament he used!

puchi Just as Sect Head Ouyang felt shocked and could barely accept that fact, he suddenly felt pain in his chest. Quickly after, warm liquid uncontrollably flowed out. Looking down, he saw Chu Feng's hand stabbed into his chest.

Under the gaze of the crowd, after Chu Feng stabbed his hand, which destroyed the Elite Armament, into Sect Head Ouyang's chest, he willed the Painting Sect's head to become a mist of blood with a bang, dying before his face.

The mist drifted about and permeated the air. However, it could not stain Chu Feng's clothes, nor dirty his face. The demeanor of a supreme expert was shown evidently at that moment.

After killing Sect Head Ouyang with lightning quick methods, Chu Feng suddenly cast his icy gaze over the crowd from the Painting Sect, and said chillingly, "I will only count to ten. After ten counts, those who dare to

remain within my line of sight will die! No! Exceptions!”

Chapter 710: Return

After Chu Feng spoke, they immediately wet themselves from fear. Even their sect head was killed, so how could placeholder troops like them resist?

So, at that very instant, the people from the Painting Sect had absolutely no reason to stay behind? With their full strength, they escaped into the distance for their lives, without leaving anything behind.

In reality, even many of the observers feared deeply they would be killed by Chu Feng, so they too left that troublesome region. Instantly, in the previously boisterous land near the Li family's residence, only people from the Li family and Chu Feng remained.

At that instant, the Li family's master as well as the others from the Li family hurriedly flew over, came before the fighting stage, and gave their gratitudes to Chu Feng.

Moreover, with an indication from the Li family's master, the crowd said simultaneously with a thunderous voice, "Sir, thank you for your assistance! Our Li family will never forget the favour you granted us today!"

As he spoke these words, the Li family's head deliberate acting of deep gratitude was so excellent, the only thing lacking was tears streaming down his cheeks.

But Chu Feng did not even say anything when the Li family's master and the other elderly people stepped upon the stage. He went up to Li Chan who was also thanking, propped her up, and said with a smile, "Miss, please quickly rise."

"Sir, are you truly called Wuqing?" Li Chan asked after being lifted up by Chu Feng and looking at him carefully.

"What about it?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"Eh... It's nothing. It's just that I have a friend whose name is the same, and the feeling you give me is also very close to that friend. But..." Li

Chan hesitated a bit when she reached that point.

"But what?" Chu Feng quickly asked.

"It's just that you're a lot younger than him, your cultivation is stronger, and in all areas you are far above him. It is truly impressive for a person your age to have already become a Martial Lord," Li Chan said while both idolizing and admiring. However, as she spoke, she couldn't help thinking of the middle-aged man who was also called Wuqing.

Although in various areas, the youth before him named Wuqing was many times more excellent than the middle-aged man called Wuqing before, in Li Chan's heart, however, the middle-aged man held a greater position because he changed her life completely.

"Haha." Chu Feng first laughed after hearing those words, then he intentionally used his sleeve to cover his face. When his sleeve fell down, Chu Feng's visage had changed. He changed into the appearance he took when he first came to the Wolf Ivory Mountain, looked at Li Chan, and said, "Miss, now you know who I am, right?"

"Heavens! You..."

When Li Chan looked at Chu Feng again, she instantly became dumbfounded because the person currently before her eyes had transformed his face. He was no longer a youth, but a middle-aged man.

However, his cultivation did not change. He was still a rank one Martial Lord. But that appearance... it was so familiar. It was so intimate. Was that not Wuqing, who had helped her before, saved the entire Li family, and assisted them in defeating the Ma family?

"This..."

In reality, not only was Li Chan shocked, many people from the Li family—especially the Li family's master—were shocked.

All of them recognized the middle-aged man that Chu Feng currently became. It was the person who had some past history with them. It was the person who had helped the Li family. But, at the same time, it was the person who was almost killed by the Li family's master, who repaid

kindness with enmity.

"Wuqing, it's you? It's truly you?!" Li Chan didn't know what to do from the shock. Even when she spoke, her words leaked the emotions she felt in her heart. No matter what, she did not think the two Wuqings would be the same person. That was too unbelievable.

After all, Wuqing back then was only in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. How did he become a rank one Martial Lord in a blink? Moreover, his ability to fight was even so terrifying! He killed Sect Head Ouyang in such an easy manner! It had to be said it was really quite an inconceivable notion.

However, in comparison to Li Chan's pure shock, the Li family's master and the others were both surprised and afraid. After all, even though Chu Feng genuinely wanted to help their Li family back then, the Li family's master did not accept such kindness and instead laid a pillar of animosity with, almost taking away Chu Feng's life.

Now, Chu Feng was so powerful. He had actually surpassed the Li family's master by such a huge margin, so how could the people from the Li family not be worried? If Chu Feng still harboured vengeful thoughts, it was likely they would be facing a disaster soon.

"Miss, of course it's me." Chu Feng firmly nodded his head.

"But, y-yo-your face, and your cultivation!" Li Chan said shockingly while pointing at Chu Feng's face.

"Ah, that is only some technique I use to hide my real appearance." Chu Feng lightly smiled, then used his sleeve to cover his face again. When it fell down, Chu Feng's face returned to its former handsome youthful appearance. Then, he smiled and said, "This is my actual appearance. As for cultivation... Actually, I was already a rank one Martial Lord when I first came to the Wolf Ivory Mountain."

Chu Feng did not say the truth. First, he intentionally used his sleeve to hide his face before changing it, but not immediately. It was to let Li Chan and the others misunderstand that it was a technique he used to alter his appearance, not a tool, nor an innate ability.

As for his cultivation, Chu Feng didn't bother to explain. So, he just said he was a rank one Martial Lord from the beginning. It was fine to just let them think he was a genius.

"Wuqing, you... I didn't think you were actually such a great character!"

Indeed, after hearing Chu Feng's words, Li Chan was shocked once again because the age and strength Chu Feng currently showed had clearly told them one thing—so it seemed that the person called Wuqing was a peak-level genius. A person like him definitely had unordinary origins. It was very possible he came from an enormous power.

At that instant, the Li family's master felt a hammer with the weight of five thousand kilograms ferociously striking his head. Swishing chilly winds blew past his spine, and his legs trembled uncontrollably.

As long as he thought of Chu Feng's real identity, then recalling the very actions he did to Chu Feng, he truly felt trepidation. Not to mention the enormous power behind Chu Feng, even Chu Feng alone could easily wipe out his Li family.

But just as everyone from the Li family worried whether Chu Feng would take revenge on them, Chu Feng flipped his palm, letting a bright mushroom containing immense Martial power appear.

After the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism appeared, almost everyone from the Li family lit up their eyes, involuntarily being attracted by it because they could feel that the glowing mushroom was most certainly a cultivation treasure.

The Martial power it contained was even stronger than the Ice Crystal Phoenix Egg Chu Feng took way back then in the Wolf Ivory Mountain. It was simply akin to a treasure one only heard in legends.

And just as everyone from the Li family stared blankly at the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, their faces full of longing, Chu Feng said more words that made them so shocked they were handicapped.

"Miss, when I, Wuqing, left back then, I said that this Ice Crystal Phoenix Egg is only a loan. One day, I would repay you with something of

equal value. And this, this high-rank Immortal Mushroom of Martialism is the object of equal value I will repay you with."

Chapter 711: Returning to the Four Seas Academy

"What? He actually wants to give such a rare treasure to our Li family?" When they heard those words, many people did not even dare to believe their own ears. After all, the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was too precious.

Besides, due to the manner the Li family treated him before, even if Chu Feng were to take away the Ice Crystal Phoenix Egg and give nothing back, it would be within reason. There was simply no need to return anything. So, they felt that the scene happening before their eyes did not match reality.

The only person who maintained rationality was Li Chan because she could be counted as the person in the Li family who understood Chu Feng the most. She knew Chu Feng wasn't such a narrow-minded person, otherwise he wouldn't help the Li family again and again.

And in reality, when she looked at the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism in Chu Feng's hand, Li Chan's heart was immediately moved. As long as one wasn't an idiot, they could tell what sort of energy the glowing mushroom contained, and what sort of assistance they would obtain in cultivation if they were to refine it.

But even so, Li Chan still shook her head with a light smile, and said, "Wuqing, this Immortal Mushroom of Martialism is too precious. I cannot have it.

"Besides, you've helped my Li family so many times. If it weren't for you, I'm afraid the Li family would not even be here right now. If there were no Li family, then what use would we have with the Ice Crystal Phoenix Egg? The favours you gave us far surpass the favours we gave you. You do not owe our Li family anything. Rather, our Li family owes you too much."

"This girl! How can she be so foolish? You don't even want a treasure that's sent right to your doorstep!" When Li Chan spoke, even the Li

family's master's heart was bleeding. He could really not understand why Li Chan would refuse to accept such a treasure.

But he could do nothing about it and could only think of it in his heart. At a time like this, he had no right to speak. He did not even dare to send a mental message to his own daughter, because he was too afraid of Chu Feng.

"I give it to you, so hold onto it.

"This is for you, not for your Li family.

"From the start, I have never felt that I, Wuqing, owed your Li family anything" Chu Feng forcefully put the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism into Li Chan's hand, then asked, "Which direction to the Flash Gold Temple?"

"The Flash Gold Temple isn't too far away from the Wolf Ivory Mountain. It is built in the Fragmented Moon Forest in the southeast," Li Chan replied as per the truth. But then, she quickly reacted to what he said, and quickly urged, "Wuqing, Monk Huang Jin is a rank three Martial Lord. Also, from what I've heard, he is already two hundred years old. Moreover, he is a ruthless person, sinister, and cunning. It's almost as if he's an old monster! Please, don't go look for him!"

However, Chu Feng only smiled at Li Chan's advice, and said, "Don't worry. No matter if it's the Painting Sect, or the Flash Gold Temple, they will not come look for trouble again. I will settle this issue for you, but remember—for you, not for your Li family."

whoosh After speaking, Chu Feng leapt up and flew towards the direction of the Flash Gold Temple. When Li Chan and others came to their senses, any traces of Chu Feng could no longer be seen.

"He isn't really going to look for Monk Huang Jin, right?" the Li family's master muttered while looking in the direction of the Flash Gold Temple. If possible, he did truly hope Chu Feng would finish off Monk Huang Jin. With that, his Li family would have quite a few less troubles. As for Chu Feng life, in reality, he did not care.

On the other hand, however, when she looked in the direction of Chu Feng's departure, Li Chan's heart was extremely worried. So, she quickly sent a message to the scout stationed near the Flash Gold Temple, telling him to pay attention to the events within the Flash Gold Temple.

On the third day since Chu Feng left, Li Chan finally received a report from the scout. After opening the letter and reading its content, a pleasantly surprised expression surged on Li Chan initially worried face.

On the letter, it clearly stated that Chu Feng arrived at the Flash Gold Temple on the day Chu Feng left the Li family. Moreover, before all of the disciples from the Flash Gold Temple, he destroyed Monk Huang Jin's cultivation.

Monk Huang Jin could not bear such shame, and shortly after Chu Feng left, he took away his own life.

At present, the Flash Gold Temple was in chaos. Several elders formed several factions and were madly fighting over the resources within the Flash Gold Temple. Also, other than the disciples who followed those elders, most of them left the Flash Gold Temple, going their own ways.

Right now, the overlord power that oppressed that land, the Flash Gold Temple, could no longer return to its former glory. It was destroyed by a man called Wuqing.

After reading the contents of the letter, Li Chan's hands were trembling slightly. Only after a long while did she come to her senses and murmured, "Wuqing, who exactly are you?!"

Chu Feng, of course, did not know of Li Chan's astonishment, nor the Li family's reactions, nor the reactions of all the other powers near the Wolf Ivory Mountain.

After taking care of Monk Huang Jin, the monk who committed many evils and threatened the Li family, Chu Feng had already went forth to the Four Seas Academy.

When walking upon the road he passed before, Chu Feng felt quite emotional. Although it had been less than a year since he arrived in the

Eastern Sea Region, he had experienced many things. Moreover, it had been just a little over a year since Zi Ling was taken away by the Zi family.

Within that time, Chu Feng's cultivation did indeed have an increase in essence, but it was still impossible for him to fight against the enormous power, the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Although Chu Feng put a lot of his hope to save Zi Ling on Qiu Canfeng as well as on the resources within the Imperial Tomb, in reality, Chu Feng did not view Qiu Canfeng as his only hope. Although he felt Qiu Canfeng genuinely wanted to help him, he could not be certain whether Fu Liansheng was really as reliable as Qiu Canfeng said. After all, "People only know appearances, not their hearts". Besides, people change.

So, right now, although Chu Feng's main goal was to find Fu Liansheng, he would not give up any chance to raise his cultivation. The so-called "Rather than relying on others, why not rely on yourself". If there were no one willing to help himself in the most crucial moment, then Chu Feng could only rely on himself to save Zi Ling and fight to the death with the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago because that was his promise to Zi Ling. No matter life or death, he would do it.

The Four Seas Academy was very large and its territory was very vast. However, it too had a protective Spirit Formation—not just any person could enter the academy. If one wished to enter the Four Seas Academy, they could only enter through several special preset entrances.

Also, other than the annual disciple recruitment day, people outside the Four Seas Academy were not allowed to enter as they willed.

In fact, at that instant, when Chu Feng arrived at the entrance, he discovered quite a few people gathered outside the vast gate. Moreover, from their words, Chu Feng could tell they wanted to see certain people within the Four Sears Academy. They gathered there because they wanted to have the disciple who guarded the entrance notify them.

But the Four Seas Academy was really too large, and every single disciple had a land that belonged to themselves. Even though the people

within the Four Seas Academy could use Teleportation Arrays to quickly travel, it was still very troublesome if they wanted to notify a person.

As a result, the number of people who gathered outside the Four Seas Academy became greater and greater. If one wanted to get the disciple who pass a message, they had to stand in a queue.

"What should I do?" Seeing the long line of people, and hearing that some people had actually lined up for over ten days yet it was still not their turn, Chu Feng really felt he had a headache.

At present, he had turned back to his true appearance. He turned back into the true Chu Feng.

Although he had matured quite a bit during that period of time, and some of his youthful appearance had faded away, Chu Feng could not attract too much attention when he was showing his actual identity.

So, he could not show his true strength, and as a result, he could not make others look at him with more importance, and could not enjoy special treatment. Yet, there were so many people lining up. Chu Feng simply did not have enough time to follow the rules and stand in queue.

"Oi, why are you not standing in line?"

"Bastard! We've painstakingly waited for so long! How can you do this?"

"Scram back, or else don't blame me for my impoliteness!"

However, just as Chu Feng felt his head throbbing, no clue on what to do, a young man with gorgeous clothing just ignored the long line of people and came up to the Four Seas Academy's big and grand gate.

The man was not only fearless while facing the crowd's curses, he even shouted very arrogantly, "Those who don't want to die, shut the hell up!" As he spoke, the man burst out his aura. So, he was a cultivator in the fifth level of the Heaven realm.

Although to Chu Feng, the fifth level of the Heaven realm was not even a strand of hair, obviously to those who stood in line, that cultivation was not a simple. As a result, even though there were grudgeful voices in their

hearts, no one dared to say much anymore.

Chapter 712: Cutting the Line

Not only did this man's cultivation of the fifth level of the Heaven realm scare those who were waiting in line behind, even the disciple who was guarding felt that this person was not simple. He asked, "Who are you? Why are you not abiding by the rules and not waiting in line?"

"Brother, my name is Liu Zhenbiao. My younger brother, Liu Zhenwei, is cultivating within the Four Seas Academy. I really do have urgent business I need him for, so that's why I've done this. I wonder... can you help me notify him?" asked the man, who proclaimed himself as Liu Zhenbiao, smilingly.

"You are Junior Liu Zhenwei's elder brother?" After hearing those words, the eyes of the guard instantly lit up. He did know Liu Zhenwei's name.

Although Liu Zhenwei was a new disciple who just recently entered the Four Seas Academy this year, with his young age he already had the cultivation of the fifth level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, he became a disciple of one of the Ten Divine Instructors, and was a disciple with great status, position, and potential.

Although in terms of seniority, the guard was above Liu Zhenwei, in terms of position, he was far below. Since the person before his eyes was Liu Zhenwei's elder brother, he naturally did not dare to treat him disrespectfully.

"I am. This is my proof of identity." Liu Zhenbiao nodded his head, and as he spoke, he even took out a badge. On top of it, "Liu family" was written.

When he saw that badge, the guarding disciple's attitude towards the man turned completely around. He hurriedly said, "Since you are Junior Liu's elder brother, you are a part of us. Naturally, we handle our own specially.

"Just now, a disciple responsible for notification came back. I'll have him notify Junior Liu right now and tell him to pick you up." As he spoke,

the guarding disciple crushed a Communication Talisman.

"Sorry to trouble you," Liu Zhenbiao said smilingly. As he did, he even shot a glance at the people who were still waiting in line, then said to the guard, "I wonder... when will the next person responsible for notifying arrive? I can see these people are very tired from waiting, so we cannot let them wait too long!"

Sarcasm. Absolute sarcasm. He clearly cut the line without shame and seized away the chance that should have belonged to another person, yet now, he dared to speak these words. He was intentionally mocking their powerlessness.

As for the guarding disciple, he was no idiot and understood Liu Zhenbiao's intentions in his heart. He said, "Recently, there are some things in the academy that require managing, so quite a few disciple we usually have here have been transferred away. We are really lacking heavily in people these days, otherwise, a situation like this wouldn't have happened.

"Although there are Teleportation Arrays throughout the Four Seas Academy, the academy is still very vast, after all. Even though there are a lot of Teleportation Arrays, there are still a limited number. In addition, a few disciples live in farther locations, so if we want to notify them, we really need some time for the journey. From my estimations, I'm afraid the next person can only return the day after tomorrow."

"What? The day after tomorrow?!"

"How can this be? I have urgent business with my family's young master!"

"Who doesn't? I too have an extremely urgent matter I need to tell my family's lady!"

The people lining up instantly panicked when they heard those words. Perhaps it was better for the people at the front, but who knew what year and month the people at the back needed to wait until before they could send a notification for someone to pick them up? If that continued, they could never enter!

“Ahh, quiet, quiet!” Just at that moment, the man called Liu Zhenbiao waved his hand at the crowd, indicating them to be silent, then said, “You’ve heard his words just now. It is really an issue with the internal affairs of the Four Seas Academy. They lack manpower, otherwise something like this wouldn’t happen.

“All of you should understand them! They have it hard too! If you truly cannot wait, you can always leave, right? No one’s forcing you to stay here.”

“You…”

When they heard Liu Zhenbiao’s words, it made the crowd so angry the roots of their teeth itched. He was really too shameless. Not only did he steal away their chance of notification, he was even mocking them, intentionally ridiculing them, making them feel even more unpleasant.

However, none of them were fools. They could tell he was not a simple person. When even the guarding disciple treated him with respect, what could they do? They could only endure.

“Senior Wang, what is it? I just came back from the main institution. Couldn’t you just let me rest for a bit longer?” Just at that moment, a rainbow came down from the sky. A disciple of the Four Seas Academy walked up to the guarding disciple with a yawn, and judging by his appearance, he didn’t even seem to be awake yet.

“Ahh, Junior Li. If possible, do you think I wouldn’t want you to rest longer? But I really do have an urgent notification waiting for you,” said the guarding disciple.

“What urgent thing? The disciples responsible for this place have all been called by Elder Xu to the residence for physical labour. The only ones remaining in this place are us two. For the past few days, I’ve ran back and forth and I’m almost going to break from tiredness. I’ve finally found the time to sleep for a while, yet I was woken by you,” the disciple surnamed Li said very displeasedly.

“This is Liu Zhenwei’s elder brother. He came to the Four Seas Academy from a faraway place, so you can’t just let him wait here, right?” The

guarding disciple pointed at Liu Zhenbiao.

"Sorry to trouble you." Liu Zhenbiao smiled at Disciple Li and clasped his hands.

If it were a normal situation, with his younger brother's status in the Four Seas Academy, he would absolutely not be so polite to a mere disciple guard.

But at present, he learnt from their words that of the people who guarded this gate in the Four Seas Academy, there were only two people who remained. No wonder it was so much work to send a notification.

In order to not delay his own business, he had to be polite. Although their position was low, if they were unhappy and delayed the notification, he could do absolutely nothing.

Even if he thought of a way to give them a lesson afterwards, his business was still delayed. Looking at the benefits and detriments, at present, he could only lower himself and request.

"Oh! So it's Junior Liu's elder brother. You are really too polite. Junior Liu often treats us quite well, so his elder brother is equal to our elder brother! This becomes our own matter—it is of no inconvenience.

"Brother, please wait here for a while. I will go right now and notify Junior Liu. Before dark, I will definitely have him here and welcome you in." Indeed, after knowing that Liu Zhenbiao was Liu Zhenwei's elder brother, Disciple Li also put away his former displeased attitude and put on a face of obsequiousness.

Those who waited in line for several days had expressions of helplessness when they saw that. But they could do nothing. What could they do about Liu Zhenbiao having high cultivation and also having such an outstanding younger brother?

"Wait." However, just as Disciple Li was preparing to leave, a loud and clear voice suddenly rang out. Quickly after, a person also flew out from the end of the crowd and landed before Liu Zhenbiao. That person was none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng could clearly hear all of their words, so he too knew that there was a lack in notification disciples in the Four Seas Academy.

Putting aside the amount of time he would need if he continued staying in line, even if he were right behind Liu Zhenbiao, he still had to wait until tomorrow before he had a chance to get someone for notification.

At first, Chu Feng really did not want to play tricks and use special methods to cut the line. After all, those who standing in the queue had waited for a long time.

But right now, since Liu Zhenbiao succeeded in shamelessly cutting the line, rather than letting a person like him enjoy all benefits, why not take that chance for himself? So, that was why Chu Feng stood out.

Chapter 713: Contest of Wealth

"Who are you? You dare to make such a racket in the Four Seas Academy?" yelled the two guards after looking at Chu Feng.

Although they were very polite to Liu Zhenbiao, not just anyone could receive such a special treatment. To others, they were often incomparably arrogant and domineering.

Chu Feng was not angry at their roars because he was very familiar with people like them. They merely bullied the weak and feared the strong, so Chu Feng didn't even bother arguing with them. Learning from Liu Zhenbiao's previous tone, he said, "Seniors, it's not that I'm not following the rules, nor am I intentionally making such noises in front of the Four Seas Academy's gate. It's just that I need to find my friends for urgent business."

"Oh? Brother, judging from your words, you're planning to cut the line, huh?

"Not trying to chastise you or anything, but do you feel no shame by cutting the line with so many people behind you waiting? If you want them to go notify your friends, go stay in queue." At that instant, before the guarding disciples even said anything, Liu Zhenbiao spoke first.

At that moment, Chu Feng had to say that Liu Zhenbiao was truly a shameless thing.

He was the one who clearly cut the line, yet now, he was so righteously talking about others in such a manner. That was really not something an ordinary person could do.

Indeed, after hearing Liu Zhenbiao's words, Disciple Li finally reacted to what was happening, and pointed at Chu Feng, saying after a cold snort, "If you want to look for someone, go in the queue from the back. Can't you see so many people are waiting?"

"One second." At that instant, the disciple named Wang was a bit calmer. After looking at Chu Feng again, he asked, "What are your

friends' names?"

He was probing because as a disciple who guarded the gate of the Four Seas Academy, he knew the names of the famous characters in the academy.

Thus, if Chu Feng were able to name a powerful existence, he could naturally not offend him. On the other hand, if Chu Feng named several people he had never heard of before, that would mean Chu Feng was stirring up trouble.

Not only would he shout at Chu Feng then, he would even give Chu Feng some punishments. For example, after over a dozen days of staying in queue and finally reaching his turn, he would intentionally make things more troublesome for him, or just not notify his friends for him.

However, what sort of person was Chu Feng? Of course, he instantly saw through his plans. So, he stuck out his chest with his head raised, and said without a change of expression, "I have four friends who are training in the Four Seas Academy. Their names are Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang."

"What!? Yo-you are?!"

When they heard those words, both of their expressions changed greatly. As guards, they obviously heard of Su Rou, Su Mei, as well as Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. The four of them were all disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors!

Moreover, the relationship between them was extremely good—that was very well-known—and not only were Su Rou's and Su Mei's talent outstanding, their appearances were akin to fairies. Within the Four Seas Academy, there were countless male disciples who chased after them.

But Su Rou and Su Mei did not pay attention to any of them. Only Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang were a bit close to them. Most importantly, Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, went to the various gates and specially ordered all of the guards to instantly notify them if a person called Chu Feng were looking for them.

In order to prevent them from being undutiful, Su Rou and Su Mei even gave them quite a few good things when giving them such an order. So, the guards paid very close attention to the name Chu Feng.

So, at that moment, the faces of the two guards changed greatly. They asked nearly at the same time, “Are you called Chu Feng?”

“I am indeed Chu Feng.” Chu Feng nodded his head with a smile.

“Ahh, so it’s Junior Chu Feng! You’re one of us, one of us!

“Junior Chu Feng, don’t worry. I will go notify them right away.” After the two guards confirmed Chu Feng’s identity, their attitudes became entirely different. They were even more welcoming than Liu Zhenbiao.

“This isn’t good.” But soon, Disciple Li’s face twisted slightly.

“What is it?” asked Disciple Wang hiddenly via mental messaging when he saw the faint change.

“Both of them want to see disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors! We cannot delay either one.

“But Junior Su Rou’s and Junior Su Mei’s residences are a very far distance away from Junior Liu’s residence! Moreover, there are no Teleportation Arrays in between, so even if I were to hurry, I still need at least half a day with my cultivation. This... Who should I go notify first?” Disciple Li said in a very trouble manner.

Although Liu Zhenbiao, as a person, was very shameless, he was at the same time very smart. With powerful World Spiritist methods, he eavesdropped their conversation.

So, with a quick thought, he took out an Elite Armament out of his Cosmos Sack, passed it to Disciple Li through the gate, and said, “Junior, sorry to trouble you.”

“Brother Liu, you are...?” Disciple Li’s eyes instantly lit up when he saw that. His eyes even gave out faint light. Liu Zhenbiao’s intention was very clear—he was bribing him, getting him to go notify Liu Zhenwei first.

Although he too was an expert in the Heaven realm, and he also had an

Elite Armament, it did not mean he did not put Elite Armaments in his eyes.

Quite oppositely, an Elite Armament, to him, was a very precious treasure. So, at that instant, he truly felt a surprised joy. No matter what, he did not expect Liu Zhenbiao to be so generous. That was quite an accidental harvest!

"Just a small token of my appreciation," Liu Zhenbiao said smilingly. He had a face of deep scheming and as he spoke, he even disdainfully looked at Chu Feng. It was as if his gaze were saying, "A small beggar fighting against me? Can you afford it?"

Chu Feng gazed with contempt at Liu Zhenbiao's disdainful look. He brushed his palm past his Cosmos Sack. Two shiny armaments then appeared within his palm. He gave them to the two guards, and said, "Seniors, a small token of my appreciation. Please accept them."

"Heavens! This..." After looking at the armaments in Chu Feng's hand, the disciples' expressions changed greatly because the two armaments currently in Chu Feng's hand established a sharp contrast with the Elite Armament in Liu Zhenbiao's hand.

The ones in Chu Feng's hand were also Elite Armaments, but they were not ordinary ones. They were Mastered Elite Armaments. Moreover, ones that were of excellent quality. One could say either one of them could beat the Elite Armament in Liu Zhenbiao's hand by a hundredfold, even a thousandfold.

"You..." At the same time, Liu Zhenbiao's complexion instantly changed greatly as well. Before, it was a face full of smugness; now, it turned greener than green bean soup!

He never would have thought the brat who was dressed incomparably poor and did not even seem worth more than a glimpse would be so lavish in his "token of appreciation". He took out two Mastered Elite Armaments and gave them to the guards so casually. Moreover, they were Elite Armaments of superb quality!

At that instant, not to mention those two disciples, even his own heart

was a bit moved when he saw the two Elite Armaments in Chu Feng's hand. Although his Liu family had money, it was not that wealthy as to freely give Mastered Elite Armaments to others.

Chapter 714: Brothers Meeting

"Ahh, Junior Chu Feng, you are too generous. You are really too generous." There was simply no need to even think about the two choices before their eyes. Although the two guards claimed Chu Feng to be too generous, they still unhesitantly went up to take his Mastered Elite Armaments.

After obtaining the Elite Armaments into their hands, Disciple Li patted his chest and said, guaranteeing, "Junior Chu Feng, don't worry. I will definitely go notify them with the quickest speed possible. They will arrive here and welcome you into the Four Seas Academy before the sky darkens."

As he spoke, he turned around and prepared to leave. His choice could be clearly seen—it was to first notify Su Rou and the others.

"Halt!" Liu Zhenbiao yelled when he saw that, then pointed at Disciple Li and said, "For all matters, it is first come, first served. Before, you clearly promised me to notify my younger brother first. How can you go back on your word after taking his two Mastered Elite Armaments? Do you even have any sense of morals?"

"I..." The two guards were a bit speechless when they were berated. Their faces even involuntarily flushed red because they too knew that their actions were in the wrong.

"Morals? Do you think a person like you is qualified to talk about morals?" Seeing as the two guards were clueless on how to reply, Chu Feng sneered then very disdainfully swept his gaze over Liu Zhenbiao.

"Hmph." Liu Zhenbiao coldly snorted and pay no more attention to Chu Feng. Again, he pointed at the two guards and said, "If you don't notify my younger brother first, in the future, you will bear the consequences. With my younger brother's status in the Four Seas Academy, he can put you both to death with a casual sentence."

When they heard those words, the two guards' faces changed with a whoosh. The reason they treated Liu Zhenbiao so respectfully before was

because they feared his younger brother, Liu Zhenwei. Indeed, according to his position in the Four Seas Academy, Liu Zhenwei did indeed have the strength Liu Zhenbiao claimed he had.

"What a joke. Who do you think you are? You think the Four Seas Academy is your home? You even dare to threaten the disciples of the academy? Who gave you these nerves?"

But at that moment, Chu Feng spoke again. Shortly after, he waved his hands at the two guards and said, "Seniors, don't worry. I know the elders of the Four Seas Academy have always been fair. They will not make things difficult for dutiful disciples like you."

"Thank you, Junior Chu Feng." The two disciples were no fools so they could tell Chu Feng aimed to protect them. Since they had already made such a decision, they could no longer escape. Thus, without more hesitation, Disciple Li immediately flew away and went to notify.

As for Disciple Wang, he made an exception and invited Chu Feng, who should have been waiting outside the gate, past the gate and inside. He brought Chu Feng to the resting room next to the gate, and when Su Rou and the others arrive, they would bring Chu Feng in.

After inviting Chu Feng into the resting room, Disciple Wang even said to Liu Zhenbiao in an arrogant tone, "You! Back to the queue!"

"You shameless bootlicker! With that brat behind your back, you dare to speak to me like this? In the future, I will have my brother kill you! Even if you kneel in front of me and beg, I will not forgive you!" At that instant, Liu Zhenbiao gritted his teeth in anger. One could even see smoke steaming out of his seven facial orifices.

"I told you to get back to the queue! Are you deaf? If you dare to continue pestering me, I will call people to lock you up!" Disciple Wang no longer feared Liu Zhenbiao's threats and actually threatened back at him.

Since he had already offended him, he was not afraid to make him a complete enemy because he knew after such an event, judging by Liu Zhenbiao's character, he would definitely not easily forgive him. So, if he

wanted to protect himself at present, he should not beg Liu Zhenbiao, but instead fawn over Chu Feng.

"You..." At that instant, Liu Zhenbiao's heart could truly explode from fury. If he could, he truly wished to rip apart Disciple Wang whilst he was alive. However, since his younger brother wasn't there and he wasn't a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, he could indeed not stir up too much trouble.

Ultimately, under the entertained gazes of the crowd, he circled around the crowd of people, dispirited, and stood at the very end of the line, starting to orderly stay in queue.

After Disciple Li received the gift, his efficiency was truly very high. Shortly after noon, a stream of light landed before the gate.

Chu Feng knew that person very well—it was Zhang Tianyi.

"Junior Chu Feng! Where is Chu Feng?" After Zhang Tianyi arrived, he looked everywhere for traces of Chu Feng.

"Senior Zhang, your cultivation has actually reached the fifth level of the Heaven realm in less than half a year! This is truly a divine speed of improvement!" Chu Feng walked out of the resting room. After seeing Zhang Tianyi, he felt very excited. He went up and very happily put his fist to Zhang Tianyi's chest.

He discovered Zhang Tianyi's cultivation had already entered the fifth level of the Heaven realm. One had to know before arriving at the Four Seas Academy, Zhang Tianyi was only in the third level of the Heaven realm. In less than half a year, he advanced two levels. That was a very quick speed.

"Haha, I'm nothing. You will be even more amazed when you see Su Rou and Su Mei! But no matter what, it's all thanks to you that we can have our present achievements." When he saw Chu Feng, Zhang Tianyi too was elated.

"All thanks to me?" Chu Feng's head was in a fog; he did not understand.

“Eh? Why can’t I see your level of cultivation? And you even say it’s a ‘divine speed of improvement’! From what I see, I have yet to catch up to you, and instead, I seemed to have been left behind even further!”

Zhang Tianyi examined Chu Feng and discovered he could simply not see through his cultivation. That made him even happier because he knew Chu Feng had many burdens. Deep in his heart, he hoped Chu Feng could become even stronger. He would absolutely not envy Chu Feng even if he surpassed him by a thousand times or ten thousand times. Because they were brothers.

“What? This Chu Feng’s cultivation is even above Junior Zhang Tianyi’s?!” When he heard those words, Disciple Wang’s eyes lit up and only then did he discovered he too could not see Chu Feng’s level of cultivation despite being a World Spiritist.

Looking back at Zhang Tianyi’s as well as Chu Feng’s reaction, it meant most likely Zhang Tianyi’s words were true. That made Disciple Wang even more shocked.

Zhang Tianyi was already so strong, and now, Chu Feng was clearly quite a bit younger than Zhang Tianyi yet had cultivation superior to Zhang Tianyi’s. He was truly an extraordinary genius! Even in the Four Seas Academy, there were very few people like him.

At that instant, he involuntarily celebrated inside—celebrating that the one he chose to rely on was Chu Feng, and not Liu Zhenbiao. Chu Feng’s potential surpassed Liu Zhenbiao’s by many times! The two of them could simply not even be discussed as equals.

“Hehe, whatever. You’ve always been mysterious, and your aptitude has always surpassed ours. Otherwise, the Four Seas Academy would have been enough to keep you here.

“Follow me. After that guard came to notify me, I told him to not notify Jiang Wushang, Su Rou, and as well as Su Mei. I didn’t want to let them know you’ve come, so I can secretly bring you to my residence and then give them a surprise.” Zhang Tianyi smiled cheerfully. Brothers separated for nearly half a year could now finally reunite. He was truly ecstatic.

Chapter 715: Special Technique

"Haha, good! Tonight, we brothers will not leave undrunk!" Chu Feng replied with a smile. He and Zhang Tianyi both came from the continent of the Nine Provinces, both cultivated in the Azure Dragon School, and they even passed through life and death together, and eradicated powerful enemies together. They were true brothers who looked after each other closely.

"Brother Chu Feng, I..." Just at that moment, the guard named Wang seemed to be hesitating, as if he had something he wanted to say.

An intelligent person like Chu Feng instantly saw the guard's plight. So, he said to Zhang Tianyi, "Senior Zhang, there's a bit of trouble here. However, I'm sure that it won't be much of a problem to you." Quickly after, Chu Feng briefly told Zhang Tianyi the matter with Liu Zhenbiao.

"Haha! I even thought it was something big! So it's that Liu Zhenwei." After hearing the events that had occurred, Zhang Tianyi roared with laughter, then intentionally cast his gaze towards the end of the long line outside the gate, and said loudly, "I don't know what Liu Zhenwei looks like in the eyes of outsiders, but in my eyes, he is less than a dog. Several days ago, he lost two front teeth because of me, and he is so embarrassed he won't come out and see people! If he dares to come and stir up any more trouble, I don't mind beating him up again!"

After speaking, Zhang Tianyi rose into the air with Chu Feng, disappearing at the horizon.

But as for Liu Zhenbiao who stood at the end of the queue, his mood was not great at all because from Zhang Tianyi's words, he could tell that his younger brother—who he thought to be incomparably arrogant and invincible—wasn't passing his days in the Four Seas Academy as well as he had imagined.

When Chu Feng arrived at Zhang Tianyi's territory, the sky hadn't grown dark yet. So, Chu Feng was able to clearly gaze at his land.

It was truly a vast area. There were not only small mountain ranges,

there were even large lakes. It was a very enormous region.

Zhang Tianyi also liked palaces quite a bit, so in his land, he got people to build quite a few grand palaces. When one looked at Zhang Tianyi's territory, it seemed more like a small-scale sect. However, the master of that place was Zhang Tianyi.

"Junior Chu Feng, how is it? The buildings here are quite nice, right?" Zhang Tianyi proudly asked.

"It is very good. Senior Zhang, it seems that you have passed your days quite satisfiedly huh?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Ahh, don't mention it. In the world of cultivation, how can there truly be a place where one feels satisfied? No matter where, there are battles!" Zhang Tianyi shook his head, then said, "I've already gotten people to get Su Rou, Su Mei, and Wushang over. In a while, stay a bit quiet. When they enter, give them a good surprise!"

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, but in reality, he was truly impatient to see the two beauties who belonged to him—Su Rou and Su Mei—and Jiang Wushang—the brother who was younger than him.

In Zhang Tianyi's land, there were quite a few servants. So, the speed in which he prepared a banquet was very fast. Rather, it was notifying Su Rou, Su Mei, and Jiang Wushang that was the troublesome part. After all, the Four Seas Academy was really too big. Even with the four of their territories being relatively close, they still needed a bit of time to be notified.

At that instant, in the large living room, before a table of wine and food, only Chu Feng and Zhang Tianyi were here. After a while of chatting, Zhang Tianyi suddenly asked, "Junior Chu Feng, where have you gone in this past half year? Have you discovered anything similar to the pattern on my jade ornament?"

Back then, when they first came to the Eastern Sea Region, Zhang Tianyi knew Chu Feng didn't prepare to enter the Four Seas Academy. So, he entrusted Chu Feng to help him search for clues related to his ancestry.

It was a pattern—or to be more precise, it should be a symbol—on a jade ornament. A sword with wings, both beautiful and overbearing; it was extraordinary.

"Although I haven't been to many places, no matter where I went, I've always carefully observed. I even indirectly asked others, but no one knew of this pattern, nor have anyone seen this pattern." Chu Feng shook his head, then said, "But the more I experience in the Eastern Sea Region, the more I feel that this pattern is not simple. So, Senior Zhang, I'm guessing either you were not born in the Eastern Sea Region, or you came from a very complicated area."

"Ahh, I've also been thinking about that question. After coming to the Four Seas Academy, I've seen many geniuses. Before, there were barely any people in the continent of the Nine Provinces who grasped Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, but in the Four Seas Academy alone, I've met three.

"However, although Forbidden Mysterious Techniques are powerful, there is a restriction in the end. After all, Forbidden Mysterious Technique are only techniques. They cannot be as powerful as Divine Bodies.

"But my Forbidden Mysterious Technique is a bit different. It's as though there is no end to it and can be cultivated endlessly. Some time ago, I reached a bottleneck. After breaking through that bottleneck, I felt my entire body's power becoming a lot stronger. Even my thoughts became sharper and while learning martial skills, I could grasp them quicker.

"Honestly speaking, right now, I actually already feel the doorstep to the sixth level of the Heaven realm. If some time is given to me, I will have absolutely no problem breaking into the sixth level of the Heaven realm.

"But that's not the most crucial point. It's that I can feel this bottleneck being not the only one. There are more that come later, and as long as I can keep on making breakthroughs, my power will continue increasing many times over.

“However, I’ve asked others who cultivate Forbidden Mysterious Techniques, and have also asked my instructor. The Forbidden Mysterious Technique they speak of is different from the one I’m cultivating.

“That leads me to feel that the one I have seems to be more obscure and more profound than they think. It could even be said to be completely unique,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“Senior Zhang, can you let me see the Forbidden Mysterious Technique you cultivate?” After hearing Zhang Tianyi’s words, Chu Feng felt quite shocked. So, he wanted to see what exactly the Forbidden Mysterious Technique was.

“Of course.” As for Zhang Tianyi, he was very straightforward. He took out the Forbidden Mysterious Technique he viewed as treasure and gave it to Chu Feng.

If a normal person wanted that Forbidden Mysterious Technique, unless one took away Zhang Tianyi’s life, he would absolutely not give it to anyone. But if Chu Feng wanted it, it was a completely different matter; they were true brothers.

Chu Feng started to carefully examine it. With a glimpse he read ten lines. His reading speed was extremely quickly, and after only a moment, without missing a single word, Chu Feng finished reading the entire book.

However, after reading it, a strange glint flashed into Chu Feng’s eyes. Although his appearance seemed tranquil, his heart was like an ocean turning upside down.

“Senior Zhang, can you let me inspect your body?” Chu Feng asked again after some contemplation.

“Of course you can.” As Zhang Tianyi spoke, he moved his chair before Chu Feng and sat down.

After Chu Feng put his hand to Zhang Tianyi’s wrist, he imbued Spirit power into it and carefully observed. Then, he used the Heaven’s Eyes and examined detailedly for a while.

After finishing, Chu Feng’s face was full of seriousness, but in his eyes,

there appeared an irrepressible joy.

Chapter 716: Abandon? Experience?

Actually, it was not the first time Chu Feng read a Forbidden Mysterious Technique because when he was at the Misty Peak, within the four Cosmos Sacks Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan gave him, there was one that contained such a technique.

Back then, due to curiosity, Chu Feng had briefly glanced at it. After doing so, however, Chu Feng was amazed at the profoundness of Forbidden Mysterious Techniques. He discovered their creators were indeed extremely exceptional.

But Chu Feng also confirmed that despite being powerful, Forbidden Mysterious Techniques were, after all, only techniques. Although they could allow those who cultivate the techniques to have a quicker speed of improvement of those in the same generation, there was still a huge element of danger. The success rate of cultivation was not high, and even if one succeeded there were limitations. They could not be discussed on the same level as Divine Bodies.

Zhang Tianyi's Forbidden Mysterious Technique, however, was totally different. It was very difficult to cultivate his technique, and even if Chu Feng tried there he would have many troubles.

But something he was sure of was that the energy within Zhang Tianyi's Forbidden Mysterious Technique definitely surpassed the technique Chu Feng saw by a huge margin.

The cultivation method in Zhang Tianyi's book merely scratched the surface. If one grasped it entirely, they could probe out, on their own, deeper undiscovered realms, and even probe out the bottleneck Zhang Tianyi spoke of.

In other words, if one were to cultivate Zhang Tianyi's Forbidden Mysterious Technique, as long as they broke through the bottlenecks, they would gain enormous benefits. And, there were no limits to that bottleneck—as long as one had sufficient comprehension strength and a firm grasp on the Mysterious Technique, they had no problems continue

making breakthroughs.

A Forbidden Mysterious Technique like that was equivalent to one that had no restraints. One could even say that the profoundness and obscurity in the Forbidden Mysterious Technique were very similar to a Divine Body, and it was truly a technique that could be talked on equal grounds with Divine Bodies.

Although not much of an advantage could be seen at present, so long as he continued progressing, the advantage would continue enlarging. One day, he would be unstoppable and could shock the world with his sudden rise in power.

Most importantly, after Chu Feng's analyzation, although, on the surface, there weren't any requirements for cultivators of the Mysterious Technique, it actually had extremely harsh ones. Only a special preset group of people could cultivate it, and even Chu Feng did not match the cultivation requirements for the Forbidden Mysterious Technique.

Zhang Tianyi, however, was the person precisely suitable for cultivating the Forbidden Mysterious Technique. Also meaning other than Zhang Tianyi or those similar to him, cultivating the Forbidden Mysterious Technique meant it led to only a suicidal path if it were unsuitable for them. In regards to consequences, if it were superficial, they would walk into evil and die. If it were significant, they would become a bloodthirsty demon that lost its rationality.

"Junior Chu Feng, have you seen something?" Zhang Tianyi worriedly asked when he saw Chu Feng's face of graveness.

"Senior Zhang, I've looked through your Forbidden Mysterious Technique and I think I understand now." Chu Feng did not immediately answer Zhang Tianyi's question. He first gave the Forbidden Mysterious Technique he had to Zhang Tianyi.

Without delay, Zhang Tianyi read it seriously, but afterwards, he too was confused and even asked Chu Feng, "Junior Chu Feng, is yours truly a Forbidden Mysterious Technique? Why is there such a huge difference from the one I'm cultivating?"

“Senior Zhang, do you still not understand? As you said, your Forbidden Mysterious Technique is indeed different from the others. It can even be said to truly be a technique that is tantamount with a Divine Body.

“The only difference is during the birth of Divine Bodies, they would make a phenomenon in the sky. After birth, their abilities are shown distinctly and from start to finish, they give others a feeling of exceptionality and pride.

“I believe if Zi Ling did not suffer from the special curse after birth, her present achievements would definitely be unimaginable because she is a true Divine Body.

“But your Forbidden Mysterious Technique has potential no weaker than Divine Bodies. It’s just that there is nothing special with the early cultivation periods. One could even say it is the exact same as other Forbidden Mysterious Techniques—yes, they are special techniques, but they are incomparable to Divine Bodies.

“However, as long as you make a breakthrough past a bottleneck, your entirety—from head to toe, from organs to cells—will change in essence. The more you make breakthroughs, the more brilliant you will appear.

“From what I see, as long as you continue cultivating this Forbidden Mysterious Technique, there will be one day when you have power not inferior to Divine Bodies.

“And, the most important thing is that only you can cultivate this Forbidden Mysterious Technique.”

Chu Feng said as per the truth, but his face was overflowing with happiness. Having such a technique meant Zhang Tianyi’s future accomplishments were unlimited. Perhaps there would be one day when Zhang Tianyi would catch up to Chu Feng, maybe even surpass him. It was not impossible.

And as Zhang Tianyi’s good brother, Chu Feng was naturally happy for him to have obtained such a treasure.

“That means, my ancestry is truly…” Zhang Tianyi had made guesses

already, and a few of them were confirmed more and more when he heard Chu Feng's words.

"Senior Zhang, I just want to say you and I are very similar, but I am luckier than you. At least, when I lacked power, I had a good foster father and a good elder brother who were willing to take care of me, but you, on the other hand, did not." Chu Feng felt quite sentimental. Zhang Tianyi's ancestry was unordinary, but he was the same; yet, Zhang Tianyi had to go through so much.

"Haha, it's actually not much. If I hadn't experienced those things while young, I may not be so determined as I am now. I'll say something from my heart: I have never hated my parents, nor blamed them. No matter what their reason was, I still hope they are well. I hope they are all healthy when I find them, so we, as a family, can reunite and not be separated anymore.

"As for the suffering I received due to the lack of their presence, I'll just take it as a training experience for myself." Zhang Tianyi laughed, his smile very cheerful. However, one could still tell he was really longing for his family.

"Experience, huh? Wiping away the memories of one's own flesh, abandoning him, then paying no more attention to him?"

Chu Feng thought of Zhang Tianyi's words, but he did feel it was not impossible. Although the bond between blood was strong, everyone was different, after all. In order to prevent one's child from developing any reliance and turn them strong, there were indeed people who would do such a thing.

"Could it be... my parents are also testing me?" Chu Feng suddenly had such a thought.

"No, absolutely not. If it is truly a training experience, why would they send someone to protect me? I'm sure there must be some sort of trouble." But soon, Chu Feng dispelled that theory.

bang Just at that moment, the palace's door was suddenly kicked open by someone. Jiang Wushang entered swaggeringly, and as he walked, he

even yelled his throat out, “Big Brother Tianyi, what business do you have with me so late?”

“Brother Wushang, have you been well?” Chu Feng asked. Seeing that Jiang Wushang also stepped into the fourth level of the Heaven realm, Chu Feng couldn’t help standing up and smiling.

“B-big Brother Chu Feng, wh-wh-when did you return?

“My gods, I, I, I, I’ve missed you!” When he saw Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang’s face changed greatly. His former languidness was no more, and replacing it was uncontrollable elation.

Moreover, as he spoke. Jiang Wushang leapt forward right up to Chu Feng and gave him a great, manly bear hug.

Chapter 717: Live Together

"Waa, it smells so good! I told you! Senior Zhang wouldn't have called us over for no reason. Let's quickly go in! Tonight, we're going to have delicious things to eat!"

"You little girl... Have you ever lacked delicious foods in your own residence?"

"Hehe, but that's different! The dishes in Senior Zhang's residence are more suitable for my appetite! One day, I will take away the person who makes Senior Zhang's food for myself, because the ones over here are too delicious!"

Just at that moment, two voices—one mellifluous and brimming with spirit, one melodious and overflowing with maturity—suddenly continuously rang out outside. Shortly after, two strikingly beautiful women entered the palace whilst holding hands.

One had an unblemished countenance, a sweet smile, an exquisite and lithe figure, and fair and lustrous skin. With only a glimpse, one would be drunk to the bones from her beauty. It was truly extremely pleasing to the eyes.

The other had a charming appearance, a powerful atmosphere about her, a figure with a protruding front and behind... She was extremely alluring, and when one looked at her, their blood vessels would burst from the explosion of excitement. One would strongly wish to leap into her embrace and get closer to her.

Those two were naturally Su Mei and Su Rou, the beautiful sisters.

"Su Rou, Su Mei, look! Look who's come to see us!" When he saw Su Rou and Su Mei, before Chu Feng even spoke, Jiang Wushang happily yelled at them.

As they gazed in the direction of Jiang Wushang, Su Rou's and Su Mei's bright faces instantly froze; even their bodies tightened up. Their roundly widened, glinting eyes and faintly quivering brows were a manifestation

of their current emotions.

"Chu Feng~~~~"

Suddenly, Su Mei cried out. When she cried out "Chu Feng", she vented out all of the longing she had for Chu Feng built up from every single day and night.

Moreover, as she spoke, Su Mei leapt and came before Chu Feng. With no care for his well-being, she pulled Jiang Wushang, who was standing in front of Chu Feng, to the side. The powerful force she put into her pull caught Jiang Wushang off guard, causing him to trip onto the ground, putting him in quite a sorry state as his face was full of helplessness.

However, Su Mei cared little for this. The little beauty who thought of Chu Feng every day had already tightly glued herself into Chu Feng's embrace. A pair of pure-white jade-like hands circled around Chu Feng's neck, hugging him quite tightly.

"Heh, Big Brother Tianyi, should we withdraw for a moment?" Jiang Wushang, sitting on the ground, scratched his head and looked at Zhang Tianyi while chuckling.

Although Su Rou and Su Mei didn't say much in the days Chu Feng wasn't there, Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi could tell how much the two girls longed for him. They truly loved him with their entirety.

"You know to withdraw, so what are you staring at? Let's quickly go!"

Zhang Tianyi was more direct. He grabbed Jiang Wushang, became a burst of light wind, and vanished. As he left the palace, he even quite tactfully closed the doors.

"What? You're finally willing to come back? I even thought you forgot about us sisters..." Su Rou also went over. At present, she had great elegance, and the atmosphere surrounding her was greater. She was more mature than before, and also more enchanting. Although her words were a bit harsh, there was still a bewitching smile worn on her face.

Such a smile... One's heart could truly melt when it was gazed upon.

“Chu Feng, where have you been for so long? My sister and I have missed you.” Su Mei raised her head and looked at Chu Feng, then put her head back into Chu Feng’s bosom and intimately rubbed against it.

“What can I even do? I’ve been busy fiddling around.” Chu Feng smiled, then as Su Rou wasn’t paying attention, he put his arm around Su Rou’s slender waist. He brought the mature and alluring great beauty into his embrace. Moreover, after doing so, he even secretly slid his palm deep into Su Rou’s skirt, moving it to and fro on Su Rou’s thin, smooth, and long legs.

Su Rou did not resist in any way as Chu Feng did such a thing. She obediently stayed within Chu Feng’s embrace, and allowed him to do whatever. Although she was incomparably domineering when facing others, before Chu Feng, she was as submissive as a kitten.

“The speed of your improvement in cultivation is so quick! In less than half a year, both of you stepped into the fifth level of the Heaven realm, and both of you have even put Brother Wushang behind. That’s very impressive!” Chu Feng smilingly said as he hugged the two beauties with varying elegance while he felt them up slightly.

He finally knew why Zhang Tianyi told him he would be more amazed when he saw Su Rou and Su Mei. It was because their speed of improvement was really a bit overwhelming.

“We sisters innately have ordinary aptitudes, so if it weren’t for the special pearls sealed within our bodies, it would be impossible for us to have our current cultivations. But, in the end, it’s thanks to Zi Ling,” Su Rou said.

“Zi Ling?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback when he heard those words, feeling very shocked.

“Yes. Zi Ling knew we were going to enter the Four Seas Academy, so shortly after you left, she sent a person to the academy and entrusted that person to give us large amounts of cultivation resources.

“Moreover, there were some high-level martial skills and cultivation insights. Senior Zhang being able to break through his Mysterious

Technique's bottleneck was also because of Zi Ling.

"It was she who gave him the insights on how to understand deeper power, and he found the point of breakthrough from those insights. As a result, he was able to have such a gain and accomplish what he has right now," Su Rou said.

"That's right! Zi Ling truly treats us well. She not only loves you, she even treats us as family." Su Mei also nodded firmly. It could be seen that she too liked Zi Ling quite a bit.

"Chu Feng, this is the letter she sent you. Take a look. Although she hasn't personally seen us, I'm sure she must have some sort of unspeakable trouble. I'm guessing that the Zi family hasn't given her freedom." As she spoke, Su Rou gave Chu Feng a letter.

He hurriedly opened it and started to read in a serious manner. After reading its contents, Chu Feng's eyes became very bright, even a bit moist.

"The former me was very selfish. For cultivation, I could take away others' lives.

"The present me is still very selfish. For you, I can give up my own life.

"I am yours, only yours. My being is yours, my heart is yours—forever yours.

"Even if one day, my being exists no more, my heart will definitely stay by your side.

"Chu Feng, I miss you... Chu Feng, I'm waiting for you..."

The scarce number of words were sufficient for multitudinous thoughts. The scarce number of words were sufficient for her feelings to be expressed.

At that instant, Chu Feng's heart ached so much it could melt. No matter how strong he was normally, at that moment, his heart was trembling.

He carefully folded the letter, then put it into his pocket, pressing it

close to his chest. He thought in his heart, “Zi Ling, wait for me. Even if I need to pierce through this sky, I will be together with you. Even if I need to shatter this ground, I will be together with you. Even if there are billions upon billions of people standing between you and me, I will slaughter those billions and billions of people, and then be together with you.

“A mere Immortal Execution Archipelago is nothing. They cannot stop me, nor is there anything that can stop me. Although it is only death if I fail, what I want is not to live together and die together. What I want is for both of us to live together—and only that.”

Chapter 718: Millennium Ancient City

After putting away Zi Ling's letter, Chu Feng made a decision. After determining the genuineness of the arranged fight at the Depraved Ravine, he would head to the Zi family and no matter what, see Zi Ling once.

Afterwards, although Su Rou and Su Mei, the two beauties, stayed by Chu Feng's side, he still called Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang back in. Firstly, Chu Feng wasn't a person who put his libido completely above his friendship. Furthermore, today was a reunion for all of them. He couldn't just let the two of them stay outside in the wind, right?

The five people who came to the Eastern Sea Region together now gathered together once again. One need not even mention how strong the feeling of liveliness was. Every single person felt joy from their hearts.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, have you heard of an extremely powerful character appearing in the Eastern Sea Region recently? His fame has already surpassed Murong Xun's!" Jiang Wushang suddenly asked as he reached the peak of excitement from drinking.

"A person whose fame surpassed Murong Xun? Who?" Chu Feng shook his head, a bit confused. At present, Murong Xun was the publicly agreed number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Those whose fame could surpass his were only elderly experts. Yet, elderly experts shouldn't have been compared to Murong Xun.

"Haha, I knew you wouldn't know! I've only received news just now, but I'm sure it will spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region soon. Murong Xun will feel shame soon as well!"

Jiang Wushang spoke very smugly. He knew of the matter between Chu Feng and Zi Ling, so he knew Murong Xun was Chu Feng's archenemy. Knowing Murong Xun in an embarrassed situation would make Chu Feng feel immense joy.

"Brother Wushang, what exactly is it? Don't leave me in suspense. Tell us!" When Murong Xun was mentioned, Zhang Tianyi was interested as

well.

"Yeah! Quickly tell us!" the curious Su Mei said as well.

"Heh, you should know about the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, right? It's an event only the peak geniuses of the Eastern Sea Region can participate in," Jiang Wushang said.

"Tch. And I was even wondering what it was. Of course we know of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm! From what I've heard, it's on the Misty Peak and only opens once every few years.

"Every time it opens, the Misty Peak invites the top geniuses of the Eastern Sea Region to participate in it. The more Martial Markings gathered, the better the martial skill exchanged. Murong Xun is the holder of the best record—he has once obtained a Mortal Taboo martial skill from the Immortal Execution Archipelago," Su Mei said with great understanding.

At that moment, Chu Feng was instantly speechless. He could already tell the person Jiang Wushang was talking about, the person whose fame surpassed Murong Xun, was actually himself!

Although his harvest in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm indeed surpassed Murong Xun, to say he was superior to Murong Xun just because of that was really a bit too ridiculous.

Chu Feng knew in his heart that there was still a huge distance between him and Murong Xun. At least, with his current strength, he might not even win against Murong Xun's fiancée, Ya Fei. Chu Feng had to make another breakthrough past another level, otherwise he would likely be defeated by Ya Fei. As for Murong Xun, Chu Feng was far from being able to defeat him.

Although he knew the person Jiang Wushang was about to mention was himself, Chu Feng did not admit that "Wuqing" was him because doing so at a time like this was equal to "sticking gold on his face"—blowing his own horn.

Since they would learn of that secret sooner or later, it was fine to not

speak of it now. So, Chu Feng just chose to continue listening.

"Hehe, that Murong Xun has become 'past tense' now. In this year's Immortal Execution Archipelago, a person called Wuqing appeared. From what I've heard, he's gotten six thousand Martial Markings! One must know that the record set by Murong Xun was only two hundred Martial Markings."

Indeed, Jiang Wushang started to proudly announce the very actions Chu Feng did on the Misty Peak, and judging by his enthusiasm, he simply took Wuqing as an idol.

"Six thousand Martial Markings? The difference is that huge?" After hearing Jiang Wushang's words, stunned expressions appeared on Zhang Tianyi's, Su Rou's, and Su Mei's face.

"Heh, and that's not even much. I've also heard that Wuqing's battle strength is extraordinary. With the power of a rank one Martial Lord, he defeated a rank three Martial Lord. You should all know that the difference in ranks in the realm of Martial Lords is enormous! Even though we, in the Heaven realm, can fight others who are in superior levels, I'm afraid we will not be able to do so anymore after arriving in the Martial Lord realm. However, that Wuqing can.

"Moreover, not only is his strength outstanding, he is even skilled in Spirit Formation techniques. That right! I've heard he can also use Secret Skills!" Speaking to then, Jiang Wushang looked at Chu Feng and said, "Big Brother Chu Feng, after coming to the Eastern Sea Region, it's the first time I've heard there's a person other than you who can use a Secret Skill. Say, don't you think that Wuqing is impressive?"

"From what you've said, that Wuqing is truly not simple. I would quite like to meet a person like him." Before letting Chu Feng speak, Zhang Tianyi nodded his head, expressing he gave that Wuqing his approval.

"Yeah! From what I see, his power will surpass Murong Xun sooner or later. He is Murong Xun's greatest enemy!

"Wuqing... This name is quite domineering. A heartless [1] person. Haha, I like it!" When Jiang Wuqing reached an energetic point from

speaking, he even drank a cup of wine with a refreshed face.

[tl: [1] = Wuqing = heartless]

“Okay! No matter how much more powerful he is, how is that related to us?

“Since we have this time, let’s instead think of the matter of the Millennium Ancient City that will occur two days later,” Su Rou interrupted.

“Yeah, the Millennium Ancient City is going to open soon. Brother Wushang, are you prepared?” When the Millennium Ancient City was mentioned, Zhang Tianyi turned solemn as well.

But Jiang Wushang had a face full of helplessness as he said, “If only the nine of us were going in, there wouldn’t be many problems. But this time, even Wang Yue is going in. Also, from what I’ve heard, his elder brother, Wang Long, will join him as well. With that Wang Long, I’m afraid even if there were benefits it wouldn’t be our turn to acquire them.”

“Wang Long is really going? Is this news reliable?” Su Rou worriedly asked when she heard those words.

“It is absolutely correct. This matter is pretty much set,” Jiang Wushang said with a sigh in a very helpless manner.

“Truly dammit. That Wang Yue is hard to deal with already, and now, Wang Long appears! Originally, this was an extremely rare and good chance for Wushang! Are we going to miss out on it just like this?” Su Mei too gritted her teeth from anger, speaking resentfully.

But at that instant, Chu Feng, who was sitting on the side and completely confused from listening, could bear it no longer and finally asked, “What is with this Millennium Ancient City all of you are talking about?”

“Ah, it’s like this. Doesn’t the Four Seas Academy seal many remains and secret areas, and provides cultivation land for the disciples of the Four Seas Academy? This Millennium Ancient City is one of the extremely important ones.

“Each year, the Millennium Ancient City opens only once. Furthermore, when it does open, only the several most excellent ones from the new disciples of the Four Seas Academy are allowed in. And, as the disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors, all of us are qualified,” Su Mei said.

“Isn’t that a good thing? Why the long faces?” Chu Feng asked quickly. He knew there was definitely some sort of reason.

“Within the Millennium Ancient City, there are large amounts of Heaven medicines, even Martial medicines. After entering, there will definitely be a battle over them.

“The disciples of the Divine Instructors are not much trouble. After all, the level of our cultivation is pretty much the same. However, Wang Yue is an anomaly.

“He’s a new disciple who entered the Four Seas Academy at the same time as us. However, he directly became the sub-academy head’s genius disciple. His cultivation is far above ours. From what I’ve heard, he is now in the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

“If it were only him, that would be fine; but at present, he even wants his elder brother accompanying him. His elder brother is also the disciple of the sub-academy head. Moreover, he is one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy, a rank four Martial Lord.

“The difference between us and a rank four Martial Lord is simply the distance between heaven and earth! Moreover, that Wang Long is an infamous ‘shield’. I fear if he enters the Millennium Ancient City at the same time as us, we won’t be able to obtain anything and it will all be taken by that Wang Yue,” said Su Mei very worriedly.

“Wang Long?” At that instant, Chu Feng sank into contemplation. He felt a sense of familiarity with that name. Suddenly, a glint flashed into his eyes and he thought, “Ah, I remember.”

Chapter 719: Imperial Bloodline

Who was Wang Long? Not only did Chu Feng know, he even saw him before.

When he was in the Misty Peak, Wang Long, as well as two other genius disciples from the Four Seas Academy, Qin Yu and Lan Xi, had always been close to Chu Feng; however, Chu Feng did not befriend them much.

Although Chu Feng would fear a rank four Martial Lord before, his real cultivation, at present, was the eighth level of the Heaven realm. If he used the three lightnings, he would be a rank two Martial Lord.

When he was a rank one Martial Lord, Chu Feng could absolutely crush a rank three Martial Lord. As a result, if he were a rank two Martial Lord, he could naturally crush a rank four Martial Lord. So, it didn't matter if Wang Long was one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy. Chu Feng truly did not put him in his eyes.

Thus, he asked, "Didn't you say only new disciples could enter? Since some time has passed since Wang Long entered the Four Seas Academy, he shouldn't be qualified to enter."

"They did say that, but Wang Long is in a special position. After all, the 'three great geniuses' is the signboard of the Four Seas Academy. They are the ones who are shown to others. If he wants to enter, the Four Seas Academy will allow it," said Su Mei very helplessly. It could be seen that she was very bitter that Wang Long could enter the Millennium Ancient City. However, she could do nothing about it.

"If it's only Heaven medicines and Martial medicines, then just let them go because this time, I've prepared some presents for you!" Chu Feng said with a smile. He knew the presents he prepared for Su Rou and the others completely surpassed their expectations.

"Sigh~~" But who would have thought even after hearing the word "present", Jiang Wushang's face was still very dispirited and could not turn to joy. He seemed to care a lot about the Millennium Ancient City.

“Brother Wushang, why so downcast?” Chu Feng asked.

“Junior Chu Feng, if it were only Heaven medicine and Martial medicine, we would not be acting like this. We actually don’t lack Heaven medicine, and even though Martial medicines are precious, powerful, and not something we can catch, there is a reason why we said the Millennium Ancient City is a rare opportunity to Brother Wushang,” Zhang Tianyi said.

“What reason?” Chu Feng asked quickly.

“Brother Wushang, you should be the one to say this.” Zhang Tianyi looked at Jiang Wushang.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, it’s like this. This Millennium Ancient City actually has several thousand years of history already. It has a long history, and before the Four Seas Academy was built, it had already appeared.

“Regarding the Millennium Ancient City itself, it does have a legend. It’s said several thousand years ago, the ones who claimed control over the Millennium Ancient City was a Monstrous Beast race that had special bloodlines. At that time, the race was powerful. In the entire Eastern Sea Region, it was extremely famous. It’s also said not a single force of power dared to anger that race.

“One day, however, they were suddenly eradicated. Some say it was the actions of a man, and on the man’s forehead, a word was written.”

“What word?”

“Emperor!”

“Emperor? Could it be the person who possess the fabled Imperial Bloodline?” Chu Feng was also shocked when he heard about that.

“If the legend is true, then there must be a person who has an Imperial Bloodline. Moreover, from what I’ve heard, after killing the Monstrous Beast race, that man did not exit the Millennium Ancient City.

“Also, the facts proved that at present, the core of the Millennium

Ancient City is no longer there. It mysteriously disappeared.

"So, many people are guessing that the man, with divine abilities, concealed the core of the Millennium Ancient City, and then he peacefully rested within.

"Although it is near impossible for me to make the concealed core of the Ancient City reappear with my strength, perhaps I can procure a few clues in the Millennium Ancient City regarding that man. Even a tiny bit will maybe be of great assistance to me.

"However, if that Wang Long also enters, I'm afraid many things will be restricted. I worry our freedom will also be restricted. Also, I have an inauspicious premonition that he will ruin my business in there." When he spoke up to there, the anxiousness on Jiang Wushang's face became even stronger.

And when Chu Feng reached that point, he understood everything. Right now, Jiang Wushang only had a Royal Bloodline. An Imperial Bloodline could be said to be the goal he fought towards.

And despite there being only a single word of difference between Royal Bloodline and Imperial Bloodline, it was, in reality, the distance between heaven and earth. If he wanted to acquire an Imperial Bloodline from his current Royal Bloodline, it would not be unreasonable to call it an unreachable dream.

Even though the things related to the Imperial Bloodline in the Millennium Ancient City were only legends and there was a minuscule chance in finding clues, to Jiang Wushang, it was still an extremely rare chance. So, that was the reason why he treated this event so seriously.

"Brother Wushang's aptitude was originally very strong. After all, in the entire Jiang Dynasty, he was the one with the densest bloodline in all of history.

"Yet, now, Little Mei and I have the Ice and Fire Pearls in our bodies. With their power, our speed of cultivation growth is extremely quick. In less than half a year, we surpassed him.

“As for Senior Zhang, the Forbidden Mysterious Technique he cultivates is very special. He was initially a bit stronger than Brother Wushang, yet now, since he broke through a bottleneck, he has left Brother Wushang far behind.

“Even though he doesn’t say it, we can tell that Brother Wushang doesn’t feel good in his heart. Recently, he is working harder and harder in cultivation, skipping even rest and sleep.

“All of our hearts ache when we see him in that condition. We want to help him, but we don’t know how. He has yearned for this Millennium Ancient City for a long time. Although we know hope is distant, he still has high hopes.” Just at that moment, Su Rou hiddenly sent mental messages to Chu Feng.

When he heard all of that, Chu Feng’s heart was quite bitter as well. Indeed, back then, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, Jiang Wushang was the pride of many. He was even stronger than Chu Feng.

But now, everyone who came to the Eastern Sea Region at the same time as him had surpassed him. The uncomfortable feeling in his heart was something unavoidable.

But that was not Jiang Wushang feeling envy towards Su Rou and the others for being stronger than him. It was just that he felt very useless. If that situation continued, it was possible he would take shortcuts for temporary increases in strength and throw his future to the grave.

So, Chu Feng asked, “Is Senior Taikou of the Ten Divine Instructors in the Four Seas Academy?”

“Taikou? That odd old man?” When they heard the name Taikou, Su Rou and the others furrowed their brows slightly. The shock on their faces told Chu Feng they seemed to not like that person too much.

“I’ve met Taikou once and I left a decent impression on him. If he’s in the Four Seas Academy, I’ll go find him to discuss this matter and ask him to allow me to join all of you and enter that Millennium Ancient City. Do you think there’s a good chance?” Chu Feng asked.

“Really? Big Brother Chu Feng, you actually know Taikou and you left a decent impression on him? That’s truly unbelievable! Judging by that old thing’s character, he is simply a freak!” Jiang Wushang felt it to be inconceivable—he knew how peculiar that old man was.

Chapter 720: Presents

"But on that topic, looking at Taikou's position in the Four Seas Academy... as long as he says it, you will have absolutely no issue entering the Millennium Ancient City even as an outsider. I guarantee that no one will dare to say anything.

"It's just that... It's just that he's so odd. Will he agree?" Zhang Tianyi had his doubts as well.

"No matter if he will or not, I still have to give it a try, right?" Chu Feng smiled and said, then, "Right now, I've cultivated a special Spirit Formation technique, so I do have a bit of confidence in detecting hidden treasures. If that Millennium Ancient City is truly as the legends say, I should be able to dig up some clues."

"Really? That's great! Taikou is not too proper of a person. Although he's a Divine Instructor in the Four Seas Academy, he never teaches any disciples. The Four Seas Academy is even providing for him as if he's some master, and he is almost never in the Four Seas Academy.

"But coincidentally, I've heard that he's in the Four Seas Academy right now." After hearing Chu Feng's words, Jiang Wushang's despondent mood instantly vanished, and replacing it was endless joy, as though he had already seen the hope in the future.

"Haha, if that Taikou truly permits it, wouldn't I be able to enter the Millennium Ancient City with my Big Brother Chu Feng? That is really great!" In comparison to Jiang Wushang, Su Mei seemed even happier. Ignoring the gazes of others, she bore into Chu Feng's chest with giggles.

In reality, everyone was very happy. Even though they could not determine Chu Feng's level of cultivation, all of them knew his was definitely above theirs. Despite knowing Chu Feng could not defeat Wang Long, if Chu Feng could enter the Millennium Ancient City with them, they would have a much safer journey.

Because they knew Chu Feng did indeed grasp a few methods and abilities which they did not have.

“That’s right! Didn’t you say you prepared presents for us? What presents are they? Quickly take them out and let us see!” said Su Mei while laughing in Chu Feng’s embrace.

“Yeah! Junior Chu Feng, didn’t you just say you prepared presents?” said Zhang Tianyi with smiles as well.

Although they were not able to be certain Chu Feng could enter the Millennium Ancient City with them, the crowd seemed to have already saw hope. Their anxious hearts also relaxed quite a bit, and half of the “rock” pressing on their hearts also vanished.

“I have indeed prepared gifts for you.” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out four Cosmos Sacks and gave each of them one.

“Heh, let me see what sort of good things are in here!” Su Mei and the others impatiently looked into the Cosmos Sack, examining its contents.

“Heavens! This is?!” But after they looked at the contents, their expressions instantly froze.

After their complexions thawed, replacing them were incomparable shocked expressions. It was truly incomparable shock because they astonishedly discovered that the items in the Cosmos Sacks were really too astounding.

Martial medicines. Priceless, unmatched in preciousness, Martial medicines. There were five hundred low-rank ones, a hundred mid-rank one, and there were even three high-rank Martial medicines.

That was most definitely something they did not expect at all because Martial medicines were too precious. Other than the cultivation resources Zi Ling gave them, of which they each used a few low-rank Martial medicines, they hadn’t touched any more up until now. They didn’t expect Chu Feng to “throw a thousand gold at once”—giving each one of them so many Martial medicines.

If it were only a few then it wouldn’t be much of a deal, but he gave them several hundred! If it were only a low-rank Martial medicines it wouldn’t be much of a deal, but there were even a hundred mid-rank

Martial medicines, and each one of them even had three high-rank Martial medicines!

One must say the arrival of fortune came too abrupt. The four of them weren't really able to accept them.

"Chu Feng, where did you get so many Martial medicines? What exactly have you experienced?" Su Rou looked at Chu Feng with her greatly stunned gaze. At the same time, the other three also looked at Chu Feng with the same gazes.

"Heh, just some good luck and chance encounters." Chu Feng smiled. He initially did not have those things. He just got them from the four peak Martial Lords who wanted to rob him when he left the Misty Peak.

Actually, however, that was not all he obtained. Although Chu Feng split the total with the four of them—so each one of them had five hundred low-rank Martial medicines, one hundred mid-rank Martial medicines, and three high-rank Martial medicines—Chu Feng still left a part for himself.

Even though the Martial medicines would not be of much use to the energy Chu Feng's dantian currently required, they were, after all, things that could be exchanged for currency. Having them on him could be useful at unprepared times.

Moreover, Chu Feng felt the amount of Martial medicine Su Rou and the others now had was enough.

It was because they were different from him, who could instantly finish refining any sort of cultivation resource and absorb all of the energy within it. When they refined things like those, they needed a certain amount of time, and they would also not be able to absorb all of the energy inside the resources.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, no matter where you got these Martial medicines from, I know you need a large amount of resources to raise your cultivation. I cannot have these Martial medicines." Although he was very emotionally moved, Jiang Wushang did not put away the Cosmos Sack he had and instead, gave it back to Chu Feng.

“Yeah! Chu Feng, you need these more than any of us. You should keep them,” Su Mei said and at the same time, she, Su Rou, and Zhang Tianyi gave their Cosmos Sacks to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng lightly smiled when facing their actions and said, “Keep them. Although these Martial medicines contain pretty decent medicinal power, to me, their effect is minuscule.”

“Heavens! Big Brother Chu Feng, what realm are you in now? Even so many Martial medicines are not too much use to you? You haven’t already entered the realm of Martial Lords, right?” When he heard those words, Jiang Wushang was even more shocked. The gaze he looked at Chu Feng with was akin to looking at a monster.

“It’s still too early for the Martial Lord realm! It’s that the cultivation resources my body requires is too enormous.” Chu Feng shook his head with a bitter smile, then put his hand near his own Cosmos Sack and said, “Don’t worry in accepting them. I still have even better things I will gift you!”

As Chu Feng spoke, with the flip of his palm, four bright Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism shot out from his palm and flew towards Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang.

“My gods, what is this?!” Jiang Wushang and the others who were quite surprised by Chu Feng and had emotions they could not sooth were once again shocked when they saw their respective Immortal Mushroom of Martialism.

It was too mystical. Although also a high-rank Martial medicine, it was completely different from the other ones. Its quality was extremely high.

“It’s too mystical! This is simply priceless, a true divine cultivation resource! The Martial power it contains is extremely strong yet extremely soft. If I refine it, perhaps I can even break through two levels continuously!”

As a World Spiritist, Jiang Wushang was able to very clearly feel the beauty of the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism. He almost went mad from joy! A treasure that could allow one to break through two levels

continually... Perhaps no one would even believe that if you told them. In reality, not to mention telling others, even he himself wouldn't believe it if one were to tell him that. Yet, when the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism appeared before him, he had no choice but to believe in such a thing.

Chapter 721: Refining Martial Medicine

"What? Continuously break through two level of cultivation? Can you really, just by relying on this mushroom?" After hearing Jiang Wushang's words, Su Mei and Su Rou, as well as Zhang Tianyi, were endlessly shocked.

They could feel how powerful the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism was, but since they were not World Spiritists, and thus had no Spirit power, they could not examine it as thoroughly. So, after hearing Jiang Wushang's words, they were once again shocked, but simultaneously expressed suspicion.

"This Immortal Mushroom of Martialism is indeed very special. It is a special cultivation oddity. Its origin is quite extraordinary as well, and no matter if it's the pearls sealed in your bodies, or if you have an Inherited Bloodline, or if you rely on a Forbidden Mysterious Technique, I dare to be certain it will still greatly help all of you.

"And looking at your current cultivations, if you can thoroughly refine this, breaking through two levels of cultivation is not only the limit," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"What exactly did you experience to be able to acquire oddities like these? If these things are taken out, a bloody fight could arise from this!" When Su Mei looked at Chu Feng, her eyes changed. They no longer contained their former astonishment, but instead fear and the aching of her heart.

Even though she hadn't accompanied Chu Feng to experience those things, she could imagine oddities like these were not so easily found. To be able to have obtained them, Chu Feng must have experienced some tribulation that none of them knew of.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, I can accept these Martial medicine, but this one is really too precious. I cannot have it," Jiang Wushang said, declining to accept the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism.

"Junior Chu Feng, Brother Wushang is right. You must have risked great

dangers in order to acquire these precious things. How can I accept it?" Zhang Tianyi too spoke to decline. At the same time, Su Rou and Su Mei were the same.

"As I've said, these things are not too useful to me. Moreover, I have kept a portion for myself. 'If we have fortune, we share fortune; if we have difficulties, we share difficulties.' All of you are the closest people to me. When I was in a difficult situation, all of you endured that with me. So, when I have fortune, can I not share them with you?" As Chu Feng spoke, he even pretended to be a bit angry.

After hearing his words, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang went silent.

"Okay, isn't that Millennium Ancient City opening in two days? You will not have many accomplishments if you enter right now with your current cultivation.

"I can help you refine the Martial medicine in a short period of time. With that, two days later, when you enter the Millennium Ancient City, you will definitely have greater achievements," Chu Feng said again when he saw the four of them declining no longer.

With Chu Feng's persistence insisting, the four of them no longer stayed stubborn. With Chu Feng's assistance, they started to refine the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism.

Refining such an object was not something simple. Even though the energy in the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism was very gentle and was already very convenient to refine, Su Rou and the others could not finish within a short period of time, judging by their abilities.

Therefore, Chu Feng helped them by laying a Spirit Formation and endlessly channeling his own power into the Spirit Formation. When they sat within the formation, they could then more easily refine the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism.

The dark night was gradually replaced with the white sky, and in the east, a blinding radiance had arisen. When its light illuminated the land and took over the sky, a new day thus started.

However, within the palace that had a banquet prepared, all of that was removed already. Replacing it was a Spirit Formation with purple light swirling about.

Chu Feng sat in the center of the formation. Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang all sat, cross-legged, on the four edges of the formation. Their eyes were closed, and layers upon layers of auras were inhaled, then exhaled—they were refining the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism, which floated before their bodies.

A full night of time had already passed since he laid the formation. At present, Chu Feng's face was a bit pale and he seemed a bit languid. Simultaneously helping four people refine the Immortal Mushroom of Martialism meant he had to thrust forth his full strength. As a result, the price he paid was very enormous as well.

But luckily, the effect was even better than Chu Feng's expectations. Su Rou and Su Mei were not as simple as they seemed. Chu Feng could feel the pearls in their bodies having similar effects as Chu Feng's Divine Lightning, though in a completely different manner. They were actually helping them refine the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism. The two of them had clearly not fully grasped the pearls. If they did, they would definitely be even more powerful.

As for the Forbidden Mysterious Technique Zhang Tianyi cultivated, it too was impressive as well. However, it was not superior to the mystical pearls that helped Su Rou and Su Mei, yet also not that much inferior to them.

Looking at that, it was truly Jiang Wushang who was slightly weaker. However, he was, after all, the person who possessed a Royal Bloodline. His speed of cultivation was really not that weak either.

hmm Suddenly, Su Rou's and Su Mei's aura changed at the same time. They were actually soaring while the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism before them started to rapidly disintegrate and were being absorbed into their bodies.

"It has finally come!" Seeing that, Chu Feng rejoiced. He quickly closed

his eyes and sorted even more power in his body to help the two thoroughly refine the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism.

In a situation like that, they were very smoothly refined by the two of them. Moreover, after the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism were completely refined, their auras were no longer in the fifth level of the Heaven realm, but the seventh level of the Heaven realm.

"Success! This is great, it's a success!" Opening their eyes, Su Mei and Su Rou were unable to suppress their elated emotions. They happily leapt up at the same time, skipping and jumping about. Even Su Rou, who was usually more mature and serious, had the look of a little girl's dazzle.

They truly did not think the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism were that mystical. They made them break through two levels of cultivation! That really made them feel an unexpected joy.

After enveloping themselves with such happiness, the sisters both cast their gazes at Chu Feng together and wanted to share their ecstatic emotions with him. However, after they saw Chu Feng, their faces originally smiling like flowers distorted instantly. Immediately, nervous expressions formed and both of them arrived in front of Chu Feng at nearly the same time, yelling, "Chu Feng, are you all right?!"

At that instant, they were truly terrified because they discovered at present, Chu Feng's complexion was as pale as paper. It lacked the slightest trace of blood, and his perspiration rained down, already drenching his clothes. In the time of only a night, Chu Feng got a lot thinner and looked quite fatigued.

"Shhh~~" Chu Feng put his index finger before his mouth, indicating them to be quiet. Shortly after, he said with a smile, "I'm fine, but don't affect Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang."

Su Rou and Su Mei then finally knew why Chu Feng turned like that. It was obviously the price he paid in order for them to more quickly refine the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism.

When they were refining, they could feel the pearls in their bodies helping them greatly. However, they also knew that the burst of an even

stronger helping power came from Chu Feng.

At that moment, their hearts ached greatly. Even tears uncontrollably streamed down; yet, they could do nothing and could only obediently stand by Chu Feng's side, watching as Chu Feng continued to exhaust himself to help Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang.

Chapter 722: Requesting Taikou

With Chu Feng's assistance, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang both successfully refined the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism. Like Su Rou and Su Mei, Jiang Wushang broke through two levels of cultivation, rising to the sixth level of the Heaven realm from the fourth level of the Heaven realm.

As for Zhang Tianyi, he was even more impressive. He continuously broke through three levels of cultivation! From the fifth level of the Heaven realm, he entered the eighth level of the Heaven realm, and had the exact same cultivation as Chu Feng right now!

However, after the two of them refined the Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism with success, Chu Feng had become extremely weak. From white, his face turned purple, as though he were suffering from a heavy illness.

"Haha, very good! Extremely good! These Immortal Mushrooms of Martialism have quite extraordinary effects!

"Although Little Mei, Little Rou, and Brother Wushang hadn't made breakthroughs as quick as Senior Zhang, the medicinal power remaining in their bodies have yet to been digested. Afterwards, I'm sure they can still make breakthroughs.

"With these Martial medicines, all of you can enter the peak of the Heaven realm within a year, possibly even touch upon the realm of Martial Lords!"

Chu Feng, at present, felt joy emit from his heart. With his own abilities, being able to help the ones closest to him raise their cultivation greatly was something he took pride in, as well as something that made his heart very relieved.

To wish to protect a person, one does not lay many shields that protect against danger. The wiser action would be to grant themselves the ability to resist danger. Rather than protecting the ones closest to him himself, why not give them the power to protect themselves?

That was also why when Chu Feng raised his cultivation, he had always thought of Su Rou and the others and, when he had the power, he came straight over to help them.

"Junior Chu Feng, great favours are not thanked with words. Today, I, Zhang Tianyi, have engraved this grace on my heart." Seeing Chu Feng, who turned so sickly due to helping them, Zhang Tianyi's heart felt quite sour as well. The usually strong and tough man involuntarily had a bit of red around his eyes.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, I, Jiang Wushang, will follow you for the rest of my life!" Jiang Wushang, the little noble prince of the Jiang Dynasty, felt extremely moved as well.

"We are brothers; there is no need to say words like these. If it were you, the same course of action would have been taken," Chu Feng said calmly. Although he did indeed damage his body by helping them, Chu Feng was still ecstatic.

"Okay, don't speak anymore! Drink this medicine first, then take a good rest!" Su Rou brought a steaming bowl of medicine before Chu Feng, and as she spoke, she fed a spoonful to Chu Feng's mouth.

At that moment, Chu Feng was not hungry, but he knew it was a special medicinal soup with healing remedies. Besides, it was Su Rou who personally brought it over, so naturally, he could not decline. Thus, he took the spoonful.

"Waa, what a good-smelling medicinal soup! There isn't even any taste of medicine in it, but instead, it is bursting with savouriness!" After a gulp, Chu Feng gave endless praises because that medicinal soup was truly quite tasty.

"Of course it's delicious! It was personally made for you by my sister!" Su Mei said on the side with smiles.

"So Little Rou is skillful in this area as well? Haha, then I've got to have a bit more then!" After hearing those words, Chu Feng immediately took the bowl, and with a few gulps he drank the rest of the medicinal soup, quite cleanly at that too.

After finishing, Chu Feng slept for a while. With the nourishment of his powerful divine lightning, Chu Feng's visage nearly recovered completely after a short four hours of sleep.

He did not continue sleeping, and after his complexion turned better, he quickly got up and while in the company of the two beauties, Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as his two brothers, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, they went forth to Taikou's residence.

He had to fight for the chance to enter the Millennium Ancient City, and Taikou was his own hope.

Taikou's residence could be said to be in the lands with one of the best scenery in the Four Seas Academy. However, one could not even bear to look at the buildings within such a land. It actually lacked even a decent palace, and only a simple small grass hut was there.

It wasn't the Four Seas Academy being selfish by not building Taikou luxurious palaces; Taikou's nature was just too peculiar. He didn't allow the Four Seas Academy to build him palaces, and the small grass hut was built by himself.

Moreover, there were no explicit borders around Taikou's land, nor anyone guarding it, because he didn't have any servants. So, one could enter and leave his land as they wished, but the precondition was not to be found out or it would be quite a tragic end for them.

At that instant, Chu Feng and the others all arrived in Taikou's land, and had seen his simple small grass hut.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, you're sure you know this Taikou, and didn't recognize the wrong person, right?" As things progressed to their current state, Jiang Wushang felt a bit timid. It wasn't that he was afraid, but he had seen Taikou's fierceness. In the entire Four Seas Academy, there were probably barely any who did not fear Taikou.

"You don't need to follow me in. Just wait for me here," Chu Feng said. He could see the worry in their hearts.

"That won't do! I will follow you in!" Even though Su Mei too was a bit

afraid, she firmly grabbed onto Chu Feng's arm and wasn't willing to let go.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, we share our difficulties. Taikou's character is odd. It changes all the time and nothing he does is predictable. If he truly goes on a rampage, we, as disciples of the Four Seas Academy, can speak in your place," Jiang Wushang resolutely said.

"Then fine." Chu Feng could only shake his head when he heard those words. Then, with the four of them, he walked straight to the front of the little grass hut.

Chu Feng did not use Spirit power to examine inside because he felt it was a very impolite action. Moreover, his instincts told him Taikou was definitely there.

"Chu Feng, enter. The other four, get the hell out of here." Indeed, just as they neared the little grass hut, a furious shout rang out. That voice belonged to exactly Taikou.

Chu Feng shot a glance at Su Rou and the others, telling them to leave first. Afterwards, he pushed open the broken wooden door, and walked in.

Not only was the grass hut broken outside, the interior was even more broken. It was so simple it surpassed Chu Feng's imagination. However, Chu Feng's eyes quickly locked onto a bed made by stones piling on one another because there, a single-legged old man sat—precisely Taikou.

He was currently on the bed with one hand pushing his leg into a half-crossed-legged position and the other holding a large tobacco pile. With squinting eyes, he was enjoying it with light smacks of his lips.

After seeing Chu Feng enter, his mouth curled up to a grin, revealing his mouthful of yellow teeth. "My friend Chu Feng, have you finally thought it through and wish to become my disciple?"

"Senior, it is something else." Chu Feng politely bowed to Taikou, not daring to be disrespectful in any way.

Because, even now, Chu Feng was still unable to ascertain Taikou's cultivation. That old man was truly unfathomable.

According to Chu Feng's guesses, he was very possibly not as simple as a Martial Lord. It was even possible he was a Martial King! If so, no wonder the Four Seas Academy treated Taikou in such a manner; he was indeed very strong.

"Since you are not looking for a master, then you must have some sort of other business. Just speak your mind. If I can do it, I will not decline the request," said Taikou in a very straightforward manner.

Quickly after, Chu Feng told Taikou in detail the events that had occurred and expressed his intentions.

As for Taikou, he laughed, then said, "I was thinking what it was, but it turns out you want to enter the Millennium Ancient City and experience it a bit! That's fine; take this badge, no one will dare to stop you."

As Taikou spoke, he waved his hand and a badge then landed into Chu Feng's palm.

Chapter 723: Lan Yanzhi

On the surface, the badge appeared very simple, even a bit crude. It was made from a black piece of wood, and not many ornaments decorated the frame. The three words Four Seas Academy were carved at the back, while only one word lay engraved at the front—Taikou.

At first glance, the badge appeared to be made out of wood. However, Chu Feng instantly saw it was not as simple as it appeared on the surface—there lay a formation inside this badge. That formation was completely unique. With it, one could verify the genuineness of the badge.

Moreover, it was a symbol of status—a symbol of status that represented Taikou. Thus, Chu Feng felt there should be no problem in entering the Millennium Ancient City as long as he held the badge in hand.

Furthermore, he had only met Taikou once, yet Taikou still unconditionally helped him in such a manner. Recalling this, Chu Feng felt sincere gratitude that truly stemmed from his heart. He bowed with great reverence towards Taikou and said, "Senior, thank you for helping me. I will never forget the favour you have granted me today."

"Haha! I do not expect you to repay me for helping you. Your words are more than enough. Go out; it seems that your friends are very worried." Taikou waved his hand with a smile. Closing his eyes, he continued smoking the large tobacco pipe in his hand.

"Then, I will take my leave." Chu Feng did not dally longer. After another bow, he turned around, and left.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, how did it go?" Indeed—as per Taikou's words—after Chu Feng walked out of the grass hut, Su Mei and the others had gathered around him. They did not leave too far a distance, and had kept on walking to and fro in the area. It could be seen that they were really worried about Chu Feng.

"It went even more smoothly than I had imagined." Wearing a light smile on his face, Chu Feng waved the badge in his hand.

“My gods... he truly helped you? That’s the identity badge only Taikou has! With it, you can simply go wherever you want within the Four Seas Academy and no one will stop you!” Jiang Wushang exclaimed when he saw the badge in Chu Feng’s hand.

“Junior Chu Feng, I must say you gain more and more of my respect by the day. You even took care of that Taikou so easily! It seems you’ve truly left a good impression on him.” Zhang Tianyi’s face was full of admiration. It wasn’t easy to leave a good impression on Taikou.

“Haha, this is great! We’re able to enter the Millennium Ancient City together with Chu Feng! Woo!” As for the usually skittish Su Mei, she was bouncing about livelily. Even though she was soon passing the age of a “young lady”, she was still as cheerful and cute as always, and also very amiably pure.

In reality, it was not only Su Mei who was happy. Su Rou and Zhang Tianyi were happy as well.

However, the happiest person was definitely Jiang Wushang. After receiving the several hundred Martial medicines Chu Feng had gifted him and breaking through two levels of cultivation with Chu Feng’s help, he believed that Chu Feng, at present, was very strong.

So, Jiang Wushang, who initially had great hopes in the journey into the Millennium Ancient City, had his hopes multiply after confirming Chu Feng could travel alongside him.

On the next day, Chu Feng headed over to the Millennium Ancient City with Jiang Wushang and the others.

It was built within an Ancient Era forest. At normal times, this forest was sealed. Hence, Chu Feng and the others could only wait outside for the elders to open it.

When they arrived, they discovered that four people had already appeared before them: three men, and one woman. The men’s cultivations were at the fifth level of the Heaven realm, whereas the woman’s was at the fourth level of the Heaven realm. All of them were disciples of the other Divine Instructors.

Su Rou and the others did not conceal their strength because after entering the Millennium Ancient City, they were fated to reveal their power. Rather than completely surprising them with their jump in strength, why not let them fear a bit from the start?

"What is going on? How did their cultivation turn this powerful?"

"Su Rou and Su Mei are at the seventh level of the Heaven realm! Their cultivation is as powerful as Lan Yanzhi's!"

"Zhang Tianyi is even at the eighth level of the Heaven realm! He's surpassed even Lan Yanzhi and now has the same cultivation as Wang Yue! This is unbelievable!"

"Yeah! Even Jiang Wushang's cultivation is at the sixth level of the Heaven realm! What exactly is going on? Could they have concealed their cultivation before?"

Indeed, the three men and one woman all felt shock when they observed Su Rou's and the others' cultivation. They were both surprised and frightened, while worry and disbelief flooded their eyes.

Also as disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors, Su Rou's and the others' soar in cultivation did not represent anything good for them.

However, in comparison to the woman and the two other men, a man with an ordinary appearance yet clad nobly had quite a complicated expression on his face. He could be said to be bursting with anxiety and trepidation.

"Junior Chu Feng, that's Liu Zhenbiao's younger brother, Liu Zhenwei. Before, he was extremely arrogant and simply did not put us in his eyes. However, a few days ago, I took an opportunity to give him a good beating.

"From what I've heard, after being beaten by me, he engraved the hatred on his heart and painstakingly cultivated. He wanted to quickly surpass my cultivation so he could take revenge.

"However, he obviously no longer has this chance!" Zhang Tianyi said as he pointed at the man with the complicated expression. He knew

clearly that the strength he currently showed completely made Liu Zhenbiao lose his hope in vengeance.

"Look! Lan Yanzhi has come!

"Eh, who's the person next to her? Isn't that one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy, Lan Xi?"

"It truly is Lan Xi! Why is a person like her walking together with Lan Yanzhi? Could there be some sort of relation between them?" Suddenly, the three men and one woman pointed at the nearby horizon and discussed amongst themselves with great shock.

Looking over, Chu Feng saw two females heading over in the air. Both of them had quite a bit of grace.

One of them had extremely powerful cultivation—she was a rank four Martial Lord. Chu Feng knew this person. She was one of the three great genius of the Four Seas Academy, Lan Xi, who had greeted him before in the Misty Peak.

As for the other one, she was quite younger than Lan Yanzhi, likely in her early twenties. However, she did not have weak cultivation, and was in the seventh level of the Heaven realm. Obviously, she was the person they were talking about, Lan Yanzhi.

"Junior Chu Feng, that's Lan Yanzhi! She was originally the strongest out of the nine disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors.

"However, we've caught up to her. I'm sure when she sees our cultivations later, she will be shocked.

"However, she has a very domineering nature. Of the disciples in the same generation, she runs unrestrained. Combined with Wang Yue, they are the Twin Tyrants within the new disciples.

"We've always thought she had a person behind her, and that Lan Xi was very possibly that person. It seems that our guesses were correct," Zhang Tianyi said to Chu Feng on the side. Just as he spoke, the two females had come up to them.

“We pay our respects to Senior Lan Xi!” After the two females landed onto the ground, Liu Zhenbiao and the others hurriedly walked up and paid their respects to Lan Xi.

Although the Four Seas Academy wasn’t a place whose hierarchy was determined by status, it was a place whose hierarchy was determined by strength.

Lan Xi was one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy and her status and position was a level above all disciples. When any disciple saw her, they had to pay their respects to her. That was a privilege she had.

At that moment, even Su Rou and the others were no exception. All of them went up and bowed to Lan Xi. Only Chu Feng stayed where he stood, without any indication he was going to do the same.

Chapter 724: Licentious Qin Yu

“Who are you? You do not perform any salutations after seeing my elder sister. Don’t you know who she is?!” When she saw Chu Feng remaining still, Lan Yanzhi pointed at him and shouted. Indeed, as Zhang Tianyi said, she was very domineering.

After hearing her words, while some of the people there expected this, some were greatly shocked because Lan Yanzhi’s words indirectly told everyone her relationship with Lan Xi. So, as it seemed, Lan Xi was her elder sister.

Chu Feng’s complexion was unchanged. He indifferently smiled, then said, “Why should I give your elder sister salutations?”

“Senior Lan Xi, he is a friend of mine called Chu Feng. He is not a disciple of the Four Seas Academy.”

At the same time, Zhang Tianyi hurriedly explained, indicating that Chu Feng didn’t need to pay his respects to Lan Xi.

Although Zhang Tianyi normally feared not the heavens nor the earth, sometimes, he had to bend. Although he was not afraid of Lan Yanzhi, Lan Xi was different. Her position and strength was above his own, and she was currently an existence they could not offend.

“What is an outsider doing here? What do you take the Four Seas Academy as? A place that anyone can enter and walk about as they will?” Lan Yanzhi shouted with great displeasure.

“Okay, Yanzhi.” Lan Xi first shot Lan Yanzhi a glance, then looked at Zhang Tianyi and the others, kindly smiling and saying, “Since we are from the same place and also from the same generation, there is no need for you to be so polite. You do not need to salute next time you see me.”

“Thank you, Senior Lan Xi.” Zhang Tianyi and the others all rose.

Seeing her elder sister say such a thing, Lan Yanzhi, on the other hand, could really say nothing. So, she cast her malicious gaze at Su Rou and the others, then said, “Oh? The four of you have concealed your

cultivations quite deeply! Only today I discover you are no weaker than me, Zhang Tianyi particularly... You've actually surpassed me! It seems that you've hiddenly put quite a bit of work into training and your thoughts run quite deep.

"However, do not think you can do whatever you wish to in the Millennium Ancient City because you have such cultivation. With your power, you do not even have the qualifications to touch Martial medicines."

When he saw Lan Yanzhi chastise his lovers and brothers right in front of himself, Chu Feng's fury burst out with a whoosh and was about to say something...

"Yanzhi, how can you talk to other people like this? Didn't I tell you to not speak such unpleasant words and not treat others so harshly?" But, unexpectedly, Lan Xi took Chu Feng's chance and spoke first.

"Sister, it's not that I'm speaking unpleasant words, nor am I treating others harshly.

"It's just that the four of them intentionally concealed their cultivation before and intentionally made me lower my guard. Then, they hiddenly surpassed me. This is too awful. It is clear they are deliberately trying to embarrass me," Lan Yanzhi said as she vented her anger and grievance. Luckily for her, she was able to think of such an absurd reason.

"You yourself do not strive for improvement and now you're blaming others? If you had stayed hard-working from the very start and kept diligently cultivating, it would not matter what others did. They would not be able to affect your progress.

"However, if they already had extraordinary aptitude and were above you, no matter how hard you work, you would not be able to stop them from surpassing you.

"Yanzhi, it's not that I want to criticize you as an elder sister, but you really have been spoiled by Uncle and Aunt. Sometimes, you truly act unreasonably. You know that there is always a person beyond each person, right? If you continue on like this, you will most definitely bear

the consequences one day," Lan Xi said, unrestrainedly criticizing her.

"Sister, I..."

Although Lan Yanzhi was often domineering, it was only while facing others. To her elder sister, she did not dare to show a tiny bit of her temper. She could only lower her head in silence. After all, the reason why she dared to be so domineering in the Four Seas Academy was because she relied on her elder sister's position and strength.

"Sister Lan Xi, you've come as well?" Suddenly, a burst of laughter rang out in the distance, shattering that scene of embarrassment.

Quickly after, two people came down from the sky. The two brothers, Wang Long and Wang Yue, had arrived.

Wang Long was clearly very close to Lan Xi. After landing onto the ground, he started conversing with her, and simply did not even look straight at Chu Feng and the others. As for Wang Yue, he was even more arrogant. The pride on his body was even stronger than Lan Yanzhi by a few times.

However, Chu Feng was quite a sharp person. He could instantly see that Lan Xi, in reality, did not like very much chatting with Wang Long. However, due to face, she did not ignore him. In addition, Wang Long truly had many words to say, so that was why the two seemed to have a very close relationship.

But Chu Feng also discovered even though Wang Long chatted enthusiastically with a face brimming with smiles, he occasionally shot a few glimpses over his direction. And, there was a bit of lust in his gaze.

It could be seen that Wang Long was truly an attention-seeking person—he'd already had thoughts regarding Su Rou and Su Mei. Chu Feng needed to be a bit more vigilant.

"Oh? It's so lively here already! So the two of you have already arrived." Then suddenly, another person came down from the sky. It was a pretty young man with suaveness, elegance, gracefulness, an air of exceptionality, and quite an outstanding cultivation.

After that person appeared, the female disciples of the Ten Divine Instructors blinked with hearts in their eyes, and their little faces flushed with red. Even Lan Yanzhi smiled rather sweetly. Obviously, they were unable to resist that person's charm, and were enchanted by him.

But no matter how much greater of a demeanor that man had, Su Rou and Su Mei ignored him completely. They did not even look at him, while Lan Xi too had a calm reaction.

As for that pretty male, Chu Feng had seen him before. He was none other than the last person of the Four Seas Academy's three great geniuses, Qin Yu.

"Why has he come as well?" After recognizing that person to be Qin Yu, Su Mei furrowed her brows tightly and muttered with huge displeasure.

"Little Mei, you recognize him?" Chu Feng asked.

"I do. It's one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy who is shameless and extremely annoying. The person I hate the most is him." Su Mei curled her lips and seemed to have a bit of a grievance.

But after looking at Chu Feng, she quickly said, "It's nothing. I've only seen him a few times." As she spoke, she hugged Chu Feng's arm and tightly glued her charming little face onto his arm. Her appearance was quite an intimate one.

However, Chu Feng thought in quite a detailed manner, so even though Su Mei did not say much, Chu Feng was still able to understand the gist of it.

Very evidently, the person called Qin Yu had his eyes on his Little Su Mei. Also, he had likely pestered Su Mei before as well, otherwise she wouldn't hate him that much.

"Brother Qin Yu, you have come as well? Do you have younger brothers or sisters in this place?" Wang Long said and laughed. The relationship between him and Qin Yu was truly quite good because those with appalling tendencies often stuck with each other.

"I do not." Qin Yu shook his head.

“Haha, I knew it! How could people like them be related in any way with my Brother Qin Yu?” Wang Long’s laughter loudened even more when he saw Qin Yu shake his head. His words had humiliated Chu Feng and the others completely.

“Ahh, Brother Wang Long, don’t say things like that! Even though I am not related in blood with any of them, you must admit that there are exceptional people in that group,” Qin Yu said with a light smile.

Chapter 725: Sentencing Elder

"Oh?" Hearing that, Wang Long was initially at a loss for words. However, soon after he came to a realization and cast his gaze in the direction of Su Rou and Su Mei. He said with a foul smile, "Heh, I must say those two girls have quite a good appearance. Brother Qin Yu, do you know them?"

"They are sisters, named Su Rou and Su Mei. But you know me, I only like the more tender ones. So, that younger sister Su Mei is my cup of tea." Qin Yu smiled, and as he spoke, he too cast his gaze towards Su Mei.

In order to embellish his handsomeness, when Qin Yu turned around, he even intentionally flicked his hair and tidied up his clothes in an aim to display his enchanting demeanor.

"This..."

However, when he turned his head around, his face instantly froze. His eyes immediately trembled, then surprise flowed into his eyes. Soon after, his shocked gaze transformed into a glare overflowing with chilling intents.

He discovered the female he liked—one he wanted to put into his embrace even in his dreams—Su Mei, was actually leaning into the embrace of another person with a sweet expression. Moreover, the degree of intimacy simply made him so jealous he could even die.

"Brother Wang Long, who is that brat? Do you know who he is?" Qin Yu asked Wang Long.

"Big Brother Qin Yu, he is not a disciple of the Four Seas Academy. We do not know him," Lan Yanzhi interrupted.

And when he heard those words, Qin Yu became even more enraged. He did not ask any more, and while pointing at Chu Feng, he shouted with an incomparably superior voice, as if he were ordering a servant, "Let her go!"

Qin Yu's shout surpassed thunder, and it was more akin to ten thousand

claps of thunder sounding at the same moment. Even the earth trembled violently from that, and even the air exploded, catching everyone off guard and frightening them.

At that instant, all of them cast their gazes at Chu Feng and Su Mei. They were no idiots; looking at how close Chu Feng and Su Mei were, and looking back at Qin Yu's face of jealousy—an extremely bitter expression that was akin to someone taking away his wife—everyone could connect the dots and figure what was going on.

Obviously, Qin Yu liked Su Mei, yet Su Mei's heart belonged to another. Thus, Qin Yu was furious and wanted to give the brat next to Su Mei a lesson.

At that instant, most of them curled their mouths into a hint of a sneer. Their eyes were surging with expectation, and had already made the preparations for watching a good show.

Qin Yu's position in the Four Seas Academy was indubitably high. They wanted to see how miserable the brat in question, the one who had Su Mei in his embrace, was about to be.

When she saw Qin Yu's anger touch the skies, and even emanated faint bloodlust, Su Mei too realized that the situation wasn't heading in a good direction. After all, he was a rank four Martial Lord. Thus, she quickly released the hand which was tightly holding Chu Feng's arm.

whoosh However, unexpectedly to the crowd, just as Su Mei released her hand, Chu Feng opened up his arm and pulled the cute and amiable little beauty, Su Mei, back into his embrace, and even hugged her tighter than before.

"God damn, let her go!" When he saw that, Qin Yu was even more enraged. Everyone could tell that Qin Yu was truly furious now.

However, another scene that happened afterwards made all of them even more surprised.

As he faced Qin Yu's bare-laid threat, Chu Feng was not only unafraid, he even looked at Qin Yu with disdain, and said indifferently, "Who do

you think you are, to interfere in my, Chu Feng's, matters?"

"Chu Feng? A damn Chu Feng! The only person who dares to speak to me like this in the Four Seas Academy is you.

"However, I will let you know what the consequences are for speaking to me, Qin Yu, in such a manner."

When he saw Chu Feng not only hug the woman he liked in front of the crowd and even spewed such disrespectful words at him, Qin Yu could finally hold it in no longer. As he spoke, he was about to attack Chu Feng.

Just as Qin Yu was going to make his move, however, a person appeared before him—Lan Xi.

"Qin Yu, don't be rash. The Sentencing Elder and the Divine Instructors have come," Lan Xi said in a low voice after stopping Qin Yu from attacking.

When he heard those words, Qin Yu had no choice but to suppress his anger. Although he had a very high position in the Four Seas Academy, in front of elders, it did seem inappropriate to attack an outsider like Chu Feng.

Most importantly, when he heard the two words "Sentencing Elder", Qin Yu had thought of a scheme. He had a wondrous plan to take care of Chu Feng. As a result, he did not forcefully make a move on Chu Feng. After glimpsing at Chu Feng, a cold smile emerged on his face.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Indeed, shortly after Lan Xi spoke, multitudinous streams of light appeared in the distant horizon. Like a meteor shower, they flew over and landed before the crowd.

There were nearly a hundred elders; all of them were Martial Lords. Of those elders, Su Rou's and the others' instructors—the Ten Divine Instructors—were there too. Of course, the peculiar Taikou was not within their ranks.

"We pay our respects to Master!" Su Mei and the others breathed a sigh

of relief when they saw their masters appear. They quickly went up to pay their respects. After all, their masters did take quite good care of them. With them there, they could at least speak their minds through them.

Even Qin Yu, Lan Xi, and Wang Long, the ones with high positions, also had to go up to pay their respects. No matter how much more powerful they were, they were only disciples, in the end. Within the near hundred elders, some had power far above theirs. Thus, they too had to pay their respects to them.

At that instant, only Chu Feng looked like a person completely unrelated to all that as he silently gazed upon that scene.

"Qin Yu, what was going on just now? I heard your racket from afar! Where is your proper etiquette?!" A white-and grey-haired old woman with a face full of wrinkles spoke.

That old woman had very mannerly clothing and a very vigorous body. She was a peak Martial Lord, much stronger than the nine Divine Instructors. She was the most powerful out of the near hundred elders.

"Chu Feng, that is the Sentencing Elder, also Qin Yu's master and the head of the Sentencing Department. They share the same perspectives, so you must be more careful. Don't go too far, or else even our masters cannot protect you."

At that moment, Chu Feng received Zhang Tianyi's and the others' mental messages in succession. All of them reminded Chu Feng that the current situation was beneficial to Qin Yu. They wanted Chu Feng to put away some of his temper, otherwise he would receive unneeded punishment.

"Elder, it's not that I want to make such a racket, but there really is a reason," Qin Yu said insincerely.

"Oh? What reason it is? Speak the truth," asked the Sentencing Elder.

"This area is the Millennium Ancient City, one of the most important forbidden regions in the Four Seas Academy. Each year, it is opened only once. Moreover, only the most excellent within new disciples are allowed

to enter it for an experience. Even ordinary disciples and successful disciples who have been around for long cannot enter.

“Yet, at present, a person who isn’t from the Four Seas Academy has come to the Millennium Ancient City.

“Elder. You say yourself. Should I care about this matter?” Qin Yu said as if he were completely in the right.

Chapter 726: Real or Fake Badge

After hearing Qin Yu's words, the Sentencing Elder understood many of the things that had occurred. She immediately cast her gaze at Chu Feng, and said with an extremely fierce tone, "Since you are not a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, why have you appeared here, and have even come to the forbidden land of the Four Seas Academy? What is your objective?"

"Elder Xu, this person is a friend of my disciple. He has come into the Four Seas Academy to visit her."

Just at that moment, a Divine Instructor spoke. It was Su Rou's instructor, and evidently, Su Rou had told her instructor a few things. She stood out and prepared to protect Chu Feng.

"That's right. He is called Chu Feng, also a friend of my disciple. It was she who brought him here." Su Mei's instructor also spoke. After that, Zhang Tianyi's instructor and Jiang Wushang's instructor also spoke one another the other, helping Chu Feng escape from this troublesome situation.

"Even so, he should not be here. Does your disciples not know this Millennium Ancient City is a forbidden region? They have actually brought an outsider here! Do they even put the rules of the Four Seas Academy in their eyes?"

That Sentencing Elder was indeed on the same side as Qin Yu. She did not even give Divine Instructors any face, and obviously planned to not forgive Chu Feng and give him a lesson in Qin Yu's place.

At that instant, everyone who was concerned about Chu Feng hiddenly cursed in their hearts. Not to mention Su Rou and the others, even their instructors' faces changed slightly and no longer knew how to reply.

That area was indeed a forbidden region. According to the rules, not to mention outsiders, even disciples should not come to that place. The people from the Sentencing Department also had the right over one's life and death with the rules and laws in their hands. When she asked such a question, they did indeed have no reply.

“Instructors, since your disciples do not know the rules, you should give them a good lesson afterwards. After all, they are geniuses of the Four Seas Academy and also your proud disciples. Looking at both the sentiments and reasons, I believe I should give them another chance. Today, I will not punish them.”

After the Sentencing Elder swept her threatening gaze over Su Rou’s and the others’ Instructors, she then looked at Chu Feng and icily said, “But this child... Today, I will give him a good punishment. Otherwise, if everyone else comes to the Four Seas Academy and acts as they wish, where will the appropriateness be?”

“Elder, it’s not that Chu Feng wants to break the rules of the Four Seas Academy, but really it was...”

“Shut up!

“Do you want to be punished alongside him?”

At that instant, Su Mei wanted to help Chu Feng explain, but before she finished her words, she was yelled back down by the Sentencing Elder.

Seeing that the Sentencing Elder was serious, in order to protect themselves, Su Mei’s and the others’ instructors quickly controlled their respective disciples and prevented them from speaking anymore, in order to avoid being affected by Chu Feng as well and receive punishments.

“Men, take this person to the sentencing prison!” the Sentencing Elder shouted again.

“As you order!” After those words were spoken, from the group of elders, around a dozen or so walked out. All of them had ferocious expressions as they headed towards Chu Feng, and aimed to restrain him.

At that moment, everyone felt Chu Feng was finished. Only Chu Feng himself remained as calm as he was from the start. He opened his palm, then a badge appeared. He flashed it at the crowd, and loudly yelled, “I have Instructor Taikou’s badge. Who dares to touch me?!”

“What? Taikou?!”

When Chu Feng words came out of his mouth, it was akin to a thunder in a clear sky. Everyone was shocked, and the elders who had already neared Chu Feng also halted, not daring to make any rash moves.

As for the Sentencing Elder, she lightly knitted her brows. With a fierce gaze, she stared at the badge in Chu Feng's hand, feeling that the situation was turning into a bit of a predicament.

Taikou was an anomaly in the Four Seas Academy. Not to mention her, even the head of the academy didn't dare to easily offend such an existence. How did the seemingly unimpressive boy have Taikou's identity badge? She couldn't help but deeply ponder that question.

"Senior Taikou's badge? What a funny joke. Why would Senior Taikou's badge be so randomly given to you for use?" In that frozen moment, Qin Yu suddenly sneered, then clasped his hands at the Sentencing Elder and said, "Elder, I suspect his badge is fake. Can it be examined?"

"Of course it can." The Sentencing Elder nodded. In reality, she hadn't seen Taikou's identity badge before because he had never needed to show it. Those who saw him were all afraid, so she too did not know whether the badge in Chu Feng's hand was real or fake.

After hearing Qin Yu's words, she also felt that Chu Feng could possibly be making something up and wanted to pass it as genuine. After all, judging by Taikou's nature, he would not easily give a person his identity badge. Or, one could say it was impossible he did so.

Thus, the Sentencing Elder looked at Chu Feng, then coldly shouted, "Hand your badge over."

whoosh Chu Feng did not hesitate when he heard those words because he knew his badge was genuine. He did not need to fear them examining it, so, as she spoke, he had already thrown the badge at the Sentencing Elder.

bam But who would have thought just as the badge was going to be sent to the Sentencing Elder, Qin Yu suddenly extended his hand and took the badge instead. After roughly glancing over it, he said to the Sentencing Elder in a righteous manner, "Elder, this badge is not Senior Taikou's

identity badge. It is fake."

"You speak nonsense!" After hearing those words, Chu Feng was enraged. He pointed at Qin Yu and cursed at him because the badge was definitely real. Qin Yu was planning to make Chu Feng look mad.

"Insolent ruffian! Not only do you hold a fake badge and feign to be a person related to Instructor Taikou, you even dare to curse a disciple of the Four Seas Academy!

"Men, destroy this boy's cultivation first, then nine hundred beatings, then lock him into prison! By the orders of head of the Sentencing Department!" After knowing the badge was fake, the Sentencing Elder restored her former atmosphere.

"By your orders!" As for the elders who were standing around Chu Feng and all ready to pounce on him, they naturally did not hesitate and all of them emanated auras unique to Martial Lords. They planned to make a move on Chu Feng and destroy his cultivation.

"I would quite like to see who dares to touch even a single one of his fingers." But just at that moment, an old man's explosive shout suddenly burst out. The deafening sound made the earth continuously shake, as if an earthquake were occurring.

Simultaneously, a single-legged old man appeared before Chu Feng. When he landed onto the ground, a boundless aura was exuded.

The aura swept through the land with great force and it was unstoppable. After only a blink, it blew the elders who surrounded Chu Feng several tens of miles away.

"Instructor Taikou?!"

Such a sudden scene made everyone stunned. And, when they saw the person who showed up before Chu Feng, they were frightened because they could see that the person was none other than the head of the Ten Divine Instructors, Taikou.

"Taikou! Why is he here? Could he truly be somehow related to that boy Chu Feng?

“Impossible, absolutely impossible! I know too clear what kind of person Taikou is. He does not even care about the disciples from the Four Seas Academy, so why does he care about an outsider?”

When they saw Taikou, almost everyone’s complexion changed. The people who were all ready to watch a good show had faces full of surprise and shock. They did not even dare to believe Taikou was truly helping Chu Feng.

As for Su Rou and the others, they had faces of elation because they all knew how powerful Taikou was in the Four Seas Academy. Since he had appeared, today, likely no one could make things difficult for Chu Feng anymore.

Chapter 727: Living King of Hell

"Instructor Taikou, why have you come? Just leave opening the Millennium Ancient City to us; there is no need for you to come here yourself." The incomparably domineering Sentencing Elder before was now full of smiles. She squeezed her face full of wrinkles into one that looked like a steamed bun.

How so impressive she was before, simply at the very top; but, when Taikou appeared, she instantly turned frightened.

She was truly frightened because from Taikou's previous action, he most likely was related to Chu Feng.

However, who would have thought that Taikou did not even pay attention to her. He looked directly at Qin Yu, and said, "You, get over here!"

"What? Me?" When he heard those words, Qin Yu's body couldn't help trembling. He was really not lightly terrified.

It was because Taikou's name was too well-known. He was simply an existence no one dared to offend in the Four Seas Academy. Not to mention others, even his master herself—the head of the Sentencing Department who held control over one's life and death in the Four Seas Academy—had been brutally beaten by Taikou once in front of many elders.

What sort of an existence was the head of the Sentencing Department? She was simply one that feared no one in the Four Seas Academy! In terms of position, she was definitely not below the sub-academy head. Only the academy head was above her.

Yet, such an existence, when being beaten by Taikou, lacked any power to fight back. So, he deeply knew how powerful Taikou was.

Although Taikou was only one of the Divine Instructors, in terms of true power, perhaps only the Lord Academy Head in the entire Four Seas Academy could fight somewhat equally against him. In reality, he still

feared Taikou. It would be quite reasonable to say Taikou was a living King of Hell in the entire Four Seas Academy.

Thus, at that moment, Qin Yu was truly afraid. So afraid even his heart was quivering, but Taikou had already stated names, so he had no choice. He could only wear a light smile on his face, and ask with reverence, “Senior Taikou, you’re calling for me?”

“Do you need me to repeat myself?” Taikou coldly said.

How could Qin Yu dare to hesitate anymore then? He quickly went up to Taikou, paid his respects, then lightly smiled and said, “Senior Taikou, what do you need this junior for?”

“You said this badge was real, or fake?” Taikou pointed at the badge in Qin Yu’s hand and asked.

“I... This...” Qin Yu was stupefied. Thoroughly stupefied. In reality, he really had no way of confirming whether the badge was real or fake earlier. He only said it was fake in order to set Chu Feng up. At that very moment, however, he was pretty much certain the badge was not fake.

At that instant, Qin Yu truly felt hatred. He hated himself for being so rash. In order to mess Chu Feng up, he had been thoughtless. Without any good examination, he said the badge was fake. Now, Taikou was questioning him, so what should he reply with?

bam Just at that moment, an unexpected scene occurred. Taikou, in front of the crowd, fiercely gave Qin Yu a strong slap.

That slap was quite loud, louder than even firecrackers. Moreover, a lot of power had been put into it, and even Qin Yu, a rank four Martial Lord, was thrown onto the ground and a large mouthful of blood was forced out. The left side of his face even swelled up highly, and a purple-coloured handprint formed by the congestion of blood appeared.

“Stand up!” Taikou yelled again.

“Yes sir.” Qin Yu did not dare to dally. He did not even dare to wipe away the traces of blood on the corner of his mouth. He quickly stood up and walked up to Taikou again. Furthermore, he stood as straight as a pencil.

“I’m asking you: is this badge real or fake?!” Taikou pointed at the badge and asked again.

“I-thi-this…” Qin Yu hesitated once again as he felt the fiery pain from his face.

At that moment, he did not care about face any longer. Whilst in front of Taikou, a living King of Hell, he could only bend over and seek the best. He had to think of everything in order to make his escape, otherwise, even his master could not save him. So, he bit down on his teeth, and said, “Senior, it is real.”

bam However, when he spoke his words, Taikou threw another strong slap at his right face.

In addition, that slap was even louder than before and heavier than before. Not only was Qin Yu struck down with blood flowing out of his mouth, two molar teeth were even spat out.

However, Qin Yu most definitely would not have thought that was not the end of the nightmare, but merely the beginning.

Taikou rose and glided over to Qin Yu. With his single leg, he kicked Qin Yu’s face with a bang, immediately pushing him, who was half-kneeling, onto the ground.

Then, he just sat himself on Qin Yu. With alternations of his hands, he slapped Qin Yu’s handsome face in succession with bangs.

As he slapped him, he even cursed, “Is real yet you say it’s fake! What were you planning? You not even putting me in your eyes, huh?! Do you want to die? Do you want to die?!”

At that moment, the crowd truly felt horrified. Some even felt their own faces hurting as well.

Taikou was too fierce. After several slaps, Qin Yu looked nothing like before. Blood was smeared all over the place, and Qin Yu had already been knocked out. Yet, Taikou still continued.

“Instructor Taikou, quickly stop! He is about to die!” When she saw the

skin on Qin Yu's face completely destroyed, the Sentencing Elder finally spoke.

"What did you say?" But who would have thought just as the Sentencing Elder spoke, Taikou turned his icy gaze towards her.

"I-I-I..."

At that moment, the Sentencing Elder felt extremely regretful. So much that even her intestines died from regret because she could currently feel how terrifying Taikou's gaze was.

Most importantly, Taikou had now risen from Qin Yu's body. Standing with one leg, he jumped over towards her.

Although Taikou's movement seemed a bit amusing, she did not feel that at all because in her eyes, the one heading towards her was akin to a demon.

"What did you say just now? Say it again?" Taikou asked with an extremely chilling tone when he came up to the Sentencing Elder.

"I-I-I..." However, the grand peak Martial Lord expert, the great Sentencing Elder of the Sentencing Department, actually acted the same as Qin Yu. She stuttered from fear and could not even speak.

bam Suddenly, Taikou made his move. Doing the exact same to her as he did to Qin Yu, he sent a slap that fiercely landed on the Sentencing Elder's face.

Moreover, the effect was the same as Qin Yu. The Sentencing Elder was thrown onto the ground from that slap and a mouthful of blood was forced out.

Looking at the Sentencing Elder lying on the ground, there was not a single iota of sympathy on Taikou's face. Rather, he said, coldly, "Don't think I don't dare to hit you because you're a woman."

After speaking, Taikou swept his cold gaze over the crowd and said, indifferently, "What? You think this is entertaining?"

whoosh At that instant, everyone involuntarily lowered their heads.

There was no one who dared to look straight at Taikou, and those who did couldn't help taking a step back from fear. They truly felt the extremities of terror.

Chapter 728: Opening the Ancient City

Taikou smiled disdainfully at the crowd's reactions—one that was full of contempt.

Then, he widened his palms and sucked the badge in Qin Yu's hand into his own. Afterwards, he waved his big sleeve and sent the badge back into Chu Feng's hand.

After these set of actions, Taikou looked back at the crowd and loudly shouted, "All of you, listen up! I am gifting this identity badge to Chu Feng. From now on, when you see him, you act as if you see me. All disciples must pay their respects to Chu Feng. If there is anyone who dares to be disrespectful to him... Hmph... Even if they're the son of God, I, Taikou, will dare to beat him into a cripple."

hua~~~ After those words, another commotion arose from the crowd. If Taikou's previous actions were vaguely intended, as there was the possibility Taikou only spoke such thunderous words for his own face, then at this very instant, they could now be certain that the reason Taikou did all that was for no other but telling everyone he had Chu Feng's back.

At that instant, they all couldn't help casting their gazes at Chu Feng furtively, reexamining him in their hearts. They thought, What sort of divine figure is this person? He's able to leave such a good impression on that peculiar living King of Hell, Taikou, and have him as protection?

Thought, regardless of how they perceived it, the crowd understood one thing very clearly in their hearts: Chu Feng could not be offended. Since, after all, Qin Yu was a clear example of the consequences for doing so.

"Who's responsible for opening this Millennium Ancient City?" Taikou asked suddenly.

"I-Senior Taikou, I'm responsible for this place," replied the Sentencing Elder—who was slapped by Taikou—respectfully, as she quickly rose.

"Who the hell are you calling 'Senior'? You're older than me, and you're calling me senior?!" But just as she spoke, she received Taikou's curses.

“It’s my fault, it’s my fault!” The Sentencing Elder truly feared Taikou too much. She quickly corrected with, “Instructor Taikou, I am responsible for the opening of the Millennium Ancient City.”

“This Chu Feng will enter the Millennium Ancient City with them. Do you have any objections?” Taikou asked.

“N-no objections.” The Sentencing Elder shook her head. She did not dare to say a single word of opposition.

“Chu Feng, follow them in. As for this badge, keep it on you. There’s no need to give it back to me.

“From now on, the Four Seas Academy is your home. If you wish to enter, then enter. If you wish to leave, then leave. No matter where, you may go as you desire. If there is anyone in this Four Seas Academy who dares to stop you, tell me. Whoever does not give me, Taikou, face, I’ll beat the hell out of them,” Taikou said to Chu Feng.

“Thank you, Senior Taikou.” Chu Feng bowed to Taikou. Chu Feng truly did not think Taikou would come here and even do such something like this. Something that could not be denied, however, was everything Taikou did paved a road for Chu Feng, so he could walk unrestrained within the Four Seas Academy.

He and Taikou were completely unrelated and, back then, he wanted to take Chu Feng as a disciple yet was refused. Now, Taikou was willing to lend his badge and had done all he could to help. All of those benevolent actions really made Chu Feng baffled. He was truly grateful for what Taikou did.

Human hearts were made out of flesh—not stone. Those who had a bit of kindness would know the favours they received and repay accordingly. And, Chu Feng was such a person. So, he hiddenly decided if he had the ability in the future, he would repay Taikou well.

“This brat Qin Yu puts no one above himself. Not only does he speak with a mouthful of nonsense, he is despicable and shameless. In order to take care of others, he ignores the method he uses. I shall take him away and give a good lesson to this disrespectful disciple. I’ll be leaving. Those

who should be opening the Millennium Ancient City, go open the Millennium Ancient City. Those who should enter for an experience, enter for an experience."

After speaking, Taikou grabbed out, clasping Qin Yu whose face was completely unrecognizable into his palm, then like carrying a little chicken, he rose into the air with Qin Yu and flew off.

"Huu~~~"

Seeing Taikou's figure completely disappear, all of the elders on scene, including some disciples, breathed a sigh of relief as though they were releasing a heavy burden off their shoulders, the Sentencing Elder in particular. She acted as if she were revived. She quickly wiped away the traces of blood on the corners of her mouth as well as the perspiration that drenched her forehead.

At that moment, no matter if it was the elders or the disciples, no one dared to say anything more to Chu Feng. No one even dared to look at Chu Feng. Even if they did, it would be a furtive glimpse with a quick retraction that followed. Chu Feng knew those elders were afraid. Not afraid of Chu Feng, but of Taikou who was behind Chu Feng, supporting him.

With the Sentencing Elder as the leader, the passel of elders began to open the entrance of the Millennium Ancient City at full strength.

The process was very straightforward. It was to simply use special methods to open the special formation, creating a gap within the powerful Spirit Formation. With that, it would allow Chu Feng and the others to enter.

hmm

Finally, with the combined strength of near a hundred elders, an undulation akin to a water ripple suddenly appeared outside the invisible forest. Moreover, the undulation became larger and larger, and in the end, a golden dazzling radiance appeared.

Chu Feng knew it was a hidden Spirit Formation, and that the hidden

Spirit Formation was very powerful. However, with special methods, the near hundred elders had already opened it.

Indeed, the rippling golden Spirit Formation widened and became a gorgeous gate with a golden frame, appearing before the forest shortly after.

"The Millennium Ancient City is a region of unknown. I'm sure all of you know the legends surrounding it well.

"Regardless, since this is the place where you will learn through experience, there are some things I must tell all of you so you have a plan in your hearts and you'll know what to do and what to not do after entering. And, if you were to meet with danger, you would at least have some ideas on how to take care of them.

"As for why it is a region of unknown, it's because many things in the Millennium Ancient City are still unknown mysteries even up until now.

"Everyone knows that the Millennium Ancient City is extremely enormous. Several thousand years ago in the Eastern Sea Region, it was an old nest of a large group of Monstrous Beasts. Those Monstrous Beasts established a civilization no weaker than us humans'—the Millennium Ancient City.

"But now, not only was the glory of the Millennium Ancient City unable to be passed down, the core region inside the Millennium Ancient City disappeared, as if it had never been constructed before, even as if it were never there in the first place. Barely any traces of it can be found.

"However, several thousand years ago, there were people who had already drawn the full appearance of the Millennium Ancient City. The area within the drawings is at least twice the size of it now. There were also undoubtedly cores. So, it can nearly be confirmed that the core of the Millennium Ancient City disappeared, or, was concealed by someone.

"However, that is not the most puzzling area of the Millennium Ancient City. The most puzzling area is the special enveloping pressure around the entire forest. This pressure is very unique and odd, but it is also undeniably very strong.

“After entering, flying is impossible. Even we cultivators find it difficult to walk inside. It is not easy.

“As for where this pressure originates from, the seniors of the Four Seas Academy had once investigated it, but could not find the answer. However, the current Millennium Ancient City is still an extremely special land—that much is certain.”

Chapter 729: Concealment Formation

"Beyond the Millennium Ancient City is an even vaster forest. Within this vast forest, there are not only Heaven medicines and various oddities, there exists also vicious Martial medicines and Fierce Beasts.

"Luckily, however, all the dangerous things move around only within the forest. They dare not enter the Millennium Ancient City.

"So, a word of advice: After entering, if you do not have the strength to fight against Martial Medicines, it'd be best to avoid walking deep into the forest. Also, when resting, it is best to return to the Millennium Ancient City. Don't loiter about in the forest.

"The duration of this expedition is set to ten days. Ten days later, I will reopen the entrance and let you out," said the Sentencing Elder, explaining. But soon after, she added, "That's right. Since this is an expedition, there will be perils. After entering, life and death will be uncertain. If there's anyone who is afraid, you can choose to stay behind now.

"Are there any cowards?"

"NONE!" replied all the disciples. Only Chu Feng alone looked indifferently.

"Then enter. Gather here in ten days. This is a must.

"If there is someone who does not return here after ten days, we will enter and search. If there is anyone who is found by us still moving around within the forest, or with an intact body, or are uninjured, they will all be punished for violating the rules," the Sentencing Elder reminded again.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and the others went through the entrance, stepping into the enormous forest.

Just as he passed through the Spirit Formation, Chu Feng felt a giant wave of pressure enveloping his body.

Restrained. He felt the power throughout his body all restrained. It was

a very restrictive feeling; Chu Feng was certain that his current fighting ability had greatly shrunk.

And the strangest thing was that he did indeed lose his ability to fly, as if the shape of the space there were different; he simply could not fly.

At that instant, there were already people who were doing some tests. Testing whether the Sentencing Elder's words were true as they attempted flight. However, the results told them even though they could leap several meters, even higher than that ancient tree over there, they did indeed lose the ability to fly. This was indeed an odd place.

After feeling such a peculiarity, no matter if it was Wang Long, Wang Yue, or Lan Xi, Lan Yanzhi, or Liu Zhenwei and the others, they all quickly rushed into the forest to search for Heaven medicines and Martial medicines, as that was their goal in coming to this place.

In a flash, only Chu Feng and the others remained, unmoving. The rest concentrated their gazes onto Chu Feng. When he was there, Chu Feng had really formlessly become their backbone.

"Let's first head to the Millennium Ancient City," Chu Feng said. Their journey's goal was completely different from Wang Long's and the others'. They did not aim for the Heaven medicines and Martial medicines within the forest, but for the true secret of the Millennium Ancient City.

"Mm." Jiang Wushang and the others nodded their heads, expressing agreement.

There had to be a reason why the elders chose to open an entrance at this place.

By opening it here, there would be small path. If one walked along the small path, they would soon arrive at the Millennium Ancient City. Meaning that the forest Chu Feng and the others were currently in did not occupy a large area. The forest containing true concealed danger was on the other side of the Millennium Ancient City.

As Chu Feng and the others went down the path, after a short hour, they walked out of the forest. Appearing before their eyes was an aged

and colossal city.

The city was truly enormous. So much it went beyond one's imagination. Moreover, the structures were very special. Although they were not as exquisite and as bursting with beauty as the humans' structures, a great sense of might and overbearingness erupted from all the buildings within the city. And, most importantly, the antique aura that pounced at him told Chu Feng the truly lengthiness of the city's existence.

hmm After arriving at that place, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power and started searching the Millennium Ancient City carefully. He looked for special regions, but he could feel no place that stood out. As a result, he had pretty much obtained nothing.

In addition, judging from the surface, the city was complete. One could simply not tell that any section was missing.

But Chu Feng had expected such a situation. So, after circling around the inside of the city, he suddenly leapt up, and, like an agile monkey, he stepped on the many buildings and jumped from one to another. Finally, he stood atop the apex of the highest structure within the Millennium Ancient City.

Looking down from above, Chu Feng started using the Heaven's Eyes to detailedly observe everything below from his position above.

"Wow, there really is a portion concealed in the ancient city! What powerful techniques!"

Before the Heaven's Eyes, the actual shape of the Millennium Ancient City was instantly exposed. Even Eggy could see that there was a section missing from the Millennium Ancient City. It, at present, was coalesced by pieces. The most important part had indeed disappeared.

"Eggy, what's your thoughts on this Millennium Ancient City?" Chu Feng and Eggy shared senses, so Eggy too could clearly see everything that Chu Feng saw with his Heaven's Eyes.

"It is a very powerful formation. The core was first hidden, then, with

the remaining pieces, the structure was rebuilt. Only then was the ancient city formed. However, no matter how much more powerful this formation is, in the end, it's still a formation. There are no unbreakable formations in this world. If the Formation Apertures are found, then naturally, it can be broken through," said Eggy after her analysis.

"Mm. From what I see, there are at least eight Formation Apertures for this formation and they all have to be broken. Moreover, there is only one in the Millennium Ancient City. The rest are all in the forest.

"Most importantly, these Formation Apertures are not picked up by Spirit power. Only the Heaven's Eyes can see them. In addition, since cultivation is restricted and we cannot fly, I must say there's quite some difficulty to want to break through this formation within ten days."

It was not only Eggy who saw the critical points of the formation. Chu Feng had an even more thorough grasp on it. He was more and more practiced in the use of the Heaven's Eyes. His analyzation abilities were more and more detailed as well.

"Heh, isn't that perfect for testing your control over the Heaven's Eyes?" said Eggy giggingly. From start to end, she had an indifferent attitude.

"You..." Chu Feng helplessly shook his head, then leapt down. Like a sharp sword, he stabbed himself into the surface of the ground.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, how is it?" Jiang Wushang and the others were guarding below. After seeing Chu Feng return, all of them surrounded him. With expectant and anxious gazes, they looked at Chu Feng. Especially Jiang Wushang. He had great hopes in that place.

As he faced the staring of the crowd, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, "As for whether that man with an Imperial Bloodline is still in existence, I have no clue. I have, however, discovered that there is a portion of the Millennium Ancient City concealed. Also, I have a way to get that concealed portion to appear."

"Big Brother Chu Feng, are your words true?" After hearing that, Jiang Wushang was elated. But, at the same time, he felt disbelief. After all, the Millennium Ancient City was an unsolvable mystery.

In all the years of the Four Seas Academy, they had kept on searching, but to no avail. Yet, Chu Feng had just arrived and discovered so much with a few glimpses. That really did make one feel unbelievable.

Chapter 730: Exposing the Formation Aperture

In reality, it was not only Jiang Wushang who felt immense excitement. Even Su Rou, Su Mei, and Zhang Tianyi reacted the same. With their gazes full of shock and admiration, they stared tightly at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng wore a light smile on his face as the gazes gathered on him. He nodded, and said, “It is absolutely true.”

“Haha, Big Brother Chu Feng, you are really too powerful! I truly don’t know what to say anymore.

“Ever since the Millennium Ancient City landed in the hands of the Four Seas Academy, who knows how many experts they’ve sent here to investigate it? Yet, they’ve obtained absolutely nothing.

“On the other hand, you gave it no more than a glance yet saw through it. I really don’t know how I should give you my thanks. You are definitely someone whom I owe a great favour to!” After hearing Chu Feng’s confirmation, Jiang Wushang nearly lost control of his emotions. He actually hugged Chu Feng and roared with laughter.

Chu Feng had no problem understanding Jiang Wushang’s current emotions because to him, an Imperial Bloodline was too important. It could be said to be a goal that he might not be able to touch, even after an entire life of striving for it. At present, however, Chu Feng gave him hope. How could he not be excited?

But even Chu Feng himself could not be sure whether there were things related to the Imperial Bloodline inside the concealed ancient city. So, in an attempt to avoid spoiling the mood, he could only say, “Brother Wushang, I have no problem understanding your current feelings, but to say the truth, even if I can break through this formation, I cannot be certain whether there are things related to the Imperial Bloodline inside.”

“Big Brother Chu Feng, are you unable to feel it?” But after hearing his words, Jiang Wushang looked at Chu Feng in surprise.

“Feel what?” Chu Feng was puzzled.

“The might emanating from the Imperial Bloodline!” said Jiang Wushang.

“The might from the Imperial Bloodline?” After the words were spoken, not to mention Chu Feng, even Su Rou and the others were stunned because they did not feel any might originating from any Imperial Bloodline.

Chu Feng was then the first to react as he said to Jiang Wushang, “Brother Wushang, the Imperial Bloodline might you talk of... Could it be pressure that is enveloping us?”

“Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, do you not sense it?” said Jiang Wushang.

“I can feel pressure, but I can’t determine whether it is from a special bloodline.” Chu Feng shook his head.

When he heard that, Jiang Wushang looked towards Su Rou, Zhang Tianyi and the others. They too responded the same as Chu Feng—they shook their heads as well.

At that instant, when Jiang Wushang looked at Chu Feng, his eyes had even more complex emotions as he said, “Actually, it’s normal for them to not be able to sense it. After all, they don’t have any special bloodline power. But you, Big Brother Chu Feng... even you can’t sense the pressure originating from the depths of one’s soul. Which means likely, there are only two possibilities.”

“Brother Wushang, what do you mean?” asked Chu Feng quickly.

“The first possibility is that you are not a person who possess an Inherited Bloodline. As a result, you cannot feel the Imperial Bloodline—the pressure that completely veils over one’s bloodline.

“The second possibility is that you are still, in fact, a possessor of an Inherited Bloodline, but because your bloodline is superior to even the Imperial Bloodline, the pressure emanated from it cannot envelop the foundations of your bloodline and has invisibly been rejected,” said Jiang Wushang.

“I see.” A revelation came to Chu Feng when he absorbed all of that. As it turned out, Jiang Wushang, possessor of a Royal Bloodline, not only felt the pressure everyone else felt after entering this region, he even felt the bloodline pressure that others could not sense—and that bloodline pressure was the Imperial Bloodline.

“It seems I must hurry. No matter if that pressure is from the concealed center of the city or not, I must still try it out,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

Afterwards, Chu Feng alone left the Millennium Ancient City. He immediately entered the deep parts of the forest because the possibility of a Formation Aperture being there was the greatest.

As for Su Rou and the others, they did not head for the forest to capture Heaven medicines. They rested in the Millennium Ancient City, sitting to await Chu Feng’s return.

Chu Feng ran as he if were flying, his speed immensely quick. Even though his cultivation was restricted, his speed still remained inconceivable. Most definitely, within that region, there was no one whose speed could match his.

But that wasn’t all. Chu Feng left no traces as he stepped upon the grasses. As he shot forth, he not only left no remnants of aura behind, not a single bit of sound was made as well. The reason why he was able to do this was because, in order to sooner reach his destinations, Chu Feng had used the power of the three lightnings. Currently, his cultivation was of a rank two Martial Lord’s, but his strength was even quite a bit more powerful than a rank four Martial Lord.

ta Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped moving. He stood on the ground like a javelin, and with his fierce gaze, he swept it across a small space in front of him. An ecstatic expression involuntarily emerged onto his face as he thought, “I didn’t expect to find a Formation Aperture so quickly!”

With the naked eye, there was nothing special about that empty space. Even with Spirit power, nothing out of the place could be discovered. Unless it were a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, it was impossible to see

through that land with Spirit power. Yet, Chu Feng had done it.

Chu Feng knew that place was one of the Formation Apertures that hid the Millennium Ancient City. However, even so, the elation on Chu Feng's face dimmed a fair bit quickly.

It was because he knew that there was a total of eight Formation Aperture. One of them was inside the ancient city, while seven others were all outside. Moreover, to break the eight Formation Aperture, there was a specific order. If the order were disrupted, it would lead to a calamity. Likely everyone inside the forest would die.

The one who laid the Formation Apertures there intentionally set up such a situation. That person set up a situation that could be broken through, but up until now, there was obviously no one who had been able to. One could even say that all of it had yet to be discovered by anyone; Chu Feng was most likely the first person in all of history to do so.

"Heh, no need to be so downcast. You must know that even Martial King-leveled Gold-cloak World Spiritists are unable to discover this place. Only Royal-cloak World Spiritists can, and even if they did, they may not be able to immediately determine the order of the Formation Aperture with a single glimpse as you have done."

Although Eggy usually entertained herself by watching on the side and was fearless of any significant matters, when Chu Feng's confidence received a blow, or when he faced setbacks and difficulties, she would be the first to stand out to console Chu Feng, advise him, and solve puzzles for him.

"Mm. There is still time. Not only do I have to break this formation within ten days, I also have to solve the mystery of this place." Chu Feng smiled. After secretly leaving behind a mark that only he could discover, he leaped forth and started searching again.

Perhaps the gods don't disappoint those who persevere, or perhaps Chu Feng truly had good luck, before the skies had lit up, Chu Feng found the second Formation Aperture. Moreover, the order of it was first. It was a Formation Aperture that could be immediately opened now.

Chapter 731: For Brother

"Haha, I didn't think I would find this so quickly! Let me see how mysterious the Formation Aperture left behind by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist is!"

After seeing all the things up until now, Chu Feng was almost completely certain that the person who laid the formation was a Royal-cloak World Spiritist. Furthermore, that person was most likely a Martial King. It was very possibly that it was the powerful existence that possessed an Imperial Bloodline and eradicated the tribe of Monstrous Beasts in the Millennium Ancient City.

Since he said he would do it, he did not dally. After discovering the Formation Aperture, Chu Feng first laid a Concealment Spirit Formation to completely envelop the area. This was in order to avoid any unnecessary troubles in case something were to activate when he was opening the Formation Aperture.

Only after laying a Concealment Spirit Formation did Chu Feng start to lay a Spirit Formation to open the Formation Aperture.

Although that was the work of a Royal-cloak World Spiritist, with the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng saw through its composition and uncovered its weak points.

Also, the person who laid that formation did so in a specific manner. The creator was only testing the person who would see through the setup, so the strength of the Spirit Formation was not too great. Only the element of concealment was relatively stronger. As a result, it was quite a simple task for Chu Feng to open the Formation Aperture.

hmm

Purple-coloured light swirled about the Spirit Formation. After only a blink, violent gales started running amok atop the seemingly ordinary earth. It trembled slightly before, finally, a ray of light rose into the sky. An incomparably domineering and large door then gradually emerged from the ground.

It was golden, but not made by the power of golden Spirit Formations. The golden Spirit Formation was completely different from the golden Spirit Formations Gold-cloak World Spiritists had. It was a fundamental difference. Not only was it beautiful, it was mighty. The Spirit Formation power that was already no longer differentiated by colour was a whole new level of strength—the strength of a Royal-cloak Spirit Formation.

"Heh, luckily I made prior preparations. Otherwise, this would have truly attracted quite a bit of attention." Seeing the overflowing radiance originating from the huge door made by Royal-cloak Spirit Formation before his eyes, Chu Feng knew it was the entrance to the Formation Aperture.

Entering the doors, he arrived at a corridor. But, after walking just a few steps, Chu Feng discovered three entrances appearing in front.

Chu Feng did not rashly continue because, for some reason, he felt that something was off. And, through the Heaven's Eyes' observations, indeed, he found anomalies—it was a maze. If he took one wrong step, he would sink into an unrecoverable state.

Wicked. The creator of this place was truly wicked. Although he did not explicitly lay down traps or leave behind powerful guardians, he invisibly set up overlapping dangers.

Within the dangers, there were countless paths, countless choices. However, if one were to take even a single wrong path, or choose a single wrong door, there would be no return. Only two words awaited those who entered such a situation: absolute death!

Fortunately, Chu Feng had the Heaven's Eyes and he moved cautiously. He saw through the trap early and also searched for clues toward the road of survival. Even so, however, Chu Feng dared not be careless. He was careful and alert. Every time he had to choose between entrances, he would examine them in detail and double check before entering. Every step was truly frightening.

In such high-stress circumstances, even Chu Feng didn't know how much time passed. He only knew that he passed through innumerable

roads, crossed innumerable doors, but had yet to meet overly fatal perils. That meant up until now, all the paths he chose were correct; his decisions were correct.

Finally, a blinding golden radiance appeared before Chu Feng. It was the exit to the Formation Aperture. Chu Feng quickly walked towards it. Indeed, he once again saw a dazzling large door. But, this door was not the same doors as the fake ones in the maze. It was the true exit.

Moreover, in front of the exit, there was even a key floating in the air. A key three feet long, akin to a dagger.

Chu Feng grasped the key and stepped past the door. He felt his vision blur, then soon after, he returned to the area at which he entered the Formation Aperture.

Looking around himself, other than the already darkened sky, there were pretty much no other changes. The faint wind remained the same, the cries of birds as well. The Spirit Formation key in his hand was clenched just like that within his palm, and even the Opening Formation he laid was still swirling about. But, when he looked again with the Heaven's Eyes, he discovered that the Formation Aperture had secretly disappeared.

"Chu Feng, you've succeeded! You've succeeded in breaking a Formation Aperture of a Royal-cloak World Spiritist!

"If this were known, it would definitely create a commotion in the East Sea, and your name would spread through the world as well!

"The designer of this Formation Aperture is meticulous, and even if a Royal-cloak World Spiritist were attempting it, the process may not even be as smooth. Yet, you did it! I must say, this is truly something worthy to be happy about and worthy of congratulations. Your growth in Spirit Formation techniques is even greater than your growth in cultivation.

"For those who have control over Spirit Formation techniques, the most important thing for them is the word 'wisdom'. No matter if it's linking with World Spirits to have them willingly sell their own lives for you, or to break formations and lay deathly traps, they require surpassing

wisdom. Only with that could one become superior to others and stand in an undefeatable position.

"And you are equipped with precisely that. Putting aside cultivation, regarding Spirit Formation techniques, it's likely even Gold-cloak World Spiritists in the Martial King realm will be far inferior to you." Eggy praised Chu Feng endlessly. Ever since entering the Formation Aperture, she did not remind Chu Feng to do anything. Everything was seen through and done by Chu Feng himself, and he also chose the paths on his own.

Or, one could say that she didn't even have the chance to remind Chu Feng because practically every time she discovered something wrong, Chu Feng too would see the same thing. Not only did his growth make her feel comfort, it was worth her praise.

"A comparison in wisdom? Indeed, the person who laid this Formation Aperture is a wise person. Inside the maze, he might as well didn't put any reminders in there. On the surface, it looks excessively simple, but in reality, dangers lie on all sides. One would die with a slight bit of carelessness. Luckily, I have the Heaven's Eyes. Otherwise, with my current Spirit power, I wouldn't have been able to see anything."

Chu Feng smiled. Although many minuscule matters were decisions of his own, when all was said and done, the Heaven's Eyes were the crucial thing that helped him.

"I taught you the Heaven's Eyes, but the reason why I taught you was because I have good impressions of you. And why do I have good impressions of you? Because of your ability.

"Although I was forced to be sealed in your World Spirit Space and require you becoming strong to restore my own strength, if you did not win my trust, I would never hand everything to you. In the end, it's still because you're strong enough." Eggy's praise of Chu Feng came from the bottom of her heart. Chu Feng's growth made her feel joy that came from the very inner parts of herself.

Eggy's praise not only boosted Chu Feng's confidence, it also increased

his strength and will. After putting away the Spirit Formation key in his hand, Chu Feng did not stop. He ventured deeper forward and continued searching for Formation Apertures.

Unknowingly, the sky had become black. It meant that Chu Feng had spent quite a bit of time breaking the Formation Aperture, and according to the rules of the Four Seas Academy, they were only allowed to stay there for ten days. So, Chu Feng had to hurry it up. Not only did he need to break the formation within ten days, he had to solve the mystery in ten days as well! He had already prepared to throw away sleep and rest. For his brother, he would give it his all!

Chapter 732: Bastard Couple

It was deep into the night, and all was silent, with the exception of the rustling of light wind. Inside the seemingly serene forest, there were endless dangers lurking about.

It was the depths of the forest. There were vicious Heaven medicines, and occasionally, Chu Feng also met ferocious Martial medicines. There were even some Fierce Beasts that had absolutely no intelligence, only the nature of killing within.

Chu Feng was cautious and his movements were peculiar. He was akin to a spirit as he drifted about the vast forest. No human, nor beast, could discover traces of him.

Chu Feng was still carefully searching for Formation Apertures. But suddenly, he felt something out of place. With his sharp hearing, he heard bursts of odd sounds.

Finally, Chu Feng's heart was shaken because he could tell what sound it was—it was a woman's voice. It was a cry of a woman, but it was a wavering, even pleasurable, cry. One's heart would go limp upon hearing it.

Listening more closely, as the sudden highs and lows, sudden longs and shorts of a woman's voice sounded, there were even rough panting sounds from a man.

God damn, there are people doing such improper things in the depths of such a perilous forest? They are truly too reckless.

Humans all had curious hearts. Chu Feng, of course, was no exception.

He was really curious: Who would even have the mindset to do something like that in a place like this? Chu Feng thought carefully and analyzed the people who entered this place and made judgements based on the attitude they faced one another. Chu Feng felt that there shouldn't be a pair that had such a special relationship.

Then...

It was a whimsical act of making love! There were actually people doing that!

In their group, in the group that entered the Millennium Ancient City, other than him and Su Rou and Su Mei, there was clearly no one else who had a lovers' relationship. Yet, there were people performing such licentious acts. If that wasn't making love on a whim, then what was it?!

"Who exactly are they?" Due to curiosity, Chu Feng gradually neared the origin of the voices. Then, he discovered a Concealment Spirit Formation laid there.

But that was no trouble for Chu Feng. With the Heaven's Eyes, even Formation Apertures showed themselves. It was simply as if the mere Concealment Spirit Formation weren't there.

Immediately after using the Heaven's Eyes, the things before Chu Feng's eyes instantly became different. They started to slowly ripple and become dim. He first saw a layer of a purple-coloured Spirit Formation appear, which meant it was a Concealment Formation laid by a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

But soon, the Spirit Formation started to dissipate. Finally, it completely disappeared and Chu Feng could then see everything concealed within the Spirit Formation.

He saw the figures of a man and a woman currently doing lascivious activities.

"It's them?"

Chu Feng couldn't help being a bit surprised when he saw the scene in front of him because he had already recognized the pair. It was Lan Xi's younger sister, Lan Yanzhi, and Wang Yue's elder brother, Wang Long.

Lan Yanzhi seemed to be interested in Qin Yu, but it didn't seem that she was into Wang Long? And Wang Long was obviously interested in Lan Xi, but it didn't seem that he was into Lan Yanzhi?

Deep. They hid it quite deep. Looking at their current controlless situation due to emotions, Chu Feng felt that their improper relationship

had not gone for merely one or two days. Otherwise, how were they so practiced, so lost, so absorbed by it? Even as he observed on the side, they didn't detect him.

"Hoh, if it's them two, then they're quite fitting. I truly don't know how they got rid of their younger brother and elder sister. Whatever, I won't disturb you. Continue enjoying yourselves." After knowing who were pleasuring each other, Chu Feng faintly smiled, then prepared to turn around and leave.

Although he was quite intrigued, he was not interested in watching their live broadcast. If he had the time, he would rather return and hug the two beauties Su Rou and Su Mei. In terms of countenance, in terms of figure, and even in terms of skin and the feeling he got from his hands, Lan Yanzhi was too far away in comparison to Su Rou.

However, Chu Feng's main mission now was to break the formation that concealed the ancient city, so he did not have the mind to do that sort of thing.

"Lan Xi, you give me the cold shoulder? You treat me coldly? You don't look straight at me?

"Now, are you not still toyed around as I wish? Hahaha~~~"

But just as Chu Feng turned around, he heard something off. Wang Long was calling Lan Xi's name.

At that instant, when Chu Feng turned his head around to look, he discovered that Wang Long turned mad. As he howled, he burst with anger, as though he had turned into a demon.

But, when he looked again at the woman who was doing it with Wang Long, he saw that it was evidently Lan Yanzhi—not Lan Xi.

"Damn, has this Wang Long gone insane?" Chu Feng felt completely baffled.

"Aiya, Big Brother Long, you're terrible! Clearly Yanzhi is with you, why did you call my sister's name?" Just as Chu Feng felt confused, Lan Yanzhi opened her eyes with bewitching pants and spoke with a slight bit of

displeasure.

"Haha, you're mine, and your sister will be mine as well! Didn't you promise me that you would help me take care of your sister?" said Wang Long with laughter.

"I did promise you, but you have to give me time! After all, you know how my sister is. I still have to slowly work hard in order for her to have good feelings towards you. As for making her like you, that'll be even more difficult," Lan Yanzhi coquettishly said.

"Like me? I don't need that. I only need to get my hands on her; I don't need her to like me.

"Lan Yanzhi, after you return tomorrow, go hunt Martial medicines with your elder sister. When she's tired and has her guard down, sneak this into her food, then use the signal to notify me. At that time, naturally, I will take care of your sister." As Wang Long spoke, he took out a bottle of drugged water.

It was a special drug. One that made women produce special desires, yet also enter a muddled state.

After seeing the bottle, even Lan Yanzhi's complexion changed. She revealed a terrified expression and as she hurriedly shook her head, she said, "I can't! If you force it like this, my sister will know I did it later on. She will kill me! Judging by her nature, she will definitely kill me!"

"Don't worry, she won't. I've already planned it out. In the depths of the forest, there's a special type of Fierce Beast, called the Aphrodisiac Beast.

"That Aphrodisiac Beast has already mutated. When it sees males, it will kill; but when it sees females, it will violate. It is its nature, and it can also release a special type of gas that is only effective towards females but not males. However, it can indeed formlessly bewitch women and turn them into wenches, allowing it to do whatever it wishes to do.

"After your sister takes this drug, her awareness will become blurred. I will take down you two sisters, and as I do so, I will lay a formation to imitate the cry of the Aphrodisiac Beast and create the silhouette of the

beast as well.

"With that, your sister will think she was defiled by the Aphrodisiac Beast and she won't know it was due to you, nor will she know it was me." As Wang Long explained, he laughed loudly. Obviously, not only did he plot a long time ago for this day, he looked forward to this day a long time ago.

Chapter 733: The Pitiful Lan Xi

“So you already made preparations. No wonder you had me use everything I had to convince my sister to come here with me. From the start, your goal was my sister.” Lan Yanzhi was a bit angry.

“That’s right. My goal from the start was her. My goal from a very long time ago was her. The moment I laid my eyes upon her ever since arriving at the Four Seas Academy, I fell for her.

“In these near four years of time, I treated her as I would to my ancestors. When training, I would always stand in front of her and block dangers for her. When there were good things, I would always be the first to give them to her so she could experience them.

“But she? She never looked straight at me, and doesn’t even treat me as a friend. Even if I become a great genius and stand by her side, she will act the same.

“I loved her from the start, but now, I hate her. I don’t need her to like me; I only want her body!” Wang Long was a bit mad, his fury overwhelming.

“No. I cannot help you, I cannot harm my sister like this.” When she saw Wang Long act that way, Lan Yanzhi decisively shook her head.

“What did you say? Say it again.” Wang Long’s expression instantly twisted when he heard Lan Yanzhi refuse. Two cold glares shot out of his eyes.

“I-I said I cannot help you harm my sister! Although she is usually strict with me, after all, she is my sister! I... Mm—”

Before Lan Yanzhi finished speaking, Wang Long’s hand was akin to an eagle’s claw as it firmly grasped her neck. Then, he threatened, “You dare to refuse? Do you forget who gave you cultivation resources when your sister was unwilling to? Do you forget who helped you refine those resources when your sister did not?

“You dare not help me? If you don’t help me, I’ll go get ten Aphrodisiac

Beasts right now and have them all violate you, then spread this to everyone in the Four Seas Academy!"

"Mm—" At that moment, Lan Yanzhi's face was flushed red and she was soon to run out of breath. She was waving her hands desperately, indicating Wang Long to let go.

"Tell me, will you help me or no?" Wang Long let go and asked fiercely again.

cough cough At that instant, Lan Yanzhi first let out a series of sharp coughs. Not only was there pain on her face, there was also fear. She finally experienced how revolting Wang Long was. She regretted her greed for cheap advantages back then and for scheming with Wang Long.

But now, she no longer had any path of return because she knew Wang Long was definitely the sort of person who did what he said. In the end, she could only compromise, "I'll, I'll help you."

"Hahaha, that's better." Wang Long immediately burst in mad laughter when he heard Lan Yanzhi agree, then pounced on her body again, starting to go wild on the beauty beneath him.

"Hell, what a pervert." Although the Concealment Spirit Formation was soundproof, Chu Feng was able to hear everything clearly. He did not sympathize for Lan Yanzhi, but he did feel pity for Lan Xi.

Although he and Lan Xi did not interact much, judging by the attitude she treated Su Rou and the others, Chu Feng could tell that Lan Xi and Lan Yanzhi were completely different people. One could say that Lan Xi was a greatly talented good person who had an outstanding appearance and zero arrogance.

But, as the saying goes: "There is no need to worry about matters unrelated to yourself." Although Lan Xi had quite a good character, those were, after all, internal issues of Lan Xi's family. Chu Feng currently had a mission in hand, so he did not prepare to casually come out and barge in such a matter.

Besides, even if he did, he had no way of doing so. If he spoke the truth,

Lan Xi would definitely not believe him, and instead, it would be easier for Lan Yanzhi to bite back at him.

If he followed Lan Xi and her sister, then come out to stop them when Lan Yanzhi was about to harm Lan Xi and accuse Lan Yanzhi at that very moment, he would be wasting time.

Chu Feng did not know when Lan Yanzhi was going to make her move. More importantly, Chu Feng did not have that time in his hands So, Chu Feng only saw it as drama on the side and did not interfere. He turned around, and left.

After a night of searching, Chu Feng's harvests were quite decent. He found a total of three Formation Aperture, but only opened one. In order to prevent Su Rou and the others from worrying, Chu Feng had to return to the Millennium Ancient City and let them know that he not only was fine, he even had quite a good return. And that even in the depths of the forest, there was nothing that could harm him.

When Chu Feng returned to the city, he saw a special Fierce Beast. It only had thick steel armor on the outside, but within the armor was fresh, tender meat. Thinking back, since Su Rou and the others were doing nothing but waiting around within the ancient city, rather than eating dry rations, he might as well give them a good ingredient and let them cook up some delicious foods for themselves. After all, he now knew that Su Rou had a hand in cooking.

So, Chu Feng killed the Fierce Beast as he passed it, and carried it towards the Millennium Ancient City.

When Chu Feng returned, the sky had lit up brightly. But, before entering the ancient city, he saw a graceful figure.

It was Lan Xi. She sat on the peak of a building and looked down from above. After seeing Chu Feng, she lightly smiled, and after politely nodding her head, she cast her gaze back to the distance.

Even though Lan Xi was calm on the surface, from her soft gaze, Chu Feng could still see her worry.

Chu Feng knew what she was worried about. She was definitely worried for her young sister, Lan Yanzhi.

But, if Lan Xi knew that currently, her sister was seeking pleasure with Wang Long and plotting against her... who knew what she would feel.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt some bitterness in his heart. He admit: he truly sympathized a bit with the poor woman.

As he had those thoughts, Chu Feng put down the Fierce Beast corpse in his hand, then after continuous leaps, he arrived at Lan Xi's side and said with a light smile, "You're up so early. Have you rested well?"

"In comparison to you, I've definitely rested well.

"Aren't you working too hard? You haven't return all night; aren't you afraid of meeting dangers?" said Lan Xi with a smile. It was a very kind one, lacking of any maliciousness. There was no trace of ingratiation either, as if she were treating a normal friend with a bit of concern.

"Being in this world, no matter where or when, there is never an absence of perils. But, I am usually a cautious person. If one is sufficiently cautious, any dangers can be avoided.

"Lan Xi. In this forest, there are innumerable threats. Sometimes, they are not limited to Martial medicines, or Fierce Beasts. Sometimes, they can also be humans.

"As a word of advice: Be like me—more cautious. At times, one must be on guard around the ones closest to themselves." After leaving those words behind, Chu Feng leaped and returned to the ground. Carrying the Fierce Beast, he walked deeper into the ancient city.

Only Lan Xi stood where she was as she gazed at Chu Feng back. Some confusion surged within her eyes, then she curled her lips and cast her gaze back at the distance, looking carefully. After Chu Feng left, it was obvious that stronger worry had emerged into her eyes.

Chu Feng entered the city, then spread his Spirit power and detected.

He discovered in succession Liu Zhenwei, Wang Yue, and the others, but

didn't detect Wang Long and Lan Yanzhi. Indeed, they hadn't returned all night, and Lan Xi was, as he thought, waiting for Lan Yanzhi.

Finally, Chu Feng returned to the place he left, a resting area personally selected by him for Su Rou and the others.

However, as Chu Feng neared, he inadvertently discovered Jiang Wushang cooking food within the small-scale plaza outside the palaces. Moreover, they smelt quite nice.

Chapter 734: Wang Long Looking for Trouble

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you’ve returned! How was it?” As World Spiritist himself, Jiang Wushang immediately felt Chu Feng’s arrival. At that moment, his face was full of joy and he quickly ran over.

“It was quite good. I’ve returned this time to tell all of you that I will have no trouble facing anything in the forest, so there’s no need to worry about me. When I finish the things I plan to do, I’ll return here and open this place.

“Brother Wushang, no need to be concerned. If there truly is an Imperial Bloodline within the Millennium Ancient City, even if I have to flip everything upside down, I will find it for you,” Chu Feng said to Jiang Wushang as he patted his shoulders.

“Haha, then that is really too great! Big Brother Chu Feng, I truly don’t know how to thank you. This is clearly my own matter, yet I need you to run about for me while I can only stay here, wait, and do nothing. I…” There was a bit of shame on Jiang Wushang’s face.

“We are brothers, there is no need to say things like this.” Chu Feng once again patted his shoulders, then looked at the food’s increasing aroma in the distance and said, “I didn’t think you, a grand prince, would have such skills in cooking.”

“Hehe, I always went out for adventuring on my own before, and since I don’t like eating dry rations—only hot things—I inadvertently trained myself. In a bit, give it a try. Perhaps your Brother Wushang’s cooking isn’t as flawless as Sister Su Rou’s, but it’s still not bad!” Jiang Wushang said while scratching his head.

“Haha, then this is just perfect! I’ll throw in a dish for you; roast this as well.” Chu Feng handed the Fierce Beast in his hand to Jiang Wushang.

“Waa, this is quite a rarely seen Fierce Beast! Although its external steel armor is incomparably strong, the meat within is sweet and tasty. It

seems that Big Brother Chu Feng is also someone who often hunts for food, huh?" Jiang Wushang immediately recognized that the Fierce Beast was a rare delicacy.

"Heh. I'm good in eating, but less so making." Chu Feng laughed, then walked into the palace.

Su Rou and Su Mei lived in the same house. Su Mei was still sleeping; she was cute, amiable, and extremely beautiful as she slept. Chu Feng really couldn't bear waking up that little beauty.

But Su Rou had already awakened. She was currently washing her face and combing. At that moment, her long, wet hair scattered about her shoulders. Sparkling water droplets, with Su Rou's unique fragrance, slid down her hair. They landed onto her snow-white jade-like skin, giving her a very bewitching appearance.

Chu Feng carefully approached her from behind, and then circled his arms around Su Rou's soft waist, tightly hugging the beauty in his embrace.

"Shh, be quiet! Little Mei hasn't woken up yet," Su Rou said in a low voice. But, as she spoke, she turned around slightly and gently buried her head into Chu Feng as she tightly hugged the man of hers.

At that instant, Chu Feng was not only able to feel Su Rou's face rubbing in his embrace, he could also feel two bountiful, round, and soft objects tightly stuck on his chest. Unbearably, he felt his entire body heat up, and his little brother beneath also instantly stood upright.

If not out of consideration for Su Mei still sleeping, that food was soon to come, and that there was simply not enough time, Chu Feng really wanted to immediately push her down and enjoy the taste of the exceptional beauty.

As if she felt the change underneath Chu Feng, Su Rou feared Chu Feng would not be able to hold himself back so she quickly left Chu Feng's embrace, charmingly smiled, then said, "How were the harvests?"

"Better than expected. Within ten days, I should be able to break open

this formation. But, after I leave today, I'm afraid I can only return after five days," Chu Feng said.

"Although it is completely within reason to fight for your brother and I really shouldn't say anything, as your lover, I still hope you can take care of yourself because in my heart, there are only people who are most important to me. One is my sister, the other is you," said Su Rou.

"Don't worry, I have plans. Regardless of how much greater the storm becomes, I have already seen it all. The things in here don't trouble me. Besides, matters of my brother are matters of my own. I should still go forth even if it were more dangerous," Chu Feng said after a smile.

"You..." Seeing Chu Feng who acted in such a manner, Su Rou really didn't know what to say. So, she could only sweetly smile, and no longer said anything in tact.

But, she still felt her heart ache because she knew Chu Feng must have experienced quite a few hardships on his own outside. His current strength did not just appear out of nowhere. It was tempered bit by bit.

And just as Chu Feng was chatting with Su Rou, Jiang Wushang was also speeding up his cooking. He was also very meticulous with it, especially so with the Fierce Beast meat he was roasting. Its aroma wafted about for several meters.

Normally, Jiang Wushang wouldn't put so much of his heart into making food, but today was different. Ever since entering this place, he felt joy and excitement surge from the bottom of his heart. So much that he couldn't even sleep.

The reason was obviously because of the discovery of the Imperial Bloodline. Moreover, there also existed the chance to dig it out. To him, that was a wondrous thing that he could not even dream of.

Yet, at present, such an unfathomable dream turned into reality. It was all because of Chu Feng. He was truly thankful, so that was why he put so much into cooking food. He felt it was, as of now, the best sign of gratitude he could give to Chu Feng.

“Oh? I even thought it was some lady who was roasting such an aromatic meat. I didn’t expect it to be you, brat.

“Come, bring me the meat you’re roasting and give me a fresh taste of it.” Suddenly, a very horrid-sounding and arrogant voice came from afar. Upon the raise of his head, he saw it was Wang Long and Wang Yue.

Jiang Wushang looked at Wang Long, and after some hesitation, decided to choose to act deaf and ignore him. This was a delicious food he specially prepared for Chu Feng. How could he let Wang Long take advantage of it?

Besides, Chu Feng was now a person who had Taikou’s protection, and Jiang Wushang himself was a person who had Chu Feng’s protection. As a result, he no longer feared Wang Long as he did before.

“Ah? You ignore me? Are you looking for death?” Wang Long was instantly enraged when he saw that Jiang Wushang did not even look straight at him. In the Four Seas Academy, there was no disciple who dared to ignore him like that.

Suddenly putting strength in his palm, he threw an attack out, turning the rock by Jiang Wushang’s side into fragments.

He didn’t strike Jiang Wushang because he had fears, and the person he feared was naturally Chu Feng. He didn’t strike the food because he also had fears. After a night of working, he was truly hungry now. Right before his eyes, there was such a delicious food; he truly wanted to eat.

“What is happening?”

“Senior Wang Long, what happened?” The explosion of the rock attracted quite some attention. Liu Zhenbiao and the others quickly came over, and even Lan Xi hurried over.

“Hmph. This brat doesn’t know what’s good from bad. After seeing me, not only did he not come up and pay his respects, when I kindly wished to taste his workmanship, he refused. From what I see, he simply does not put me, his senior, in his eyes,” said Wang Long with quite some displeasure.

“Jiang Wushang, you have truly become more and more audacious! You dare to even disrespect Senior Wang Long? Do you not put the rules of the Four Seas Academy in your eyes? Do you realize that you’re a disciple of the Four Seas Academy?” When they heard those words, Liu Zhenbiao, who had been in past conflicts with Jiang Wushang and the others, quickly took the chance to criticize Jiang Wushang.

Chapter 735: Kneel Down

"That's right! You truly think you can do whatever you wish to in the Four Seas Academy by relying on an outsider?" At the same time, a few other disciples also spoke with malicious intent.

It was a good chance to boot-lick Wang Long. They did not want to miss that chance, and more importantly, if they didn't speak for Wang Long, they also feared they would receive his punishment.

"Wang Long, since we are from the same academy, we should care for each other. As a senior, you should be an example. How can you strike out like this just because of a bit of food?" Just at that moment, Lan Xi spoke. She already saw what had happened, so she couldn't bear continue watching.

"This..." When Lan Xi spoke, the people who were berating Jiang Wushang couldn't help shutting their mouths. They dared not offend Wang Long, but similarly, they dared not offend Lan Xi.

"Lan Xi, your words are incorrect. As a senior, yes, I should take care of my juniors, but at the same time, I should teach them the rules.

"Jiang Wushang does not know the rules. So, I teach him. What is the wrong in that?" retorted Wang Long, but thought, Damn woman, you're getting more and more excessive. You stand on the opposite side against me in front of so many people? Wait until you get hit with my drug. See how I'll take care of you then.

At that instant, Wang Long was not truly angry. Instead, he was very happy because the woman he loved openly was soon to become the object beneath him. So long as he thought of it, he couldn't help feeling refreshed as the thing underneath rose up.

Lan Xi really didn't know what to say about Wang Long's views. After all, when any disciple saw them, they had to pay their respects—it was a rule set by the academy head himself. Although she could refuse the salutations of others, if Wang Long wanted to enjoy such a privilege, even she had no right to stop him.

“What are you staring at? Why aren’t you paying your respects to my brother?” Seeing Lan Xi fall silent, Wang Yue hurriedly pointed at Jiang Wushang and yelled.

Although he was unwilling, it was indeed a rule of the Four Seas Academy. So, he could only walk up, bow to Wang Long, and say, “I greet Senior Wang Long.”

“Haha!” Wang Long smugly laughed when he saw Jiang Wushang give in, then he pointed at Jiang Wushang and said, “Remember, in the future, whenever you see me, you must come and pay your respects. These are rules!”

“These are damn rules, huh? How about I teach you some rules!” But just at that moment, a voice suddenly rang out. At the same time, four people walked out of a palace.

There were two men and two women. Zhang Tianyi was near the end, Su Rou and Su Mei were by the sides, and the middle, leading, was Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng? He’s here? When did he return?!” When they saw Chu Feng, the group of disciples comprising of two men and one woman couldn’t help greatly change their expressions. They were not lightly frightened.

The reason why they dared to say all that to Jiang Wushang before was because they knew Chu Feng wasn’t in the Millennium Ancient City. But, they never expected that Chu Feng had returned. That made them quite terrified.

After all, the scene of Taikou beating Qin Yu up yesterday was still clear in their eyes. If even Qin Yu, disciple of the Sentencing Elder, received such a brutal ending because he offended Chu Feng, what would happen to them?

“Don’t worry. With Senior Wang Long here, what are you afraid of?

“Besides, this is the Millennium Ancient City. Taikou isn’t here. If he dares to act arrogantly, judging by Senior Wang Long’s character, he’ll have it coming,” said Liu Zhenbiao secretly via mental messaging.

“That’s true!” After hearing Liu Zhenbiao’s words, the disciples felt it

made sense. They couldn't help but find their courage once more, and stood behind Wang Long with their chests raised.

But who would have thought after seeing Chu Feng, even Wang Long felt cowardly. Although he was not afraid of Chu Feng, he was truly afraid of Taikou. So, without saying anything, he waved his big sleeve, left behind a cold snort, and aimed to leave.

"STOP!" However, just at that moment, Chu Feng explosively shouted.

"What do you want?" Wang Long turned his head around and looked at Chu Feng with a disdainful gaze.

"Didn't you hear what I said just now?" Chu Feng had an indifferent expression, then he added, "You were just talking about rules, so I'll teach you some rules right now."

"Teach me rules? What a joke. You, a person from the outside of the Four Seas Academy, is worthy to teach me rules? On what basis?" Wang Long sneered incessantly.

"On no other but this." Chu Feng's complexion remained unchanged, but as he spoke, he took out a badge. It was Taikou's identity badge.

"This..." After seeing the badge, everyone's heart involuntarily trembled. It was precisely because of that badge that Qin Yu was so miserably beaten up.

"Did you forget what Senior Taikou said before? No problem, I can tell all of you again.

"Those who see this badge must act as if they see Senior Taikou. Those who see me must pay their respects to me.

"Do you know what is paying respects? It is to kneel and bow." As he spoke, his face suddenly turned cold. His eyes also shot out two rays of chilliness as he looked at Liu Zhenbiao and the others and said, "All of you, kneel."

whoosh

After those words were spoken, the three disciples instantly knelt down

without speaking anything more. The one they were afraid of the most was Taikou. At present, Chu Feng immediately took Taikou's name out, so even if they didn't want to be afraid, they had no choice.

After all, Taikou even dared to brutally beat up Qin Yu, a disciple with such a special status. If they angered Taikou, it was possible that they would even be killed. He was a living king of hell that didn't care about laws!

"What are you doing? Are you disobeying Senior Taikou's order?" Chu Feng pointed at Liu Zhenbiao whose face was full of hesitation.

Although there was quite deep enmity between him and Jiang Wushang and the others, he too was very afraid of Taikou! Moreover, he knew if Taikou wanted to beat him up or kill him, a mere Wang Long was insufficient to save him.

So, despite his unwillingness, he still gradually lowered his knee and in the end, half-knelt on the ground as a salutation to Chu Feng.

At that instant, the only obstinate ones were Wang Long and Wang Yue, the two brothers. Although they were very afraid of Taikou as well, after all, their statuses were different. Moreover, they did not fear Chu Feng himself. So, they were really unable to kneel down at an outsider like Chu Feng.

Seeing Wang Long and Wang Yue's refusal to knee, Chu Feng had expected it. As he played around with the badge in his hand, he said, "Senior Taikou said he would stay for a few more days in the Four Seas Academy. He told me that after the expedition in the Millennium Ancient City was finished to come to his place and give a report.

"He said to see if there was anyone who dared to challenge his might and disobey the orders he made. And, so long as there were people who dared to disobey, regardless of who, he was most definitely going to skin that person.

"It seems up until now, the number of people who disobeyed his order is two."

Chu Feng's words made the Wang brothers' hearts jump out because they knew, very clearly, that Taikou was a man of his words. Yet, to kneel down at Chu Feng... that was something they could not do. Thus, Wang Long pointed at Chu Feng, and said with a threatening tone, "Chu Feng, one should leave a sparing distance for all matters. Do not be excessive."

"For handling of all matters, it also depends on the person. For a person like you, there is absolutely no need for that." Chu Feng also put away his smile. He pointed at Wang Long and Wang Yue, and fierce shouted, "I ask only one thing. Will you kneel, or will you not?"

Chapter 736: The Unyielding Chu Feng

"You..."

Wang Long was truly held in place by that question. He didn't expect Chu Feng, the young boy, would have such an unyielding attitude. It seemed that Chu Feng was not afraid of him at all.

Chu Feng was not afraid, but Wang Long had to be afraid. He was truly afraid of Taikou! At that instant, a predicament was forced upon him. As he tightly clenched his fists, he was making a very difficult decision.

Finally, looking at the advantages and disadvantages, he had no choice but to endure the humiliation. But, that did not mean he chose to give in. Thus, he grinded his teeth, let out glares from his eyes, and even faintly emanated his bloodlust and powerful aura. He shouted furiously, "Hell, I'll kneel! But remember: I will have you do the same to me."

"Wait." However, just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly spoke to stop him.

When he heard that, Wang Long secretly celebrated in his heart. He immediately ceased his downward motion and also formed a complacent smile on his mouth. He thought Chu Feng was afraid of his might, so he didn't dare to go so far.

Who would have thought, however, that Chu Feng would not even look at him. He looked at Jiang Wushang and said, "Brother Wushang, come over."

At first, Jiang Wushang was a bit confused. He only understood after he walked up to Chu Feng, had his shoulders held by Chu Feng, and was dragged to his side.

Because, Chu Feng then smiled at the Wang brothers and said, "Kneel."

"You..." At that moment, Wang Long's fury truly jumped about like lightning. Even his lungs were soon to explode. He initially thought it was his might that made Chu Feng afraid, but no matter what, he didn't think that not only was Chu Feng unaffected, he became even fiercer than

before. Not only did Chu Feng want Wang Long to kneel to him, he also wanted him to kneel to Jiang Wushang.

"You can choose to refuse to kneel, because I, Chu Feng, hate forcing people. But, you bear the consequences." Chu Feng wore a light smile on his face, but it was a very smug one.

"Chu Feng, you better remember this! I, Wang Long, will return today's matter several times over!" Wang Long gnashed his teeth, but after finishing speaking, he knelt with a whoosh. Although it was only a half-kneel, he did, in fact, kneel.

And upon seeing his elder brother kneeling, even if Wang Yue did not accept it, he no longer dared to act arrogantly. Thus, he could only do the same as his elder brother: kneel.

Only after seeing this did Chu Feng satisfiedly nod his head. Then, he said to Jiang Wushang, "Brother Wushang, listen. In the Four Seas Academy, if there is anyone who dares to force you to bow or kneel, I'll have them kneel to you."

After those words, Chu Feng looked at Wang Long again because his words were for him. Before, Wang Long said every time Jiang Wushang saw him, he would have to go up and pay his respects. And now, the meaning behind Chu Feng's words was that so long as Jiang Wushang paid his respects to Wang Long, Wang Long would have to kneel back.

"Hmph." Wang Long was no fool, so he naturally understood what Chu Feng meant. But, he was extremely unwilling to accept that situation. After a cold snort, he rose, and left with quick steps. Today, he no longer felt he had any face remaining, and at the same time, the pillar of enmity was firmly set in stone with Chu Feng and the others. He had decided if there were a chance, he would give Chu Feng a miserable death.

After Wang Long walked away, Liu Zhenbiao and the others hurriedly left as well. They were truly afraid of Chu Feng.

From the scene just now, they had discovered how unyielding Chu Feng could be. Even when Taikou was not there, he was able to force Wang Long to kneel. That was definitely not something that an ordinary person

could do.

So, they became more and more aware of how dangerous Chu Feng was. They became aware that Chu Feng was not as simple as he appeared on the surface. He was simply several times more vicious than Zhang Tianyi and the others. As a result, they didn't dare to stay long at that place. They were really afraid Chu Feng would use that badge again and continue humiliating them.

After they left in succession, Lan Xi who had been watching on the side from the start also deeply looked at Chu Feng before turning around, and was about to leave.

"Senior Lan Xi, wait." Just at that moment, behind her came Chu Feng's voice.

"You wouldn't also want me to pay respects to you, right?" Lan Xi said with a tone of mirth.

"Senior Lan Xi, what are you talking about? I wouldn't be so arrogant as to have people pay respects to me for no reason. If they don't offend me, I don't offend them. If they offend me, I will most definitely return the favour.

"Jiang Wushang is my brother, and the ones here are all people close to me. They are even more important than my own life. Since that Wang Long treated my Brother Wushang in such a manner, I had to fight back for that face," Chu Feng explained.

"Mm. I saw it all just now. It was indeed Wang Long who was in the wrong. But you are quite courageous; you actually dare to treat Wang Long in such a way in this location.

"Are you not afraid that Wang Long would lose his reason from anger and find a chance here to finish off you and your companions?

"After all, from his status, even Taikou can't do anything if Wang Long joins up with a few other people and say you were killed by Fierce Beasts," Lan Xi said with a smile.

"Actually, I feel that this is something Wang Long should be worried

about instead," said Chu Feng very confidently. There was not a trace of fear on his face, and instead, he wore a faint smile that Lan Xi could not understand.

"You are quite daring, though I suppose, in the Eastern Sea Region, there are some times when one should be more resolute." Lan Xi looked at Chu Feng in a praiseful manner, then shortly after, she turned around again.

"Senior Lan Xi, our breakfast is ready. Would you like to eat together with us?" said Chu Feng in an attempt to have her stay behind.

"No need, I still have business to attend to." Lan Xi turned her head around and beautifully smiled at him, then leaped up, stepped upon the layers of structures, and once again returned to the apex of the highest palace and looked into the distance of the forest.

"This Lan Xi is indeed different from the others. What a shame, what a shame..." Chu Feng had good impressions of Lan Xi, for the sole reason that she was the only person to speak out for Jiang Wushang when Wang Long was making things difficult for him. According to logic, judging by her status, she should be helping Wang Long instead. But, she did not.

Thus, Chu Feng decided to give her a reminder.

After Su Rou and the others comfortably ate a not so bountiful but extremely appetizing breakfast, Chu Feng prepared to leave to continue opening Formation Apertures.

"Chu Feng, give this to Senior Lan Xi." Before Chu Feng began moving, Su Rou gave Chu Feng a large, aromatic, and steaming Fierce Beast meat.

Chu Feng looked at Su Rou, then looked at Su Mei, who was by Su Rou's side and flashed a sweet smile at him, warmth was immediately created in his heart. Only then did he nod and say, "Mm."

Chu Feng was truly happy. Happy that he met two women who loved him so much. If it were selfish people, perhaps they would have already been angry when he chatted with Lan Xi.

But not only did Su Rou and Su Mei lack any anger, they even stood on

Chu Feng's side in consideration for him, and on their own accord, suggested giving Lan Xi something to eat. He had to admit that they were good sisters who understood the hearts of others.

Chu Feng brought the large Fierce Beast meat and once again came up to the palace Lan Xi was on, then gave it to her.

"Thanks." Lan Xi did not refuse it. She accepted the Fierce Beast meat, then opened her mouth and started shyly nibbling on it.

Chapter 737: The Foolish Lan Xi

“Senior Lan Xi, do you trust me that much? Are you not afraid that I poisoned this Fierce Beast meat?” Chu Feng said with a joking tone.

“I’m not afraid. I don’t feel that you will harm me,” said Lan Xi with a smile.

“Why?” Chu Feng followed with a question.

“Intuition,” said Lan Xi.

“Intuition? Is your intuition that accurate?” Chu Feng asked.

“Uhh…” Lan Xi hesitated a bit, then said, “It depends!”

“Then, if I’ve already poisoned this Fierce Beast meat, what would you do?” Chu Feng continued speaking.

“You didn’t really poison it, did you?” After hearing those words, Lan Xi’s face changed a bit.

“Haha, of course not. But, Senior Lan Xi, it’s best to be careful when you are handling matters. You are a World Spiritist; you can use Spirit power at any time. If I were you, I would definitely use Spirit power to examine the things others give me prior to eating, to see whether there are any anomalies inside.

“Otherwise, if you were truly tricked by someone, it would be too late for regret by then,” said Chu Feng as he smiled.

“Thank you for the reminder, I will pay attention.” Although she didn’t understand why Chu Feng suddenly told her all that, she knew Chu Feng’s intentions were kind. So, she didn’t blame him or anything.

“You’re waiting for your sister?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Mm. Yesterday, I lost her and after many searches, they were still to no avail. Also, the talisman I left for her lost its effect. I’m afraid…” When her sister was mentioned, Lan Xi couldn’t help feeling a bit of worry.

“No need to think too much on that. She’s returning, and she is also injured. But it’s not too serious,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“How do you know?” When she heard those words, Lan Xi quickly spread out her Spirit power, but she discovered within her range of detection, there were simply no signs of Lan Yanzhi. So, she couldn’t help doubting him.

Chu Feng didn’t respond to Lan Xi’s question. He lightly smiled, then leaped forward and jumped down. Soon, he entered the forest outside the ancient city.

“This is?” Shortly after Chu Feng left, Lan Xi’s eyes suddenly lit up. She actually felt Lan Yanzhi walking into her Spirit power’s range of detection.

At that instant, Lan Xi too rushed into the forest. Indeed, she soon discovered Lan Yanzhi. And, she was truly injured.

“Yanzhi, what happened?” Lan Xi asked with concern.

“Sister, it’s nothing. I was just surrounded by several Fierce Beasts and had to hide myself.” Lan Yanzhi had already weaved a perfect reason to trick Lan Xi.

Seeing as Lan Yanzhi only suffered light injuries and was pretty much fine, Lan Xi sighed in relief. But suddenly, her gaze turned complicated as she muttered to herself, “Odd. Even I couldn’t sense Yanzhi’s presence. How did he do it?”

From then on, Chu Feng continued searching for Formation Apertures. On the fourth day, Chu Feng had already found seven of them within the forest. On the fifth day, Chu Feng broke through six of them according to their order.

At present, he lacked only one Formation Aperture. After that, he would be able to gather the seven Spirit Formation keys and open the final Formation Aperture. And, open the hidden core.

At that moment, Chu Feng was dashing in the forest. In order to avoid danger, he spread out his Spirit power. But suddenly, his complexion changed greatly. He stopped moving because he felt the aura of three people: Lan Xi, Lan Yanzhi, and Wang Long.

“Crap.” At that instant, Chu Feng cursed in his heart. If it were only Lan Xi and Lan Yanzhi, that would be normal. After all, they were supposed to go around together. Yet, Wang Long was there as well. That hiddenly indicated something was off.

Moreover, Chu Feng discovered that Lan Xi’s current aura was extremely chaotic. Which likely meant that Lan Xi had already been poisoned.

“Dammit. Why did she not listen?” Chu Feng was a bit angry. He had clearly told Lan Xi to not eat the things from others carelessly, but Lan Xi clearly did not do that.

Although he was a bit mad, Chu Feng did not hesitate. Stepping forward, he ran towards Lan Xi and the others like a ray of light.

Although he said “if it’s not related to me, no need to worry”, Lan Xi’s character was still quite good. Also, he didn’t like Wang Long and Lan Yanzhi. Now, he met them again. As a result, Chu Feng had to interfere in that matter.

On a grassland a thousand meters away from Chu Feng, Lan Xi was lying face-up. At that moment, her eyes were shut, her face was flushed red, and her opening and closing tender pink lips endlessly inhaled and exhaled odd heat.

Currently, Lan Xi was obviously poisoned. She was twisting her alluring body, and even making bewitching sounds. But, it could be seen that she was doing her best to resist the poison as she was painfully suffering.

And, by her side, there stood two people. It was Wang Long and Lan Yanzhi. At that moment, Lan Yanzhi’s face was full of panic—also some shame—but even more, there was fear.

As for Wang Long, his face was ecstatic. His eyes were widened even larger than a cow’s and they exuded an eerie glint. His tongue uncontrollably licked his own lips. That thirty, lecherous wolf acted as if he obtained the sheep he dreamed of having. His desire surged forth and he was soon to lose himself.

“Yanzhi, you’ve done well. Haha, go, go farther. I don’t want anyone disturbing me and your sister Lan Xi.” Wang Long waved his hand, telling Lan Yanzhi to leave. His beastly nature was about to explode.

“Brother Long, you still haven’t laid the Spirit Formation for imitating the Aphrodisiac Beast,” Lan Yanzhi reminded.

“Leave! Do you think I need you to remind me about this?” Wang Long was a bit angry. He waved his hand, and a gale immediately came forward. It blew Lan Yanzhi several meters away, then as he willed, a Concealment Formation was born from his thoughts. It enveloped him and Lan Xi within, and separated Lan Yanzhi outside.

“Aphrodisiac Beast? Pah! That thing doesn’t even exist. Only fools would believe that.

“Idiotic thing, my dream is to obtain Lan Xi, and now, I’ve finally gotten her! Why would I need to hide it?

“Even if she knows the truth, so what? I want her to know that I, Wang Long, still got my hands on her body!

“Haha, can she resist me? Can she do anything to me, Wang Long? Even if she tells this to everyone, who will believe it?

“At most, she will kill Lan Yanzhi. But, what does that have to do with me? After all, I’ve already gotten the thing I want the most. Hahaha...”

After laying the Concealment Formation, Wang Long satisfiedly laughed. His laughter was very despicable, and as he spoke, not only did he strip himself quickly, he even stretched his two hands towards Lan Xi.

He first lightly stroked Lan Xi’s face. When the soft and scorching feeling he got from his hand entered his mind, his desire burst irrepressibly. He shouted, “I can’t take it anymore~~~”, then extended his hand, grabbed Lan Xi’s long skirt, and with a ripping sound, her clean-white skirt was torn into pieces.

Chapter 738: Infinite Enticement

Chu Feng arrived in the area almost at the same instant Wang Long went wild. He emerged outside the Spirit Formation, and landed before Lan Yanzhi.

“Ah! Who are you?” Lan Yanzhi shrieked in fright after seeing Chu Feng.

She asked this question because currently, Chu Feng had intentionally put on a disguise in order to avoid any unnecessary troubles. What he wore was black-coloured clothing. He also wore a conical hat on his head, so Lan Yanzhi simply couldn’t recognize who he was.

“Scram, bitch!” When he saw Lan Yanzhi, Chu Feng became instantly enraged. Especially when he recalled how well Lan Xi treated her yet how she harmed Lan Xi, Chu Feng reached the extremities of anger. A slap landed on Lan Yanzhi’s face, which immediately turned her unconscious.

Then, Chu Feng threw out a fist. With a bang, the Concealment Formation shattered from his strike.

At that moment, Wang Long was madly and enjoyably tearing Lan Xi’s skirt. The sudden change made him to be stunned. His complexion changed greatly after seeing Chu Feng, and he shouted furiously, “Who are you?”

Chu Feng was already in a rage. But when he saw Lan Xi bare naked with her pure-white skin revealed, he didn’t even bother wasting his breath as he immediately, without saying a word, he went up, and punched Wang Long.

When Chu Feng threw that punch, the ground and mountains trembled. His strength was simply unstoppable.

“Damn, who is disturbing me? You are looking to die!” Wang Long also had a stomach full of fire. His perfect occasion was destroyed by someone, which caused him to become quite annoyed. However, when that person started attacking without saying anything, it was

unacceptable.

So, he too said nothing. He clenched one of his hands, channeling Martial power into it, and faced the incoming fist with his own.

boom The two fists collided. Instantly, a deafening explosion burst out. As the berserk shockwaves brought about chaos, Wang Long was forced a few steps back. He felt his right hand go numb with faint signs of pain, With a face full of astonishment, he muttered astoundedly, “This... How is this possible?!”

Wang Long was extremely shocked. When his hand collided with Chu Feng’s, he discovered his opponent’s strength—a rank two Martial Lord. His opponent was only a rank two Martial Lord.

Wang Long himself was a rank four Martial Lord! He, a rank four Martial Lord, was forced back by a rank two Martial Lord. That simply made him feel disbelief. He could not even understand it.

Wang Long was no fool. He subconsciously knew that his opponent was not simple.

Yet, as he looked at the alluring body that lacked any clothes and kept on twisting about, and as he heard Lan Xi who kept on making bewitching cries, he didn’t care all that much.

With the flip of his palm, he took out a Mastered Elite Armament. He waved his arm, then after a chilling glint of the armament, he pounced towards Chu Feng again. He swore he would take down Lan Xi. With his present mindset, if a man came, he would kill this man. If a buddha came, he would kill this buddha! No one should even think of stopping him.

“Scram.” However, even if it was Wang Long’s Elite Armament, Chu Feng still did not fear in the slightest. He threw out a palm, then boundless Martial power moved as he so desired. Along with his thoughts, it became a large hammer. The hammer was sent out and it collided with the Mastered Elite Armament in Wang Long’s hand. With a bang, it forced Wang Long back again.

Although Wang Long was a rank four Martial Lord, there was still a

difference in fighting ability even within the same realm. Wang Long appeared to have just shortly entered the realm of rank four Martial Lords; his foundation was unstable. His fighting ability was also extremely low, so he simply didn't have the strength to return attacks at Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng truly wanted to fiercely give Wang Long a lesson. He even prepared to slaughter him this very instant. Not only to avenge Lan Xi, but to also to remove future weeds for himself, preventing Wang Long from harming Su Rou and the others when he leaves the Four Seas Academy.

But, as he looked at Lan Xi, Chu Feng had no choice but to immediately make a decision. Lan Xi was poisoned, and it was an extremely powerful poison. If he didn't cure her soon, it was likely she would arrive at the border between life and death.

"I will temporary spare your filthy life." Chu Feng pointed at Wang Long and furiously shouted, then he carried Lan Xi, and jumped up. After a few leaps, he disappeared from Wang Long's range of vision.

"Dammit!" Wang Long watched as Chu Feng ran away with Lan Xi, the person he dreamt of having. He almost had his way with her!

He was truly about to turn insane from his fury. But, when he lowered his head and saw the palm that was bleeding, as well as the now-cracked Mastered Elite Armament, he was forced into contemplation. He tightly furrowed his brows and said in a low voice, "Who exactly was that? Why has such a terrifying person appeared inside the Millennium Ancient City?"

As Wang Long was thinking, attempting to determine who that person was, Chu Feng was carrying Lan Xi and running extremely quickly. He could feel that Lan Xi, who was in his embrace, was scorching with heat. Also, she was very indecent: she put her fair hand deep into Chu Feng's clothes and rubbed his chest. Clearly, she had reached an uncontrollable state.

"This won't do. The drug will soon seep into her dantian and her Source

Energy. If this goes on, she will die. I can't delay this further."

Ever since he was drugged by aphrodisiac, Chu Feng had studied these types of drugs. He knew that the slightly stronger ones would not only ignite one's lust to the point of losing control, they would even enter their dantian and Source Energy. They were forced to find someone to do the deed between a man and a woman, otherwise they would die from their bodies exploding.

Chu Feng could immediately tell that the one Lan Xi had was an extremely strong one—one that would cause her body to explode if he didn't quickly find the antidote.

So, Chu Feng didn't care too much anymore. He quickly stopped moving forward and laid a Concealment Formation on the spot. Then, he quickly laid a Chilling Formation.

After laying those formations, Chu Feng put Lan Xi in them. Then, he activated the formations. He wanted to use the bone-piercing cold to force Lan Xi back to awareness, in order to avoid the drug from moving about and entering her organs.

At the same time, Chu Feng also took out a specialized antidote that cured these types of odd drugs and fed it to Lan Xi.

In reality, Chu Feng prepared that antidote for himself. Although, at present, he took great care in eating things and rarely would he ever be poisoned, he still had past shadows in his heart regarding eating drugged foods and beverages. So, he prepared an antidote precisely because of that. Moreover, it was an antidote of the highest quality. Originally, Chu Feng thought it would be useless, but unexpectedly, it had its role today.

It was still, however, useless as Lan Xi was extremely unwilling to cooperate with him. She twisted her body around, shaking it left and right, and also kept on using her hand to touch everywhere on Chu Feng's body. But, she was unwilling to take the antidote.

"I want, I want~~~" Lan Xi was losing more and more control. She even started to pull open Chu Feng's clothes.

“Lan Xi, don’t, don’t. Stay alert, stay alert!” Chu Feng endlessly shouted. He started to force Lan Xi to take the antidote, but unavoidably, he saw Lan Xi’s bare and alluring body. More so unavoidably, his palm came in contact with her smooth skin.

Most devastatingly, Lan Xi’s hand became more and more indecent. She touched here and there, and then touched Chu Feng’s already risen part. The most important thing was that she seemed to know what that was. Other than a faint tremble after she touched that section, she actually grabbed it, and was unwilling to let go. Instead, she started to rub it, as if she wanted to pull it out of Chu Feng’s pants.

Chapter 739: My Thoughts Exactly

Even if it were a man with greater willpower, they would still have a reaction when they met that sort of thing. So, in such a situation, Chu Feng was already heated with desire.

If it were before, perhaps Chu Feng wouldn't care at all, and would have already pulled down his pants and went up. After all, that was one way of helping Lan Xi cure the poison. It was equal to helping her.

But now, he was different. Chu Feng was no longer the young and frivolous child. He knew, at present, Lan Xi was not clear-minded. And, he understood that he didn't like Lan Xi, and Lan Xi didn't like him.

In a situation like this, doing that thing was a very irresponsible action. Especially after experiencing the matter with Yan Ruyu, he understood such a point much more deeply. If, because of a rash action, he did something he shouldn't have done, it would possibly destroy a person's life.

This was precisely "eat a setback, grow a wisdom". Although, at first, his rash action had indirectly saved Yan Ruyu, if the Forbidden Mysterious Technique she cultivated didn't contain a demon, then admittedly, Chu Feng was in the wrong.

So, Chu Feng now understood very clearly he could not have that sort of a relationship with Lan Xi. No matter how much she enticed, he could not because Lan Xi's actions were due to the drug—not by her own will. Even she herself didn't know what she was doing. All of it was by her natural drugged instincts. However, Chu Feng was different—he was clear-headed. Therefore, he had to maintain reason.

"Lan Xi, sorry." Finally, Chu Feng grinded his teeth, and he slammed forth his palm; it fell upon her forehead.

When the palm collided, Lan Xi's expression froze and her body quivered. Then, she closed her eyes and lost consciousness. She lay peacefully, having been knocked out.

After Lan Xi fainted away, it was a lot more convenient for Chu Feng to cure her. After a while of treating, Lan Xi finally calmed down, and Chu Feng too finally relaxed.

At that moment, Chu Feng had already taken out a blanket made of a special material and laid it on Lan Xi's body, covering her bare and enticing figure.

But Lan Xi's pink, little face was still incomparably attracting. One must say, she had quite a good appearance. No wonder Wang Long acted so madly.

Sadly, no matter how much more beautiful Lan Xi became, she wasn't Chu Feng's cup of tea. It could even be said that purely in terms of appearances, Lan Xi was still a bit inferior to Su Rou and Su Mei. As for Zi Ling, she was not even comparable.

Actually, in the end, Chu Feng did have quite high requirements for the quality of women. Most importantly, both sides must feel the same towards the other.

Seeing Lan Xi's situation stable down, and that she would naturally awaken in a short while, Chu Feng chose to leave.

Putting aside the fact that Chu Feng still had to go open the seventh Formation Aperture, Chu Feng wasn't sure what would happen if Lan Xi reawakened. So, he decided to just leave, becoming a nameless hero and act as if nothing had ever happened.

When he left, Chu Feng did not remove the Concealment Formation because he feared Wang Long would come again, or Lan Xi would encounter a Fierce Beast. Such a situation would not be too good. After all, at present, she lacked any awareness.

Chu Feng lowered the strength of his Spirit Formation so after Lan Xi awakened, she wouldn't be unable to break open the Spirit Formation. Being stuck here would also be very troublesome.

Only after doing everything and discovering no problems did Chu Feng leave...

Chu Feng's was very fast. Even though the seventh Formation Aperture was quite a distance away, as it was at the other end of the forest, and the later Formation Apertures were more difficult to break, before the sky darkened, Chu Feng still succeeded.

"I've finally obtained the seventh Spirit Formation key!" After walking out of the seventh Formation Aperture, Chu Feng raised his head and looked at the sky. He saw that though the sun had already fallen, the sky hadn't turned completely black; it wasn't too late. At least, the fifth day had yet to depart.

Looking at the seventh Spirit Formation key in his hand, Chu Feng felt joy that rose from the bottom of his heart because now, it was finally time to break open the last Formation Aperture. As long as the last one was broken through, he would be able to find the hidden part of the ancient city.

"Chu Feng, quickly take out the six other keys," reminded Eggy.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, then took out the six other Spirit Formation keys.

According to Eggy's analysis of the entire formation, when breaking open the eighth Formation Aperture—by solving the maze—a door should appear within the Millennium Ancient City, and that door was the entrance to the concealed part of the ancient city.

However, the door was sealed. Which was why after opening every Formation Aperture, Chu Feng got a Spirit Formation key. Those keys were crucial to opening the door.

However, from what Eggy knew, there was a Concealment Formation that was very similar to the one Chu Feng was opening now.

Eight Formation Apertures, but only seven Spirit Formation keys. The seven keys could be coalesced into one, forming a single key. This was crucial in opening the final door.

Upon entering the eighth Formation Aperture, although the large golden door would still appear in the end of the maze, if one did not use

the Spirit Formation key to open the door that appeared outside the eighth Formation Aperture, within the Millennium Ancient City, the eighth Formation Aperture would be an unsolvable puzzle. Even those who had solved the prior ones would be imprisoned inside.

So, Chu Feng had to give it a test to see whether the seven Spirit Formation keys he had could be combined into one.

If they could, it proved that the formation was the same as the one Eggy knew of. Then, before Chu Feng entered the eighth Formation Aperture, he would have to hand the Spirit Formation key to another person and have that person open the door. Otherwise, it was impossible for he himself to open the formation.

If the seven keys were unable to be combined, then it would be even simpler. It would mean that Eggy's worries were redundant, that the Concealment Formation at this place was not as complicated as they had imagined, and that Chu Feng could just go open the eighth Formation Aperture and it would be fine.

Without dallying, Chu Feng took out the seven Spirit Formation keys. With the flash of radiance, they joined together to form a single key. It made the key even brighter, so much it shone with brilliance. But, at the same time, the Spirit Formation power it contained was stronger.

"They truly joined together! That means, Eggy, your guess was correct! When opening the eighth Formation Aperture, the door will appear, and only by using this Spirit Formation key to open the door will the eighth Formation Aperture be thoroughly opened.

"Eggy, I must say that you've truly helped me hugely. Otherwise, I would've definitely went and directly opened the eighth Formation Aperture. If I did that, not only would I have been imprisoned inside, I would have even died." After combining the seven keys into one, he knew that Eggy's guesses were correct. At the same time, he expressed his deep admiration for her knowledge. Eggy had helped him once again.

"Heh, of course my abilities are impressive.

"But regardless of my level of strength, am I not still sealed inside your

World Spirit Space, and forced to listen to your dispatches? And do things for you? In the end, the powerful one is still you!" Eggy said humbly, but she couldn't stop smiling. It could be seen that she quite liked Chu Feng's praises, but other than feeling happy, she said again, "Let's go. Let us go see what is hidden inside this Millennium Ancient City."

"My thoughts exactly." Chu Feng nodded, lightly smiled, then flew back towards the Millennium Ancient City.

Chapter 740: Forbidden from Passing

Just as Chu Feng arrived at the Millennium Ancient City, he saw a person. Her expression dispirited, her face full of depression, as if she had received a large blow, but also as if she was full of worries.

Chu Feng immediately recognized that person—Lan Xi's younger sister, Lan Yanzhi.

She sat there, and after seeing Chu Feng, she was slightly taken aback. But then, she quickly lowered her head back down. She still had a downcast expression on her face, lacking the slightest bit of change.

When he saw Lan Yanzhi who acted in such a way, Chu Feng only coldly chuckled. He knew why Lan Yanzhi was acting in such a manner. It was definitely because she feared Lan Xi's punishment if it were discovered that she was the one who had helped set up such a scheme.

Chu Feng would not extend his sympathies to people like her because she should definitely reap what she sowed. Thus, Chu Feng did not console her, and with a leap, he went towards the resting area of Jiang Wushang and the others.

On the road, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power. Not only did he discover that Lan Xi had yet to return, even Wang Long hadn't yet. But, Chu Feng, who had sufficient confidence in the Concealment Formation he laid, didn't worry that Wang Long would find Lan Xi. So, without doing anything else, he entered the palace.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, you've returned! How is it?" At that instant, within the slightly ruined palace, Su Rou and the others were chatting. When they saw Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang and the others surrounded him.

"Brother Wushang, take this." As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the Spirit Formation and gave it to Jiang Wushang.

"Heavens! Big Brother Chu Feng, you've succeeded?" After seeing the Spirit Formation key, Jiang Wushang was incomparably excited. He, also

a World Spiritist, knew what the key represented.

“Only half is done. I still need you to help me with the other half,” said Chu Feng.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, what should I do? Don’t hesitate to instruct me,” Jiang Wushang said sincerely.

“Within the Millennium Ancient City, there is a Concealment Formation. It has hid the core of the Millennium Ancient City. I suspect that the hidden portion is very likely related to the Imperial Bloodline.

“Right now, I have already opened seven Formation Aperture that surround the outside of the city. There is still one more within the ancient city itself. However, there are still a few troubles to open this Formation Aperture.

“Simply speaking, when I open the eighth Formation Aperture, a door will appear inside the ancient city. At that time, Brother Wushang, take this key and just open the door.

“But, be careful. Because I am unable to be certain whether there exists danger on the other side of that door, after opening it, unless absolutely necessary, do not enter. For as long as possible, wait for me,” Chu Feng reminded.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, I understand.” Jiang Wushang was incomparably moved. Even his body was trembling. He was not afraid, but excited. When a person reached a certain degree of excitement, they would act like this.

“Little Rou, Little Mei, Senior Zhang, stay with Brother Wushang,” Chu Feng said to Su Rou and the others.

“Chu Feng, you must be careful,” Su Rou said worriedly in reminder.

“Don’t worry, I have my own plans.” Chu Feng confidently smiled, as though everything were in his control. Then, he said to Jiang Wushang, “Remember, unless absolutely necessary, do not enter. Wait for me.”

“Mm.” Jiang Wushang and the others nodded.

whoosh At the same time, Chu Feng had already drifted away like the wind. No one knew where the eighth Formation Aperture was—only Chu Feng knew.

“Let’s go.” After Chu Feng left, Jiang Wushang and the others also left the palace. They all leapt up one after the other, and stood atop the highest structure within the Millennium Ancient City, awaiting the appearance of the gate.

Simultaneously, Chu Feng had already entered the eighth Formation Aperture. That was different from all the previous ones. It was not as difficult as the ones before. After Chu Feng entered, he already saw the exit.

But, the exit was closed, and the entrance was now closed as well. It did indeed correspond to Eggy’s guesses. At that moment, Chu Feng was locked in there. The only one who could save Chu Feng were Jiang Wushang and the others.

At that moment, Chu Feng was neither panicked nor worried. He came up to the exit, sat cross-legged, and said indifferently, “Brother Wushang, it’s up to you.”

hmm

As Chu Feng spoke those words, within the Millennium Ancient City, above a round plaza, a golden radiance suddenly rose into the sky. At the same time, the earth also made rumbling sounds; the entire Millennium Ancient City started shaking.

Countless shattered rocks rolled around, and countless small structures collapsed. Even cracks appeared on the ground, as if there were an earthquake.

“What is happening?” At that moment, the sky was about to turn dark. Other than Lan Xi and Wang Long, everyone else was within the ancient city. So, such a change from the ancient city attracted everyone’s attention.

However, they didn’t understand what was happening. Other than Jiang

Wushang and others, not only was there no one who dared to rashly near the column of light, they even went farther away from it, fearing they would be harmed.

Then, in the end, when the pillar of radiance gradually returned where it came from, an enormous outline also appeared. It was a huge door. A thirty-meter tall, ten-meter wide huge door dazzling in golden brilliance. A Spirit Formation door that was both vast and grandiose.

Moreover, in the center of the door, there was a keyhole. The size and shape of it was nearly identical to the key in Jiang Wushang's hand. It was obvious that the key was prepared for that keyhole.

"He succeeded! Big Brother Chu Feng is truly too great. I didn't think he would activate this door so easily." Seeing the formation of the door, Jiang Wushang simply didn't believe his own eyes. It was akin to a dream; his joyous emotions was inexpressible.

"Brother Wushang, quickly open the door!" Su Rou urgently reminded. She was extremely intelligent—when Chu Feng needed Jiang Wushang's help and didn't open the door himself, she knew that Chu Feng was possibly in danger. And, the way to save Chu Feng was to open the door.

"Mm." Jiang Wushang didn't hesitate any longer as well. He quickly took the Spirit Formation key, and with Zhang Tianyi and others by his side, he rushed up to the huge door.

"What is happening? What is that thing? I-It's a Spirit Formation door!"

"Look at the thing in Jiang Wushang's hand! It's a key! He's opening that door!"

At the same time, the others inside the ancient city, after seeing the door form, all hurried over—just in time to see Jiang Wushang opening the door.

And, when they saw that, they were dumbfounded because they couldn't understand why such a grand Spirit Formation door appeared at that place, nor why Jiang Wushang had the key to open it.

Jiang Wushang didn't bother caring about their stunned expressions

because the thing he was worried about at that moment was not the views of others, but whether the door could be successfully opened.

hmm However, all worries were unneeded. When the Spirit Formation key was inserted into the keyhole, before Jiang Wushang had any chance to do anything else, the center of the door started twisting. In the end, the keyhole disappeared, and what appeared before Jiang Wushang and the others was an empty door. On the other side of the door was an extremely grand city.

The style of the city's structures was very similar to the Millennium Ancient City's. Moreover, they too emanated an antique aura. In comparison to the Millennium Ancient City's degree of ruin and deterioration, however, the buildings of the city were relatively complete, even rather new.

"Heavens! Could that be the core of the Millennium Ancient City?"

At that instant, everyone came to their senses. So, as it seemed, the rumours were true: a portion of the Millennium Ancient City was truly hidden, and what the door led towards was none other than that concealed core portion.

"Quick! Quickly go! There are definitely heavenly great opportunities within the disappeared section of the Millennium Ancient City! We cannot miss it!" Suddenly, someone shouted. It was Wang Long's younger brother, Wang Yue. Moreover, as he shouted, he had leaped forward madly. Akin to an arrow that had just left its bow, he shot towards the entrance of the huge door.

Following Wang Yue's shout, Liu Zhenbiao and the others also acted as if they were mad. Without any more words, they started dashing towards the door. Even Lan Yanzhi, who had a face full of depression before, was no exception.

But when he saw such a scene, Jiang Wushang tightly furrowed his brows because within the door, it contained matters relating to the Imperial Bloodline. Furthermore, that area was discovered by Chu Feng. How could he allow others to be the first ones to enter?

Just as Jiang Wushang pondered over such a predicament, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei separated and stopped in front of the entrance of the door. They said simultaneously, “You are all forbidden from passing!”

Chapter 741: One Step Ahead

As they were faced with Zhang Tianyi and the others' blockade, the expressions of Liu Zhenbiao and the others changed slightly. They all stopped moving, and didn't dare to continue going forward.

After all, Zhang Tianyi's group had much higher cultivation levels. If Liu Zhenbiao's group were to force it, they would obviously pay quite a price.

So, immediately, Liu Zhenbiao and the others all cast their gazes towards Wang Yue. He was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm, a genius who was the disciple of the vice-academy head.

But, in reality, Wang Yue too stopped moving forward. He wasn't afraid of Zhang Tianyi and the others. Rather, from the bottom of his heart, he didn't put Zhang Tianyi and the others in his heart.

He did not need to fear Zhang Tianyi, but there was one person he had no choice but to fear—Chu Feng.

Especially after seeing Chu Feng's domineering attitude, he knew that Chu Feng was not a simple person. He was a very cunning man, a person who did not fear the heavens nor the earth.

If it were a normal situation, perhaps he wouldn't care; at present, however, he had Taikou's protection. Thus, he absolutely could not offend him. Otherwise, judging by Chu Feng's character, he would definitely drag him to death. Wang Yue was truly afraid.

"Forbidden from passing? Based on what?!" But just at that moment, Lan Yanzhi stood out. Her gaze fierce, her tone overbearing. She did not have the slightest bit of fear when facing Zhang Tianyi and the others. Rather, there was a hint of disdain.

At first, Liu Zhenbiao and the others were confused why Lan Yanzhi acted like that, but very soon, they understood. Back then, when Chu Feng forced the Wang brothers to kneel, Lan Yanzhi was not there. So, she hadn't see what Chu Feng could do. She didn't know how terrifying the

young boy was.

That was why she acted as arrogant as usual. She didn't put Zhang Tianyi and the others in her eyes, and most definitely, she didn't put Chu Feng in her eyes either.

"Based on what? Based on the fact that we opened this place, thus we are qualified to disallow all of you from entering," Zhang Tianyi loudly shouted.

"This..." When those words were spoken, the crowd was speechless because Zhang Tianyi did speak the truth. They too had also personally seen Jiang Wushang open the Spirit Formation door with the Spirit Formation key.

"Go to hell! Are you so shameless? This place was opened by you? Why not say instead that this is your home!

"Don't forget this place belongs to everyone. This is the land of the Four Seas Academy. As a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, if I want to enter, I will enter. No one is qualified to stop me, nor are any of you qualified to stop me even if you wish to." Lan Yanzhi was incomparably arrogant. As she spoke, she even rushed directly towards Su Rou, with the airs of a "if a god is blocking me, I kill a god; if a buddha is blocking my way, I kill a buddha".

However, just as Lan Yanzhi wanted to push Su Rou aside, a surprising scene occurred.

As Su Rou's skirt fluttered, she arrived in front of Lan Yanzhi like a fairy. Then, she waved her pure-white hand, and with a bang, a powerful slap landed on Lan Yanzhi's face. Only after Lan Yanzhi spun around once did she come to her senses.

"Yo-You dare to hit me?!" Lan Yanzhi's eyes glared with fury and she gnashed her teeth.

"If you dare to take one more step, I'll let you know how I will truly hit you." Su Rou's expression was calm, but within her beautiful eyes, two chilling rays of coldness shot out, and it was as if it could freeze

everything.

ta At that moment, Lan Yanzhi involuntarily stepped back. She was actually afraid. Even though she didn't know why, she was indeed afraid.

Looking at Lan Yanzhi's astonished expression and her being at a loss, Su Mei was on the side, sweetly smiling. Although her elder sister had always kept a low-profile after coming to the Four Seas Academy, making her seem like a very good target for bullying, Su Mei knew what type of person her sister was. Su Rou kept her calm and was sharp. When she lacked the strength, she would choose to endure, but when she had sufficient strength, she would not lower herself to any single person, especially when facing her enemies. It would not be too excessive to call her vicious; she was absolutely not as warm and kind as she appeared on the surface.

"Haha, the Millennium Ancient City has opened? I have truly walked onto great fortune!" However, just at that moment, a voice suddenly rang out from nearby.

When they looked over, the faces of Jiang Wushang and the others couldn't help changing because they instantly recognize who the person coming was—it was none other than Wang Long.

"Big Brother Wang Long, you've come at the perfect moment! This bitch dares to hit me! Quickly, help me give her a good lesson!" When she saw Wang Long, Lan Yanzhi immediately rejoiced. She acted as though she saw her savior and instantly asked him for help.

"If you tell me, Wang Long, to love such a beauty, I can; but to tell me to hit her? How can I possible bear doing that?"

However, something that Lan Yanzhi never would have expected was Wang Long not only lacked any intention to assist her in her vengeance, it was unknown what sort of emotions he had in his eyes as he looked at Su Rou and Su Mei. There even hung a trace of a vile smile on the corners of his mouth, and as he spoke, he even shot a coquettish glance at them.

Wang Long's actions made Lan Yanzhi's face pale from anger. She was close to turning mad.

When all's said and done, she and Wang Long were people who'd had that sort of a relationship for quite a while. She even helped Wang Long harm her own sister. Yet, at present, Wang Long actually treated her in such a way. It was impossible for her to accept that.

"But... Beauties can be let go; men, on the other hand, have no need for that.

"Go die." Suddenly, Wang Long's expression turned cold. A hint of viciousness surged past, then, with a thought, boundless pressure bursted out of his body, which shot towards Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi.

"Crap." At that instant, Zhang Tianyi's and Jiang Wushang's face changed greatly. Although it was only pressure, it was of a rank four Martial Lord's.

They were able to feel what sort of terrifying power was contained within the pressure. It was simply not power that they could resist. Wang Long truly wanted to put them to death.

hmm However, just as Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang undoubtedly thought they were about to die, two bursts of pressure descended from the sky. They surged over, and like a barrier, stopped in front of Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang.

boom boom

The bursts of pressure interweaved together, and instantly, frenzied shockwaves came into existence. Although the newly arrived bursts of pressure successfully stopped Wang Long's attack, due to their overwhelming strength, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang still received the brunt of the remnants. They were forced several meters back, but luckily, they were only slightly injured and were fine.

"Lan Xi?" After the clash, everyone finally discovered who saved Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang—it was Lan Xi.

At that moment, Lan Xi's complexion was a bit pale. Her body also appeared very weak, and her expression was unsightly as well. At that instant, however, she was indeed standing on the plaza. Her skirt

fluttered, her gaze cold, and she stood not too far away from Wang Long.

"Wang Long, the pressure just now was enough to kill the two of them. Were you going to kill disciples from the same academy?" Lan Xi fiercely reprimanded.

"Kill them? If I truly wanted to kill them, would they still be living?" When he saw Lan Xi, Wang Long coldly snorted and didn't say anything else. He knew the drug in Lan Xi's body had faded away. No matter why that was, at least at that moment, he no longer had any chances of performing unlawful actions.

Besides, in comparison to Lan Xi, the city before their eyes was more attracting to him. So, he waved his big sleeve, then led the crowd straight into the Spirit Formation door.

Chapter 742: Horrifying Monstrous Beast

Seeing that Wang Long had entered, Wang Yue and the others closely followed him into the Millennium Ancient City.

Lan Yanzhi followed particularly closely. She ignored her sister, because she didn't dare to do anything otherwise. She didn't even dare to look at Lan Xi now because there was a hint of guilt in her heart. She was very afraid of looking straight into her sister's eyes—afraid that Lan Xi would see her heart.

As they confronted Wang Long who had the eyes of a tiger and was staring at them with wicked gazes, Su Rou and Su Mei, naturally, did not dare to stop him. They quickly cleared the path, afraid of Wang Long's potential malicious intents.

However, just as Wang Long walked up to the entrance, he suddenly turned his gaze around, and said to Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi with a sneer, "Tell this to that brat Chu Feng in my place: you better not follow. Otherwise, after entering, there will be no return."

After leaving those words behind in a very arrogant manner, Wang Long roared with mad laughter again, as if he were laughing at how powerless Chu Feng and the others were. However, it seemed more as if he were venting the frustration in his heart.

Within the laughter, Wang Long and the others entered the concealed portion of the ancient city and as they kept moving toward, they kept increasing the distance between them.

"You've seen how Wang Long acts. He now has the intent to kill. Not to mention entering, even if you stay in the ancient city, when he sees you again, I'm guessing he will still attack. Heed my words and don't follow. Even more so, don't let Chu Feng come in. Otherwise, even I cannot protect you."

Lan Xi didn't know that the door was opened by Jiang Wushang and the others, but she knew what that place—the core of the Millennium Ancient City—represented. So, she too didn't hesitate. After sincerely reminding

Jiang Wushang and the others, she followed Wang Long and the others' footsteps and entered. She didn't want to miss such a rare opportunity either.

However, just as they went through the door, a figure came over like light, arriving onto the plaza.

When they saw that person, no matter if it was Jiang Wushang or Zhang Tianyi, or Su Rou or Su Mei, they were elated. All the worry and depression on their faces completely disappeared and replacing them was infinite joy—because that person was precisely Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng! You're uninjured! This is really great!" After seeing Chu Feng, Su Rou and Su Mei both leaped into Chu Feng's embrace. It could be seen how worried they were about Chu Feng's safety. Otherwise, they wouldn't have had such a strong reaction after seeing Chu Feng's safe and sound.

As for Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang, they were like that as well. They were no idiots; rather, they were very smart, so they understood Chu Feng had taken quite a risk by opening the eighth Formation Aperture even without Chu Feng himself saying so. Thus, they were very worried as well.

"Senior Zhang, Brother Wushang, who wounded you two?"

As Chu Feng stroked the two beauties in his embrace, he looked at his two brothers Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang. When he saw that there were a few external injuries on their bodies, and even traces of blood on the corners of their mouth, his brows instantly inverted. In his eyes surged bone-piercing coldness and overflowing fury.

"It was Wang Long. Not only did he strike at us, he even told us to not enter, otherwise we would never return," Zhang Tianyi said.

As for Jiang Wushang, he was silent. What he worried the most was actually this: After successfully finding matters related to the Imperial Bloodline, yet others become the first to investigate it. Most importantly, they didn't have any power to fight against these people.

After hearing Zhang Tianyi's words, Chu Feng didn't say much, nor were there too many changes in his expression. As if everything was within his expectations, he said, "Let's go in."

"Big Brother Chu Feng, don't!" However, just at that moment, Jiang Wushang walked over. He stood in front of Chu Feng and said, "Big Brother Chu Feng, I know you are thinking for my sake, and doing everything for my sake.

"But, I can't let you enter. Wang Long now has killing intent, and if we enter, he will definitely kill us. I don't want this to affect everyone because of my own selfishness. I... I've already decided I don't want this Imperial Bloodline."

When he spoke those words, Jiang Wushang's expression was very painful because to him, the Imperial Bloodline was really too important. However, he clearly understood how many dangers there were inside the core of the Millennium Ancient City. He couldn't affect Chu Feng and the others because of his own business, so he had no choice but to give it up. It was an extremely painful action that couldn't be helped at all.

"Brother Wushang, you wouldn't think that your Big Brother Chu Feng, I, would fear that Wang Long, right?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, you mean?" Jiang Wushang and the others were first taken aback when their heard that, and at the same time, their gazes surged with some shock because from Chu Feng's words, they had already made a few guesses.

"Hoh." As he faced the crowd's gazes, Chu Feng didn't directly respond, saying instead, "Didn't all of you want to know what level my current cultivation resides at? When we catch that Wang Long, I'll let you know."

After speaking, Chu Feng turned around gracefully with his clothes fluttering, and walked straight into the Spirit Formation door.

Seeing that, Su Rou and the others all looked at each other, then their mouths curved into a hint of a faint smile. Even though Chu Feng didn't make himself completely clear, they all knew Chu Feng likely had the absolute confidence to win.

In less than a half year of time, the young man who left the continent of the Nine Provinces with them indeed grew to an extremely terrifying level.

So, Su Rou and the others didn't ask any more questions. They followed Chu Feng, through the Spirit Formation door, and entered the core of the Millennium Ancient City.

Although the core was extremely large, with the speeds of Chu Feng and the others, it simply wasn't much. Moreover, immediately after passing through the Spirit Formation door, there was a vast and grand pathway. Going straight along the pathway was a mighty and imposing palace.

That palace was not to be underestimated. It could be said to be the grandest structure within the Millennium Ancient City. So long as they weren't a fool, one could instantly tell that this was the most crucial location.

At that instant, the palace's doors were already opened, clear evidence that Wang Long, Lan Xi, and the others had already entered. Naturally, Chu Feng and the others could not dally either, otherwise, if Wang Long and the others had the advantage of being first, that would not be good.

"Ahh~~~"

boom rumble rumble

However, before even stepping into the palace, from it rang the roars of beasts and deafening explosions.

Simultaneously, dense smoke with powerful shockwaves also bursted out of the palace.

"Scatter." Chu Feng waved his hand when he saw that, dispelling the incoming waves. After entering, they looked inside. Not to mention Su Rou and the others, even Chu Feng's expression couldn't help freezing as he felt shock and surprise.

The interior of the palace was very vast. Wang Long and Lan Xi was inside, but Wang Yue, Lan Yanzhi, and the others were running towards

Chu Feng's direction with faces full of fear.

When they saw Chu Feng, they were frightened atop of their already existing fright. They were forced to change directions as they ran towards a corner of the palace.

The reason they acted like that was because in the end of the palace, there was currently a Monstrous Beast that had a huge body with overwhelming strength.

The Monstrous Beast was over ten meters tall and dozens of meters long. Before it, humans were simply as minuscule as ants. Moreover, its eyes were blood-red. Raging flames surrounded its body as it was making ferocious attacks.

When the attack came out, it shocked the heavens and the earth, and a single roar shook the world. The Monstrous Beast's might was powerful, and its strength was fierce. It was simply something Chu Feng had never seen before, and definitely the most ferocious beast Chu Feng had ever seen.

Before it, Wang Long and Lan Xi were currently combining their strengths and fighting it. But even the two rank four Martial Lords felt quite the pressure when facing that Monstrous Beast.

Chapter 743: Blood Altar

That Monstrous Beast was too strong. Even though it only had the cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, it suppressed the rank four Martial Lords, Wang Long and Lan Xi.

At that instant, everyone was dumbfounded. There were even many people who were extremely terrified, because the battle between Martial Lords was not something they could participate in. Even a single remnant of the attacks would be sufficient to kill them.

At present, the only person who could still remain calm was Chu Feng. After bringing Su Rou and the others into the palace, they didn't enter any deeper. They stood on the sidelines, with arms crossed before their chests, silently watching the scene in front of their eyes.

"A special guardian?" That was the identity Chu Feng gave that Monstrous Beast. He discovered that the Monstrous Beast was not simple. Its eyes were blood-red, containing not only fury, but also some peculiarity, as if it had been brainwashed.

Moreover, even though it had extremely powerful strength, allowing it to even fight those above its level, the power inside its body was very feeble. Judging from the information he obtained from various areas, Chu Feng concluded that the Monstrous Beast was brainwashed. Rather than saying it was an impressive Monstrous Beast, it would be more accurate to call it a bloodthirsty Fierce Beast that killed on sight.

Something that could not be denied, however, was the fact that it was a Monstrous Beast. Moreover, within the Monstrous Beast's body, what flowed was still blood of nobility. But it was all useless as it was brainwashed and sealed for a very long period of time, which was the reason why it still survived up until now without eating or drinking. Sadly, it had already fallen to become a tool for slaughter. Instead of saying it was a body of life, it would be better to say it was a tool that anyone could wield.

So, Chu Feng made some conjectures: that Monstrous Beast was very

possibly the true master of the Millennium Ancient City. But now, it was a guarding tool of others.

boom

wuao~~

Suddenly, another deafening explosion rang out. Quickly following, that horrifying Monstrous Beast also let out a cry. After its body swayed a few times, it fell onto the ground with a boom.

It died. The horrifying Monstrous Beast with an enormous body and overwhelming strength was killed by the combined strength of Wang Long and Lan Xi. But, at that instant, their foreheads were full of sweat and they were huffing heavily. Clearly, they had exhausted quite a bit of strength as well.

“Powerful. After all, it is a Monstrous Beast that lacks intelligence. If it had intelligence and could use the various skills from its bloodline, its fighting ability would have increased by several times. Perhaps even Wang Long and Lan Xi together wouldn’t have been able to defeat it.

“And this is the true master of the Millennium Ancient City? It seems that it is truly a group of powerful species. But regretfully, no matter how much more powerful it was, that is all in the past.” Chu Feng sighed in his heart.

“I didn’t think you would still dare to enter... Did those two brats not transfer my words onto you?” Suddenly, an icy-cold voice rang out.

It was Wang Long. At that moment, Wang Long discovered Chu Feng and the others. With his gaze full of bloodlust, he was staring at Chu Feng. Moreover, there was a smile worn on his mouth. It was the pride he got from defeating the Monstrous Beast, and also the joy he got after seeing Chu Feng. In this place, it was the perfect chance to kill Chu Feng and wash away his humiliation.

“Hehe.”

When they heard those words, Liu Zhenbiao, Wang Yue, and the others understood Wang Long’s intentions. As they looked at Chu Feng, their

eyes were full of schadenfreude and gratification. They all felt that a calamity was going to soon strike upon Chu Feng.

At that instant, other than Lan Xi whose brows were tightly knitted and full of worry, the people within the crowd had smiles on their faces, as if they were expecting the entertaining scene of Wang Long beating Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble

But, before even allowing Chu Feng to return any words, the palace suddenly started to violently tremble. Moreover, at the end of the palace, rows of blood-red marks appeared and were endlessly spreading open.

“That is?”

It was a formation. At that moment, the formation was being activated, and the thing that was activating the formation was the blood of the Monstrous Beast. As the blood flowed on the surface of the ground, it was drawing red-coloured outlines of a formation.

At the same time, the entrance of the palace had closed. Radiance shone everywhere, and in the end, around the palace, over a thousand Monstrous Beasts appeared.

“Heavens! What is happening?”

At that instant, everyone panicked because almost every single one of those Monstrous Beasts had the cultivation in the Martial Lord realm. Of those beasts, there were at least a hundred that had the cultivation of rank three Martial Lords, and from their outer appearances, it could be seen that they were the same species as the ones Wang Long and Lan Xi killed before.

A single Monstrous Beast was already so powerful, yet now, over a thousand had appeared. How could they not be terrified by that? Not to mention others, even Wang Long and Lan Xi had dead faces as they felt that a disaster was coming their way.

“Chu Feng.” At that instant, Su Rou and the others were afraid as well. They couldn’t help walking to Chu Feng’s side.

“No need to fear. This is likely an altar.” At that very instant, within the entire vast palace, only Chu Feng was as calm as he was before.

“Altar?” Everyone in the palace revealed confused gazes. They didn’t understand Chu Feng’s meaning too well.

“These Monstrous Beasts have their eyes closed. They are not only in deep sleep, they have been sealed. Right now, the seals have yet to be opened. But, if this Monstrous Beast’s blood finishes drawing the outline of the formation on the ground of this palace, all of those Monstrous Beasts will awake. At that time, we will all be hit with a calamity,” Chu Feng explained.

“I see. Then that is too simple.” Wang Long came to a realization after hearing those words. With a thought, a layer of Spirit Formation was laid. He aimed to seal off the path of the flowing blood in order to prevent it from continue drawing the formation.

bzzz However, the blood simply continued on with no obstructions. Within the steaming white smoke, it instantly destroyed Wang Long’s purple-coloured Spirit Formation. He could not stop the flowing of the blood.

“This... How is this possible?” Wang Long was dumbstruck upon seeing such a scene. He felt disbelief. His Spirit Formation could even block the Monstrous Beast’s attack. Yet now, why was it even unable to stop blood?

In reality, not only did he feel disbelief. Almost everyone felt shock and confusion as well.

“Foolish.” But in comparison to the astonishment of others, Chu Feng disdainfully smiled in expectation.

“Hell, who are you calling foolish?” Wang Long was furious when he heard that. He pointed at Chu Feng and shouted angrily.

“Who? Listen up, I am calling you foolish!” Chu Feng looked at Wang Long. Every single word and phrase was merciless. It was straightforwardly slapping his face.

“I’ll kill you!” At that instant, Wang Long was thoroughly enraged. He,

who had planned to take care of Chu Feng, was about to attack him as he spoke.

"Wang Long, stop. If you kill him, we will all die." However, before letting him make his move, Lan Xi suddenly stood out and stopped Wang Long's attempt to strike. Then, she said to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, what exactly is happening here? Do you know the method of fixing this situation?"

"As I said, this is an altar. The blood of the Monstrous Beast is only a catalyst. The catalyst has been activated, so how could it possibly be stopped so easily?

"If one wishes to stop it from flowing, they must exchange blood with blood. Using the blood of humans to fill in the formation outline on the ground of the palace so the Monstrous Beast's blood has no path it can go. Moreover, the region the human blood occupies must be larger than the region the Monstrous Beast's blood occupies. Otherwise, the formation will still be activated," Chu Feng said.

"What? Using the blood of humans? And the region it occupies must surpass the region the Monstrous Beast's blood occupies? Doesn't that mean it wants us to kill each other?" Many people were stunned when they heard that, because the formation on the ground was really too big. If one were to use human blood to fill it in, a single death would absolutely not be sufficient. Over half of the people there must die in order for it to work.

"Heh, if it is like so, then it cannot be more simpler." But as a large portion of the people there were astounded, while being at a complete loss on what to do, Wang Long's mouth curled up to form a hint of a cold smile. At the same time, he cast his gaze full of bloodlust towards Chu Feng.

He, however, didn't notice that the smile on Chu Feng's face was much, much more colder than his own.

Chapter 744: How You Will All End

"Wang Long, what are you thinking of doing?" Feeling the atmosphere heading in a bad direction, Lan Xi leaped and landed in front of Chu Feng. She wanted to protect Chu Feng.

"Do what? We are imprisoned in this place. If we wish to survive, there must be sacrifices. This Chu Feng is not a person of the Four Seas Academy. If someone must die, he will die first. Say, am I correct or not?" Wang Long shouted. As he spoke, he shot a glance at the people in the corner of the palace.

"Yes! Senior Wang Long is correct! Since sacrifices are unavoidable, naturally, we must face our swords against the outsider. If there are people who must die, then this Chu Feng must die first!" After Wang Long spoke, Wang Yue, Liu Zhenbiao, and the others naturally agreed with him. They longed for Wang Long to kill Chu Feng. And, as they spoke, they neared Wang Long, clearly expressing their stance on supporting him.

"All of you..." When they saw that, not to mention Su Rou and the others, even Lan Xi's complexion changed slightly. Those who had eyes could tell that Wang Long and the others were all thinking the same thing—all of them wanted to put Chu Feng to death since a long time ago.

In a situation like that, no matter what she said, they would be useless words because even her younger sister stood on Wang Long's side. At that very instant, she truly felt she was facing an impossible battle. She was both furious, yet also felt powerless.

"Lan Xi, thank you for your good intentions, but let me personally take care of this matter." However, just as Lan Xi lacked any idea on what to do, Chu Feng gradually walked out and dragged Lan Xi, who was standing in front of him, behind him.

"Chu Feng, you..." When she saw Chu Feng not only fearless, but even wearing a smile on his face, Lan Xi's complexion was full of confusion. She was more worried that Chu Feng was looking for his own death.

As if he knew what Lan Xi was thinking, Chu Feng's smile involuntarily became even stronger. Only then did he look at Wang Long and the others. After he swept his gaze over Wang Long, Wang Yue, Liu Zhenbiao, as well as Lan Yanzhi and the others, he said, "Do you know how the people who wish me to die end up as?"

"Oh? From your tone, could it be you want to do something to us?" said Wang Long disdainfully, his tone full of ridicule.

"Hahaha, truly naive. You want to fight against my Big Brother Wang Long? Not that I'm looking down on you, but you are still not qualified." When Wang Long's words were spoken, Wang Yue and the others madly laughed, mocking Chu Feng's overestimation of his strength.

"Hmph. Without Taikou here, who do you think you are? You are no more than low-class trash. You aren't even qualified to enter the Four Seas Academy, yet you dare to challenge us?" Liu Zhenbiao even pointed at Chu Feng and mocked him more. With Wang Long behind his back, he too was full of confidence.

whoosh However, just as Liu Zhenbiao finished speaking, Chu Feng's figure flashed slightly, then he instantly disappeared.

"Ah—" Before anyone had the chance to react, a cry rang out behind them. Looking over, they were all dumbfounded as their expressions changed greatly. All of them subconsciously back away as their eyes were full of fear and terror.

Not to mention Wang Yue and the others, even Lan Xi was frightened by that scene. Shock filled her roundly widened eyes.

It was because at that very instant, Chu Feng was standing in front of Liu Zhenbiao. However, in Chu Feng's hand was a bloody head. Looking at it carefully, one would recognize that the head belonged to none other than Liu Zhenbiao.

Looking back at Liu Zhenbiao's body, though it still stood there, it lacked a head. And, in his neck area, large amounts of blood was spraying out.

Without much thinking, they could all think what had happened. As they were all taunting Chu Feng, he abruptly attacked and immediately took down Liu Zhenbiao's head.

However, one must know that regardless how weak Liu Zhenbiao was, he was still a Heaven realm expert. Furthermore, none of their cultivations were weak; Wang Long especially was a rank four Martial Lord. Chu Feng was actually able to kill Liu Zhenbiao right beneath the eyes of a rank four Martial Lord. Wasn't that a bit too powerful?

What realm was that guy in? That was the question that everyone was trying to answer in their hearts.

As he faced the crowd's shocked and fearful gazes, Chu Feng's visage was unchanged. He slightly raised the head in his head, and said, "This is how you will all end up as."

"What? You!"

Chu Feng's words terrified Wang Yue and the others. All of them hurriedly kept on backing away, creating some distance between themselves and Chu Feng.

They could tell that Chu Feng was not aiming to only kill of Liu Zhenbiao. He was aiming to kill all of them!

"A damn Chu Feng. You dare to kill a disciple of the Four Seas Academy? I see that you've truly tired of living." But when compared to others' cowardice, Lan Yanzhi was quite arrogant. She actually pointed at Chu Feng and started to curse at him.

"Haha, what a joke!" Chu Feng, unexpectedly, laughed when he heard Lan Yanzhi's curses. Then, he shot a fierce gaze at her, and said, "All of you have always wanted to kill me, Chu Feng, so you cannot blame me for killing all of you. The Four Seas Academy? Those who dare to harm me, even if it's the son of god, I will still kill them!"

"You..." As she saw Chu Feng's fierce gaze and chilling tone, Lan Yanzhi's former airs instantly vanished because she discovered that he was a person who feared not the heavens nor the earth. It was as if he

truly had the ability to kill all of them.

"Big Brother Wang Long, quickly kill him! Avenge Liu Zhenbiao!" As she panicked, Lan Yanzhi could only cast her gaze asking for help at Wang Long.

"Hmph. Look at all of your useless appearances. You've been frightened by this brat's two, three words?

"For trash like him, I don't even need to use my hands. With a thought, I can make him vanish like a sliver of smoke." As Wang Long spoke, he willed and a boundless pressure bursted out of his body, and swept towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, the faces of Lan Yanzhi and the others who were panicking couldn't help turning into joy. At such a distance, they were able to feel how powerful the pressure Wang Long released was. The strength of a rank four Martial Lord was indeed not to be underestimated. It was simply not something they could compare to. The pressure alone was indeed able to crush Chu Feng into dust.

In reality, it was not only Lan Yanzhi and the others who had a reaction. Even Lan Xi's face changed greatly because she too felt how terrifying the pressure was. At that moment, she also released her pressure, aiming to save Chu Feng's life.

But it was useless as it was too late. Wang Long was really too close to Chu Feng, and he also knew Lan Xi would make her move. So, when he made his own move, it was a killing strike. Just as Lan Xi's pressure surged out, Wang Long's pressure had already arrived and collided onto Chu Feng's body.

But just as everything felt Chu Feng was undoubtedly going to die, they saw a smile on his face. Suddenly, he moved. He avoided retreating, and even went straight towards the pressure.

What made everyone most shocked was as he dashed into the pressure, and not only was he not the slightest bit injured, there wasn't even any change on his face. The pressure was unable to even restrict his speed.

Finally, before the eyes of the crowd, Chu Feng arrived in front of Wang Long. Then, he extended his palm and abruptly waved it down. Within the strong gale, he aimed his palm at Wang Long's face.

As he faced Chu Feng's attack, Wang Long was caught off guard. With a bam, the expert, a rank four martial Lord, fiercely took a slap from Chu Feng. He was thrown into the air before falling right back down.

Chapter 745: Wang Long Wetting His Pants from Fright

“Heavens! This…” Everyone was stupefied when such a scene appeared before their eyes.

Chu Feng slapped Wang Long, a rank four Martial Lord, to the ground. That was really a bit too powerful.

Before, they had took guesses on Chu Feng’s level of cultivation. At most, they thought he would only be at the peak of the Heaven realm. No matter what, they didn’t think Chu Feng would reach that level of strength, to be able to even defeat a rank four Martial Lord.

One must say that the strength Chu Feng currently showed deeply shocked the crowd, especially so towards Lan Yanzhi—who was incomparably arrogant before—as well as Wang Yue and the others. At that instant, there was no longer contempt on their faces, only endless fear replacing it. They had truly become aware of how terrifying and powerful Chu Feng was.

The young man’s arrogance was not a false appearance. He truly had the strength to defeat Wang Long.

“A rank two Martial Lord?

“I didn’t expect him to be a rank two Martial Lord. He’s reached this realm already at such an age?

“But, even as a rank two Martial Lord, he shouldn’t be able to defeat Wang Long. His fighting ability is really too peculiar.” Many people were unable to determine Chu Feng’s cultivation. But, Lan Xi could.

When Chu Feng made his move, she saw through his cultivation. Him being a rank two Martial Lord deeply stunned her, but what stunned her even more was as a rank two Martial Lord, Chu Feng actually beat a rank four Martial Lord onto the ground. It didn’t even seem like he exhausted any strength.

bang

“Ah!”

As they were all astounded by Chu Feng’s power, another cry rang out. They discovered with shock that Chu Feng had attacked Wang Long again. His foot was fiercely stepping upon Wang Long’s chest. Wang Long, such an imposing rank four Martial Lord, lacked any power to fight back.

In reality, if they had fought normally, even if Wang Long couldn’t defeat Chu Feng, he could still put up a fight. At least, he could clash against him for a while.

But now, he could not. He was really too careless just now. He simply didn’t put Chu Feng in his eyes, which led him to taking a huge blow.

Although Chu Feng’s slap seemed simple on the surface, it was combined with a Spirit Formation technique. When Wang Long was struck, not only was he injured, over half of his cultivation was sealed. At that moment, he no longer had any strength to fight against Chu Feng. He was, without a doubt, in a state that allowed Chu Feng to do whatever he wished to.

And Chu Feng wanted exactly that effect. Thus, he would naturally not have mercy. First, he kicked like a cannon, shattering all of Wang Long’s bones throughout his body. Sounds such as crackle crackle rang out incessantly, then Chu Feng added a few more slaps, beating Wang Long to the point he looked nothing like before. His head now looked like a pig’s.

When everyone saw such a scene, their souls were shaken. If it were before, there would be absolutely no one who’d believe Wang Long, one of the three great geniuses of the Four Seas Academy, would be so brutally beaten by a person like Chu Feng.

But, at that very instant, even if they didn’t want to believe it they couldn’t. After all, such a fact was shown so clearly before their eyes.

However, even though Wang Long’s strength was inadequate, nor was his character any good, he still had some courage. In his heart, he felt

endlessly furious as he was beaten by Chu Feng because he knew that the person who saved Lan Xi and destroyed his perfect occasion was Chu Feng.

So, he just roared, “Beat me! If you have the guts, beat me to death! If you beat me to death, don’t even think of walking out of the Four Seas Academy alive! Even if you walk out of the Four Seas Academy, you shouldn’t even think of living. Even if you run to the ends of the world, my Wang clan will still find you and rip your corpse into a myriad of pieces!

“Not only you, your companions will all die too! Hell, you dare to touch me, Wang Long? Who do you think you are?”

When Wang Long spoke, everyone sank into silence because they all felt that Wang Long was dead. They had all seen Chu Feng’s towering airs and courage. He most definitely did not lack the bravery to kill Wang Long. At that moment, Wang Long not only refused to give in, he even forced such arrogance upon Chu Feng. He was simply looking to die.

However, something the crowd didn’t expect was after hearing Wang Long’s words, Chu Feng actually stopped his descending fist.

That scene unavoidably took everyone aback. Quickly after, Wang Long and the others couldn’t help breathing a sigh of relief because regardless how Wang Long spoke arrogantly before, at that very instant, Chu Feng had indeed stopped attacking. So, involuntarily, they all felt that Chu Feng was afraid.

As long as he thought that Chu Feng feared the influence Wang Long had from his clan, Wang Yue, who came from the same clan, was a bit proud because it meant his Wang family more or less had some deterring power.

However, when the next scene occurred, they knew they were wrong. Absolutely wrong.

Chu Feng slowly stood up, smiled, looked at Wang Long, and said, “Who am I? Do you want to know who am I?”

bathump bathump When he heard those words, Wang Long felt his

heartbeat quicken by several beats. From the bottom of his heart, an extremely uneasy feeling stemmed and surged forth. He was suddenly aware again that the Chu Feng before his eyes seemed to be not as simple as he appeared on the surface.

But despite the uneasiness, Wang Long still tightly furrowed his brows, and said with restlessness, “Wha-what do you mean?”

“I’m sure you will recognize me.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, then with a thought, his visage transformed and he instantly turned into the appearance of “Wuqing”. He then lightly smiled and said, “What, do you still have the confidence to make me vanish like a sliver of dust with a thought of your own?”

“Yo-yo-yo-you’re Wuqing?!” After seeing Chu Feng’s current complexion, Wang Long’s pupils abruptly contracted. His expression also instantly changed greatly, even his body started violently quivering. His arrogance from before was no more, and replacing it was infinite terror. Even though his face was completely unrecognizable, one could still see how much fear was in his eyes.

Wuqing. Wang Long knew that person very well. The exceptional genius who defeated the three great geniuses from the Immortal Execution Archipelago in the Misty Peak, one who collected over a thousand Martial Markings, and the one who was named to be the one to surpass Murong Xun.

No matter how much powerful Chu Feng was, he would at most be slightly afraid of him because deep in his heart, he didn’t think that Chu Feng would dare to truly kill him. Putting aside the Four Seas Academy, the power of his Wang clan was quite huge.

If something happened to him, who was the next-in-line in the Wang clan, even if the Wang clan used all of its clan’s strength, they would avenge him. So, no matter who it was, they would still have to give it a long consideration before killing him. That was the reason why Wang Long still dared to act so arrogantly in his state.

But when it was Wuqing, it was completely different. He, who had

personally experienced the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, had deep respect and fear towards this person called Wuqing. He knew how overwhelming powerful of an existence he was. He not only had dominating strength, his courage was exceeding. One could even call him fearless of both the heavens and the earth.

The most important thing, however, was that Wuqing had a unfathomably powerful and mysterious master behind his back, and other than that mysterious master, there was also the expert Lady Qiushui, who was a Martial King, protecting him.

Before entering the Millennium Ancient City, he even received new news: When Wuqing left the Misty Peak, there were several famous people at the peak of the Martial Lord realm who aimed to rob Wuqing, but were all killed by Lady Piaomiao.

Lady Piaomiao never often killed, nor would she ever kill another for outsiders of the Misty Peak. Her actions was announcing to the world that she, the guardian of the Misty Peak, one of the peak characters of the Eastern Sea Region, also prepared to protect the genius, Wuqing.

Chapter 746: A Woman's Softheartedness

Putting aside the person whose name was well known throughout the Eastern Sea Region, Lady Piaomiao, and also putting aside his mysterious, unknown master, Lady Qiushui alone of the Lovers Terrace was simply not someone his Wang family could afford to offend.

In terms of strength, he was inferior to Wuqing. Thus, he should be afraid.

In terms of background, he was even more inferior to Wuqing. Thus, he truly had no choice but to be afraid.

If he could rely on his clan to threaten Chu Feng before, then now, he was forced to worry whether his own clan would be affected because of his idiotic actions.

At that instant, Wang Long truly felt a myriad of regrets, as though the end of time were approaching. He never would have even imagined that the guy he looked down upon would be the existence that he deeply feared—no, at present, the existence that countless people in the Eastern Sea Region's younger generation feared, Wuqing.

He regretted. Incomparable regret. So much that his intestines greened—it died—from regret. If he knew beforehand that Chu Feng was Wuqing, then even if someone lent him a hundred guts he wouldn't dare treat him the way he did, let alone making him an enemy. He simply didn't have the courage to say a single word of opposition.

"Chu Feng, yo-you're Wuqing?!" In reality, Wang Long was not the only one shocked by Chu Feng's current appearance. Even Lan Xi was the same because she instantly recognized who Chu Feng's current appearance represented.

And as he faced Lan Xi's stunned gaze, Chu Feng faintly smiled and said, "Senior Lan Xi, it is indeed me. On the Misty Peak, we have met."

"Heavens! He's the genius whose name shocked the Eastern Sea Region, who defeated the three great geniuses of the Immortal Execution

Archipelago, and is named to be the person who will surpass Murong Xun, Wuqing?!"

"This... How has it come to this?!"

After Chu Feng confirmed his identity, almost everyone was stupefied because they had heard the accomplishments of Wuqing. They knew he was an existence in the peak of the younger generation, one that possessed quite a bit of influence.

And they, before, actually mocked and humiliated an existence like that. They even wanted to kill him. Only in that moment did they realize how foolish they had been. They were simply as foolish as they could possibly be.

Currently, it was not only Wang Long who felt endless regret. Even Wang Yu, Lan Yanzhi, and the others felt the same.

No matter what, they never would have thought the person they looked down on, the person that had a false imposing atmosphere, the person they thought only dared to be arrogance with Taikou's protection, would be Wuqing, whose name was known throughout the Eastern Sea Region. They had truly offended someone they could not have offended.

In comparison to their surprise and fear, however, Su Rou and the others were surprised and joyed. They too had heard of Wuqing's achievements, and they had even praised that Wuqing in front of Chu Feng. When they thought back at that, they couldn't even help themselves from smiling.

They also didn't expect the person who even they admired, Wuqing, was the person closest to them, Chu Feng.

"Brother Wuqing, a misunderstanding, a misunderstanding! It's all a misunderstanding!

"We've met each other on the Misty Peak, so you should know what kind of person I, Wang Long, am.

"You really, really shouldn't have concealed your identity! If I knew it was you, how would I have treated you like this?" At that instant, Wang

Long's former arrogance and bravery was no more, and now, he was extremely shamelessly bootlicking Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng, who had already seen Wang Long's true side, was not moved by his current performance. Rather, he said, "Of course I know what kind of person you are. When you drugged Lan Xi and prepared to do that thing with her in the depths of the forest, don't forget who took her away from underneath you."

"Wang Long, it was you?!" After hearing Chu Feng's words, Lan Xi's face immediately changed. An overflowing fury and bloodlust bursted out of her body. A single word was crisply written on her face: rage.

Although Lan Xi had blurry memories of that time, she knew she was drugged. Even though she didn't know too clearly what happened, she knew her clothes were ripped away by one person and she nearly lost her body. Luckily, another person appeared and saved her. Only because of that did she avoid such a disaster.

In her daze, she also remembered because her body was in great agony, and she was too hungry, she started involuntarily asking the person who saved her for that.

But the person did not give her what she desired. At that time, she did hate him for not saving a dying person. Yet now, she was very grateful towards that person. Because of that person's uprightness, he protected the thing she viewed with most importance—her body.

However, she never would have thought that the person who wanted to do that sort of thing to her was Wang Long, and the person who saved her was Chu Feng.

Initially, she still had some sympathy for Wang Long. After all, he was a disciple that was with her for many years. But now, she wished she could kill Wang Long herself, to tear his corpse into a million pieces.

Wang Long was slightly taken aback by Lan Xi's interrogation, but at that moment, where would he find the heart to explain to her? Not only did he ignore her, with a quick thought, he shamelessly smiled and said to Chu Feng, "Hehe, Brother Wuqing, I'll be honest: I did indeed drug Lan

Xi. However, the strength of that drug was very powerful! Since you saved her, and since she is standing here unharmed, I'm sure that the two of you must have had that sort of relationship, right?

"Brother Wuqing, since you've done it already, you must admit that Lan Xi has quite some grace to her! There are even no words to describe her figure and the feeling you get from touching her! Even though you have quite a noble position, Lan Xi is still the unblemished Big Miss of the Lan clan!

"And, to be able to have done such a great thing, it is also your luck. Heh, although I inadvertently set up such a situation, I have still helped you complete such a thing. You should be thanking me! Due to all of that, you should also let me go."

"Wang Long, you are shameless!" When she heard those words, Lan Xi gritted her teeth from anger. Originally, she thought, judging by Wang Long's nature, he would try and justify himself, but she didn't expect in order to survive, he admitted to doing it. Not only did he admit it, he even took credit for it.

In reality, even Chu Feng didn't know what to say about that. Wang Long actually started to joke around. Chu Feng truly felt Wang Long was quite despicable and shameless, but also, he was quite pitiful.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng grabbed the front of Wang Long's clothes, and after raising him up, like throwing a sandbag, he threw Wang Long towards Lan Xi, and said, "Senior Lan Xi, you take care of this person."

"Junior Lan Xi, have mercy, Junior Lan Xi, have mercy! Out of consideration of the many years I've liked you, out of consideration of the many things I've done for you, please spare me! Please give me one more chance! I'm begging you!"

After Wang Long landed on the ground, ignoring his own injuries, he hurriedly did his best to climb up and started to kowtow towards Lan Xi. At that very instant, in order to survive, he really didn't care about anything. If he could do it, he would do it.

"You..."

And as she faced Wang Long who acted like that, no matter how much more anger there was in Lan Xi's heart, she had some hesitation. Because, in the few years she'd been in the Four Seas Academy, Wang Long did treat her fairly well, and had also done a fair bit for her.

whoosh But just as Lan Xi hesitated, Chu Feng suddenly came down from the air and stepped on Wang Long's back, pushing him onto the ground. At the same time, a hand had gripped Wang Long's hair, and Chu Feng said to Lan Xi, "If you don't do it, I'll help you."

"Nooo—" Lan Xi suddenly stretched her hand when she felt Chu Feng's bloodlust and grabbed his arm. She wanted to save Wang Long.

Chu Feng couldn't help be taken aback by Lan Xi's action, but then, he very helplessly shook his head, and sighed. "A woman's softheartedness."

After speaking, Chu Feng abruptly flung away Lan Xi's hands, and suddenly slashed down with his other free arm. With a puchi, with the spray of blood into the air, Wang Long's head had been forcefully chopped by Chu Feng.

Chapter 747: The Reason for Murder

With droplets of blood in air, Wang Long's head was detached from his body, and it fell onto the ground.

When they saw that scene, almost everyone was dumbfounded. Even though they all knew it was very likely Chu Feng would kill Wang Long, they didn't expect him to be so direct, and also so cruel. He was truly decisive in killing without the slightest bit of mercy.

And as she saw the head that Chu Feng forcefully cut off and was still rolling on the ground, Lan Xi lightly knitted her brows. She opened her mouth, as if to talk, but then stopped herself. In the end, she didn't say anything else because she too knew that Wang Long deserved that.

bang, bang, bang But just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly waved his hand. Three muffled explosions rang out. Wang Yue as well as two other disciples from the Four Seas Academy exploded and died, becoming three bright red mists of blood.

Chu Feng struck again; three people died. He did indeed do what he said he would do. Of the people who wanted him dead before, now only Lan Yanzhi remained. All others were killed by him

At that instant, Lan Yanzhi was standing on the spot with a blank expression. Her face was pale-white from fear, and her body trembling. When Chu Feng could even kill Wang Yue instantly with the raise of his hand, then by her cultivation, it was even easier if Chu Feng wanted to kill her.

At that moment, Lan Yanzhi felt heavy, heavy regret. All her guts were completely destroyed from fright. She felt that though she escaped a calamity, she was still definitely going to die.

However, to her surprise, Chu Feng didn't kill Lan Yanzhi immediately. Instead, he looked at Lan Xi and said, "Senior Lan Xi, I feel that you should personally do this one yourself."

"Chu Feng—no, Wuqing.

“Wuqing, can you give me face, and give Yanzhi a chance? I’m begging you, don’t kill her. Even if she was in the wrong before, she is still my sister. I beg you, spare her life.” Lan Xi had clearly not understood Chu Feng’s intentions. She thought Chu Feng still harboured grudges from Lan Yanzhi’s stance before, and now, she was pleading for Lan Yanzhi.

“Senior Lan Xi, are you truly foolish, are merely acting like so? You are begging, for her?

“Do you not understand why you were drugged by Wang Long?

“Do you not remember what I reminded you before? Didn’t I tell you not to carelessly eat things that others give you, and that you should still put up your guard even around people closest to you?” Chu Feng fiercely asked.

When she heard those words, Lan Xi’s pupils suddenly shrank. At the same time, her expression completely changed. She had recalled something. Shortly after, she pointed at Lan Yanzhi and said, “It was you? You sold me out?!”

“Other than her, who else could it be? She was already teamed up with Wang Long. At first, when she disappeared for a night, she was, in reality, doing the deed with Wang Long.

“They were planning how to entrap you that night, and incidentally, I heard it. So, that’s why I gave you such a reminder on the next day when I saw you. But, it was useless as you didn’t heed my advice. If I hadn’t stumbled upon what they were doing with you, your body wouldn’t have remained pure. And, the one who harmed you is none other than the sister you treat as treasure,” Chu Feng continued to say. He spoke of everything that Lan Yanzhi did to Lan Xi.

When she heard all of that, Lan Xi suddenly realized it. She couldn’t help thinking back at the many scenes before. Back then, Chu Feng had indeed reminded her, but she didn’t understand what Chu Feng meant. Now, reflecting on what had happened, she now knew that the person Chu Feng wanted her to be careful around was her own younger sister, Lan Yanzhi.

But even though Chu Feng had already spoken the truth, Lan Xi still felt it to be unbelievable. She raised her trembling hand due to rage, pointed it at Lan Yanzhi, and asked with gnashing teeth, “Yanzhi, did you truly work together with that Wang Long and planned to trap me? Speak! Is this true, or is this not?!”

At that instant, Lan Yanzhi wanted to defend herself, but after seeing Chu Feng’s fierce gaze, her heart trembled. She dared not conceal anything more. Quickly kneeling onto the ground, her face full of regret, she said in tears, “Sister, I was wrong! Please forgive me! Wang Long forced me to, if I didn’t, he would have killed me!”

“You…” Seeing Lan Yanzhi’s reaction, Lan Xi almost fainted away from anger because the answer she gave was very clear—all of what Chu Feng said was true.

“Junior Wuqing, leave me some face. Don’t kill her.” Lan Xi closed her eyes, and took several deep breaths before speaking those words.

After hearing Lan Xi’s words, Lan Yanzhi hiddenly celebrated in her heart. She assumed that her elder sister was truly preparing to spare her for the sake of their sisters’ relationship. But, when she heard the following words, she was completely stupefied.

“Let me take care of her myself.” Suddenly, Lan Xi widened her eyes, and simultaneously, two rays of cold bloodlust shot out. A hand full of Martial power struck out, and after a boom, Lan Yanzhi burst into pieces.

With only one strike, she killed Lan Yanzhi. Surely, Lan Yanzhi didn’t feel any pain before she died.

But Lan Xi was different. In her heart, she definitely felt great pain. Chu Feng saw, in the instant she killed Lan Yanzhi, a tear sliding from the corner of Lan Xi’s eye.

But no matter how it was, Chu Feng was very satisfied with Lan Xi’s action. He knew what Lan Xi did just now was very correct.

Lan Xi too was no ordinary person. Even though she was in great sorrow, she quickly organized her emotions and said to Chu Feng, “Should

I be calling you Wuqing, or Chu Feng?"

"Actually, I'm called Chu Feng, but I hope you can keep a secret for me in the future." As Chu Feng smiled, he turned his face back to its original appearance. Although, in comparison to Wuqing's look, it seemed rather young, there was greater handsomeness in between his brows.

"If you showed your current appearance to the public back then in the Misty Peak, I'm sure the 'storm' that has been risen now in the Eastern Sea Region would be even more enormous." Lan Xi sweetly smiled, then added, "Don't worry. You've done me a favour. I will help you hide everything that happened today."

"Thank you, Senior Lan Xi." Chu Feng respectfully clasped his fists.

"No, if someone's thanking, it should be me." Lan Xi bitterly chuckled. When she thought of Lan Yanzhi, she felt herself to be extremely idiotic. Then, she took a glance at the surface of the palace's ground. Instantly, her expression changed. She quickly said to Chu Feng, "Junior Chu Feng, why can't their blood be gathered on that formation?"

"She's right! Their blood can't even flow into the outlines of the formation! What do we do now?" When they heard her words, the faces of Su Rou and the others also changed greatly. They discovered with shock that the blood flowing out of Wang Long and the others, though flowed upon the ground of the palace, was unable to seek into the outlines of the formation.

On the other hand, the blood from the mysterious Monstrous Beast kept on flowing. At that moment, the blood outline of the formation on the ground was about to be completed.

But as he looked at that, there wasn't the slightest trace of change in Chu Feng's emotions. Instead, he looked as if everything was expected, and said with a faint smile, "No need to panic, this is expected."

"Chu Feng, what do you mean?" Lan Xi had confusion filled her face. She was a bit muddled.

"I'm saying that this isn't any altar. As long as that Monstrous Beast

dies, this formation will be activated. It cannot be stopped," explained Chu Feng.

"Then since this isn't an altar, why did you say it was before?" Lan Xi was still puzzled.

The smile on Chu Feng's face became even wider when he heard Lan Xi's question. He said with a light smile, "If I didn't say that, how could Wang Long and the others attack me so soon, and how could I find a sufficient reason before you to kill them?"

Chapter 748: The Queen Steps Onto the Stage

"What? This..." Lan Xi's brows knitted slightly upon Chu Feng's words. She was quite intelligent; she already understood the meaning behind Chu Feng's words.

Chu Feng had the strength to kill Wang Long and the others—this was something undoubtable. But, as Chu Feng said, there must exist a reason for killing. If one killed another for no reason at all, either they were a madman, or a demon. They would not be understood by others, and they would even be spat upon, insulted, hated.

For example, if Chu Feng immediately killed Wang Long and the others before entering the core of the Millennium Ancient City, Lan Xi would definitely feel that Chu Feng was too cruel, perhaps even reckless. She would despise Chu Feng's actions in her heart, and not only would his image receive a huge blow, he could possibly even become an enemy in Lan Xi's heart.

However, Chu Feng first baited Wang Long to initiate his attack, and after he revealed his vile side, Chu Feng made his move again, to kill. That was completely reasonable, and completely deserved. Everyone could understand that, and would even feel that Chu Feng did the right thing.

But, Lan Xi also thus understood that Chu Feng was not as simple as he appeared. Not only in terms of cultivation, but also in his ways of handling matters.

Chu Feng had thought of removing Wang Long since a very long time ago. However, to be able to hold himself back, and even implicitly lure Wang Long, control him, and make him step into the trap... Chu Feng's methods really did make Lan Xi both frightened and shocked. She deeply realized how terrifying Chu Feng was.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, what should we do now? Look! Those Monstrous Beasts looks like they will awaken soon," Jiang Wushang said with a face

of terror.

At that very instant, the vast palace's doors remained shut, and all about the palace, there were over a thousand Martial Lord-level Monstrous Beasts. Chu Feng and the others had already seen their strengths before. If one was already so strong, it could not imagined how horrifying over a thousand was.

And now, the dormant Monstrous Beasts started to gradually open their eyes. What should they do?

"Although this is not an altar, there is still a way of resolving this situation." As the others were in panic, Chu Feng remained as calm as he was before, as though everything turned out the same as his predictions.

"How?" asked Jiang Wushang and the others simultaneously.

"Kill all these Monstrous Beasts and thoroughly activate this formation of blood. Then, an exit should appear," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"What? Kill all these Monstrous Beasts? How is it possible?!" When they heard that, not to mention the shock on Jiang Wushang's and the others' faces, even Lan Xi, as a rank four Martial Lord, widened her mouth from complete astonishment. She, who had exchanged blows with the Monstrous Beast before, knew very well how powerful it was.

And in all honesty, if she hadn't fought it together with Wang Long and was on her own, she might not have been able to defeat the Monstrous Beast. Although she was a rank four Martial Lord, and the Monstrous Beast a rank three Martial Lord, the Monstrous Beast had fighting strength so powerful it could fight those above its rank.

And now, all around them were over a thousand of those unfathomable Monstrous Beasts. Although they were not all rank three Martial Lords, a large portion of them were. Most importantly, she even discovered several rank four Martial Lord Monstrous Beasts within their ranks.

Hence, from her perspective, to wish to kill all the Monstrous Beasts was nearly an impossible feat.

hmm But just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly extended his arm and

laid a mighty Spirit Formation. It enveloped Lan Xi, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi.

"Chu Feng, what are you doing?" When they saw that, Lan Xi and the others were taken by surprise. She could feel that the Spirit Formation Chu Feng laid was not a simple one—it was extremely powerful, sufficient to protect all of them.

But at that very instant, though Chu Feng laid such a formation and it veiled over all of them, he himself was outside. That made them realize a bad situation.

"What am I doing? Naturally, I'm going to take care of these Monstrous Beasts." As Chu Feng spoke, an imposing armament appeared within his palm—the Incomplete Royal Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword.

"Don't! Let me out! I can't let you fight against so many Monstrous Beasts on your own!" Lan Xi shouted.

"Alone? No, I am not fighting alone," Chu Feng said with a calm smile.

Just as they were ridden with confusion, puzzled as to what Chu Feng's words meant, a Spirit Formation Gate suddenly opened—it was a World Spirit Gate.

After that gate opened, a young lady, who was so beautiful it made even Su Rou and Su Mei lose their brilliance, walked out from within.

It was Eggy. Even though through the years, Chu Feng had shed some of his youthfulness, Eggy still had the appearance of a young lady.

But even though Eggy's age seemed to stagnate at the stage of a young lady, her looks were very sweet and amiable, her figure was still very spicy. Rather than saying she was a cute young lady, it'd be better to say she was a beautiful queen.

"It's her?" Although Lan Xi and the others didn't recognize Eggy, Zhang Tianyi had seen her before. He knew she was an odd but very powerful World Spirit. After Eggy appeared, Zhang Tianyi's worry did diminish by quite a bit because Chu Feng had told him Eggy was much stronger.

However, Lan Xi didn't share the same thoughts. As a rank four Martial Lord, and also a World Spiritist, she could see that even though Eggy was a World Spirit, a very powerful one at that, but she was only a rank one Martial Lord.

Honestly speaking, even the World Spirits she had herself had superior cultivation than Eggy, and judging by Chu Feng's appearance, he seemed to have only one. Involuntarily, it made her feel that Chu Feng was forcing it—preparing a fight to the death.

"Yawn~~~" As Eggy, with her snow-white and slender legs, walked one step at a time out of the World Spirit Gate, she ignored Lan Xi and Zhang Tianyi and the others. She stuck out her proud figure, bent her soft waist, and slowly widened her arms. She lazily stretched, and yawned.

After doing those very casual but alluring actions, Eggy grinned, showing her devastatingly bewitching smile. "So many high-quality Monstrous Beasts... Looking at the Source Energy already accumulated in my body, if I refine them all, perhaps I can make a breakthrough to a rank two Martial Lord~"

wuao~~~ Just at that moment, a furious howl suddenly resounded. One of the mysterious Monstrous Beasts in deep sleep had awoken.

wuao~~~~~ Quickly following, over a thousand more furious howls rang out in succession. All of the Monstrous Beasts in the palace were awakened.

After the Monstrous Beasts were roused, they uniformly cast their blood-red eyes in the direction of Chu Feng and the others. Then, they took steps that shook the entire palace. Within the rumbling, they all madly dashed towards Chu Feng and the others.

At that moment, even though Lan Xi and the others were hiding within the Spirit Formation, they couldn't help backing away. They leaned on each other, their eyes full of worry and fear.

They were able to clearly feel how horrifying those Monstrous Beasts were. Despite being within the Spirit Formation, they could still feel an indescribable dreadful aura wrapping around them, giving them no room

to escape.

Chapter 749: Annihilating the Monstrous Beasts

rumble rumble rumble

Over a thousand enormous, horrifically powerful Monstrous Beasts surged forth all together. That level of might was not as simple as shaking the earth. It was as though space itself were about to be shattered. If the palace wasn't reinforced with Spirit Formations, likely it would have disappeared like a sliver of smoke from all the shaking.

"Chu Feng, open the Spirit Formation and let me out! I can't let you put your life on the line against them. If you don't open the Spirit Formation, I will force it open!" Lan Xi hysterically shouted.

She didn't think Chu Feng, and Eggy, who was such a weak World Spirit, would be able to stop those Monstrous Beasts. In her eyes, they were most certainly going to die. Since they were going to die anyway, she was willing to die with Chu Feng on the battlefield—not inside the Spirit Formation.

"You?" However, after hearing Lan Xi's words, Eggy, with her prideful eyes, glanced at Lan Xi with her disdainful gaze, and said, "Forget about it. Although those Monstrous Beasts aren't very strong, they aren't something you can win against. What's wrong with staying in there and waiting? There's no point of coming out and making a mess."

"What do you mean?!" When a World Spirit, a lowly rank one Martial Lord, dared to speak to her in such a manner, Lan Xi was quite furious. She questioned Eggy with an attitude of "who do you think you are".

Eggy wasn't angry by Lan Xi's tone. Rather, she sweetly smiled, and said, stressing every single syllable, "I. Said. You. Are. Too. Weak!!"

"You!

"Insolence!

"You, a mere rank one Martial Lord, dare to speak to me like this?"

When she heard that, Lan Xi gnashed her teeth from anger. In her beautiful eyes, two visible pillars of flames were simply going to shoot out. She had the appearance of “you die or I die” when facing Eggy.

whoosh However, though Eggy still wore a smile on her face, she no longer paid attention to Lan Xi. She looked like she was too lazy to even bother.

Moreover, when Eggy turned around, endless dark gas poured out from her body. Akin to an erupting volcano, it burst into the air. As the gas surged, it instantly covered the entirety of the palace’s ceiling.

It looked like black clouds, but they were definitely not as simple as black clouds. The gaseous mass was even blacker than ink, and the aura it emanated was very peculiar as well. More importantly, the power seeping from within simply made one’s heart tremble and caused chills to run down their spine.

Horrifying—extremely horrifying might. Powerful—indescribably powerful. Might that no one had seen before, yet so abnormally tremendous.

boom boom boom boom boom

After the black gas covered the ceiling, there were countless more masses of black gas that swirled down like a hurricane in a conical shape.

On the areas that the black-coloured gases pounded the surface of the ground, a terrifying black-coloured shockwave would arise. So long as a Monstrous Beast was struck by the shockwave, it would, without exception, cry out in misery. Then, their flesh and blood would be devastatingly mashed together, and after only a blink, become a pile of meat paste.

All of that happened in only an instant, but several hundred Monstrous Beasts had already died—died by the black-coloured hurricanes. The seemingly horrid Monstrous Beast army was completely destroyed by Eggy’s power alone.

“My gods, isn’t she a bit too powerful? Who is this girl?” Jiang Wushang

widened his mouth in shock. He found out that Eggy's fighting strength was even more terrifying than Chu Feng's. Not to mention rank three Martial Lord Monstrous Beasts, even rank fours before her would be the same as useless filler—lacking any power to fight against her.

"How is this possible? Could she, could she be an Asura World Spirit, from the legends?" Jiang Wushang was not alone in his astonishment. Lan Xi, who was arguing against Eggy before, had a face completely pale from fright. She was thoroughly stunned by Eggy's power.

The powerful strength Eggy displayed forced her to think of the legendary World Spirit, the World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World that really did only appear in the legends. That was the only reason that could justify her strength.

But a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World was truly like a legend. At least, currently in the Eastern Sea Region, she had never heard of a World Spiritist who could get into contact with an Asura World Spirit and have one follow them.

"No wonder. No wonder Chu Feng had so much confidence, and no wonder that World Spirit was so haughty. So, it was me who had eyes but could not see." After the feeling of shock passed, Lan Xi bitterly laughed. She felt idiotic when she recalled her argument against Eggy just before.

At the same time, when she looked at Chu Feng again, there were complicated emotions in her eyes. Chu Feng, who was already very powerful in her heart, rose another rank due to Eggy's existence. She couldn't help but sigh and say, "You... Are you truly the genius of our generation?"

"A World Spirit of the Asura Spirit World. Yes, that must be it, that must be it.

"Haha, as expected of Big Brother Chu Feng! You're actually able to make a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World! You must know that the World Spirit I made a contract with was only a World Spirit from the Beast Spirit World..." Jiang Wushang was elated when he heard Lan Xi's words.

Although they were both World Spirits, there was a difference in strength due to their origins. Actually, World Spirits from the Beast Spirit World weren't weak, but in comparison to the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World, they were on two completely different levels.

If it were a normal person, they would definitely envy Chu Feng greatly because recorded history stated that World Spiritists able to make a contract with an Asura Spirit World World Spirit were very outstanding, well-known people of their generation.

But, Jiang Wushang felt no envy. Instead, he was very happy because Chu Feng was his brother. The stronger Chu Feng became, the happier he became.

It was not only Jiang Wushang who felt like that. Su Rou and Su Mei, as well as Zhang Tianyi, were the same. They all felt happy for Chu Feng to be able to have such a powerful World Spirit.

"Eggy, you are really as overwhelming as usual. But now, it's best to finish this quick."

Chu Feng once again saw Eggy's terrifying fighting power. In all honesty, even he admired the unique power Eggy had.

However, at that moment, he only wanted to finish the battle as soon as possible. So, he brandished the Dragon Marking Sword in his hand, and while using beautiful and fine Dragon Marking Sword Techniques, he threw himself into the army of Monstrous Beasts.

whoosh whoosh The Dragon Marking Sword in Chu Feng's hand was simply akin to a sharp weapon that nothing could stop—not only did the tip stop at nothing, the edge did not either. Monstrous Beasts that clashed with the Dragon Marking Sword would be sliced open like tofu. Although, in terms of total killing strength, Chu Feng was not as ferocious as Eggy, he was still unstoppable.

Lan Xi and the other had already seen Eggy's power in a single instant. Now, Chu Feng's strength made them shocked, once again. They even thought that without Eggy, judging by Chu Feng's terrifying fighting strength, he could perhaps truly defeat all the Monstrous Beasts on his

own.

If Lan Xi hadn't admired Chu Feng yet—when she learned of his contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World—then now, she felt nothing but deep respect for him.

With strong power, Chu Feng let her know that even though the World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World was powerful, Chu Feng was absolutely worthy to be her master.

Chapter 750: The Remains of the Throne

With Chu Feng and Eggy joining hands, it was but an instant's work. Over a thousand Monstrous Beasts were now dead.

Those who were killed by Chu Feng had either their heads lopped off, or their limbs separated. Despite their massive bodies, they were unable to stop Chu Feng's fierce slashes.

Those who were killed by Eggy, on the other hand, were a sight unbearable to see. As the black-coloured shockwaves swept past the area, their blood of flesh had mashed together, becoming piles and piles of sharp-red meat pastes.

After personally witnessing Chu Feng and Eggy's slaughter, then looking at the many enormous Monstrous Beast corpses lying on the palace's floor, Su Rou and the others couldn't help deeply inhaling. They were completely convinced by Chu Feng's strength.

"Hah, Chu Feng, I was indeed correct! After consuming these Monstrous Beasts' Source Energy, in addition to the amount I've already accumulated in my body, I have successfully become a rank two Martial Lord! Haha, not bad, not bad. Truly not bad!"

After absorbing all the Source Energy of the Monstrous Beasts, the peculiar Eggy's cultivation had entered the realm of rank two Martial Lords. Although such a result was already expected, Eggy was still very joyous. On her perfectly beautiful face, there was a smile that could enchanting anything.

"In the end, you still caught up to me. Right now, we are both rank two Martial Lords. I am fine with facing a rank four Martial Lord, but I'm afraid I cannot defeat a rank five Martial Lord. How about you? What level has your fighting ability reached?" Chu Feng asked curiously. He knew his fighting capabilities were already overwhelming, but he also knew that Eggy's were still superior to his own. So, he really wanted to know what degree Eggy's had reached.

After all, there were skies beyond skies, and people beyond people. Chu

Feng knew that truth very well, so even though he knew that his fighting ability was relatively superior to others, on the other side of the world, there were many existences that had fighting powers much higher than his.

"About that... It's not interesting if I say it. When you meet an opponent you cannot defeat, won't you know when I reveal my hand then?"

Eggy charmingly smiled, and as she spoke, she even winked with her beautiful big eyes at Chu Feng naughtily. In the end, she didn't give Chu Feng any answer. With her hands behind her back, she strode with her snow-white legs, and before several gazes, she walked back into the World Spirit Gate without any care of others, returning to Chu Feng's World Spirit Space.

Seeing the odd Eggy disappear, everyone on scene looked at each other. On their faces, and in their hearts, there were inexpressible emotions. After seeing the strength of an Asura Spirit World World Spirit, they had a deeper understanding of the saying "there's a person beyond every person".

The aura Eggy exuded and the strength she exhibited was something they had never seen before. It was a type of power that did not belong to this world, but was absolutely so powerful there was no need to doubt her.

"It's time to open the entrance to this place. I hope everything here is the final obstacle, otherwise, I'm afraid we will truly be unable to progress." Although Chu Feng killed quite a few Monstrous Beasts, in reality, a large portion of them were dealt with by Eggy. At that moment, his face was drenched with sweat; it could be seen he used quite a bit of strength.

In reality, if it weren't for Eggy's help, Chu Feng would not have much luck whilst facing so many Monstrous Beasts. Even if he could kill all of them, it was likely he would have to pay an enormous price. At least, at that time, he too would be a mesh of flesh and blood.

So, Chu Feng truly hoped the Monstrous Beasts just now were the final

barrier guarding this place, because if there were any more that came, with Chu Feng's strength, he would truly be unable to fight against it. This would mean everything he did up until now was for naught.

hmm As he spoke, Chu Feng suddenly. Then, his palms dropped down and slammed the floor. At the same time, he channeled his boundless Spirit power unrestrainedly into the formation of blood on the surface of the floor.

"Open!" Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. Then, he abruptly raised his arms. The blood outline of the formation that was attached to the ground actually detached as it slowly rose.

rumble rumble rumble

At that instant, the entire palace started to violently shake again. And, under the shining of blood, the formation kept on condensing and changing. Eventually, it converged and became a Spirit Formation Gate.

The gate was different from all the ones Chu Feng had seen before. It stood in midair, and surrounding it were blood-red symbols. Its shape was odd, yet perfect in a way.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, is this truly the entrance?" At that instant, the Spirit Formation that enveloped Jiang Wushang and the others had been dissolved. They gazed at the Spirit Formation Gate hanging in midair, but were a bit hesitant.

The Spirit Formation Gate was indeed very peculiar. On the surface, it didn't seem like an entrance that led to a remains. Rather, it seemed more like a door of death that led to an underground city.

"Honestly speaking, I'm not sure either. But, whether it is or not, we'll know with an investigation.

"Wait here for news, I'll return soon." As Chu Feng spoke, he put strength into his legs, and his entire body had leaped up. Like a sharp sword, he shot straight into the Spirit Formation Gate in the air.

whoosh After entering the gate, it was as if Chu Feng entered a tunnel of space and time. He felt as if his memories were disturbed as well, but

that odd feeling lasted for but a second before vanishing.

When everything returned to normal, Chu Feng was deep within a large palace.

That palace was made by the bones of countless Monstrous Beasts. Judging by the shape of the bones, Chu Feng recognized that they were the bones of mysterious Monstrous Beasts.

However, the skeleton that structured the palace was clearly even more enormous than the Monstrous Beasts Chu Feng killed. One can thus imagine what kind of strength it possessed when it was alive.

However, no matter how powerful it was, it was dead now. Not only was its Source Energy stripped away, even the remaining skeleton was used as an ornament.

In the center of the palace, there was a vast Spirit Formation. It shot radiance in all directions, lighting up the entire palace with incomparable brightness.

It was a formation made by the power of a Royal-cloak's Spirit Formation. At present, it was still perfectly working, and there seemed to be a formless power sealed within.

Underneath that formation, there was a throne. On the throne, there sat a person. He wore a set of armour, giving others a sovereign feeling. Regretfully, its life was no more, only leaving behind a skeleton.

As for the armour worn on his body, though its style appeared to be unordinarily domineering, looking at it now, it was no different from useless metal. It was not only no treasure, it had rusted and was full of imperfections.

"Heavens! Is that the mysterious person that eradicated the Monstrous Beast species?" Suddenly, an incomparably astonished and trembling voice rang out.

Turning his head, Jiang Wushang and the others had walked in. But, not a single one of their faces lacked shocked expressions. There was even a bit of fear there.

Chapter 751: Imperial Bloodline

"Why did you come in? Didn't I say to wait for me outside?" Chu Feng was a bit displeased when he saw Jiang Wushang and the others walk towards him.

He was unable to determine whether or not there were dangers hidden from view, which was why he entered first—to explore a bit. He was afraid there'd be dangers, and that those dangers would injure Jiang Wushang and the others.

"Chu Feng, don't be angry! We entered exactly because we feared it's dangerous inside. We don't want you to do the most dangerous things every time." Su Mei sweetly smiled. She walked up to Chu Feng and coyly hugged Chu Feng's arm.

"Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, you said it too! As brothers, we share both fortune and misfortune. We can't hide behind your back when there are dangers, then jump right before you when there are harvests," Jiang Wushang too explained quickly, as if afraid Chu Feng would get angry.

Chu Feng really had no way of being angry when he faced them. He knew what they were thinking: they were afraid he would stumble upon a fatal situation. They were holding close to the thought of sharing their lives with Chu Feng—to live and die together.

In his lifetime, it was Chu Feng's luck to be able to have such good brothers and lovers. How could he possibly be angry?

"Brother Wushang, that person has no Source Energy. The skeleton is completely empty; I cannot estimate where he came from, nor what cultivation he had while alive.

"However, inside the formation atop its head, there contains the unknown. From what you see, is that person the possessor of the Imperial Bloodline? Or, is there pressure of the Imperial Bloodline within the formation atop its head?" Chu Feng asked Jiang Wushang.

Jiang Wushang was a possessor of a Royal Bloodline. He had a natural

reaction to Imperial Bloodlines. To be more precise, it was the Imperial Bloodline that continually oppressed him, like a king oppressing his citizens.

"It's him. He is definitely the possessor of the Imperial Bloodline. Within the formation, there is no doubt that it's the Imperial Bloodline. I am certain."

Jiang Wushang's current visage was very complex. On one hand, there were insuppressible excitement and emotion. On the other hand, there were uncontrollable fear and terror. All of those originated from the Imperial Bloodline.

To him, it was something he dreamt of obtaining.

However, to him, it was simultaneously supreme, and unable to be desecrated.

For the Imperial Bloodline, if he didn't succeed, then he would die. Either stride into the skies with a single step, or he would utter his last words now. But, even with death as the price of failure, he was willing to give it a try.

"As I thought, you aim for this Imperial Bloodline." Lan Xi learnt of their goal after hearing their words. Shortly after, she reminded solemnly, "Chu Feng, I must warn you that the Imperial Bloodline isn't a product of the Eastern Sea Region. From what I've heard, it only appears in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"Similarly to the strength of the Holy Land of Martialism, the Imperial Bloodline is extremely powerful. More accurately speaking, it is not something we are able to touch upon. At least, with our strengths, we absolutely cannot touch it.

"After all, this is very possibly the powerful existence that slaughtered an entire species of Monstrous Beasts. Even if he's already been dead for several thousand years, 'a hunger-ridden camel is still larger than a horse', let alone a cultivation expert that possesses an Imperial Bloodline."

“Senior Lan Xi, thank you for your consideration. But, I’m thinking that touching it or not isn’t something we can choose now,” Chu Feng said with faint smile.

At first, Lan Xi was still very confused by Chu Feng’s words. But, when the formation laid by a Royal-cloak World Spiritist started to unceasingly rise up and down, all the while emitting blinding light, Lan Xi’s complexion finally shifted.

“Now, everyone out!” Chu Feng said.

But, it seemed to be too late. In the instant the words came out of his mouth, the formation had been thoroughly activated. A radiating gaseous mass surged out of the formation.

The gaseous mass was quite odd. It seemed akin to a boundless mountain range that forced its way towards them.

It also seemed akin to a meteor so large it was indescribable as it crashed down from the sky, about to cast everything into ruin.

Yet, it seemed akin to an enormous wave that touched upon the skies, that covered the heavens and the earth, that engulfed everything.

But the howls... the howls were like beasts from the Ancient Era that had never existed before, all about to rip them into pieces.

That pressure was representing all powerful things possible. Indeed, it was inestimably powerful.

Before such mighty strength, where would Jiang Wushang and the others find the chance to escape? All of them were bound by the pressure. They stood on the spot, trembling, their ability to move stripped away.

This was particularly so for Jiang Wushang. At that moment, his forehead was drenched with sweat, his visage pale. Royal had already appeared on his forehead, but in comparison to what it was usually, the word symbolizing the Royal Bloodline was dim.

Where would one even find any of its former glory? It was like a towering king became an incomparably ordinary commoner; it was very

lowly.

Very soon, Jiang Wushang knelt onto the ground with a whoosh and kowtowed at the golden gaseous mass that was heading his way.

As he knelt, he even said, “Royal Bloodline possessor, Jiang Wushang, has been insolent! I have been presumptuous to offend the might of the Imperial Bloodline! I deserve a thousand deaths, I deserve a thousand deaths!”

whoosh Shortly following that, Lan Xi also knelt onto the ground, and also said the same words as Jiang Wushang, “Royal Bloodline Possessor, Lan Xi, has been insolent! I have been presumptuous to offend the might of the Imperial Bloodline! I deserve a thousand deaths, I deserve a thousand deaths!”

Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows when he saw that, thinking, “So Lan Xi also had a Royal Bloodline. No wonder she was rather informed in the matters of the Imperial Bloodline.”

In a situation such as that, Chu Feng also discovered that the Imperial Bloodline had an enormous influence towards those who had a Royal Bloodline—it controlled them deep down in their souls.

But, at the same time, he also wanted to know whether the power within his body was the power of a bloodline.

At that very instant, everyone was in a ruined state due to the oppression of the gaseous mass. But even as they lost control of their emotions, Chu Feng remained as tranquil as he was since the beginning. Not only were the six lightnings in this body unmoving—still in dormant—even the three in his blood were not affected at all.

That meant his body simply wasn’t affected by the Imperial Bloodline. More precisely, the lightning in his body wasn’t affected by the Imperial Bloodline.

ta Upon realizing such a thing, Chu Feng quickly took several steps ahead, walking up to Jiang Wushang and the others. Moreover, with a thought, he spread out his own pressure, veiling it over the others.

Indeed, pressure, not a Spirit Formation. He did so because he felt in a situation like the current one, his unique pressure would perhaps be of greater assistance to them.

"This... What happened to me?" As expected, when Chu Feng's pressure shrouded over the crowd, Jiang Wushang's and Lan Xi's body trembled. They immediately regained clarity within their awarenesses, and they expressed confusion over their actions of kneeling on the ground.

"Chu Feng!" But at that moment, Su Rou and Su Me cried out simultaneously.

Such a shout caught both Jiang Wushang's and Lan Xi's attention. They quickly traced Su Rou's and Su Mei's gaze, and raised their heads. Only then did they discover an extremely terrifying gaseous mass pouring towards them.

The quivering Royal Bloodline in his body clearly told Jiang Wushang that the horrifying golden gaseous mass was the Imperial Bloodline he painstakingly searched for and dreamt for.

However, at that moment, the Imperial Bloodline's effect on them was negligible. The reason for that was because there stood a person before them. It was that person who blocked all of the bloodline's effect, and that person was none other than Chu Feng.

"Big Brother Chu Feng!" Suddenly, Jiang Wushang's expression greatly changed as he hysterically shouted.

The Royal Bloodline in his body told him that the Imperial Bloodline was enraged. It was enraged by Chu Feng's actions, and it was going to punish Chu Feng for that. It was going to attack Chu Feng with the power of the Imperial Bloodline. A calamity had crashed into Chu Feng, and he was now standing on the border of life and death.

Chapter 752: Divine Lightning Awakening

It was truly as if the Imperial Bloodline had intelligence. It actually thought that Chu Feng was challenging it.

At that very instant, the entire Imperial Bloodline's gaseous mass was churning. With it came incomparably ferocious might as it pressed its way towards Chu Feng. It was akin to an ancient Fierce Beast, and it seemed that it wished to tear Chu Feng into pieces.

As he faced such berserk power, honestly speaking, if Chu Feng said he wasn't afraid, that would be nonsense.

After all, as a World Spiritist, he was able to deeply sense how strong that thing was. Not to mention him, even an existence at the peak of the Martial Lord realm might not be able to block the attack from the Imperial Bloodline.

But, at that very instant, he could not retreat. He could only stand before Jiang Wushang and the others because if he left, they were most definitely dead.

Besides, Chu Feng had some confidence. He felt that the Divine Lightning in his body, whether it was an Inherited Bloodline or not, was stronger than the Imperial Bloodline.

If the master of the Imperial Bloodline was still there, then there was not much he could do. After all, the master could use its own intelligence to control the power of the bloodline and thus take care of Chu Feng.

However, at that very instant, the Imperial Bloodline clearly lacked that sort of mind. It relied completely on itself to attack. Hence, Chu Feng felt that the Divine Lightning in his body would likely be able to suppress the Imperial Bloodline.

aooo

Indeed, just as the Imperial Bloodline was about to collide into him, the nine huge lightning beasts in Chu Feng's body suddenly awakened.

At that instant, an aura alien to this world surged out of Chu Feng's

body. As that was happening, a deafening roar exploded inside.

boom After the sound of the roar resounded completely, the Imperial Bloodline that was about to crash into him scattered in all directions. Even as it did, it let out a timid sound, as though it were frightened.

“What’s this?” Jiang Wushang and the others weren’t able to hear the roar inside Chu Feng, nor were they able to feel the chaotically powerful aura in Chu Feng’s body. They could, however, see that the horrifying Imperial Bloodline seemed to be scared.

Scared by whom? It was obviously Chu Feng! As a result, they, who were initially terrified, couldn’t help widening their mouths, not believing the scene before their eyes.

But just as everyone stared out confusedly trying to figure out what exactly was happening, the boundless Imperial Bloodline started to congregate, and then, condensed into a figure.

It was a middle-aged man. His long hair spread over his shoulders and fluttered despite the lack of wind. He wore a set of armour and had a very extraordinary demeanor.

The appearance of the armour was the exact same as the one the bones on the throne wore. Moreover, at that moment, it was shining with golden radiance. Without a doubt, it was an image made by the Imperial Bloodline; but something irrefutable was that the image had intelligence.

It was standing in the air at that moment, and tightly staring at Chu Feng with his eagle-like eyes. They were full of astonishment, but if one gazed with greater detail, they would discover a hint of fear concealed beneath his astonished eyes. A hint of a very strong fear.

“What is your name?” Suddenly, the middle-aged man spoke.

“This Junior is Chu Feng. Senior, if I may I ask, are you the master of this place?” Chu Feng first politely clasped his hands together, then asked.

“Your surname is Chu?” The man lightly knitted his brows after hearing Chu Feng’s words, then deeply pondered.

"Senior, do you know the people from my Chu family?" he asked quickly when he saw such a reaction. He asked him that question because that man did indeed possess the Imperial Bloodline, so he very likely came from the Holy Land of Martialism, and possibly also knew his background.

However, disappointing Chu Feng, the man shook his head after hearing his question, and asked, "You opened the formations I laid?"

"Senior, the formations you laid were indeed opened by me," Chu Feng said truthfully.

"Impressive. But sadly, the Imperial Bloodline I left behind and put all my heart into while alive is completely useless to you. I'm thinking that you want to give my Imperial Bloodline to those two people, right?" The middle-aged man cast his gaze at Jiang Wushang and Lan Xi. Obviously, he knew who they were.

"This..." Chu Feng was a bit hesitant; he didn't know how to reply.

He knew that man was most likely the person who killed all the Monstrous Beasts. Also, he had passed away already. The image left behind now was no more than a fragment of his soul. To Chu Feng, it was not threatening in any way. And since that fragment of a soul was appearing before him currently, it would also completely disappear after a short while.

Which would mean even if Chu Feng and the others didn't do anything, since the man was already dead, the awareness he left behind would disappear immediately as well. The only thing remaining would be his Imperial Bloodline.

Truthfully, the Imperial Bloodline was left behind so others could obtain it. But, at present, the man's soul was still there. It wasn't too great if they said they came just for his bloodline.

"There's no need to be embarrassed about anything. The reason why I put so much effort in leaving the power of my bloodline behind is because I intended it for a person fated in the Eastern Sea Region." The man seemed to have seen through Chu Feng's thoughts as he suddenly smiled

lightly.

"Then Senior, can you bestow your Imperial Bloodline to my friend? To him, your bloodline is really too important," Chu Feng requested quickly.

"To be honest, when I left behind my bloodline, it was because I didn't want a termination in its inheritance. I hoped that one person could receive my power and continue passing it down, so my many years of cultivation wouldn't have gone to waste.

"But, thinking back and forth, if I just gave my bloodline to a certain person, it would be too easy for that person.

"So, that's why I laid this formation. It was to find a qualified person to receive this Imperial Bloodline. No matter how long I awaited, it would not matter, so long as that person was sufficiently qualified.

"But, sadly, the fated person I painstakingly waited for had something even more powerful than my Imperial Bloodline.

"My Imperial Bloodline wouldn't be of any assistance to you, and the thing in your body wouldn't even allow my bloodline to enter.

"However, the two of them want my Imperial Bloodline, but are simply not qualified enough." A hint of a bitter smile emerged onto the man's face as he spoke, then he said with a sigh, "I meticulously laid this formation, left behind a portion of my soul, and bitterly waited for several thousands of years. Finally, in came the person who was able to break through my formation.

"But it mattered not, as to him, my Imperial Bloodline wasn't suitable for his body.

"How pitiful, how tragic!

"Whatever, whatever. Since you are the one who broke through this formation, and since you have the heart to make others happy, I don't mind helping you out.

"I will use my final awareness to lead the Imperial Bloodline into your friend's body. But, my Imperial Bloodline can only be bestowed upon a

single person. Out of the two, you can only choose one. You must make a decision."

"Wushang." That decision was not difficult, so Chu Feng cast his gaze at Jiang Wushang.

"Junior Jiang Wushang pays his respects to Senior." Jiang Wushang quickly went up, immediately knelt, and bowed at the image.

"Jiang Wushang, huh? Then in that case, we are interestingly related..." After hearing Jiang Wushang's name, the grievance on the man's face was diminished by quite an amount. After meaningfully looking at Chu Feng, he said to Jiang Wushang, "Boy, you really do have a good brother."

hmm After speaking, the man's outline flashed, turning into a strand of bright golden light, and bore straight into Jiang Wushang's chest.

Chapter 753: A Request

"Ahhh—"

When the bloodline entered his body, Jiang Wushang immediately let out a painful cry. It was a very powerful cry, even more unpleasant than a pig wailing to death.

But, that couldn't be blamed on him. After the Imperial Bloodline entered his body, everyone could tell that change was occurring throughout his entire body, both internally and externally.

That was, however, good change. Not only was the Royal on his forehead not dim and lacking light, it instead became extremely bright. In the end, it started changing, from Royal to Imperial.

As that word transformed, Jiang Wushang's entire demeanor transformed completely as well. Even this aura started to rapidly soar.

Such a change lasted for a good while before it gradually faded away. When Jiang Wushang's body stopped changing, his aura had risen two levels in succession. It was actually the same as Zhang Tianyi's—the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

"Brother Wushang, congratulations on obtaining the Imperial Bloodline! From now on, it seems that it'll be my turn to try and catch up to you. Haha!" Zhang Tianyi walked up and congratulated Jiang Wushang.

"Brother Wushang, congratulations, congratulations!" Su Rou and Su Mei also went up to congratulate.

"The Imperial Bloodline... You must be the only person in the Eastern Sea Region who has it! But, I wonder whether this is fortune or misfortune. If this were to be known, you will definitely receive great resources from the academy.

"At the same time, however, you will also become a figure that will be hunted down by clans that possess Inherited Bloodlines in the Eastern Sea Region since they always desire your Imperial Bloodline.

“So, regarding the matter of you obtaining the Imperial Bloodline in the Millennium Ancient City, it’s best to give it a long consideration. To announce it or to keep it a secret requires detailed contemplation.” Even Lan Xi walked over. But, she did not congratulate him; instead, she gave him a reminder.

Jiang Wushang’s brows furrowed after hearing Lan Xi’s words because that was indeed something that had its advantages and disadvantages.

“Since there are people willing to channel resources into you, it should be, naturally, taken advantage of. Otherwise, wouldn’t it be a waste of a chance?

“In addition, the Four Seas Academy is not a fool. Unless absolutely necessary, there is no need for them to announce that there is a disciple with an Imperial Bloodline in their academy, because it will only attract hatred to itself.

“Thus, I feel that so long as the Four Seas Academy has a slight bit of intelligence, they would secretly develop my Brother Wushang.

“Besides, even if this is known, as long as he safely cultivates inside the Four Seas Academy, which clan would come to the Four Seas Academy and look for trouble?” Just at that moment, Chu Feng spoke. His words dissolved the worry in Jiang Wushang’s heart, and gave him a direction he could choose.

“Brother Wushang, has your body gotten used to it? Do you feel uncomfortable anywhere?” In comparison to the future matters though, Chu Feng was more concerned about Jiang Wushang’s current state.

“There is nothing wrong, I feel very good. I haven’t felt this good ever before.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, I will never forget the great favour and kindness you have given to me! No matter what you want me to do or be, I—”

“If you’re a brother, don’t say words like these, otherwise I’ll get mad!” Before letting Jiang Wushang finish his words, Chu Feng cut him off. The reason he helped Jiang Wushang was because of their brotherly feelings,

not because he begged him to.

"Junior Chu Feng, from what you've said, he should show his cards to the Four Seas Academy? But what should be said to them?" Zhang Tianyi went up and asked.

"That's quite easy. You just need to slightly change the truth, and all of us will say the same thing. But, it means that this matter must be spoken to the higher-ups of the Four Seas Academy." Chu Feng looked at Jiang Wushang, and asked, "Do you feel that your instructor is trustable?"

"Yes. My instructor treats me very well. He is absolutely worth my trust," replied Jiang Wushang.

"Then great. Just tell this to your instructor immediately after leaving this place. Also, regarding Wang Long and the others, we must also find an excuse."

Afterwards, Chu Feng weaved a fake story—which was a slight distortion of how Jiang Wushang obtained the Imperial Bloodline within the Millennium Ancient City, and how Wang Long and the others were met with "misfortune"—cleansing them of their relation to the highest degree.

As Lan Xi looked at how Chu Feng, who was nearly the youngest here, carefully arranged everything and became their backbones, a complicated expression emerged from her eyes. Chu Feng was very impressive, she discovered. Putting aside his strength, his thoughts were far above hers as well.

She would also not forget what the middle-aged man said just now: Within Chu Feng's body, there was something even more powerful than the Imperial Bloodline.

After, Chu Feng and the others left. When they returned to the palace full of Monstrous Beast corpses, they saw that the closed exit was now open.

However, as they left the core of the Millennium Ancient City and returned to the ruined ancient city, they discovered the large door opened

by the Spirit Formation key didn't seem to have any intention of closing. Rather, it appeared it was going to remain eternally open.

That coincided with Chu Feng's predictions. He had already thought it wouldn't close, so that was why he planned to have Jiang Wushang speak of him obtaining the Imperial Bloodline—because he knew it couldn't be hidden.

Chu Feng had also included everything that happened inside within his already woven lies.

When Chu Feng and the others left the Millennium Ancient City and after telling the Four Seas Academy their prepared deception, the higher-ups of the Four Seas Academy were shocked. They instantly organized a group of top-ranked elders to enter the Millennium Ancient City for a thorough investigation.

At that moment, within the palace full of Monstrous Beast corpses, near a hundred powerful Four Seas Academy elders were dumbfounded by the enormous bodies that filled the palace.

The head of the elders was the head of the Ten Divine Instructors, Taikou.

"Lord Taikou, those disciples said the Monstrous Beasts here were killed by a single Consciousness. Do you think that is true?" said an elder, whose strength was one of the strongest, after some inspection. He was asking Taikou for guidance.

Although he, and a few other elders with him, had the highest status and strength in the Four Seas Academy, they could only lower their heads when they stood before Taikou. The final say on all matters was Taikou's decision.

"The core of this Millennium Ancient City has been sealed away for many years, but because of those children, it's been opened. It is no longer significant what exactly happened here. What is important, however, is that those children who has survived must be carefully developed.

“Also, this is all classified information! Other than the Lord Academy Head, do not mention this to anyone else. If I learn that someone leaks this information, I will execute them, no exceptions!” Taikou said, emphasizing every single word. His tone was full of might that forced all to obey him.

“Yes sir!” Which elder would dare to go against Taikou’s orders? All of them unhesitantly replied, and firmly remembered they could not spread any related information. Otherwise, they would most definitely die very miserably.

Chu Feng and the others knew not much about the events occurring within the Millennium Ancient City. And, in the days that passed, they too were completely exhausted. So, they all returned to their respective residential areas. Since the Four Seas Academy wasn’t their home, as a disciple of the Four Seas Academy, some rules had to be followed. For example, they could not loiter too long in others’ territories. Thus, they had to return to their own residences.

As for Chu Feng, who held Taikou’s badge and was most free in moving about, he didn’t have any place to rest. So, he headed towards Taikou’s residence.

He did so for no other reason but to thank the senior he met by chance. And, he also had a request.

Chapter 754: Su Mei in Trouble

Chu Feng arrived at Taikou's residence, but discovered he wasn't there.

However, a note was hung on his door. On it wrote: "If Chu Feng comes to visit, please wait for a few hours."

Although Chu Feng didn't know where Taikou went, Taikou clearly knew Chu Feng would come and find him. Since Taikou had told him to wait, then naturally, he didn't have much of a choice on the matter since he had a request for Taikou. So, he sat down, cross-legged, and awaited Taikou outside his simple grass house.

However, such a wait was not as simple as several hours. Chu Feng had waited an entire night, straight until morning, then to noon, then to afternoon, but Taikou had yet to return.

Even so, Chu Feng didn't move at all. He swore to wait for Taikou, so he would not leave.

It was because he prepared to leave the Four Seas Academy after asking Taikou a request.

Although there were still a few days until the arranged battle with the three disciples of the Four Protectors, he couldn't be certain whether the arranged battle was real or fake. So it would be better to head over early to familiarize himself with the general situation.

Due to that, he prepared to see Taikou, then meet up with Su Rou and the others, then leave the Four Seas Academy.

"Haha, I'm sorry Chu Feng! I had some things I needed to handle just now; I've made you wait." Suddenly, a rather shameful voice rang out behind Chu Feng. Turning his head around, it was Taikou.

That made Chu Feng a bit surprised. Even with his current strength, Taikou was able to appear behind him without making a single sound, and without him knowing. It could be seen that the old man truly had quite a level of strength.

"Senior Taikou, you are truly too polite. I have actually not waited for

long." Chu Feng hurriedly stood up and bowed to Taikou. Ever since Taikou helped him out with the trouble outside the Millennium Ancient City, Chu Feng had a much greater impression of Taikou.

"Mm? Didn't you come to this place immediately after leaving the Millennium Ancient City?" Taikou said with a smile, as if he had already seen through Chu Feng.

"I..." Chu Feng was a bit speechless. He felt that Taikou knew some things.

"Haha, Chu Feng, you must have business with me, right?" said Taikou straightforwardly. The difference between the attitude he treated Chu Feng and others was like the distance between heaven and earth.

"Senior, we met merely by coincidence, but the assistance you've given me is something I can never repay back. I've come here today mainly to give you my thanks, senior. In the future, if there is anything you need my help with, I will definitely do my best to help you, in order to repay the favours you've given me." As Chu Feng spoke, he bowed once again to Taikou. It was gratitude he felt from the bottom of his heart.

"Haha, it's quite easy if you want to repay me. Just become my disciple!" Taikou said with a smile.

"This..." When he heard those words, Chu Feng's face flushed because he truly didn't know how to reply.

Logically speaking, with his strength, Taikou was qualified to become Chu Feng's master. Also, Taikou has shown him favour, so it was not forbidden to have him as a master.

After all, a person having multiple masters wasn't some unvirtuous and immoral action. As long as the master was willing to, there was no problem.

But, that didn't matter since Chu Feng didn't like having new masters too casually. To him, the meaning of a master was something unordinary, it was something significant; one did not simply just decide to have a new master and did so thus.

“Haha, okay, I won’t make things difficult for you.

“Listen: I helped you because you’ve left good impressions on me. I chose to do that myself; I did so completely willingly. So, you have no need to worry.

“Though, there was one thing I do want to ask you. I wonder if you can reply truthfully?” said Taikou with a smile.

“Senior Taikou, please ask,” Chu Feng said.

“Can you tell me the truth on what occurred within the Millennium Ancient City?

“Don’t worry, I will keep this a secret. It’s just that I don’t like being deceived, so I want to know the facts of what happened,” said Taikou with a smile. However, his eyes, surrounded by wrinkles, emitted glints of intelligence.

“Senior, if you were another person, I have indeed prepared to not speak the truth. But, to you, I have no need to hide it.” Chu Feng had actually prepared already to speak the truth prior to coming here.

Afterwards, Chu Feng told everything that happened in the Millennium Ancient City to Taikou in detail, including that he was the one who killed Wang Long and the others, and that he was the one who solved the formations in the Millennium Ancient City. He pretty much left nothing hidden, other than the fact that he relied on the Divine Lightning in his body to force the Imperial Bloodline to yield.

He did so because to Chu Feng, the secret of the Divine Lightning was extremely important. Unless absolutely necessary, Chu Feng didn’t want outsiders to know.

After hearing Chu Feng’s narration, the expression on Taikou’s face was a bit shocked. When he looked at Chu Feng, his gaze was more admirative. Only after quite a while did he say, “Quite unexpectedly, your abilities are stronger than my expectations. You’ve actually opened the formations of the Millennium Ancient City with your own strength, and even helped your friend obtain the Imperial Bloodline.

“You are truly a genius; I’ve indeed not been mistaken. But sadly, you really aren’t willing to take me as your master… Whatever, what I hate the most is to force others into difficult situations.”

“Senior Taikou, thank you for understanding.

“It’s just that… My brother, Jiang Wushang, he possesses the Imperial Bloodline right now, and I’m afraid others will harm him. So, Senior Taikou, I hope you can take care of him a bit,” said Chu Feng, requesting. That was the thing he wanted to ask Taikou.

“Don’t worry, since they are your friends, even if you don’t say anything I would have still taken care of them. No matter if it’s those two boys, or those two girls, as long as I, Taikou, am here, no one will harm them in the Four Seas Academy.

“But, on that topic, there is truly a person at present who harbours malicious intents towards one of your friends. I wonder… would you like me to take care of it for you, or will you do so personally?” said Taikou while smiling.

“Senior Taikou, who exactly is planning to harm my friend? Please tell me.” Chu Feng’s heart immediately tensed up when he heard those words as he quickly followed with a question.

“It’s a brat whose nerves could cover the sky. Not only does he not know repent, he clings onto hatred and is planning to make a move on that girl Su Mei. As for who it is, I’m sure you already know. And, if I’m not mistaken, he should have already arrived at that girl’s residence,” said Taikou.

“Senior, thank you for the warning.” Chu Feng’s expression, which was usually calm, involuntarily changed. The sweat on his forehead immediately seeped out, and without saying anything more, he turned around and prepared to leave.

From Taikou’s words, he had already learnt of how serious that matter was. The person who was making a move on Su Mei was clearly Qin Yu. He recalled that Qin Yu was in the same league as Wang Long; they were people of the same mind.

And also recalling the lewd expression Qin Yu looked at Su Mei with, Chu Feng had a premonition on what despicable thing Qin Yu was about to do. He clearly failed with the “soft” method, and was currently using the “hard” method.

At that instant, Chu Feng really did reach the extremities of fury. Su Mei was different from Lan Xi—she was his fiancée. He hadn’t even really touched her, yet Qin Yu already had thoughts? It was unacceptable, and his overwhelming bloodlust uncontrollably emanated outward.

“Ahh, if you hurry like this you may not even reach in time. Let me help you out.” Taikou though, he laughed when he looked at Chu Feng’s nervous and angry expression, as if he had expected it.

As he spoke, he flung his big sleeve, and in a mere instant, Chu Feng and he disappeared.

Chapter 755: Detailed Plan

Su Mei's place of residence was filled with structures that suited a girl's taste. To describe that place required only two words: beauty, and aesthetics.

At that moment, the little beauty Su Mei was sitting in her room. Since all the servants in her residence were female, her current clothing was very casual as well.

A pink long skirt and loose clothes not only exposed her snow-white shoulders, it also exposed half of her round twin peaks. It had to be said that Su Mei really did grow up. The firm and round bulges before her chest were very close to their exact shapes. If a man were to see that, their body would heat up from desire, and they would find it hard to control themselves.

Normally, Su Mei wouldn't wear such revealing clothes. Only when she prepared to rest would she do so, because wearing looser clothes were more comfortable.

"Little Red, was there anyone who came looking for me today?" Su Mei asked a servant in front of her.

"Master, no one came looking for you today," replied the servant respectfully.

"He still hasn't come, huh?" Su Mei's curved and slender brows involuntarily knitted. A pair of eyes as enchanting as a river of stars glinted with worry.

Chu Feng clearly told her to rest peacefully in her own place, that he would quickly look for her. A day had passed since they split up from the Millennium Ancient City, yet Chu Feng hadn't returned. She couldn't help worrying due to that.

But, thinking more carefully, Chu Feng had Taikou's badge, and in addition, she had seen Chu Feng's current strength. Within the Four Seas Academy, there shouldn't be anyone who could harm Chu Feng. As a

result, she was not as worried as before, and continued to painstakingly wait.

For a restless little girl like her, waiting for a lover who had yet to arrive was indeed a type of suffering.

“Little Red, you changed the incense?” Suddenly, Su Mei sniffed a few times, then asked the servant.

“Master, I...” The servant’s expression changed greatly after hearing that question. Not only was it bursting with fear, she even knelt onto the ground with a whoosh, as if she committed some horrible crime.

But when Su Mei saw the servant acting in such a way, she sweetly smiled and said, “What are you doing? Although I told you to not to change the incense in my room without my permission, I’m not blaming you or anything. You don’t have to be so afraid, so quickly rise!”

As she spoke, Su Mei walked up and wanted to personally pull the servant up.

Tears poured like rain from the servant’s eyes when she saw Su Mei treat her so well. While crying, she said, “Master, I’ve let you down, but I really have no choice! If I don’t do this, not only will I not keep my own life, my whole family will be struck with a disaster!”

“Little Red, what happened? Is there a person bullying your family? Who? You can tell me! I’ll back you up,” Su Mei furiously asked. Her brows inverted when she heard that, and she even thought her servant was being bullied.

“Sorry, sorry...” But not only was Little Red unwilling to reply, she was unwilling to stand. She kept on kneeling on the spot, and kept on silently crying.

ta Just as Su Mei felt confusion as to what exactly happened to Little Red, she suddenly felt a bit dizzy. Her entire body heated up, and an odd feeling was born in her heart.

Although Su Mei usually had pure heart, she was no fool. After feeling something off with herself, she quickly searched for the reason. Soon, she

cast her eyes onto the incense in the room.

whoosh Stretching out, she grabbed the incense and held it near her. Examining it carefully, she immediately turned enraged. After destroying the incense with a palm, she furiously shouted at the servant, “Little Red, you! You drugged me!”

“Sorry, sorry...” The servant didn’t deny Su Mei’s accusation, and only cried even louder.

“Dammit!” Su Mei didn’t even bother with that servant anymore because she discovered that the poison had entered her body already, and was currently creating problems from within.

She first consumed an antidote, then quickly opened the room’s door. She wanted to leave and ask for help.

However, in the instant Su Mei opened the door, a man’s figure was standing there. Not only did he block her path, he was even looking at her with his wicked gaze.

“You? What you are doing in my residence?” Su Mei was greatly surprised when she saw that person. As she backed away, she tidied up her skirt and covered her snow-white shoulders. That man was a well-known person in the Four Seas Academy, Qin Yu.

Su Mei dreaded that Qin Yu quite a bit. He had expressed his affection for her, but she herself had clearly rejected him.

Yet, Qin Yu shamelessly continued his confessions. That put Su Mei in a very difficult situation because with his position and status in the Four Seas Academy, even her master could do nothing to him. She could only endure, again and again.

At that moment, she was poisoned by some unknown substance, and now, Qin Yu suddenly appeared inside her residence. She didn’t have a chance to notify anyone about the poison; she had a bad feeling about what was happening.

“Hehe, my little beauty. The clothing you’re wearing today is truly quite attracting. Could it be... that you knew I was going to join you here, so you

made such preparations?"

When he saw Su Mei, whose face was a bit red and eyes were a bit dazed, not only did Qin Yu's eyes shine, saliva even started flowing out of the corners of his mouth. A pair of wicked eyes kept on glancing all over Su Mei's body.

"Senior Qin Yu, I don't understand what you're saying. I have an urgent matter and I need to leave. Please make way." Su Mei acted as if she didn't know what was happening, and as she spoke, she was going to force her way out.

"Ahh, my beauty. Where do you want to go? How about I carry you there?"

However, how could Qin Yu let Su Mei go after such detailed planning? He extended his arms and covered the entire width of the door. As he looked at the servant, he even said, "Why are you still here? Get out! Remember, do not let anyone enter. If someone disturbs my perfect occasion, your entire family will pay for it with death."

And the servant of course didn't dare to hesitate in any way. She rose, and walked out.

whoosh Su Mei understood everything when she saw that. As she suspected, it was Qin Yu who threatened her close servant, forcing her to poison Su Mei, and wanted to make his move on Su Mei. So, Su Mei leaped forward, flying towards the window of the room. She wanted to escape the mouth of the tiger.

bang However, she had clearly arrived at the window, and already saw the scenery outside, yet as if she collided into a steel wall, Su Mei bounced back and roughly fell onto the ground.

"My beauty, where are you going? Do you think you can escape?" At that moment, Qin Yu's shameless voice rang out again behind Su Mei.

Turning her head, Su Mei's face changed greatly. At that moment, Qin Yu had already stripped away his clothes and revealed his bare body in front of her.

Su Mei quickly turned her head back upon glancing at that scene, no longer daring to look. She furiously shouted, “Qin Yu, if you dare to perform such immoral acts on me, Chu Feng will definitely not forgive you!”

“Hahahaha! Chu Feng?

“That brat who relies on Taikou’s badge?

“It seems that you have quite a close relationship with him! But sadly, your Chu Feng will not come and save you.

“Even if he dares to come and save you, I will have him kneel before me, and force him to look as I push you down—while remaining completely helpless.

“I will take his woman; what can he do? Who does he think he is without Taikou? He wants to fight with me, Qin Yu? He is not worthy!” Qin Yu’s complexion also changed instantly when he heard the two words “Chu Feng” as it surged with incomparable hatred and resentment.

Chapter 756: The Enraged Chu Feng

“Shut up! You think you’re comparable to Chu Feng? He’s over a million times stronger than you!

“No, to be more precise, he is a person beyond all persons, but you... you aren’t even worthy to be a person.” When she heard Qin Yu talk of Chu Feng, Su Mei instantly became furious. Without caring about anything else, she started cursing Qin Yu.

Not only did Su Mei defend the person he detested, she even cursed himself in such a way. When he heard all that, the usually narrow-minded Qin Yu also felt furious.

But, when he saw Su Mei’s fair skin becoming redder and redder and the quickening rising and falling of her chest, he forcefully suppressed his anger, and even smugly roared with laughter. He then said shamelessly, “Curse me! Do your best to curse me! It seems that you truly like him, but so what?

“From today on, you will be mine. So what if your heart belongs to him? Your body is fated to belong to me.

“How do you feel, Little Mei? Do you feel very hot, very itching, very wanting?

“No matter, don’t hold yourself back. Your brother Qin Yu I can satisfy everything you desire.”

“You want my body? Are you dreaming?” Su Mei coldly snorted. Then, she suddenly raised her palm, and slammed it at her head. In order to preserve her chastity, she was going to commit suicide.

bam However, before allowing Su Mei’s palm to contact her head, Qin Yu waved his sleeve and the palm instead landed onto Su Mei’s face. It not only prevented Su Mei’s suicide attempt, it even thrown her into the air.

A bright red palm print was left on Su Mei’s beautiful face, but not only that, the powerful force even made a trickle of blood flow out of the corner of her mouth.

“Hmph. You want to commit suicide? Don’t even try!

“But, I won’t force you; I’ll just wait here. After the drug starts its effect, you will beg me yourself. Hahaha...”

Qin Yu actually pulled over a chair and sat down as he was speaking. He repressed his lust, and as he stared at Su Mei who lay nearby, he waited for the drug in Su Mei’s body to do its work.

boom But just at that moment, the closed door suddenly shattered into pieces. Quickly after, a person flew into the room.

“It’s you?” Qin Yu couldn’t help being taken aback when he saw the newcomer. He instantly recognized who the person was: Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng!” Su Mei’s tears rolled down her face when she saw Chu Feng. She immediately climbed up and jumped into his embrace; her sobbing was truly full of grievance.

“Little Mei, sorry. I’ve come late, I’ve let you suffer.” Chu Feng carried Su Mei to the bed. When he saw the palm print on the side of her face, as well as the blood by the corner of her mouth, it made his heart ache.

“No, no I haven’t. I am here for you. Other than you, no other man should even think of touching me. Even if I die, he should not,” said Su Mei unyieldingly.

“Little Mei, rest well. Let me handle the rest.” Chu Feng used his hand to wipe away the blood on the corner of Su Mei’s mouth, then he slowly rose, and cast his gaze at the nearby Qin Yu, who already removed his clothes and was bare.

Currently, Chu Feng appeared very calm on the surface. No matter if it was his complexion, or his eyes, it was as if he were someone completely unrelated.

But, no one knew what sort of explosive fury and bloodlust surged within his body. If one could see such a thing, even an extremely brave person would be completely terrified, so much their minds would be ruined. Even their souls would completely scatter.

As for Qin Yu, he clearly didn't realize anything was wrong. Instead, he quickly used his World Spiritist techniques and sealed that area. Then, he looked at Su Mei with a smile, and said, "I didn't think Chu Feng would truly come. This is perfect, I'll bring the words I just said into reality.

"I'll have him kneel, then have him watch as I force you beneath me while he is powerless to do anything! Hahaha!"

"Which hand did you use to hit Little Mei just now?" Chu Feng ignored Qin Yu's shouts and indifferently spoke.

"Why does it matter which hand I used? What can you do to me? I not only hit her, I will even get on top of her, and do it in front of you," said Qin Yu conceitedly, as if he were bragging to Chu Feng.

bang However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's eyes lit up, and berserk energy burst out of his body.

It was the three lightning. Three different colours of lightning were currently swirling around Chu Feng's body. His hair as well as his clothes fluttered everywhere and erupted with sound.

The most important thing, though, was that Chu Feng's current eyes no longer seemed human. They seemed more akin to heartless beasts as they emitted the light of the three lightnings.

An extremely horrifying aura emanated outward from Chu Feng. It instantly engulfed the entire room, and even Qin Yu, who planned to embarrass Chu Feng and had a face of complacency, changed his expression greatly.

He dumbfoundedly discovered strength far more powerful on Chu Feng's body. Under the veil of Chu Feng's aura, even his own strength was completely suppressed.

At that very instant, he saw an illusion: The person who was standing in front of him simply wasn't a person, but an extremely cold-hearted and incomparably cruel monster.

"Wha-what the hell are you?!" Qin Yu pointed at Chu Feng and spoke those words with his trembling voice. He was truly afraid. He had never

even seen a person—though, to be more precise, the person before his eyes simply wasn't a person—like him before.

"Was it this hand?" Suddenly, Chu Feng made his move. He instantly arrived in front of Qin Yu, and before he had the chance to react, Chu Feng had grabbed Qin Yu's wrist.

bzzz In the instant Chu Feng grabbed Qin Yu wrist, three lightnings burst out of his body. They transformed into countless lightning snakes and bore into Qin Yu's palm.

"AHH~~~~~" At that instant, Qin Yu's complexion twisted completely. He widened his mouth, and let out an extremely excruciating cry.

After the lightnings entered his body, it started tearing his flesh, ripping his muscles, engulfing his bones.

Directly before his eyes, his palm was being torn up, ripped up, and bit by bit, it was disappearing from his view. More importantly than that, as his hand was being burned up, he was feeling pain that he never felt ever before.

That pain was akin to millions of insects gnawing it, and innumerable sharp blades cutting it. Every single cut tore his heart, and the pain made him wish he were dead.

"Bastard, let me go!" Qin Yu panicked. He completely panicked because he felt that the person in front of him was akin to a demon that had no emotions. What awaited him was cruel torture, so he started to do his best to struggle as he attempted to escape that demon's grasp.

sii Finally, Qin Yu flung away Chu Feng's hand. But, before he even took several steps back, he felt a flesh-tearing pain from his shoulder.

When he looked back at Chu Feng, Qin Yu's visage became as pale as paper. There lacked any traces of blood, and his eyes were filled with endless fear.

He discovered to his surprise that Chu Feng still had his wrist in his hand. However, that wrist was not connected to his body. It was connected to a bloody torn arm.

When he looked back at his shoulder, blood was spurting out. It wasn't that he got rid of Chu Feng, it was that his arm was ripped away by Chu Feng.

Chapter 757: Bloodthirsty Demon

At that instant, the lightning surrounding his body jumped about and kept on making bzzz sounds.

As his long, black hair fluttered about in chaos, his eyes could be seen. The eerie glint it emitted was the combination of the three lightnings.

However, what the eyes emitted was iciness, heartlessness.

Chu Feng grabbed Qin Yu's broken arm, and slowly raised it. Then, he did something that completely stupefied Qin Yu.

Chu Feng opened his mouth, revealing his ferocious teeth, and bit down. He bit away a big chunk of Qin Yu's torn arm, and started chewing it in his mouth.

Blood started flowing out of Chu Feng's mouth in large amounts, but it wasn't Chu Feng's. It was Qin Yu's. Not only was Chu Feng gnawing on Qin Yu's flesh and blood, he even made a grin. He seemed like a bloodthirsty monster enjoying a rare delicacy.

"You demon!" Qin Yu felt all of his hair stand on end. An indescribable feeling of terror permeated his bones.

It was the first time in his life that he feared a person like that. Without thinking anymore, he turned around, and tried to escape.

"Pah!"

But just at that moment, Chu Feng widened his mouth and a blood-red mass burst out. It was Qin Yu's flesh that he was gnawing on just now.

Most importantly, that ball of flesh, after exiting Chu Feng's mouth, had an extraordinary amount of force. Like an indestructible arrow, it tore through the air, leaving behind a bright red streak, and with a puchi, it pieced into Qin Yu's chest.

"Ahh!" Such powerful force made Qin Yu fall onto the ground and cry out. When he looked at his chest, and discovered a huge cavity there, he almost cried from fright.

If he knew that the cavity was pierced through by a chunk of his own hand, who knew what he would feel.

bang Just at that moment, the hand Chu Feng used to grab Qin Yu's torn arm clenched, and Qin Yu's arm then, after a muffled explosion, broke into pieces.

Following that, Chu Feng walked towards Qin Yu with quick steps, stretched out, and with a ripping sound, forcefully tore Qin Yun's other arm.

"Ahh—" Qin Yu howled from the pain of his arm being torn. The previous one was done when he didn't realize it, but this time, he personally witnessed his arm being torn off. He truly saw the pain in his eyes, and felt the pain in his heart.

However, the surprise still came afterwards. Chu Feng spun Qin Yu's arm with his hand at the end of the arm, then waved it and slammed it towards Qin Yu's face.

bam bam bam bam Sharp sounds such as those kept on resounding. Chu Feng was using Qin Yu's own palm to slap his own face.

Moreover, Chu Feng was very fierce. After only a few slaps, Qin Yu's face was a mash of flesh of blood. After a few more slaps, even his skin and blood on his face were scraped away, and what remained was only eerie white bones.

"Damn you! Continue this, I dare you! I'm not afraid of you!" Qin Yu, who looked absolutely nothing like before, hysterically howled.

puchi But just at that moment, Chu Feng stamped down. Qin Yu's body instantly quivered once, then it completely froze.

It was because Chu Feng's stamp resided upon the root of his life—the thing he used to defile countless women—and it was now crushed by Chu Feng.

"Ahh—" Feeling the thing below flattened, Qin Yu once again let out a howl.

That was not only a howl of pain, it was a howl of fury originating from his heart. He was truly angry. Even though he knew he was facing an extremely terrifying demon, after the thing he took pride in was squashed, his rage also fiercely jumped out.

"Chu Feng, I'll kill you, I'll kill you, I'll definitely kill you! I will kill everyone related to you, or else I will be unable to vent the hatred in my heart!" Qin Yu's words were ones that came from deep inside. He truly hated every single part of Chu Feng, and he really did want to kill Chu Feng's entire family, and eradicate his entire clan.

But, Chu Feng was not the slightest bit afraid of Qin Yu's threats. Instead, he made a hint of a sneer—one of disdain.

gulp After seeing the cold smile on Chu Feng's mouth, Qin Yu's prior arrogance was no more because only then did he realize how idiotic he was.

Before Chu Feng, how was he even qualified to be arrogant? He had to worry not only for his own life, but also his family's lives. Before his very eyes was a true demon!

"Ahhh—" Soon, Qin Yu's miserable cry rang out again, within it contained his desire to die. But, the torture merely only began.

No matter how much more miserable Qin Yu's cries were, there was no one who would save him because the Spirit Formation he himself laid had blocked off everything.

That being said, however, in the sky outside the palace, Taikou was standing within the clouds. His eyes were extremely sharp, even better than an eagle's vision. He was not only able to see everything below, he could even see through the Spirit Formation and everything that Chu Feng did and was doing to Qin Yu.

At that instant, even the mysterious cultivation expert furrowed his brows. There was actually a bit of worry in his eyes. After a long while, he sighed. "What kind of power is in this boy's body? It is simply so immeasurably deep and so unfathomable.

“It even affects his nature. Is there truly a demon inside his body?

“Sigh. It’ll be fine if he walks righteously in the future, but if he walks on the path of evil, I’m afraid all the living in this world will not escape a calamity.”

Chu Feng knew nothing about Taikou’s spying; the fury in his heart had already flooded his reason. Even though Qin Yu had no more signs of life, he didn’t stop.

“Chu Feng!” Only until a voice with anguish sound out did Chu Feng’s eyes light up, returning to their former state.

“Little Mei?” It was Su Mei’s voice that let Chu Feng recover his rationality. At that moment, the lightning on Chu Feng’s body could no longer been seen, and his terrifying aura disappeared simultaneously as well, but the memory from before still remained.

“What happened just now? I seem to have gotten that lightning’s power, but my mind was also affected.” Chu Feng looked at Qin Yu whose sight was unbearable, and couldn’t help sinking into contemplation.

“Chu Feng...” Just at that moment, Su Mei’s voice rang out again.

But this time, it was not only with anguish. There was also seductive panting, and her voice was also accompanied by allure. All in all, it was extremely attracting.

Turning his head around, even Chu Feng couldn’t help inhaling deeply. His eyes also immediately came into focus.

Because Su Mei who was presented before himself was at the peak of her enticing state.

Chapter 758: Curing Poison

At that moment, Su Mei half-lay half-sat on the head of the bed.

Her pretty face, her graceful figure... Beautiful. Really too beautiful.

But what was more alluring was neither her pretty face, nor her fiery figure. It was the sound she was currently making.

“Chu Feng~~” Su Mei called out with her soft and coquettish voice.

Instantly, Chu Feng, whose eyes were focused on her, trembled. The thing beneath him rose immediately.

Chu Feng was no fool—he caught the hints and clearly knew that Su Mei was drugged. Moreover, the poison had spread throughout her body, and Su Mei had gradually lost her control. She was being influenced by the drug’s effects.

But, one had to admit that Su Mei truly was beautiful. She, the usually pure and cute girl, now showed her seductive side. There was truly a different atmosphere about her.

In comparison to Lan Xi back then, Su Mei was over a hundred times better. She was a true beauty—one that needed only a single glance for their heartbeats to quicken and their faces to flush with redness.

Speaking truthfully, saying Chu Feng was not moved by such a scene would be absolute rubbish. Chu Feng really did have the impulse to just let loose, releasing his beastly instincts, and push down this beauty.

However, he still managed to retain some semblance of reason. He suddenly recalled his promise to Su Rou: Before marrying Su Mei, he could not do that sort of thing to her.

“Little Mei, quickly eat this.” As such, Chu Feng not only endured the desire in his heart, he also took out the antidote and brought it before Su Mei.

Seeing the antidote in Chu Feng’s hand, Su Mei was quite cooperative. She opened her pink lips and bit down.

Seeing this, Chu Feng felt a slight bit of joy. He thought, Although Little Mei's current situation is worse than Lan Xi's back then, she still has some rationality. With this, it'll be a bit easier to help Su Mei get rid of the drug.

However, when Su Mei's mouth closed, Chu Feng's mind went blank. He trembled once on the spot; the desire he had suppressed with great difficulty rushed back up again.

It was because Su Mei didn't swallow the antidote on Chu Feng's hand. Instead, she bit down on one of Chu Feng's finger.

That feeling made it itch. It made his heart itch. Hell, it made his whole body itch. It was something he could not resist!

Especially when Su Mei's eyes narrowed into two beautiful crescent shapes, and in addition, her face of content, it made Chu Feng even less able to endure.

But Chu Feng was, after all, a man of his word. He was, after all, a man with a strong mind. So, he resolutely endured it, and said to Su Mei, "Little Mei, you must remain calm. Right now, the poison has permeated your body, so that's why are you acting this way. You cannot let the drug control you; you must dispel it away from your body.

"Behave, don't stir up a mess. Take this antidote. Only by doing so am I able to dispel the poison in your body."

After hearing Chu Feng's words, Su Mei really did loosen her mouth. With her crescent eyes, she stared at Chu Feng and said coquettishly, "Okay, but you have to feed it to me with your mouth, or else I won't."

"This..." Chu Feng was a bit taken aback when he heard those words. He was a bit confused because he didn't know whether Su Mei retained her sanity or not.

"Okay, Chu Feng?" Su Mei shook Chu Feng's hand as she spoke with a seductive and coyly voice.

"Fine." Chu Feng bit down when he saw such an alluring Su Mei. He threw the antidote into his mouth, then, towards Su Mei's pink lips, kissed

her.

At first, Chu Feng truly wanted to feed that antidote to Su Mei, but in the instant his lips contacted Su Mei's, before he could push the antidote into Su Mei's mouth, he felt a slippery and soft object entering his mouth.

Hell, that was Su Mei's soft tongue.

Chu Feng truly wanted to shout out at that instant. As expected, he was tricked. Su Mei simply didn't even plan to take the antidote!

But, Chu Feng was not naive. He actually predicted that. When he agreed to Su Mei's request, he had made two decisions.

First: if Su Mei obediently took the antidote, he would naturally cure Su Mei with his full strength.

Second: if Su Mei didn't plan to take the antidote—as she was at present—what damn poison was Chu Feng curing? What promise was he abiding by?

If it were another person, then whatever. But, this was his woman—the fiancée that deeply loved him, whom he deeply loved as well! Since she was so forward with her attempts, as a man, if he continued holding himself back, that would rather not be too proper.

So, without caring whether "three times seven was twenty-one" or not—without caring what was truth and what wasn't—he swung his neck to the side, and got rid of Su Mei's tangling lips and soft tongue.

Su Mei was taken aback by Chu Feng's action. She even thought Chu Feng didn't like what she was doing, so she couldn't help but feel a bit shameful and embarrassed. But soon, she realized she was thinking too much.

"Pah!" Chu Feng spat, ejecting the antidote onto the ground. Then, he turned around, and when he looked again at Su Mei, his eyes lit up and like a hungry wolf, he bit Su Mei's tender and soft lips, and as he tangled his tongue with Su Mei's, he started madly sucking.

At the same time, like a fierce tiger pouncing towards its prey, he used

his powerful body to press the little beauty Su Mei underneath himself.

"This..."

At that instant, Taikou was still standing in the air, his eyes still locked onto the room that Chu Feng and Su Mei were within. Seeing such scene, he too felt a bit embarrassed. He involuntarily closed his eyes, and entered a struggle on whether to look or not to look.

In the end, the unfathomable single-legged old man made a wicked smile that didn't suit his elderly status, then opened his eyes and cast his gaze back at the room.

"This damn brat." However, at that instant, Taikou couldn't help cursing because he discovered, to his surprise, when he had his eyes closed, Chu Feng had laid a Concealment Formation and completely hid his and Su Mei's figure. Taikou simply couldn't see them anymore.

Only after laying the Concealment Formation did Chu Feng's true beastly nature explode. He grabbed Su Mei's pink long skirt, and with a ripping sound, he tore it into pieces.

After tearing the long skirt, Su Mei's delicate and snow-white body completely appeared before him.

Chu Feng's body was already heated up with desire. At that moment, he hesitated no longer. After tearing Su Mei's skirt, he stripped away his own clothes as well, then pounced onto Su Mei, then cut the distance between his body and Su Mei's perfect body to zero.

Within the Spirit Formation, two bodies, one strong and one soft, fused together. They rolled up and down, swayed left and right, and panted endlessly.

"Ahh~~" After who knew how long, a slightly painful shriek came from Su Mei's mouth, but soon, it slowly subsided. Then, powerful seductive panting instead rang out. Long and short interweaved, resounding endlessly, as she thoroughly enjoyed the treatment Chu Feng gave her.

With that, two bodies consummately joined together, but the merging and striking thus became only more intense.

Chapter 759: Stone Forest of Death

After tangling with each other passionately a few times, Chu Feng hugged the little beauty Su Mei and had a very deep sleep.

When he woke up, he discovered it was noon, when the sun was high up in the sky and shone brightly. When he came here yesterday, it was still afternoon, so it meant it was the next day.

When he looked at Su Mei, who was in his embrace, eyes closed with a face of content and peace, Chu Feng couldn't resist stroking her smooth long hair.

After doing the thing between a man and a woman, the sweet Su Mei now possessed a mature feeling she didn't have before. Perhaps it was the so-called "girl turning into a woman."

At that instant, Chu Feng involuntarily smiled. He recalled the scene when he met Su Mei for the first time in the Azure Dragon School.

Back then, Su Mei, no matter appearance or strength, was high up. Moreover, she had a proud nature, and she was a figure that countless disciples in the Azure Dragon School pursued after with none succeeding.

At that time, even if one had beat Chu Feng to death, he still wouldn't believe that girl would one day fall for him, and that he too would fall for that girl.

"Mmm~~~" Suddenly, Su Mei's long brows trembled twice, then she slowly opened her eyes. After seeing Chu Feng, she sweetly smiled and said, "Chu Feng, when did you wake up? Why didn't you call me?"

"I just woke up. I saw you were sleeping so soundly, so I didn't wake you up," said Chu Feng with a smile.

"Mm, it's time already." Looking at the colour of the sky outside, Su Mei slightly knitted her brows, a bit of worry emerging onto her face.

"What is it, Little Mei? Are you worried that your sister will find out about this?" Chu Feng asked.

“No, I’m not afraid of my sister finding out at all. After all, I’m yours, sooner or later. But, it’s just… that Qin Yu.” As Su Mei spoke, she pointed at the nearby large pool of blood. On the pool of blood was a corpse with a pulp of flesh and blood—Qin Yu.

“Damn, I almost forgot about this guy.” At that instant, Chu Feng abruptly rose, waved his big sleeve, and a boundless burst of power surged, cleanly engulfing Qin Yu’s corpse. No traces of blood were even left behind on the ground.

“I actually let him see the great occasion between us. What a deal for him,” Chu Feng said unluckily after cleansing away Qin Yu’s corpse.

“Chu Feng, what are you talking about? He was already dead, so how could he have watched us two? Though, Qin Yu died in my residence, so it’ll be difficult to make an explanation. After all, he is…” said Su Mei very worriedly.

“Don’t worry, silly girl. Do you know how I knew you were in danger?” As Chu Feng spoke, he once again pulled Su Mei into his embrace.

“Yeah! How did you know I was in danger? Wasn’t it just a coincidence?” Su Mei’s face was full of confusion and curiosity.

“It was Taikou. When Qin Yu was shamed back then, Senior Taikou felt that he wouldn’t just let that matter slip off. So, Qin Yu was covertly monitored. When he was about to perform immoral acts on you, Senior Taikou already knew.

“Even if I didn’t come, Senior Taikou would have saved you. When I was entering, he already told me he would deal with Qin Yu’s death,” Chu Feng said.

“It’s Senior Taikou again?”

After knowing the course of events, Su Mei’s expression was also full of gratitude. But, she couldn’t help rubbing her face in Chu Feng’s embrace, and the hands which she used to hold Chu Feng held him tighter. She knew very well what kind of person Taikou was. The reason he was doing all that wasn’t to help her. It was all done to give Chu Feng face.

Afterwards, Chu Feng went and saw Taikou again. It was mainly to thank him, because if it weren't for Taikou, his fiancée would have truly been defiled.

If that happened, by Su Mei's nature, she definitely wouldn't continue living, and he too would have received a blow to his heart.

However, Taikou still protected Chu Feng as usual. He even said he would handle the matter of Qin Yu, and it was fine for Su Mei and Chu Feng to act as if they knew nothing. He even guaranteed Chu Feng that within the Four Seas Academy, there'd be absolutely no one who would dare to harm Su Rou and the others.

That made Chu Feng feel endless appreciation for Taikou. He decided, in the future, no matter what, he would repay that expert in some manner because the assistance Taikou gave him was really too much, and also really too significant.

After removing Wang Long and Qin Yu, there were no longer any more potential dangers within the Four Seas Academy for Su Rou and the others,.

The only strong disciple remaining was Lan Xi, but Chu Feng believed she would not make things difficult for Su Rou and the others. Besides, she would not have the courage to do so.

Putting aside Taikou, at present, the person who received the Imperial Bloodline was Jiang Wushang. The Four Seas Academy would definitely channel their full resources into his development.

Taikou also clearly told Chu Feng that if it were before, there would be a huge commotion if the Four Seas Academy lost two peak disciples.

But now, it was different from the past. With Jiang Wushang, the possessor of the Imperial Bloodline, the Four Seas Academy would no longer need to worry about risking their development on weaker people. All of their minds were cast upon Jiang Wushang.

Chu Feng actions really did help Jiang Wushang greatly. It could even be said that Chu Feng changed Jiang Wushang's destiny and even

changed everyone else's destiny.

Chu Feng didn't ask for anything in return for what he did. As long as he knew Su Rou and the others could pass the days peacefully, Chu Feng would feel at ease.

On that very day, after Chu Feng said his farewells to the crowd, he left the Four Seas Academy and headed towards the so-called Depraved Ravine.

Chu Feng had inquired a bit about the Depraved Ravine on the side. It seemed to be a former section of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Ever since the Crippling Night Demon Sect disbanded, the area was emptied. Even now, there was no one who occupied it.

The reason was very simple: When the Crippling Night Demon Sect still existed, it laid a huge formation at the outside of the Depraved Ravine. If one wanted to enter, they would have to pass through the formation. Various mechanisms were not the only things within the formation. There were also many bloodthirsty Fierce Beasts living within.

As for the name of that formation, it was called the Stone Forest of Death.

Like its name, only death awaited those who entered the Stone Forest of Death.

As for those with powerful cultivations, although they could pass through the Stone Forest of Death, there was no one who could thoroughly destroy it.

That also led to the situation where, to a large portion of cultivators, the Stone Forest of Death was an impassable barrier that could always guard the Depraved Ravine. As a result, the Depraved Ravine became one of the most complete remains of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"So this is the Stone Forest of Death, huh?"

After some travelling, Chu Feng had now arrived at a rather distant area.

There were barely any traces of people there, and before him was a forest formed by different shapes and sizes of stones.

For the small ones, those stones were ten meters tall. For large ones, they were akin to mountain peaks that touched the sky and passed through the clouds. It was a very grand scene to gaze upon, and on all of the stones, symbols from the Ancient Era were engraved on it, which made them not only indestructible, but also bright.

Most importantly, as he stood before the imposing forest of stone, not only could Chu Feng faintly hear bursts of roars, he was also able to feel the fatal dangers within.

Chapter 760: Depraved Ravine

After entering the Stone Forest of Death, Chu Feng found out that it was truly not a simple place.

It was a very vast formation, its size unprecedented—at least, it was one of the most impressive formations Chu Feng had ever seen.

Even though the certain type of pressure contained inside wasn't like the Millennium Ancient City's—where it made people lose their ability to fly—it more or less placed some restrictions on both flying ability and personal strength.

Moreover, there were invisible mechanisms in the air and on the ground. They would attack without warning at those who entered.

In the stone forest, there were truly powerful bloodthirsty Fierce Beasts. They existed in huge numbers and hunted each other. They had already made a perfect circle of life, and the incoming humans only served to become their prey.

That place truly wasn't one that people could peacefully pass through. At least, those in the Heaven realm would find it extremely difficult to do so. Unless there were an expert to lead the way, it was a place near impossible to traverse.

But to Chu Feng, it wasn't much of a challenge. Very easily, he passed through the Stone Forest of Death.

"This is the Depraved Ravine, huh?"

After passing through the forest, Chu Feng saw it was as if he entered another world. It was a world that had no ends. On the earth, there were forests, rivers, length mountain ranges... Even the sky felt bluer, and the clouds whiter. When one's eyes took such a scene all into their eyes, it was so beautiful one couldn't even admire it fast enough; it was just like a painting.

However, such an enormous world was sealed shut by the Stone Forest of Death. To keep such a world nearly unblemished, one could see that

the Stone Forest of Death was truly not simple.

Putting aside the difficulty to pass through it, just by being able to seal off such an enormous portion of land showed how much effort the creator put into the forest. It was truly quite a large piece of work.

Afterwards, Chu Feng continued heading deeper in. Shortly after doing that, he met a few people. They were elderly people—all Martial Lords. Initially, they were chatting with each other and walking with smiles, but after seeing Chu Feng, their eyes instantly went on alert.

Seeing their cautious and unkind gazes, Chu Feng couldn't help giving up on the thought of asking them a few things, and had no choice but to continue walking.

On the road, Chu Feng met a few more groups of people, and the deeper he went, the more people he saw.

Chu Feng only stopped when a Spirit Formation that rose from the ground straight into the sky appeared before himself, because that formation was too powerful.

Golden radiance spewed everywhere and it sealed the sky and the earth, as if separated a part of the world completely. Furthermore, the aura it emanated was truly indestructible. The formation was not one that Chu Feng could break open.

Actually, at that moment, there were already many people blocked off by the Spirit Formation; this was likely the deepest possible region one could reach at present in the Depraved Ravine.

Outside the Spirit Formation, nearly everybody settled down. Of those people, some formed groups of three to five, some formed groups of dozens, some even formed groups of over a hundred.

Those people did everything possible; some were drinking wine and chatting happily. From the garbage they threw away, one could tell they had arrived here for quite some time.

Even more people though were guarding their own piece of land. They were very alert. Other than the people they knew, they really didn't talk

with any outsiders. They were only awaiting something in silence.

Chu Feng also learnt, from their conversations, that the reason why they came to this place was to witness the glory of the Four Protectors' disciples.

"From how it is, it seems that the news is likely true. Otherwise, it'd be impossible for so many experts from so many different places to be attracted here."

At that moment, the number of people who appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight was several hundred. And due to the large scale of the Spirit Formation, his current location was but the corner of the outside. Very likely, outside the Spirit Formation, there were at least several thousand people who gathered, perhaps even over ten thousand.

In addition, many people quite possibly had yet to appear and were just hidden within the stone forest. So, rough estimations indicate that the number of people within the Depraved Ravine reached at least several tens of thousands.

When he saw so many people, Chu Feng did not worry. Instead, he celebrated in his heart because it made him feel that the news of the arranged battle between the Four Protectors' disciples was most likely true—no, actually, to be precise, it should be the arranged battle between the Three Protectors' disciples because he, the disciple of the head of the Four Protectors, didn't plan to participate in the upcoming battle.

Besides, Chu Feng didn't understand many things about the disciples of the other Protectors, nor the matters of the Depraved Ravine. In addition, the people here were very wary and many didn't communicate with outsiders, so it was rather difficult to acquire any information from them.

As such, Chu Feng could only expand his hearing strength and focus on eavesdropping on the conversations of others. He wanted to see if he could pick up a few things from their words.

As the proverbs say: "Effort will not disappoint those who are resolute." After some eavesdropping, Chu Feng finally learnt a few more things.

The Four Protectors of the Depraved Ravine were Qiu Canfeng, You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng.

Those Protectors had extremely powerful strengths, and they were all very old—pretty much all of them were over a hundred years old—You Mingdeng especially. It's said that he had lived for over three hundred years. He was a truly old monster.

Other than Qiu Canfeng, before the Crippling Night Demon Sect disbanded, the three other Protectors had already found disciples they felt satisfied with.

You Mingdeng's disciple: You Tonghan.

Xue Xiyue's disciple: Xuan Xiaochao.

Fu Liansheng's disciple: Fu Fengming.

All of the Four Protectors had arrogant natures and they felt they were above everyone else. When they chose disciples, of course, they were very harsh. Thus, to be able to become their disciples meant they were naturally dragons amongst men, the geniuses within geniuses.

You Tonghan, Xuan Xiaochao, and Fu Fengming did indeed not disappoint. When they were young, they had already exhibited talent that surpassed others. Their speed of improvement was extremely quick, and they were praised as outstanding geniuses.

But sadly, after the Crippling Night Demon Sect disbanded, You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng all brought their own disciples away from the world. As if they completely disappeared, there was no news about them, and they had yet to show themselves in all this time

By a rough calculation of time, the three geniuses' ages should already be over thirty, a bit older than the one whose name could shake the Eastern Sea Region, and who was also titled as the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region, Murong Xun.

But despite vanishing for many years, time was unable to affect the name of the three geniuses. Many people even thought their strengths were not the slightest bit inferior to Murong Xun, possibly even stronger.

Formlessly, the three geniuses, like their masters, had accumulated many admirers.

That was also the reason why so many people, ignoring all the dangers, came here when there was news stating that the three geniuses were reappearing soon and would fight it out in the Depraved Ravine.

Their goal coming here was very simple: To see the glory of the three disciples.

“This voice... It’s her?” Suddenly, Chu Feng’s pupils shrank abruptly as he hurriedly cast his gaze into the distance.

Chapter 761: Meeting an Acquaintance

"Chun Wu?" Chu Feng was surprised because he, faintly, seemed to hear Chun Wu's voice.

So, he quickly rose into the air and flew towards the origin of the voice. The more he neared, the clearer the voice was. Gradually, it became sharp from its initial muddy state.

Finally, after flying for a while, Chu Feng saw quite a few people gathered together nearby. It seemed that there was something happening.

Passing through the crowd of people, Chu Feng instantly recognized two people in the very center. One was, as expected, Chun Wu, and the other was also someone he knew—Zhan Feng.

"Why are they also here?" Chu Feng did not immediately show himself when he saw the two of them. Instead, he blended into the observing crowd, and watched along with them, planning to see what exactly was happening.

It turned out that they were arguing.

Zhan Feng was not alone; behind he stood over a dozen of his minions who were roughly the same age. They were all Martial Lords, and the weakest was a rank two Martial Lord.

However, the geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago currently did not wear the clothing of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Instead, they were in ordinary clothes, and at that moment, they were in a circular shape, surrounding Chun Wu in the center. Their intentions were not kind.

"Zhan Feng, don't even think of attacking me. If you continue making trouble, I'll tell everyone about what your Immortal Execution Archipelago has done," Chun Wu shouted coldly and fiercely.

Zhan Feng's brows furrowed even tighter when he heard that as a bit of worry and fury emerged into his eyes. He coldly said, "Lady Chun Wu, do not speak nonsense. Otherwise, be careful as you may attract disasters

upon yourself."

Zhen Feng then pushed forward after speaking. His minions too neared Chun Wu, and very slightly, they emanated killing intent.

"Ahh? So you're planning to silence me, from what I understand?" Chun Wu knitted her brows after hearing Zhan Feng's threats. Not only was she fearless, she even disdainfully snorted, then yelled at the surrounding crowd, "Come look! Zhan Feng of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, seeing his failed plot, wants to murder!"

Chun Wu's shout was full of might, intentionally letting many people hear it. As a result, everyone who was nearby, upon hearing the shout, came over.

When they arrived, some people recognized Zhen Feng, Chun Wu, and the others. They all felt shocked because they never would have expected to see two geniuses who were so well-known in the Eastern Sea Region

Seeing the increasing number of people surrounding them, Zhen Feng's face turned ashen. Yet, he forced a smile on his face and said to Chun Wu, "Lady Chun Wu, I'm sure you must be mistaken about something. I, Zhan Feng, mean no harm towards you.

"How about we both calm down and have a good talk?"

"Talk? What talk? What is there to talk to you? If I didn't think quickly and escape to this place, you would have already killed me." Chun Wu put her arm before her chest and curled her lips, seeming to have already known what Zhen Feng was planning. She then yelled at the crowd, "Everyone! Uncles, Aunts, Brothers, Sisters.

"Although we do not know each other, to be able to meet here is a type of fate. These bastards who surround me and are unwilling to let me go, all come from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. The leader is the infamous Zhen Feng.

"As for me, my name is Chun Wu. I am one of the five disciples of Lady Piaomiao of the Misty Peak.

"Today, I was very unlucky to have heard something I shouldn't have

heard. It seems that it's likely I won't leave this place alive. If misfortune truly strikes me, I ask everyone here to be a witness and help me tell my master Lady Piaomiao who the murderer is, so she can better avenge me."

At first, only a few people recognized Chun Wu and Zhan Feng. But when Chun Wu spoke, it immediately told everyone who they were. In a moment, they were all stunned and discussions arose.

But not a single person dared to go up and ask what exactly happened, nor, not to mention, was there anyone who came forth and stopped them. There were even some people who, upon learning that he was Zhan Feng, backed away in fear, afraid of being dragged into that mess. The fluctuation of the caring and indifference of human emotions was shown perfectly there.

Seeing that, the corners of Zhan Feng's mouth curled up to form a hint of a sneer. Then, he shot a glance at his minions, then shouted, "Go!"

whoosh whoosh whoosh After speaking, Zhan Feng and the others all let out their boundless auras and attacked Chun Wu.

She seemed to have already expected that to happen. She was not afraid, and instead, she coldly snorted and said, "Zhan Feng, do you think I am still the person back then, who you freely bullied in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?

"Today, I'll take revenge for what you did that day!"

boom As she spoke, endless Martial power burst out of Chun Wu's body. It was in the shape of a powerful vortex, similar to a hurricane, and it expanded, instantly engulfing Zhan Feng and the others.

"Ahh—"

In the instant the Martial power vortex engulfed all of them, other than Zhan Feng, the other geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago all cried out. They were forced back by the vortex, and for those with light injuries, their faces were pale. But for those with heavier injuries, they vomited blood, their organs seriously wounded.

"Rank five Martial Lord? Senior Chun Wu made a breakthrough?!"

Feeling Chun Wu's aura, Chu Feng couldn't help celebrating inside. Only a bit more than a month had passed since he left the Misty Peak, yet Chun Wu, from being a rank four Martial Lord, had already become a rank five Martial Lord. As Chun Wu's good friend, Chu Feng truly felt happy for her.

"I was just wondering why you had such confidence. So you made a breakthrough.

"But so what if you're a rank five Martial Lord? Do you truly think you can defeat me?"

Even though he discovered Chun Wu's current cultivation allowed her to stand equally with him, Zhan Feng's face was still full of disdain.

He extended his palm, and Martial power surged. With a bang, it shattered the Martial power vortex Chun Wu made.

ta ta ta After Zhan Feng threw out his palm, Chun Wu was forced a few steps back. Her initially rosy face instantly became as pale as paper.

Seeing the situation head into a disadvantage for her, Chun Wu of course didn't stop and await death. She quickly flipped her palm, then an exquisite longsword appeared within her hand. It was an Incomplete Royal Armament that contained Martial power of the King level.

bang Almost in the same instant Chun Wu took out the sword, another attack from Zhan Feng arrived. After the clinking of metal, the Incomplete Royal Armament in Chun Wu's hand was forced out of her hand, and Chun Wu too was forced onto the ground.

Quickly after, Zhan Feng waved his sleeve and a boundless Spirit Formation was created, enveloping Chun Wu inside. At the same time, he made a grabbing motion at the sword that flew out Chun Wu's hand, and the exquisite armament thus landed into Zhan Feng's hand.

Although they were both rank five Martial Lords, Zhan Feng had suppressed Chun Wu in a mere blink.

Rubbing the Incomplete Royal Armament Chun Wu took out, Zhan Feng smiled smugly, and said, "Lady Chun Wu, it seems that you have

only just recently made that breakthrough. Your foundation of a rank five Martial Lord still isn't firm. There is truly a difference between the heaven and the earth when you compare your fighting ability to mine! It is in no way equal!"

"Ha! Less of that arrogance. Have you forgotten how you were completely beaten by my Junior Wuqing in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?" said Chun Wu unyieldingly.

After hearing those words, Zhan Feng's smug complexion immediately turned green.

Chapter 762: Wuqing Appears

“Wuqing? The one who broke the record Murong Xun left behind in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm?”

“It’s definitely him. There is only that Wuqing from the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.”

“Doesn’t that mean, in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Wuqing truly did defeat the three geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago?”

After hearing Chun Wu’s words, the surrounding crowd couldn’t help gasping because after the event of the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, Wuqing’s grand name had spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region.

Everyone listening to Chun Wu had heard of Wuqing’s achievements, but there were also people who expressed doubt at that rumour. After all, such news was a bit exaggerated.

However, at that very instant, after hearing Chun Wu’s words, they had no choice but to believe it. After all, they knew both Chun Wu and Zhan Feng entered the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. They were people who had personally witnessed everything.

Zhan Feng’s face became even more unsightly when he heard the surrounding whispers. To him, that was most definitely the greatest disgrace he had experienced in his life.

So, he pointed at Chun Wu and very furiously argued, “Nonsense! If Wuqing didn’t use despicable methods back then and increased his strength through obtaining some sort of power within the Temple of Reproduction, how could he possibly defeat me?

“If I meet him again, I’ll definitely beat the hell out of him!”

“Zhan Feng, you can eat whatever you want to eat, but you can’t say whatever you want to say. Don’t you know Wuqing’s also come here? Careful to not let my Junior Wuqing hear your words, otherwise he’ll come out and beat you up,” said Chun Wu.

“What? Wuqing has also come here?

“Is that really true? I would really like to see whether Wuqing is as powerful as the rumours.” A huge commotion arose from the crowd after Chun Wu’s words. All of them expressed their desire to see Wuqing.

“What a joke. I would be afraid of him?

“You said he has also come here? That would be the best. If I see him, I’ll give him a good lesson and let him know without that vile power, he isn’t even worth fart,” said Zhan Feng disdainfully.

In his heart, he had always thought Chu Feng obtained some sort of special power, resulting in his defeat by Chu Feng’s hands. If it were a normal fight, with his own strength, he felt he would definitely defeat Chu Feng, and it would even be a one-sided slaughter.

“Tch. You only dare to act so arrogant because you know my Junior Wuqing hasn’t come yet. If you knew he came already, you would have already wet your pants in fear,” Chun Wu sneered and taunted.

“You’re saying I’m afraid of him?” Zhan Feng was thoroughly enraged by Chun Wu’s repeated ridicules. As he spoke, he stretched his hand, passing through the Spirit Formation that bound Chun Wu, and grabbed her neck. And he squeezed her neck, forcefully pulling out the exceptional beauty.

As Zhan Feng held his hand over Chun Wu’s neck, he rose her high up and shouted to the crowd, “Wuqing, where are you? Get the hell out here if you dare!

“Didn’t your Senior Chun Wu say you’re very powerful? Didn’t she say without your wicked strength, you can still defeat me?

“Come out! Don’t be a coward if you dare!

“Out, get the hell out of here! Or else, I’ll kill this girl!”

Zhan Feng’s arrogant voice was extremely loud, even louder than Chun Wu’s just now. In addition, since there were so many people already, the word of mouth was spread even quicker. As a result, a greater number of

people headed over now.

Originally, Chu Feng planned to silently watch and see what exactly was happening.

But now, Zhan Feng not only suppressed Chun Wu, he even had his hand over her neck.

If being able to endure the humiliation that Zhan Feng spoke was Chu Feng's limit, then Chu Feng absolutely could not endure watching Chun Wu whose face was reddening and in pain due to her neck being squeezed.

"You let her go!" Chu Feng suddenly made his move. With lightning speed, he dashed up to Zhan Feng, burst out his might of a rank two Martial Lord, and with a hand-blade that seemed to be able to cut through everything, he chopped towards the arm that Zhan Feng used to squeeze Chun Wu's neck.

Such an abrupt situation surprised Zhan Feng because he really didn't expect someone would come out and save Chun Wu, nor did he expect Wuqing to truly be here.

Thus, when he felt someone was approaching and starting a fierce attack, he was aware of the danger. Without even looking who the person coming was, he quickly let go of Chun Wu and backed away to the side.

"Cough cough..." At that moment, Chun Wu violently coughed, After she raised her head and saw the person who saved her, she was both surprised and joyed. With great disbelief, she said, "Junior Wuqing, you truly came."

"What? Wuqing, he's Wuqing?!" After hearing those words, the surrounding people couldn't help widening their eyes and started to carefully examining Chu Feng in his current state. They had all heard of Wuqing's name before, and almost no one wanted to miss his glory.

"So he's only a rank two Martial Lord? A rank two Martial Lord defeated the three peak geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago? That doesn't seem to be too realistic, huh?"

“Ahh, it seems that the rumours are only rumours. It seems that the news regarding Wuqing’s divine acts are most likely false.”

“Yeah! As they say, rather than speculation why not witness him personally? He really does seem only so-so.”

“Don’t make a decision so quickly. Did none of you see the speed and strength he used just now? This child’s fighting power is not ordinary. Although he only has the cultivation of a rank two Martial Lord, his true fighting ability most definitely surpasses rank two. Perhaps he can truly give Zhan Feng a fight.”

“It’s impossible. Even if his fighting strength surpasses rank two Martial Lords, he absolutely cannot defeat Zhan Feng. One must know that Zhan Feng is a rank five Martial Lord! The two of them are separated by three full levels. There is too great of a gap between power, and they simply cannot even be discussed as equals.”

“That may not be so!!”

After seeing Chu Feng’s cultivation, the crowd was separated into two parties. One felt that, judging by his strength, Chu Feng could not defeat Zhan Feng and the others.

And since Zhan Feng too admitted he was defeated by Chu Feng within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, it meant that, as Zhan Feng said, this person called Wuqing must have used some wicked technique within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm and obtained special power. Only then was he able to defeat Zhan Feng. At present, he no longer had that power, so it was impossible for him to defeat Zhan Feng.

But, there were also people who felt that the attack Chu Feng made just now displayed his exceptionality. Perhaps he was truly as the legends said —that he possessed illogical fighting strength.

At that moment, after Zhan Feng discovered the person who attacked him was Wuqing, he was very surprised as well. But in comparison to his surprise, what he felt even more was excitement and elation, because he knew that the time to prove himself and to cleanse away his shame had come.

“Wuqing, I truly didn’t think you would truly come here.

“But, I must say, I really do admire your courage. After leaving the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, you even dare to appear before me! You should know that you will feel quite miserable after I beat you up.” Zhan Feng’s chilly gaze shot everywhere. He was already impatient to beat Chu Feng to the ground, to avenge what his past actions.

However, Chu Feng calmly smiled at Zhan Feng’s words and said, “Actually, I can already see a scene being acted out. Do you know what it is?”

“What?” Zhan Feng asked.

“A bloody you being stamped beneath my foot,” Chu Feng answered.

Chapter 763: Intense Battle

“Such shameless words. Without obtaining the power from such evil methods, do you think you can even put up a fight against me?

“Don’t say you didn’t obtain any special power from the Temple of Reproduction. If you didn’t, why were you a rank three Martial Lord back then, and now a rank two Martial Lord?” said Zhan Feng furiously.

“Yes, I did gain something back then in the Temple of Reproduction, and as a result, obtained some temporary power, which made my cultivation rise from a rank one Martial Lord to a rank three Martial Lord. However, if you feel that I defeated you by relying completely on that foreign power, then I can only say you are absolutely wrong.”

Chu Feng admitted it because he felt it was not disgraceful in any way. After all, a rank three Martial Lord defeating a rank five Martial Lord—that was his strength.

“You are quite shameless, and very cunning.

“But, it matters not. Today, I will expose your false appearance in front of the crowd, and let everyone know what you actually are—whether you are that rumoured genius or not!”

boom Suddenly, Zhan Feng made his move. Overlaying his hands, he willed an attack to appear. It was neither Martial power nor a martial skill. It was a Spirit Formation attack.

The boundless Spirit Formation was created in only an instant. Then, the purple-coloured Spirit Formation surging behind him converged to form an enormous wave that could touch the sky as it pressed its way towards Chu Feng.

Chu Feng subconsciously made a hint of a sneer when he saw that. In his perspective, Zhan Feng not only wanted to defeat him, he even wanted to humiliate him. In the outside world, the rumours said that Chu Feng’s Spirit Formation techniques were powerful. So, he wanted to have a battle of precisely Spirit Formation techniques so he could slap Chu Feng’s face

and humiliate him that way.

Honestly speaking, if it were a battle of Martial power, perhaps Chu Feng truly wouldn't be able to defeat Zhan Feng with his current cultivation. At least, there would be great difficulty; after all, there was a difference of three full levels. As for Zhan Feng's fighting ability, it was indeed not on the same level as Wang Long or Qin Yu; within the same generation, Zhan Feng truly was a top genius.

However, regarding a battle of pure Spirit Formation techniques, would Chu Feng be afraid of Zhan Feng? Putting aside Chu Feng's comprehension of Spirit Formation techniques, his Spirit Formation alone was many times stronger than Zhan Feng's.

One must know that Chu Feng had a treasure on him—the Asura Ghost Axe.

Although, in terms of fighting, the axe wasn't too useful anymore, it was still a Mastered Elite Armament.

The value of the Asura Ghost Axe rested upon its special effect—training Spirit power. The Asura Ghost Axe had already melded together with Chu Feng; he could control it as he wished.

Although it didn't seem that Chu Feng had any training in such a long time, he was actually sharpening his Spirit power. As a result, at present, Chu Feng's Spirit power was already very strong, which also led to the Spirit Formations he laid to be stronger than those who had superior cultivation.

"Senior Chun Wu, back away." Chu Feng first pushed away Chun Wu, then without showing any signs of dodging, he stood where he was and laid a formation.

Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were really too practiced. With a thought, the formation was finished. In nearly the exact instant the enormous wave Zhan Feng created was about to flood Chu Feng, a boom was heard.

An even fiercer wave of Spirit Formations burst out of Chu Feng's own

formation. It not only wiped out the one Zhan Feng made, it even slammed towards Zhan Feng.

"You?!"

Even Zhan Feng, who was incomparably confident before, couldn't help being astonished when he saw that. He never would have expected Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques to be so perfect despite the cultivation he had, so much that it could break the one he created first.

It was already too late—with his strength, he didn't have the ability to create another formation from such a distance. As a result, Zhan Feng had no choice but to fly back and recreate a formation as he evaded the wave.

hmm Finally, a new Spirit Formation was formed. It was a wall that had extraordinary mass. That Spirit Formation wall was not a normal Spirit Formation wall. It was one craftily made by exquisite Spirit Formations, so logically, it should stop Chu Feng's giant wave.

However, Chu Feng expected such an outcome. After all, the attack he threw out just now was too hurried, so it was unable to injure Zhan Feng. The following attack, however, was going to become even fiercer.

wuao The gestures Chu Feng used to create the Spirit Formation changed as a new formation came into being. Almost at the same time the Spirit Formation wave dissipated, a several-hundred-meter long Spirit Formation dragon appeared.

When the Spirit Formation dragon roared, the entire world shook. With the swing of the divine-like dragon tail, a boom resounded and it completely destroyed Zhan Feng's Spirit Formation wall.

Just like that, they kept on exchanging attacks. Their Spirit Formation battle had a myriad of changes, and all sorts of oddities. Moreover, every single attack was superior to the previous, and as the observing crowd gazed upon those scenes, their hearts and souls were shaken as they sighed in admiration.

Chu Feng's and Zhan Feng's grasp in Spirit Formation techniques was

indeed quite practiced. Their control was so good that the Spirit Formation could almost be said to be shaped as their hearts desired. That was something many people who were watching could not do, and, really, only true geniuses could do such a thing.

"It seems that the rumours are not false. At least, this Wuqing has very strong attainments in terms of Spirit Formation techniques."

"Yeah! After all, there are three levels of cultivation difference between them. But, in terms of Spirit Formation techniques, not only is Wuqing not the slightest bit weaker than Zhan Feng, he is even superior. His attainments in Spirit Formation techniques can simply be said to be unprecedented, and I doubt there will be anyone in the future who will have the same strength. He is truly a Spirit Formation genius."

Many of the praises resided on supporting Chu Feng. After all, those watching were not blind; they could tell that even though Zhan Feng attacked first, Chu Feng overwhelmed him, and in the instant Chu Feng made his own move, he took the advantage.

And then, when they thought of Chu Feng's current cultivation and age, it was truly hard for them not to sigh in admiration.

"I do not believe I am truly weaker than you in Spirit Formation techniques!" Zhan Feng actually very cared about the comments and opinions others had of him. So, even when fighting against Chu Feng with Spirit Formation techniques, he still seriously listened to the observations of others.

After hearing the discussions of the crowd that leaned towards Chu Feng's side, he was even more furious, and also even more unwilling to give up. So, with his teeth gnashed, his obstinateness surged onto his mind. He swore to fight against Chu Feng until the very end with Spirit Formation techniques.

wuao However, just as Zhan Feng was about to create a new Spirit Formation, planning to block the one Chu Feng sent at him, he suddenly heard a deafening roar from behind him.

"Ho-how is this possible?" Turning his head back, Zhan Feng's

complexion instantly lost all colour because behind him, a huge, ugly, and purple-coloured Spirit Formation beast appeared.

Not only did the Spirit Formation beast have an incomparably ferocious aura, its attack was already imminent. It had sealed his escape, and he no longer had any time to defend.

Most importantly, from its aura, he could determine that the Spirit Formation was created by Chu Feng.

That made him feel both embarrassed and shameful, but also greatly furious because Chu Feng, without him knowing, had laid a Spirit Formation behind him. When it was discovered, it was already too late; he was cornered. Even though he was very unwilling to, he had no choice but to admit in terms of Spirit Formation techniques, he was indeed inferior to Chu Feng.

“Die!”

boom At that instant, Zhan Feng suddenly shouted. Then, his body shook and boundless Martial power swirled out.

The Martial power was incomparably ferocious; it was great evidence of Zhan Feng’s true strength. So, in an instant, it completely shattered the Spirit Formation attack Chu Feng made.

Although it seemed that Zhan Feng had the advantage, it was, after all, obtained by relying on Martial power. Not by Spirit Formation techniques.

As a result, his move clearly told everyone that he, Zhan Feng, lost in the battle of Spirit Formation techniques.

Chapter 764: Indeed a Genius

At that instant, despite breaking Chu Feng's Spirit Formation attack, Zhan Feng's face was ashen, his visage twisted.

Originally, he wanted to use Spirit Formation techniques to defeat Chu Feng and exhibit his strength—so others would know, without an outside power, Chu Feng would never be able to defeat him—but he didn't think that Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were truly that strong. Unwittingly, he gave himself a huge slap, and completely embarrassed himself.

But since things progressed to the way they were, he could do nothing about it. If he had to blame something, he could only blame himself for overestimating his own abilities, and underestimating Chu Feng.

He, who had just received a lesson, no longer prepared to keep anything hidden. He no longer prepared to give Chu Feng any chances of making a comeback.

whoosh After pulling out his cultivation of a rank five Martial Lord, he flipped his wrist and a three-meter long silver greatsword appeared within his hand.

After that sword appeared, layers of King-level Martial power were exuded from it. It all entered Zhan Feng's body; his aura became several times more powerful than before.

It was the Incomplete Royal Armament Zhan Feng possessed—it seemed that he was truly serious. Otherwise, he wouldn't immediately take out a treasure such as the armament right in the beginning. After all, to him, the Incomplete Royal Armament was the final trump card he had.

"Die!" Suddenly, the sword in his hand moved—he jabbed it into the air, towards Chu Feng.

boom When that sword appeared, its might was absolute. It was as though that sword could pierce through the heavens and destroy the universe. Undoubtedly, the power of the Incomplete Royal Armament was

shown completely.

With that sword alone, there would definitely be no problem if he wanted to turn a mountain range to a plains, or turn a plains to an endless valley, or cut off one end of an entire river.

At that moment, the observers had already run quite a distance away. Although most of them were Martial Lords, they still very much feared an Incomplete Royal Armament. After all, it was an armament with the Martial power of a Martial King.

But, Chu Feng was not the slightest bit afraid, nor did he show any signs of returning any attacks. Instead, he stood on the spot, arms crossed before his chest. He had an appearance of a bystander looking at an entertaining show; it was extremely arrogant.

“Why isn’t that Wuqing running? Even a rank six Martial Lord must evade the tip of such an attack, and even they wouldn’t dare to be careless. Is he, a rank two Martial Lord, looking to die?”

“His mind isn’t frozen by terror, right?”

“It doesn’t seem like it because he clearly doesn’t has any expressions of fear!” The crowd all felt confused at Chu Feng’s current actions.

Only Chu Feng himself knew what he was doing. He wanted to humiliate Zhan Feng, but with his strength now, he was indeed unable to. However, even though he was unable to, in reality, he was able to because he was not alone. He still had an outstanding queen.

hmm Chu Feng willed a Spirit Formation Gate to appear before himself. At the same time, the graceful and exceptionally beautiful Eggy, under the gazes of the crowd, elegantly entered the scene!

“World Spirit?”

“He’s using a World Spirit?”

“And it’s only a rank two World Spirit!”

“Is this Wuqing insane? He’s looking down on Zhan Feng too much, isn’t he?”

After seeing Eggy, the crowd was even more dumbfounded. They couldn't comprehend what Chu Feng was doing.

Just at that moment, Zhan Feng's attack had arrived. The sword energy congregated by the Incomplete Royal Armament, with devastating power, crashed towards Eggy.

Some softhearted people couldn't help shutting their eyes because they didn't want to see the appearance of Eggy's painful death. After all, looking at it from the outside, she was an extremely rare beauty. Such a beauty being killed was something many people didn't want to see.

However, just as many people felt Eggy was dead, without a doubt, with a very casual wave of her hand, the sword energy with berserk power instantly dissipated. Then, like a light burst of wind, it scattered in front of Eggy.

"What... what happened?"

"What is this? What happened just now?"

Everyone was stupefied when they saw Eggy, with only a minuscule action like that, caused the sword energy from the Incomplete Royal Armament to scatter like the wind.

"How is this possible?" The one actually most shocked was none other than Zhan Feng. He knew very well how much power the strike of the sword energy contained—it was an attack that he held back nothing. Even if a rank six Martial Lord were struck by it, they would be heavily injured, and possibly even die.

Yet, such an attack, by the wave of her hand, was reduced to nothing. He didn't even dare to believe that.

"False appearances. Let me see what trickery you used!" Feeling great confusion, Zhan Feng once again threw out an attack. It was the exact same as before, also a jab forward.

Eggy lightly knitted her brows at the incoming boundless sword energy. A hint of disdain and annoyance emerged into her eyes. This time, she didn't wave her hand. She instead put her hands on her waist, opened her

alluring mouth, and yelled at Zhan Feng, “ARE YOU DONE?!”

boom That furious roar pierced through the air, and everyone felt that the earth was going to collapse into itself, that the sky was going to fall. Even Martial Lords on scene couldn’t avoid being swayed left and right. There were even some people who fell onto the ground.

Zhan Feng’s sword energy was not only wiped away again after Eggy’s roar, even Zhan Feng received the backlash. After her roar, he was forced back several thousand meters.

“Heavens! Thi-thi-thi-this girl is a World Spirit?”

Everyone finally came to their senses, and realized what happened just now was no coincidence. Eggy truly had the ability to dissipate Zhan Feng’s attack with the wave of her hand.

“How can there exist such a powerful World Spirit in this world? Could it be? She’s...” After confirming Eggy’s strength, their immediate reaction was associating it with one possibility. Yet, they didn’t really dare to accept that possibility because if it were true, that would mean Chu Feng really was too strong.

“It can’t be wrong. A human’s appearance, unimaginable fighting ability... That is definitely the legendary Asura World Spirit.” Just as everyone kept making uncertain guesses, an old man who had lived for at least two hundred years with half a foot already into the tomb spoke with extreme certainty.

“It’s truly a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?”

“My gods! Doesn’t that mean this Wuqing truly is an unparalleled genius? After all, within all historical records, those who are able to make a contract with an Asura World Spirit all become great, famous characters!”

“No wonder. Then no wonder. No wonder Wuqing’s Spirit Formation techniques are so impressive. So the World Spirit he made a contract with is from the Asura Spirit World.”

After confirming that, everyone’s gazes changed when they looked at

Chu Feng. Within their complex expressions, there was shock, there was admiration, there was praise, there was envy, and there was even adoration and affection.

"Junior Wuqing, you actually..." In reality, not to mention the bystanders, at that moment, even Chun Wu, whose relationship was very good with Chu Feng, slightly widened her mouth and roundly widened her eyes. Within her glittering gaze, unbelievable surprise emerged.

Chapter 765: The Techniques of the Queen

“Bastard, I’ll kill you, I’ll kill you!” Zhan Feng, who was blown back by Eggy, neared insanity. He clearly hadn’t realized the danger he was in, and what he felt was only endless anger.

Because to him, face was extremely important. No matter if it was the battle of Spirit Formation techniques before, or Eggy just now, both of them made him lose all face. That was something he could not bear.

So, at present, not only did Zhan Feng choose to not retreat, he even prepared to start his most insane attack. He had his left hand in a special gesture, and right hand clutching a sword. As he did so, his aura rose rapidly, and he had infinitely neared the realm of a rank six Martial Lord.

“Human Taboo—Illusory Sword Technique!” Suddenly, Zhan Feng shouted. The silver-coloured greatsword in his hand pointed at Eggy once again, then a ray of light explosively shot out.

When he used the Illusory Sword Technique, the sky instantly changed colour. The pressure that they faced made everyone’s complexions lose colour. Even the rank six Martial Lords on scene involuntarily created some distance from Chu Feng and Eggy, afraid they would be injured by them.

Taboo martial skills were indeed incomparably powerful.

“Hmph.” However, Eggy faced such an attack with disdain. Her lips curled and she coldly snorted.

Then, with a thought, a seemingly infinite gaseous mass surged out of her body. Then, by her will, it became a greatsword of roiling black flames.

It was near a thousand meters in length. It lay horizontally in the air, and it was unordinarily imposing. When it shot forth, it perfectly collided into Zhan Feng’s Illusory Sword Technique.

boom A huge explosion made the entire world shake. Even those several hundred miles away from the origin could clearly hear that explosion and feel the tremor.

However, after such an explosion, the Illusory Sword Technique Zhan Feng shot out was shattered. But glancing back at Eggy's surging black flames, it was not only undiminished, it even increased in size. At that very instant, it had completely surrounded Zhan Feng.

"What the hell is this, what the hell are you!" At that instant, Zhan Feng's complexion was pale, as though he were diseased. Obviously, the backlash of the Illusory Sword Technique was starting to torture him.

As he held the Incomplete Royal Armament, he brandished it chaotically. As he did so, he even cursed. Clearly, he could not accept the fact that his Illusory Sword Technique was broken by Eggy.

"Shameless words! You dare to be disrespectful to me? Get the hell over here for your punishment." Eggy was enraged when she heard Zhan Feng's curses. With a thought, the boundless black flames froze Zhan Feng's movements.

As the flames rolled around, the top genius of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Zhan Feng, was brought before Eggy in a tangled state.

"You filthy woman! I'll hack you open!" How could Zhan Feng just take such public humiliation? In comparison to Eggy, he was much more enraged. He waved the silver greatsword in his hand and wanted to slice Eggy into two.

"You are nowhere close to being worthy to kill me." However, was Eggy someone Zhan Feng could injure? In the instant the two of them exchanged blows, the outcome had already been set.

puchi

"Ahh!"

Before Zhan Feng's sword even slashed down, Eggy willed and caused Zhan Feng to cry out in pain. At the same time, the Incomplete Royal Armament was also dropped.

When they looked carefully though, all of them couldn't help gasping. What fell down along with the Incomplete Royal Armament was also one of Zhan Feng's arms. It wasn't that Zhan Feng lost his Incomplete Royal Armament, it was that he lost his arm.

"Ahh—" The pain of his arm being cut off made Zhan Feng howl endlessly. That, however, was merely the beginning.

The flames surrounding Eggy moved as her heart commanded. Within the black flames, Zhan Feng was completely controlled by Eggy.

She didn't even need to move half a finger. With her mind alone, she could torment Zhan Feng to the point no part of his body remained unscathed.

It could be said that all of Zhan Feng was in Eggy's control. If she wanted to cut his hand, his foot would not be injured. If she wanted to cut his foot, his hand would not be injured.

"Mmm—"

Just at that moment, the most shocking scene occurred. When Zhan Feng widened his mouth, letting out a sound akin to the wailing of ghosts and the howling of wolves, Eggy forced the black flames to pour into his mouth.

They entered through his mouth, yet exited through his ears and mouth. In a situation like that, Zhan Feng started making a wail unheard of before. No one was able to comprehend what sort of agony he was experiencing right now.

But, after they saw the changes taking place on Zhan Feng, there was almost no one who wasn't pale from fright. They couldn't help feeling chills go down their spines, and even their hearts were trembling.

The scene at that moment was really too terrifying. As the black flames entered his body, Zhan Feng's life force seemed to be extracted. His hair akin to ink now turned white. Very soon it was even whiter than snow.

Zhan Feng's body also started to shrink. Countless wrinkles crawled all over his body, and his thinness was akin to a corpse's. Even his

cultivation greatly dwindled—Zhan Feng, who was a rank five Martial Lord, now entered the Heaven realm. It was continuing to drop down, and in a blink, he entered the Profound realm.

Only when Zhan Feng had no more cultivation did such changes stop.

Finally, Eggy pulled out the black flames from Zhan Feng's body. And, in that instant, one could see no traces of Zhan Feng's former handsomeness and elegance. He seemed more like an old man whose life was near the end.

"What did you do to me? What did you do to me?!"

Looking at his palm that was full of wrinkles and so dried up that it didn't even seem to exist, then feeling his body that lacked any power at all, Zhan Feng knew something was wrong and furiously shouted.

However, after speaking those words, he was even more stupefied because even his voice changed. It was the voice of an old man—powerless, hoarse, and lacking of any strength.

"Heh, it's nothing. I just forcibly drew out your Source Energy and cultivation. But, you don't need to be afraid. I left behind a bit of Source Energy for you to be an ordinary person. As long as you nourish yourself with some treasures, I'm sure you can live on for a few more years."

Eggy lightly squinted her brows, and revealed an enchanting smile. But, such a devastating and bewitching smile, at present, was even more horrifying than a demon's.

"I will kill you, I will kill you!"

"Ah!" Zhan Feng was furious. As he spoke, he planned to attack Eggy again. But before he even took a step, he tripped into the black flames with a poof. It was full of pity, full of grief, and extremely tragic.

"Shh, don't move around so carelessly. Do you still think you're a rank five Martial Lord? Right now, you're a useless person who doesn't even have a bit of cultivation. If it weren't for me, you would fall down from the sky right now, and you'd be mashed into meat paste," Eggy kindly reminded.

“Ahhh—” Zhan Feng was truly in great pain; he had a suicidal impulse as he howled at the air. He shouted with his petty and powerless voice. Just a mere shout. His current voice no longer had any might to it.

“What? What did you say? Oh, so you don’t want me to protect you. You wish for death.” After hearing Zhan Feng’s shout, Eggy sweetly smiled, then said, “No problem, I’ll grant you your wish.”

whoosh After speaking, Eggy pulled back all the black flames that sealed Zhan Feng’s location, and he instantly lost his ability to stay in the air. With surprised and frightened cries, while struggling with his crippled body, he fell down from the air.

Chapter 766: A Calamity

"Lord Zhan Feng!" When they saw Zhan Feng fall from the sky, his minions all rose up and wanted to catch him.

whoosh

However, before letting them come into contact with Zhan Feng, the black flames in Eggy's body surged out again, enveloping all of them inside.

"Ahh—"

Soon after, the Martial Lords cried out in agony. Like Zhan Feng before, they were feeling the pain of their Source Energy and cultivation being sucked away.

Like the events before that occurred to Zhan Feng, from vigorous youths, they rapidly became elderly people with white and grey hair whose lives were constantly in danger.

poof, poof, poof...

After their Source Energy were sucked away completely, Eggy didn't kill them. Rather, she just dropped them onto the ground. The height was also just perfect—although they would break some bones, they wouldn't die.

It was an easy task if Eggy wanted to kill them. But, that was the exact thing she didn't do. Instead, she left them a breath of air. Those who could see could tell doing this was true cruelty.

Everyone felt dumbstruck when they witnessed such a thing. Not only were they unable to even squeeze out a word, they felt completely petrified.

The World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World was truly too merciless. Although she had such a beautiful appearance—one that was akin to a fairy's, that could move one's heart—but when she started, she ignored what sort of methods she used. She actually forcibly extracted their Source Energy and cultivation. Let alone those who had personally

experienced it, if one even heard of such a thing, chills would go down their spines.

"Eggy, you seem to be even domineering than I thought."

In reality, even as Eggy's master, Chu Feng couldn't help shaking his head. Although he had already offended those from the Immortal Execution Archipelago back then on the Misty Peak, it hadn't reached a degree where they were complete enemies.

At least, in public circumstances with outsiders, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn't dare to do much to Chu Feng.

But now, it was different. When Eggy forcefully turned Zhan Feng into his current state, it also meant he didn't put the Immortal Execution Archipelago in his eyes.

With Eggy's assistance, Chu Feng and the Immortal Execution Archipelago were truly like water and fire—both of them could not co-exist peacefully in the same world together. From today on, it was likely every time he were to meet the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they would meet with blades brandished to fight to the death.

That being said, Chu Feng didn't really blame Eggy. After all, he and the Immortal Execution Archipelago were fated to become that, so there wasn't much of a difference if it came a day sooner or later. Particularly, after the Misty Peak, it was already likely that the Immortal Execution Archipelago had written his name on a list of removal.

"Eggy, pick up the things they have on them," Chu Feng suddenly said.

whoosh Eggy didn't dally. By her will, she sucked over all of the Cosmos Sacks and treasures on their bodies. One of the most eye-grabbing items was naturally Zhan Feng's Incomplete Royal Armament.

After crippling Zhan Feng and the others, Eggy and Chu Feng both stripped away their fortunes in public.

"Here." After collecting all the items, she gave them to Chu Feng. Then, she raised her face slightly and said proudly, "How about it? I've done a

pretty good job, right?"

"An extremely beautiful job." Chu Feng nodded his head in praise.

"But of course." Eggy felt even more pleased after hearing Chu Feng's praises. With a sweet smile, she walked into the World Spirit Gate, leaving behind only deep fear for the crowd.

After Eggy returned to his body, Chu Feng put away Zhan Feng's Incomplete Royal Armament as well as the treasures from his minions. But, there was only one thing he didn't put away. Similarly, it was an Incomplete Royal Armament.

However, Zhan Feng had taken this from Chun Wu, so Chu Feng naturally had to return it to its owner.

"Senior Chun Wu, it's not too convenient to talk here. Let's switch locations," said Chu Feng after returning Chun Wu's Incomplete Royal Armament back to her.

"Mm." Putting away the armament, Chun Wu nodded. At that moment, her visage was not too good. She seemed to have also been a bit frightened by Eggy and Chu Feng.

whoosh Afterwards, the two leaped forward and fled, leaving behind the observers. They didn't know what to do—they couldn't really leave, they couldn't really stay... they could only stand on the spot with blank faces.

They looked at Zhan Feng and the others who previously had quite the extraordinary atmosphere. Yet now, they had not the slightest bit of cultivation and even turned from youthful appearances to elderly ones. Their lives were constantly on the line, and as they watched, everyone had very complicated emotions.

Although the one who turned Zhan Feng and the others into their current state was the Asura World Spirit, Eggy, in their eyes, the actual person who did that was really the young man named Wuqing. After all, regardless of how much more powerful the World Spirit was, she had to listen to Wuqing's orders.

Before, many people expressed doubt towards Wuqing's rumours. But

now, after witnessing, there was absolutely no one who dared to suspect anything anymore. They now knew that not only was Wuqing as powerful as the rumours said, he was also extremely terrifying.

At least, those who had personally witnessed everything decided that, in their hearts, unless absolutely necessary, they absolutely could not offend the young man called Wuqing.

Because he was an extremely ruthless person who feared nothing.

Let alone them, Wuqing even dared to cripple Zhan Feng, a genius who had such an extraordinary status.

Just as the crowd felt deep fear at what Chu Feng did, he had brought Chun Wu to a rather desolate area. Only when he saw no more traces of others did he lay a Concealment Formation and hid themselves within.

Although Chu Feng had a very indifferent expression regarding the crippling Zhan Feng and the others, it didn't represent he was unaware of how serious the situation was.

If the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago learnt of that, they were going to tear Chu Feng completely apart. It was likely putting up wanted posters all throughout the Eastern Sea Region was not something impossible for them with the power they had.

"Junior Wuqing, it's my fault. If it weren't for me, you wouldn't have...

"Ahh, I don't know what's best now. I'm afraid even the Misty Peak cannot protect you. After all, this...

"How about you leave the Eastern Sea Region? Otherwise, looking at the influence the Immortal Execution Archipelago has, I'm afraid..." At that moment, Chun Wu's face was swamped with worry. The girl, who was so fearless and bold, now panicked completely. She knew very well that Chu Feng had instigated a calamity.

"Senior Chun Wu, there's no need to be afraid. How about I show you something interesting?" In contrast to Chun Wu's worry, Chu Feng's face was serene.

“What is it?” Chun Wu felt puzzled at Chu Feng’s words.

Just at that moment, right before Chun Wu, Chu Feng used the Transformational Mask and changed his countenance, returning to his true appearance.

“Junior Wuqing, you...” Chun Wu was dumbfounded when she saw Chu Feng at that moment. She was a bit at a loss.

“Heh. Senior Chun Wu, to be honest, my real name is Chu Feng, and this is my real face.

“Just now, the one who crippled Zhan Feng was Wuqing, and the person who needs to face the Immortal Execution Archipelago is also Wuqing. None of that is related to me, Chu Feng.” The reason why he showed his actual appearance to Chun Wu was to let her calm down. He didn’t want her to feel guilt in her heart.

“Actually, I’ve already guessed that Wuqing isn’t your real name, and that you very likely had changed your appearance.

“But no matter what, I didn’t expect you’d be even younger than what I had thought!” Although Chun Wu’s worry had indeed diminished quite a bit, the shock on her face had reached the extreme.

Chapter 767: A Disaster

Chu Feng could only lightly smile when he saw Chun Wu's stunned expression. Then, he said, "Senior Chun Wu, why are you here? And how did you know I would appear at this place?"

"I only knew you would come here because I accidentally overheard a conversation between Master and Senior Qiushui.

"As for how I came here, it's because my master sent me off for a mission. After completing the mission, I coincidentally discovered it was rather close to this Depraved Ravine, so I came and checked it out.

"After all, I too want to see which is most powerful of the disciples of the Three Protectors. I've heard that each of their strengths is not inferior to Murong Xun's!

"Some people even think they are stronger than Murong Xun. They're geniuses who've disappeared for many years, right? Now, they've made a reappearance, so everyone is curious as to what degree of strength they've reached," said Chun Wu as she giggled. After knowing Chu Feng had the ability to conceal his identity, she wasn't that worried anymore. Now, she returned to her former lively, unrestrained, and playful attitude.

"I see. Then how did you clash with Zhan Feng?

"Even if you had some past conflicts in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, looking at Zhan Feng's nature, he shouldn't have restrained and attacked you for no reason," Chu Feng asked again.

"Of course he wouldn't for no reason. If it weren't because I caught onto a mistake and overheard something I shouldn't have heard..." Chun Wu said, pouting.

"What did you overhear?" Chu Feng asked.

"Heh, this is a big secret! But if it's true, this Depraved Ravine will be quite a bit more interesting~" said Chun Wu sweetly.

"What exactly is happening? Senior Chun Wu, please don't keep me in suspense," Chu Feng impatiently asked.

“Junior Chu Feng, I’m sure, with your Spirit Formation techniques, you should be able to see that our current location is not the deepest part of the Depraved Ravine. You should also know, then, that the true core is within the Spirit Formation, and that the true Depraved Ravine is within the Spirit Formation, right?” Chun Wu replied with a question.

“Mm. Indeed, that Spirit Formation is very powerful. No matter up in the sky or down into the ground, one cannot pass through it. If anyone wants to pass, they can only destroy the entire Spirit Formation first.

“But, from what I see, this Spirit Formation is extremely skillfully made. The entire formation is connected and contains equal energy throughout. If one strikes it, just a bit, the equalized energy would congregate to that location to defend against the strike. It is very difficult to destroy this formation, and even Martial Kings can do nothing to it.

“But, Senior Chun Wu, does your secret refer to this Spirit Formation?” Chu Feng asked.

“Of course not, but it is related. Everyone knows this place is one of the remains of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. However, no one knows of the importance of this place.

“Within the Depraved Ravine, there is a treasure,” said Chun Wu mysteriously.

“What treasure?” Chu Feng asked.

“I also don’t know what treasure it is; I only know there’s a treasure here from Zhan Feng and the others’ conversations.

“But, from what I’ve heard, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has already sent an army to sneak into this place. Even Murong Xun has come.

“Even of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s Nine Immortals, the Seventh Immortal, the Eighth Immortal, and also the Ninth Immortal have come. Although that Ninth Immortal is only at the peak of the Martial Lord realm, he possesses a Royal Bloodline and also cultivated a Forbidden Mysterious Technique. He has successfully melded both those

powers into one, and his fighting strength is extremely overwhelming. I've heard he is an existence that's invincible within the realm of Martial Lords.

"As for the Seventh Immortal and Eighth Immortal, they are even more impressive. They are both Martial Kings. For the Immortal Execution Archipelago to send such a strong formation of people out, I'm sure that the treasure within the Depraved Ravine must not be simple at all," Chun Wu said expectantly.

"Since there's treasure in this Depraved Ravine, and the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago also know of it, they should already be here. They must be unable to open the formation here so that's why they haven't made their move yet.

"And now, since they're sending so many people, they must have found the method to open the formation. Yet, if they had truly found it, what's stopping them from just directly opening it? Why must they be so secretive and do something so troublesome such as sneaking in?" Chu Feng contemplated, then, his eyes lit up. "Could it be because of the disciples of the Three Protectors?"

"Junior Wuqing, you are really too smart. It's exactly because of the disciples of the Three Protectors.

"I heard Zhan Feng and the others say that the reason why this formation is difficult to open is because the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect personally laid it. Back in the days, he was publicly agreed to be the strongest person in the Eastern Sea Region.

"Even the current head of the Immortal Execution Archipelago is likely inferior to him. Naturally, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is unable to open this formation.

"However, the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect know the method of opening this formation; after the sect disbanded, it was the four of them who activated this formation and sealed the Depraved Ravine.

"Right now, the disciples of the Three Protectors have come here for an

arranged battle. There is no other reason but because they all have the opening method passed down to them by the Three Protectors. Their goal is also the treasure in the Depraved Ravine.

"However, due to the tumult between the Four Protectors, the disciples of the Three Protectors are in discord as well. That's why they've set this arranged battle. Only the strongest is qualified to obtain the treasure inside.

"Ahh, on that topic, it is truly a pity. The head of the Four Protectors, Qiu Canfeng, had never accepted a disciple. Otherwise, what is soon to arrive would have been the battle between the disciples of the Four Protectors."

Chun Wu had a face of regret. But, if she were to know that Qiu Canfeng's disciple did come here, and it was Chu Feng, who knew what she would feel.

"That means the complete method of opening this formation is grasped within the hands of the Four Protectors, and that it'd be impossible with a single person?" Chu Feng asked.

"I believe so." Chun Wu nodded.

"At present, since the disciples of the Three Protectors have come, then there should be only three methods of breaking it. By lacking one, it is incomplete. How should it be opened then?" Chu Feng was confused.

"Although Qiu Canfeng doesn't have a disciple, perhaps he has already told the method of breaking it open to the three other Protectors? Although the Four Protectors have never been on good terms with one another, they have when facing an outside enemy," Chun Wu said.

"I hope so." Although Chu Feng nodded, he had a nagging feeling that his master didn't easily tell the fourth method to the other three Protectors.

In reality, Chu Feng also hoped that his master didn't tell that method to the three other Protectors. That way, even the disciples of the Three Protectors wouldn't be able to easily break open that formation.

As such, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's scheme of being "the fisherman that reaps the rewards" could not be used.

"Crap." However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's pupils suddenly shrank. His expression simultaneously changed greatly.

He hurriedly transformed his appearance back to "Wuqing," and at the same time, grabbed Chun Wu, bore into the ground, and planned to dig a way to escape.

Chapter 768: Murong Xun

Chu Feng shut his eyes and used Spirit power to determine the direction he was going. Within the rolling black dirt, he was like an underground dragon. All the earth that he passed through turned over as he speedily fled.

"Junior Wuqing, what happened? Why are you so alarmed?" Chun Wu's face was full of confusion when she saw this. They were initially having a good chat, so why did Chu Feng suddenly start fleeing? And he was even fleeing underground!

boom Just at that moment, a huge explosion suddenly rang out. Soon after, the black soil above Chu Feng and Chun Wu loosened, then rose straight up.

At the same time, both of them felt a powerful suction power—it had already bound them both. They had no strength to resist, and in the end, they could only speedily shift upward along with the large mass of soil.

Finally, the surrounding darkness turned bright. From their deeply burrowed location underneath, they returned to the surface. However, at that instant, it was not only Chu Feng who tightly furrowed his brows. Even Chun Wu's complexion changed greatly. In her eyes that were full of confusion earlier, indescribable uneasiness and trepidation now emerged.

At that very instant, three people stood in the air and were staring at the two of them.

Two of them were female, and one of them male. Both women had very pretty appearances, and even within a myriad of beauties, they would still be the most attracting ones.

One of them had a spicy figure, and a protruding front and behind. Her round, firm, and white breasts nearly burst out; it was extremely seductive, and infinitely alluring.

Such a figure, accompanied by her fox-like face, could most definitely

bewitch millions. That woman was none other than one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, Ya Fei.

As for the other beauty, though her appearance wasn't as great as Ya Fei's, she could still be counted to be a top-rank beauty—she was Murong Wan.

Chu Feng and Chun Wu could not be more familiar with those two. They were peak geniuses of the Immortal Execution Archipelago whose name stood on par with Zhan Feng's. Moreover, in terms of their position and status, both of them were far superior to Zhan Feng.

But, at present, Chu Feng's gaze was not locked onto their bodies. Rather, it was locked onto the man between the two of them.

He had a large physique and a fit body. In terms of external appearances, he was fairly typical—he wasn't really all that handsome. Though, he was absolutely not ugly either.

That being said, despite his ordinary appearance, beneath his pair of pitch-black sharp brows, there were two extremely fierce eyes. Those eyes had power to them despite his lack of fury; they gave off an atmosphere lacking in typical people.

Most importantly, in comparison to Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's rank-five-Martial-Lord cultivation, that person was much stronger. He was a rank eight Martial Lord, and the power that fettered Chu Feng and Chun Wu came from him.

Looking at his age, he seemed to be just thirty years old. Having such cultivation at such an age, his aptitude was rather impressive. Without much thinking, Chu Feng already knew who that person was.

"Murong Xun?" As expected, Chun Wu spoke, as she recognized that man. He was the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region, the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the fiancé of two great beauties—Ya Fei and Zi Ling—Murong Xun.

At that moment, Chun Wu truly felt terrified. Beside her, Chu Feng could feel her nervousness and uneasiness. Chun Wu not only recognized

Murong Xun, she finally also understood why Chu Feng suddenly started escaping.

He had definitely felt the arrival of Murong Xun and the others with his sharp Spirit power.

But, she didn't understand one thing: Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were so powerful, so reasonably only very few people could discover the Concealment Spirit Formation that he laid. How did Murong Xun find them?

But, no matter how Murong Xun did it, she had to admit they were currently in a perilous situation where they had but a fraction of a chance to live; she more or less knew of Murong Xun's temperament.

"Lady Chun Wu, I truly haven't seen you in a while. I, however, have not come here for you today, but for the person next to you.

"As for the reason, I'm sure you know it well. But, because of Senior Piaomiao, no matter what sort of grievances you had with Zhan Feng before, you were not the one who crippled him. So, I will let it pass. Leave, right now." Murong Xun's words were spoken quite calmly, but Chun Wu knew what dangers were contained within.

"No..." At that instant, Chun Wu's first thought was to refuse. The only reason why Chu Feng beat Zhan Feng was to save her, so she simply could not just... abandon Chu Feng.

"Senior Chun Wu, quickly leave. Leave this place as fast as possible. You will only distract me by being here; it'll be very difficult for me to escape then." But just at that moment, Chu Feng hurried sent Chun Wu a mental message.

"No." Chun Wu shook her head, her face full of resolution, as though she had already made the preparations to die. She didn't want Chu Feng to die because of her, nor could she let Chu Feng die alone.

"Even if I die, Senior Qiushui and Senior Piaomiao at least have to know who killed me, so in the future, there will be people who avenge me.

"But, if you die alongside me, there will be no one who can take revenge

for me, nor for you.

"Besides, I truly do have methods to escape. I am only unable to use them because you are here. Believe me, Murong Xun won't kill me that easily. I can escape," said Chu Feng very confidently.

When Chu Feng acted in such a way, Chun Wu really didn't know what to say. She actually didn't particularly believe Chu Feng had the ability to escape from Murong Xun's grasp, but if Chu Feng did, he would be unwilling to leave due to her—he would not be able to use that escaping method. By staying behind, it would be equal to harming Chu Feng.

"Junior Chu Feng, you must hang on. I'll think of a way to notify my master right now and have her save you.

"If you are able to safely escape, you must send a message to the Misty Peak." Despite her unwillingness, Chun Wu had no choice. After leaving behind that mental message, she turned around, and left.

Murong Xun and the others weren't able to hear the mental conversation between Chun Wu and Chu Feng, but they could still tell what the two of them did.

However, they weren't concerned what their conversation held because in Murong Xun's perspective, Chu Feng had only one path he could walk—a road of death. He didn't have the ability to escape.

"Do you know who I am?" said Murong Xun indifferently. But as he spoke, he had a prideful demeanor about him that was akin to a lord questioning a commoner from high above. In his eyes, Chu Feng was an extremely lowly citizen.

"Hoh, of course I do.

"Aren't you the renowned and famous young master of the grand Immortal Execution Archipelago, the great sex fiend that everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knows about, Murong Xun?"

Chu Feng lightly squinted his eyes, and formed a hint of a mocking smile. He was not the slightest bit suppressed by Murong Xun's formless atmosphere.

He could suppress others with the demeanor he gave off, but to use that to scare Chu Feng... he shouldn't even think about it.

"Insolence!" When he saw Chu Feng's fearless attitude when facing him, and even said he was a "great sex fiend" before his fiancée, that made Murong Xun furious. Rays of chilliness instantly emerged into his eyes.

"Is that not true? Lady Ya Fei, you should know very well whether he's a sex fiend or not. Doesn't he always want to go to bed and sleep with you?" Chu Feng said as he smiled and looked at Ya Fei; his gaze was filled with hints of his attempt to spark conflict.

Chapter 769: Fighting Shoulder to Shoulder

“Wuqing, you are truly audacious. We initially didn’t plan to do anything regarding what happened inside the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

“But I didn’t think you would dare to publicly destroy Zhan Feng’s cultivation, and even suck away his life, turning him into a cripple.

“No matter how much forgiveness my Immortal Execution Archipelago possesses, I cannot find any reason to let you go.

“Do you have any last words? I can help you pass them down to your unknown master.” Ya Fei calmly smiled. She didn’t take Chu Feng’s bait and instead, mocked him back.

“I have no last words, but I do have something I’d like to ask you,” said Chu Feng with a smile.

“For a pitiful person like you who’s about to die, I’ll give you that chance. What question? Go ahead,” said Ya Fei openly.

“Are you still a virgin?” Chu Feng smiled as he spoke shamelessly.

“You...” Ya Fei’s face changed immediately with whoosh after hearing those words. No matter how great her limit, she could not leave that alone. Everyone had their bottom line, and Chu Feng’s question perfectly crossed Ya Fei’s bottom line.

roar~~~ At that moment, Ya Fei was as enraged as a thunderstorm. Cold fury surged within her eyes, and the surrounding space burst with explosions. Even the winds and clouds in the air changed due to her as she expanded her aura of a rank five Martial Lord, and started directly throwing attacks at Chu Feng.

“Haha, it seems that I was right! You’ve indeed already been taken down by that big fiend, heh heh...” Although he saw Ya Fei attack, Chu Feng was still not afraid at all. Instead, he laughed with more immense

shamelessness.

In a blink, both of them were in a battle. Shockwaves that touched upon the sky started exploding everywhere.

Murong Xun didn't attack; he only watched in silence. Looking at Chu Feng's strength, Murong Xun felt that he wasn't worthy for his own attacks. He also felt, with Ya Fei's strength, she could very quickly take care of Chu Feng.

But soon, his brows lightly knitted, and some shock emerged into his eyes. Even though Ya Fei held the advantage, at that very instant, Ya Fei, as a rank five Martial Lord, was truly unable to defeat Chu Feng immediately, a rank two Martial Lord.

"Wan'er, go help your sister-in-law," Murong Xun said to Murong Wan.

"As if I'll help her." But without even thinking, Murong Wan refused instantly.

Murong Xun seemed to have expected such a situation, Not only did he lack any anger, he even smiled lightly and said very patiently, "Wan'er, the global situation is of utmost importance. No matter if you like Ya Fei or not, she is still your future sister-in-law. This is set—you cannot change it.

"Also, putting aside Ya Fei, no matter if you liked Zhan Feng or not, he is still a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"It doesn't matter what internal conflicts there are, but when facing an outside enemy, we must be united. Don't forget what Father said, or what you promised him.

"Right now, Zhan Feng has become a cripple. Regardless what he was before, as a person of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, shouldn't you avenge him?"

After hearing Murong Xun's words, Murong Wan lightly knitted her brows as well. She curled her lips again, but ultimately, she leaped forward and entered the battle between Ya Fei and Chu Feng.

If it were a normal battle, Chu Feng already felt an enormous pressure when facing Ya Fei. If he continued, with the cultivation Chu Feng currently had, it would be very difficult to defeat Ya Fei. He was certainly going to be suppressed.

And Murong Wan's cultivation and strength was pretty much the same as Ya Fei's. So after she joined the circle of battle, the pressure Chu Feng felt instantly doubled.

But, he seemed to have already expected a situation like that. He didn't just lack the appearance of being trouble, a hint of a light smile even arose.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng rapidly backed away. In the location he was before, a gate appeared.

wuao~ At the same time, endless black flames burst out of the gate. Instantly, it engulfed Ya Fei and Murong Wan.

"This is?!" At that instant, even Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's face changed, because they could feel what sort of terrifying aura was within the black flames. It was simply something they had never seen before.

"Eggy, I'll leave these two to you. I want them alive." The smirk on Chu Feng's face became even wider when he saw that.

Chu Feng had planned out everything—he intentionally provoked Ya Fei, leading to her attack. Then, catching them off guard, he released Eggy. With that, he could have Eggy capture Ya Fei while they were unprepared.

And, as long as he had hostages, especially two—Ya Fei and Murong Wan—even though Murong Xun was there, he wouldn't be able to keep Chu Feng behind.

"Scatter!" However, just as Chu Feng's thought-out plan was about to succeed, Murong Xun, who stood in the air, shouted. An invisible power then burst out of him, shooting straight towards the black flames Eggy made.

boom When that power arrived, it immediately started an intense battle

with Eggy's flames. The winds and clouds surged about, and the sky's colour changed. Boundless shock waves seemed as if they could consume everything. Even Ya Fei and Murong Xun were affected, being pushed back over several thousand meters away.

But, Murong Xun was truly very powerful. No matter how much more exceptional Eggy's fighting strength was, before him, it seemed to all lose its power. Eggy's horrifying flames from the Asura Spirit World was dispelled by Murong Xun.

"Chu Feng, run! This person is very strong; he is not someone we can take care of!" At that instant, the usually confident and proud Eggy also knitted her brows as some worry emerged into her eyes.

After receiving Eggy's mental message, Chu Feng understood everything. There was a limit to the power of Eggy's fighting strength.

The might of Murong Xun, a rank eight Martial Lord, was unstoppable; it was clearly not something Eggy, at her present state, could defend against. Of course, even less so for Chu Feng. The title of the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region was indeed not a baseless rumour.

But even so, Chu Feng couldn't simply just abandon Eggy. He knew when a World Spirit stepped out of the World Spirit Gate and entered this world, there was a distance restriction between the World Spirit and the World Spiritist. Exceeding that restriction would mean the death of the World Spirit.

This distance was very short as well, with the Spirit power Chu Feng currently had. If Chu Feng left Eggy behind, after a certain distance, even if Murong Xun were willing to let Eggy go, what awaited her was nothing but death—it'd be the same as Chu Feng killing Eggy.

As a result, Chu Feng didn't just stay behind. He walked in the air, straight towards Eggy. He only stopped after arriving by her side.

"You... Why didn't you listen to my words? Do you not want to live?" Eggy seemed a bit angry when she saw what Chu Feng did.

"I can't allow you to fight alone anymore. Otherwise, I really won't be

too qualified to be a master," said Chu Feng as he faintly smiled. In contract, however, his eyes were full of the decisiveness of fighting on.

"Less of these shameless big words! I've never recognized you as my master." Eggy curled her lips, but then, revealed an enchanting smile on her exceptionally beautiful face. Although she was very angry at Chu Feng's obstinate action, her heart was actually quite warm.

It, at least, meant she didn't judge him wrong.

Chapter 770: Legend

In reality, after a clear view of Eggy, Murong Xun, Murong Wan, and Ya Fei were all completely dumbfounded.

From their experiences, they were able to instantly tell that Eggy's origin was not a simple one. Their first thought was that she came from the Demon Spirit World. After all, her dark aura was very similar to those found in that world.

But soon, they scratched out that thought. Eggy's aura was only of a rank two Martial Lord's. Yet, just now, even Ya Fei and Murong Wan were both unable to fight back. A World Spirit from the Demon Spirit World could not possibly be that powerful.

So, they ended up with the conclusion that Eggy was likely a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World.

However, they never would have thought there'd be such a beautiful World Spirit in this world. Not to mention Murong Wan, even Ya Fei appeared slightly outshined. She couldn't help feeling envy in her heart towards Eggy's appearance.

As for Murong Xun, his complexion slightly changed. Even though he concealed it very deeply, Chu Feng could still tell that his eyes started restlessly looking left and right underneath Eggy's feather skirt, at her snow-white and slender legs. Then, they returned to Eggy's beautiful face and her exquisite, alluring, and proud chest.

Even a fool could tell what Murong Xun had planned. That person, as Chu Feng said, was an ardent great sex fiend that loved beauty.

However, if his lecherous gaze were removed, Chu Feng also detected two things: envy and fury, from deep within his heart. That envy and fury was not directed towards Eggy, but him.

Obviously, Murong Xun felt displeased because of Chu Feng's ability to have a World Spirit like her.

"No wonder you were so arrogant, to dare to publicly oppose my

Immortal Execution Archipelago. So you made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World."

Murong Xun words were full of envy. As he spoke, he turned to Eggy, and said, "But sadly, lady, you chose the wrong person. This Wuqing is not worthy to be your master."

"Choosing who to be my master is my own business. I don't need you to judge it. Do you think he's unqualified, and you are? Not that I'm looking down on you, but you are not even worthy to raise my shoe, let alone being my master," said Eggy extremely disdainfully.

"You..." Murong Xun's expression changed greatly upon those words.

"What you? Don't think you're so impressive with your marginally stronger cultivation. You're almost thirty-something now, yet you're only a Martial Lord. You think that's worthy of pride?

"You are but the frog at the bottom of a well.1 You can only find some feeling of superiority in this place. I, however, can tell you this is precisely 'there are skies beyond this sky'. Don't think you are truly powerful because you are powerful here. In a certain place in this world, there are countless people who are younger than you that can drown you to death with spit."

Eggy curled her lips, her words extremely sharp. They didn't just express the contempt she had towards Murong Xun, it humiliated him deeply as well.

And, as the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, titled as the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region, Murong Xun was mocked so unremorsefully before his fiancée and his sister. No matter how great his tolerance, his current emotions were unavoidably a bit uncontrollable.

"Hahaha..." Reaching the extremes of anger, Murong Xun instead laughed. Then, he said, very displeasedly, "The servant truly follows the master. The conceited master brings about an even more conceited servant.

“According to what you’ve said, I, Murong Xun, am a piece of garbage? Hmph, not being boastful, but I can tell you that even in the Holy Land of Martialism, with my aptitude, I can definitely still become a prominent character.”

“Holy Land of Martialism? You at most know what the name of that land is.

“I already said you’re a frog at the bottom of a well, yet you don’t believe me.

“Little frog, the size of this world surpasses your imagination, you know? But, I won’t tell you too much, otherwise I fear you will cry from fright.” Eggy smiled with mockery, and in her beautiful eyes, what glittered was nothing but contempt towards Murong Xun. Indeed, in Eggy’s eyes, a person like Murong Xun was not even worth mentioning.

“Quite a tone you have there. You are a mere World Spirit, but you take yourself as some invincible person?

“So what if you come from the Asura Spirit World? There is no need for me to personally attack; my World Spirits can easily take care of you.”

Furious—Murong Xun was completely furious due to Eggy’s provocations. By his will, twenty Spirit Formation Gates opened by his side, one after the other. Soon after, twenty three-meter tall figures all walked out.

They were World Spirits. Twenty rank six Martial Lord World Spirits.

Their appearances were a bit special—they seemed like people, yet their physiques were a bit larger than humans. Moreover, they had sharp ears, blue eyes, and yellow, long hair.

Something that had to be mentioned as well was their powerful auras. It was far beyond humans in the same realm, and even superior to World Spirits from the Beast Spirit World and Ghost Spirit World.

“Elf World Spirits? Hoh, they are still inferior things.”

After seeing that group of World Spirits, the disdain on the corners of

Eggy's mouth became even stronger. As a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, let alone these World Spirits from the Elf Spirit World, she pretty much didn't put the World Spirits from the Fairy Spirit World, Demon Spirit World, and even the Buddha Spirit World in her eyes.

"Hehe, it truly is a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World. They say those in the Asura Spirit World are arrogant, not putting the World Spirits from any other Spirit World into their eyes, and they see themselves as the ruler of the Seven Worlds. Today, let us see the impressiveness of a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World!"

As Eggy examined them, those World Spirits were also examining Eggy. After confirming she only had the cultivation of a rank two Martial Lord, all of them were fearless and confident, and they were impatient to get started.

"A pile of trash. All of you, come together! It'll save me the trouble of taking care of you one by one." But Eggy was still not afraid even though there were twenty rank six Martial Lord World Spirits.

"Quite arrogant words. Today, we'll give a good lesson to a little lady from the Asura Spirit World."

whoosh whoosh whoosh Suddenly, the twenty World Spirits all rose and attacked at the same time.

The eerie green light they emitted from their bodies made them, who were already so powerful, even more terrifying. They starting fighting Eggy in an instant.

However, even though they had the advantage of numbers, as well as powerful strength, Eggy was not disadvantaged.

wuao Black flames, akin to what a demon created, covered the sky and sun. While it did so, as Eggy willed, it made no defensive maneuvers. Ferocious attacks were what it did only.

In a situation like that, the World Spirits from the Elf Spirit World, who were confident and thought they could suppress Eggy with the difference in cultivation levels, were all stupefied. From the start, they were forced

into a passive state. They could only defend and not attack; they had entered a horrendous situation.

Eggy not only fought against twenty alone, she even fought rank sixes as a rank two, and suppressed them.

“So this is a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, huh? Isn’t it a bit too powerful?” The faces of Ya Fei and Murong Wan tightened up when they saw such a scene. Their eyes endlessly glittered, being deeply stunned by Eggy’s power. That level of fighting strength was something they had never seen before, nor heard before. It was even something they didn’t dare to imagine before.

“Asura Spirit World!” At that instant, even the conceited Murong Xun tightly furrowed his brows, some coldness and envy glittering in his eyes.

Now, they finally understood why the World Spirits from the Asura Spirit World were titled as legends.

*

1. Alternatively: Gazing the sky from the bottom of the well. Meaning your knowledge of the world is very limited.

Chapter 771: Fragmented Heart

wuao~

The black flames gave rise to chaos in the air. It not only caused the space to collapse, it even kept on making odd howls and shrieks. It was very horrifying.

Beneath such a burst of power, the twenty World Spirits from the Elf Spirit World lost their ability to resist completely. They actually yelled at Murong Xun, saying, “Master, save me!”

“All trash!” When he saw such a scene, Murong Xun’s complexion turned green from anger. However, he did not save the World Spirits who served him with their lives.

boom Finally, a deafening explosion rang out; Eggy used her final attack. Within the berserk black flames, all twenty rank six Martial Lord World Spirits were killed by Eggy. None were left alive.

“So this is a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World? Truly unbelievable. If she’s already like this as a rank two Martial Lord, what sort of fighting ability would she have if she were a rank six Martial Lord?”

Ya Fei and Murong Wan were completely dumbstruck by that scene. If they couldn’t defeat Eggy... then so be it. Yet, even those rank six Martial Lord World Spirits couldn’t defeat Eggy. They had to admit that she was really too terrifying.

“Brother, kill her. That World Spirit can absolutely not be left alive.” Murong Wan suddenly spoke. They and Chu Feng were enemies—that was final. Yet now, Chu Feng had assistance from such an area. If he and Eggy were not removed, they would give rise to infinite troubles in the future.

Although Murong Wan wasn’t like Zhan Feng and Ya Fei—who felt so much disgust and hate towards Chu Feng—she would not be softhearted at issues affecting the safety of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Lady, I must admit that you’ve truly let me witness inconceivable

power. You—are very strong.

"But, as I said, you didn't find the appropriate master. No matter how much stronger you are, you are fated to die here.

"That being said, I will give you a chance right now. How about you abandon that piece of trash, and follow me instead?" said Murong Xun smilingly. He actually wanted to get Eggy.

The reason he did this was not only because of her appearance. Even more so, it was because of Eggy's strength. After experiencing her overwhelming and illogical power, his heart was truly moved.

"Ha... Haha... Hahahaha!" However, after hearing Murong Xun's words, Eggy couldn't stop laughing. She seemed like a person who heard the funniest thing ever.

"What are you laughing at?" Murong Xun's brows inverted when he saw that, his visage turning ugly.

"Foolish. Extremely foolish. Do you know why the World Spirits you made contracts with were those from the Elf Spirit World?" asked Eggy as she smiled.

"Why?" Murong Xun asked.

"It's because from that very instant, you were destined to be unworthy of the power from the Asura Spirit World.

"Not to mention the Asura Spirit World, you are even unworthy of the World Spirits from the Buddha Spirit World, Fairy Spirit World, and Demon Spirit World! You can only command those trash-like Elf Spirit World World Spirits, because you are trash as well! Hahaha!"

As she spoke those words, Eggy's voice was extremely clear. Moreover, every single word was akin to a loud slap that fiercely struck Murong Xun's face.

He was truly enraged at that moment. Refusing him was one thing, yet she was now so nakedly humiliating him, saying he was inferior to Chu Feng. That was the final straw.

So, by Murong Xun's will, two more World Spirits walked out. They were both World Spirits from the Elf Spirit World, but the atmosphere surrounding them was completely different—they were two rank seven Martial Lord World Spirits.

"Crap." After seeing those two World Spirits, Chu Feng tightly furrowed his brows. He had been observing everything. Although Eggy did indeed defeat twenty of them just now, while she faced the rank six Martial Lord World Spirits, she was already pressured. Killing them had required an enormous price from Eggy.

Thus, no matter the power of Eggy's fighting strength, Chu Feng knew, with her cultivation of a rank two Martial Lord, she had nearly no chance of being victorious as she faced the two rank seven Martial Lord World Spirits.

Eggy too seemed to realize that. But, there was not the slightest bit of fluctuation of emotions on her face. She turned her head slightly, and with her big, glossy eyes, she squinted them to form two beautiful crescents. Then, she beautifully smiled, and sent a mental message to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, listen up. One dying is always better than two dying.

"Right now, run. I have one technique that can help delay them. Remember, you must run, otherwise I will hate you for the rest of my life.

"However, you must also remember if, after I use this technique, you are still unable to escape, then before they kill you, release that other guy in your body.

"Let everyone know the price of killing you—to have destruction arise over the entire Eastern Sea Region.

"Let these ignorant weak experience what is true strength."

As Eggy spoke those words, Chu Feng felt a sharp pain in his mind; he obtained some information. It was information Eggy told him—the method to open the seal to the other World Spirit in his World Spirit Space.

“Kill, kill he—wait. Don’t let her die so easily. Shame her. You two take care of this girl, but you must let me feel satisfied.” After releasing the two World Spirits, Murong Xun’s despicable face returned. He commanded the two of them to disgrace Eggy.

But just at that moment, Eggy had silently turned back around. She cast her relaxed gaze at the two incoming World Spirits. A disdainful smile still hung upon her face.

It was because in her perspective, even though their strengths were currently stronger than hers, they were still unworthy to be her opponent.

If her true cultivation weren’t sealed, not to mention them, even the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region, in Eggy’s eyes, were nothing.

“Eggy!” Chu Feng realized the horrible turn of events and couldn’t help hysterically yelling.

When she saw Chu Feng hadn’t run yet, Eggy was enraged. She shouted at Chu Feng, “Scram! Don’t let me die for no reason! Don’t let her painstakingly wait, and don’t leave her there, unable to escape this sea of pain!

“Scram! You still have many things to do; you cannot die here. LEAVE!”

After leaving those words behind, the boundless black flames once again burst out of Eggy’s body and surged, spreading.

The flames soared up, entering the blue sky, through the layers of white clouds. They went down, into the earth, through the layers of black soil. Instantly, they became a wall that roiled and sealed a part of the world, separating Chu Feng from Murong Xun and the others.

“NO—” Chu Feng couldn’t help but yell when he saw that. He already knew what Eggy was going to do—she was going to use up everything she had, sacrificing herself to fight for a chance to let Chu Feng escape.

“Do not let me die for no reason, run!” However, just at that moment, Chu Feng endlessly recalled Eggy’s voice in his head—her voice that urged him to leave.

Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists, so much they creaked. He felt hatred—he hated himself for being useless, powerless to protect even his own World Spirit.

Yet, he had no other choice because, when things progressed to what they were, stubbornly staying behind would mean it was a useless sacrifice, wasting Eggy's effort.

In the end, Chu Feng could only bring with him the feeling of wishing he were dead as well as incomparable hatred, then turn around, and leave.

boom rumble rumble However, before Chu Feng escaped for that great of a distance, a deafening explosion suddenly resonated behind him. The black-coloured wall Eggy made shattered.

ta At that moment, Chu Feng couldn't help but stop moving and turn around to look. His pupils abruptly shrank, his body violently quivered, and in that single instant, he felt his entire heart fragment into pieces.

Chapter 772: I Will Eat You

In the sky, Eggy's unique black-coloured flames were still squirming, but they were akin to defeated soldiers who lost their general, to a physical body that lacked a soul. The horrifying aura from before was no more, and what remained was only dispiritedness and helplessness that faded away in the air.

However, even after the black flames vanished completely, Chu Feng was unable to see Eggy. It was as if she had completely disappeared.

Standing in the air were only Murong Xun, Ya Fei, Murong Wan, and the two rank seven Martial Lord World Spirits.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt his mind go blank; his heart too felt as if it had stopped. In his entire life, it was the first time he felt all hope disintegrating into dust.

He, who had made a contract with Eggy, was currently unable to feel her existence; there was not even a trace of connection. He realized something from such a result.

Pain, Indescribable pain in his heart. So painful it was unbearable. Even his body was trembling, and he had no force that propelled him to continue escaping, as if, at that instant, he too had died.

"Tsktsktsk, what an admirable move of the servant saving the master. Sadly, however, the servant's powerful, but the master's a bit too trash."

Murong Xun had a very wide smile on his face. It was a very happy smile, because at that moment, his depression and fury were all relieved. But, even so, it was insufficient to satisfy him.

"Fei'er, Wan'er, go cripple him to avenge Zhan Feng," Murong Xun ordered.

"Mm." Murong Wan didn't have a trace of hesitation as she walked over in the air towards Chu Feng. Without the powerful World Spirit, Eggy, she didn't fear Chu Feng in the slightest.

Especially so when Chu Feng, at present, seemed to have lost all his will

to fight. Like a rotten fish, he stood there, allowing himself to be cut by anyone.

"Do you not feel disgust? I've told you many times already, don't call me Fei'er." However, surprisingly, Ya Fei expressed annoyance at Murong Xun's intimate addressing.

"Fei'er, you are mine, sooner or later. Why must you be like this?" Murong Xun furrowed his brows slightly, but he was not angry. Instead, a bit of grievance was within his eyes.

"The future is not certain yet. Even if I will marry you, that is in the future. At least, right now, I am not yours," said Ya Fei, annoyed. Then, she looked at Chu Feng. Only then did a smirk rise, and she said, "But torturing this Wuqing... I am quite willing to do that."

After speaking, Ya Fei leaped forward, arriving before Chu Feng. As she stood there, she mocked Murong Wan, who held a sharp dagger, saying, "What? You can't bear doing it?"

"No matter who, I will not show mercy to those who dare to become an enemy to the Immortal Execution Archipelago." Murong Wan coldly snorted, and as she spoke, the dagger in her hand abruptly dropped down. With a puchi, it entered Chu Feng's chest. Large amounts of blood then gushed out.

"You..." However, at that instant, Murong Wan, who stabbed Chu Feng, paled, as if scared. She couldn't help backing away.

When she stabbed down with her dagger, not to mention crying out loud, Chu Feng didn't even react to it. Nothing on his body showed any change due to pain, and he was only using his dull, lifeless eyes to look in the direction that Eggy had been in.

"Gogogo, step aside. You call this torturing?" Ya Fei looked at Murong Xun with her disdainful gaze, then made a wicked smile, and said, "Wuqing, I'm sure you didn't think you would land into my hands again, right? Do you remember how I tortured you last time?"

As if he didn't hear them, Chu Feng didn't show the slightest bit of

reaction to Ya Fei's words.

Seeing that, Ya Fei's brows immediately slanted inwards. She was enraged as she coldly shouted, "You wouldn't think I'm afraid of that illusion, and don't dare to do anything to you, right? I don't mind telling you this: I fear absolutely nothing. No matter who, so long as that person offends me, I will have them dead."

After speaking, Ya Fei's wrist twisted slightly, then an Incomplete Royal Armament appeared in her hand. Afterwards, she waved it abruptly, and with a kacha, Chu Feng's left arm was forcibly sliced off by Ya Fei.

However, even so, Chu Feng did not even twitch his brows, as if he weren't able to feel pain anymore.

"You are quite able to endure, but let me see how long you can do so." Ya Fei was infuriated by Chu Feng's lack of expression. Holding the Incomplete Royal Armament, she started jabbing it into Chu Feng's body, bit by bit.

Every single thrust broke his skin, through his muscles, and even cut off tendons and bones. In the end, they even pierced completely through Chu Feng's body.

After more of those, Chu Feng's clothes were drenched wet—in blood. At that moment, he was a bloody person; his body looked like a sieve as it had holes pierced through it. However, his emotions were unchanged. His gaze remained cast towards the location Eggy was last seen; he didn't even blink.

"Impressive, you truly didn't even make any sound. However, let me see if you can still remain this calm when you die."

Ya Fei gnashed her teeth due to anger. She really hated Chu Feng, because he was the first person who made her pay such a huge price. The grudge she felt towards Chu Feng had accumulated for a long time, and only today by torturing Chu Feng would her fury be dispelled.

However, when Chu Feng lacked any reaction despite being subjected to such cruel torture, she was clearly unable to fully vent her anger. In a

time like this, taking Chu Feng's life was the thing she wanted to do the most.

"Wait." But just as Ya Fei raised the sword in her hand, preparing to chop Chu Feng into two, Murong Xun suddenly yelled, then arrived before Chu Feng, and said to Ya Fei, "Killing him now is doing him too great of a favour."

Although Ya Fei felt a bit unwilling, she still backed away to the side. She knew, in terms of tormenting people, Murong Xun was superior to her.

"Wuqing, your heart must hurt a lot, right? A beauty such as her died because of you.

"From what I see, you liked her a lot. But, that's very normal. After all, who wouldn't like such a beauty? I'm sure you too liked her only because of her appearance and strength, right?"

Murong Xun smugly grinned. As he spoke, he intentionally lowered his voice, put his mouth by Chu Feng's ear, and said, "You know, actually, when I first laid my eyes upon her, I had already wanted to conquer her, to make her into a pet underneath my crotch, free to abuse and humiliate.

"Ahh~, that girl's figure was truly quite nice. There were really no words to describe her pretty face, and to be honest, she moved my heart more than my fiancée, Ya Fei.

"If I had taken such a beauty into my embrace, then toyed with her however I wished to, that would most definitely be a fortuitous event in life. But sadly, she is already gone.

"That's right. Have you ever even touched such a beautiful girl? I'm guessing you must haven't yet. She looked down on even me, so how could trash like you be worthy for her? Hahaha..."

As he spoke, there unceasingly hung a smile on Murong Xun's face. Moreover, it was a very shameless smile. He wanted to agitate Chu Feng in that manner exactly—to agitate the deepest agony in his heart, so he'd wish he were dead.

“I will eat you!” Just at that time, Chu Feng, who had remained silent, abruptly shouted. At the same time, he suddenly opened his mouth, revealing his two perfect rows of teeth, and bit down at Murong Xun.

“Ahh—” Being caught off guard, Murong Xun let out a painful cry as, from his face, Chu Feng’s bite chomped away a large chunk of flesh.

Chapter 773: Mutual Death?

"Ahh—"

A cry rang out; Murong Wan and Ya Fei were both shocked.

They saw that Murong Xun, who was whispering something extremely near Chu Feng, separated quickly from him. As he did so, blood was flowing down on the side of Murong Xun's face.

Turning their gazes back at Chu Feng, he appeared even more terrifying. A chilly glint emerged in his eyes, full of icy-cold killing intent. His mouth was also full of blood, as he was chewing Murong Xun's flesh.

"I will eat you!" Chu Feng shouted, then opened his crimson mouth, and like a bloodthirsty demon, pounced towards Murong Xun again.

"Brother, be careful!" Murong Wan was frightened by Chu Feng's current appearance. Putting aside strength, she was thoroughly horrified by him due to the demeanor he exuded.

"Hell, I will kill you!" But, Murong Xun wasn't Murong Wan. Although he felt a bit of fright in his heart as he faced the incoming Chu Feng, he did not shrink away because he firmly believed, with his strength of a rank eight Martial Lord, he would have absolutely no problem dealing with Chu Feng. And, killing Chu Feng was akin to stamping on an ant.

bang Murong Xun threw a punch straight at Chu Feng. Before his fist even struck, the shock wave struck Chu Feng first, causing him to vomit blood. Then, he was thrown back. Only after being launched for almost ten thousand meters did Chu Feng fall from the sky, sharply crashing onto the ground.

At that instant, crackling sounds came from every single part of Chu Feng. Murong Xun's punch had completely shattered Chu Feng's breastbone, and even his organs were affected.

Ya Fei's jabs before had already wounded over half of Chu Feng's internal organs, and no part of his outside was unscathed.

However, to a cultivator at Chu Feng's level, broken limbs could be

regrown, and any organs or whatever were not too related to one's ability to live.

The most important thing for a cultivator like him was the Source Energy deep in his bones, as well as the power within the dantian. As long as those two areas were unharmed, no matter how big of an injury the body underwent, there would exist only pain. All wounds had their respective methods of restoration.

boom After Chu Feng crashed onto the ground, Murong Xun too descended. One of his feet stepped on Chu Feng's leg, forcibly snapping it.

"Kneel down and call me 'grandfather', otherwise you will obtain neither life nor death, and live the remainder of your life in the pettiest possible state."

At that moment, blood still unceasingly flowed down Murong Xun's face. After a chunk of his flesh was chomped away, his current furious and vicious expression was emphasized, making him even more sinister and horrifying. He was truly enraged, because a surprise attack from a person six full levels below him succeeded. To him, that was most definitely an enormous disgrace.

However, a cold smile rose on Chu Feng's face as he heard Murong Xun's request.

That smile was very difficult to describe, but after Murong Xun saw it, his heart unavoidably trembled. A peculiar type of uneasiness surged into his heart, then spread throughout his body. At that moment, he was actually, for some reason, afraid. Even though he didn't know why, his heart undeniably felt uneasiness.

"Smile? Hell, you're still smiling? Fine, keep smiling!" shouted Murong Xun furiously. As he spoke, he stamped two times at Chu Feng's other leg, forcibly snapping it as well.

However, the smile on Chu Feng's face didn't just remain there, it became even wider.

After Eggy died, he was already prepared: he planned to take away Murong Xun's life with his own.

If he wanted Murong Xun to die, then he had to pay the price—his own death. If he wanted to kill Murong Xun, he could only release the World Spirit sealed in his body.

However, that World Spirit was in a very frenzied state, and it had very strong resentment. If it were released, Chu Feng would definitely be the first person it'd kill because it was Chu Feng's body that sealed it for that many years.

One could even say that the World Spirit was a taboo for Chu Feng; its power wasn't something he could control. However, in a time like this, that taboo was Chu Feng's optimal tool of revenge.

"Hell, keep smiling! Let me see if you can continue doing that."

As if oppressed by Chu Feng's smile to the point he felt fear, or perhaps he felt more and more furious due to Chu Feng's smile, Murong Xun raised his foot and stamped towards Chu Feng's dantian, aiming to destroy his cultivation.

But, Chu Feng, who had already prepared to die, no longer cared about that. He already knew Murong Xun wouldn't easily kill him, and because of exactly that, it bought him time to unseal the gate within his World Spirit Space. As long as he did, he knew everything would end.

boom

"Ahh!"

However, an unexpected scene occurred. In the instant Murong Xun stamped down at Chu Feng's dantian, a huge explosion resounded from it.

Not only was Murong Xun unable to successfully stomp down, he was even forced back.

As he stabilized himself in the air, his complexion involuntarily changed. His eyes were full of shock, because as he stamped on Chu Feng's dantian, he felt as if he sank into hell.

That single instant alone was enough for him to tremble from fright. At that moment, his body broke out in cold sweat, and even his leg was uncontrollably quivering.

“This guy... What is with him?”

Murong Xun, for the first time, seriously looked at Chu Feng. Putting aside Eggy, the World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, he discovered that Chu Feng himself was not simple at all. Within his body, there seemed to exist something. Something extremely terrifying, so terrifying one could not describe it.

“Brother, you’re okay, right?” asked Murong Wan nervously as she saw that something was wrong, and came up to Murong Xun.

“What happened?” Ya Fei came up to him as well, because it was the first time she saw such a panicked expression emerging onto Murong Xun’s face.

“Hahahaha...” Just at that moment, Chu Feng, who lay on the floor, being tortured to the point that nothing was remotely similar at all to him before, suddenly laughed.

His laughter was very loud, and within it was an abundance of ridicule, as well as endless fury and bloodlust.

Even in a situation where he lacked any ability to resist, Chu Feng did not display the slightest bit of yielding. Instead, from head to toe, he looked at Murong Xun and the others with a disdainful attitude.

“Laugh! I will make you laugh no more!” Despite in panic, Murong Xun’s anger did not subside in the slightest. He suddenly waved his hand at Chu Feng. A half-moon blade of light that could even slice space into two burst out, flying straight towards Chu Feng’s neck. He planned to decapitate Chu Feng.

At that instant, Chu Feng too didn’t hesitate. He prepared to cast his awareness into his World Spirit Space, and release the Evil Spirit in his body, to die together with Murong Xun and the others.

whoosh However, just at that moment, a person appeared before Chu

Feng. That person lightly flicked his sleeve, causing the horrifying blade of light Murong Xun sent out to immediately vanish.

Shortly after, that person raised his head faintly, and said with a light smile, “Murong Xun, we are people of some age. Do you not feel embarrassed for bullying a young one barely twenty years old?”

Chapter 774: Disciple of Protector

"Who are you?" Not to mention Chu Feng, even Murong Xun was taken aback by such an abrupt entrance.

Because, at that very instant, standing before Chu Feng was a man whose age was similar to Murong Xun's. He wore cloth clothing, had a clean, handsome face, and just by looking at his outer appearance, he absolutely did not seem like a person around thirty years old. He seemed more like a young man of twenty-something years.

The most shocked thing, though, was his strength. He was the exact same as Murong Xun—a rank eight Martial Lord. Moreover, his aura was extremely strong and firm; it far surpassed those in the same level. He had an aura that was not the slightest bit weaker than Murong Xun.

"I am Xuan Xiaochao, disciple of Xue Xiyue, one of the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!" said the man indifferently. His expression was very calm.

"As I thought, the disciple of one of the Four Protectors." Murong Xun didn't have an expression of surprise. He then said, "Xuan Xiaochao, there does not exist enmity between my Immortal Execution Archipelago and your Crippling Night Demon Sect. You and I are meeting for the first time as well, so I hope you do not involve yourself into this matter.

"This child crippled the son of my Immortal Execution Archipelago's Second Immortal. His crimes are severe, and his nerves can cover the sky. There will not be any favourable ending if you protect him." As Murong Xun spoke, his confidence was overwhelming, and the hints of threats were even greater. He did not hold back at all; it could be seen he did not like this Xuan Xiaochao.

There was no reply to Murong Xun's words. Instead, Xuan Xiaochao flipped his palm, causing a peculiar fruit to appear on his hand. Then, casting some sort of spell with his hand, he willed countless golden symbols to emerge. The fruit was gradually refined, and along with the symbols, they enveloped Chu Feng.

As they melded with his body, Chu Feng felt warmness spread and his pain dwindle substantially.

No matter if it was the broken nerves and bones, or the pierced organs, they were all restored. Xuan Xiaochao was actually healing Chu Feng.

Although it was but an instant of work, Chu Feng had already recovered his ability to move. It was very mystical, and Chu Feng didn't just feel Xuan Xiaochao's outstanding Spirit Formation techniques—he was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist—the fruit he refined just now was very precious as well, likely a rarely seen healing oddity.

"Why did you help me?" Chu Feng asked. He clearly did not know Xuan Xiaochao.

"Although I was a bit late, so I was unable to save your World Spirit, I saw the scene of you being torturing. You have a lot of courage, and also a lot of potential. Do not give up. Continue living. Only by doing so can you exact revenge," said Xuan Xiaochao nonchalantly. Then, he looked at Murong Xun, lightly smiled, and said, "Murong Xun, your fiancée is rather nice. How about you lend her to me for a bit of entertainment?"

whoosh As he spoke, Xuan Xiaochao waved his big sleeve, and abruptly pushed out his palm. Layers of golden Spirit Formations exploded outward, becoming a large, golden net that flew towards the three in the air, entrapping them.

"You are looking to die." Murong Xun was even more enraged. Emanating his aura of a rank eight Martial Lord, he started fighting Xuan Xiaochao.

boom boom boom...

The two rank eight Martial Lords were very powerful. Their fighting strengths were superior to those with the same level of cultivation, and even ordinary rank nine Martial Lords might not be able to defeat them. They had exceptional power, belonging to the ranks of true geniuses.

As they fought, all sorts of wild martial skills were used incessantly. Moreover, they were used to their best possible potentials. Even the sky

was veiled by darkness due to their battle.

However, Xuan Xiaochao wanted to protect Chu Feng. He wanted to fight so Chu Feng would have an opening to escape. As a result, even though he was in a life-and-death battle against Murong Xun, he also prevented any opportunities Ya Fei and Murong Wan might have to close in on Chu Feng. He forced all three of them to stay in the air, preventing them from even having a chance to approach the ground.

Dragging his body which was riddled with wounds, Chu Feng picked up his sliced arm. Although he could use Spirit Formation techniques to create a new arm, the detached arm was, after all, a part of his body. For some reason, he had a feeling that he would only be complete after linking it back on.

At that moment, Chu Feng was holding his sliced off arm. He raised his head, and looked at Ya Fei, Murong Wan, as well as Murong Xun, who was fighting Xuan Xiaochao. Killing intent was fully revealed within his eyes, and he coldly said, “There will be one day when I will have all of you pay the most painful price for what you’ve done today.”

After speaking, Chu Feng looked again at Xuan Xiaochao. He discovered that even though Xuan Xiaochao was strong and appeared to be equal to Murong Xun, he could faintly tell that Xuan Xiaochao was actually a bit weaker than Murong Xun. Sooner or later, he would be defeated.

So, after Chu Feng said thanks quietly, he didn’t hesitate any longer and quickly escaped.

Chu Feng walked a long distance away. Even though he kept on concealing his aura on the road, he didn’t dare to be careless in any way because he knew Murong Xun had special techniques—ones that could find him. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have found their concealed location earlier.

Chu Feng kept on running for several hours, and arrived at the border regions of the Depraved Ravine. Here, there was a vast lake. Chu Feng planned to jump in and first wash his wounds.

However, when he descended from the sky, and saw himself in a bloody

and bruised state on the mirror-like lake surface, there was a very bitter feeling in his heart.

At that instant, there was no anger. What he felt was only heartache. After he was unable to feel Eggy's existence, it was akin to his heart being empty as well. That feeling was simply no different from losing a part of his soul.

Eggy—there was not a moment she wasn't with Chu Feng. She was already in Chu Feng's body shortly after he was born. To Chu Feng, Eggy was not just a World Spirit. She was more like a friend who he confided very closely with; she was a part of himself.

poof

Suddenly, Chu Feng hovered in the air, half-kneeling above the surface of the lake. His eyes were reddened, tears dropping. Even his body was shaking. For the first time in his life, he made choking sounds.

As they say: "Men do not cry easily because they are not sorrowful enough". Likely, Chu Feng now, was.

Drops of tears fell down, with it a bit of sharp-red blood. They fell into the lake, and although enormous ripples would not be created, they still carried the heartbroken feelings of Chu Feng, the steel-blooded man who didn't fear anything.

"Eggy..." Chu Feng lightly called out Eggy's name. Oh, how much did he hope to hear Eggy's response. If that were the case, how great would it be.

"What the hell are you crying about? I haven't died yet." But, just at that moment, something surprising Chu Feng was that he actually heard Eggy's voice.

"Eggy, it's you?" Chu Feng immediately rejoiced upon hearing that. He quickly stood up, and looked around. But soon, his cheerful emotions became deep disappointment.

He found out that he wasn't just unable to see Eggy, within his heart, he was still unable to feel the connection between him and Eggy. She simply did not exist, so how could she talk to him? It appeared that it was only

his imagination.

Chapter 775: Eggy Hasn't Died Yet?

"Nonsense. If it isn't me, who can it be?" However, just at that moment, Eggy's voice rang out again. But, in comparison to before, there was quite a bit less fierceness and mellifluousness, and more frailty and hoarseness.

"Eggy, it's really you?" At that moment, Chu Feng was certain that it was truly Eggy's voice. Not his imagination, but truly a voice.

So, Chu Feng willed his awareness to be cast inside his World Spirit Space. He discovered that, indeed, Eggy was sitting within the World Spirit Space.

However, at that moment, her complexion was pale, and her aura very weak. Clearly, she had suffered heavy injuries.

"Eggy!" Chu Feng walked over in huge strides. Without caring about Eggy's wounds, he took the little beauty into his embrace, and hugged her tightly. So much that her soft chest tightly glued onto his own, and it was even squashed due to the force.

He was truly too happy. He thought Eggy had already died, yet now, she hadn't. That was simply akin to stepping onto bright plains when he assumed it would be a dark abyss ahead. How could he not be moved?

"Cough cough...

"Bastard, I've already in a state like this yet you're still..." said Eggy powerlessly.

"Eggy, so you weren't dead! But why am I unable to feel our connection?" Chu Feng asked puzzledly as he released Eggy.

"It's because I used special techniques to intentionally cut off the connection. When my injuries are healed, then the connection will be restored as well. There's no need to worry." Eggy sweetly smiled. Her gracefulness was still as usual, and she was rather bewitching.

"Intentionally cut off? Why did you do that?" Chu Feng was very confused because from what he saw, Eggy seemed to have paid quite a price for doing such a thing, and now, she seemed to have lost any ability

to fight.

"It's because I wanted to agitate you; I wanted you to feel anger because of my death, and as a result, activate the Divine Lightning's power within your body. With that, not only would you be able to completely avoid the incoming dangers, you would also easily get rid of that brat Murong Xun.

"But, from what it looks like, I was wrong." Eggy's eyes glittered when those were spoken. She had a face of grievance, and shortly after, she furiously raised her face, pointed at Chu Feng, and said, "Because you weren't even angry because of my death, nor did the Divine Lightning's power activate because of that.

"However, back then, when Zi Ling was in danger in the Sword God Valley, when Su Mei was in danger in the Four Seas Academy, it was a completely different level of emotions. As such, you obtained the power of the Divine Lightning.

"Why, when it was me, you didn't? Why? Why?!

"Because you simply don't care about me; at least, not to the degree that you care about Zi Ling and Su Mei."

"I do, I do care about you! Don't you know how painful I felt when I thought you died? That pain had greatly overshadowed the fury, and at that instant, I..."

Chu Feng tried his best to explain, yet he didn't really know how to explain. At that moment, he even broke out in cold sweat. He was really afraid Eggy would misunderstand him, because he truly cared about her.

"Haha..." But suddenly, when she saw the state Chu Feng was in, Eggy started laughing with her hands over her mouth. Her laughter was rather happy, satisfied, and beautiful.

"Eggy, you..." When he saw Eggy laugh, Chu Feng was a bit muddled.

"Haha, idiot. I'm just teasing you. Do you think I didn't feel your anger, your sorrow?

"Honestly speaking, although I did expect you to have such a reaction,

my heart does ache a bit when I see you like this." As she spoke, Eggy couldn't help lowering her voice, and revealed a rare cute side of her. But soon, she added, "But also precisely because of that, I've obtained one possibility."

"What possibility?" asked Chu Feng.

"The power of the Divine Lightning in your body isn't activated due to your anger. I feel that, more likely, it's given to you on its own accord."

"On its own accord?"

"That's right. It is intentionally granting you its power when you need it, so you know how powerful it is—so you will respect it. However, the more you want to obtain its power, the less it will grant it to you.

"Before, I had thought of such a possibility, but I was unable to confirm it. Today, however, I have," said Eggy firmly.

"But how did you think of such a possibility before?" Chu Feng was a bit puzzled.

"Because, in the past, things like these have happened. Some people obtained mighty power, but that mighty power doesn't grant them its strength. They only become qualified to grasp that power until they reach a certain level of strength.

"It's actually a test of some sort, and I feel that right now, perhaps you are taking this test.

"Anyway, just don't rely on the power of the Divine Lightning. I feel that, unless special situations occur, even if you will truly die by someone's hands, the Divine Lightning will not come out and protect you," said Eggy.

"I have never thought of relying on the Divine Lightning." Chu Feng shook his head. He had indeed not thought of having the Divine Lightning to protect him, because it was power he could not control. Uncontrollable power was filled with the unknown, and Chu Feng preferred doing things with greater reliability.

The most reliable method was to consider his current fighting strength to defend against his enemies. Those he could defeat, he would kill and leave nothing behind. Those he could not, he would smear some oil on his soles and immediately slip out of there. Those were the choices of the intelligent.

Those who fight despite knowing they will lose and those who fight despite knowing they will die are brainless thugs—no, they are fools.

"Mm, good. But, from what I see, since the Divine Lightning chose you, then it belongs to you. However, you just aren't qualified enough for it right now. However, sooner or later, you will be able to freely use it. As long as you continue working hard, it will belong to you," said Eggy with a smile.

"Rather than those things, I'm more worried about you. Are you truly fine?" Chu Feng asked with concerned as he looked at Eggy's feeble body.

Eggy shook her head. "I'm fine. Just give me some time; I'll thoroughly recover. Go out and take care of your own body. I also need to have a good rest."

"Okay." Chu Feng didn't dally longer because he didn't want to disturb Eggy. So, he willed his awareness back to his body.

Then, Chu Feng started consuming healing medicines, then he laid a Spirit Formation and attached his sliced-off arm back on, and thoroughly healed his body.

Although Xuan Xiaochao treated Chu Feng a bit, it was only enough so that Chu Feng would have the ability to walk on his own. At present, his physical body was not completely recovered yet.

Restoration of one's physical body was a lengthy process. However, with the techniques Chu Feng currently grasped, two hours were sufficient. After two hours, Chu Feng's sliced-off arm had been fixed. There was nothing different from how it was originally. Even the jabbing wounds on his body were completely healed; there were not even any scars left behind.

“This aura... the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” However, shortly after Chu Feng’s body was fixed, he couldn’t help tightly furrowing his brows. His gaze was fiercely cast at the distant horizon.

With his sharp Spirit power, he felt several powerful auras coming over in a group. They were rapidly approaching in his direction.

But, at that moment, like before, Chu Feng had laid a Concealment Spirit Formation, and he was inside. Not to mention normal people detecting him, even if people were right in front of him from the outside of the Spirit Formation, they would not be able to see him.

However, the target of that group of people was very clear—his current location. They were clearly coming over to capture Chu Feng.

“What is happening? Has my Concealment Spirit Formation lost its effect?” Chu Feng was completely baffled as he felt the powerful auras, and he felt very uneasy as well.

Chapter 776: Incomplete Black Moon

The people dashing over rapidly approached.

hmm Suddenly, he cast his fierce cast at the distance, and muttered, “Rank six Martial Lords—two. Rank five Martial Lords—six. Rank four Martial Lords—twelve. Martial Lords below rank four—twenty.

“Dammit, they are really from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. How did they find me?” Chu Feng cursed. Then, he rose into the air, and using the supreme Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he fled.

boom rumble rumble As expected, shortly after Chu Feng fled, a golden warship appeared in the distant horizon.

That warship was not too big, but its shape was extremely overbearing. Moreover, its flying speed was very fast. On it stood forty Martial Lords. At that moment, they were channeling their full strengths into the warship, causing it to have such extraordinary speed.

The warship flew past the area Chu Feng rested in before, and didn’t even stop. It directly chased after Chu Feng, straight in his direction. Its target was very clear—Chu Feng.

“Dammit! I’ve concealed my aura, but why can’t I lose them?”

Chu Feng panicked a bit. Reasonably speaking, even if they had rank six Martial Lords, with Chu Feng’s strength, and using it for the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, they shouldn’t be able to catch up to Chu Feng.

However, his efforts were futile. The speed of the warship was too strange. It was actually not the slightest bit slower than his Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and one could even say it was only faster, and faster alone. If that continued, Chu Feng was going to be caught, sooner or later.

“Idiot. They must have left a mark in your body. Otherwise, not even trash like them would be able to discover your position.” Just at that moment, Eggy’s voice suddenly rang out.

“Mark?” Chu Feng was a bit confused, and he also didn’t really believe a Spirit Formation Mark was left in his body.

Nonetheless, he still used his Spirit power to look through his body. Only then did he discover that underneath his leg, there was indeed an object difficult to detect. It was made by a golden-coloured Spirit Formation; it wasn’t a part of Chu Feng.

jiji

Moreover, it was a very strange thing, as if it were alive. In the instant it was caught by Chu Feng’s detection, like a nimble little fish, it started making a break for it within Chu Feng’s body, as if afraid he would force it out.

“It truly is a mark! Quite a high-leveled one at that. I was not even close to being able to detect it. When was it placed on me, and who did it?” Chu Feng started thinking.

“It is definitely Murong Xun. I’m guessing he left it behind when he was destroying your leg. That guy is truly not simple. I thought he only wanted to torture you, but I didn’t think he would have hiddenly left a mark in your body.” Eggy made a guess.

“Right, Murong Xun. It must be him. I didn’t expect his Spirit Formation techniques to be this skilled. It seems that I’ve truly underestimated him.” Chu Feng also nodded, and felt it was likely Murong Xun.

When Murong Xun attacked, Chu Feng thought Eggy had died, and all his hopes went to ashes. He simply didn’t notice whether or not Murong Xun laid a Spirit Formation as he stamped down on his leg.

However, if the mark in his body was really left behind by Murong Xun, Chu Feng had to admit that his skills were not simple at all.

As expected of a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. Even though Chu Feng had a very strong understanding of Spirit Formation techniques, he would still need to spend quite some work if he wanted to get rid of the mark Murong Xun left behind. At least, at present, he had no time to do that.

“Hell, they sent another group of people. How many experts did this

Immortal Execution Archipelago send here?" Chu Feng couldn't help cursing abruptly again.

As he was escaping, another group of people started chasing after him. They too rode on a warship, and their speed was comparable to Chu Feng's.

In a situation like that, he truly felt he had no escape. With the mark on him, he had no way of clearing himself of their chase. No matter where he ran off to, there would be no escape of his fate of being captured.

Moreover, if the ones chasing after him were experts on the same level—or stronger—as Murong Xun, then Chu Feng would not even have a chance.

After all, he knew Murong Xun was not the only expert within the group of people the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent this time. There were also three people from the Nine Immortals. They were peak characters who were well-known in the Eastern Sea Region. No matter status, or strength, they were as powerful as the rumours.

"Does this mean I, Chu Feng, will truly die within this Depraved Ravine, by the hands of the Immortal Execution Archipelago?"

Chu Feng bitterly let out a long sigh. Bitter—he was truly bitter. However, he had to admit that he bore quite the price because of Murong Xun. This Murong Xun was harder to deal with than what he had imagined, and much more cunning than he thought.

"No, I cannot die. Even if I die, I cannot die here." But, Chu Feng did not give up. In a time when he lacked any ideas, he thought of an idea.

hmm Suddenly, Chu Feng emitted a fierce gaze and started scanning his surroundings.

Chu Feng wanted to use the power of the Heaven's Eyes to search for an opportunity. Even though hope such as that was very minuscule, it was Chu Feng's only choice right now—because he didn't want to die, nor could he die.

As he did so, the number of people who chased after Chu Feng rose;

there were nearly a hundred Martial Lords. In such a short period of time, there was such a number of people chasing after him from all directions. That allowed Chu Feng to roughly guess what sort of fighting strength and numbers the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent over this time.

"That is?" However—perhaps the gods don't disappoint those who persevere—when Chu Feng was nearly in despair, he discovered a Spirit Formation within the vast mountain range that stretched within the clouds far ahead.

It was a well-hidden formation—a Concealment Spirit Formation. Moreover, Chu Feng could tell it was laid by a Gold-cloak World Spiritist.

Normally speaking, not to mention Chu Feng, even Gold-cloak World Spiritists could not discover that formation—as the person who laid it was very skillful—but with the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng saw its borders.

"Found it." Although Chu Feng did not know who laid it, he felt that likely, it wasn't someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. After all, the mark in his body was a Wanted Mark. Within a certain range, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago should be able to detect it, and thus chase after him. If there were people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago within the distant mountain range, they should have already appeared, not just sitting there doing nothing.

And reality proved Chu Feng's conjectures to be true. As Chu Feng approached, he was able to use the Heaven's Eyes, to see through the Spirit Formation, and the contents within.

Inside, there was truly a group of people. The number was not large, but there were still over a hundred. They all wore black-coloured robes that tightly covered their faces.

Most importantly, their strengths were very powerful. Not only were they all Martial Lords, there were even experts at the peak of the Martial Lord realm—ten of them.

With the Heaven's Eyes, through the black-coloured robes, Chu Feng was able to see a symbol imprinted on their backs. It was an incomplete black moon, both strange and overbearing.

Chapter 777: We Are Killing You

"Could it be the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Have they also sent experts to sneak into this place?" Although Chu Feng didn't dare to be absolutely certain, he guessed that they were very possibly from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"It seems that today, I'm saved." At that moment, a smile, that hadn't appeared for a long while, finally appeared on Chu Feng's tense face. With the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Chu Feng unhesitantly rushed towards that mountain range.

"Seniors, help me!" Chu Feng yelled after arriving before the Spirit Formation.

The people within the Spirit Formation had actually noticed Chu Feng already. When they saw Chu Feng call for help, towards them, they couldn't help feeling astonished. At that very instant, they were within the Concealment Spirit Formation, so Chu Feng shouldn't have been able to see them.

swish swish swish

At the same moment, several rumbling warships dazzling in golden brilliance arrived in front of Chu Feng, and surrounded him, blocking all escape paths.

"I even thought he was a remnant of the Crippling Night Demon Sect since he ran so fast, but he's only a brat."

"Yeah, the young master even placed the Hunting Talisman onto him! Where did this boy come from?"

"There seems to be some problems with his brain. He's actually yelling for help at that towering mountain peak. Truly idiotic." The several rank six Martial Lords on the warships were talking to each other. As they looked at Chu Feng, it was as if they were looking at a mouse that reached a dead-end. Their eyes were full of disdain.

"Seniors, please save me! They are from the Immortal Execution

Archipelago, and right now, they have sent many people to this place with malicious intentions.

"The disciple of Senior Xue Xiyue, Xuan Xiaochao, is also fighting Murong Xun right now. I do not know what the current situation is, so I ask you to quickly send him help." Chu Feng intentionally leaked information about Xuan Xiaochao; he wanted to force the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect out.

Although Chu Feng was able to see through the Spirit Formation with the Heaven's Eyes, it was impossible for him to break through it with the current power he possessed. If they didn't want to help him, then really, he could only die.

"Xuan Xiaochao? Release the formation!" Indeed, after hearing Xuan Xiaochao's name, an elderly person at the peak Martial Lord realm suddenly spoke.

hmm Immediately after that person's words were heard, the mountain peak in front of Chu Feng rippled like the surface of the lake. In the end, a huge cave appeared, and in a blink, over a hundred black-clothed people dashed out and surrounded the Immortal Execution Archipelago's warships instead.

"Thi-this is a Spirit Formation?!" Only after black-clothed people surrounded them did the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago start reacting. They also understood why Chu Feng called for help at the mountain peak just now. A hint of fear unavoidably emerged onto their faces.

Especially when they felt the superior auras, and that they even had experts at the peak of the Martial Lord realm as backup, they were a bit terrified.

"Everyone, we are from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. This child is a criminal we must capture. May I ask if you can cooperate with us?" Seeing the situation heading towards a disadvantageous direction, they were forced to reveal their identities of being from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

And after their identities were revealed, a trace of pride appeared on the faces of those from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. No matter how powerful the black-clothed people were, at present, in the Eastern Sea Region, who dared to not give them face?

But after seeing their appearances, the auras of the black-clothed people instantly became icy-cold. Finally, an aged voice rang out, saying, “Kill them all.”

boom A person attacked immediately after those words were spoken. Quickly following was the simultaneous attack of almost a hundred Martial Lords. All sorts of powerful martial skills gushed out endlessly, madly exploding on several warships.

In but an instant, over half of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago died—they were absolutely no match for the black-clothed people. That completely terrified the remaining experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. One quickly shouted at the old person who spoke earlier, “Senior, why have you attacked for no reason? We are from the Immortal Execution Archipelago! Is there a misunderstanding of some sort?”

After hearing his words, the old man couldn’t help raising his head slightly, revealing an extremely ferocious gaze. He said,“We are killing you.”

boom After speaking, the old man suddenly raised his palm. Just by doing so, the entire warship turned into ashes. No matter if it was a rank five Martial Lord, or a rank six Martial Lord, before the peak Martial Lord, they were as weak as ants—they could not even take a single strike from him.

“You said Xuan Xiaochao is fighting Murong Xun right now. Do you have proof?” At that instant, the old man looked at Chu Feng. His eyes were akin to two sharp blades, piercing through him, as if they were going to see through everything that was Chu Feng.

“Mm? Spirit Formation Mark?” Suddenly, the old man’s pupils shrank abruptly. With merely a glance he saw there was a mark in Chu Feng’s

body.

Immediately following that, the old man suddenly grabbed at Chu Feng's chest. He felt a sharp pain, but after the old man retracted his hand, the mark was grasped within his palm.

At that moment, the mark even wanted to struggle. However, the old man clenched, and with a bang, the mark was shattered.

"This location has been exposed. Transfer to Shelter #2. Move out now," said the old man loudly with an ordering tone.

"Yes sir!"

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh... Immediately after that old man spoke, everyone rose into the air, and like an inverted meteor with black flames, they shot straight into the blue sky. Concealing their auras, they fled into the distance.

"You follow me as well." At the same time, the old man waved his big sleeve. Chu Feng was then wrapped by a golden-coloured Spirit Formation, then he rose into the air along with the old man.

They were clearly prepared. After arriving deep into a flourishing forest, there was already a Concealment Spirit Formation laid there beforehand. Everyone stepped into it, hiding themselves.

"Big Brother, just now, he said Xuan Xiaochao is fighting Murong Xun. Do we need to head over and take a look?" asked another old man at the peak of the Martial Lord realm after entering the Concealment Spirit Formation.

"No need. First of all, we do not know if he spoke the truth or not. Even if it is true, Xuan Xiaochao is the direct disciple who Protector Xue chose herself. If he can't even protect himself, then he's not worthy to continue being Protector Xue's disciple."

The old man waved his hand, then asked Chu Feng, "Who are you? How did you know there was a Concealment Spirit Formation, and how did you know we were inside it?"

As he spoke, the old man kept on using a fierce gaze to staring at Chu Feng, as if he would be able to tell whenever Chu Feng said even half a word of lie.

After all that had happened, Chu Feng confirmed that they were definitely people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, he didn't hide anything, and after a respectful bow, he said, "Senior, I am called Wuqing. I was chased by the Immortal Execution Archipelago so I accidentally stumbled upon that place.

"Coincidently, I grasp a special technique allows me to see through the Spirit Formation. Senior, after discovering you weren't from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and since I had no available paths either, I hastily asked for help."

"What? You're that Wuqing?!" However, after hearing his name, everyone on scene was shocked. As they looked at Chu Feng, complicated emotions emerged in their gazes.

Chapter 778: What Plan?

"You're Wuqing, who defeated the various geniuses from the Misty Peak, and obtained a large number of Martial Markings?" said the old man.

"Senior, that is me." Chu Feng nodded.

"No wonder. I've heard that you are very skillful with Spirit Formation techniques, and that you can even see through Lady Piaomiao's Map of Unpredictability. You are truly as the rumours say.

"However, why are the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago chasing after you? Could it be because you took away their glory on the Misty Peak, and thus they hate you for that?" asked the old man again.

"No. They are chasing after me because I crippled Zhan Feng, the son of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Second Immortal in the core area of the Depraved Ravine. That's why they are doing this," Chu Feng replied.

"What? You crippled Zhan Feng?" All the experts on scene couldn't help but gasping deeply after they heard these words. Their eyes were full of admiration as they looked at Chu Feng.

They naturally knew who Zhan Feng was. Although his own strength was nothing significant, his father was one of the peak experts in the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Yet, Chu Feng still dared to cripple Zhan Feng despite of that. They had to admit that they did admire Chu Feng's courage.

"These are your words alone; I do not believe them.

"Eighth Brother, Ninth Brother, Tenth Brother, head out and investigate. See if this child's words are true or not. Also, investigate that boy Xuan Xiaochao, and find out whether he's safe or not," said the old man.

"Yes sir." The three peak Martial Lords had already opened the formation and rose into the air, heading towards the Depraved Ravine.

After a while, they returned, went up to the old man's side, and quietly informed him of a few things.

Chu Feng could tell that they were tell him about the results of their investigation. Such as: Chu Feng's words were true—he truly crippled the genius from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Zhan Feng—and Murong Xun really did fight Xuan Xiaochao, but there was no news of his current whereabouts...

Something they did not know, however, was shortly after they left, a large number of Immortal Execution Archipelago experts arrived at the mountain range they were hiding within earlier.

Even Murong Xun, as well as the Ninth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, arrived. They seemed to know that there were many experts killed.

But due to the fact that the Crippling Night Demon Sect's experts dealt with it perfectly, the Immortal Execution Archipelago could not discover anything. At least, they weren't able to discover who killed the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"Haha, I didn't think you would truly be this fearless." At that moment, after hearing the report, the old man chuckled. There was a bit more approval in his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng, then he said, "However, Wuqing, my friend, even though you are an enemy to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, you are not a part of my Crippling Night Demon Sect. I still cannot trust you completely.

"However, I've taken quite a liking to you. So, even though you know a few of our secrets, I won't kill you. But, I cannot let you go immediately either. In these days, bear with it and follow us. After the business in this Depraved Ravine is finished, we'll let you go then."

After speaking, the old man waved his sleeve and left with the nine other peak Martial Lords. It seemed they had a few things to take care of.

And, even though Chu Feng was able to freely move about within the Spirit Formation, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect kept staring at Chu Feng.

He, however, did not mind such a situation. He knew very well that the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were preparing something, so he deduced that they were not the only experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect that had arrived at the Depraved Ravine. He vaguely knew there was going to be an entertaining show to watch soon—a show of the battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Crippling Night Demon Sect.

From then on, Chu Feng stayed put. The people from Crippling Night Demon Sect didn't treat him badly either; it could even be said he was served with meals abundant with meat. There were even some people who followed Chu Feng and asked him a few things.

For example, the encounters Chu Feng had within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, and who was Chu Feng's master. Some were just bored out of their minds and started to chat about random matters with Chu Feng, as if they were brothers already.

Of course, there were two sides to all things. Even though a large fraction of the people liked Chu Feng, there was also a small fraction whose gazes were a bit unkind, even irritated, as they looked at Chu Feng.

After being together with them for a while, as well as his furtive eavesdropping, Chu Feng learnt of the origin of those people.

As Chu Feng had guessed, the Crippling Night Demon Sect had indeed sent many experts to the Depraved Ravine. They even sent two Martial Kings.

These people were even a bit related to Chu Feng: they were old subordinates of Qiu Canfeng, the head of the Four Protectors.

They were all experts within World Spiritists. What they were most skilled in were Spirit Formation techniques. The ten peak Martial Lords were sworn brothers, and they even had a title within the Crippling Night Demon Sect—the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

Although they were peak Martial Lords, many years ago they had already become Gold-cloak World Spiritists. For the head of the ten brothers, everyone called him Old Liu. He had already been at the peak of

the Martial Lord realm for dozens of years, and at present, there were signs of the possibility of him making a breakthrough to become a Martial King.

They bore an extremely important mission coming here this time. As for the specifics, Chu Feng didn't know. But regardless, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect seemed to gather together here today to strike down the arrogant bearing that the Immortal Execution Archipelago emanated. Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago had snuck in, they seemed to have stepped into the trap the Crippling Night Demon Sect laid instead.

After knowing this, Chu Feng unavoidably felt some intimate feeling towards those people. If he could, Chu Feng really wished he could tell them, "I'm actually Qiu Canfeng's disciple!"

If he did, however, they would definitely question Chu Feng about Qiu Canfeng's matters, and where exactly he was.

But, Qiu Canfeng clearly instructed Chu Feng to, other than Fu Liansheng, not tell anyone where he currently was.

So, after some consideration, Chu Feng just let it be. Putting aside that they didn't really trust him, Chu Feng didn't really trust them either.

Finally, the day of the arranged battle between the disciples of the Three Protectors had arrived. The people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect also started to make their move. They didn't leave Chu Feng behind here, but brought him along as well.

Chu Feng couldn't help rejoicing because of that, since he could finally personally witness the upcoming good show.

With the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers leading, they first came to a deep part of a lake. There was a secret passage there, and as they went forth along the passage, they finally arrived at the core region of the Depraved Ravine.

Although they were underground, deep and hidden, they could see everything outside clearly. That was the power of a Spirit Formation.

So, Chu Feng could see that there was truly quite a few people gathered at the core of the Depraved Ravine. People formed mountains and oceans outside, and it was extremely lively. No matter in the sky, or on the ground, there were people everywhere. Rough estimations dictated that there were several tens of thousands of people at the very least.

And that was when the Stone Forest of Death acted as a barrier. If it were not there, one could imagine how many people in the Eastern Sea Region would come here to add into the liveliness.

“Let us start.” Suddenly, the head of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Old Liu, spoke solemnly.

At that instant, everyone subconsciously backed away. Only the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers walked towards the Spirit Formation that sealed the core of the Depraved Ravine.

The Spirit Formation closed away the outside world. From high in the sky, to deep into the earth, it formed a perfect seal to the core of the Depraved Ravine.

However, at that very moment, the ten peak Martial Lords seemed to plan to unseal that formation.

He thought so because Chu Feng saw that the ten Gold-cloak World Spiritists were not only laying an extremely mystical and profound Opening Formation, they also took out large amounts of extremely precious Spirit Formation Stones.

Although the power contained within the Spirit Formation Stones was limited, they could, within a short period of time, raise the power of their Spirit Formation by many times.

But even so, doubts involuntarily arose in Chu Feng’s heart: “Can they open this Spirit Formation with just these things? What exactly are they doing? And what is their plan?”

Chapter 779: The Arrival of a Good Show

The people on the surface knew nothing of what was occurring deep underground.

Right now, people from all sorts of places in the Eastern Sea Region were looking about with heads raised, awaiting the appearance of the disciples of the Three Protectors. They scuffled around with excited emotions.

“Everyone, I am Xuan Xiaochao, disciple of Xue Xiyue, one of the Four Protectors. Sorry for the wait.”

Suddenly, a loud voice rang out. Looking over at the origin of the voice, they saw a young man standing in air. He wore cloth clothing, and his countenance was sharp and handsome. He had the cultivation of a rank eight Martial Lord.

“He’s come, he’s finally come! Is that Xue Xiyue’s disciple, Xuan Xiaochao?”

“That Xue Xiyue is the only female of the Four Protectors. I’ve heard the reason she uses this name is because she enjoys killing under the radiance of the moon. Moreover, there are countless clans and powers that have been massacred by her under the moon—’washing the moon with blood’. That’s why everyone calls her Xue Xiyue.1”

“Yeah! Although Xue Xiyue is female, of the Four Protectors, she is most akin to a demon who kills people as if they were grass. I didn’t expect her disciple to be so polite; it is truly unbelievable.”

“Shh, quiet! As they say: ‘you can’t judge a book by its cover’. No matter how much polite he is, a disciple of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Four Protectors, how polite can he really be? You dare to say his master is a female demon? Careful—he might just kill your entire family.”

Xuan Xiaochao’s appearance attracted quite the commotion, but even more discussion was regarding his master. It could be seen that even though Xuan Xiaochao was strong, his master was the greater focus of

the crowd.

The appellation of the Four Protectors was really too well known. Even though they had vanished for many years, they were still feared by many.

And, Xuan Xiaochao seemed to have already expected what sort of discussions were running about within the crowds. Regardless what others said, he was not angered. Instead, he smiled, looking around, and after a while, he said, holding his smile, “You Tonghan, since you’ve arrived, why not show yourself?”

“Haha, Xuan Xiaochao, I didn’t think you would recognize me after so many years.” Immediately after Xuan Xiaochao finished speaking, another person shot out from the crowd.

That man’s appearance was very similar to Xuan Xiaochao’s—sharp and handsome—but his eyes emitted eerie green light, akin to two lamps in the night; it was quite terrifying.

“No matter how much you change, I will still recognize you with such special eyes,” said Xuan Xiaochao with a light smile.

“He’s the disciple of You Mingdeng, You Tonghan. Indeed, he lives up to his name.2”

“Yeah! I heard that the reason You Mingdeng chose him back then is because he had a pair of inborn, strange eyes. That’s why You Mingdeng gave You Tonghan his name.”

His appearance similarly gave rise to quite the commotion. Those on scene, as if they were worshippers of the Four Protectors, had a very strong understanding of the Four Protectors, and even the disciples themselves.

“Both of you, long time no see. How have you’ve been?” Just at that moment, a thunderous voice exploded from afar, spreading through the air.

Looking over, they saw a large man with a face full of scars and a round stubble around his mouth. He gave off an appearance that he had seen many things in the world, and was currently walking over in the air.

That man looked even more mature than Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan. From the outside, he even seemed like a middle-aged man who approached forty years of age.

However, those who were familiar with him knew his age was just past thirty; he was even younger than Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan. He was Fu Liansheng's disciple, Fu Fengming. He was the same as Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan—a rank eight Martial Lord.

"Fu Fengming!"

"He is definitely Fu Liansheng's disciple, Fu Fengming."

"What happened? Isn't he the youngest of the three geniuses, with the best appearance? Why does he look like this now?"

"Ahh, it's said that You Mingdeng and Xue Xiyue are the heartless ones, who train their disciples with fierceness and cruelty. But it appears that the fiercest one is actually Fu Liansheng. This can be easily seen by Fu Fengming's current appearance." Fu Fengming's appearance actually became the hottest topic of the crowd.

"So that's Fu Liansheng disciple?" And, at that very instant, Chu Feng, who was deep underground, also paid attention to the events occurring on the surface.

After seeing Fu Fengming, Chu Feng started planning how to approach that person, and how to figure out Fu Liansheng's location.

Chu Feng could tell that Fu Fengming was a rather cunning person. His outer appearance was his protection, so others could not see through him. At least, judging by his external looks, Chu Feng felt Fu Fengming was the one with the most guile of the disciples of the Three Protectors.

Since the Spirit Formation that sealed off that area was round, not everyone was able to see the appearance of Fu Fengming and the others. However, as news spread extremely quickly, almost in the same instant Xuan Xiaochao appeared, news of him had already spread out.

At that moment, almost everyone headed over in that direction. More and more people congregated there, and they awaited the arrival of a

frightening battle.

"I've heard that when the Four Protectors meet each other, it's like they're facing their father's murderers. Why do these disciples have such a friendly appearance?"

"Ah, then you don't understand. Right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is in fragments. Its former glory is no more, and in a situation like this, perhaps the Four Protectors have already settled their grudges."

"Settled? Doesn't that mean today's arranged battle is voided?"

Seeing their peaceful moods and even amiable conversations, there was actually people who worried there would not be an arranged battle, afraid that the long-awaited scene would not occur.

"Brother Chao, Brother Han, we've come to this place by our master's order to determine the superior one. Everyone here has waited for a long time as well, so shall we immediately start the sparring between us?" said Fu Fengming suddenly with a smile.

After he spoke, everyone started getting excited; their blood started boiling as well. Fu Fengming's words let them know that their worries were unnecessary, that the three geniuses who had disappeared for many years were indeed here to determine who was the strongest by starting a competition.

"Brother Ming, no need to rush. As a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, since we will spar, we must do it within the land of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"How about we first unseal this Spirit Formation, and determine the winner then within the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Depraved Ravine?" said Xuan Xiaochao with a smile.

"My thoughts exactly." Fu Fengming and You Tonghan both nodded. Afterwards, as the crowd looked at them, they started to lay a formation.

"Heavens! They are all Gold-cloak World Spiritists! At such an age, with such cultivation, they've already become Gold-cloak World Spiritists! As expected of the direct disciples of the Three Protectors."

As they started, golden radiance immediately spewed everywhere. The golden Spirit Formation let everyone know that they were all Gold-cloak World Spiritists.

"Indeed, they're preparing to open this formation? It seems that the Crippling Night Demon Sect's plan must be executed within that Spirit Formation." Chu Feng too was paying close attention to that all. As he saw the three of them lay the formation, a hint of an expectant smile curled up. He knew that the true good show was soon to appear.

*

1. Xue = blood, xi = wash, yue = moon. AKA, killing so much the blood can wash the moon—a bloody massacre underneath the moonlight.
2. You = eerie, Tong = pupil.

Chapter 780: Follow His Instructions

As they say: “The amateurs watch the liveliness; the experts watch the skillfulness.” The masses gazed at how majestic the Spirit Formations were, while Chu Feng observed the internal structures of these formations. Even though all three of them were laying an Opening Formation, Chu Feng could tell that the structures were completely different. They had their respective mysteriousness, and there was absolutely nothing similar.

“Quick, they’re starting! We must lay this formation in accordance with Xuan Xiaochao and the others!” shouted Old Liu solemnly, deep underground.

Soon after, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers started to nervously lay an Opening Formation that had absorbed a large amount of power from the Spirit Formation Stones.

When Chu Feng gazed at the formation that Xuan Xiaochao and the two others were laying, as well as at the one the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were laying, he immediately understood everything. He muttered to himself with a light smile, “I see.”

Chu Feng already knew that the Sealing Formation was supposed to be activated by the Four Protectors simultaneously, as well as the fact that they all took away a portion of the method to deactivate it. If they wanted to unseal that formation, they had to gather the four methods from the Four Protectors.

At that moment, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming held their respective Protector’s methods and were unsealing the formation. As for the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, as Qiu Canfeng’s old subordinates, they clearly knew something. So, they were currently representing Qiu Canfeng and coordinating with Xuan Xiaochao and the others to unseal that Spirit Formation.

boom Finally, Xuan Xiaochao and the others finished the formation. As it activated, three rays of light shot out, and into the boundless Spirit

Formation.

At that instant, ripples, like in water, endlessly spread from the center of the three rays of light atop the seemingly indestructible formation.

“Powerful. Even such a powerful Spirit Formation can be deactivated?”

“Haha, I heard that the true Depraved Ravine is within this Spirit Formation! Can we finally see the actual remnants of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? This truly does raise one’s expectations!”

“Impressive. As expected of the Three Protectors’ disciples. A technique like this really makes us feel ashamed and admirative!”

“Haha, of course! They are the disciples of the Three Protectors, the representatives of the Eastern Sea Region’s younger generation! In the future, the Eastern Sea Region will be their world!”

When they gaze upon such a scene, the surrounding people starting getting excited. They all felt that this trip was worth it, that it was not a waste to risk their lives and come here, that they didn’t wait so many days for naught.

However, as the people outside rose in excitement, and were even jumping and cheering, deep underground, in front of the fourth Opening Formation no one knew about, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were tightly furrowing their brows.

They did so because the deactivation effect of the fourth formation wasn’t working. There seemed to be some issue.

“Wait, I think there’s something wrong here. This formation is not activating,” said one.

“What should we do? The power of these Spirit Formation Stones can last only a single hour. All of them have been used, and if we don’t hurry up, all the effort we put into this will be wasted.” In reality, everyone else was extremely worried as well.

“Big Brother, what should we do?” As they had no clue what their next course of action would be, everyone cast their gazes at the head of the

Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Old Liu.

"This..." He too was in a very troubled situation, because he didn't know what to do either.

"Senior Liu, how about this here? It should allow this Opening Formation to activate." Just at that moment, Chu Feng spoke.

When they looked in Chu Feng's direction, all of them couldn't help being taken aback. Some were even shocked.

Before Chu Feng was a Spirit Formation Diagram he drew. It was an alteration of Old Liu and the others' Opening Formation.

"Insolence! All ten of them are the Crippling Night Demon Sect's elites in Spirit Formation techniques! Who do you think you are to doubt the formation they laid? If they change it according to your diagram, this formation will be ruined!" shouted a middle-aged man as he pointed at Chu Feng. He had a very horrible attitude.

"Hmph. I've suspected that he may be a spy sent by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It looks that I'm correct. He wants to destroy our plan, and now, his true appearance is revealed!" said another rather young Martial Lord. Soon after, several more people spoke—they were all who felt displeased at Chu Feng from the very start. Finally, they found a chance to take care of Chu Feng.

"Ah, words cannot be spoken like so. I feel that Wuqing has kind intentions.

"Besides, what is the plan of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? And what is the plan of the Immortal Execution Archipelago? They want the thing inside the Depraved Ravine.

"Right now, they have hid themselves within the crowd, impatiently waiting for Xuan Xiaochao and the others to open this formation. They are more impatient than anyone else. Why would they want to think of obstructions to stop us from unsealing this formation?" But soon, someone stood out and spoke for Chu Feng.

At that instant, those who were slandering Chu Feng were speechless.

As they could do nothing else, they could only say, “Even so, he cannot doubt all ten of them. They are Gold-cloak World Spiritists, while he is at most a Purple-cloak World Spiritist.

“The difference between their Spirit Formation techniques is millions of miles. What are his suspicions based on? This is simply mocking them—a provocation to the Crippling Night Demon Sect!”

“This…” Those who wanted to support Chu Feng now didn’t know what to say either. So, they could only reply with, “Wuqing, we’ve accepted your kind intentions with our hearts. However, this is not a small matter, so it might be better if you don’t interfere.”

“Seniors, I, Wuqing, am not making trouble here, nor am I overestimating myself. However, if you follow my words, it will definitely activate this Opening Formation,” said Chu Feng confidently.

“Shut up, you. A person like yourself dares to speak such boastful words? If it fails after following your instruction, can you bear that responsibility? It would be useless even if we kill you a hundred times,” retorted the person that was annoyed with Chu Feng, in a furious manner.

“If you don’t follow what I say to do, would you have a solution? Can you avoid failure? Can you change the present situation?” Chu Feng fiercely returned a question without any wavering in his expression.

“I…” That person was out of words; he didn’t know how to refute. The formation was really too complicated. He simply did not understand it. Even the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers didn’t know what to do, so how should he know?

“Raise your head, and look. Look at Xuan Xiaochao’s, Fu Fengming’s, and You Tonghan’s expression.

“See how much they hope you succeed. See what kind of pressure they are currently enduring.

“It doesn’t matter if you fail—no one will know it was your fault… because everyone will think it was their fault. At that moment, they can use their faces to sweep the ground of their shame.

“Who do the three of them represent? The Three Protectors. Who do the Three Protectors represent? The Crippling Night Demon Sect. At a moment like that, who everyone will mock are not only them—it is everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Can you bear such a responsibility?

“How about you?

“Which one of you can?” Chu Feng loudly questioned those who defamed him before, his attitude extremely strong and firm.

“You...”

The ones who furiously retorted Chu Feng before had ashen faces. They backed away in fright as they heard Chu Feng’s questioning, and didn’t know how to reply. They were in a very difficult situation.

At that instant, Old Liu was currently doing what Chu Feng said—raising his head, and looking. When he saw the near undetectable uneasiness on the faces of Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan, he finally ordered, “Follow Wuqing’s instructions and change the formation.”

Chapter 781: Admitting Wrongs

Even though the others were also shocked by those words, they did not argue against them. Only the seventh out of the ten brothers asked very seriously, “Big Brother, you aren’t truly planning to listen to this boy, right? If it messes up, everyone’s done for!”

“Do I need to repeat myself? Follow what I said,” said Old Liu firmly.

No one dared to doubt it anymore, and started to alter the formation in accordance to the diagram Chu Feng drew.

“Boy, if you cause them to fail, I will absolutely not forgive you,” said the people who looked at Chu Feng with displeasure, fiercely threatening him.

“And if it succeeds?” Chu Feng swept his disdainful gaze over them, as if he were looking at a group of bumpkins who had no experience of the world.

“Hmph. If it succeeds, then I’ll kneel down, kowtow, and admit my wrongs!” said those people together.

“Then it’s agreed,” said Chu Feng very confidently. He did not propose such a change for no reason. Before the Heaven’s Eyes, there was nothing Chu Feng could not see through, and earlier, looking at the three formations Xuan Xiaochao and the others laid, he thought up the fourth method to deactivate the formation. The Opening Formation that the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers laid was actually correct, but its only blemish was a few incorrect areas. As long as they were corrected, it would most certainly work.

boom Indeed, after they altered the formation according to Chu Feng’s instructions, the formation activated immediately. A ray of light shot out, directly into the boundless formation. The unmoving Spirit Formation actually weakened quite a bit immediately, and now, it appeared as if it would crumble at any time.

“It worked?” Seeing that, not to mention others, even the noblest ones

who had the strongest strengths, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, changed their expressions greatly, feeling great disbelief.

"Hoh. You looked down on Wuqing, huh? Now, you've got to kneel down and admit your wrongs, right?" A person rather close to Chu Feng ridiculed the people who were annoyed with Chu Feng.

At that moment, their faces were unsightly—they knew the situation was poorly developing. However, they still said stubbornly, "This doesn't mean anything. Wait until after he deactivates this formation."

hmm

Immediately after that person spoke, with a boom, the boundless Spirit Formation that sealed the sky and the earth started fading away. Like a golden ice wall, it started slowly melting away.

"Haha, it succeeded! As expected of the Three Protectors' disciples! They are indeed outstanding!"

After seeing that, cheers and cries rang out endlessly from the people on the ground surface. As the Spirit Formation that stretched on endlessly disappeared, they were able to clearly see a deep ravine as vast as an ocean appearing before their eyes.

And, inside the ravine, it was full majestic buildings. The position of the structures was very special; in short, they gave off a very grand atmosphere. Moreover, within the ravine, the symbol of the incomplete moon was everywhere. Those who had some understanding knew they were the symbols of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Seeing such grandiose structures, the experts in the older generation all couldn't help inhaling deeply. They seemed to recall the glorious years of the Crippling Night Demon Sect ruling over the Eastern Sea Region.

Back then, everyone knew the two strongest powers in the Eastern Sea Region were the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Burning Heaven Church.

And since the Burning Heaven Church remained a relatively low profile regarding the battles of the world, the Crippling Night Demon Sect

became the publicly recognized overlord of the Eastern Sea Region.

However, those of that era knew when the Crippling Night Demon Sect was prosperous, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was not anything. They even needed to give large amounts of tributes to the Crippling Night Demon Sect every year, asking for stability.

Although its glory had long passed—and now, the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region was the Immortal Execution Archipelago—there were still quite a few people who believed as long as the Crippling Night Demon Sect could reorganize themselves, the Immortal Execution Archipelago might not be able to defeat the Crippling Night Demon Sect, despite being akin to the sun at noon right now.

"Heh, at least our efforts weren't wasted." Seeing the Depraved Ravine appearing in front of themselves, Xuan Xiaochao and the others also subconsciously breathed a sigh of relief. As Chu Feng said, if they failed today, then they would truly lose all face.

"This... it truly worked?" However, in comparison to the cheers and jumps on the surface, most of the people underground were speechless and shocked.

Up until now, many of them didn't really believe what Chu Feng said would truly succeed. But the reality before their eyes forced them to admit that Chu Feng really was a genius.

"My friend, Wuqing, it seems that the rumours are true. You are really outstanding in Spirit Formation techniques. I, Liu, representing everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, thank you." Old Liu went up to Chu Feng and very sincerely clasped his fists at him.

"Old Liu, you are really too polite. If you didn't help me back then, I may have already died. The one who should be thanking is me," said Chu Feng very humbly.

"No matter what you say, you have indeed helped us greatly today." As Old Liu looked at Chu Feng, his eyes were not only full of gratitude, they were also full of, perhaps, admiration.

And also at that moment, those who didn't believe Chu Feng, who even slandered Chu Feng had ashen faces. All of them didn't even dare to raise their heads, and were actually backing away secretly. They shrank towards the crowd, aiming to evade the upcoming horrendous situation.

"Hmm, who just said as long as Wuqing succeeds, they would kneel down and admit their wrongs?" However, just at that moment, a large man who had a rather good relationship with Chu Feng loudly yelled. As he did so, he even looked at the ones who spoke poorly of Chu Feng earlier.

Those words made the ones who had jeered tremble. They instantly turned into stone, and stood on the spot, unmoving.

"That's right! Be a man of your word! Quickly kowtow and admit your wrongs to Wuqing!" At the same time, many people started urging those people to kowtow.

Even though a large portion of them were helping Chu Feng, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, even including Old Liu, knitted their brows, silent.

In reality, Chu Feng really wanted to get those people to kowtow at him and admit their wrongs, but he was smart—he was able to clearly understand the situation at present.

The people here were all from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. As for him, he was an outsider. If they truly had to kowtow and admit their wrongs, he would not only be making them lose face. He would also be making Old Liu and the others, even everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, lose face.

So, judging the advantages and disadvantages, Chu Feng magnanimously smiled, and said, "No need. These seniors were thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They have no wrongs to speak of, so how can they admit their wrongs?"

After hearing those words, the ones who were irritated with Chu Feng before loosened their taut faces. As they looked at Chu Feng, there was no hatred, but instead, a hint of gratefulness appeared.

No matter what was said before, Chu Feng had now shown them some respect.

“Wuqing, great men indeed have broad hearts, but the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect cannot go back on their word. They were wrong, so they were wrong. No need for kowtowing, but admitting their wrongs, on the other hand, is required.” At that instant, the long-silent Old Liu finally spoke. Moreover, he expressed satisfaction at Chu Feng’s magnanimousness.

As for those who called out on Chu Feng, they were no idiots. Although admitting their wrongs was shameful, the most shameful was kowtowing.

Now, since that act was voided by Old Liu, they naturally had to accept it pleasingly. So, after arriving in front of Chu Feng, they stood neatly, single file, and said with shamed faces, “Wuqing, we were wrong.”

Chapter 782: Overlords of Two Generations

“Everyone, you’re being too polite. I understand that all of you only acted like you did because you cared about what the circumstances were.” Chu Feng gave quite a bit of face. They had already yielded to him, yet once again, he took another step back.

This changed their perspectives of Chu Feng completely. From extreme annoyance, or even spite, they began having favourable impressions of him. Some of them were even extremely grateful towards Chu Feng.

“Big Brother, are we going to make our move now?” Some people cast their gazes at Old Liu.

“No rush. Let us first join in the liveliness—this is a good show that should not be missed,” said Old Liu with a calm smile. A hint of expectation surged on his aged face.

At that moment, the people on the surface were still drowned within the excited cheers, because they knew the most exciting moment was soon to arrive—the battle between the disciples of the Three Protectors.

However, even though Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan had opened the formation, they didn’t seem to be in any rush to fight. Instead, they appeared to be awaiting something.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Finally, countless people shot out of the crowds. At the same time, the distant air started to gradually squirm, and shortly after, golden warships appeared one after the other.

There were over a thousand people, all Martial Lords. They were organized, akin to an unstoppable army as they pressed towards Xuan Xiaochao and the others.

“Heavens! Those are the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?!”

Everyone became dumbfounded when they saw such a scene. At present, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago no longer concealed their identities, and they all wore clothing that represented their Immortal Execution Archipelago. As a result, one could recognize them immediately.

Moreover, judging by the demeanor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as long as one had a bit of brains, they could tell that they didn't come with kind intentions.

"Look at who's the leader! Isn't that the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun?"

"My gods, it truly is him! What is the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region here for?"

"Could it be... Could it be that Murong Xun wants to prove that he's the number one genius of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, so he's come to challenge the disciples of the Three Protectors?"

"Really? If it truly is like that, then there will really be a good show coming up."

After they noticed Murong Xun, the vast range of people started getting excited again, because they predicted that a battle beyond their expectations yet still nonetheless entertaining was soon to appear. It was the true battle of geniuses.

"Murong Xun, this is the territory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. What are you doing bringing your Immortal Execution Archipelago here?" said Xuan Xiaochao with great displeasure.

"The territory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Where's the sect? Moreover, all of the present Eastern Sea Region is the land of my Immortal Execution Archipelago," said Murong Xun extremely domineeringly.

"Murong Xun, you can eat whatever you want to eat, but you may not say whatever you want to say. Do you truly think in the years my Crippling Night Demon Sect has been silent your Immortal Execution

Archipelago is invincible in this world?" said You Tonghan displeasedly. As he spoke, cold glints emerged in his eyes, and killing intent shot out.

"No. In my eyes, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is not invincible in this world yet. It is just invincible within the Eastern Sea Region," Murong Xun said with extreme confidence.

"Hoh, invincible, huh? Since your Immortal Execution Archipelago is so powerful, why must it be so sneaky and hide here for so long, only appearing after we opened the Spirit Formation?"

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh Quickly after, countless black figures shot out from the vast ocean of people. They arrived in the air, and stood behind Fu Fengming and the others.

When they all arrived above, neatly standing behind the three geniuses, everyone could see they had more people than the Immortal Execution Archipelago—over two thousand.

Even though they all wore black robes, when they took off their hoods—revealing strong and firm faces—the backs of their robes changed as well. A black-coloured incomplete moon appeared; they were clearly from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Moreover, there was suddenly a person who took out a large banner. On that fluttering banner, there was similarly the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"It's the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! They've also sent so many experts over?"

"What is happening? Could they have predicted the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago would come here to stir up trouble?"

After the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect appeared, the surrounding crowd were shocked again. They could be truly dumbfounded, because in comparison to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the people of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had disappeared for many years. They were even recognized as legends, so there was more excitement for their appearance.

One was the overlord of the current Eastern Sea Region, one was the overlord of the past Eastern Sea Region. At present, these overlords of two generations were facing each other with such might. It was most definitely an unexpected but wondrous show

At that instant, the people from the crowd knew something was up, and they all knew what would probably occur soon. So, the vast number of people were migrating away into the distance, extremely afraid they would be affected by the battle, since, in the air, there were not only Martial Lords; the representatives of the two generations of overlords were also there.

However, they did not go too far away, because they didn't want to miss their clash.

"Hoh, not bad. You seemed to have expected it, so you made prior preparations." Murong Xun was very calm. Even though the number of Crippling Night Demon Sect experts surpassed their own, he was still fearless. Instead, he was chatting with smiles.

"Intrusions are not tolerated in the land of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Second-rate trash like your Immortal Execution Archipelago should not think you're worthy to even take a crap here," said Xuan Xiaochao fiercely.

"Oh? If my Immortal Execution Archipelago is second-rate trash, then what are you? Have you forgotten your pitiful appearance when you were running away from me?" said Murong Xun with laughter—ridicule filled it.

"What? Xuan Xiaochao escaped from Murong Xun? When was that? Have they fought already? Was Murong Xun the superior one?" Everyone was shocked again when they heard those words. All of them guessed what exactly happened.

Xuan Xiaochao's complexion was not too great as he listened to the surrounding discussions. So, he coldly said, "Hmph. I had matters to attend to that day, so I didn't want to waste time with you. Do you truly think I was afraid?"

As Xuan Xiaochao spoke, he release his boundless aura. The colour of the sky changed immediately, as if it were evidence of his true power.

And also at that moment, Murong Xun gradually walked forward in the air. Only when he was a thousand meters away from Xuan Xiaochao did he stop, extend his arm, and say with a smile, “No matter if you had reserved strength or not, I just want to tell you that I need but one hand to deal with someone like you.”

Chapter 783: Unpredictable Outcome

"Too arrogant." You Tonghan couldn't endure Murong Xun's conceited attitude any longer. Before Xuan Xiaochao even made his move, You Tonghan attacked first.

boom

He leapt forward as the aura of a rank eight Martial Lord radiated from his body like a heatwave. It swirled about in the sky while the surrounding space instantly twisted around him. At the same time, he was akin to a furious tiger as he lashed at Murong Xun with ferocious attacks.

"You've come at the perfect moment." Murong Xun roared with laughter as he faced You Tonghan's attacks; he wasn't the slightest bit afraid.

As You Tonghan drew near, he clenched his fist and threw a punch at the oncoming attacks. Instantly, the winds and clouds surged about; Murong Xun fully revealed the destructive might of a Martial Lord.

The boundless Martial power was like an enormous wave travelling through the air. It unceasingly surged towards You Tonghan as it rolled ahead.

You Tonghan did not reveal any weakness either. Similarly, he also released his Martial power and threw out a punch. A huge explosion resounded out, releasing a berserk shockwave that flared out like fireworks, and devastated the surrounding area.

The confrontation of the two fists revealed a display of extraordinary might. Those who were watching burst with excitement, and some even cheered on, as if they were truly watching an entertaining spectacle—one that could not be seen in countless years!

"The fighting strength of this Murong Xun is very strong. I'm afraid even normal rank nine Martial Lords would be unable to defeat him. However, You Tonghan and Xuan Xiaochao are the same: they are a bit inferior to Murong Xun. In a one-on-one fight, You Tonghan will most

likely lose."

Although, on the surface, it appeared there were no differences between the two punches, Chu Feng discovered that You Tonghan was slightly weaker with his Heaven's Eyes.

"Haha! It seems you've got a bit of skill; however, it is simply insufficient." After the exchange, Murong Xun continued roaring with laughter, and fully displayed his arrogant nature. Right after, he slightly narrowed his eyes towards Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, and provoked them by saying, "You two, come as well! Otherwise, he alone will not be enough."

"Murong Xun, you are too haughty..." Hearing his words, Xuan Xiaochao, who was standing on the side, looking at the fight, was so angry his sharp brows slanted inwards as he gritted his teeth. His expression looked like he wanted to tear Murong Xun apart.

He knew that Murong Xun was really stooping low.

Although on the surface, Murong Xun was provoking them, in reality, Murong Xun was threatening Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming not to interfere.

If they did, then that would mean they thought they'd be unable to defeat Murong Xun alone and required the assistance of the others. With that, not only would the three of them lose face, even the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect would as well.

However, Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming were not fools. They knew if they didn't interfere, then You Tonghan would suffer, sooner or later. And, with what they knew about Murong Xun, You Tonghan would possibly greatly suffer.

"Everyone, I thank you all for coming from far distances to this place. However, I'd advise if you want to observe, stay a bit away because you may be affected if you're too close. After all... this is war!"

Just at that moment, Fu Fengming spoke. He first clasped his hands at the people around, then his gaze turned fierce, and he shouted, "Members

of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, attention! The insolent Immortal Execution Archipelago has forgotten when they served our Crippling Night Demon Sect, and now, they dare to challenge us!

"Today, let us show the might of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and let the world know, with the filthy blood of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, who is the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region!

"KILL THEM ALL!" Suddenly, Fu Fengming pointed at the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and shouted. Then, he rushed towards Murong Xun, joining into the ring of battle between him and You Tonghan.

"Kill them! Let the Immortal Execution Archipelago know they are nothing before the Crippling Night Demon Sect!" At the same time, the over two thousand experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect all emanated their vast might, and started fighting the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The fires of battle instantly flew all about, shock waves bursting out incessantly. The sky and the earth was engulfed in battle, and looking at it from a distant, it was near impossible to determine who was who within the berserk shock waves. One could only see an exchange of ferocious attacks.

When Xuan Xiaochao saw this, he didn't hesitate either and also joined the circle of battle. He joined hands with You Tonghan and Fu Fengming in attacking Murong Xun.

"This Fu Fengming is indeed intelligent." Chu Feng, who was underground, also gazed at that scene. He had to admit that Fu Fengming's move was quite brilliant.

Originally, due to the pressure of the observers—feeling shame if they were to attack Murong Xun unfairly—they did not dare to join hands and strike. However, due to a few simple words, Fu Fengming turned the single one-on-one into a battlefield, pulling the entire sky and earth into chaos.

In the eyes of the outsiders, other than Gold-cloak World Spiritists, those who could see through the horrifying shock waves were likely only

people like Chu Feng who had the Heaven's Eyes. Only they could see that Fu Fengming and the others were handling Murong Xun together.

So, even though it was an unfair battle, outsiders could not tell that.

"Big Brother, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has entered the trap! It looks like we don't need to activate that place to defeat them completely! How about we rush out and enter the battle as well?"

"Yeah! Big Brother, we really do want to take care of the dogs from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In this period of time when the Crippling Night Demon Sect was in fragments, they have been too arrogant. The brothers that have been scattered around were bullied too much by them. Today, is it our best chance for revenge."

"That's right! They are truly seeing themselves as the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region! I really want to personally give them a lesson." Seeing the Immortal Execution Archipelago entering a disadvantageous state, the blood of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's experts hidden underground boiled with excitement. They couldn't hold themselves from showing their skills.

"Big Brother, it is better to follow the plan. As long as we successfully open that place, then the Immortal Execution Archipelago will definitely be defeated. Giving them a lesson then would not be too late."

However, just as a large portion of people wanted to go out and join the battle, Seventh Brother spoke to urge otherwise.

"This..." Old Liu entered a predicament as he heard his brothers' urge and looked at the crowd's battle-eager gazes.

As the old subordinate of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he too was full of fighting spirit. How could he not want to go out right now and take care of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?

However, as the leader here, he could not be careless. After all, taking a single incorrect step would mean he would lose completely. Those here would also die because of his mistake.

"Old Liu, no matter if you believe me or not, from the information I've

obtained, I heard that the people above are not everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It is best to not be too hasty."

Seeing that Old Liu and the others had an absolute trump card, Chu Feng gave them some advice as well. He didn't want them to waste that trump card and risk their lives outside. After all, it was always better to walk the safer route.

"Oh? My friend, Wuqing, what else do you know? There's no harm in speaking your mind." Hearing his words, Old Liu turned his head around and asked seriously. After the prior events, he now trusted Chu Feng completely.

"I've heard that other than the group of experts and Murong Xun, of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's well-known Nine Immortals, two have come. However, they have yet to show themselves," replied Chu Feng truthfully.

"What? Is that true?!" Not to mention Old Liu, even the others changed their faces greatly when they heard those words. On their formerly excited faces, uneasiness instantly emerged.

Chapter 784: Appearance of a Martial King

"It was exactly because my friend overheard this information that she was forced to clash with Zhan Feng. And it was also because I helped my friend dissolve the attack that I crippled Zhan Feng."

Chu Feng was unable to ascertain that information, but he felt it was likely true, because up until now, everything that Chun Wu had told him was true.

"Wuqing, your friend... is it Lady Chun Wu of the Misty Peak?" asked Second Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers.

"Mm, it is Chun Wu." Chu Feng nodded.

"I've heard of that. Back then, it was indeed Lady Chun Wu who was held back by Zhan Feng, and it was also Zhan Feng who attacked first. He seemed to want to kill Lady Chun Wu, so that's why you went out and helped.

"And because of Lady Piaomiao, even the Immortal Execution Archipelago shouldn't easily make a move on the people from the Misty Peak, so it does seem that Lady Chun Wu overheard some things she shouldn't have heard." Second Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers seemed to be supporting Chu Feng's words.

"Wuqing, this is no joking matter. Are you certain that Lady Chun Wu's words are true?" asked Third Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers.

"Senior, I cannot be sure if her words are true or not—after all, I did not personally see or hear it—but, as they say, it would be better to believe it is true than to believe it is false. Besides, this is something that affects the lives of over two thousand members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Don't you agree?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"This..." Third Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers was speechless.

"Big Brother, I also think that Wuqing is correct. Judging by Murong Xun's fearless expression, he has likely come prepared.

"It would be fine if no one from the Nine Immortals have come. But, if

some have truly come, then I'm afraid we are unable to defeat them with the power we currently have.

"I've heard that the Nine Immortals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago are incomparable to the past. Other than the Ninth Immortal, the rest are all Martial Kings.

"If it is the Ninth Immortal only, then there's nothing to fear from him. However, if Wuqing's words are true, that those two have come, then it will be a disaster. Let's stick with the plan," advised Seventh Brother.

"According to Chun Wu, there are indeed two. Of the nine Immortals, I believe the Eighth and the Ninth are here," said Chu Feng.

"Mm. They are correct. Since we grasp the ticket to victory, then we should strongly hold onto it and not risk anything." Old Liu also became aware of the complexity of the current circumstances when he heard their words. So, he nodded, and decided to follow the plan.

"Ninth Brother, look. The Crippling Night Demon Sect calls themselves as the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region. So, the 'strongest' they speak of is actually bullying with numbers.

"Not only do they bully a thousand experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago with two thousand, they bully the Immortal Execution Archipelago's young master with three disciples of the Three Protectors. What do you think about this?"

However, just at that moment, in the sky outside the circle of battle, two people appeared. They were two aged men; their auras were extremely powerful. At that moment, they were standing in the air, smiling as they gazed upon the battlefield.

One of those two was a peak Martial Lord. The other was a Martial King. At that very instant, the Martial King was pointing at the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect and mocking them with cold words.

"Eighth Brother, from what I see, the Crippling Night Demon Sect doesn't care about face. To deal with these things that don't care about face, we cannot give them any face. Otherwise, they will know no end to

their arrogance," said the peak Martial Lord, coldly smiling.

"Those two... Could it be?"

"The Eighth and Ninth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago?"

"It's them, it really is! Back then, the Immortal Execution Archipelago held a meeting, and I met Lord Ninth Immortal by chance; they are indeed the Eighth Immortal and Ninth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago!

"I didn't think even they have come! Doesn't this mean that the Crippling Night Demon Sect will lose, without a doubt?"

"How unbelievable! I didn't expect to see such prominent characters here! These two are the strongest war strength representatives in the Immortal Execution Archipelago!"

At that instant, some discussions arose from the crowd because there was already a person who recognized the origin of those people. Indeed, as Chun Wu said, the Eighth Immortal and the Ninth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had already come to this place.

"Dammit, I didn't think the Immortal Execution Archipelago truly sent these two out of the Nine Immortals!" Seeing that, the faces of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were filled with panic. Putting aside the Ninth Immortal, the Eighth Immortal alone had the ability to completely reverse the present situation. A Martial King wasn't someone that Martial Lords could fight against.

"Big Brother, what should we do? We didn't expect two of the Nine Immortals to come, and this Eighth Immortal has truly come as well! With his strength of a Martial King, even if we open that place, we can't defend!" Several Gold-cloak Brothers all cast their gazes at their boss, Old Liu.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago has actually sent out such a formation of people. No wonder Murong Xun is unafraid. Luckily, we didn't rashly charge out, otherwise, everything would have been for

naught.

"Even though opening that place may not allow us to defeat the Eighth Immortal, there is at least a sliver of chance. Quick! Quickly follow me and enter the ravine. We must open that place as soon as possible!"

Old Liu decisively sent the order. Although he spoke at ease, perspiration drenched his aged face. It could be seen how anxious he was. A Martial King was indeed a huge threat. This time, they were truly burdened with enormous pressure. Likely, they were going to be defeated here.

Their defeat was of no importance; however, the defeat that followed was the glory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Big Brother, this isn't good! The Eighth Immortal is about to attack!" Suddenly, someone pointed at the sky and cried in alarm.

Raising their heads and looking, the expressions of Old Liu and the others changed greatly. Their eyes were full of panic, because at that very moment, the Eighth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had released his unique King-level Martial power.

boom rumble rumble At that instant, the initially bright and clear sky immediately turned pitch-black. Countless thick bolts of lightning shot down everywhere, as if it were splitting the sky, as if the end of the world had arrived.

"Dammit, they sent a Martial King!" That scene attracted everyone's attention. Even Xuan Xiaochao and the others tightly furrowed their brows. A Martial King was too powerful—it was an existence that they could not fight against.

At that moment, the dark sky was an illusion, but the horrifying lightning was real. If the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were struck by the bolts of lightning, none of them could survive; they did not have the power to defend against a Martial King.

"Shatter." But just as the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect felt a disaster had fallen upon their heads, a voice suddenly rang out. It

was a very calm voice, but sufficient to shock one's soul.

Most importantly, after that voice rang out, the lightning in the sky all dispersed. Even the dark sky returned to its former brightness.

The attack from the Eighth Immortal was nullified!

Chapter 785: Reversing the Situation of the War

Even the Eighth Immortal, a Martial King, furrowed his brows because of this sudden arrival. He cast his gaze at the end of the group of people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and said, “Who are you?”

“Little Eighth of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, we haven’t seen each other for just a dozen or so years yet you don’t recognize the person who gave you pointers back in the day?” Just at that moment, the space behind the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect squirmed, and then a person appeared in everyone’s line of sight.

He was an aged old man as well. However, looking at his appearance... it appeared he had lived for far longer—at least several hundred years—because his thin and dried-out body was akin to a corpse that had already entered the earth.

However, even though this old man was very old, he had an abnormally full and thick head of white hair. As he stood in the distance, he seemed like some sort of divine figure, emanating a feeling that he could not even be moved in the slightest.

He was not only a Martial King, he also wore the clothing of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After seeing this person, Old Liu and the others, who initially had expressions of panic, instantly rejoiced. They cried out simultaneously, “It’s the Earth King!”

“Earth King?” Chu Feng couldn’t help rejoicing inside as well when he heard those words, because he knew that the danger the Crippling Night Demon Sect was facing would be resolved soon.

In the days he had been in the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng had learnt quite a few things about the Crippling Night Demon Sect by inquiring on the side.

Back in the day, when the Crippling Night Demon Sect flourished, the

strongest person was the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He was the most powerful person in the Eastern Sea Region—this was something the public all agreed on. At least, before Huangfu Haoyue challenged him, he was the strongest.

After the extremely infamous sect head though, naturally the Four Protectors were the strongest. Within the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Four Protectors had undoubtable position and strength. They were the four strongest other than the sect head.

And, when the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect reached dozens of millions, other than the Four Protectors, there were actually many more powerful existences. Of them, the most notable were the Five Elemental Kings.

Gold King.

Wood King.

Water King.

Fire King.

Earth King.

Perhaps their strengths were inferior to the Four Protectors', but when the Crippling Night Demon Sect was thriving, they were already Martial Kings. Some of their names were known even earlier than the Four Protectors.

From Old Liu and the others, he learnt that the old man who appeared was the Earth King. Thus, Chu Feng naturally felt that the current danger had likely dissipated.

After all, the Earth King was different from the Eighth Immortal—he was a Martial King since many, many years ago. Likely, with his current fighting strength, he should be able to suppress the Eighth Immortal.

"So it's the Earth King. It's not that I didn't recognize you, it's just that having disappeared for so many years, and recalling your age as well, I thought you had already entered the coffin. Didn't think you were still

alive." The Eighth Immortal oddly smiled. To the person who had gave him pointers before, he did not have a hint of gratitude or respect.

"Haha, it's said that the Immortal Execution Archipelago rose in power only because others vanished, and the so-called experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago are also despicable people who gained power. It looks like that is rather true.

"But, I must admit that your Immortal Execution Archipelago's boot-licking skills are quite impressive. You've really hid your strengths deeply.

"If you didn't fawn over us so much back then, perhaps we would have already discovered that you were all so disgraceful and backstabbing. Lowly people like you should truly have been eradicated back then," said the Earth King with a sneer.

"Don't mention past matters because you lack the strength now. If your Crippling Night Demon Sect truly is powerful, then why talk of ancient glories? How about you try destroying my Immortal Execution Archipelago now?" the Eighth Immortal mocked, his face full of disdain.

"Hmph. You truly think you can stand on even ground with me just by becoming a Martial King?

"Today, I'll let you know how ignorant you are." At that instant, the Earth King was enraged. As he spoke, he disappeared in an instant. When he reappeared, he had already arrived before the Eighth Immortal.

boom He attacked. King-level Martial power was sent out, and even Martial Lords felt enormous pressure. The vast might of a Martial King was boundless.

"Heh, I'll be honest, I truly don't put an old guy like you in my eyes right now. Your era has passed, and rather than letting you die from age, how about I end your journey here and send you off!"

However, the Eighth Immortal was not the slightest bit afraid of the Earth King's attack. Instead, he started to uproariously laugh, and at the same time, released his King-level Martial power as well and fought the Earth King.

This Eighth Immortal had ambition that could touch the skies; he wanted the Earth King to be his stepping stone—he prepared to kill him, so his name would spread throughout the world.

"Insolence." The Earth King naturally knew what he was thinking. So, he didn't hold anything back and every single strike aimed to take the Eighth Immortal's life away.

The confrontation of Martial Kings was indeed extremely terrifying. Let alone the devastating might, the shock waves alone were something the Martial Lords could not defend against.

"Quick! Stay away from them! The Martial power of Martial Kings is too powerful. It's not something we can withstand!"

At that very instant, no matter if it was the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Crippling Night Demon Sect who were fighting each other, or the people who were observing, they all quickly created some distance because the strength of the Eighth Immortal and the Earth King was really too horrifying. If they were dragged into that battle, they would definitely be injured if they didn't die.

"The Eighth Immortal is this strong, so much that he can stand on equal ground with Lord Earth King?" Seeing the fierce battle between the two people, which completely darkened the sky, Second Brother of the Gold-cloak Ten Brothers spoke in shock.

"No, it's not the Eighth Immortal who's strong, it's just that Lord Earth King is truly old. After all, his age..." Old Liu helplessly shook his head and couldn't help but sigh.

"Look, the Ninth Immortal is attacking the young ones!" shouted Third Brother suddenly, his face full of worry.

When they looked over, they saw that the Ninth Immortal had indeed entered the circle of battle. He was currently massacring the experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Even though they were all Martial Lords, the Ninth Immortal's fighting strength was extraordinary. Almost no one was able to defend against it.

He alone completely reversed the situation of the war. In but an instant, the over two thousand experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect lost their advantage completely, and now, they were only on equal grounds with the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago despite their superior numbers.

"Dammit! Quickly, we can't delay this any longer! Quickly open that place, otherwise everything will change!" Old Liu finally hesitated no more. He turned around, and, still underground, headed towards the group of grand-looking buildings in the Depraved Ravine. Chu Feng and the others didn't dally either, and naturally closely followed.

Old Liu clearly knew the paths as they were underground—by his lead, they finally arrived before a palace door that was buried deeply. There seemed to be an extremely powerful Spirit Formation on the door, but Old Liu knew the method of deactivating it, and was able to easily do so.

Through the door, they walked into a vast underground palace. There were many mechanisms inside, and dangers truly lay in all directions. On the road, there were even countless Defensive Spirit Formations.

Luckily, Old Liu clearly knew everything. Everything was in his grasp, and all mechanisms and obstructions were broken through.

However, it appeared that deactivating those Spirit Formations wasn't easy either. After short moments of work, Old Liu's face had turned pale, and he was gasping for air. He looked as if he was about to fall at any moment.

Chapter 786: Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation

Finally, a grandiose and large door appeared in front of them. Chu Feng could also perceive that there was a Spirit Formation laid upon the door—it was even stronger than the combination of all the Spirit Formations from before. If Old Liu had continued attempting to forcibly deactivate this Spirit Formation, then his body would have likely suffered heavy injuries.

"Big Brother, you've worked hard enough. Hand this Spirit Formation over to us."

"Indeed! Big Brother, we still need you to open the other location, so you should preserve a bit of your strength. Hand this final barrier to us," said several of the Gold-cloak Brothers upon arriving. They didn't allow Old Liu to continue breaking through the formations on his own.

"Mm, quickly go. The current situation outside is not good. We cannot delay this any longer." Old Liu knew his body was unable to go on, thus he chose to force it no longer. He sat off to the side and began to recuperate, silently gazing at his brothers while they attempted to open the extremely powerful Spirit Formation.

"Old Liu, please forgive any offence, but may I ask what is the thing you are opening?" asked Chu Feng due to curiosity.

"Hoh. Wuqing, come over here and sit." Seeing Chu Feng, a faint smile rose in Old Liu's face. It could be seen he had quite a good impression of Chu Feng.

Without much hesitation, he hurried came to his side, and after Chu Feng sat down, Old Liu said, "I actually don't have much to hide from you.

"There are two ways that the Crippling Night Demon Sect defends itself. One is defend, one is attack. You've seen defend—the indestructible Spirit Formation as well as the countless mechanisms.

"No matter if it's the Spirit Formation or the mechanisms, unless you

know the method of deactivation, it is extremely difficult to forcefully break through them.

"As for the so-called attack, it is based around people. For those who join the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the symbol representing the Crippling Night Demon Sect is drawn on their backs.

"But, in reality, it is not a simple symbol. It is a formation that connects with their dantian, one that also harmonizes with this formation here. It is a slaughtering formation. As long as it is activated, all members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect within a certain distance will obtain its power, and their strength will increase dramatically.

"Not only strength, even their courage, awareness, and wisdom will become extremely strong. At that time, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect will no longer be like their former state. From that moment, they will be true warriors. They will be decisive, and no mercy will be given.

"Almost every single piece of land of the Crippling Night Demon Sect has such a formation. The Depraved Ravine is naturally no exception. However, the slaughtering formation here, in comparison to other places, is different." A hint of pride emerged onto Old Liu's face as those words were spoken.

"What's different?" asked Chu Feng.

"It has a name—Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation," said Old Liu.

"Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation." Chu Feng was taken aback.

"The Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation is as its name suggests. As long as the formation is activated, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect will be like unsealed demons. They become bloodthirsty and invincible. Everyone who evades the Crippling Night Demon Sect will die here without even leaving corpses behind," Old Liu explained with a smile.

"It's that powerful?" Chu Feng finally knew why Old Liu and the others were burdened with such an important mission. They had indeed a very

strong trump card.

"Of course. Do you know why we set up such a situation here? It's because the might of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation is extremely powerful. It can cost the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago quite a bit.

"However, we've still underestimated them. I didn't think they would send two of the Nine Immortals to this place for the treasure. If Lord Earth King hadn't come, the ones who would bear quite the price would be us.

"Ahh, I initially wanted to borrow the treasure here to lure the Immortal Execution Archipelago and beat down their arrogant attitudes, and also rally together the brothers who have been scattered to all sorts of places.

"However, none of us expected the current Immortal Execution Archipelago to be so troublesome to deal with." Some self-blame unavoidably emerged onto Old Liu's face after he spoke those words. They had indeed underestimated the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"Old Liu, what exactly is the treasure in this place that made the Immortal Execution Archipelago send two of the Nine Immortals here?" Chu Feng followed with a question.

"Hoh, if the Immortal Execution Archipelago knew what treasure this is, I'm afraid they wouldn't just send the Eighth Immortal and the Ninth Immortal." Old Liu lightly smiled, then looked at Chu Feng and said, "Wuqing, I heard you got an Incomplete Royal Armament on the Misty Peak from Temple Head Wuya?"

"Mm" Chu Feng nodded.

"How does it feel?" Old Liu asked.

"It is extremely powerful, far beyond typical martial skills and Elite Armaments," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Yeah, although Incomplete Royal Armaments have very strong power, they are still incomplete. Do you want to know what a true Royal

Armament looks like?" Old Liu asked again.

"Of course I do." Chu Feng nodded. If an Incomplete Royal Armament was able to cause one's fighting strength to increase significantly, then how powerful would a true Royal Armament be? Chu Feng truly wanted to see it.

"Coincidentally, I have one here. After the Immortal Execution Archipelago is taken care of, I'll make an exception and let you see a true Royal Armament," said Old Liu faintly. And, when he did, he said it mentally. It could be seen not even all his subordinates know that there was a Royal Armament here.

"Could the treasure in this place be that Royal Armament?" Chu Feng was very shocked.

"Hoh, in front of a Royal Armament, what else can be called a treasure? Of course it's it," replied Old Liu truthfully.

"But, since a Royal Armament is so precious, why is it put here?" Chu Feng was confused why the Crippling Night Demon Sect left such a valuable thing here, and didn't take it away.

"It's because the precious master of this Royal Armament is Lord Sect Head. Other than him, no one else is worthy of this Royal Armament. Even the Four Protectors aren't.

"In reality, even Lord Sect Head back then was only a master of an Incomplete Royal Armament. He didn't receive the true approval of the Royal Armament," sent Old Liu mentally.

"Even the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect was unable to receive the approval of the Royal Armament?" Chu Feng felt a bit disbelief.

"Heh, my friend Wuqing, don't underestimate Royal Armaments. They are weapons that only Royal-cloak World Spiritists can create, and not only do they contain extremely powerful King-level Martial power, they also have their own intelligence. Moreover, the level of intelligence is the standard of determining the quality of the Royal Armament.

“The one here is most definitely the highest quality one. I don’t mind telling you this—the person who made it was a Martial Emperor,” said Old Liu solemn.

gulp Even Chu Feng couldn’t help gulping when he heard those words. A Royal Armament made by a Martial Emperor... That was truly something one would yearn for.

hmm Just at that moment, golden radiance spewed out above the palace door, but it quickly faded away soon after. At that instant, the tightly shut door gradually opened within rumblings.

As it opened, everyone had faces of reverence. Even Chu Feng quickly rose and cast his fiery gaze behind the doors, his heart becoming excited as well.

Chapter 787: Unvirtuous Unrighteous

A golden and bright formation stood at the center of the palace; formation symbols surged about through the construct as a brilliant radiance shot out in every direction. Countless serpentine masses of gas encompassed the area around the formation and slowly drifted around.

Yet, at that very moment, the most eye-grabbing object was not the formation, but rather the pitch-black sword floating within.

The sword did not have a gorgeous appearance, nor was it engraved with exquisite decorations. It appeared as though the sword lacked an edge, as if, without the hilt, it were a large black lump of steel.

In spite of this, no one could ignore the sword, because after only a glance, they could discern its abnormality.

“What is that?!” Finally, a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect couldn’t help crying out.

“This is the source of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation,” the Second Brother of the Gold-cloaks explained. But, he did not say it was a Royal Armament, intentionally hiding the fact there was one here.

“Old Liu, the Royal Armament is there?” Chu Feng said, sending a mental message to Old Liu.

“It is a projection of the Royal Armament. The actual one is in the deepest part of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation,” said Old Liu.

At that moment, almost everyone had surged into the palace. After entering, the Gold-cloak Brothers quickly surrounded the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, and sat cross-legged, in a hurry to activate it.

“Wuqing, take this.” Suddenly, as the crowd wasn’t focused on him, Old Liu took a palm-sized stone and gave it to Chu Feng.

“Old Liu, this is?!”

Chu Feng was taken back. He discovered that not only was there a formation engraved on that stone, as he held it in his hand, Chu Feng could feel the power it contained.

A large amount of golden Spirit Formation power was sealed within the palm-sized stone. Moreover, it was extremely dense—it was likely not even weaker than the power within Old Liu's current body.

Most importantly, there was no master to such power. It was as if it had been specially prepared to a very mellow state. Any World Spiritist could freely control it, without exerting any Spirit power of their own.

"This is something that I've spent several years condensing. Originally, I had planned to use it as backup when my own power is insufficient.

"However, right now, I feel that it is more suitable for you. Wuqing, although this Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation can grant very powerful strength, it is simultaneously extremely difficult to activate. If we are unable to continue, I hope you can use this to give us a hand," said Old Liu gravely.

"Don't worry, Old Liu. If you ever need me, I, Wuqing, will help without hesitation." Putting away that stone, Chu Feng seriously nodded because he knew that this was the trust Old Liu had put in him.

Soon after, Old Liu said no more. After patting Chu Feng's shoulders, he walked towards the Spirit Formation and also sat cross-legged.

hmm After he sat down, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers began activating the formation with their full strength. However, the activation process was still not easy. Even though they knew how, a large amount of Spirit power and Spirit Formation power was still exhausted.

But luckily, as they were activating it, Chu Feng could feel the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation stirring up bit by bit. After one full hour, the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation seemed to be completely activated, and could immediately be used.

"Wait, this aura?" Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed greatly. He quickly cast his fierce gaze outside the palace.

“Hahaha, everyone, I truly thank you for your hard work.” However, just at that moment, Chu Feng saw a person flying into the underground palace. He stood outside the room. And that person was the Ninth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“The Ninth Immortal?!”

After they saw the Ninth Immortal, everyone’s expression changed. Indescribable uneasiness emerged onto their faces, and Old Liu and the others were also no longer able to continue activating the formation. They quickly took up defensive positions and stood before the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation.

“Dammit, how does the Ninth Immortal know this place?” Everyone tightly furrowed their brows, confusion filling their eyes.

whoosh However, just at that moment, a person suddenly shot out from the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, heading straight towards the Ninth Immortal.

“Seventh Brother, don’t be rash!” Old Liu and the others were stupefied when they saw that. They quickly called out because the person who burst out was the Seventh Brother of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

whoosh But then, possibly the most surprising scene occurred. The Seventh Brother did not attack the Ninth Immortal, nor did he return to their defensive formation. He actually came up to the Ninth Immortal, and said with polite clasped hands, “Ninth Immortal, you’ve come at the perfect moment.”

“What! Seventh Brother, you!” Everyone understood after that. They finally knew why the Ninth Immortal appeared in this place, and also at such a crucial moment. It was because a traitor appeared within the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

“Seventh Brother, you’re a traitor?! You betrayed us?!” The Gold-cloak Brothers gnashed their teeth in anger at his treachery. But, they were not willing to believe it and instead, questioned him fiercely first.

“Second Brother, it’s not that I’m betraying all of you, it’s just that the

era of the Crippling Night Demon Sect truly has passed. It is clear that we ten brothers can have such a great future. Why must we defend to the death the name of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and do nothing? Moreover, why must we become enemies to the Immortal Execution Archipelago?

"How about you be like me, and join the Immortal Execution Archipelago? As long as we do, we can obtain large amounts of resources, and we ten brothers can make breakthroughs to the realm of Martial Kings.

"At that moment, we will not serve anyone. Instead, there will be countless people who serve us. The people of the Eastern Sea Region will acknowledge not only the Nine Immortals, not only the Four Protectors, not only the Five Elemental Kings, but us ten brothers as well," urged Seventh Brother very sincerely.

"Seventh Brother, you..." However, not a single person of the Gold-cloak Brothers was moved by his words. Instead, helplessness and fury overflowed on their faces.

"Seventh Brother, I ask you only one thing. Is the reason why the Immortal Execution Archipelago has such preparations, and even sent the Eighth Immortal and the Ninth Immortal because you told our plan to them beforehand, and that they already know what is hidden in this place?" Old Liu asked very calmly at that moment.

"Big Brother, don't blame me for this. 'Wise birds choose the optimal tree.'" Seventh Brother's words admitted everything.

whoosh Just at that moment, Old Liu's sharp brows rose abruptly, then he shifted forward. With a powerful aura, he had arrived before the Seventh Brother. Extending his palm, he clasped his claw-like hand around the Seventh Brother's neck, and fiercely said, "Wise birds can choose the optimal tree, but they cannot lack virtue and righteousness."

Chapter 788: Display of Might

“We ten brothers are orphans. Although we were from different parts of the Eastern Sea Region, we received the same cold gazes from others, and received suffering that no people of the same age received.

“Who saved us? It was Lord Qiu Canfeng. He not only saved us, he even taught us cultivation. Not only did he give us power, he gave us privileges as well.

“Without him, we would not be here right now, nor would we be alive today. He treated us with such kindness; should we not serve him with our lives, and serve the Crippling Night Demon Sect?

“But you... you not only forget the given favours, you even, for your own selfish needs, betrayed us brothers, and betrayed everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Are you even human anymore?!

“Do you know that if Lord Earth King had not arrived, the brothers who have gathered here today with great difficulty would have all died because of you?!”

Old Liu became angrier and angrier as he spoke. His hand also clenched tighter and tighter—it was soon going to snap the Seventh Brother’s neck.

However, as he watched such a scene, the Ninth Immortal who stood next to him didn’t just not help, he even looked as if he were watching a performance as he silently gazed on.

“Ninth Immortal, help me!” Seeing his life soon to end, the Seventh Brother quickly extended his hand and begged the Ninth Immortal for help.

“Help you? Why should I help you? I’m sure you don’t think the Immortal Execution Archipelago would truly accept a dog like you who betrays his master and brothers for glory, right?” The Ninth Immortal faintly smiled, his eyes full of disdain.

“You...” The Seventh Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers trembled in fury when he heard those words. Even his heart was about to explode.

“Go ahead. I pity you for having a brother like him,” the Ninth Immortal said to Old Liu. But as he spoke, his tone was one of ridicule.

“Seventh Brother, you’ve heard it. This is the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and you want to serve them? Truly too foolish.” However, against all expectations, Old Liu didn’t just leave the Seventh Brother alive. He even released the hand around his throat.

Soon after, he yelled, “Second Brother, Third Brother, Fourth Brother, Fifth Brother, Sixth Brother, Eighth Brother, Tenth Brother, attack!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh…

Just as he finished speaking, the eight other brothers leapt forward. Surrounding the Ninth Immortal, they sealed all of his possible paths.

“Seventh Brother, I now give you a chance to start anew. Join us nine brothers and kill him,” Old Liu said, pointing at the Ninth Immortal.

“Big Brother, don’t worry. Even if you didn’t say that, I would have still done that.” The Seventh Brother nodded. At that moment, his neck was purple due to being clamped over, but he didn’t blame Old Liu in the slightest. Instead, he cast his eyes filled with hatred towards the Ninth Immortal.

“Hoho? I’ve truly underestimated you ten brothers. Especially you. You really do have a lot of patience. Not only do you keep such a traitor alive, you even kept him alive to aid in handling me. How interesting.

“But, I’m sure you’ve never heard about this: In the Eastern Sea Region, within the realm of Martial Lords, who can defeat me, the Ninth Immortal?

“Not to mention ten of you, even a hundred, a thousand, I would have absolutely no trouble killing all of you,” said the Ninth Immortal with bursting confidence.

“Perhaps before, you were indeed invincible within the realm of Martial Lords, but after meeting us ten brothers, you will know that you are not.” Old Liu coldly smiled, then shouted, “Formation!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, the ten brothers moved simultaneously. They didn't use any powerful martial skills but the simplest attacks of punches and kicks. That being said, they coordinated with each other extremely well. Their attacks were surprising and abrupt, and their coordination could be said to be perfect—it was many times fiercer than powerful martial skills.

In the instant of exchanging blows, the self-acclaimed existence "invincible within the realm of Martial Lords", the Ninth Immortal, was powerfully suppressed by the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. He didn't even have a chance to use any martial skills.

"Damn. It seems that I've truly underestimated you.

"However, you shouldn't underestimate me. No matter how good your coordination, you will never be able to defeat me."

Being restrained by ten people he looked down upon put the Ninth Immortal in a very poor mood. He took out an Incomplete Royal Armament, raising his fighting strength—he wanted to finish the fight quickly.

However, he still underestimated the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. Not only were their attacks profound, their defenses were solid. But, the most important thing was that they had no need to defend because their attacks had completely restrained the Ninth Immortal.

The ten brothers seemed to know exactly what the Ninth Immortal's next course of actions were. They firmly sealed their hold on his attacks—oppressing him greatly.

At that very instant, the Ninth Immortal even had the heart to curse out loud. He was filled with abilities, but they were all unable to be used. Clearly one punch was the only thing needed to kill a tiger, but at that moment, he could do nothing because of the surrounding nipping of ten ants.

"What a profound formation. This is a true formation. As long as they are coordinated, they don't need any external power.

“Impressive. This is a formation that only belongs to the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. It seems that as long as they join hands, there should be no Martial Lords who can defeat them.”

Chu Feng silently observed all of that. He discovered that what the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers used was a formation, but it was different from a Spirit Formation. It was a technique that expanded one’s fighting strength through mutual coordination.

That formation was even more difficult than a Spirit Formation—perhaps several times, even over a hundred times more difficult.

They not only needed a mutual connection, they also needed countless months and years of training. Otherwise, it would be impossible for the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers to reach such a degree of mutual understanding.

Moreover, the person who designed that formation was clearly not simple either. So, in Chu Feng perspective, even if the Ninth Immortal had some ridiculous technique, he was fated to be defeated by the hands of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

boom boom boom boom boom...

“Ahh—”

“Ahh—”

At that moment, in the air above the Depraved Ravine, the war between both sides still continued. They were initially fighting on fairly equal around, but when the Ninth Immortal disappeared, a great reverse happened.

The experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had now occupied an absolute advantage; the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago now continually cried out, then one after the other, they fell from the sky—killed by the experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Dammit! This has been dragged out for so long; what is the Ninth Immortal thinking?” Seeing that happening, Murong Xun lightly knitted his brows, some displeasure appearing on his face.

“Haha, Murong Xun, the momentum your Immortal Execution Archipelago had is now gone! Today, you will die here,” said Xuan Xiaochao, laughing loudly.

“Murong Xun, your fiancée and sister aren’t too bad! In a while, we’ll consider leaving them alive to reward our bravely fought brothers.” You Tonghan even shamelessly swept his gaze at the distant, towards Ya Fei and Murong Wan who were also participating in the battle.

“Hmph. Three pieces of trash truly think they can compete with me?

“I am merely playing around with all of you. Now, I’ve had enough. I’ll immediately let you all know who is the true king of the Eastern Sea Region’s young generation.”

Suddenly, Murong Xun’s complexion turned cold. With a flick of his wrist, a silver spear appeared within his hand. In the instant it appeared, even the colour of the sky changed. Almost everyone felt an incomparable pressure descending from above.

Chapter 789: Exceeding?

At that moment, Murong Xun held a silver spear in his hand. There were countless complex symbols engraved on it. Although the spear didn't emit any blinding light—not even a single trace of light, as if it were an ordinary spear—everyone could feel that the power that had just shook the sky and the earth originated from the silver spear in Murong Xun's hand.

Holding it, the atmosphere surrounding him became completely different. At that moment, he no longer appeared to be a Martial Lord, but more akin to a Martial King. At least, at that very moment, he was infinitely close to becoming a Martial King.

"What is that silver-coloured spear? How did it cause Murong Xun's aura to become this powerful?"

After feeling the change that occurred to Murong Xun, the expressions of Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming greatly changed. On their faces, fear appeared.

They subconsciously started to back away, because they knew what the current circumstances were. At that very instant, even though all three of them were working together, it was impossible for them to defeat Murong Xun.

"Royal Armament? It's a Royal Armament?!

"Where did you obtain this Royal Armament? I've never seen this before, unless...

"I know! It must be this. It must be that archaeological remains, you found a Royal Armament there!" The Earth King also couldn't help crying out loud because he too recognized that the silver-coloured spear was a Royal Armament.

"Heh, as expected of the Earth King. To have made so many deductions, I see that you're a bit knowledgeable. That's right. You're completely correct." The Eighth Immortal grinned smugly, then he loudly said, "Back

then, with our archipelago head leading the way, the reason why the Immortal Execution Archipelago went to investigate that presumed-to-be-garbage remains, despite the large number of losses, was because he calculated that there was definitely treasure inside.

"And in the end, as he expected, we found treasure inside the remains. Although we did suffer heavy losses, countless experts sacrificed—even our vice-head and two Protectors passed away—we obtained this Royal Armament from that place.

"Back then, there were even innumerable people who mocked the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They mocked our inexperience, our overestimation, that for a tiny bit of yield we ventured into the remains that had nothing but danger.

"But, they did not know that we found a Royal Armament inside, and relying on precisely this Royal Armament, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is able to reach its current height.

"Haha, your Crippling Night Demon Sect looked down on the achievements my Immortal Execution Archipelago has, but you have simply not seen how much we've invested. Our head is a person with true intelligence."

When he heard those words, the Earth King tightly furrowed his brows. His face was ashen, and very, very unsightly.

Back then, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent their full strength to investigate the remains, it was still when the Crippling Night Demon Sect ruled over the Eastern Sea Region.

At that time, the reason why the Crippling Night Demon Sect did not go into that remains was because everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knew there was nothing inside. There were only endless dangers; it was a deadly trap.

So, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago decisively chose to enter, yet obtained absolutely nothing, and even lost so many experts, they naturally received mockery from everywhere.

At that time, even the Crippling Night Demon Sect mocked the Immortal Execution Archipelago's ignorance. Everyone felt that the Immortal Execution Archipelago let greed blind their eyes.

But looking at it today, even the Earth King felt a bit of shame. At that moment, he had no choice but to admit that the Immortal Execution Archipelago did have some strength. At least, their head had devised a very deep plan. He was a true daring and ambitious person.

"Doesn't this mean that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has six Royal Armaments now?"

"Heavens! A single Royal Armament is already so impressive, and the Immortal Execution Archipelago has six? Don't they have more than the Crippling Night Demon Sect when they were the most flourishing—five?"

Everyone heard the conversation between the Earth King and the Eighth Immortal, and they also felt stunned.

Being able to possess what they currently did, the Immortal Execution Archipelago did fight for everything bit by bit. Back then, after the Crippling Night Demon Sect broke up, when the Burning Heaven Church was moving, the Eastern Sea Region was in an unprecedented chaotic era.

Forces arose everywhere, and for the position of overlord, a long battle was commenced.

At that time, there were many powerful forces. There were even some that had been around for several thousands of years, and even grasped a few techniques from the Ancient Era.

As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were not too highly regarded. Although they had decent strength, in comparison to the forces that had existed for many years and even had Royal Armaments, they were still a bit weaker.

However, with the head of the Immortal Execution Archipelago leading them, they constantly defeated undefeatable opponents. Within three years, they made peace with the world, and became the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region.

Moreover, at that time, they obtained five Royal Armaments from their enemies. Five Royal Armament—that number was the exact same as the number of Royal Armaments the Crippling Night Demon Sect owned during their prospering time.

Most importantly, not only did the Immortal Execution Archipelago solidify the position of overlord in the next few years, their overall strength rose in leaps and bounds.

One could even say that the Immortal Execution Archipelago's overall strength was not the slightest bit inferior to the Crippling Night Demon Sect's back then. Some even felt that the Immortal Execution Archipelago, at present, had already surpassed the Crippling Night Demon Sect in their most prosperous state.

At first, many did not believe that way of thinking. After all, the glory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect left undiminishable impressions on many people. However, today, after Murong Xun took out the sixth Royal Armament, their hearts were shaken.

Royal Armaments were really too precious, too powerful. They were often a standard that weighed the true strength of a force.

Now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had actually taken out a sixth Royal Armament. That had surpassed the number that the Crippling Night Demon Sect had back then. As a result, some felt that, perhaps, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had surpassed the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Haha, what happened? Are you three pieces of trash afraid?

"You lackeys of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You think that the sect is invincible, and you look down on my Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"Now, you understand, right? No matter if you admit it or not, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is now a thing of the past. The glory of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was also obtained by every single punch and kick. Every single step that was taken added onto it, and we have already stomped your Crippling Night Demon Sect beneath our feet." Murong Xun smiled as he looked at Xuan Xiaochao and the others. He

madly laughed—it was full of pride.

"Rubbish!" When he heard those words, You Tonghan was enraged. With an explosive shout, two dark rays of light shot out from his eyes. They were extremely terrifying; they even broke through the fabrics of space and with light-like speed, they shot straight towards Murong Xun. It was You Tonghan's trump card.

"Heh, die!" However, Murong Xun only smiled disdainfully at You Tonghan's attack. Shortly after that, the silver-coloured spear in his hand suddenly swayed.

A silver light flashed, and the body of the spear, like a silver dragon waving its tail, swept over with a beautiful arc. It not only instantly disintegrated You Tonghan's attack, it even brought over the might of a king towards him.

At that moment, You Tonghan, who was incomparably furious before, couldn't help changing his expression greatly, and yelled in his heart, "Crap."

Chapter 790: What Is Going On?

At that instant, You Tonghan was like a wooden chicken as he stood on the spot, stupefied.

Even though he knew when Murong Xun held the Royal Armament, he would become unparalleled in strength, he didn't expect Murong Xun would become that powerful.

When his trump card was completely destroyed, he felt as if his life had ended. He simply had no way of fighting against Murong Xun. Even the current strike alone would lead him to an undoubtable death.

whoosh whoosh

But just at that moment, two extremely powerful martial skills came from both sides, crashing into Murong Xun's Royal Armament strike.

boom rumble rumble In an instant, deafening explosions burst out, uncontrollably shock waves also spread everywhere.

"You Tonghan, what the hell are you looking at? Royal Armaments have unique deterrence—don't be frightened by it. Although he does have one, we are not fighting alone. Behind us we also have the brothers of the Crippling Night Demon Sect," shouted Xuan Xiaochao.

"Brother Han, get yourself together! The result of this battle is not determined yet!" said Fu Fengming with a faint smile.

"All of you, this is..." After You Tonghan saw Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, he was astonished.

At that very instant, black flames rose from their bodies. Their auras could not be described with the same terms as before.

And behind them, almost a thousand from the Crippling Night Demon Sect stood orderly. They were standing in air and continuously taking their power, melding it together, and merging it into Xuan Xiaochao's and Fu Fengming's body.

hmm Just then, another black-coloured ray shot out from the crowd and

entered directly into You Tonghan's body.

At that moment, You Tonghan's body ignited as well. Like Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, they were black-coloured flames. He too felt his aura churn, and his blood boil. In a short instant, his fighting strength grew by many times.

"Interesting. This is the unique formation of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, right?

"Through the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they undergo an exchange of power. I must admit that this technique is quite brilliant." When he saw that, Murong Xun smiled with contempt, then he added, "However, the three of you wouldn't truly think you can defeat me with the power of those thousand Martial Lords?"

"Hoh, Murong Xun, if you think we are fighting against you with only the power of our brothers, then you are wrong." Xuan Xiaochao too lightly smiled at Murong Xun's words of contempt. Shortly after, an abnormally fierce glint emerged into his eyes and he loudly shouted, "What we are truly relying on is the power of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!"

After speaking, Xuan Xiaochao flipped his palm. A golden halberd appeared in his hand. Although it was an Incomplete Royal Armament, in his hands, it currently contained extremely powerful might.

whoosh whoosh whoosh At the same time, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming also took out their Incomplete Royal Armaments, and together with Xuan Xiaochao, they started attacking Murong Xun.

"Haha! You three trash, you've come at the perfect moment. I'll let you experience the power of a Royal Armament." Murong Xun roared with laughter, and the disdain in his eyes was not only undiminished, it increased instead. The Royal Armament in his hand trembled, then its power clashed with the three who obtained the power of a thousand people.

dang dang dang dang

Immediately, three Incomplete Royal Armaments and a single true Royal Armament endlessly clashed with one another. Every time they did so, a violent shock wave would burst out, as well as sparks that flooded the sky.

However, the power of the Royal Armament was really too strong. Even though Xuan Xiaochao and the others obtained the support of nearly a thousand Martial Lords, they still felt greatly pressured.

boom rumble rumble Finally, another huge explosion rang out. As a horrifying shock wave exploded outward, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming were actually unable to defend against it and were thrown out.

“Ahh—” At the same time, the near-thousand Martial Lords channeling power into the three of them were instantly defeated. All of them spat out blood, their bodies heavily injured. They had already lost the ability to continue fighting.

Murong Xun, with the power of the Royal Armament, fought a thousand alone, and completely crushed them, obtaining victory.

“This is too horrifying. This Murong Xun with a Royal Armament is like a completely different person from before! Could his fighting strength truly be compared to a Martial King?”

“Powerful. Truly powerful. As expected of a Royal Armament, the strongest weapon in the Eastern Sea Region.”

When things progressed to what they had, almost everyone’s gazes were concentrated within Murong Xun’s circle of battle. Even though shock waves scattered about, blurring the scene, at that moment, they were still able to see who won and who lost.

“Haha, with the Royal Armament, who can defeat me within the realm of Martial Lords? All of you must die.” Seeing the pale-faced Xuan Xiaochao and the others, Murong Xun’s laughter became even more complacent. As he spoke, he was about to kill them.

hmm But just at that moment, Murong Xun’s complexion suddenly

changed. After taking out the badge on his waist and looking at it, his complexion turned even worse. He muttered, “What happened? Even the Ninth Immortal sent a signal for help?”

“Young master, quickly save the Ninth Immortal!” Simultaneously, the Eighth Immortal also shouted. Clearly, he also received the signal for help from the Ninth Immortal.

“Hmph. I’ll temporarily let you live for a bit more. In a while, I’ll return to take your lives.” Murong Xun put away the Royal Armament in his hand, then looked at Ya Fei and Murong Wan, and said, “Fei’er, Wan’er, follow me!”

whoosh After speaking, Murong Xun suddenly punched the surface of the ground. With a boom, a deep pit appeared. At the bottom of the deep pit, there was a tunnel—it was the area Chu Feng and the others walked in before.

Quickly after, Murong Xun rushed towards the underground tunnel. Ya Fei and Murong Wan hurriedly followed as well.

Murong Xun was extremely fast, and in addition, the Spirit Formation and obstructions were already deactivated so in nearly a blink, they reached the deepest part of the underground palace.

However, when Murong Xun, Ya Fei, and Murong Wan arrived at the entrance of the palace and saw the scene before their eyes, they all couldn’t help being taken aback and were deeply dumbfounded.

At that very instant, titled as a person with one of the strongest fighting strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, one who had defeated countless Martial Lords, the Ninth Immortal, was lying on the floor, hands on his head, and was rolling back and forth. He was enduring the surrounding abuse, and at that moment, blood was flowing from his mouth and nose, his eyes and face were blue and swollen, and he completely lost the ability to counterattack.

The ones who were so brutally attacking the Ninth Immortal were actually the ten old men at the peak of the Martial Lord realm.

As they saw such a scene, Ya Fei and Murong Wan were truly dumbstruck. After looking at each other, they said simultaneously, “This... What is going on?”

Chapter 791: Enemies Meeting

In reality, the dumbfounded ones were not only Ya Fei and Murong Wan; even Murong Xun was as well.

The grand Ninth Immortal, who was acclaimed for being able to put up a fight even against a Martial King, was being ruthlessly beaten by ten old men. Such a scene didn't appear to make any sense and was absolutely unbearable to gaze upon!

True enough, the Ninth Immortal was an elderly man as well, but his name was already well known throughout the Eastern Sea Region. One could simply not look straight at this scene of him being beaten black and blue!

The next moment, Murong Xun cast his gaze elsewhere, looking straight at the deepest part of the palace. Instantly, his baffled expression turned joyful. He sneered, "I look everywhere yet couldn't find you, but as soon as I stop trying, you appear here without me exerting any effort. Honestly, I didn't think I'd find you in this place. You were saved by Xuan Xiaochao last time; let's see who will save you today!"

"Wuqing is also here?!" After hearing Murong Xun's words, Ya Fei and Murong Wan followed his gaze and saw Chu Feng. Their expressions couldn't help but slightly change as they felt extreme shock.

At that moment, Chu Feng was sitting cross-legged in front of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation. Using the stone Old Liu gave him, he released endless golden Spirit Formation power and put his all into laying the formation, fully activating the formation.

He wanted to activate it in advance as Old Liu and the others were fighting. That way, he could prevent many of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's members from dying and change the momentum of the battle once again.

However, when the voices of Murong Xun and the others all rang out, Chu Feng abruptly cast his gaze over. He then saw all three of them standing outside the palace.

Chu Feng stood up immediately. Not only was the anger in his heart bursting, oppressive bloodlust emanated from his body.

The three of them were people Chu Feng dreamt of killing—his archenemies!

"Young master, qui-quickly save me!" said the Ninth Immortal with a weak voice, acting as if he saw his savior.

"You're asking a brat to save you? Ninth Immortal, I expected more from you." The appearance of Murong Xun and the others had already attracted the attention of Old Liu and the others.

However, they just didn't put him in their eyes. That was why they continued kicking and punching the Ninth Immortal. They wanted to put him in a horrendous state; they wanted to humiliate the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

At that moment, when they saw the Ninth Immortal asking for help, they naturally sneered and ridiculed him.

"Haha, this is truly great. It seems that almost everyone who dared to oppose my Immortal Execution Archipelago is here. Let me deal with all of you together then." Murong Xun had a smile, but in his eyes, there was strong killing intent.

"Quite the words you have there! Murong Xun, even this Ninth Immortal cannot defeat us. You want to kill us? You, a brat?" The Second Brother of the Gold-cloak Brothers made a hint of a cold smile.

"Hmph. It's as easy as stepping on an ant to kill you ten old things." Murong Xun twisted his wrist. The silver-coloured spear again appeared within his palm.

When the Royal Armament came out, his strength was immediately multiplied. Murong Xun's clothes fluttered despite the lack of wind, and not only did his fighting strength dramatically rise, the aura around his entire person became extremely powerful, as if it came from a king that ruled the world.

"This might, could it be..."

“It’s a Royal Armament! This brat has a Royal Armament!”

Feeling such unfathomable change occurring to Murong Xun, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were astounded. They were people who had experienced the world, so they immediately recognized the thing that Murong Xun held was a Royal Armament.

“That’s a Royal Armament? Murong Xun received the approval of the Royal Armament?” Hearing that the silver-coloured spear was a Royal Armament, Chu Feng’s expression also moved as he carefully observed it.

“Heh, so what if it’s a Royal Armament? Only in the hands of a Martial King can a Royal Armament truly be used.

“Besides, from what I see, that Royal Armament has yet to truly recognize you as its master.” Although Old Liu was surprised, he was not afraid.

“Nonsense! This Royal Armament has already recognized me as master, otherwise how could I even use it?” Murong Xun was enraged when he heard those words. He didn’t like the feeling of being looked down by someone else.

“Heh, little boy, you must think I have no experience with the world, but you’re the one who has no experience with the world. You must not have seen how terrifying a true Mastered Royal Armament is.

“As for you, although you are indeed holding a Royal Armament, this might is far too lacking.” Old Liu disdainfully smiled. On his face, a single world was written—contempt!

“Experience? An old bastard like you is talking to me about experience? I’ll show you today what ‘experience’ is!” Murong Xun was thoroughly enraged, and didn’t waste any more words. The silver-coloured spear in his hand trembled, and the unique might of the Royal Armament burst out.

“Formation!” But even so, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were not afraid in the slightest. After Old Liu’s command, they fought Murong Xun.

Moreover, as if afraid they would affect Chu Feng and the others, the

Ten Gold-cloak Brothers leapt out and stopped Murong Xun and the others from entering the palace.

boom boom boom

Murong Xun's fighting strength was extremely strong. He, who held the Royal Armament, was indeed much more powerful than the Ninth Immortal. However, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were not weak either. In an instant, the battle of both sides was inconclusive.

"Dammit! Where did these ten old things come from? They're this annoying!"

At that moment, even Murong Xun, whose aura bursted with power, tightly furrowed his brows because he discovered that despite wielding the Royal Armament, it seemed that he would have some trouble defeating the ten old people. It was not going to work if he dragged out that fight.

"Wuqing, I'm entrusting the fate of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's brothers to you!" Old Liu shouted to Chu Feng.

"Old Liu, don't worry. Just leave this to me." Hearing that, Chu Feng nodded in understanding. Soon after, he sat cross-legged again and continued activating the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation.

At the same time, the dozens of people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect stood in a row in front of Chu Feng. They blocked the entrance of the palace, protecting Chu Feng as he activated the formation.

"Dammit!" Seeing Chu Feng currently activating the formation yet they could do nothing, Ya Fei and Murong Wan stomped their feet in anxiousness.

It was because the dozens of Crippling Night Demon Sect members were all Martial Lords. Some of their cultivations were even higher than the two of theirs. They simply had no way of defeating them, so naturally they didn't dare to go up.

hmm Finally, radiance spewed out of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering

Formation. It was as bright as the sun, and after the blinding golden radiance faded away, the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation was activated.

"This is?" However, Chu Feng, who was in front of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, discovered that the Royal Armament floating within the formation had disappeared. Actually, the entire formation had disappeared.

At that very instant, what appeared before his eyes was an extremely long tunnel that went straight underground. It was so long he couldn't see the end of it.

"Wuqing, quickly enter! The true Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation is inside!" shouted Old Liu quickly when he saw that.

whoosh Chu Feng didn't hesitate. He leapt forward and entered.

"Silver Dragon Pierce!"

boom

Just at that moment, taking hold of an opportunity, Murong Xun sharply jabbed out with his spear. An extremely powerful silver-coloured ray of light with King-level Martial power shot out of his spear.

"Hmph. Naive." But how could the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers be struck so easily? Working together, they broke through the attack. Like grass being swayed by wind, all of them dodged the fierce attack.

However, suddenly, the silver-white ray of light, as if it were alive, changed direction on its own. It shot towards the inside of the palace that they were blocking.

Chapter 792: Collecting Debts

"Crap, we were tricked!" At that instant, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers all cursed in their hearts because they discovered that Murong Xun's attack wasn't meant for them, but for the people within the palace.

However, when they noticed something was wrong, it was already too late. The ray of light had already burst deep into the palace, and made a huge boom. When the ray of light exploded, a destructive shock wave spread everywhere. Everyone who stood before the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation were in absolute chaos by the strike.

In an instant, cries of pain rang out, and the wailing went on endlessly.

Those who suffered light injuries lost their arms or legs, and received serious wounds. Those who suffered heavy injuries had become a mash of flesh and blood. Some even became a large puddle of blood.

At that moment, all of the Crippling Night Demon Sect experts within the underground palace, with the exception of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, were defeated!

"Ten old things, bring your lives over!" When the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were stunned by that scene, Murong Xun trembled the spear in his hand and once again threw out a fierce attack.

The silver-coloured spear in his hand was akin to a swimming dragon. It was several times more ferocious than before, and in an instant, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were suppressed as well.

swish swish Just at that moment, Ya Fei and Murong Wan, who were initially hiding behind Murong Xun, both used quick bodily martial skills to circle around the battlefield of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and entered the palace.

"Dammit!" At that instant, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers finally understood what Murong Xun's intentions were.

However, not a single one could be excluded from their formation. So, no one could leave. They could only stare as Ya Fei and Murong Wan,

after simply taking care of the Ninth Immortal's injuries, leapt one after the other into the tunnel.

At the same moment, Chu Feng had already went down the vertical tunnel and arrived at another palace. Moreover, his eyes were attracted by everything inside the palace.

At that place, there was also a formation, and within that formation, there was a pitch-black sword as well. However, there was a different projection it gave. The pitch-black sword had might even more powerful than typical Martial Kings.

Being placed there caused one's soul to be deterred. One did not dare to desecrate it, and one would not even dare to go near it, as if it were your master, as if it could rule your destiny.

"A Royal Armament! This is a true Royal Armament!" Chu Feng was extremely excited because he discovered that the one before him was completely different from the one Murong Xun had.

Although they were both Royal Armaments, the two were on an absolutely different level. Perhaps it was as Old Liu said: the intelligence that a Royal Armament possessed varied, and its quality would thus vary as well. Quite evidently, this Royal Armament, as Old Liu said, was a top-quality one.

"Demon Sealing Sword... Is that your name?" Chu Feng took two steps forward, and saw the three words written on the pitch-black hilt.

That font was very wild. It showed unruliness. It showed disdain, as if it looked down on everything in the world.

Just by the three words alone, Chu Feng was able to determine that the person who made the Royal Armament was most definitely extremely outstanding.

"Heh, Wuqing, you must have never thought you would land in my hands again, right?" But just at that moment, a mellifluous voice yet full of ridicule suddenly rang out behind Chu Feng.

Turning his head around, Chu Feng's pupils abruptly shrank. In his

eyes, unsuppressable fury rose, but soon, a hint of an evil smile subconsciously rose on Chu Feng's face.

At that very instant, the ones who appeared in front of Chu Feng were Ya Fei and Murong Wan who chased after him, the two wicked women who almost tortured him to death.

"Ya Fei, Murong Wan, you actually dare to show yourselves before me again."

Chu Feng indifferently spoke, but as he did, he was gritting his teeth because he would never forget how those two women tortured him. Ya Fei especially. She had forcibly cut of one of his arms, and turned his body into a sieve.

"So what if we show ourselves before you? Do you think we would be afraid?" Ya Fei smiled. Her alluring red lips showed her disdain towards Chu Feng.

"Ya Fei, don't waste your breath. Behind him should be that Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation. We absolutely cannot let him activate it," reminded Murong Wan.

"Even without your reminder, I know what it is. However, rather than the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, I'm more interested in that Demon Sealing Sword. That is the Royal Armament of the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect back then, titled as the strongest Royal Armament in the Eastern Sea Region." Ya Fei cast her greedy gaze onto the Demon Sealing Sword.

But soon after, she looked back at Chu Feng and said, "However, before that, I must torture this piece of garbage well."

whoosh

After speaking, Ya Fei abruptly took a step forward. As her two snow-white legs rebounded, she had dashed towards Chu Feng like light.

swish

Simultaneously, as if afraid Ya Fei would be first, Murong Wan also

leapt forward and directly went straight for Chu Feng.

However, as he faced the two women who shot straight for him, Chu Feng was not only fearless, he even made a faint cold smile.

swish Just as they two neared him, a Spirit Formation Gate suddenly appeared in front of him. At the same time, a beautiful person also burst out.

whoosh whoosh After that person appeared, she first extended two white hands, grabbing both Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's neck, then after a boom, slammed the two bewitching beauties onto the ground.

Such an unexpected change caught Ya Fei and Murong Wan completely off guard. They were a bit stupefied. When they came to their senses and actually saw who the person behind them was, their eyes were widened and an indescribable expression of fear emerged onto their faces.

"You! It's you! How is this possible?! Didn't you already—"

They had recognized the person who currently pressed them onto the floor and tightly gripped their necks. She was none other than the horrifying World Spirit who made a contract with Chu Feng and had extremely illogical fighting strength—Eggy.

Yet, they had clearly personally seen Eggy die. How could she possibly appear before themselves?

"Heh, two brats, I'm sure you didn't expect I would still be alive, right."

Eggy lightly squinted her eyes and spoke with a sweet smile. In the past few days, she not only recuperated her body well, she even recovered her strength. That was also why Chu Feng had no fear as he faced Ya Fei and Murong Wan.

"Wha-wha-what are you doing? If you dare harm me, my brother will not forgive you, nor will my father forgive you! Both you and Wuqing will die!"

Murong Wan was truly afraid. Even as she spoke, her voice trembled. But, in a place like this, she had no choice but to use her brother's and

father's name to scare Eggy, because she felt that was the only thing she could do for a chance to survive.

After hearing those words, Eggy's face with lightly knitted brows changed slightly, and she gradually released the hand which she used to grip Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's neck.

At that instant, both of them couldn't help celebrating inside. A hint of a pleased smile rose on their faces—they thought that Eggy was afraid.

However, just at that moment, an extremely cold and fierce expression flashed onto Eggy's beautiful face. Her arms suddenly waved, and with two bams, two extraordinarily loud slaps landed on their faces.

"You two bitches, what the hell are you asking that for? I am here to collect past debts!"

Chapter 793: Lesson

"Insolence! You dare to hit me? I'll kill you!"

After being slapped, the flames of fury spewed out of Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's eyes. They gnashed their teeth in anger. When have they, who grew up in sheltered environments, received such humiliation? They could not tolerate it at all.

"I hit you. So what?" Regardless of how spoiled they grew up to be, Eggy did not let them do as they pleased. She raised her hand, and gave them two more slaps, leaving behind two purple handprints on the left and right side of their faces.

"You wench, kill us if you dare! My grandfather will not forgive either of you!" Ya Fei could not fight back, and she was once again shamed. She, who knew there was no escape today, didn't beg for forgiveness and instead furiously shouted back.

"Heh, I'd be letting you off too easily if I killed you. Also, please pay attention to your tone and words. Don't make it sound like your grandfather will let us go if I don't kill you. Isn't your goal here to take care of Wuqing?

"You venomous women. Today, I will give you both a good lesson." Eggy squinted lightly, and her smile was sweet. However, such a smile made Ya Fei and Murong Wan tremble despite the lack of chilliness.

"Ahh—"

Indeed, the two felt pain from the inner parts of their thighs and they uncontrollably shrieked. Eggy's method of torture was different from others. Although it was not bloody, there was most definitely violence.

She was "pinching". At that moment, her pure-white hands were akin to two steel clamps as they continually squeezed areas all throughout Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's body. She left marks that ranged from red to purple on their snow-white skin which was as smooth as jade.

Since they were children, they had never been bullied. Thus, how could

they bear such agony? In an instant, all sorts of painful screams rang out.

But the more it was like so, the eviler Eggy's smile became because she would never forget how those two tortured Chu Feng. In comparison to the torment they conducted on Chu Feng, this degree of revenge was far from sufficient.

Even though he hated every single fibre of Ya Fei and Murong Wan, Chu Feng had an important mission on him. As Eggy suppressed the two of them, Chu Feng had already turned around and, in accordance to the instructions recorded on the stone, laid a Spirit Formation to fully activate the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation.

After a while, the formation was finally completed. However, the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation was very complex. To activate it still required a certain amount of time.

Luckily, with that stone, it was enough to activate the formation. So, after Chu Feng laid the Activation Spirit Formation, he didn't need to look over it nor channel power into it. Instead, since he had time, he went over and looked at the two women who had tortured him.

"Eggy, let me do it," said Chu Feng calmly after arriving. At that moment, he raised a single fist. A dagger made by Martial power appeared in his hand.

"Heh, I was just giving them an appetizer. Of course, the main dish that follows is for you."

Eggy understandably stood up. As she did, she used her unique power to suppress Ya Fei's and Murong Wan's strength, causing them to be powerless to retaliate. They were like fish on a cutting board, awaiting Chu Feng's slaughtering and handling.

"Wuqing, go ahead! Kill me! I'm not afraid of you. If you're a man, then kill me!

"Even if I die, I will not ask half a word of forgiveness! Haha, you want to torture me? Go ahead! I'm not afraid! No matter what, you will always remain a piece of garbage in my eyes!"

But something Chu Feng didn't expect was that Ya Fei didn't just continue shouting at him, her attitude was extremely horrid. Judging by her appearance, she seemed to have already embraced death.

Such a situation forced Chu Feng to tightly frown. At first, Chu Feng did want to give them a taste of their own medicine and torture the two women, then finally send them on a journey to hell.

It was because they were really too ferocious, Ya Fei especially. Leaving her alive would most definitely give rise to troubles in the future.

However, seeing as they did not fear death, and didn't even fear torture, Chu Feng felt that killing them would just be too good of a deal. Yet, if he tortured them with his techniques... After all, females were not like males. Heartlessly torturing them, honestly speaking, was not something Chu Feng could do.

In that moment, he didn't know what his course of actions should be. He just felt that those two women were quite troublesome to deal with.

"Heh, I truly couldn't tell by your appearances, but you two do have quite a bit of courage to remain fearless even before death." Eggy giggled when she saw that, then sent a mental message to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, to a woman, sometimes the most precious thing isn't life. There is one thing that, if given to an undesirable man, will make them feel worse than death. They might even take away their own lives because of that. I wonder... do you know what that is?"

"I..." Chu Feng was no fool so he naturally understood Eggy immediately. However, he hesitated a bit. After all, the present was different from the past. He was a person who already had fiancées. Was this truly the right choice?

"Chu Feng, do not shrink away from this. When facing heartless and venomous women, rather than simply killing them, why not strike their weakness and make them suffer for the rest of their lives?" Eggy continued prodding.

"Haha, are you afraid, coward? Do you lack even the guts to kill? You are indeed trash!" Just at that moment, Ya Fei suddenly laughed and

started mocking Chu Feng.

Looking at Ya Fei's bitchy face and hearing her scorning voice, anger immediately rose in Chu Feng's heart. Disregarding everything, he extended his arm and grabbed Ya Fei's skirt. He pulled down, and after a ripping sound, Ya Fei's gorgeous pink skirt was in pieces.

Seeing Ya Fei at present, even though Chu Feng hatred her immensely, his heart couldn't help being moved. He had to admit that Ya Fei not only had a bewitching face, her body was indescribable.

"Ah!" As for Ya Fei, she never expected Chu Feng would suddenly rip apart her skirt. Seeing her body nearly stark naked, with pieces of the skirt scattered about on her body, the arrogance on Ya Fei's face was no more and what replaced it was endless fear. Other than that, she looked at Chu Feng with her glittering eyes and yelled with a fierce tone, "What are you doing?"

"What am I doing? I'll show you right now what I am doing!" Chu Feng didn't waste any more of his breath and with a whoosh, he pulled down his pants, then revealed a wicked smile.

At that moment, not only Ya Fei, even Murong Wan was stupefied from terror.

Both of them knew what Chu Feng was about to do—it was something that they hoped Chu Feng would never do.

Chapter 794: Revenge

"You! You dare?!" Even Ya Fei's soul was terrified out by Chu Feng's action. She quickly turned her head away and didn't dare to continue looking straight. She already subconsciously knew what Chu Feng would do.

Although she was still unyielding on the surface, when she thought of the following plan, Ya Fei's complexion started to turn pale and her body started to tremble.

"I don't dare? I'll show you whether I dare or not." Seeing Ya Fei's timid appearance and her fearful gaze, Chu Feng felt greatly satisfied. He wanted this effect. He wanted Ya Fei to be afraid. Only like this was it a punishment to Ya Fei.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve and tore Ya Fei's final article of clothing into pieces.

"Ahh! Wuqing, you bastard!" Feeling the remaining piece of clothing ripped to shreds, Ya Fei immediately let out a shriek. As if mad, she flailed her hands around and clawed at Chu Feng with everything she had. She appeared she wanted to put everything on the line against Chu Feng and beat him to death.

However, she, whose power was sealed, was extremely weak. Let alone pushing Chu Feng away from her body, she could not harm Chu Feng in the slightest. There was simply no difference between every single one of her fists and cotton balls as they landed on Chu Feng's body.

"To be honest, you are truly a thing of beauty. Rather than letting Murong Xun enjoy you, why not let me?" Chu Feng simply ignored Ya Fei's beating. Instead, the smile on his face became wider and wider. He wanted Ya Fei to be angry. She could be as angry as she wanted to, but other than that, she could do nothing. She could only let Chu Feng do whatever he wished.

"Wuqing, stop! Otherwise, I will have my brother tear your corpse into pieces!"

Finally, Murong Wan came to her senses. When she saw there was nothing on Ya Fei's body, and that Chu Feng was currently pressing himself on Ya Fei, Murong Wan was furious.

Even though she didn't like Ya Fei at all, she was still her yet-to-be-married sister-in-law. She knew very well that Ya Fei was pure. If, before marriage, she were tainted by someone else, then her brother would definitely go mad upon learning of it. It would be an uncleansable shame to her Murong family.

"Quiet! I'll come take care of you in a bit." Chu Feng glared at Murong Wan fiercely, and even intentionally swept his gaze over her body, then made a wicked smile.

"You..." Murong Wan's expression instantly changed when she saw that. She subconsciously felt an unpleasant feeling and didn't dare to say anything more. She put her arms in front of her chest and turned around, truly afraid Chu Feng would extend his evil hands towards her.

"Wuqing, even if I become a ghost, I will not forgive you!" Ya Fei could not bear such disgrace. After furiously spitting those words out, she prepared to commit suicide.

hmm However, Chu Feng seemed to have already expected such a situation. He waved his big sleeve and a peculiar sort of energy entered her body, preventing her from all self-harm actions.

"Wuqing, you bastard!" Ya Fei was livid; she couldn't even die when she wanted to.

"Contemptible? That comes later," Chu Feng sneered, then like a tiger leaping towards its prey, he pushed Ya Fei down.

"No—" Ya Fei hysterically shouted. Her mind was about to collapse when she saw something horrible was about to happen.

"What? Afraid? Then beg. Beg, and perhaps I'll consider letting you go," said Chu Feng with an evil smile.

"Wuqing, I beg you, forgive me! Don't do this!" Ya Fei no longer had her former arrogance at that moment, and her face was full of sparkling

tears. She was akin to a little girl who was weak even to the wind, and had truly begged for forgiveness.

"What, you think that will do? Have you forgotten what you did to me before? There was no enmity between us, yet you again and again aimed to kill me. Now, you shamelessly want my forgiveness? If it were you, would you forgive me?" Chu Feng looked at Ya Fei with a cold smile. There was not a single trace of empathy on his face.

"I was wrong, I was truly wrong! It was all my fault before! I was greedy and wanted to take away your Secret Skill! I was heartless and wanted you dead!

"But I know my wrongs, I truly do! Please forgive me and let me go, and give me a chance to start anew. I will never do anything against you ever again! For everything that happened today, and previous grudges, let us write it off entirely, okay?"

With her beautiful and moving, yet pitiful and tearful eyes, Ya Fei looked at Chu Feng and sorrowfully begged.

Seeing Ya Fei who acted in such a manner, Chu Feng asked, "You said this. Everything that happens today, as well as previous grudges, let us write it off entirely, right?"

"Right! Write everything off, and forgive me, okay?" Ya Fei strongly nodded.

"Okay, I promise you." Chu Feng smiled vilely.

But Ya Fei cried out.

Pain—unprecedented pain, and one that would only be felt once. It forced Ya Fei to clench her fists. Like the pieces of the skirt scattered about on the side, she remained unmoving as well; she had lost all strength to resist.

"Wuqing, I'll kill you!" Seeing her future sister-in-law violated by such means, Murong Wan could finally hold it down no more and pounced towards Chu Feng.

whoosh However, at that moment, she was the same as Ya Fei. She didn't even have power to tie up a chicken, so how could she defeat Chu Feng? With one hand, he grabbed her arm, then flung it, pushing her to his side.

Seeing Murong Wan's face brimming with killing intent, Chu Feng smiled oddly, and said, "It seems that you can't suppress your excitement, huh? That's fine, I'll satisfy you right now."

As he spoke, Chu Feng had ripped Murong Wan's white skirt into pieces, showing the delicate woman's exquisite bare body in front of his eyes.

At that moment, even though Chu Feng had seen quite a few beauties, he couldn't help wetting his lips. Although Murong Wan's appearance was inferior to Ya Fei, she was undoubtedly a model beauty, and though her figure was not as perfect as Ya Fei, there was still a sort of elegance about her.

So, Chu Feng turned around, and left Ya Fei's body. He then pressed himself onto Murong Wan's soft and weak one.

"I will kill you!" Murong Wan only attacked with the resolution of dying. So, at that moment, she did not back away. She grabbed Chu Feng's body, opened her mouth, and bit down at his neck.

As for Chu Feng, he was laughing. Ignoring Murong Wan's clawing and biting, he said, "Be angry! I want your anger! However, other than being angry, you can do nothing else!"

"Mm!" At that instant, Murong Wan, who was still tightly biting down on Chu Feng's shoulder, roundly widened her eyes. They then started glittering as fear and powerlessness permeated them. Simultaneously, two warm streams of tears flowed down.

She knew, at that very instant, her most precious thing was taken away.

Chapter 795: Thunder in a Clear Sky

At that moment, within the Depraved Ravine, no matter if it was in the sky or underground, intense fighting was occurring.

No one knew what Chu Feng did to Ya Fei and Murong Wan in front of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation because several hours had already passed since the beginning of the battle. There were many injuries on both sides.

Even the two Martial Kings, the Earth King and the Eighth Immortal, had pale faces and were drenched with sweat. In comparison to when they first appeared, their auras were several times weaker.

They were in a hurry for victory, so they were always using the strongest offensive and defensive techniques. As such, their exhaustion of strength was enormous, but even so, they remained on equal ground.

However, when the battle had reached such a stage, a single weak change could determine victory and defeat. Neither dared to have the tiniest bit of carelessness, because these were the final moments that decided who won.

rumble... rumble... rumble... rumble... rumble... Just at that moment, a deafening sound started endlessly coming from deep underground. That sound grew in volume, as if an extremely terrifying existence had been awakened, spreading uneasiness in many people's hearts.

"Haha, has it finally succeeded? Lord Qiu Canfeng's subordinates truly are reliable." Feeling that change, the Earth King, who had fought for so long, couldn't help sighing in relief as a smile was formed.

"Even the young master with the Royal Armament was unable to stop it?" The Eighth Immortal was no fool; since there was a Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation here, he knew it was certain that it had been activated. So, he quickly yelled his throat out at the bloody Immortal Execution Archipelago experts, "The Immortal Execution Archipelago, attention! All retreat!"

Naturally, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago wanted to retreat after hearing that command, but how could the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who were already prepared, give them that chance? All of them stuck closely and didn't let go, appearing as if they would force them behind even if they died themselves.

hmm Just at that moment, a powerful ripple, like an invisible wave, burst out from underground.

When the ripple passed through the bodies of the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, all of them felt their backs heat up. No matter if it was lethargy, or the pain of injuries, all of them disappeared like a whisper of smoke in the wind. Extremely powerful strength started unceasingly surging into their dantians, which spread itself throughout their bodies.

"Kill them!" shouted an expert from the Crippling Night Demon Sect all of a sudden. Immediately following that, he struck down with his palm, and with a bang, the expert from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who had been in a long fight with him exploded into a pool of blood.

"This is bad!" Seeing that, everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were stupefied. They knew that someone must have successfully activated the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, otherwise, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn't have become so savage and terrifying.

"Haha, Eighth Immortal, let me see how you will defend against me now!" The Earth King laughed, then threw a punch forward. Instantly, the world shook and in the areas passed by the wild Martial power, even space itself shattered. It was simply many times more powerful than before.

"Since things have progressed to what they have, I can only put my life on the line. I must bring young master and the others away here safely." However, a resolute glint flashed in the Eighth Immortal's eyes when facing the Earth King's powerful attack.

Quickly after, he leaped forward, and dodged it. Then, he flew straight

towards the entrance that Murong Xun and the others stepped into before.

Moreover, as he flew, he muttered to himself, “With this Mysterious Technique, burn my life! With this taboo, convert it into strength! With this life, commence the final battle!”

boom Suddenly, an explosion rang out from the Eighth Immortal’s body. Then, around his body, a layer of purple-coloured flames ignited. After those flames appeared, his aura too rose dramatically.

“Go die!” Then, the Eighth Immortal turned around abruptly, and sent a fist in the Earth King’s direction. The purple-coloured flames burning on his body left and became a huge purple-flamed bird. With a deafening rumble, as if it were alive, it went straight for the Earth King.

“This bastard cultivated such evil—this Forbidden Mysterious Technique!” As he looked at the incoming purple-flamed bird, the Earth King tightly frowned. He didn’t dare to be careless in any way, and used his full strength to fight the purple-flamed bird.

swish Although the purple-flamed bird was already in a tangle with the Earth King, the Eighth Immortal did not take the opportunity to chase after and strike him. Instead, he turned around and rushed into the underground palace.

At that moment, the skin all over his body was turning purple—it was a battle technique that took life as a price. When one used such a technique, there was nearly no doubt they would die. So, he had to be swift and finish what he wanted to do.

When the Eighth Immortal entered the palace, he discovered Murong Xun currently fighting against the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and he was also strongly repressed at that moment.

Not only was he forced back again and again, many wounds appeared on his body. The Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, who received the power of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, were no longer people Murong Xun could defeat.

"You dare to attack my young master? You will all die!"

The Eighth Immortal was furious. He waved his arm, and his King-level Martial power burst out. With a boom, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were forced into the air, and when they landed back onto the ground, they spat out blood and temporarily, they lost the ability to move.

"Eighth Immortal, you..." Seeing his current appearance, Murong Xun's expression changed as well. He knew what the Eighth Immortal's change represented.

"Young master, there's no time. My body won't be able to support itself soon. Where are Ya Fei and Miss Wan'er? I must immediately bring all of you away," said the Eighth Immortal.

"Dammit! It must be that Wuqing who activated the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation. Eighth Immortal, quickly bring me in. Fei'er and Wan'er are inside.

"I will cut that Wuqing's corpse into a million pieces! No, not only him, also everyone related to him! No matter who, as long as they are associated with him, I will give them a horrid death!"

When Ya Fei and Murong Wan were mentioned, Murong Xun couldn't help but think of Chu Feng. He knew that all of the changes happening were because of Chu Feng.

And upon thinking that Chu Feng completely destroyed an initially perfect plan with victory already in their grasps, he was enraged.

He yearned to eat Chu Feng's flesh, to drink his blood, and to completely mutilate everyone who knew Chu Feng, otherwise the anger in his heart could not be extinguished.

"Go." Following Murong Xun's gaze, the Eighth Immortal also knew where Ya Fei and Murong Wan were. Dragging him, they leapt towards that direction.

However, when they reached the very bottom, and entered the palace which the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation resided in, the two of them were flabbergasted.

What they saw was not only the activated Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation, it was also Ya Fei and Murong Wan.

However, there were no more clothes on their bodies; their perfect figures were revealed with nothing concealed, and they were currently curled up and silently weeping. On the ground, near their beautiful legs, there were also two small puddles of crimson-red blood.

Most importantly, close to the two stood a man—that man was none other than Chu Feng.

boom Murong Xun felt an explosion go off in his brain, as if a huge mountain crashed down from the sky and struck his head. He was stunned.

At that very moment, it was not only his younger sister who was bare naked and curling nearby. It was also his fiancée who he dreamt of sleeping with.

Chapter 796: Cold-hearted Murong Xun

Seeing a scene like that, even the Eighth Immortal was dumbfounded. His first reaction was to look at Murong Xun, because he wanted to see what his reaction was.

At that moment, his face was as pale as paper. His body was uncontrollably trembling, and as it swayed, he almost tripped and fell. Only after taking a few steps back was he able to stabilize himself.

Murong Xun tightly clenched his fists, so much that they creaked. He jabbed his fingernails deeply into his palm, as if he wanted to crush his own fist.

Fury—indescribable fury.

Shame—unspeakable shame.

His most hated enemy slept with his fiancée, and his sister. That simply made him wish he were dead.

Ya Fei particularly, the acclaimed number one beauty of the Eastern Sea Region. Everyone knew she was his fiancée, and from a young age, he had already been bewitched by her beauty, and he had always wanted to get closer to Ya Fei.

However, since a young age, he remained at a distance of a thousand miles. Let alone being in an intimate relationship with her, he hadn't even touched her hand.

Yet, at that very instant, his fiancée—extremely alluring yet as pure as ice—was taken by someone else. How could he tolerate that?

"I WILL KILL YOU!" Finally, Murong Xun attacked. He raised his palm, and uncontrollable Martial power gushed out. However, the person he attacked was not Chu Feng.

It was Ya Fei, who was curling on the ground and weeping.

"Young master, stop!" The Eighth Immortal was shocked when he saw that and he hurriedly dispelled Murong Xun's attack.

“Eighth Immortal, don’t stop me! I will kill this bitch!” shouted Murong Xun. He truly reached the extremities of anger.

“Young master, you cannot do that! Fei’er is the granddaughter of the First Immortal!” urged the Eighth Immortal again.

“Brother, don’t blame Ya Fei. She did not wish for this.” Murong Wan spoke to explain. As she did, she took out two skirts from her Cosmos Sack. One to cover herself, and the other to cover Ya Fei.

Although she disliked Ya Fei, after experiencing that together, she more or less felt some sympathy for her—sympathizing their similar experience in this matter.

“Shut up! This bitch here kept on nagging about her reluctance to marry me, so I even thought she was pure and unblemished. Yet, today, she gave her body away to another man. If this becomes known, how can I, Murong Xun, show my face before others?

“Everyone in the Eastern Sea Region will know that I became a cuckold because of this bastard called Wuqing!” roared Murong Xun.

“Haha, indeed, a cuckold! But, can you guarantee that today’s matter will not be known?”

Just at that moment, laughter came from behind. It was the Earth King. Moreover, behind the Earth King, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming followed.

They seemed to have been there for quite a while. Although there was still shock on their faces, at that moment, they consisted more of joy. Clearly, they were very willing to see Murong Xun wear the title of a “cuckold”.

“Young master, let’s discuss this later. We must leave this place right now!” The Eighth Immortal moved and boundless purple-coloured flames once again burst out of his body. As he spoke, he started fighting the Earth King again.

“Bitch, why the hell aren’t you getting up? You want to stay here forever now?” Murong Xun shouted furiously as he looked at Ya Fei. The

cherishment and love from before vanished completely.

At that instant, Ya Fei and Murong Wan both wore a skirt. Although they felt unbearable shame and excruciating sorrow, they both supported each other. With weak and slow steps, they walked towards Murong Xun.

whoosh But suddenly, as they were approaching, a silver-coloured spear suddenly appeared in Murong Xun's hand. And, without saying anything, he jabbed it straight at Ya Fei's dantian.

When the spear shot out, it was akin to a surging silver dragon. When the silver ray of light passed by, with a poof, the Royal Armament pierced into Ya Fei's dantian and through her body. Large amounts of blood spurted.

"Brother, what are you doing?!" Murong Wan's complexion lost all colour when she saw such a scene. She quickly walked up and wanted to stop Murong Xun.

"Get the hell away, bitch." However, with a bam, Murong Xun sent a slap at Murong Wan's face. He slapped her own sister straight onto the ground, so hard that she coughed up blood.

"Young master, you..." That scene similarly caught everyone's attention, and the Eighth Immortal's expression changed greatly as well.

"Hoh..." However, in comparison to the shock others felt, Ya Fei was not perturbed in the slightest. Instead, a cold smile was on her face as she said, "Murong Xun, do you know why I never agreed to your marriage? It's because I already knew you were a person like this.

"Even if I, Ya Fei, die, I will not marry a false person such as you. Go ahead, kill me. Show your sister how cold-hearted her invincible brother is."

"Hmph. It's great that you know. What I cannot obtain, no one else should even think of obtaining. If someone else does, then I will destroy them together."

Murong Xun shouted, then the spear in his hand trembled. After a muffled boom, Ya Fei, the number one beauty in the Eastern Sea Region,

instantly became a mist of blood. Not even a crippled Consciousness was left behind; she was thoroughly eradicated by Murong Xun.

"Huu—" Even the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect couldn't help gasping when they saw that. Such a beauty—and she was even his fiancée—was killed just like that. Murong Xun was truly too fierce—they had to admit that.

"Brother, you..." Even Murong Wan was dumbfounded. She was completely dumbfounded.

Back then, when she again and again suggested Murong Xun to nullify the marriage between him and Ya Fei, and advised him to stay father away from Ya Fei, Murong Xun clearly told her that he loved Ya Fei very much. Not only because of her appearance, but because he loved Ya Fei as a person. He said the reason why he treated Ya Fei well was because his feelings were too deep with her. He even urged Murong Wan to avoid disliking Ya Fei so much, since she was the one he loved.

But, looking at it now, Murong Wan discovered that was completely false. If there truly were feelings, then why would he do something like this? Why would he cruelly kill Ya Fei, and not even leave behind an intact corpse?

"Shut up! If you were not my sister, I would have killed you already. You've truly disgraced my Murong family."

Murong Xun held the spear, pointed it at her, and yelled at Murong Wan. Judging by his appearance, it almost seemed if Murong Wan said another word, Murong Xun would truly kill her.

"Young master, Miss Wan'er, we cannot delay this any longer. Quickly follow me out!"

At that moment, the Eighth Immortal was doing his best to fight off the Earth King. Although he too was furious when he saw Murong Xun truly kill Ya Fei—after all, she was the First Immortal's granddaughter—he could do nothing about that. Although he felt pity for Ya Fei, Murong Xun was the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, he had to help them escape.

“We’ll leave, of course we’ll leave. But before that, I must cripple this bastard.” With spear in hand, Murong Xun cast his gaze full of animosity and bloodlust straight towards Chu Feng.

Chapter 797: Chu Feng's "Reverse Scale"

At that instant, Chu Feng also slightly frowned; his complexion was not too great either. Even though the enmity between him and Ya Fei could fill up an ocean, perhaps even so much that it was impossible for the two of them to live under the same sky, when he saw Ya Fei so cruelly killed by Murong Xun right before his eyes, he felt a slight discomfort in his heart.

As for why, Chu Feng didn't understand it either at first, but after a brief moment, he felt that it was possibly because of their relationship.

No matter how Chu Feng hated Ya Fei, or how Ya Fei despised Chu Feng, Ya Fei had still given Chu Feng her first time. Moreover, Chu Feng was the only person who did it to Ya Fei. That relationship was an inerasable one.

However, upon another way of thinking, Chu Feng felt less stressed. Chu Feng had always had an accurate and good read on people—he knew Ya Fei was a venomous woman who didn't care what actions she took to reach her goals. The number of people who died by her hands were innumerable; she could be said to be the same kind as Murong Xun.

If she were kept alive, it would be fine given she did nothing more. However, if she had any sort of future activities, to Chu Feng, they represented endless trouble. What awaited Chu Feng would be countless acts of revenge.

So, in that perspective, Murong Xun did remove a future problem for Chu Feng, and also laid a hidden one for himself. After all, Ya Fei was the granddaughter of the head of the Nine Immortals. If this matter were to be known by her grandfather, who knew what reaction he would have.

As a result, Chu Feng lightly smiled, and said with more or less some respect, "No matter what you say, she was still your fiancée, yet you were still able to kill her so coldheartedly. It looks like I've truly underestimated the degree of your madness."

"What?! Are you going to say you feel heartbroken now?!" Murong Xun

gnashed his teeth as he clenched the silver-coloured spear in his hand even tighter.

"Heartbroken? You are quite mistaken. To someone who's attacked me again and again, and almost killed me, and almost killed my Eggy, you think I feel heartbroken? You must regard me too highly. If I feel heartbroken, then I will have let down my Eggy."

At that moment, Chu Feng's emotions were slightly agitated. As long as he recalled the scene in which he was forced into a dead end by Murong Xun and the others, as well as Eggy sacrificing herself to save him, he was unable to suppress his fury. But soon, he made an odd smile, and said, "But saying that it's a shame... it's quite true. No matter what sort of heart Ya Fei had, her appearance and body were quite good. I simply lost myself within it."

Chu Feng's face was one of intoxication, as if still submerged within the episode of defiling Ya Fei. With a smile, he said to the ashen-faced Murong Xun, "Ah, my bad. I almost forgot you never had a chance to have a taste of her perfect body. Just ignore what I just said, heh..."

Chu Feng's smile was a very vile one. He was openly slapping Murong Xun's face, disgracing him. Only by doing so could the hatred in Chu Feng's heart be washed away.

The torture and humiliation Murong Xun and the others did to Chu Feng could be disregarded, but they almost killed Eggy. That bastard Murong Xun even wanted to do it with her—that was something Chu Feng absolutely could not tolerate.

Since the moment Chu Feng turned around and saw Eggy's unique black-coloured flames and her aura disappearing from the sky, he had decided to make Murong Xun, Ya Fei, and Murong Wan pay a painful price.

He had decided back then, no matter what he had to do, they were to desire death from the pain he would inflict upon them. No matter what methods he used, he would take away their filthy lives. Otherwise, he would have failed to live up to Eggy's sacrifice. He would have immensely

disappointed the queen who had sincerely dedicated herself to helping him.

Although Eggy hadn't died, it was a must for him to take revenge. It's said that dragons had reverse scales—some that grew in the opposite direction. Upon being touched, the dragon would fly into a rage. As for Chu Feng, Eggy was most definitely his untouchable "reverse scale". No matter who it was, those who were impudent would die.

"You brat, I'll kill you!" When Chu Feng taunted Murong Xun, who was already furious and in a horrid mood, in such a manner, he became enraged. Jabbing the silver-coloured spear in his hand forward, a silver ray of light with layers upon layers of symbols shot straight towards Chu Feng.

"Lord Earth King, quickly save that Wuqing!" shouted Xuan Xiaochao quickly when he saw that.

"Dammit!" The Earth King actually did want to rush over immediately, but he could do nothing about the Eighth Immortal blocking the way completely. He simply lacked the opportunity to save Chu Feng.

However, regardless of the strength of the Royal Armament, as Chu Feng stood there, he was not afraid in the slightest. Instead, he even made a smirk.

He could feel that the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation behind him wasn't as simple as everyone thought it was. After it fully activated, there was an invisible power that surrounded itself, protecting the Demon Sealing Sword.

Moreover, Chu Feng could feel that it was an extremely mighty power. It was simply even stronger than the Earth King and the Eighth Immortal. And, for some reason, as the power surrounded itself and protect itself, it also protected Chu Feng.

So, that was why Chu Feng didn't fear Murong Xun whatsoever. At least, at that very instant, at that very place, he knew Murong Xun could do nothing to him.

boom Finally, the horrifying strike exploded. And, as Chu Feng expected, three meters away from him, as if it struck an invisible barrier, it exploded, yet didn't harm Chu Feng in any way. Even the violent shock waves could not even move Chu Feng's hair.

"How did this happen?" Seeing that, Xuan Xiaochao and the others broke out in a cold sweat and were in deep shock. They didn't understand what had happened.

"This... Could it be?!" As the crowd was confused, the Earth King was in deep thought. He seemed to have landed on some conclusion, but upon thinking of that possibility, his expression changed greatly. And, when he looked back at Chu Feng, his eyes were full of complicated emotions.

"I don't care what sort of evil method you use, today, I will kill you!" Murong Xun was incensed. Disregarding everything in his surroundings, he stepped forward abruptly with his left leg; boundless Martial power then materialized and like a vortex, started swirling around him rapidly.

At that moment, Murong Xun's long hair fluttered about and his eyes were blood-red. His aura was even at the peak of powerfulness. Simultaneously, the silver-coloured spear started flickering bit by bit. As it did so, overlayering might also started emanating from the Royal Armament, stunning everyone.

It was as if the Royal Armament were affected by Murong Xun's emotions. It too burst into a rage and its true power manifested.

"I will tear you into a million pieces!" Suddenly, Murong Xun shouted. Then, he waved his arm, and with a boom, he threw the silver-coloured spear straight towards Chu Feng.

When it left his hand, everything was shaking. Space itself shattered in the areas the spear pierced through, giving rise to complete chaos. What remained was only the dazzling brilliance emitted by the silver spear.

That strike was simply unstoppable. It was as if there were nothing it couldn't break through. The might of that strike alone even overshadowed the might from the Earth King and the Eighth Immortal, attracting everyone's attention.

“This is the true power of the Royal Armament?!” In reality, even Chu Feng was frowning at that moment because he could feel what strength was contained within the incoming silver-coloured spear.

boom Finally, another huge explosion rang out, and the shock wave instantly drowned the entire palace. The Royal Armament finally arrived before Chu Feng.

However, when the shock waves faded away, and when the shattered space returned to normal, everyone couldn’t help gasping deeply. As for Murong Xun, he was dumbfounded, completely astonished.

At that very instant, not only was the silver-coloured spear unable to harm Chu Feng, it was, instead, held within his hand.

Chapter 798: Suffering Double Losses

“What... What is this?”

Not to mention Murong Xun, even Xuan Xiaochao and the others were stupefied. Putting aside how Chu Feng stopped the horrifying Royal Armament attack from before, how did this Mastered armament come into Chu Feng’s hands?

“Return!” Murong Xun suddenly extended his hand and grabbed at the Royal Armament, seeming to want to recall it into his hand.

The Royal Armament also started to lightly quiver in Chu Feng’s hand, as if it wanted to escape his control, but when Chu Feng held it like that, it simply could not.

hmm Just at that moment, a black-coloured ray of light suddenly shot out of the Demon Sealing Sword. In the instant it entered the silver-coloured spear, it immediately stopped quivering and calmed down.

At the same time, Murong Xun’s expression distorted greatly. He discovered with astonishment that his connection with the Royal Armament was cut.

“Dammit!” Murong Xun was outraged. Without saying anything, he rushed straight towards Chu Feng. When he was near, he leapt into the air and struck down with a punch.

bam

“Ahh—” But, who would have thought, when he was three meters away from Chu Feng, his punch was not only stop, he was even thrown out by a powerful wave of force.

puchi When he crashed onto the ground, a mouthful of blood sprayed out. The wave was so strong it injured his internal organs.

“Uncle Eighth Immortal, the connection between me and the Royal Armament has been severed!”

Since he could do nothing about it, Murong Xun could only ask the

Eighth Immortal for help. In the instant he struck, he learnt that there was an invisible power protecting Chu Feng. Murong Xun could no longer take back his Royal Armament with his own abilities.

"Ahh!" Hearing those words, the Eighth Immortal roared, then he moved and rushed straight for Chu Feng.

The Earth King, who was initially fighting the Eighth Immortal, did not stop him. He stood on the spot, his eyes akin to flames. He silently observed, lacking any sign of worry on his face.

boom

"Ah!"

When the Eighth Immortal, with the might of a Martial King, made an attack at Chu Feng, the same outcome actually occurred. Not only was he unable to harm Chu Feng, he too was thrown back.

puu— After crashing onto the ground as well, the Eighth Immortal also spat out blood. But, blood didn't just come out of his mouth. At that moment, all seven of his facial orifices had blood flowing out. Even his skin started to crack. Even his body starting to turn black from purple, almost as if he would explode soon.

"Dammit. Young master, we must leave right now, or else we won't make it out!"

In such a situation, the Eighth Immortal no longer cared about the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand, nor did he care whether Murong Wan was willing or not. With the wave of his big sleeve, he took the siblings Murong Xun and Murong Wan, put them behind him, and sealed the two with a mighty Spirit Formation power.

"Huu—"

After sealing them in the Spirit Formation, the Eighth Immortal's eyes suddenly turned blood-red. Soon after, his body was once again ignited by the purple-coloured flames. Moreover, this time, they were even fiercer than before.

With overwhelming killing intent, he shouted, “Everyone, get the hell out of my way! Or else, you will all die!”

“Hmph, don’t even think about it!” Xuan Xiaochao and the others all coldly snorted. They were very resolute—they would absolutely not let them go so easily.

“Let him leave.”

However, just at that moment, the Earth King pushed Xuan Xiaochao and the others to the side. After casting an expression at them via his eyes, he smiled and said to the Eighth Immortal, “No matter what sort of character you have, at least you are loyal to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Because of that, I’ll let you go today.”

Although the Eighth Immortal was taken aback by the Earth King’s words, he didn’t waste any of his own breath. Biting down on his teeth, he moved and with the blazing body of his, he brought Murong Xun and Murong Wan away.

“Senior Earth King, he’s let go just like that?” After the Eighth Immortal left, Xuan Xiaochao and the others walked up, extremely confused why he chose to do that.

“The Eighth Immortal used his own life for fighting power. He will not live on for too much longer. Even if he is let go, he will certainly die today.

“Let alone the Eighth Immortal, a loyal person who protects his master even though death is the price, ‘If a rabbit is forced into a corner, it will still bite’.

“Rather than a fight to the death against him, causing injuries on both sides, why not just let him go? I’ve already taken care of the Ninth Immortal when I entered, so even if he leaves, he can only save Murong Xun and Murong Wan.

“As for Murong Xun, although he has a bit of talent, he will not be able to achieve anything great. There has never been a need to fear him, let alone now, when he’s lost such a precious Royal Armament.” After speaking, the Earth King cast his slightly squinted gaze at Chu Feng.

“Yeah! This Murong Xun originally came here for the Royal Armament, but quite unexpectedly, not only has his entire army of experts been defeated, he even lost his own Royal Armament! They’ve truly suffered enormous losses this time,” Xuan Xiaochao said with a smile.

“Haha, Brother Wuqing, you are truly impressive. Not only did you toy with Murong Xun’s fiancée and sister, you even stole his Royal Armament! I, You Tonghan, truly kowtow to your actions and sigh at my inferiority!” You Tonghan clasped his hands at Chu Feng.

“Brother Wuqing, I’ve already heard of your grand name before, and you are indeed as the rumours say you are. I, Fu Fengming, feel great admiration.” Fu Fengming also greeted Chu Feng politely.

“Brother, I heard Old Liu say it’s because of you that the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation was activated successfully. Saving you back then was truly worthwhile. Right now, I don’t need any thanks for that. Rather, I should be thanking you,” said Xuan Xiaochao with a face of admiration. When he entered, Old Liu had told him that he must protect Chu Feng, because without Chu Feng, they would not have the power they currently had.

Chu Feng only smiled calmly at their praises, not too certain how to reply. The matter You Tonghan mentioned especially made him feel a bit embarrassed.

Although his goal in doing all this was to make Murong Xun lose face—though it was initiated by venting the anger in his heart—when You Tonghan looked up to him like an idol, he felt a bit embarrassed. In the end, it was still nothing glorious.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh... Just at that moment, nine people rushed in from the tunnel one after the other, and landed inside the palace.

They were the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. However, the seventh brother did not follow them in.

At that moment, although their auras were still very weak, they had recovered quite a bit. At least, they had the strength to move. Evidently,

they had received treatment and healing.

When they entered and saw that Chu Feng actually held Murong Xun's Royal Armament in his hand, all of their expressions changed. They felt great shock, and asked nearly simultaneously, "Wuqing, th-th-th-the thing in your hand, isn't that Murong Xun's Royal Armament? Wh-wh-why do you have it?!"

"Heh, Seniors, you've come late. There was an even more wondrous spectacle before that you haven't seen," said Xuan Xiaochao happily.

"Lord Earth King, what is going on? What happened?" The Nine Gold-cloak Brothers were quite confused when they heard those words. So, they all cast their gazes at the respected Earth King, trying to get to the end of this matter.

"Haha, Little Liu, you won't understand just by a short explanation. All in all, this time, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun, has truly suffered double losses!" The Earth King also laughed, joy similarly filling his aged face.

Chapter 799: Approval?

"Suffer double losses?" The already puzzled Old Liu and the others were even more puzzled when they heard those words. Their minds were rather foggy.

"Haha, Seniors, it's like this..." Hearing that, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming spoke at the same time.

Then, with their voices overlapping one another's, Xuan Xiaochao and the others roughly narrated the scene they had witnessed before to Old Liu and the others.

"What? Something like this happened?" After knowing of such an event, their complexions changed once again, into one that was quite full of amazement.

They couldn't help casting their gazes at Chu Feng, but as they did so, they did not only look at him with shock and bewilderment, but with admiration and respect as well.

"Haha, great, this is truly great! Wuqing, you've really helped my Crippling Night Demon Sect immensely!

"Hahaha, Murong Xun was that arrogant, huh? Let's see how he can continue acting the same now!" As they felt shock, the Nine Gold-cloak Brothers suddenly started laughing. Their laughter was one of excitement, and one of relief.

The reason they gathered such a horde of troops and set up a trap here was to reduce the moral of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. However, unexpectedly, they faced one setback after another due to the appearance of a traitor and were almost entirely defeated by the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The reason why they were able to obtain victory today could be said to be all due to Chu Feng. It was he who gave them help at the most crucial moment, letting them reverse the momentum of the battle completely.

Although they had still lost many brothers, looking back, it was still

worth it.

Chu Feng's very actions were things they didn't even dare to imagine. The Immortal Execution Archipelago had truly suffered an enormous loss this time. Not only by the hands of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but more so by the hands of Chu Feng.

A widely recognized beautiful fiancée, and a powerful Royal Armament spear—those were much more valuable than the lives of over a thousand Immortal Execution Archipelago experts. Even if they sacrificed more people they would still not be equal.

Yet, those two both landed within Chu Feng's hands. Murong Xun's losses were truly massive, and to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the losses were massive as well.

"Brother Wuqing, what sort of technique do you have? Why were their attacks useless to you?"

At that moment, You Tonghan had suddenly leapt forward. With an expression of a million admirations, he was leaping towards Chu Feng's position.

"Don't come over!" Chu Feng said, in an attempt to stop him.

But it was already too late; You Tonghan was too fast. With a face of smiles, and a giant leap, he came down from above.

In the end, with a bang, as if he had crashed into a steel wall, You Tonghan's face full of smiles distorted, and before he had even truly reached Chu Feng, he was rebounded back, and fiercely crashed onto the floor.

"Brother Wuqing, what is that thing behind you? It's that powerful?" You Tonghan said with astonishment as he rubbed his own head.

"As I thought, the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation is protecting him. No, to be more precise, the Demon Sealing Sword is protecting him," said the Earth King confidently after seeing that.

"The Demon Sealing Sword? You're talking about the Royal Armament

Lord Sect Head left behind?" the crowd asked gravely. All of their expressions couldn't help changing as they heard those words.

"That's right. It's certain the Demon Sealing Sword is the one that's protecting him. Otherwise, it'd be impossible for the Eighth Immortal, such a powerful person, to be unable to injure him. Right now, he is protected by the Demon Sealing Sword.

"Moreover, if I'm not mistaken, the Demon Sealing Sword also helped Wuqing obtain the Royal Armament in his hand, since I had clearly seen a ray of light shoot out of the Demon Sealing Sword which severed the connection between Murong Xun and the Royal Armament," the Earth King said.

"Heavens, I think I also saw that!"

Xuan Xiaochao and the others all came to a realization when they heard that. Back then, when Murong Xun summoned the Royal Armament, the Royal Armament was still struggling. Yet, when a ray of light shot out of the Demon Sealing Sword, the Royal Armament calmed down. Murong Xun was also enraged when that happened.

Recalling all that, they confirmed that it was the Demon Sealing Sword which protected Chu Feng, and it was also the Demon Sealing Sword which helped Chu Feng seize the Royal Armament from Murong Xun's hands. Complicated expressions were on nearly everyone's faces, and as they looked at Chu Feng, their eyes were full of indescribable emotions.

Chu Feng nodded his head in agreement as he faced those complex gazes, and said, "Senior Earth King could not be more correct. With my own abilities, I am naturally unable to seize this Royal Armament. It was indeed the Demon Sealing Sword that helped me." As Chu Feng spoke, he looked back at the sword.

At that moment, as he held a Royal Armament in his hand, he was able to feel how powerful it was. If it truly recognized Chu Feng as its master, then it would most definitely raise his fighting strength significantly. However, being so close, he could also feel quite clearly the difference between the Royal Armament in his hand and the Demon Sealing Sword

behind him.

No matter how much more power the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng's hand possessed, it was still an armament. However, the Demon Sealing Sword behind him seemed more as if it were truly alive. With the airs of a ruler, it menaced everyone. Arrogance, dominance, invincibility.

He finally knew why the Demon Sealing Sword was titled as the number one Royal Armament in the Eastern Sea Region, despite it too being a Royal Armament.

It was because the difference between the two was indeed enormous. They were incomparable, not even on the same level.

"This Demon Sealing Sword is the most powerful Royal Armament in the Eastern Sea Region. Even the sect head back in the day exerted a lot of power and used special techniques to subdue it. In reality, however, he was still unable to truly force it into submission.

"Ever since the sect head died, the Royal Armament has always been placed here. Before dying, he used its power to lay this Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation here, and warned the Four Protectors that, before reaching the degree of strength of his, they should absolutely not forcibly take away this sword, otherwise the consequences would be unimaginable.

"Actually, back then, Lord Qiu Canfeng had once tried to move this Demon Sealing Sword, but he was simply unable to even approach it," said Old Liu while he was in shock.

"Yeah! The reason why the Demon Sealing Sword is put here without any guards is because the Demon Sealing Sword itself is its strongest guard. Unless one has absolute power, or recognized as its master, they should not even think of approaching it, let alone taking it away." The Earth King also nodded.

"Doesn't this mean that Brother Wuqing has received the approval of the Demon Sealing Sword?!" Everyone's gazes as they looked at Chu Feng became filled with even more complicated emotions.

“Brother Wuqing, since you’re able to approach the Demon Sealing Sword, why not try and see if you can pull it out of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation?” the Earth King said calmly, but in his eyes were odd expressions.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, then turned around. Under the close gazes of the crowd, he walked slowly towards the exceptionally powerful Demon Sealing Sword.

Chapter 800: Failure?

Chu Feng took one step after the other. Every movement he made affected the nerves of everyone on scene. Every single person from the Crippling Night Demon Sect had taut faces as they gazed at Chu Feng's very actions with their eyes full of complex emotions.

ta Finally, Chu Feng came up to the Demon Sealing Sword. At such a distance, he was able to clearly feel how impressive of a weapon it truly was.

Although the Demon Sealing Sword was not inserted in any place, as it was just floating in the air, everyone knew it wasn't simple to pull it out. There were even risks to one's life.

It was because that armament was aware. For those who were unable to obtain its approval, let alone use it, they would not even be able to approach it.

Chu Feng turned his head around, and looked at the crowd. He once again noticed the changes in their expressions, especially the Earth King's and Old Liu's.

Only after doing so did Chu Feng extend his arm, open his hand, and grabbed onto the pitch-black hilt of the Demon Sealing Sword.

hmm When he grasped it, an invisible shock wave immediately swept out from the Demon Sealing Sword, shaking the entire palace.

However, the Earth King and the others tightly furrowed their brows when they saw that as uneasiness filled their faces.

"Haa!"

Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. Then, using his full strength, he aimed to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword. However, it did nothing as after a whole instant, Chu Feng's face was pale, and perspiration drenched his forehead. In despite of all that, he was unable to move the Demon Sealing Sword in the slightest.

"Huu—" Finally, Chu Feng took a long breath and released the hand he

used to grip the Demon Sealing Sword. He turned around, wiped away some sweat, and said with a face of disappointment, “The Demon Sealing Sword is indeed powerful. I am unable to pull it out.”

“Hahaha, Wuqing, don’t be dispirited. Being able to near the Demon Sealing Sword is impressive already. After all, it’s the weapon our sect head possessed when he was alive. It is quite normal to be unable to pull it out.” At that moment, the Earth King also laughed. He appeared abnormally happy.

At the same time, on the tight faces of Xuan Xiaochao and the others, calm smiles appeared. Although it was very subtle, Chu Feng could see that in their hearts, they had taken a deep relieved breath.

“Lord Earth King, the brothers of the Crippling Night Demon Sect are still waiting outside. Let’s head out first,” said Old Liu.

“Mm. We should head out.” The Earth King nodded. Then, he said to Chu Feng in a joking tone, “Wuqing, let us head out together. Otherwise, when we reactivate the Spirit Formation, you will be locked in here!”

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then walked out. He didn’t put away the Royal Armament, and instead, kept it in his hand.

He felt if the Earth King and the others wanted his Royal Armament, no matter where he put it away, it would be useless. Any one of the people here could easily kill him.

“Haha, Brother Wuqing, I’m finally able to come into contact with you! Right now, you are truly my idol. Don’t worry. I will help you spread your glorious actions.”

After Chu Feng walked out of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation’s circle of protection, You Tonghan quickly came up to him and hugged his shoulders. He appeared rather close, as if they were friends who’ve known each over for many years.

As he faced You Tonghan, Chu Feng could only chuckle. From what he saw, You Tonghan was most definitely a gossiper. He was very willing to embarrass Murong Xun, so it was absolutely impossible for him to

conceal what happened today.

But, Chu Feng wasn't afraid of that. He was already an enemy to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, so even if nothing happened today, the Immortal Execution Archipelago would not have let him go anyway.

Since they were already enemies, would Chu Feng still be afraid? In reality, he currently was very willing to see the Immortal Execution Archipelago in a difficult situation as well.

Although Chu Feng still held the Royal Armament in his hand, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, including the Earth King, the Nine Gold-cloak Brothers, as well as Xuan Xiaochao and the others, didn't come over and take it away from him.

As if afraid Chu Feng would think too much, they didn't even look at the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand, as if it lacked the faintest of attraction to them.

"Chu Feng, you could have clearly pulled that Demon Sealing Sword out. Why didn't you?" Just at that moment, Eggy's voice suddenly rang out.

"This Demon Sealing Sword is very significant to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You should have seen the Earth King's and the others' expression. Although they possess no malicious intents, if I had truly pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, I cannot be certain if they would allow me to safely leave this place.

"Since this Demon Sealing Sword recognizes me as its master, I am in no rush to obtain it. Besides, I can feel that the sword is very powerful. It is not something I can currently control.

"Rather than pulling it out when I risk my life, attract endless enmity, and am unable to fully use its power, why not just leave it here for now, and come back in the future when I am able to control it?" Chu Feng replied.

"Heh, you are quite smart. However, I keep feeling that this Demon Sealing Sword is not simple. Perhaps..."

"Perhaps what?"

“Hehe, I’m not telling you.” Eggy smirked—it was an extremely beautiful one, and one of great happiness.

“You…” And since Eggy didn’t say it, Chu Feng did not ask. Just like that, he followed the Earth King and the others forward.

However, what he did not know was that the reason for Eggy’s happiness wasn’t because Chu Feng obtained the Royal Armament, but because of his words before: “If I feel heartbroken, then I will have let down my Eggy…”

Perhaps in the perspectives of others, those words were not significant, but in Eggy’s heart, they were very moving because they represented her position in Chu Feng’s heart.

After coming back up, Chu Feng discovered that the seventh brother was actually still here. However, at that moment, his face was swollen and blood was all over his body. It was clear that he was beaten up. He was kneeling on the ground with a face of regret.

“Lord Earth King, he betrayed the Crippling Night Demon Sect by leaking secrets to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That’s why they sent so many experts.

“Although he has expressed regret, this crime cannot be easily forgiven. I ask Lord Earth King to decide how he should be punished,” Old Liu said to the Earth King.

The Earth King was, of course, no fool, so he could tell from Old Liu’s words that he didn’t hope he would kill the seventh brother. Otherwise, he would have done it himself, so why would he ask the Earth King instead?

However, when he considered the fact that the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers could have completely concealed the matter of the seventh brother’s betrayal yet didn’t, he was a bit relieved. So, he said, “There is nothing better to know your wrongs and to correct them. Besides, with the assistance of Wuqing, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has still won today. It was even a beautiful victory.

“If he didn’t reveal the our plans, it would be impossible for the Immortal Execution Archipelago to send the Eighth Immortal and Ninth Immortal as well as the young master and so many experts, and as such, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn’t have suffered so many losses.

“That being said, a wrong is a wrong. Punishment is unavoidable. As for how, I cannot say. After all, you are the direct subordinates of Lord Qiu Canfeng. As such, let him decide in the future.”

Chapter 801: Announcing the Result of the Battle

"Bastard, why aren't you thanking Lord Earth King?" Old Liu's expression turned to joy, then he quickly kicked the seventh brother.

"Thank you Lord Earth King, thank you Lord Earth King!" He hurriedly kowtowed in gratefulness, and judging by his appearance, he truly did seem to know his wrongs.

As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they were smart people. Even though they loathed the betrayal, when the Earth King himself spoke like so, they could naturally say nothing about it. So, they just acted as if they saw nothing.

After all, the current Crippling Night Demon Sect was in pieces. They were already akin to scattered sand, all divided, so they should join hands and work together, not continue fighting within the sect.

After dealing with the seventh brother's business, the Earth King grinned smugly, and said, "Let's go. It's time to announce to the world the result of the battle of the Crippling Night Demon Sect."

As he spoke, he took a special look back at Chu Feng as well as the Royal Armament in his hand. At that instant, his grin grew wider because he looked very forward to how everyone would react when they heard Murong Xun's Royal Armament had landed into Chu Feng's hand.

Afterwards, with the Earth King leading the way, Chu Feng and the others finally returned to the surface of the Depraved Ravine.

In this battle, the Crippling Night Demon Sect had lost quite a few of their members. Of the over two thousand experts, nearly five hundred died. Over a thousand were injured was well.

However, no matter if they had serious injuries, or light injuries, as long as they still had a breath of air in them, they remained upright in the air, showing the majesty and might of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that moment, all of the observers were there. Shocked expressions were all over their faces, and as they looked at the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, their eyes were full of respect.

It was because they had personally seen the entirety of that battle. Although they didn't know what happened deep underground, they had seen the Eighth Immortal escaping in a hurry with Murong Xun and Murong Wan, completely ignoring everyone else from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That was why the entire army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago they sent here—over a thousand experts—were nearly all defeated.

That battle was very intense. Not only were there confrontations to the death of Martial Lords, there was even the fight between two Martial Kings. It was truly a feast for their eyes.

They had also truly seen the power of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Exactly how powerful? So powerful it defeated the current overlord—as recognized by the public—of the Eastern Sea Region, the "Immortal Execution Archipelago".

No matter how everyone speculated the strength of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the Crippling Night Demon Sect used facts today to tell the world who was the true ruler.

Although the current Crippling Night Demon Sect was in pieces, if they reunited, they would still be invincible!

"Look! It's the Earth King! The Earth King and the others have come out!" Suddenly, someone shouted. He saw them fly out from underground and in the end, stand at the very front of everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"As I thought, they're still more experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect that we haven't seen! So they were underground... and there were even ten peak Martial Lords hidden! It should be them who took care of the Ninth Immortal, right?"

After seeing the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, some people made guesses as

to why the Ninth Immortal never showed up again after leaving.

"Look! Who's the young person walking together with Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming? The silver-coloured spear in his hand looks exactly the same as Murong Xun's Royal Armament!"

However, when people saw Chu Feng, as well as the silver-coloured spear in his hand, they were devastatingly stunned.

"My gods, isn't that Wuqing? Wuqing, who placed first in the Misty Peak, and is acclaimed as an extraordinary genius? Why is he walking together with the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Could he be a part of them?" Soon, someone recognized that he was Wuqing.

"He's Wuqing? He's so young! Judging by his appearance, he should just be a bit over twenty years old, right?"

"I've heard that this child has absurd fighting strength! Although he is only a rank two Martial Lord, he can even defeat rank five Martial Lords! Because the World Spirit who made a contract with him is from the Asura Spirit World!"

"Hmph. He not only has outstanding talent and exceptional fighting strength, he is even a person who fears nothing. Back then, I had personally seen Zhan Feng, the son of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Second Immortal, crippled because he was bothering his friend, Chun Wu!" After recognizing Wuqing, they were even more shocked. Some also started to spread Chu Feng's glorious achievements.

"My gods, it is truly the exact same! Could that be Murong Xun's Royal Armament?" However, the thing that attracted more attention was still the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng's hand.

"Impossible. Although their appearances are the same, the atmosphere surrounding them is different. The silver-coloured spear in Wuqing's hand is just like a normal armament. Not to mention having the airs of a ruler descending into this world, which a Royal Armament has, it is inferior to even an Elite Armament."

But soon, people discovered that the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng's

hand didn't have the might Murong Xun's Royal Armament had.

"Right right right! It is definitely fake. How could Royal Armaments be that common? Moreover, why would Murong Xun's Royal Armament be in his hand?" When they heard those words, most people felt that the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand was fake.

"Everyone, thank you for coming the distance to watch this spectacle. Perhaps today's battle was a bit different from what you've all expected, but I am certain that today's battle was much more exciting than what you've all expected." Just at that moment, the Earth King spoke. He had a smile on his face as he looked at the crowd, and he said very proudly, "I must admit that in today's battle, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has suffered heavy losses. There is a total sacrifice of four hundred and eighty-six brothers, and there are innumerable injured. Almost on every single brother's body, there are light or serious injuries. For defending the honor of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they've shed their own blood.

"However, we have won. The brothers of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, with their blood, and even with their lives, protected the territory of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and protected the honor of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"We completely defeated the overconfident and foolish Immortal Execution Archipelago, who wanted to seize our land. We killed over a thousand of their experts, and even the Ninth Immortal has died by our hands. We used strength to tell them what sort of price they will pay by making the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy.

"Even the arrogant young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun, could only escape by relying on the Eighth Immortal's sacrifice. I'm sure everyone has seen that. This... is the Crippling Night Demon Sect. No matter who it is, those who dare offend us will pay the price of blood."

The Earth King's words were filled with emotion, and he made it so the Crippling Night Demon Sect was the righteous one and the Immortal Execution Archipelago a greedy dog. The last few sentences especially

indirectly told everyone that though the Eighth Immortal was able to escape, he was, in reality, fated to die.

Chapter 802: Mastered Royal Armament

"What? The Eighth Immortal sacrificed his own life, so that's why he looked like that?"

"No wonder. No wonder the Eighth Immortal became that powerful. So he was fighting by burning up his own life. Doesn't this mean the ones able to safely escape were only the siblings Murong Xun and Murong Wan? The Eighth Immortal is also destined to fall because of this battle?"

"Heavens! This is unimaginable! Not only did the Immortal Execution Archipelago lose over a thousand Martial Lords due to this expedition, they even lost the Eighth and Ninth Immortal! These are truly heavy losses!"

Indeed, after hearing the Earth King's words, everyone was even more shocked. Although a thousand-plus Martial Lords was a frightening number, to the Immortal Execution Archipelago that was akin to the sun in the sky, it actually wasn't much.

The Eighth Immortal and the Ninth Immortal, on the other hand, were different. The Nine Immortals were titled as the strongest fighting strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—they were the nine true generals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In this battle, they had lost two of these generals. This was a true heavy loss.

"Although the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago are in conflict, I must say a single person's death in today's battle was not something I had wished for—the granddaughter of the head of the Nine Immortals, Ya Fei." The Earth King feigned sympathy and spoke with a face of pity.

"Ya Fei? One of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region, Ya Fei? She also died?"

"Yeah! Ya Fei and Murong Wan entered underground together, but I haven't seen her come out. Could she have truly died?"

"That can't be true, can it? Ya Fei is dead? That is truly quite a pity, a

beauty like that to have..."

Upon hearing that Ya Fei had died already, the people on scene were astonished, and all of them felt pity. After all, even though such a great beauty like Ya Fei was unrelated to any of them, she being alive was still a beautiful scenery to behold. It was quite a pity for her to have died.

"I'm sure everyone must think that her death was due to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. However, you are wrong. The true murderer of Ya Fei isn't anyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It is Ya Fei's fiancé, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Xun," said the Earth King.

"What? It was Murong Xun who killed Ya Fei?"

"How is that possible? Why would Murong Xun kill Ya Fei? What exactly happened?" The crowd was like a frying pan as they instantly exploded with discussion. They felt that such news was extraordinarily unbelievable.

"Perhaps you feel disbelief, but if you had seen Murong Xun's side of insanity, you will know how coldhearted of a person he is, the so-called number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region.

"Lady Ya Fei was indeed killed by him. He didn't even leave a complete corpse behind. As for why, it's because he discovered that Ya Fei was disloyal to him. So, that's why she was killed.

"However, he had paid the price for this, because his Royal Armament was taken by Wuqing. The sixth Royal Armament of the Immortal Execution Archipelago no longer belongs to them, but to Wuqing." As the Earth King spoke, he looked at the silver-coloured spear in Chu Feng's hand.

"That isn't true, is it? The silver-coloured spear in Wuqing's hand is truly Murong Xun's Royal Armament?"

"It was Wuqing who took it from Murong Xun? How is that possible? The difference in their cultivation levels is enormous! How was Wuqing able to take the Royal Armament from Murong Xun?" They were all

dumbfounded, feeling that it wasn't real.

"I know that perhaps you don't believe this is real. That is understandable.

"It's because you've felt the powerful might of the Royal Armament when it was in Murong Xun's hand. Yet, as Wuqing holds it, there is no such thing.

"However, you must not know that Royal Armaments have awarenesses. Before recognizing its master, sometimes Royal Armaments will intentionally conceal its own aura. In times like those, in the perspective of normal people, they will appear to be like a normal piece of useless steel. They will appear completely worthless. Only true experts would be able to see its essence.

"However, after the Royal Armament recognizes one as its master, it will give the master its power in varying levels. Then, in accordance to the strength of the master, it becomes stronger or weaker.

"In reality, Mastered Royal Armaments typically only exist within the realm of Martial Kings or above, because those who are not Martial Kings will have great difficulty controlling the power of a Royal Armament. Or, perhaps, they are unsuited for using the Royal Armament, and thus they wouldn't be able to receive its approval.

"However, there are also two possible circumstances in which the Royal Armament approves of a person weaker than itself. The first is by force: a Martial King uses forceful methods to assist the person that the Royal Armament does not approve of.

"Truthfully speaking, Murong Xun is that person because I can tell that he simply hasn't truly received the approval of the Royal Armament. It was merely forced to serve him.

"The second possibility is that the person who wishes to obtain the Royal Armament has extremely exceptional talent. Despite being below a Martial King, that person would still receive the approval of the Royal Armament.

“And I feel that Wuqing is this person with exceptional talent, because he is a publicly recognized genius in the Eastern Sea Region. He not only possess powerful fighting strength, he is also the only person in the Eastern Sea Region to have made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World.

“His talent is unprecedented, and I doubt there will be any in the future that can match his. He is, without a doubt, the strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Even that Zi family’s Divine Body may not be comparable to his.

“Although Wuqing’s current cultivation is less than Murong Xun’s, this is only because his time in cultivation is short.

“I’m certain when he reaches Murong Xun’s age, his cultivation would be one that Murong Xun could only dream of, one that he could never obtain in his life.” The Earth King spoke with extreme passion.

“Yeah! Wuqing is still young right now. If he was truly at Murong Xun’s age, his strength would really defy all logic!” After hearing the Earth King’s words, the people in the crowd also nodded.

He was very pleased by the crowd’s reaction. So, he cast his gaze at Chu Feng, and said with a smile, “Wuqing, I’m sure you know how to subdue this Royal Armament. How about you do it and show it to everyone?

“It will also widen the horizons of everyone here. Let them see what the might of a Mastered Royal Armament appears like.”

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded. In the instant he held the Royal Armament, he knew how to determine whether it would be willing to serve him or not. It was very simple: just meld his aura within.

However, that was very dangerous. The Royal Armament was so powerful, and Chu Feng was currently so weak. If it approved of Chu Feng, it was equal to suppressing itself because it didn’t matter how much more powerful the Royal Armament, it would still change due to the strength of its master.

With the Royal Armament in his hands, even though it would greatly

increase Chu Feng's fighting strength, the true power of the Royal Armament could not be used.

So, if it recognized Chu Feng as its master, Chu Feng could benefit a bit from it.

However, if it didn't approve of Chu Feng, then he would receive backlash—which might even lead to death. At least, the Royal Armament possessed the ability to take away Chu Feng's life.

But Chu Feng was confident. Even the Demon Sealing Sword approved of him, so why would he be afraid that the Royal Armament wouldn't approve of him?

As such, under the gazes of countless people, as Chu Feng held the silver-coloured spear with one hand high up, he willed a strand of his aura into the Royal Armament.

BOOM

In an instant, the sky darkened. Violent winds arose, and black clouds swirled about. Lightning flashed, and in but a moment, chaos was everywhere.

Everyone's figures were submerged. The only thing they could see was Chu Feng who stood in the air, holding the Royal Armament.

It was as if the world had been ruled over, and it was as if Chu Feng were the ruler of this world.

Chapter 803: Absolute Submission

The lightning in the air surged about, and black clouds permeated the air. Other than the light due to the lightning in Chu Feng's position, the entire sky was dark. The might of the Royal Armament was shown without restraint.

"This is so powerful. It is simply many times more powerful than when Murong Xun revealed the Royal Armament before. Is it because this is the true power of the Royal Armament, or, like the Earth King said, because it truly approved of Chu Feng?" Such a change made the crowd sign in admiration.

hmm However, just at that moment, the might that flooded the sky abruptly shrank. With Chu Feng as the center, it started entering Chu Feng's body like a vortex.

As it entered Chu Feng's body, Chu Feng's long hair fluttered about. Lightnings emerged into his eyes, and the might of a ruler descending from above emanated from his body.

Most importantly, the symbols on the silver-coloured spear started endlessly flashing layer by layer. Everyone could feel that the silver-coloured spear was connecting with Chu Feng, and channeling powerful energy into Chu Feng's body.

"This feeling..." Even Chu Feng's eyes lit up when he felt the power of the Royal Armament surging into his body.

With the channeling of such energy, Chu Feng's aura actually started to rapidly rise. With the three lightnings, Chu Feng was now a rank two Martial Lord.

Soon, he made a breakthrough. Everyone could feel that Chu Feng's aura was one of a rank three Martial Lord.

After Chu Feng became a rank three Martial Lord, the energy also started diminishing. In the end, the clouds dispersed, the lightning faded away, and the sky and earth also returned to their former state. However,

what changed were the expressions of the people, as they were dumbfounded with widened mouths.

They could all feel that the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand was completely different from before. The unique might of a Royal Armament once again appeared.

Since Chu Feng's cultivation wasn't at the peak, the current might of the Royal Armament was not as powerful as Murong Xun's. However, it exuded an odd feeling: when the Royal Armament was in Chu Feng's hand, it seemed to be more obedient. It seemed to be absolutely submissive towards Chu Feng.

In reality, there was even shock in the Earth King's eyes. Although he already knew the Royal Armament would approve of Chu Feng, he didn't expect this situation to occur.

He said with a disbelieving tone, "From the legends... It's Absolute Submission!"

"Is it truly Absolute Submission?" Old Liu also couldn't help crying out when he heard that. His aged face as well was filled with shock.

"Big Brother, what does Absolute Submission mean?" asked the Gold-cloak Brothers at the same time.

"Yeah! Senior Liu, what happened? Wuqing's cultivation increased because of the Royal Armament?" Xuan Xiaochao and the others also spoke.

In actuality, no one knew what Absolute Submission meant. Even Chu Feng himself didn't. So, everyone's gazes unavoidably landed on the Earth King and Old Liu.

"Royal Armaments possess awareness. Even though it gives its approval, it is only a cooperative relationship. It is no more than lending its power to its master, then filling itself with its master's power. That is the most typical method of Mastering.

"However, there is another method that is rather special. It is not a cooperative relationship, but rather the Royal Armament is willing to give

its everything to this master and this master alone. It can approve of no other master, and it will die when the master dies.

"If the master unluckily passes away, the Royal Armament will be instantly destroyed as well. This method of Mastering is extremely rare, and it is named as Absolute Submission, because from that very instant, the Royal Armament is no longer the ruler of the world, but a subordinate serving its master.

"However, there are already barely any people who can obtain the approval of the Royal Armament. They must have extremely powerful strength, and extremely excellent aptitude.

"As for ones that can make a Royal Armament perform Absolute Submission, in all the records of the Eastern Sea Region, ever since ancient times, there has not been a single person who has been able to do that," said the Earth King gravely.

"What? There's something like this? Ever since ancient times, no one has been able to make a Royal Armament absolutely submit?

"Doesn't this mean that the Royal Armament in Wuqing's hand is in Absolute Submission? If that's true, isn't he the only person who could cause a Royal Armament to absolutely submit in the Eastern Sea Region?"

When they heard those words, another commotion arose in the crowd. Not only from the observing crowd, but also from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. At that moment, they all cast their gazes closely on the Earth King, awaiting his answer.

"A clear indication of Absolute Submission is that the Royal Armament will give a portion of its power to the master, representing its decision in submission. Wuqing's cultivation instantly rising has proven everything already," said the Earth King.

"Heavens! Doesn't this mean that the Royal Armament is truly in submission towards Wuqing?"

"Impressive, too impressive. As expected of an exceptional genius such as him. How enormous is this Wuqing's potential? How powerful is his

aptitude?"

After receiving the confirmation, the crowd boiled with excitement. Everyone subconsciously cast their gazes at Chu Feng. Moreover, sincere respect and admiration filled their eyes which glinted with a fiery glint.

With everything that had happened, they had to reassess the young man Wuqing, because he seemed to be much more powerful than the rumours said. Not only had he made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, a Royal Armament was in Absolute Submission because of him.

He did so many things from the legends!

They had to admit that Chu Feng's talent truly reached an inestimable stage. If this young man were able to develop, he would most definitely become a great character in the Eastern Sea Region who would be immensely powerful.

"Submissive to me, huh? Silver Dragon Spear, you've given me quite the surprise.

"But don't worry. I will absolutely not disappoint you. I will let you know you've followed the correct master." Holding the Silver Dragon Spear in his hands, Chu Feng joyfully smiled.

Silver Dragon Spear was the name of the armament. In the instant he successfully received the approval of the Royal Armament, Chu Feng learnt of its name.

Moreover, what Chu Feng learnt of was not only its name, but also the power of the Silver Dragon Spear.

Despite being a typical Royal Armament, it was still very powerful. That being said, Chu Feng was simply unable to use the true power of the Royal Armament. With it, in addition to his current cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, even if his opponent were a rank six Martial Lord, Chu Feng would still be able to put up a fight. Even if he couldn't defeat that person, he would still be able to escape uninjured.

It was because the Royal Armament was the same as Elite Armaments

and Incomplete Royal Armaments. The wielder's strength would increase due to the armament. In the instant one held the Royal Armament, their entire fighting strength would receive a huge increase.

Chapter 804: A Sincere Invitation

After announcing the results of the battle, letting the world know of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's brutal defeat, and letting them experience Chu Feng's powerful aptitude, the Earth King drove out the observers from the Depraved Ravine.

They also reactivated the Sealing Spirit Formation over the Depraved Ravine. Since they already knew the method of activation, doing it again proved no difficulty to them.

As for the Demon Sealing Sword, putting aside that there was simply no one who could approach it due to the Spirit Formation, even if one could, pretty much no one could take it away. So, the Earth King and the others were not worried because they knew very well the immense power of the sword.

"Wuqing, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's been horrifically defeated this time, so they will most definitely retaliate. I'm sure they will send an army soon, so let us quickly leave this place first," the Earth King said to Chu Feng after examining the formation, confirming there were no holes and that it was fully activated.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, then left with the Earth King, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and Xuan Xiaochao and the others. As for the others from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they hid their identities and blended in with the several tens of thousands of people who came to watch the spectacle, leaving together with them.

When everyone left, the Depraved Ravine was so silent it was a bit odd. One could only hear bursts of wind; it was completely quiet otherwise, to the point it was even a bit frightening.

However, just at that moment, outside the Spirit Formation, there was a squirming in the air. Quickly after, two people appeared.

They were both female. One was middle-aged with suitable clothes for her appearance, while the other was a sweet and beautiful young woman.

Both of them came from the Misty Peak. The young one was Chun Wu, and the middle-aged one was the guardian of the Misty Peak, one of the most influential characters of the Eastern Sea Region, Lady Piaomiao.

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao was standing in the air. She held a broken mud jar, and she was staring in the direction Chu Feng and the others left at with her fierce eyes. After a long while, she said, "Chu Feng's talent has surpassed my expectation. No wonder, no wonder..."

"Master, do we let Chu Feng and the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect go just like that? We don't need to follow him?" asked Chun Wu a bit worriedly. She didn't understand the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect well, so she wasn't too reassured.

"There's no need. Although sometimes the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect don't choose what methods they use to achieve their goals, they do emphasize righteousness. They won't take away Chu Feng's Royal Armament, nor will they harm Chu Feng.

"After all, Chu Feng had helped them out greatly this time. One could almost say it was he who saved all of their lives. They barely have enough time to thank him, so why would they harbour malicious intents?" Lady Piaomiao said.

"But Master, when they were in the underground palace before, didn't you say the Earth King would definitely kill him if Chu Feng pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword?" Chun Wu said.

"Hoh..." Lady Piaomiao calmly smiled, then said, "The Demon Sealing Sword is very significant to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I had once heard that before the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect passed away, he had once said the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be led by whoever was able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword.

"However, not to mention being able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, there is not even anyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect who can approach it. If Chu Feng had truly pulled it out, wouldn't that mean the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be led by a brat none of them were familiar with?

“Putting aside the fact that the Four Protectors wouldn’t be willing to, even the scattered disciples of the Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn’t be willing to. As a higher-up of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Earth King most definitely knew that.

“So, if Chu Feng had truly pulled it out, for the sake of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s stability, he would have killed Chu Feng because he would not allow the Crippling Night Demon Sect to be controlled by an outsider. After all, to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, only the Four Protectors are qualified to lead the Crippling Night Demon Sect,” Lady Piaomiao explained.

“But Chu Feng still received the protection of the Demon Sealing Sword—he already did something they were all unable to do. Would they not kill Chu Feng right now for the peace of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and to avoid future problems?” Chun Wu was still worried.

“Like I said, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect emphasize righteousness. As long as their forbidden issues are not violated, there will definitely be nothing that will happen to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng is also very smart and he didn’t pass that line. So, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect will not kill him. Not only that, they should also want to pull him into their sect. After all, they aren’t fools. No matter who, they would want to get closer to a genius like Chu Feng,” Lady Piaomiao explained.

“I understand.” Only after hearing all that was Chun Wu more at ease. However, when she looked at the broken mud jar hand, she lightly frowned and asked with great confusion, “Actually, I still have one thing I don’t understand. Master, why did you hiddenly save her?”

“Perhaps keeping her will be useful.” Lady Piaomiao made an unfathomable smile, and as she spoke, she also looked at the broken mud jar in her hands.

On the surface, the mud jar appeared very ordinary. It was even horribly broken. However, inside, countless blinding runes flickered. Their light reflected off one another, forming several powerful formations.

In the very center of those formations, there was actually a perfect, undamaged Consciousness lying peacefully.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even the Earth King didn't detect Lady Piaomiao nor Chun Wu in the slightest. So, after sealing the Depraved Ravine, they left without a worry.

After passing through the Stone Forest of Death, they travelled for several tens of thousands of miles before setting up camp on a mountain range. Actually, they didn't really need to rest due to their cultivation levels, but it was just that the Earth King had something he wanted to discuss with Chu Feng.

After setting up camp, Old Liu ordered the eighth and ninth brother to find some food. When they did though, it was already deep into the night.

However, the eighth and ninth brother were very competent in their searching. Not only were there meat and vegetables, there was even wine.

At that moment, despite being already late in the night, as they sat on the apex of a mountain peak, within the scenery of the night, there was a special type of ambience as they drank wine and ate meat, especially after such a perilous battle. Such a life did become an extravagant sort of enjoyment.

"Wuqing, I have a request. I just wonder if you can agree to it or not?" Suddenly, the Earth King smiled and looked at Chu Feng. Moreover, everyone all put down the wine bowls in their hands and orderly cast their gazes at Chu Feng.

"Senior, just speak your mind. As long as I, Wuqing, can do it, I will not refuse," replied Chu Feng with a smile.

"Wuqing, your talent is outstanding. You are a genius extremely rarely seen in the Eastern Sea Region. Representing the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I would like to invite you to join us. I wonder... do you agree or not?" said the Earth King sincerely.

Moreover, as he spoke those words, his eyes were full of hope, yet also contained a bit of worry. He was afraid—afraid Chu Feng would refuse.

After all, he was such a rare genius. Everyone knew Chu Feng's future was inestimable. Even if he refused, it was within reason.

It was actually not only the Earth King who worried. Old Liu, Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, You Tonghan, and almost everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect who were there worried.

Because they really hoped Chu Feng could enter the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Chapter 805: Uniting the Crippling Night Demon Sect

Chu Feng seemed to have already expected the Earth King's invitation. In addition, since the day he paid respects to Qiu Canfeng, becoming his disciple, he already took himself as a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, there was simply no reason to refuse.

As a result, Chu Feng unhesitantly responded, "In the Crippling Night Demon Sect, experts are as common as clouds. It is the number one sect in the Eastern Sea Region. To be able to join is my honour! I can't even thank Senior's generosity quick enough, so how could I possibly refuse?"

"Haha, good, good, good!

"To be able to have a person like you, the Crippling Night Demon Sect will definitely be much more powerful in the future! With all of you representing the younger generation, we old ones can be at ease! Hahaha..." The Earth King was elated when he heard Chu Feng's reply, and his smile on his aged face made it seem like a steamed bun.

As he spoke, he even looked at Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming. In his eyes, there were relieved emotions. He would have no need to worry the Crippling Night Demon Sect lacking any successors with these young ones here.

"Brother Wuqing, I welcome you for joining us. From now on, you truly become a part of our family."

Xuan Xiaochao raised his wine bowl, and toasted Chu Feng. At the same time, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming also toasted him. It could be seen that they didn't have any sort of envy, and instead, they welcomed him earnestly from the bottom of their hearts. That was truly a rare scene to behold.

"Brother Wuqing, I've heard you have a very powerful master. If I may ask, who is your master, to be able to develop such an excellent disciple such as yourself?" asked Fu Fengming expectantly.

“Senior Fu Fengming, it’s not that I want to hide it, but my master has forbidden me from saying his name. So, I do ask for your forgiveness,” said Chu Feng with a calm smile.

The Four Protectors were not on good terms with one another; they even viewed each other as enemies. Moreover, Chu Feng didn’t trust Fu Fengming and the others completely, so naturally, he would not tell them he was Qiu Canfeng’s disciple.

Also, Qiu Canfeng did tell Chu Feng to not tell anyone else in the Crippling Night Demon Sect where he was located, with the exception of Fu Liansheng. As such, Chu Feng had to diligently handle this issue.

“Hah, no matter, no matter! It’s your secret after all,” You Tonghan said unworriedly.

However, Fu Fengming lightly furrowed his brows. Then, he said, “Mm, the order of one’s master is akin to the size of the sky. That’s understandable. However, Brother Wuqing, since you’ve entered the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I do hope you can treat us as we treat you. If I may ask, what is your true name?”

“Yeah! Brother Wuqing, what are you called? And don’t say you’re truly called Wuqing!” You Tonghan also curiously looked at Chu Feng when they heard those words.

As he faced such gazes filled with desire, Chu Feng thought for a while, and decided not to hide it. He said, “Wuqing is indeed not my real name. I am Chu Feng.”

“Chu Feng? Good name, good name.

“Brother Chu Feng, don’t worry. You must be hiding your name because you have some sort of unspeakable hidden trouble. We won’t reveal this information.”

After knowing Chu Feng’s name, Fu Fengming and the others didn’t ask much and instead, starting chatting with him.

Then, later on, the Earth King and the others seniors went to rest. Only Chu Feng, Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan remained up.

They chatted for a very long time, and the more they did, the more absorbed they got. Chu Feng not only felt that the three of them were rather decent, the three of them also respected Chu Feng quite a bit.

The four of them even called each other “brothers”, and with the power of wine, Chu Feng started revealing his admiration towards the Four Protectors, taking the opportunity to find out Fu Liansheng’s whereabouts.

“Brother Fu Fengming, my respect towards Senior Fu Liansheng is like an endlessly surging river, and also like the uncontrollable flooding of the Yellow River.

“To be able to see Senior Fu Liansheng would be a wish I, Chu Feng, always desired for. Brother Fu Fengming, would it be possible for you to introduce me to Senior Fu Liansheng?” Chu Feng looked at and asked Fu Fengming.

“This...” However, when he heard those words, Fu Fengming furrowed his brows slightly. A forehead of vertical black lines made it seem that he was in a very awkward situation.

“Ahh, Brother Chu Feng, it’s not that we want to lie to you, but as the disciples of the Protectors, even if others don’t know where our masters are, would we not know?

“However, our masters have very odd natures. They disallow us from telling anyone their locations. No matter who, it isn’t allowed.

“So, it’s not that Fu Fengming doesn’t trust you and isn’t willing to bring you to see Senior Fu Liansheng, it’s just that he truly doesn’t dare to.” You Tonghan helped Xuan Xiaochao explain when he heard Chu Feng’s words.

“Ah, I see. Brother Fu Fengming, I didn’t know about that, so I have offended you. Just ignore what I just said.” Chu Feng could tell that they didn’t seem to be tricking them, but he still intentionally put up a dispirited expression.

“Brother Chu Feng, you don’t need to be disappointed. At present, the

Crippling Night Demon Sect has nearly reunited. My master will show himself. Since you are also a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, you will see my master sooner or later," Fu Fengming said.

"Reunite the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" Chu Feng was taken aback.

"Mm. There was a reason why we set up a trap to lure the Immortal Execution Archipelago here.

"At present, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is in pieces. However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago views us as the biggest threat to them and they are hiddenly searching for the whereabouts of our members. After doing so, they kill them. Their goal is to hiddenly remove us, a future problem for them.

"If the Crippling Night Demon Sect does not fight back, then we will be in grave trouble. Our masters also know about this issue, so the reason we showed ourselves is actually due to the orders of our masters.

"Since they have very important statuses, they will temporarily avoid showing themselves. However, we three can represent them three. Look here: this is the Protector's Badge. We will use this to reunite the Crippling Night Demon Sect." As Fu Fengming spoke, he took out a special badge. You Tonghan and Xuan Xiaochao also took out theirs.

"But the Crippling Night Demon Sect has been split up for so long! What are all of you preparing to do?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago views us as a huge enemy so they have already started eradicating the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—our brothers. However, since they have been secretly doing this, many still do not know about it. After all, following ten-something years of peace, they have already gotten used to their current comfortable life.

"Right now, we want to put the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago into a permanently conflicting relationship, so that those who've accustomed to the serene life will feel danger. Only then would they return to the Crippling Night Demon Sect sooner," Fu Fengming explained.

“Is that successfully progressing?” Chu Feng’s words were on the most crucial part.

Fu Fengming and the others looked at each other, but all helplessly shook their heads and said, “If our masters appeared, then that would be better. After all, they possess great reputation and they are existences everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect revere.

“However, us, on the other hand... It’s too difficult. Our cultivations are after all too weak, nor do we have much fame. Even with our masters’ badges, it is very difficult to convince the young ones.

“Senior Earth King initially refused to come this time. So, that’s why we didn’t hope for his arrival. His appearance was actually quite a joyful surprise.

“However, we have made a good start by defeating the Immortal Execution Archipelago greatly in the Depraved Ravine. Moreover, we’ve set up an opposing relationship with them.

“I’m sure there will be more and more who will be willing to join our ranks, and this is all thanks to Brother Chu Feng. It’s all because of you that we were able to obtain victory! You’re the one who contributed the greatest.”

After speaking, when You Tonghan and the others looked at Chu Feng, there was unavoidably a bit more gratitude in their eyes.

Chapter 806: Change in the Zi Family

“Brothers, you think too much of me. It’s because of your complete plan that the Immortal Execution Archipelago were defeated. I just exerted a minimal amount of strength,” Chu Feng said with a bit of embarrassment.

“The reunion of the Crippling Night Demon Sect cannot be rushed. Long discussions and planning are still required, so let’s take it slow. When the time is ripe, when our masters appear, that is when we let the world know the true strength of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.”

“Right right right, we’re just doing some preparation. The true show is for the Four Protectors.” Fu Fengming nodded his head in agreement.

“Ahh, we just don’t know where Senior Qiu Canfeng is,” You Tonghan suddenly said.

“Senior Qiu Canfeng is definitely still in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as we make some movement, he will certainly know about it. At that time, he too will naturally show himself,” said Fu Fengming with a smile.

“That’s right. Senior Qiu Canfeng is the head of the Four Protectors. He is completely loyal to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so in critical moments of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he will definitely show himself.” Xuan Xiaochao also spoke.

Judging by their attitudes, Chu Feng could tell at least the three of them respected Qiu Canfeng a lot, despite what their masters felt.

“Come come come! Let’s put aside reuniting the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I’ll tell all of you an interesting thing,” You Tonghan said suddenly with a mysterious smile.

“Brother Han, what interesting thing do you have now? Don’t keep us in suspense and tell us!” urged Xuan Xiaochao.

“Murong Xun has two fiancées; one is Ya Fei, and I’m sure all of you know who the other one is, right?” said You Tonghan smilingly.

Chu Feng heart was shaken when he heard that, because he

subconsciously knew You Tonghan's subsequent words were possibly related to Zi Ling.

"Of course I know! Isn't it the Divine Body of the Flower Valley's Zi family? I remember that this Divine Body was very mysterious. Shortly after being born, she disappeared. But recently, I've heard she's reappeared in the Zi family. She was called Zi Yu'er before, and now she's called Zi Ling.

"I also heard that this legendary Divine Body doesn't have many accomplishments in cultivation. It could even be said she's very weak, no different from an ordinary person.

"So, many people speculate that the Zi Ling in the Zi family right now isn't the true Divine Body.

"Very possibly, the true Divine Body was secretly sent to the Immortal Execution Archipelago when she was born, and has always been in development. As for the current Zi Ling in the Zi family, she is no more than a substitute." Shortly after speaking, he asked again, "Brother Han, could it be that you have new discoveries?"

"Heh, I don't know if that Zi Ling is the true Divine Body or not, but on the road, I coincidently passed the Zi family. So, out of curiosity, I snuck in. I wanted to see what sort of appearance Murong Xun's other fiancée had, whether she's worthy of the title of being one of the three great beauties," You Tonghan said as he chuckled.

"Brother Han, what did that Zi Ling Look like? How did she compare to Ya Fei?" Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming had intrigued expressions on their faces.

"Beautiful. Absolutely beautiful. Ya Fei can't even compare to her. To be honest, it was the first time I saw such a beautiful lady. Even women in paintings are inferior to her; she is even like the fairies from the legends!" You Tonghan's face expressed his recollection, and as he spoke, he couldn't even help gulping.

"She's that beautiful? Then just learn from Brother Chu Feng here and do it to her," Xuan Xiaochao said with a shameless smile.

“Heh, to be honest, I did have that thought back then. However, after all, that girl is different from Ya Fei. With a glimpse, you could tell she was a kindhearted lady. No matter how I dislike Murong Xun, I can’t dirty her for no reason at all,” You Tonghan said.

“Brother You Tonghan, what interesting thing did you discover in the Zi family?” Chu Feng asked impatiently. He was truly concerned what occurred in the Zi family, because Zi Ling was one of the people he was most worried about.

“Heh, getting the point right away, huh? When I went, the Zi family was still having some internal argument! The patriarch of the Zi family was in a complete mess when disputing with Zi Ling’s parents. It seemed to be because Zi Ling’s parents didn’t want to marry Zi Ling off to Murong Xun, yet the patriarch himself didn’t agree so he wasn’t willing to let them go,” said You Tonghan.

“Oh? There’s something like that? Why didn’t they?” Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming were also interested when they heard that.

“The specifics I don’t know, but I just know that later on, the patriarch locked up Zi Ling’s parents and Zi Ling herself as well,” said You Tonghan.

“What next?” Chu Feng asked quickly.

“I don’t know what came next. Back then, I was in a hurry so I didn’t listen carefully.

“I just know that Zi Ling’s parents suddenly didn’t want to marry Zi Ling off to Murong Xun. This is indeed an interesting case. Perhaps we can even use this to stir up some trouble in Murong Xun’s wedding day.” You Tonghan smirked.

“Mm, if that is true, then we can indeed stir up trouble. However, there seems to still be three years until the day of marriage. I wonder if the Immortal Execution Archipelago will still exist or not then,” Fu Fengming said.

All three of them didn’t pay too much attention to that matter, because

to them, Zi Ling's survival was irrelevant to them.

Just as You Tonghan said, that was merely something interesting to them. Give it a listen, be entertained for a bit. Then, it's done. None were too attentive.

However, Chu Feng was entirely different. Who was Zi Ling? She was Chu Feng's fiancée! Why was he looking for Fu Liansheng? Why did he have to save Qiu Canfeng? When all's said and done, his most fundamental goal was to save Zi Ling.

So, after knowing about that, Chu Feng's heart was in chaos. He hurriedly asked, "Brother You Tonghan, did you truly sneak into the Zi family? Did the Immortal Execution Archipelago not arrange experts to guard the Zi family?"

"I don't think they did. At least, when I went over, I didn't see any people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago," You Tonghan said.

"Although experts are as common as clouds in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, as they grow larger, more important territories appear. Those important territories also require peak experts for guarding.

"So, they simply cannot send too many experts to the Zi family. At least, Martial Kings wouldn't be sent there to protect them.

"After all, there are only so many Martial Kings in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They wouldn't spend such an enormous battle force to look over a tiny Zi family. In the end, she is only a fiancée," Fu Fengming analyzed.

"Eh? Brother Chu Feng, why are you so interested in the matters of the Zi family? You wouldn't be thinking to also take down Murong Xun's other fiancée, right?"

Xuan Xiaochao grinned as he spoke. At the same time, Fu Fengming and You Tonghan did the same as they looked at Chu Feng. Clearly, their memory of Chu Feng taking down Ya Fei and Murong Wan was still crisp clear.

Chapter 807: Saving Zi Ling

"Brothers, you truly know how to make a joke. I don't feel any resentment towards that Lady Zi Ling, so why would I harm her? I am only curious." Chu Feng shook his head embarrassedly, but his heart was very shocked.

Before, he always felt that Zi Ling could have possibly been taken into the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even if she wasn't, then the Zi family should definitely have large numbers of guards.

But, according to You Tonghan, Zi Ling was not only in the Zi family right now, there weren't experts too powerful guarding. At least, there wasn't anyone stronger than You Tonghan, otherwise, he wouldn't have been so free in entering and exiting.

So, Chu Feng now had a plan. Since the Immortal Execution Archipelago didn't send peak experts at the Zi family, then Chu Feng had to head over to the Zi family. He prepared to save Zi Ling.

If he could truly save her, then the heaviest stone in Chu Feng's heart would be shattered.

That night, they stayed on the mountain range for resting. After chatting for a long time, since they all had their own matters to deal with, in the morning the next day, they prepared to go their own ways.

"Wuqing, since you've agreed to join the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I have to leave a mark on your back. It is not only convenient, in the future, it would be easier to identify other members. I would also be able to find you through the mark," said the Earth King before splitting up.

"Mm." Chu Feng had already expected that. So, without saying anything more, he stripped away his clothes, revealing his well-built back to the Earth King.

He knew he was preparing to imprint the special mark into his body. Since he already joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, naturally he would not refuse.

Without delay, the Earth King started. His palm waved around and he started laying a formation. It was an enormous Spirit Formation procedure that had extremely powerful golden Spirit Formations.

As the Earth King drew it, it formed the symbol of a broken moon. Chu Feng also discovered a small detail: the Earth King even put down Chu Feng's name within the formation. That was a completely unique indication.

"Combine!"

Finally, the Earth King shouted. The formation rose into the air, and the blinding light started gradually merging together. Not only did its shape shrink by several times, it even turned black. By the Earth King's lead, it started being guided into Chu Feng's back.

hmm However, just as the mark of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's broken moon merged into Chu Feng's back, preparing to connect with his dantian, a ripple came from it.

That made the Earth King's expression change slightly. He furrowed his brows, seeming to have felt something. But, he did not stop and continued merging it into Chu Feng's body.

boom But just as the mark was about to meld with his dantian, a huge explosion suddenly burst from inside his body. And, as it did, the mark of the broken moon the Earth King spent so much effort creating immediately exploded, destroying it completely.

Even the Earth King—a Martial King—was forced several steps back. His complexion immediately turned pale, and even his body started trembling.

"Lord Earth King, are you fine?" Seeing that, the expressions of Old Liu and the others changed greatly as they hurriedly went up and supported the Earth King.

But, he just waved his hand, indicating to the crowd he was fine. Shortly after though, he looked at Chu Feng, and said, "Wuqing, there seems to be a special power within your dantian that resisted me from merging the

mark. What is it?"

"Senior, I am not certain either." Chu Feng shook his head, his face a bit blank.

The Earth King seemed to know that it was possibly one of Chu Feng's secrets when he saw that reaction. Since Chu Feng was unwilling to say much, he too didn't ask much. Instead, he said, "Since it's like so, then take this. Remember to always bring it on you. Don't put it in your Cosmos Sack. With that, if there's anything, we can always contact you." As the Earth King spoke, he took out a badge. On the badge, he imprinted a special mark before giving it to Chu Feng.

That badge was black. Not only did it have the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, there was also a unique mark. As long as Chu Feng had it on him, no matter where he went, the Earth King would be able to find him.

"Thank you, Senior Earth King." Receiving the badge, as instructed, Chu Feng didn't put it in his Cosmos Sack but in his pocket. He knew the Earth King wouldn't harm him; it was a crucial item used to contact the Crippling Night Demon Sect in the future.

"Then, let us go our ways. If there's something that pops up later, I will think of methods to contact all of you," said the Earth King.

"We'll take our leave." Xuan Xiaochao was in a rush to report to his master, so he left first.

Soon after, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming did the same.

"Seniors, I too will take my leave." And since Chu Feng's heart was full of Zi Ling, he didn't stay there for long either. He clasped his fists at the Earth King and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, then leaped forward and left quickly.

"Lord Earth King, what's different with Wuqing's body? Even the mark of the Crippling Night Demon Sect was unable to merge into his body," Old Liu said curiously after Chu Feng left.

"It is indeed different. In his dantian, there's some power that resist the

mark I made. It was destroyed in only an instant," the Earth King replied.

"What sort of thing is it? It's that powerful?" Old Liu asked again.

"I don't know, but it was indeed very powerful." At that instant, an odd glint flashed in the Earth King's aged eyes. When he recalled the power sweeping out of Chu Feng's body, strong fear added onto the glint.

Chu Feng was naturally unable to hear the conversation between the Earth King and Old Liu. After knowing that Zi Ling was imprisoned by the patriarch of the Zi family, and that there seemed to be no experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago guarding her, Chu Feng hurried towards Zi Ling without stopping.

After a while of unending journeying, Chu Feng finally arrived at the Zi family of the Flower Valley.

The so-called Zi family of the Flower Valley was not without origin. The Flower Valley was in reality a valley; it was not a large area, but within the valley there were flowers of all sorts of colours. Its name was made as such.

However, there were so many similar flower valleys in the Eastern Sea Region. So, the thing that truly made the Flower Valley famous was the Zi family, and the true thing that made the Zi family famous was the birth of Zi Ling over ten years ago.

When a Divine Body came into being, it would create a unique scene. Back then, many people had seen that scene. After the Immortal Execution Archipelago confirmed that there was truly a Divine Body, she became the fiancée of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago of that time hadn't ruled over the Eastern Sea Region, it had already revealed its powerful side. So, everyone felt that the Zi family would rise rapidly in power.

After all, putting aside the legendary quality of a Divine Body, the protection of the Immortal Execution Archipelago alone meant that the Zi family was fated to become powerful.

Chapter 808: Killing Your Entire Family

The reality was the same as their predictions. The Immortal Execution Archipelago gave huge amounts of assistance to the Zi family, causing it to rise rapidly in strength.

They were initially a small family that didn't even have half a Martial Lord. Now, with the increasing numbers of Martial Lords, they became a large family which had many even in the younger generation. At present, the Zi family not only became large and flourishing, it even surpassed a few that possessed Inherited Bloodlines.

In the eyes of outsiders, the reason the Zi family had its current state was all because of Immortal Execution Archipelago. In comparison to the nearly unknown Divine Body that lacked many achievements, what everyone admired more was the Zi family's ability to obtain help from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, no one knew what the Immortal Execution Archipelago did hiddenly to Zi family: What they had their eyes on was actually the Divine power of Zi Ling. They didn't truly want to marry Zi Ling over; they just wanted Zi Ling to be a "gift" to Murong Xun.

However, something undeniable was that the current Zi family was rather prosperous. Not only strength wise, but most importantly, fame.

Recently, there were rumours that Zi Ling's beauty was peerless—she was ranked as one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region. That led to quite a few guests who wanted to visit the Zi family, to take a glimpse at her.

As they faced the visits from those people, even though the Zi family would filter out some, then receive those who were a bit more famous, in reality, they didn't allow anyone to see Zi Ling easily.

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing outside the Zi family. As he looked at the center of the Flower Valley, at the Zi family which had an unending stream of distinguished guests coming to and fro, with prosperity and gorgeousness evident everywhere, in his eyes, there was

nothing but hatred.

whoosh, whoosh, whoosh

Although there was tight security around the Zi family, and experts were as common as clouds, it was not hard for Chu Feng to sneak in.

“Ah!” After entering, Chu Feng chose a person who had roughly the same figure as himself and struck him unconscious. Then, he took his clothes and changed his face to match that person’s.

After doing so, Chu Feng inquired the location of the Zi family’s prison. Moreover, using a series of techniques and lies, he snuck inside.

“Ahh—”

“Forgive me, forgive me! I’ve truly said everything! Ah! Stop!”

The Zi family’s prison was very large, and there were all sorts of people locked inside. Some were peacefully resting—they seemed to be imprisoned for many years—some were receiving interrogation, suffering the pain of torture.

However, Chu Feng was not concerned with those people. At that moment, he used the Heaven’s Eyes and spread out his Spirit power. He wanted to find clues regarding Zi Ling’s location.

Yet, after searching through the entire prison, Chu Feng hadn’t even seen any signs of her. But even though he didn’t find her, Chu Feng found a familiar person.

There was an aged old man locked within a well-sealed room. That old man had undamaged clothing, but his complexion was a bit thin and discoloured, seeming as if he had some rather significant worry on his mind. And, he was none other than Zi Ling’s grandfather, Zi Xuanyuan.

On his body, there were no fetters. The prison that locked him was different from others as well. It was not only completely intact, it was even quite exquisite. One could even say that the prison room was forcibly made into a luxurious room.

Within such a place, there was not only a delicate bed and all sorts of

gorgeous commodities, there were even various delicious foods and cultivation resources placed inside, free to be used.

At that moment, Zi Xuanyuan was sitting on a chair and drinking tea, with his legs crossed. At that moment, his cultivation was also increasing; it had truly reached the peak of the Heaven realm.

However, behind him were several young men. They were likely people also from the Zi family, and most of them had the cultivation in the Heaven realm. However, one thirty-something man was already a Martial Lord—a rank one Martial Lord.

"Old man, don't refuse this only to be forced later. The patriarch wants you to convince Zi Ling, then go convince her. Act less of a master in this place. You should know very well what will happen to you if you don't listen," said one of the young men quite unkindly. As a junior of the Zi family, not only did he lack any respect when facing Zi Xuanyuan, he spoke as if he were speaking to a criminal.

"Convince? Convince her what? Convince Zi Ling to jump into hell, so you greedy bastards can be satisfied?" Zi Xuanyuan raised his head and mockingly stared at him.

"You..." Hearing that, the young man was enraged. He raised his hand and was about to strike Zi Xuanyuan.

"Stop!" But just at that moment, the young man with the strength of a rank one Martial Lord spoke.

He seemed to be the leader of those people—after he shouted, the other men all backed away to the side, silent.

The leader walked two steps towards Zi Xuanyuan and said with a fake smile, "Senior Yuanshan, no matter what you say, Murong Xun is the number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region. Oh, how many famed, brilliant ladies wants to marry him, yet were rejected by him.

"What a rare chance this is! Why must you remain so stubborn? Go convince Zi Ling, and go convince her parents as well. Tell them to be less obstinate and ruin our entire family because of that."

“Hmph.” Zi Xuanyuan fiercely glared at him, then ignored him and continued drinking the tea in his cup.

The man was not angered by Zi Xuanyuan’s actions. Instead, he continued saying, with a smile, “When things have progressed to what they have, it is unavoidable that Murong Xun will take away Zi Ling’s Divine power. Not to mention any of you, even if Zi Ling refuses, what can she do? Three years later, her everything will be Murong Xun’s.

“Rather than resisting and fighting back, causing the entire Zi family to fall, why not choose to go along and fulfill the desires of everyone from the Zi family?”

“Pah! How shameless.” Zi Xuanyuan opened his mouth, and a sticky lump of phlegm landed on the man’s face.

“Old thing, you are looking to die!” The other men were furious when they saw that, and as they spoke, they raised their hands, preparing to strike.

“Stop!” However, the man once again shouted and stopped them. Even so, strong rage was on his face, and dense killing intent even flickered in his eyes.

whoosh Suddenly, he extended his arm and grabbed Zi Xuanyuan’s clothes. He ferociously threatened, “Old thing, my grandfather is the patriarch. If I want to kill you, no one can stop me.

“However, I’ll give you a chance. Tell me the name of that trash in Zi Ling’s heart and where he is. I’ll spare your life then.”

“Hahaha...” Zi Xuanyuan roared with laughter, then looked at the young man with a gaze of ridicule. He said, “You want to know? Go ask your grandfather! Why don’t you ask him? It’s your grandfather who doesn’t dare to tell you, right?

“I’m sure he knows very well perhaps if I die, nothing will happen, but if Zi Ling dies, you will all follow her.

“And as long as anything happens to him, Zi Ling will have no desire to live. So, that’s why even your grandfather doesn’t dare to touch him! Yet

you so foolishly want to? You must have gotten tired of living!"

"Hmph. Less of that nonsense. If you don't tell me, I'll beat you until you do." The man went into a rage from the disgrace, and without saying anything more, he waved his big sleeve, forcing Zi Xuanyuan onto the ground. Then, pointing at him, he shouted, "Beat him. Beat him until he's near death."

Immediately after he finished speaking, the several young men all surrounded him. Pulling up their sleeves, they prepared to heartlessly beat Zi Xuanyuan up.

BOOOOOM But just at that moment, an explosion suddenly rang out. The prison gate constructed with special materials and reinforced with purple-coloured Spirit Formations was, at that moment, completely shattered.

At the same time, a foreign voice yet filled with bloodlust rang out outside the room as well.

"Whoever dares to even touch him, I'll kill your entire family!"

Chapter 809: Beating up the Dog of the Zi Family

Such a sudden shift in events stunned everyone from the Zi family. However, when they saw the young person who slowly walked into the prison, confidence surged back into them.

It was because the stranger before their eyes was truly too young. He didn't even seem to be close to twenty; he should have just passed puberty.

"Who are you? You dare to break into my Zi family's prison? Do you not want to live anymore?" questioned the grandson of the patriarch of the Zi family as he pointed at Chu Feng furiously. As he spoke, he even emanated his aura of a rank one Martial Lord, intentionally letting Chu Feng see how powerful he was.

"This..." However, after Zi Xuanyuan saw the person before his eyes, his expression changed greatly because he instantly recognized that the newcomer was Chu Feng.

Zi Xuanyuan panicked immediately because he knew many people from the Zi family wanted to get rid of Chu Feng. Yet, he actually came to this place. Wasn't this like a lamp jumping into a tiger's mouth?

That being said, he didn't dare to directly call out Chu Feng's name. He didn't even dare to show that he knew Chu Feng. So, he could only send a mental message in secret, "Chu Feng, why have you come here? Quickly leave! If the patriarch of the Zi family knows that you've come here, he will not let you safely leave! He will even use you to threaten Zi Ling!"

However, what made Zi Xuanyuan feel enormous helplessness was that Chu Feng acted as if he didn't hear what he just said. He simply ignored him, and instead, cast his gaze filled with bloodlust at the young men from the Zi family. Then, he suddenly extended his hand forward, and an intense suction power surged out.

"Ahh!"

A frightened shriek rang out—one of the young men at the peak of the Heaven realm was forced over by Chu Feng.

Then, after grabbing him, Chu Feng put strength into his arm and with a snapping sound, half of that person's shoulder was ripped away forcibly.

Afterwards, Chu Feng slammed down with his palm, and with a bang, he turned that person into a mist of blood.

"You! You are looking to die!" Seeing their companion killed, the people from the Zi family were outraged. Two of the young men burst out their power of the peak of the Heaven realm, and as they held an Elite Armament, they mercilessly slashed towards Chu Feng.

bang However, Chu Feng simply looked with disdain at their attacks. He stood unmoving.

When the Elite Armaments struck him, they actually shattered immediately. The people who attacked Chu Feng also spat out blood, their internal organs injured from the shock.

The people from the Zi family finally started reacting to that scene. How was the young man in front of him, who wasn't even twenty, a weak, fun-to-bully person? He was simply more like a terrifying monster!

"Ahh—"

When bursts of screams rang out, the people from the Zi family personally saw Chu Feng, with his pair of hands akin to steel clamps, first cut the two young men who attacked him into pieces. Then, they saw him pull out their Consciousnesses and forcefully refined them. After seeing all that, their legs went limp, and their bodies were trembling.

"Yo-yo-you...

"Who are you? Why have you attacked us for no reason at all? Do you not know that my Zi family is protected by the Immortal Execution Archipelago?"

At that instant, the grandson of the Zi family's patriarch quivered from

fear. He could only use the shield—the Immortal Execution Archipelago—to try and scare Chu Feng.

Even though he was a rank one Martial Lord, he could feel that Chu Feng's aura was one of a rank three Martial Lord. To have such cultivation at such age... he himself was most definitely unable to defeat Chu Feng.

Chu Feng approached the people from the Zi family bit by bit, forcing the grandson as well as the remaining young men back continuously. In the end, they were all like turtles as they were forced into a corner of the prison room, and only then did Chu Feng say, "Didn't you want to find me? Why are you scared now that I've come?"

"F-find you? Brother, are you possibly mistaken? We never wanted to find you!" The grandson of the Zi family's patriarch clearly hadn't recognized who he was.

"Yes! It's definitely a misunderstanding! Brother, there's no enmity between us! Don't completely kill us off!" At the same time, the others also hurriedly attempted to explain.

"Senior Xuanyuan, I think you should tell them who I am." Chu Feng cast his lightly squinted gaze at Zi Xuanyuan.

But in reality, he too was standing on the spot, completely frozen. He was deeply stupefied by Chu Feng's strength.

Barely a year had passed since they left the Eastern Sea Region, and at that moment, Chu Feng was still in the weak Profound realm. Yet, at present, even someone at the peak of the Heaven realm could not take a single strike from Chu Feng. They were so, so weak.

Even the grandson of the Zi family's patriarch—a rank one Martial Lord—trembled from fear. What did that mean? That meant Chu Feng's cultivation very possibly surpassed the Heaven realm, and entered the realm of Martial Lords. He had to admit that Chu Feng's speed of improvement was really too quick. So quick it surpassed his imagination.

At that instant, Zi Xuanyuan finally understood why Chu Feng so

fearlessly dared to break into this place, and why he didn't leave regardless of his warnings.

It was because Chu Feng already had a certain amount of confidence with him. At least, he was able to easily take care of the people within the prison. So, he no longer worried, and listening to Chu Feng's instructions, he said to several people from the Zi family, "Didn't all of you want to know who the person in Zi Ling's heart is? I'll tell you right now that person is called Chu Feng, and Chu Feng is standing in front of you right now."

"What? You're the person Zi Ling loves?!"

When they heard those words, the people from the Zi family were dumbfounded. Their faces were akin to ashes as they finally understood why Chu Feng immediately starting killing them on sight. It was because he had sufficient reason.

But, what they were most shocked at was that the person they looked down at and thought they could kill at any moment was actually so powerful. He not only came to the Zi family on his own accord, he even started killing them.

At that instant, they seemed to know why Zi Ling was so attached to that person. It was because the man called Chu Feng was indeed not simple at all. One could even say he was extremely horrifying.

"Spare me, spare me! We actually didn't have any malicious intents, we just wanted to see what Zi Ling's lover looked like!"

"That's right! Zi Ling is, after all, our sister. You are, in the end, our future brother-in-law! As elder brothers, naturally we want to see our future brother-in-law!

"As they say, rather than conjecturing based on rumours, why not see for yourself? So, as seen today, Brother-in-law is truly outstanding! Sister Zi Ling truly has great judgement on people; that Murong Xun simply cannot compare to you!"

Even though they already knew who Chu Feng was, they were unwilling

to die just like that. So, they quickly knelt down, and not only did they kowtow, begging for their lives, they even started fawning over Chu Feng. The grandson of the Zi family's patriarch was no exception.

But, Chu Feng had already seen their true sides. Why would he give them any chances? He extended his hand, and after several muffled explosions, the people before his eyes became mists of blood. Only the grandson alone was left alive.

"Thank you for sparing my life, thank you for sparing my life!" Seeing that Chu Feng didn't kill him, the grandson even thought Chu Feng was letting him off.

"Shut up!" But who would have expected Chu Feng to shout before sending a kick his way. After an "Ah!" of pain, not only did he completely fracture his jaw, Chu Feng kicked the grandson unconscious, into the pool of blood on the ground.

Chapter 810: End of Hardships, Beginning of Fortune

After dealing with all of them, Chu Feng looked at Zi Xuanyuan and said with some shame, “Senior Xuanyuan, I apologize. I, Chu Feng, have come late.”

“Haha, Chu Feng, I didn’t think you would have come to the Eastern Sea Region so soon, and your growth in cultivation is even so quick! Zi Ling has indeed not been mistaken. Your potential really is huge. You will surpass that Murong Xun sooner or later. Not only have you surpassed everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces, you will surpass everyone in the Eastern Sea Region soon.”

Zi Xuanyuan already liked Chu Feng quite a bit, and seeing his accomplishments in cultivation, he was even more elated and excited. From the bottom of his heart, he felt joy for Chu Feng.

“Senior Xuanyuan, I’ve heard that Zi Ling was imprisoned. Is that true?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm, that is true. Zi Ling is not the only one imprisoned. Right now, even her parents are imprisoned,” said Zi Xuanyuan, nodding.

“What’s going on? What exactly happened?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s not much. After I returned, I learnt that the patriarch of the Zi family already knew of the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s scheme. He already knew that the Immortal Execution Archipelago didn’t really want Murong Xun to marry Zi Ling, that they wanted Zi Ling’s Divine power.

“However, for his own advantages and benefits, he chose to conceal the truth. Even Zi Ling’s parents were tricked by him.

“So, I pretended to agree and support the marriage between Zi Ling and Murong Xun. After earning his trust, I laid a trap and made him announce what happened. As a result, many of the people from the Zi family learnt of the truth, including Zi Ling’s parents.

"After knowing about that, Zi Ling's parents also felt endless regret. After all, they do love Zi Ling. So, they wanted to bring Zi Ling away, but they failed." Zi Xuanyuan's face was full of pity.

"Then, senior, do you know where Zi Ling is imprisoned right now?" Chu Feng was not concerned with Zi Ling's parents; he was only concerned with Zi Ling.

"I know. She's being locked in the residence of the patriarch," Zi Xuanyuan replied.

"What cultivation does the patriarch have?" Chu Feng asked.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago has given the Zi family many things, and the patriarch has used the resources without restraint. As such, he's the one who benefited the most. Right now, his cultivation in the Zi family is also the strongest—he's a rank six Martial Lord," Zi Xuanyuan said.

"Rank six Martial Lord? Then does the Zi family have the protection of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago?" Chu Feng asked.

"There are. The Immortal Execution Archipelago has always had experts within the Zi family, but they are very covert. We have never seen them before, nor do we know what cultivation they have.

"However, something that I'm certain is that the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago have strength above the patriarch, because the Immortal Execution Archipelago doesn't trust him at all," Zi Xuanyuan said.

After obtaining that information, Chu Feng sank into thought. A rank six Martial Lord was really not enough to make him afraid—with his current cultivation, if he brought forth everything, Chu Feng could put up a fight even against a rank six Martial Lord. So, he was not afraid of the patriarch.

However, Chu Feng had no choice but to be cautious against the hidden experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Yet, since he had come here, Chu Feng could not leave empty-handedly. No matter what, he had

to give it a try.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng grabbed the unconscious grandson of the patriarch who was lying within a pool of blood. Chu Feng threw him over his shoulder, and then he said to Zi Xuanyuan, “Senior Xuanyuan, please lead the way.”

“This...” Zi Xuanyuan was no fool so he could tell what Chu Feng was planning. Initially, he wanted to urge him otherwise, but recalling his stubborn nature, he decided to remain silent and led the road.

Although, on the surface, there was not a single person from the Zi family who could stop Chu Feng, since he was slightly afraid of the hidden experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he didn’t prepare to make too big of a scene.

When he left the prison, Chu Feng intentionally concealed that place, then, without anyone knowing, snuck into the patriarch’s residence.

Although there were many mechanisms inside, they were all deactivated by Chu Feng.

“This child’s Spirit Formation techniques are this skillful? How powerful has he become?”

On the road, personally witnessing Chu Feng’s techniques, Zi Xuanyuan saw Chu Feng in another new light. He was less and less able to see how powerful Chu Feng currently was.

However, what he was certain was the child, who liked stirring up trouble everywhere in the continent of the Nine Provinces, one that he could kill with merely a thought before, had now far surpassed him.

Finally, with Zi Xuanyuan leading the way, Chu Feng successfully arrived at the place where Zi Ling and her parents were locked up at. It was an underground palace constructed deep below the surface, and there were also countless defensive Spirit Formations laid there. A typical Martial Lord should not even think of coming to that place.

However, that was not difficult for Chu Feng. After Chu Feng opened the gate reinforced with Spirit Formations, a beautiful person who he

hadn't seen in a long time once again appeared before Chu Feng.

Zi Ling—the little beauty Chu Feng thought of every single day and night. At that moment, her grace was still unchanged, and her sweet face, her elegant figure, as well as her innately unique aura overshadowed every single other woman in the world, and she was a person who many men went mad for.

Zi Ling was currently chatting with her parents, and she would have never expected Chu Feng to appear here. She thought it was the patriarch who came to visit her again, so she simply didn't even look at Chu Feng.

"Zi Ling." Only after Chu Feng spoke her name, his words a manifestation of all his internal feelings, did Zi Ling's perfect body tremble once before she quickly turning her head over, casting her gaze at Chu Feng.

When she saw Chu Feng, her eyes were widened roundly, and her quivering brows and widened mouth were all signs of the shock she felt.

She only came to her senses after a good while. She leapt forward, straight up to Chu Feng, and pounced into his embrace. She tightly hugged Chu Feng, unwilling to let go. She only said, with her sobbing voice, "Is it you? Is it you? Is it truly you? This isn't a dream, right? I'm not dreaming, right?"

At that moment, Chu Feng's heart was aching and warmed. He too opened up his arms and tightly hugged the beauty in his embrace, firmly saying, "Zi Ling, it's me. I've come to find you. I'm sorry, I've let you wait for far too long. I've let you suffer far too much."

"No, it was not long, nor have I suffered." Zi Ling raised her head, and after looking at Chu Feng with her eyes glittering with tears, she buried her head back into Chu Feng's chest, and hugged Chu Feng even tighter, as if afraid he would disappear if she were to let go.

No matter how arrogant Zi Ling was, no matter how she treated others, no matter how cold, at that very instant, in Chu Feng's embrace, she was only like an obedient little girl—Chu Feng was her everything.

“Lord Father, this…” At that instant, Zi Ling’s parents were dumbfounded. They didn’t know what to do about Chu Feng’s sudden arrival.

“Shh.” However, Zi Xuanyuan indicated to them to remain silent. Then, he sent a mental message at them, “Let them enjoy this moment. These two have suffered for far too long.”

Chapter 811: Surrounded

Within the underground palace, Chu Feng and Zi Ling were hugging each other, both of them silent. They just continued like that, as if doing so forever wouldn't be enough. They didn't even let each other go after a full hour.

At that instant, Zi Xuanyuan, who initially wanted to let them have their sweet time, couldn't take it any longer and finally said, "Chu Feng, let's quickly leave since we haven't been discovered yet."

"Yeah, let's quickly leave this place first!"

Zi Ling's parents also urged them. When Zi Ling and Chu Feng were embracing each other, Zi Xuanyuan sent mental messages to them and had already narrated the course of events that had happened regarding how he and Chu Feng arrived here. Zi Ling's parents already knew that Chu Feng had come to save them.

Even though Zi Ling's parents didn't dare to believe that Chu Feng's cultivation had increased by such an enormous amount in such a short period of time, when it was so openly displayed before them, they didn't have a choice to disbelieve.

"Senior Xuanyuan, we've actually already been discovered," Chu Feng said with an indifferent smile as he released Zi Ling.

"What? We've already been discovered?" Not to mention Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling's parents, even Zi Ling herself was shocked.

"Starting from the very first Spirit Formation in the underground palace, as long as it is deactivated, the person who laid the formation would know. So, when we entered, we were already surrounded." As Chu Feng spoke, he cast his gaze behind and shouted, "Come out. Don't remain sneaky."

"Hahaha, you're a bit skillful. You've already discovered us, huh?"

At that moment, within the vast underground palace's passages, an aged laughter suddenly rang out. At the same time, the air squirmed and

a Concealment Spirit Formation gradually deactivated. Within it were several hundred people.

There were males, females, old, and young. Of those people, there were almost a hundred Martial Lords, and the rest were all in the Heaven realm. They were all a part of the Zi family, and the leader of them all was none other than the patriarch of the Zi family, Zi Dingkong.

"I've forgotten to introduce him to everyone. This brat here is her friend from the continent of the Nine Provinces, the fool who wants to take Zi Ling away from young master Murong Xun," the patriarch explained to the crowd behind him with a light smile.

"So he's that damn brat. Such arrogance of him to want to marry her. You think you're qualified to fight over our Zi Ling against young master Murong Xun?"

After hearing the patriarch's words, the crowd of the Zi family, regardless of gender or age, started mocking him. From their cold faces, one could tell that they were not only the dogs of the Zi family's patriarch, they were also Murong Xun's dogs.

"All of you, shut up! I only belong to Chu Feng. Murong Xun should not even think of getting his hands on me." Zi Ling was enraged when she heard the crowd ridicule Chu Feng. She shouted and pointed at them.

"Zi Ling, don't be stubborn, remain on the wrong path, and be tricked by this brat. What virtue or abilities does he have? He's simply unworthy to be together with you."

"Yeah! Ling'er, you must widen your eyes and not be fooled by his false act! The perfect match for you is only with young master Murong Xun!" urged the people from the Zi family. They did treat Zi Ling rather politely.

"Shut up! Don't put me together with that Murong Xun. I will absolutely not be with him," Zi Ling shouted again. Fury filled her beautiful face.

"Ahh, Zi Ling, you haven't seen young master Murong Xun yet. If you have, you will know that this brat here is no more than an ordinary

person who could not be more ordinary. There are simply innumerable people like him in the Eastern Sea Region. Only the young master is a peerless genius, and only he is worthy for you.

"Zi Ling, don't worry. The young master has already notified us. In a few days, after he finishes the business he has, he will come here and visit you. At that time, you will know how excellent your fiancé is." As if the people from the Zi family couldn't understand Zi Ling's words, they unceasingly praised Murong Xun.

"All of you..." Zi Ling's brows furrowed even more from anger. Her face was flushed, and if she had sufficient strength, she would have killed all of the disgusting family members with a single strike.

"Zi Ling, don't argue with this group of animals. Hand this over to me." Finally, Chu Feng spoke. And after hearing Chu Feng's words, Zi Ling obediently nodded, and backed away. She stood together with her parents and grandfather.

bang Suddenly, Chu Feng stamped down, instantly snapping one of the legs of the patriarch's grandson.

"AHH—" He was initially unconscious, but the pain of his snapped leg immediately woke him up. First, he wailed, but after he saw the people from the Zi family, his complexion turned to joy and he loudly shouted, "Father, mother, grandfather, help me!"

"Kun'er!" At that moment, a middle-aged husband and wife changed their expressions greatly. As they cried out, they rushed towards Chu Feng and wanted to save the grandson of the patriarch, Zi Kun. Judging by their heartbroken expressions, they were most likely Zi Kun's parents.

"If you dare to come any closer, I'll stomp his head flat." But Chu Feng did not give them that chance. Before they neared, a foot was placed on his face.

"Don't!" Zi Kun's parents immediately stopped moving, not daring to do anything hasty. Instead, they cast their begging gazes at the patriarch.

"Hoh, you want to threaten me with my grandson, then bring Zi Ling

away?" In comparison to Zi Kun's parents, however, the patriarch of the Zi family wasn't too worried about his own grandson. Rather, in his eyes, there was a hint of disdain—it was disdain that looked down on Chu Feng completely. Even though Chu Feng's change in cultivation made him feel greatly shocked, in his eyes, Chu Feng wasn't even a threat.

"You've guessed correctly. If you want to keep your grandson's life, you better leave right now. Otherwise, I'll stamp his head open," Chu Feng said with a sneer. Even though he was currently surrounded by the experts of the Zi family, Chu Feng's expression was very calm.

The people from the Zi family had never put Chu Feng in their eyes, but when had Chu Feng ever put them in his eyes?

"Haha, what a joke. With your cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, you want to threaten me?" Suddenly, the patriarch of the Zi family coldly smiled. As he spoke, his brows slanted even more inwards, and an invisible shock wave burst out from his body.

He attacked. With no more than thought, he emanated his unique pressure of a rank six Martial Lord. Like an invisible wave, it pressed itself towards Chu Feng with an unbelievable speed. He wanted to suppress Chu Feng by surprise, and thus save his grandson.

But, he had still underestimated Chu Feng. Chu Feng coldly snorted, raised his hand slightly, and with a casual wave, he shattered the patriarch's attack entirely with a boom.

"Since you want your grandson to die, I'll grant you that wish."

Immediately after, Chu Feng shifted his foot slightly on Zi Kun's head, then pushed down. Blood gushed out in large amounts—half of Zi Kun's head was pressed flat.

"AHH—" At that instant, akin to a pig being butchered, the scream coming from Zi Kun's mouth reverberated within the entire underground palace.

Chapter 812: Battle Through Levels

Chu Feng's stamp appeared to be brutal, but in reality, the angle his foot pushed down at was just right. He destroyed half of Zi Kun's brain, but it was not enough to kill him. At least, his physical body could still be recovered. Chu Feng wanted to use Zi Kun's current horrid state to agitate the emotions of the Zi family.

"Lord Father, let them go! Otherwise, this animal will definitely kill Kun'er!" Seeing half of their son's brain flattened, the hearts of Zi Kun's parents ached so much tears streamed down their faces. They hurriedly asked the patriarch for help.

"Shut up! Although Kun'er's life is important, it is not as important as my Zi family.

"Kun'er, don't worry. You've made a sacrifice for the entire Zi family. I will definitely avenge you." The patriarch bit down on his teeth, then, ignoring Zi Kun's life, waved his sleeve. Layers of Martial power surged, and once again, he started initiating a horrifying attack towards Chu Feng.

"Heh, Zi Kun, it's not that I'm giving you no chance, but it's just that your grandfather really wants your life. Go, fulfill his wish."

As he looked at the attack several times more powerful than before, Chu Feng appeared as if he expected it. He made a strange grin, then, raising his leg, he kicked Zi Kun high up into the air, straight towards the swirling attack of Martial power sent by the patriarch.

"Father, don't!" Zi Kun's parents quickly shouted to stop him.

"Dammit!" The patriarch never expected Chu Feng would use his own grandson as a shield. Although he already prepared to let Zi Kun be a sacrifice, he wasn't prepared to personally murder his own grandson.

So, seeing as things were progressing poorly, the patriarch quickly attempted to retract his attack. However, Chu Feng's kick had quite sufficient strength. Before he was able to successfully retract his attack,

Zi Kun had already entered his vortex of Martial power.

"AHH—"

Finally, under the gazes of the crowd, the grandson of the patriarch of the Zi family, Zi Kun, was torn into pieces by the Martial power of the patriarch himself. Not to mention flesh, there lacked even the slightest sign of Consciousness and Source Energy. Even all of his blood evaporated.

"I will have you wish you were dead!"

When his grandson was killed by his own hands, the patriarch was successfully enraged because of Chu Feng. He stopped retracting his strength, and instead, increased the power of his attack. An initial normal attack of Martial power suddenly transformed in the air, becoming a fierce, enormous mouth of flames. It widened and aimed to engulf Chu Feng.

The level of that martial skill was not high, but with the channeling of power by a Martial Lord, it was extremely terrifying. When the flames appeared, the walls of the underground palace immediately turned fiery-red, as if it too could burn anything. Even the air emitted layers of heat, and even though it wasn't even close to them, Zi Ling and the others all felt the unblockable heat wave as they endlessly backed away.

whoosh Seeing that, Chu Feng hurriedly waved his big sleeve, laying two barriers in front of Zi Ling and the others. One was an indestructible Spirit Formation, the other was the power of a rank three Martial Lord. Using them, he protected the safety of Zi Ling and the others.

After doing all that, Chu Feng gestured a spell with his left hand, and punched with his right. With the surging of Martial power, it became a huge wave that could touch the skies. As it rolled forward in the air, it was akin to a boundless ocean. Its might was not only frightening, the power it contained was very fierce as well.

It was a rank eight martial skill. When Chu Feng was robbing the resources of others, he obtained it. The reason he cultivated it was for a moment like this.

boom rumble rumble A huge explosion rang out. The flames and the wave collided into one another, and the power of two different essential types started stirring up chaos in the air. Finally, the power of the attacks from both the patriarch and Chu Feng were actually even as they both canceled each other out.

That scene had really shocked the people from the Zi family. Not only them, even Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling's parents were shocked as well.

They truly did not expect Chu Feng to be able to hold up his own against the patriarch of the Zi family. After all, he had said it before: Chu Feng was only a rank three Martial Lord. A rank three Martial Lord fighting on a par with a rank six Martial Lord... that was a nearly impossible thing.

"How is this brat so strong? He was actually able to cancel the patriarch's martial skill attack?!" In comparison to Zi Xuanyuan and the others, the people from the Zi family on the other side felt even greater disbelief. They were deeply astonished by Chu Feng's frightening fighting strength.

At that instant, only Zi Ling was the calmest one. There was not even a hint of surprise on her beautiful face—there was only joy. It was because she never had doubted Chu Feng's power, nor did she ever doubt Chu Feng's fighting strength. She knew Chu Feng was a genius; everything was within expectations. So, she only felt happy for Chu Feng's current achievements, because the stronger he was, the happier she was.

"No matter what method you used to raise your fighting strength, I will use my power to prove the difference between you and I. Even if you have daunting aptitude, it will not be able to compensate for the span of three ranks."

When Chu Feng cancelled his attacks again and again, the already furious patriarch was a bit mad. As he spoke, he threw one fierce martial skill after the other endlessly at Chu Feng. Judging by the strength of the skills, he no longer seemed to aim to capture Chu Feng alive, but more to completely destroy him.

In a situation like that, even Chu Feng couldn't help but frown a bit. He didn't dare to have any traces of carelessness. No matter what, the patriarch was still a rank six Martial Lord. That had already surpassed Chu Feng's typical range of fighting, but at that moment, he still wanted to challenge his limit.

"Hehe, Chu Feng, since you're not planning to use the Royal Armament, do you want me to help you?" said Eggy gigglingly, who was always in Chu Feng's body. Seeing such shameless people from the Zi family, even the queen started being impatient, and her hands started getting itchy from intolerance.

"No need. Although he's a rank six Martial Lord, his cultivation was obtained by relying on large amounts of cultivation resources entirely. In comparison to Martial Lords of the same level, his fighting strength belongs to the weakest type. I can take this chance to test myself to see if my current fighting abilities is enough for a rank six Martial Lord."

So, even though he did feel a certain amount of pressure, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, he leapt forward and starting attacking the patriarch.

boom boom boom

In an instant, the two were in a chaotic mess. Bursts of shock waves reverberated in the air, and even though the underground palace was made with special materials and reinforced by special Spirit Formations, it was unable to resist the remnants of the two's attacks. In a blink, the underground palace was broken into pieces. From deep underground, they fought onto the surface, then into the air.

Although there weren't really many people in the Zi family, there were still several thousand. As for the experts that served the Zi family, there were several tens of thousands. As for the guests who were in the Zi family, there were countless. There were even some people who admired the fame of the Zi family and stayed outside the Flower Valley since they were unable to become guests in the Zi family.

At that moment, when it was silent and deep into the night, bursts of explosions suddenly rang out. The pitch-black sky suddenly turned into

the blinding day. That naturally attracted everyone's attention. In an instant, everyone inside and outside the Flower Valley raised their heads and looked at the frightening battle in the sky.

The battle of Martial Lords was quite huge, especially when it was the level of Chu Feng and the patriarch of the Zi family. As they exchanged blows, the battle became fiercer and fiercer. Even people several thousand miles away were shocked by their battle, and peak experts from all sorts of areas were heading over with quick speed to determine what exactly was happening.

Chapter 813: Inexperienced

"Heavens! Isn't that the patriarch of the Zi family? To have created such an intense scene... Who is he fighting against?"

"That can't be, can it? It's such a young man? Judging by his appearance, he should still be a teenager, right? Even if he's not, he's definitely under twenty years old."

"Where did a monster like him come from? At such an age, he's already a rank three Martial Lord, and he's even able to fight evenly against the patriarch of the Zi family, a rank six Martial Lord! That doesn't make any sense at all, right?"

When they saw who was fighting who, and noticed Chu Feng's appearance and age, not a single one of them wasn't shocked. All of they were stupefied by Chu Feng's fighting abilities, and some even called him a "monster" immediately.

Although Chu Feng felt immense pressure when facing the patriarch of the Zi family, which made him not dare to be careless, Chu Feng used sharp detection power, the observation strength of the Heaven's Eyes, and his absolute control over all sorts of martial skills to compensate for his deficiency in cultivation. The battle between the two was immense, and if that continued, the outcome would truly be difficult to determine.

"Dammit! What is with this brat? Putting aside his sudden burst in cultivation, even his fighting strength is this odd! Am I actually unable to defeat him? Could he truly be a monster?" Although Chu Feng felt pressured, the pressure the patriarch felt was clearly even greater.

It was not only pressure in terms of strength, it was also mental pressure. At that moment, the battle between the two had already attracted the attention of many. If it were only the people from the Zi family, then it wouldn't be such a big deal; however, within the Zi family, there were also guests from all sorts of areas.

Before so many distinguished guests, he actually had to spend so much time fighting a brat—a rank three Martial Lord—yet he was still unable to

obtain victory. That truly made him lose face... it made him lose all face.

After all, the difference between the ranks of Martial Lords was not insignificant. To be able to defeat a person whose cultivation was one level above meant he was already a rare genius. To be able to defeat a person whose cultivation was three levels was something unprecedented, and something that people in the future would unlikely be able to achieve.

In a situation like this, they would not only praise Chu Feng's overwhelming fighting strength and that he was a genius, they would even say that his, the patriarch's, own fighting strength was too weak, unworthy of being a rank six Martial Lord.

Not only would it help Chu Feng, it would harm himself.

"This young man is too powerful. Where did he come from? Why haven't I heard of this name before?"

"Recently, in the Eastern Sea Region, there has been a genius whose fighting strength is also overwhelming. His cultivation is rather close to this young man as well."

"You're talking about Wuqing, who captured several thousand Martial Markings on the Misty Peak?"

"Yeah! Other than him, who else could it be?"

"He wouldn't be him, right? I heard that even though Wuqing's aptitude is exceptional, he's already over twenty years old. This young man is clearly younger than that Wuqing!"

"That's right! No matter how much that Wuqing is said to be strong, they are no more than rumours. This young man, however, has shown his strength right before our eyes. From what I see, he is possibly even more powerful than Wuqing!"

"This is so unbelievable. There's actually such a powerful person in this world! From what I know, even the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region, Murong Xun, doesn't have the strength to fight someone three ranks above him."

As they were looking at the rare frightening battle, what everyone was concerned with more was Chu Feng's identity. After all, the fighting strength he showed was truly outrageous. Everyone wanted to know where the master of such an outstanding young man came from and what their name was. Because, they seemed to have a premonition that the young man before their eyes would become a peak character in the future within the Eastern Sea Region.

"I've got it! His name is Chu Feng, and the reason he is stirring up trouble here is for Murong Xun's fiancée! He wants to take away Zi Ling!" Suddenly, a Martial Lord excitedly shouted. He found Chu Feng's name from the higher-echelons of the Zi family.

"What? He's here to take Zi Ling away? Isn't he too daring? There's someone who dares to touch Murong Xun's fiancée? Isn't he clearly making the Immortal Execution Archipelago an enemy?" After knowing Chu Feng's goal here, they were even more shocked.

The battle continued, and both Chu Feng and the patriarch of the Zi family took out their Elite Armaments. Their fighting strength thus gradually rose, and their might spread throughout the sky and the earth. If it weren't for the shielding from the experts of the Zi family, the remnants of their attacks alone were enough to flatten the Zi family. It would even be able to make holes everywhere in the Flower Valley and put it into a horrid state.

"People from the Zi family, listen up! I, Chu Feng, have come here to take away Zi Ling. No matter who it is, those who block me will die!" Chu Feng knew after today, his name would spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region. So, he no longer concealed his own name and just let everyone know what his name was and what his goal here was.

When things progressed to what they have, Chu Feng carried the intention to die if he failed. He swore to bring Zi Ling away because he knew if he failed this time, then it would be immensely difficult in the future to try again. Perhaps with Murong Xun's fierce and selfish nature, after knowing the relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling, he would even harm Zi Ling—that was not an impossibility.

So, as he fought the patriarch of the Zi family, he kept on sending out attacks towards the Zi family itself. With Chu Feng's fighting strength, if he wanted to harm someone, other than the patriarch himself, there was simply no one who could defend themselves in the Zi family.

boom boom boom boom In an instant, the carefully constructed vast palaces of the Zi family started collapsing one after the other. There were even some people from the Zi family affected by it and died within.

"What ruthless methods. It seems that this young man called Chu Feng truly possess malicious intentions coming here. He wouldn't truly want to take Zi Ling away and eradicate the Zi family as well, right?"

Seeing that Chu Feng started to attack the people from the Zi family, and that the patriarch could do nothing about it, some people started to feel that perhaps the patriarch could do nothing to Chu Feng either. Likely, today, the Zi family was in grave danger.

"You little scoundrel! Seeing that you're young and ignorant, I chose to tolerate your actions and avoid killing you. Yet, now you so spitefully kill my family. Today, I will personally kill you."

The patriarch had exchanged blows with Chu Feng for quite a while yet was unable to occupy the advantage. He felt he had no more face, so he could only find an excuse. And, since he declared to the crowd he would personally kill Chu Feng, he would have to immediately take out a weapon—a trump card—to kill Chu Feng in front of the crowd. Otherwise, he would not be able to convince the crowd and he would have thoroughly disgraced himself.

So, with the flashing of light from the patriarch's wrist, a jade-green longsword appeared.

When it did, the patriarch's entire demeanor became completely different. His strength actually rose by several times, and it was all because of the jade-green longsword in his hand, which seemed as if it were made by a thousand years of bone-biting cold and rare jade.

"This aura... It's an Incomplete Royal Armament! There's no mistake, it's definitely an Incomplete Royal Armament!"

“Heavens! How precious is an Incomplete Royal Armament! How many peak Martial Lords are unable to obtain an Incomplete Royal Armament with their life’s savings? Yet, this patriarch of the Zi family, with the cultivation of only a rank six Martial Lord, now possesses an Incomplete Royal Armament?”

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago! It must have been given to him by the Immortal Execution Archipelago! However, why does the Incomplete Royal Armament in the patriarch’s hand seem more for a female?”

When he took out his Incomplete Royal Armament, it immediately made a commotion because Incomplete Royal Armaments were truly too precious. Unless it were a peak genius of a peak power, it would be impossible for someone to possess an Incomplete Royal Armament being at a realm such as rank six Martial Lord. That was truly a rare scene to see in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

“Damned old bastard. This Incomplete Royal Armament was clearly a gift the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent to Ling’er, yet he took it as his own!” Zi Ling’s mother cursed furiously when she saw the exquisite jade-green longsword.

“Hahaha, you poor brat from the mountains, do you know what this is? You must have never seen something like this before, right?

“Today, I’ll let you die at an appropriate place. Before death, I’ll widen your horizons. In this world, the strongest weapon is called Incomplete Royal Armaments! In comparison to my Incomplete Royal Armament, your Elite Armament is like a piece of garbage!”

Holding the sword, and hearing the words of praise from the crowd, the patriarch instantly felt all face return to him. At the same time, he also started having confidence and boasted at Chu Feng.

“Hohoh...” However, Chu Feng indifferently smiled at the patriarch’s flaunting.

“What are you laughing at?” The patriarch was enraged when he saw that. He originally thought Chu Feng would tremble in fright from his

Incomplete Royal Armament, but he didn't expect him to remain so calm, and even return such a disdainful smile. How could he tolerate that? Even his organs were about to explode from anger.

"Yeah! What is he laughing at? He wouldn't fail to recognize this Incomplete Royal Armament, and don't know how powerful it is, right?" In reality, it was not only the patriarch who was confused. Every other observer was puzzled as well.

As he faced the crowd's dazed gazes, Chu Feng calmly spoke. He said, "I'm laughing at you, who's like a frog at the bottom of a well, inexperienced at the matters of the world."

Chapter 814: Might of the Royal Armament

"Arrogant brat, you dare say I'm inexperienced? The salt I've eaten is more than the rice you've eaten. The bridges I've walked across are more than the roads you've walked."

Initially, he wanted to flaunt his Incomplete Royal Armament to Chu Feng, but what he didn't expect to obtain from Chu Feng was disdain and humiliation. That really pulled the patriarch's last straw. His smug face instantly turned blue from anger.

"It's only an Incomplete Royal Armament, yet you call it the strongest weapon? Then where would you place Royal Armaments? Is this not ignorance? Is this not inexperience? Everyone, you comment on this logic." Chu Feng face was full of disdain, and his gaze was as if he were looking at a bumpkin.

"He's correct! Although Incomplete Royal Armaments are strong, they are only imitations. Royal Armament are the strongest weapons in this world. Before one, Incomplete Royal Armaments are indeed nothing." Indeed, after Chu Feng spoke, there were many who agreed with him.

And when he saw the observers discuss in whispers endlessly, the patriarch's face turned even more unsightly. Even his mouth couldn't help twitching, and he could only defend himself in a cold tone, "What do you know? Although Royal Armaments are powerful, there are only so many in the Eastern Sea Region. Besides, the might of a Royal Armament isn't something a brat like you can witness. To you, Incomplete Royal Armaments are the strongest weapons, enough to completely turn you into dust."

After speaking, the patriarch didn't waste any more of his breath and with the flick of the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he started attacking Chu Feng. He prepared to immediately kill him, not giving him any chance whatsoever.

When things had progressed to the way they did, he had to admit that he underestimated the brat in front of his eyes. The boy, who came from the tiny place called the continent of the Nine Provinces, who he could have also easily disintegrated into dust, now became an extremely troublesome figure. He could not be left alive to cause more troubles in the future.

whoosh bzbzbz

When he waved his sword, Martial power immediately surrounded it, as if all the Martial power in the vicinity were available for him to use. It formed a destructive sword of energy, and as the jade-green sword of energy pierced through the air, layers and layers of frost that could freeze everything started materializing in the air. In the places it passed, not an inch of grass survived. Even space itself was frozen by it, and everyone could feel its unstoppable might. The Incomplete Royal Armament was indeed very powerful.

“This isn’t good.”

Feeling such terrifying power, Zi Xuanyuan and Zi Ling’s parents all couldn’t help breathing in deeply. They all broke out in a cold sweat for Chu Feng.

Even Zi Ling lightly knitted her brows. On her beautiful face, there was a grave expression. Within her tightly clenched right hand, there was already a sharp dagger. She had initially planned to threaten the patriarch with her life when Chu Feng in peril, but when she saw Chu Feng’s fearless expression, she didn’t do that because from her understanding of Chu Feng, she felt he should have a way of dealing with it.

However, the attack from the patriarch was really too terrifying. So, she also wanted to know what method Chu Feng had to defend against that. As she looked forward to it, she couldn’t help murmuring, “Chu Feng, how powerful have you become now?”

Zi Ling believed in Chu Feng, but that did not mean others believed in him. At that very instant, almost everyone on scene felt Chu Feng was

undoubtedly dead. At least, there was not a single person there who could defend against the attack that the patriarch sent Chu Feng.

However, Chu Feng had already made a hint of a derisive sneer. When everything had progressed to its present state, he felt that the confrontation between him and the patriarch had reached the end. It was time to finish everything. So, he shouted, "I said you were ignorant yet you didn't accept it. That's fine. Today, I'll make an exception and widen your horizon. I'll let you know what a true Royal Armament is."

hmm After speaking, Chu Feng flipped his palm, and a silver-coloured spear then appeared within.

wuuaooo When the spear appeared, a furious roar permeated the sky. No matter in the air or on the ground, everything trembled.

It didn't matter if they were standing on the earth, or standing in the sky. Every single person was blown left and right, and some even fell down. The patriarch of the Zi family himself even lost his footing immediately due to the unstoppable might.

"What a terrifying sound! What is it? It's like the roar of a dragon!" Such a change made everyone on scene shocked. However, they soon understood what exactly happened.

boom rumble rumble rumble When the Royal Armament appeared, who could compete against it? After the Silver Dragon Spear appeared, not only did the might sweep throughout that area, even the sky changed colour.

In a mere instant, the sun nor moon emitted any light. The stars turned dim. Everything sank into darkness, and dense black cloud rolled over, into the sky. Thick snakes of lightning started slithering around in the air.

And everything of everything surrounded Chu Feng. In the sky, there was no moon. Other than the slithering snakes of lightning, the only thing that everyone could clearly see was one person—Chu Feng, who stood in the air.

Chu Feng's long hair and clothes fluttered. With the silver-coloured

spear in hand, he stood on the spot, as if he were a king that ruled over the world, one that none could contest against.

"Heavens! This might... how is it so terrifying!" The change before their eyes stupefied many people from fear. Even though they had some experience in the world, and had seen quite a few things, they had never seen such a terrifying atmosphere. They were truly deeply stunned by that.

"This might... it can't be mistaken. It's a Royal Armament! The thing in Chu Feng's hand is a Royal Armament!" However, within the crowd, there would always be one or two who had seen something like this. So, very soon, someone confirmed that the reason why Chu Feng had such might around him was all because of the silver-coloured spear in his hand. And, the only thing such a majestic weapon could be was a Royal Armament.

"What? Royal Armament? This brat has a Royal Armament? How is this possible? How is this possible?!" When he heard those words, the person who could not accept that the most was naturally the patriarch of the Zi family.

Standing in the air, he couldn't help taking several steps back. He was already in deep shock by the might Chu Feng showed because he, who held the Incomplete Royal Armament, could clearly feel it violently trembling in his hand at that very moment.

It was akin to a mouse seeing a wild cat; it was akin to a sheep seeing a hungry wolf; it was akin to a wild boar seeing a fierce tiger. The fear and terror from deep itself had been displayed completely, affecting even its master. He, at that moment, no longer had any strength to fight.

"It's a Royal Armament, it is definitely a Royal Armament! That unique, bewildering might of a ruler belongs to only a Royal Armament!" Within the disbelieving cries in the crowd, there were more and more people who confirmed that the thing in Chu Feng's hand was a Royal Armament.

However, when a white-haired old man with glittering eyes—a rank five Martial Lord—spoke with a shocking tone, almost everyone in the entire Flower Valley was stunned.

“I know who this person is! I know who Chu Feng is! He is the genius who shocked the entire Eastern Sea Region, the one who captured six thousand Martial Markings in the Misty Peak, the monster who crippled the son of the Second Immortal in the Depraved Ravine, Wuqing!”

Chapter 815: I Am Called Chu Feng

"What? What did you say? You said he's Wuqing?

"Senior, you can't say whatever you want to say! Although this Chu Feng does have powerful fighting strength, and his techniques are outstanding as well, there seems to be some conflicts between his appearance and Wuqing's, judging by the rumours. Do you have proof for your words?" The white-haired old man's words shocked everywhere, but also led them into doubt.

That was for no other reason but because Wuqing's name was famous. Currently, in the Eastern Sea Region, everyone knew that there was a genius called Wuqing who appeared in the Eastern Sea Region, coming from the Misty Peak's Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

At that moment, there was a never-ending stream of rumours regarding Wuqing. There were all sorts of things said from those rumours, but something undeniable was that Wuqing had already been titled as an existence that would be compared to Murong Xun in the future.

Although there were many people who hadn't seen Wuqing before, that name had been raised to a very high level. It would not even be outrageous to call him to be a legendary person.

And, when the so-called legendary person appeared before their eyes, it would always make people feel as if they were in a dream. They would feel it was not real, and they themselves wouldn't even believe it was real.

"Hmph. I just came back from the Depraved Ravine, and witnessed the great battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"During the battle, the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had taken out a Royal Armament, but later on, the Royal Armament was seized away by Wuqing.

"Moreover, I personally saw Wuqing Mastering the Royal Armament. It was initially Murong Xun's Royal Armament, but not only did it approve

Chu Feng as its master, the state of Absolute Submission, from the legends, also appeared.

"Do any of you know what Absolute Submission is?" The old man swept his proud gaze over the crowd.

At that moment, they were already frozen. They were deeply stupefied by the old man's words, and when they saw his gaze sweep over them, they all shook their heads. With their experiences, how could they have heard of Absolute Submission?

After seeing the crowd's unknowing reply, the white-haired old man breathed through his nose, his attitude becoming even more arrogant. He said quite smugly, "Looking at all of you, it seems that no one knows. Today, I'll explain this to you and teach you something.

"Royal Armaments are aware, so their process of approving one as a master is different from Elite Armaments. The most typical Mastering is actually only a cooperative relationship.

"That means if a person has successfully been approved by the Royal Armament, it will lend its power to its master, and at the same time, it will fill itself with its master's power. If, one day, the master dies, or if their connection is forcibly severed, then the Royal Armament would break that cooperative relationship and regain freedom. It would then be able to choose another master.

"However, Royal Armaments have another method of Mastering, which is Absolute Submission. This Absolute Submission is when a Royal Armament is truly, sincerely, willing to serve its master. It will live and die as its master lives and dies. For the rest of its lifespan, it can only have that one master.

"No one can take it away from its master. Even if it is, it would not serve others. If its master dies, it will disappear along with them.

"This Absolute Submission exists only in legends. There has never been a person in the Eastern Sea Region who was able to make a Royal Armament into a state of Absolute Submission. No matter if it's the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect which shocked the Eastern Sea

Region, or the genius of the Burning Heaven Church, Huangfu Haoyue, none of them were able to make their Royal Armament into a state of Absolute Submission. Even the current head of the Immortal Execution Archipelago cannot.

"But Wuqing has done it. Back then, those who were in the Depraved Ravine all personally saw this shocking scene. I'm sure this will spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region soon, and at that time, you will all know whether what I said was true or false.

"Right now, no matter might or shape, the Royal Armament this Chu Feng brandishes is the exact same as the Royal Armament Wuqing took away from Murong Xun. So, I determine that this person must be Wuqing. Otherwise, it's impossible for him to use this Royal Armament."

The white-haired old man's words were quite logical. Moreover, they were spoken very loudly, letting everyone inside and outside the Flower Valley hear them clearly.

Moreover, his words were akin to a thunder in a clear sky. No matter if it was the people from the Zi family, or outsiders, all of them were shocked.

Putting aside what happened to the battle between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago in the Depraved Ravine, Wuqing taking away Murong Xun's Royal Armament and making it in Absolute Submission was enough to completely shock them. Because, if it were true, then it would truly be too shocking.

Before, everyone was even taking Wuqing and comparing him with Murong Xun. They all felt that the two were rare geniuses, and that Wuqing, in the future, would possibly become Murong Xun's greatest opponent.

However, if the old man's words were true, didn't that mean Wuqing had already surpassed Murong Xun? Otherwise, how would he have gotten the Royal Armament from Murong Xun's hands?

Then again, what cultivation did Murong Xun have? Everyone knew he was a rank eight Martial Lord, but what about Wuqing? Even if the Chu

Feng before their eyes was Wuqing, he was at most a rank three Martial Lord. A rank three Martial Lord defeating a rank eight Martial Lord... that was simply an impossible feat!

In an instant, all sorts of shocked expressions and questions echoed inside and outside the Flower Valley. Something certain, however, was that everyone was thoroughly shocked by the white-haired old man's words.

"If I may dare ask, the young man who is fighting the patriarch of the Zi family, are you truly that Lord Wuqing?" Being confused, some fearless curious person actually asked Chu Feng directly. Moreover, he had a very respectful attitude, not daring to offend him in the slightest.

When he spoke, almost the entire Flower Valley went silent. Almost everyone went quiet and stopped breathing. They looked towards Chu Feng, awaiting his answer. Even the people from the Zi family were no exception, because the question of whether Chu Feng was Wuqing was really too important.

Due to everything that had occurred, Chu Feng already prepared to announce the truth. So, he didn't bother hiding it anymore. He calmly smiled, then covered his face with his sleeve. After putting it back down, his face had greatly changed. He became a young man roughly twenty years old—that appearance was the exact same as Wuqing's.

After changing his appearance, Chu Feng smiled and looked at the white-haired old man, then said, "Senior, do you recognize me?"

"I do, I do! You're Wuqing, this is Wuqing true appearance! Everyone, quickly look! This is Wuqing's appearance! This Chu Feng is indeed Wuqing!" Seeing that Chu Feng was actually talking to him, the white-haired old man was endlessly excited, as if it was some glorious event.

"What? This is Wuqing? He changed his appearance! Doesn't this mean he is truly Wuqing?!" At that instant, bursts of yells started ringing inside and outside the Flower Valley. Putting aside his changed appearance, his conversation with the old man already represented everything.

"No." However, just at that moment, Chu Feng calmly smiled. Then, his

sleeve covered his face again, and he returned to his actual face of Chu Feng. Only then did he say, “I am Wuqing, and I am also Chu Feng. However, Chu Feng is not Wuqing. Wuqing is Chu Feng.

“I don’t mind telling everyone one thing. The Wuqing on the Misty Peak is indeed me, and the Wuqing in the Depraved Ravine is also me.

“However, Wuqing is only a fake name I made up; I didn’t think everyone would pay so much attention to me. With how things have progressed, I cannot bear tricking everyone any longer. Actually, Chu Feng is my real name, and the current me is the real me. I... I am called Chu Feng.”

Chapter 816: You Think You Can Stop Me

"Huaaa—"

When those words were spoken, it naturally stunned everyone because they had now clearly confirmed his identity. Moreover, it also announced to the crowd a surprising truth.

Wuqing was originally Chu Feng, and the actual age of this exceptional genius was even younger than the fake identity! That also meant this genius was even more powerful than they had all expected. His cultivation aptitude was simply incomparable.

"He's actually that Wuqing! This..."

At that instant, when the outsiders heard that truth, they were shocked. When they looked at Chu Feng, their eyes contained a bit more admiration and respect.

However, when the people from the Zi family heard that truth, they were terrified. After all, their Zi family was a family that had some fame in the Eastern Sea Region. Moreover, there were many people who visited them, and as such, they had very up-to-date news about the world. So naturally, the matters of the Eastern Sea Region were known as well as their own fingers.

Thus, the Zi family had already heard of Wuqing and the rumours surrounding him. Although they didn't feel that he was equal to Murong Xun, they couldn't deny that Wuqing was indeed a genius.

There were even a few young people in the Zi family who viewed Wuqing as an idol. Some young women, who hadn't even seen Wuqing, felt adoration towards him, taking him as a lover in their dreams.

Even the seniors of the Zi family were forced to consider Wuqing's existence with importance, and even the patriarch of the Zi family personally made an order, telling the people from the Zi family that, regardless of the relationship between Wuqing and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they themselves could not offend Wuqing.

But now, but right before their eyes, but at this very instant...

Chu Feng, who was an eternal enemy to their Zi family, was actually Wuqing, whose name was known throughout the Eastern Sea Region, an existence which the Zi family feared. How could they bear such significant news? How could they accept such significant news? How should they even face such significant news...

Fear—an indescribable fear spread throughout the Zi family. No matter who it was, they could not fight back the fear. Even though their Zi family had the protection of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, at that moment, they still felt infinite uneasiness.

The reason for that was because everyone knew the reason why Wuqing's name could spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region was not only due to his personal aptitude, it was also due to his mysterious background.

Even Lady Qiushui, the Martial King, and Lady Piaomiao, such an influential person, announced they were protecting Wuqing, and regarding his mysterious master... who knew what sort of person he was.

However, what they did know was Wuqing's background represented something extremely horrifying.

So, the Zi family knew very well they could not afford to offend Wuqing, but no matter what, they didn't think that, from the very start, they had already offended this monster-like existence. Today, it seemed a disaster was heading their way.

"What's this now? Patriarch of the Zi family, since you're holding the strongest weapon, why are you trembling?" Chu Feng smiled and looked at the patriarch.

When they heard those words, the crowd once again looked at the patriarch. Only then did they discover that the patriarch's body was indeed endlessly trembling at that moment.

The grand leader of the Zi family... where did his domineering aura which looked down on everything run off to? He was simply like a

frightened rabbit; his arrogant demeanor was no more.

But, his situation was understandable. After all, who wouldn't be afraid if they angered a person such as Wuqing? No, to be precise, a person such as Chu Feng.

"Why are you silent now? Wasn't your face full of arrogance before? Come! Widen my horizons! Let me have new experiences! Let me see the power of your 'strongest weapon'!" As Chu Feng held the Royal Armament and walked in the air, he pressed towards the patriarch of the Zi family with his powerful might.

The world shook for each step Chu Feng took. The incomparably powerful might of a ruler swept out layer by layer. Even the patriarch of the Zi family, a rank six Martial Lord, felt enormous pressure, and he was forced continuously back.

He knew very well that Chu Feng currently was not someone he even had hopes of defeating.

"Old Feng, Old Leil, when are you going to stop watching?!" In a terrified state, the patriarch shouted and was actually asking for help.

"Hahahaha..." And when the patriarch finished speaking, an odd laughter rang out in the sky.

Within such laughter, two boundless auras crashed down from above. It caused the black clouds covering the air to disappear completely, and the lightning surging around to disperse. They suppressed Chu Feng's Royal Armament.

"This might... there are more experts in the Zi family!" When they heard the laughter filled with suppressing power, everyone felt much more shocked.

"The ones I've been expecting have finally come.

"Two rank seven Martial Lords... It's a bit better than what I had thought." However, Chu Feng was already prepared for that situation. So, he did not express any surprise. He suddenly put the Silver Dragon Spear onto his shoulder, and jabbed it towards the patriarch of the Zi family. A

silver-coloured ray of light then shot out from it.

"Dammit! Quickly save me!" The patriarch was alarmed when he saw that, and his expression changed so quick it made a swish sound. Even though he already knew he was no match for Chu Feng, he didn't expect this strike to be that frightening—so much he didn't even have a chance to defend himself.

"You useless thing! The Immortal Execution Archipelago has wasted so many resources on you." At the same time the patriarch asked for help, a mocking voice also rang out. Simultaneously, from the Zi family, two streams of light shot out, and immediately arrived before the patriarch.

It was two old men; they had the exact same appearance. With a glance, one could tell they were twin brothers, but each of those twin brothers lost a single eye. One lost his left, one lost his right.

But even though both of them only had a single eye, they did not possess weak auras. As Chu Feng said before, they were rank seven Martial Lords.

whoosh After both of them appeared, one of them casually waved his hand and boundless Martial power swept out, easily dispersing the attack from Chu Feng's Royal Armament. A rank seven Martial Lord was indeed many times more powerful than a rank six Martial Lord.

"Brat, there's a road to heaven you don't take, yet there's a road to hell you take. Not only did you take my young master's Royal Armament, you dare to come and take his fiancée! You are truly looking to die," said both Old Feng and Old Lei.

Even though they revealed killing intent on the surface, their hearts were incomparably excited. They didn't know what happened in the Depraved Ravine, but they recognized that Royal Armament—it was indeed Murong Xun's.

In addition, Chu Feng had already made the Immortal Execution Archipelago lose face before in the Misty peak. Today, if they were able to defeat him, it was a great achievement in and of itself. If they were able to take back the Royal Armament, then they would not only have

accomplished an enormous deed, they would even receive great rewards. How could they not be elated?

Chu Feng was rather smart so he immediately saw what their little plan was. But, he didn't mind things like those. In this moment, he only wanted to save Zi Ling, and clearly, as long as he could defeat the two old men, he would finish today with that accomplishment.

So, Chu Feng subconsciously tightened his grasp on the Silver Dragon Spear, and an even more powerful might spread out from his body. At the same time, the Spirit Formation Gate opened, and Eggy, the Asura World Spirit, was also released by him. With her bewitching and beautiful appearance, she appeared within the crowd's line of sight.

"You two old things, you're correct. I, Chu Feng, have come here to take Zi Ling away. But, you think you can stop me, just with the two of you?"

*

1. Feng = wind, Lei = thunder/lightning.

Chapter 817: The Queen Showing Her Power

“Hoh, I even thought some impressive existence would be released, but it’s only a rank two Martial Lord World Spirit! With just this bit of strength, you want to take Lady Zi Ling away from us? You must be too naive!” After seeing Eggy, Old Feng and Old Lei both roared with laughter—a very derisive one.

“Chu Feng, the old guy on the right is laughing too uglily. Hand him over to me first. You delay the one on the left, and after I take care of the right one, I’ll come take care of him. No problem, right?” Eggy said with a sweet smile.

“There’s no problem at all. With this Royal Armament, even if I cannot defeat him, at least, I won’t be defeated too soon. Quickly finish off the right one, then just come help me take care of the left one later.” Chu Feng nodded.

Although Eggy was strong, she was still only a rank two Martial Lord. Facing a rank seven Martial Lord was her limit. Even if she could reign victorious, she could not fight them both at the same time. She only remained advantageous in a one-on-one battle, so Chu Feng had to distract one of them.

Chu Feng already felt enormous pressure when facing a rank six Martial Lord with his current strength alone. As such, facing a rank seven Martial Lord would be like a fantastical story. However, with the Royal Armament, his fighting strength had increased dramatically. Therefore, Chu Feng was nearly able to defeat rank six Martial Lords with no problem, and even though he might not be able to defeat rank seven Martial Lords, with the techniques he grasped, delaying one for a while was not difficult.

“Then it’s decided.” Eggy didn’t say anything more after hearing Chu Feng’s agreement. Endless black flames burst out, and with horrifying might, they headed straight for Old Lei. It could be seen that the queen,

who had a very fiery nature, was furious.

“This might... It’s rather interesting. Brother, quickly take care of that brat. Let me face this beautiful lady a bit.”

In the instant Eggy attacked, both of them did frown slightly, as they were aware that Eggy wasn’t as simple as she appeared on the surface, but they were not afraid. When Old Lei made his move, bursts of lightning surged everywhere and attacked Eggy.

“Haha, I’ve heard that Wuqing is a genius with absurd fighting strength. Let me see today if you are as powerful as the rumours say.

“No, not Wuqing... Chu Feng! Hahaha...” As for Old Feng, with a face full of a mocking smile, he started attacking Chu Feng as well.

huu huu huu

His robe fluttered and bursts of gales appeared. Not only were they created by Martial power, they moved as he commanded. They were completely controlled by him, and they made a circle in the air, surrounding Chu Feng.

He still didn’t think Chu Feng to be a worthy opponent. He prepared to use the Ruling Wind Technique to capture Chu Feng: he would thus be able to obtain the Royal Armament in Chu Feng’s hand, and also break his arrogant demeanor.

It would tell the world that regardless of the power of Chu Feng’s fighting strength, even if he held the peerless Royal Armament, when facing a rank seven Martial Lord, he would not even be able to put up a fight.

“Break!”

Yet in the end, Old Feng had still underestimated him. Chu Feng flicked the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand into the sky, and with a burst of silver light and an explosion, it destroyed Old Feng’s surrounding attack.

Following closely after, an azure light surged behind his feet, and an azure dragon appeared. With Chu Feng riding on it, it rapidly flew over.

Chu Feng didn't escape. Not only that, he even began his counterattack at Old Feng.

wuaoo

The Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, as if it were alive, was extremely lifelike. It didn't just fly through the air, it made an ending number of deafening dragon roars, as though it were not a technique but a true dragon instead.

boom boom boom

And with the quick speed of the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, Chu Feng was pretty much able to dodge all of Old Feng's attacks. Whenever he had the chance, he would take the Royal Armament and throw storm-like attacks at him.

Such a change in momentum caused the demeanor Old Feng had earlier to disappear completely. He started to feel pressure because he discovered astoundingly that Chu Feng was really too strong. So strong it surpassed his expectations: not only was a rank six Martial Lord no match for Chu Feng, even himself, a rank seven Martial Lord, found it a great difficulty to defeat him.

Most importantly, even though Chu Feng was using a delaying tactic, his attacks were still very fierce. It did not suppress Old Feng only in terms of atmosphere, it even suppressed him mentally. In an instant, it completely forced Old Feng's carelessness away, and he did appear to be suppressed by Chu Feng.

"This is so powerful. What is that underneath Chu Feng's feet? It couldn't be a real dragon, could it?" When they saw the azure dragon underneath Chu Feng, there were many cries of amazement.

"Impossible. Dragons are creatures from legends! They are named as the king of all monsters, and let alone that there are no such things in the Eastern Sea Region, even if there were, they wouldn't serve Chu Feng!"

"That's right. This should be one of the legendary Secret Skills. I've heard Chu Feng possesses powerful Secret Skills, and it seems that the

rumours are true indeed." The might Chu Feng showed not only stunned Old Feng, it even stunned everyone else.

boom rumble rumble However, just at that moment, continual explosions came from the battle between Eggy and Old Lei. When bursts of shock waves were causing havoc, it almost destroyed all of the Zi family residences. If the people from the Zi family hadn't moved already, it was likely most of them would have been dead or injured by now.

When they looked over, everyone was even more dumbfounded because the battle between Eggy and Old Lei could really be called the confrontation of two powerful existences. It was many times more intense than Chu Feng's side.

bzz lala At that very instant, there were many lightning snakes surrounding Old Lei's body. Spreading out from himself, they became a huge net of lightning that covered the sky. Within it, there was powerful killing strength. Nothing could survive within that range—not even a single blade of grass. Even if a Martial Lord entered such an attack, they would become ashes in an instant.

Yet, at present, not only was the beautiful queen, Eggy, inside the lightning net of Old Lei's, she was able to even send a powerful attack towards him.

aooo

Her black-coloured flames were akin to a demon that lived by slaughtering. It not only had peerless might, it even made a ferocious roar. In a situation like that, the rank seven Martial Lord, Old Lei, was pale and he was forced back, appearing as if he would fall at any moment.

"Powerful. This is simply unbelievable. Chu Feng's World Spirit is actually this strong! Although it's only a rank two Martial Lord, it has suppressed a rank seven Martial Lord. This is really unthinkable."

"Could this be what they say: 'A powerful master breeds a powerful servant'?" Eggy's appearance brought astonishment to the entire crowd. They were all stunned by her frightening power.

“Hmph. What do any of you know? This World Spirit is not an ordinary World Spirit. It is a legendary Asura World Spirit.” Just at that moment, the white-haired old man who had went to the Depraved Ravine once again spoke with a disdainful tone.

“What? An Asura World Spirit? From the Asura Spirit World, acclaimed to be the strongest of the Seven Spirit Worlds?” When they heard those words, all of their expressions changed greatly and they couldn’t help taking a long gasp.

boom However, just at that moment, another huge explosion rang out. At the same time, a painful cry rang out. “Brother, save me!”

That voice came from none other than Old Lei. Looking over towards him, almost everyone was stupefied again because at that moment, his hair was in a mess, and blood was all over his body. One could even see his bones on his left leg, proof that he was heavily injured.

The rank seven Martial Lord, when facing Eggy, a rank two Martial Lord, was actually defeated.

Chapter 818: Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning

"Brother, save me, quickly!" Old Lei, who was even boasting to give Eggy a lesson, was now hysterically yelling. Even his voice was trembling; his words were filled with fear.

At that very moment, blood was all over his body. Not only was his graceful robe shredded, even his flesh was wounded as well. Where did all his arrogance go? He was already devastatingly terrified by Eggy's ferocious attacks.

"How is this possible? That girl is this strong? Could it be that she's truly a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World?" Seeing his younger brother unable to continue fighting, and also looking carefully at Eggy's strange black flames, Old Feng's forehead was immediately drenched with perspiration. He leapt forward and wanted to go help his brother.

"Oi oi oi, old thing, where are you going?" However, Chu Feng, who was responsible for distracting him, would of course not let him go easily. Not only did he take away that chance, he also increased the strength of his attacks towards Old Feng as he held the Royal Armament. He was simply making it so Old Feng could not even move a single inch.

"Dammit!" At that instant, Old Feng gnashed his teeth in anger, yet could do absolutely nothing. After all that had happened, he had to admit Chu Feng was really too troublesome. If the present circumstances continued, Old Lei would definitely be killed, and if he were to die, then the next would be Old Feng himself. The situation before their eyes dictated their definite loss.

"Ahh—"

Just at that moment, Old Lei cried out in pain once again. Black flames in the shape of a sword pierced through him, making a bloody hole at his chest.

If he hadn't dodged it quick enough, it was likely that Eggy's strike

would have pierced through his dantian, and destroyed his cultivation. Old Lei had already completely lost the ability to continue fighting against Eggy. What awaited him were only fiercer attacks.

"You forced this onto me, you forced this onto me!!" Old Feng too was enraged when he saw that. He suddenly started roaring those words in madness, and after doing so, he said to Old Lei, who was a step away from death, "Use that! Even if we die, we will drag this master and servant with us!"

"Mm!" Old Lei did not even have a hint of hesitation. After nodding with gritting teeth, a touch of fierce resolution flashed past his aged face. Then, the single eye that had always been closed gradually opened, and bolts of lightning were flashing inside the eye.

At the same time, Old Feng's single shut eye also opened. Within it, though there was not lightning, there were gales swirling about.

So actually, Old Feng and Old Lei didn't close their single eye because they were blind, it was because they were concealing special power. After they opened their eye, their auras also became completely different.

"Eggy, careful." At that instant, even Chu Feng couldn't help but frown slightly. With his sharp Spirit power, and the Heaven's Eyes that could see through everything, Chu Feng discovered a tremendous change occurring within Old Feng's and Old Lei's body. The two old men definitely concealed a trump card.

"Chu Feng, you forced this onto us! You want us dead, so you shouldn't even consider leaving alive!"

"Before we die, we will first tear your corpse into a million pieces!"

Suddenly, both of them shouted explosively. Then, from their "blind" eye, two rays of light were shot out, straight onto the surface of the ground.

"This feeling!"

Chu Feng's complexion immediately changed because he discovered that after the rays of light were shot out, both of their bodies fell down,

roughly crashing onto the ruined grounds. There wasn't a single trace of life remaining, as if their bodies were two corpses, as if their life had entered the earth from the rays of light that shot out from their eyes.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

At the same time, the land also started violently trembling. Moreover, strange patterns, like a swimming snake, quickly surged about on the ground surface. There were more and more patterns until finally, it covered the entire vast Flower Valley.

"Zi Ling, run!"

Chu Feng could no longer remain calm when he saw that. He could immediately tell it was a special technique used by the two old men. They prepared a very powerful formation.

If it were activated, even he and Eggy wouldn't be able to defend against it because a painful price was paid in order to prepare that formation—life. The life of two rank seven Martial Lords.

"You want to run? None of you will be able to!"

However, before Zi Ling and the others were able to react to that, layers upon layers of barriers created by wind and lightning were created. They rose into the air from the borders of the Flower Valley, pierced through the endless white clouds, into thousands and thousands of miles high in the air, sealing everything.

At the same time, two large figures rose from underground along with the activation of the formation. Those two figures, to speak accurately, didn't appear to be human, but more like gods.

It was because one was formed by bustling gales, while the other was formed by lightning. Those two powerful figures were Old Feng and Old Lei.

"Brat, do you know why the Immortal Execution Archipelago arranged us two to guard this place?

"I don't mind telling you the truth: it's because the special techniques

we cultivated can activate this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning!

"It can be activated only once, and it takes the price of our lives and all the cultivation we achieved in our life. So, today, even if you have wings you will not escape!" shouted Old Feng and Old Lei together.

At that moment, a fierce and furious expression were on both of their faces because technically speaking, they were already two dead men. And, the reason they were dead was all because of Chu Feng.

"Using life as a price to activate a formation? No wonder. No wonder these two said they would drag Chu Feng down even if they died."

When they heard those words, not to mention Chu Feng, even the observing crowd were stunned. They could feel that the so-called Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning was very powerful. At that moment, no matter if it was Chu Feng, who held the Royal Armament, or Eggy, who came from the Asura Spirit World, their powerful might was completely suppressed by the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning.

At that moment, in that place, there were only two powerful existences —Old Feng and Old Lei. They were no longer humanoid. It was as if they were the gods who ruled this land. Whoever they wanted alive would live, and whoever they wanted dead would die.

"It seems that I've still underestimated the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even though they only sent two rank seven Martial Lords to guard this place, these two are clearly no pushovers." Chu Feng's eyes glittered uneasily. He was completely aware of the present awful circumstances.

"Chu Feng, since they've done this, we can only fight with our lives on the life. Are you willing?" said Eggy with a smile. She had now backed away, returning to Chu Feng's side.

"They've already sacrificed their own lives just to drag me down with them. What thing would I not dare to do? At most, I'll just die. However, I don't want her to go down with me..." As Chu Feng spoke, he looked at Zi

Ling who was below because he had already thought of one possibility of retaliation.

In terms of putting lives on the line, would Chu Feng fear Old Feng and Old Lei? They, with their lives, activated the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning. However, if Chu Feng sacrificed his life, the thing he were to release would not be as simple as a formation. It would definitely surpass everyone's imagination, because it would be a calamity.

Chapter 819: Alone without Assistance

The other World Spirit in Chu Feng's body had overwhelming fury. It was full of ferociousness and cruelty, and its cultivation was not sealed. If it were released, an enormous disaster upon the world would definitely appear.

However, if he did that, not only would Chu Feng die, everyone else in and near the Flower Valley would die. Even many people in the Eastern Sea Region would die. Yet, there were people Chu Feng did not want to affect by doing so. Unless absolutely necessary, Chu Feng did not want to take this step.

"You're thinking too much. With me here, there's no need for you to go down that road. It's a trump card your family left for you, not a trump card for you to end your life." Eggy couldn't help smiling when she saw what Chu Feng was thinking.

"Eggy, then what plan do you have?" Chu Feng asked.

"Heh." Eggy first smiled, then said, "Didn't I say before I can transfer my power to you? After obtaining my power, and in addition with your current strength, you should be able to defeat these two old men.

"However, due to the cultivation and physical body you currently possess, even though I can reduce the degree of violence of my power as much as possible, it will still lead to a serious injury on your body.

"So, you better make a good mental preparation because the backlash later will be deadly. If you cannot hold on, you will possibly die~" Even though Eggy's tone was humorous when she spoke, there was still a few hints of worry.

"I no longer have a choice with how things are. Come. Actually, I've always wanted to feel how strong your power has become." Chu Feng calmly smiled, and he had already opened the World Spirit Gate.

"Heh, it definitely surpasses your imagination." Eggy smiled proudly, then leapt in and returned to Chu Feng's body.

AOOO In the instant Eggy entered Chu Feng, a cry even more terrifying than the devil burst from his body.

Closely after, black flames starting appeared within his body. They first covered Chu Feng, then rapidly changed. Initially black flames, they became black runes and as those runes flashed, like armour, they covered Chu Feng's body.

Even the Royal Armament in Chu Feng's hand, the Silver Dragon Spear, was covered by the black-coloured runes, forcefully transforming it into a black-coloured spear.

When the Silver Dragon Spear was surrounded by the black flames, its power was not diminished, but was instead bursting forth with might. It was not only the Silver Dragon Spear which burst with power; most importantly, it was all of Chu Feng's power that increased several times in strength, and it had already faintly suppressed the illusory Old Feng and Old Lei.

"What's happening? What technique did he use? He's actually grasped the power of that World Spirit?" The observers were no fools and just by feeling, they were able to determine that the black-coloured flames surrounding Chu Feng originated from Eggy.

"This brat is very odd. Judging by his cultivation, how can he obtain the power of a World Spirit?" In reality, it was not only the observers who were shocked, Old Feng and Old Lei too were shocked as well. No matter if it was cultivation, or body, Chu Feng shouldn't have been able to receive the power from the World Spirit.

"You two old geezers, let this young master here experience this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning and see how impressive it is!" At that instant, a cold glint reflected off of Chu Feng's eyes; his confidence was multiplied.

Because, at that very moment, he was able to feel the strength of Eggy's power. It was simply power that feared nothing, one that seemed it could defeat anything. It truly surpassed Chu Feng's imagination.

Even though, due to certain restrictions, Eggy hadn't truly given her

power to Chu Feng, at least, right now, his strength had been raised essentially.

boom All of a sudden, Chu Feng moved. His movement made even the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning tremble, and everyone could feel a burst of mighty pressure emanating from his body. Even outside the flower Valley, the mountains and earth were shaken.

“Brat, don’t think you can do whatever you want! Since you are so impatient for death, we’ll let you experience the strength of this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning!” But Old Feng and Old Lei, who were already dead, had no reason to fear Chu Feng. They attacked at the same time, and the result of interweaved wind and lightning fought Chu Feng.

rumble rumble rumble

In an instant, explosions and rumbling resounded everywhere. Shock waves went in all directions. The air and the ground were taken over by the violent gales and lightnings, and the black-coloured flames that appeared they could consume everything. Three bursts of power filled the sky of the Flower Valley, and occasionally, there would be a remnant shock wave sweeping downwards—one that no one could defend against. The areas it passed killed everything; the battle between the three was indeed extremely intense.

But no matter how much powerful they were, an outcome had to be decided. After some exchange in blows, the side with an advantage soon showed. Chu Feng, who held the Royal Armament, possessing the power of Asura, was such a side. With his own strength, he suppressed Old Feng and Old Lei, respectively huge figures of wind and lightning, and pushed them continuously back.

“Dammit!” At that instant, their faces were very unsightly. Even though they no longer possessed a human form, one could still see the fury and bitterness in their expressions.

They painstakingly cultivated for many years, training in this Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which required the price

of life to activate. Yet, at present, they were still inferior to some brat? How were they willing to accept such an outcome!

"People from the Zi family, listen! Channel all of your power into this formation and assist us two in removing this child. If our formation fails, none of you should even think of living," shouted the two old men suddenly when they could do nothing else. They were actually asking the Zi family for help.

"This isn't true, is it? Old Feng and Old Lei are truly unable to continue on? Even the power they obtained with the price of life cannot defeat Chu Feng?"

Even though they already saw who was strong and who was weak, when Old Feng and Old Lei spoke those words, everyone still felt very shocked because such words were sufficient to represent the level of strength Chu Feng had obtained. The young man whose name spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region was indeed worthy of the title of "genius".

"Zi family, attention! Without restraint, channel all of your power into the formation! Those who do not obey will be executed!"

Just at that moment, the patriarch of the Zi family also spoke. He knew how serious matters were, and even though, after knowing Chu Feng's identity, he was very afraid, he had no other choice. They could only fight with their lives on the line, otherwise what awaited them was nothing but death.

hmm hmm hmm hmm After the patriarch of the Zi family spoke, of course the Zi family did not dare to hesitate. All of them gave it their all and started transferring their power completely into the formation.

When layers upon layers of power was unendingly sent into the formation, the wind and lightning that Old Feng's and Old Lei's bodies were composed of also became stronger and stronger. Their auras started to rise as well, and when they attacked again, they made even space itself collapse. The sky changed colour, and the black-coloured flames Chu Feng had were oppressed, and actually starting pressing back towards Chu Feng.

“Haha, damn brat! You are standing now alone with no help. However, we have the entire Zi family! Let’s see how you will defeat us two!” After their increase in strength, Old Feng and Old Lei laughed in madness. They could tell that, despite very strong, Chu Feng was at his limits. So, he was undoubtedly soon to be defeated.

“Heh.” But just at that time, Chu Feng made a sneer. Then, his eyes turned blood-red, and he coldly said, “Are you certain I am standing alone with no help?”

“You…” And after seeing the change that happened to Chu Feng, the extremely excited pair of old men immediately froze. Their bodies trembled, and an indescribable feeling of uneasiness started spreading from their hearts, permeating their entire body.

Chapter 820: Should I Kill Him

At that instant, Chu Feng's eyes were blood-red, akin to scorching-red steel. They emitted an odd glint, yet resembled lava from deep underground, containing destructive power.

Soon, rows of fiery-red cracks appeared on the armour Chu Feng made by the black-coloured flames. The cracks were like rivers of magma flowing on black dirt in varying paths.

Most importantly, when such changes were occurring, Chu Feng's aura once again increased. Hurricanes made by the black-coloured flames swept out of his body, and as they brought about chaos, the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which sealed that land appeared as though it were about to collapse.

"You said I'm alone with no help, but I can tell you very clearly that I, Chu Feng, have never been alone and never with no help because in my body, I've always had a queen who fought by my shoulder, and lived with me always."

boom Suddenly, Chu Feng jabbed the spear abruptly at Old Lei. A black-coloured pillar of light then shot out of the tip of the spear, and, amidst such horrifying might, Old Lei's body exploded with a bang.

When the lightning snakes filling the air scattered about in the air, Old Lei's aura also became smaller and smaller. When the final lightning snake disappeared, along with it was the complete disappearance of Old Lei's aura.

hmm Simultaneously, the power of the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning was instantly cut by half. It lost its former feeling of indestructibility.

boom When he saw that, Chu Feng flicked the spear in his hand into the air, and another black-coloured pillar of light shot out. It shot out towards the horizon like an inverted meteor.

After another frightening explosion, it burrowed a huge hole in the

Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning, and quickly after, the radiance emitting from the formation turned dimmer and dimmer before it collapsed completely. The formation that could only be activated by the price of life—Old Feng's and Old Lei's—was destroyed by Chu Feng.

"Dammit!" Old Feng couldn't help cursing. Since Chu Feng killed Old Lei just now, only one person was supporting the formation. Its power was halved, so naturally it could not take Chu Feng's strike.

"Old thing, your Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning is barely adequate. You want to drag me down with you and finish me off? In your next life!

"Hahaha..." At that instant, as Chu Feng held the spear, he laughed powerfully. There was ridicule within his deafening laughter.

Ridicule—extreme ridicule! Two rank seven Martial Lords who had cultivated for dozens of years were not only unable to defeat a young man—a rank three Martial Lord—they were even forced to commit suicide in order to activate the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning which they had cultivated for dozens of years.

However, in the end, they remained inferior and their formation was destroyed right before the eyes of the crowd. At the same time such a scene shocked the crowd, the two old men lost all face as well.

"You arrogant brat, I'll kill you!" Old Feng's body was trembling from anger. His face was distorted, and like an outraged tiger, he pounced towards Chu Feng with powerful might. He wanted to commence the last fight.

"Hoh." However, Chu Feng merely smiled disdainfully at his final pounce. The spear in his hand flicked once again, and with the explosive shot of a black light, Old Feng's body was pierced through, and he thus disappeared completely from this world.

At that moment, the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning had been completely destroyed. Not to mention the Zi family residences, even the entire Flower Valley was in a mess. On the ground, there were deep pits of varying sizes everywhere. There were even cracks that continued

for dozens of miles. That battle had created quite a bit of destruction.

However, under the night sky, it was abnormally silent because everyone was deeply shocked by Chu Feng's powerful techniques. Some were even doubting whether it was reality. After all, the fighting strength Chu Feng showed was really too inconceivable.

"Run!" Suddenly, a shout full of panic rang out. Soon after, the remaining people in the Zi family fled into the distance without even turning their heads around, akin to ants on a hot pan.

After seeing Chu Feng's power, they all knew it was impossible for them to fight Chu Feng. The only thing they could do was to flee.

"Today, none of the people from the Zi family should even think of safely escaping."

But how could Chu Feng give them that chance? He coldly snorted, and a boundless purple-coloured Spirit Formation burst out from his body. It was even quicker than the Slaughtering Formation of Wind and Lightning. In a blink, it sealed an area outside the Flower Valley with a circumference of a hundred miles. It locked in everyone.

boom rumble rumble After doing all that, Chu Feng suddenly flicked the spear in his hand again, and after an explosion, almost a hundred people from the Zi family were shattered. They didn't even have the chance to make a single sound before becoming ashes.

"Die! Those who dared to stop me must all die!" Soon after, he swept horizontally with his spear. The sky was in chaos, and the earth collapsed. In a blink, several hundreds of people were consumed by that power, becoming ashes in the wind.

"What ruthlessness. It seems that today, Chu Feng is eradicating the entire Zi family!" The surrounding observers finally came to their senses when they saw that happening. They discovered that Chu Feng not only attacked fiercely, he attacked accurately. He did not harm innocents as he focused completely on the people from the Zi family.

"Why is he doing this? What sort of enmity exists between Chu Feng

and the Zi family for him to be so cruel?"

Seeing that Chu Feng aimed to kill everyone from the Zi family, some people started guessing in their hearts. Of course, they only dared to yell out those questions inside, not to say them out loud. After witnessing Chu Feng's strength, they feared him deeply. They were very afraid.

"Chu Feng, don't! Don't kill them anymore! Spare their lives, and give them a chance! After all, they are still people of my Zi family! They are still Zi Ling's relatives!" However, at that moment, Zi Ling's parents actually rose into the air and half-knelt in front of Chu Feng, begging for the Zi family.

"Chu Feng, please, for Ling'er sake, give us a chance!" At the same time, there were several more people who flew up and knelt by Chu Feng's side.

Chu Feng did not recognize those people, but from the very start, they had stood by Zi Ling's side. She also didn't dislike them, so they were likely the very few people who supported Zi Ling within the Zi family.

"Hmph." Facing that scene, perhaps normal people would be moved, but Chu Feng coldly snorted instead. Then, he swept his gaze over the crowd and said, "My love for Zi Ling is real and true, but the Zi family heartlessly pulled her away from me, and even imprisoned Zi Ling's parents, forcing Zi Ling to marry Murong Xun by threatening her with my life.

"Furthermore, they were doing all that for their personal gains only. These people are selfish. They use the happiness of others as the price for benefits of their own.

"Everyone, you tell me. Should they be killed?"

Chapter 821: Fated to Become Famous

"This..." The crowd first sank into silence when they heard those words. In this world, the strongest were the rulers. Who knew who was right and who was wrong? If your fist was harder, then your words were reason, and your actions were right.

If Chu Feng's words were all true, that he and Zi Ling were truly in love, and rather, it was the Zi family that split up the couple, then after a brief moment of thinking, everyone understood everything.

Back then, the reason the Zi family was able to forcefully take Zi Ling away from Chu Feng was definitely because Chu Feng was no match for the Zi family back then. So, he could do nothing.

Now, since Chu Feng had the strength, he had come to take revenge. That was rather forgivable, and rather reasonable because many, if they were in Chu Feng's place, would do the same.

If I'm bullied when weak, I will have my vengeance when strong.

"Kill them! They should be killed! These people, who ignore honour in the face of benefit, who think nothing but selfish gains, who even sell off their own family for profit have no heart! They are inferior to pigs and dogs! They cannot be left alive! Kill them all!" Then, there was someone who suddenly shouted, greatly agreeing with Chu Feng to kill the people from the Zi family.

"That's right! Kill them! I support Lord Chu Feng! I support him killing these despicable and shameless people of the Zi family!" Moreover, shouts like that became louder and louder, clearer and clearer. They resounded like thunder, and nearly half of the observers agreed with Chu Feng's point of view.

And as they saw the purple-coloured Spirit Formations which sealed their escape, and the cries of "kill" echoing, everyone from the Zi family had deadpan faces. Some even knelt powerlessly onto the ground, preparing to die.

“Chu Feng, do not kill them! No matter how wrong they were, they are still family. Please give them a chance.” Just at that moment, Zi Xuanyuan also rose into the air, and as he spoke, he too knelt before Chu Feng, begging for the Zi family.

“Senior Xuanyuan, what are you doing?” Chu Feng could ignore others, but when facing Zi Xuanyuan, he could not. Before he even knelt down, Chu Feng had stopped him.

“Chu Feng! They say that blood is thicker than water—Zi Ling and I are from the Zi family. No matter what they did wrong, I cannot just watch as they die. Please, spare them once,” Zi Xuanyuan begged again.

That truly put Chu Feng in a difficult position. Originally, he hated the people from the Zi family with every fibre of his being. If he did not kill them all, he could not ease the hatred in his heart. After all, it was they who forced Zi Ling to marry Murong Xun. If he didn’t have the ability to save Zi Ling now, then it was likely Zi Ling would truly marry Murong Xun. At that time, it would become an unrecoverable tragedy.

As for the leader of such a potential tragedy, it was the Zi family. If they hadn’t found Zi Ling in the continent of the Nine Provinces and forced her back, Chu Feng wouldn’t have been separated from Zi Ling for over a year.

Chu Feng could perhaps kindheartedly forgive the Zi family, but if they were him, would they kindheartedly forgive him? No, absolutely not. If Zi Ling didn’t threaten them with her life, then the patriarch of the Zi family would have killed Chu Feng in the moment he saw him in the Eastern Sea Region.

“Zi Ling, help us convince Chu Feng!” Seeing that Chu Feng was still unwilling to forgive the Zi family, Zi Ling’s parents, and Zi Xuanyuan, could only cast their begging gazes at Zi Ling.

Due to their gazes, Zi Ling’s heart couldn’t help but soften. Then, she said, “Chu Feng, please give them a chance.”

“Whatever. Because of Zi Ling, I’ll give all of you a chance to start anew. If you do not correct your wrongs, I will return with a massacre.”

After Zi Ling spoke, Chu Feng had to dispel the thought of eradicating the Zi family. He could choose to give others no face, but he had to respect Zi Ling's words.

When they heard Chu Feng speak, the people from the Zi family felt as if they were in a dream. They, who had already prepared to die, didn't expect Chu Feng to forgive them no matter what.

"Thank you for sparing our lives, thank you for sparing our lives!" Being elated, the people from the Zi family kowtowed at Chu Feng.

"The lives of all can be spared, but one must be taken." However, just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly extended his arm. A powerful current of air surged past, causing an aged body to roll and appear before Chu Feng. He was then held by the throat.

As for who that was, it was the patriarch of the Zi family.

"Mm! Spare me! Mm— Chu Feng, give me a chance! I'm... still... a... part... of... Ah—" The patriarch of the Zi family had a face filled with panic. He cast honour aside and begged for his life as he spluttered.

However, Chu Feng had already seen his true nature. How could he give him a chance to live? Chu Feng didn't even bother saying a word to him, and with his hand clenching tight, and blood splattering everywhere, he squashed the neck of the patriarch, separating it from his body.

When the head and the body fell onto the ground, everyone could tell that the patriarch of the Zi family died. He died completely: Chu Feng not only cut off his head, he killed his Consciousness, and absorbed his Source Energy. He thoroughly killed the patriarch of the Zi family.

hmm After the execution, Chu Feng waved his big sleeve, and pulled Zi Ling, Zi Xuanyuan, her parents, and some people from the Zi family who supported Zi Ling to his side, and onto the azure dragon.

aoooooo After doing all that, Chu Feng cast a thought and closed the Spirit Formation which had sealed the Zi family, and amidst a deafening roar of a dragon, Chu Feng left the Zi family, disappearing within the night with Zi Ling and the others.

As they looked in the direction of Chu Feng and the others' departure, the crowd was baffled for quite a while. When they slowly came to their senses, without saying anything, they used their most powerful bodily martial skills and speedily fled to the distance. In an instant, a large number of people were quickly escaping. They wanted to leave that zone of disaster.

After the great battle, they had to rid themselves of the relationship between them and such an event. Otherwise, when the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago arrived, then they too would possibly be affected. With how the Immortal Execution Archipelago operated, killing them was not an impossibility.

But regardless, many people today had witnessed a spectacle. They had truly seen the power of Chu Feng.

He not only had exceptional talent, he had a Royal Armament and even made a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World view him as master. He could be said to be the coalescence of all impossible things; he was truly, and deservedly, an exceptional genius.

After today, Chu Feng's name was fated to spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region again—not as Wuqing, but as Chu Feng. Not only because he had unparalleled talent and potential, but also because of the frightening actions he did today.

The genius Chu Feng not only defeated two rank seven Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he nearly destroyed the entire Zi family. He also took away Murong Xun's fiancée, Zi Ling—though, to be more precise, it was not "take away", because Zi Ling herself was willing to leave with Chu Feng. The two of them loved each other.

However, since Murong Xun had an arranged marriage with Zi Ling first, in the eyes of the world, it was "take away".

Killing experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, stealing Murong Xun's Royal Armament, taking away the young master's fiancée... It had to be said that Chu Feng brought things to the extreme. He not only made it clear he was an enemy to the Immortal Execution

Archipelago, he didn’t put them in his eyes at all.

Chapter 822: Miracle

swish—

Beneath the night sky, above the white clouds, there was a stream of light quickly dashing through the air. The speed was quick, so much it was dumbfounding, and even typical Martial Lords found it difficult to capture into their eyes, with their naked eyes, what exactly was that stream of light.

It was, of course, Chu Feng and the others. At that moment, Chu Feng channeled his full strength into quickly moving, and the direction of travel was very clear as well—an area suitable for hiding themselves. Chu Feng had already determined the path to this location before coming to the Zi family.

As for why? It was because, at present, Chu Feng's eyes were becoming redder and redder. There were not only blood-red patterns on his black-coloured runic armour, there were many patterns on even Chu Feng's bare skin. Even though Eggy gave Chu Feng such powerful strength, at the same time, that power was destroying Chu Feng's physical body.

To save Zi Ling, Chu Feng was fighting with his life. Although he succeeded in the end, he had paid a painful price for it. He knew, for a very long time, he would be unable to protect Zi Ling. So, while he was still conscious, he had to bring Zi Ling to a relatively safe place.

"Ah!" Suddenly, Chu Feng's expression changed. He opened his mouth, and a large amount of blood sprayed out. The blood was very strange—it was black. Not only did it emit heat, it was even surging, as if it were boiling black water.

whoosh At the same time, Chu Feng fell forward. The azure dragon underneath him not only disappeared, he himself also lost his ability to fly complete. He started to fall from the air.

"Chu Feng!" Zi Ling and the others were greatly alarmed when they saw that. Zi Ling, who was standing behind Chu Feng, quickly got hold of him.

After seeing the changes happening to Chu Feng, Zi Ling's already worried face became extremely panicked. She herself even started to panic.

It was because at that moment, along with Chu Feng's loss of consciousness, the black runes surrounding Chu Feng's body became black flames. After leaving Chu Feng's body, they disappeared gradually.

After the black flames disappeared, they shockingly discovered that on Chu Feng's body, there were no more clothes. Not to mention his lack of clothes, even his physical body was charred like charcoal. On his coal-like skin, there were bloody cracks.

How did that even seem like a person's body? It was simply more akin to a burnt corpse.

"Grandfather, father, mother, what is happening? Quickly come look!" Zi Ling completely panicked. Even though she was typically calm, after seeing Chu Feng in such a state, she found it hard to remain collected.

"Let me see." Seeing that, Zi Ling's parents, who had the highest cultivations, hurriedly came over and observed him. After doing so, they couldn't help tightly furrowing their brows and remained in silent.

"How is he? What is it? Say something, quickly say something!" Zi Ling anxiously urged.

"This.... Ahh..." Zi Ling's mother helplessly sighed, not knowing what to say.

Just at that moment, Zi Ling's father spoke. "Ah, Ling'er. You must be prepared for this. Chu Feng was borrowing the power of his World Spirit before. But, you must know that the power of a World Spirit isn't something a Purple-cloak World Spiritist can endure.

"The very minimum requirement is to be a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. This Chu Feng touched upon a taboo; being able to stay alive is already a miracle.

"This is truly unbelievable because if it were a normal person, they would simply be unable to maintain the power of the World Spirit.

However, Chu Feng not only bore with it, he even bore with it for so long.

"Besides, even if a World Spirit can lend their power to their World Spiritist, it is always only for an increase in the World Spiritist's physical body. It shouldn't allow their fighting strength to rise so dramatically.

"I must say that this child is truly a rare genius. He simply did an impossible feat. But, sadly..." At that instant, the ones, who left the Zi family with Zi Ling and the others, also spoke. Their faces were filled with amazement but also pity.

"What are you saying? What are all of you saying?!" Zi Ling loudly questioned; she could tell that something was greatly wrong.

"Ling'er, Chu Feng is crippled. Not only is his physical body destroyed, even his Consciousness is wounded. I'm afraid he won't be able to retain his cultivation. Even if he survives, he will be a cripple," Zi Ling's father said.

"No, I don't believe this, I don't believe this..." Zi Ling instantly lost control of her emotions, and started crying while hugging Chu Feng. She knew that she was the reason for Chu Feng's current state. If it weren't for saving her, Chu Feng wouldn't have his current state.

"Wait, look closely! His body seemed to be recovering! Although it's very slow, it's recovering!" However, just at that moment, Zi Xuanyuan suddenly spoke. Moreover, on his initially nervous face, there was a hint of joy.

"Heavens! It's true! That's unbelievable! Is this little guy a monster?" When they looked again at Chu Feng's body, Zi Ling's parents and the others were also shocked.

"Let's not talk too much and find a place to hide first.

"The reason why Chu Feng kept on using the power from the World Spirit even after leaving the Flower Valley is because he wanted to bring us to a safe place. We cannot fail his good intentions," Zi Xuanyuan said.

"Mm." Zi Ling's parents also nodded, then brought Chu Feng and quickly flew into the air, at the same time searching for a place to safely

reside in.

Time darted past and passed in an instant. A single month quietly elapsed.

Chu Feng had lain unconscious for a full month. He also had a very long and painful dream.

His entire body was placed within a huge furnace. He was enduring the burning of black flames, and no matter how he yelled, it was useless. The flames aimed to burn him into ashes.

But luckily, the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian as well as the lightning in his blood guarded Chu Feng constantly. They were in a continuous battle against the attacking blaze. As much as they could, they protected Chu Feng's body. That made the pain of his burning flesh less and less, and now, he was no longer in danger.

"Mm." Suddenly, Chu Feng opened his eyes. He discovered he was lying within a mountain cave, and even though it was a cave, it was filled with runes—runes of concealment. Moreover, both underneath him and on him, there were thick blankets. It was very comfortable.

As for himself, even though his body was still feeling the pain of fire, he was within his range of toleration. It didn't have too big of an effect towards Chu Feng.

Looking around, Chu Feng joyfully discovered a sleeping beauty lying by his side. Looking at her beautiful face, was that not Zi Ling? However, on the very same face, there was a thin and discoloured complexion. One could even see the traces of tears streaking past her face from the corners of her eyes.

Chu Feng was very happy because he was still able to successfully save the one he loved. However, his heart also ached because he knew what happened. He couldn't help extending his hand to carefully stroke Zi Ling's pitch-black hair.

"Mm." However, Zi Ling was too sensitive. Just when Chu Feng touched her, she immediately opened her eyes. She sat up with a swish, and looked

around, alert.

However, after she saw Chu Feng, she couldn't help but be taken aback. She first rubbed her eyes, then examined Chu Feng carefully. Only then did she reveal a sweet smile she hadn't made in a long time, and leapt into Chu Feng's embrace immediately.

"Chu Feng, you've finally awakened! This is great!"

"Zi Ling, I've let you worry." Hugging the beauty, Chu Feng felt very fortunate. He felt that all the pain he suffered before was worth it.

boom

"Quickly catch it! There, there, seal off its escape!" However, just at that moment, bursts of noises suddenly came from outside.

Chu Feng abruptly stood up when he heard that, his brows furrowing. A grave expression emerged into his eyes, and he said calmly, "This voice belongs to Senior Xuanyuan and the others. What is happening outside?"

Chapter 823: Shaken

"Is it starting again?" However, when Zi Ling heard some noises, she was not worried at all. Instead, her face was one of helplessness. Clearly, she knew what was happening outside.

At the same time, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power. He discovered there was actually no enemy invading. So, he quickly brought Zi Ling out of the cave for observation.

After coming outside the cave, only then did Chu Feng find out they were hiding within a vast mountain range. In their surroundings, layers of Concealment Spirit Formations were laid, so everything they did wouldn't be discovered by others. Clearly, they were laid by Zi Ling's parents.

And, at present, in the nearby sky, Zi Xuanyuan and the others were trying to capture something. Looking closely, Chu Feng discovered it was a Delivery Bird.

However, it was a very powerful one. Not only was it able to conceal its aura, thus avoiding Spirit power and any sort of detection, it had eighteen pairs of wings. Its speed was fast, akin to light. Even he himself was quite inferior.

It was simply a waste of strength for Zi Xuanyuan and the others to surround the Delivery Bird, as it was impossible for them to capture it. The bird was merely toying with them now.

whoosh whoosh whoosh But after the Delivery Bird saw Chu Feng, it fiercely flapped its wings, and like light, after it arrived in front of Chu Feng, it started flying around him.

"It's... come for me?" When he saw that, Chu Feng couldn't help casting his gaze at Zi Ling, who was behind him.

"It has been here for several days already, and it only flies around you. If any other person nears it, it will escape. Moreover, it's too fast. I have never seen a Delivery Bird with this speed before. It likely some expert who has sent you a letter." Zi Ling sweetly smiled; she was quite

bewitching.

Chu Feng slowly opened his palms when he heard that. After another circle around him, the Delivery Bird actually gradually descended. In the end, it stood atop his palms, and at that moment, Chu Feng discovered a Spirit Formation on the Delivery Bird's body.

That Spirit Formation was a very complex one. Within it was a message, and unless it was an expert in Spirit Formations, they were unable to obtain the information inside if they were unable to break open the Spirit Formation, even if they captured the Delivery Bird.

Because, when deactivating the formation, as long as there was one mistake, the message within the formation would be erased. The person who sent that message to Chu Feng really did have powerful techniques. It was a very careful person.

However, that Spirit Formation did not trouble Chu Feng at all. At present, Chu Feng was a Spirit Formation expert—that was publicly agreed. Although he was only a Purple-cloak World Spiritist, he, who grasped the Heaven's Eyes, had already surpassed a few normal Gold-cloak World Spiritists in terms of true accomplishments in Spirit Formation techniques.

After a few simple actions, Chu Feng deactivated the Spirit Formation on the Delivery Bird. The message hidden inside also entered Chu Feng's head completely.

After obtaining that message, Chu Feng lightly frowned, then looked at Zi Ling by his side. "Zi Ling, how long was I unconscious for?"

"One month," Zi Ling replied truthfully.

"One month? Then, in that month, has the Immortal Execution Archipelago made any move?" Chu Feng asked.

"They have. You not only joined up with the Crippling Night Demon Sect and killed the Eighth and Ninth Immortal, you even killed Ya Fei and stole Murong Xun's Royal Armament. Then, you kidnapped Zi Ling. All of your actions truly represented repeatedly slapping the face of the

Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"And since you've successfully challenged the might of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it as a whole now despises you. They dream to skin you alive and torture you, and have put down wanted posters throughout the entire Eastern Sea Region. No matter who it is, as long as they provide information regarding you, they would receive a large reward.

"Similarly, no matter who it is, as long as they dare to hide you, the Immortal Execution Archipelago would send an army without mercy.

"Not only you, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even formally announced war against the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They sent out large numbers of experts to search for the whereabouts of the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Those who are found will be killed without exception.

"Moreover, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even sent out invitations for an alliance. At present, the forces that have some strength received this invitation. The Three Great Monstrous Clans, who usually have nothing to do with humans, also received this invitation.

"Using rewards as bait, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is trying to ally all the powerful forces of the Eastern Sea Region, and with the reason of 'exterminating demons', they swear to remove the Crippling Night Demon Sect. This time, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has truly become enraged," Zi Xuanyuan gravely narrated. In the past month, although they were hiding here, they were not idly sitting around. They had learnt quite a bit of information, and even though the Eastern Sea Region was large, due to the existence of Delivery Birds, the spreading of information was very quick. Within a short month, everything was known.

Also within the short month, an enormous change happened to the Eastern Sea Region. It, which had been in peace for a long while, once again faced a new era with the flames of war flying everywhere.

Was the Immortal Execution Archipelago going to hold its position of

overlord, or would the Crippling Night Demon Sect take back its former glory? Or, perhaps, a powerful force that had been waiting would surprise everyone, and obtain power amidst the chaos? Everything was filled with uncertainty.

"You said the Immortal Execution Archipelago said I killed Ya Fei?" In comparison to the other chaos occurring however, Chu Feng was more intrigued with that question.

"Mm. The Immortal Execution Archipelago did say that. However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect also let word out that said Murong Xun killed Ya Fei. Moreover, they said you took Ya Fei and..." When he spoke up to there, Zi Xuanyuan stopped.

Chu Feng could feel everyone looking away from himself, and only Zi Ling's eyes remained on him.

"Heh, do you believe their words?" Chu Feng turned around and chuckled at Zi Ling. But, in his eyes, there was a bit of guilt because he knew what the Crippling Night Demon Sect said. They definitely announced, without an ounce of restraint, that he took down Ya Fei.

"I do. What is there to disbelieve? That does seem like your style of doing things!"

A smirk appeared on Zi Ling's face when she said that, intentionally making herself harbour evil intents. But, the warmth in her eyes told Chu Feng that she didn't blame him at all, nor was she angry at him.

Chu Feng's tense heart gradually relaxed when he saw Zi Ling wasn't mad, and only then did he ask Zi Xuanyuan again, "Senior Xuanyuan, other than Ya Fei, what else did the Crippling Night Demon Sect say?"

"The Crippling Night Demon Sect said you have already joined them, that you are already a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Those who dare to harm you will have their entire family eradicated by them.

"Moreover, the Crippling Night Demon Sect also sent a counterattack. Of the Five Elemental Kings, the Earth King, the Gold King, and the Wood King have all shown themselves and attacked several important

territories of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, causing severe losses for them.

"If they didn't, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn't have put so many beneficial rewards as bait to ally with other forces, to even send out an invitation to the Three Great Monstrous Clans. The Crippling Night Demon Sect is indeed very powerful, and now, they are hidden from view so the Immortal Execution Archipelago have suffered quite a few losses," Zi Xuanyuan continued saying.

"Then no wonder." Chu Feng nodded, as if he understood something.

Chapter 824: Shelter

“Chu Feng, who sent you that message? The Crippling Night Demon Sect?” The smart Zi Ling had a clue what Chu Feng was thinking when he asked those questions.

“Mm. It’s Senior Earth King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He sent me a message and said he wants to meet me, that there’s something he needs to discuss.” Chu Feng did not trick Zi Ling.

“Then you should quickly go find them. No need to worry about us. In the past month, my father and mother had carefully laid Concealment Spirit Formations, so it’s fine if we hide here,” said Zi Ling, knowing that Chu Feng had business in hand.

“No, it is not safe here. Don’t underestimate the Immortal Execution Archipelago; they possess many techniques. Even with my Spirit Formation techniques, I was unable to escape their search. If they send experts here, they will definitely be able to find you.” Chu Feng quickly shook his head. He had saved Zi Ling after so much difficulty, so he didn’t want Zi Ling to enter the tiger’s mouth again.

“But, right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago are like water and fire. In order to deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the Immortal Execution Archipelago even used important lands as the price to ally with the Three Great Monstrous Clans so they can deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect all together

“Right now, although quite a few Crippling Night Demon Sect experts have shown themselves, if the Three Great Monstrous Clans truly allies with the Immortal Execution Archipelago, then it won’t be good. Since they’re looking for you with such haste, they must have important matters to discuss. You cannot put this off,” Zi Ling said very seriously.

When he saw Zi Ling who acted in such a way, Chu Feng’s heart couldn’t help warming. She was truly thoughtful. Not only for him, but also for the global situation.

“Right now, there is only one definite safe place, and that’s the Misty

Peak. I'll first send you there, then go the Four Seas Academy," Chu Feng said.

"Four Seas Academy? Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others are still in the Four Seas Academy?" Zi Ling asked worriedly.

"Mm, but you don't need to worry. Even if the Immortal Execution Archipelago knows I'm called Chu Feng, they shouldn't be that quick to find that they are related to me. After all, the world is so big and there are so many famous people. It would require large amounts of time in investigation to find the ones connected to me," Chu Feng calmly said. He had already prepared for that.

"But... that Earth King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Doesn't he have something he needs you for?" Zi Ling was still a bit worried, afraid she would interfere in Chu Feng's important matters.

"He didn't tell me the specifics, and just told me to find a place to meet him. Right now, I'll tell him to find me at the Four Seas Academy. After sending you to the Misty Peak, I'll go there and meet up with him," Chu Feng said.

"Then fine." Zi Ling didn't try to convince Chu Feng anymore when he insisted like that. Instead, she listened to his arrangements because she knew very well if they were not arranged in a safe place, even if Chu Feng met up with the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he would not be able to fight with no worries.

Afterwards, on that very day, Chu Feng led Zi Ling and the others away from the mountain range. He found a Teleportation Array that wasn't guarded by the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Through it, they were able to be directly sent to the Misty Peak. Even if the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt Chu Feng and the others would possibly head towards the Misty Peak, they could not stop them unless they truly decided to anger Lady Piaomiao, the old monster who had lived for a thousand years. They would definitely not dare come to the Misty Peak since they had also angered the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After Chu Feng and the others walked away from the Teleportation

Array and saw the familiar sceneries, he could finally somewhat relax his tense heart because he knew they had successfully arrived within the territory of Lady Piaomiao. Within that zone, there was no one who would harm them.

The only thing he was worried about was whether the Misty Peak would accept Zi Ling and the others.

"Junior Chu Feng!" Just at that moment, a familiar voice suddenly rang out. At the same time, a familiar person flew over from nearby—it was Chun Wu.

"Junior Chu Feng, you've finally come!" After seeing Chu Feng, Chun Wu was very happy. Then, she looked at Zi Xuanyuan and the others, and in the end, her eyes landed on Zi Ling's body. She said in amazement, "Waa, this is Murong Xun's fiancée? She's even more beautiful than my Senior Qiuzhu!"

"Senior Chun Wu, this is Zi Ling. However, she is not Murong Xun's fiancée, but mine," Chu Feng corrected with a smile.

"Senior Chun Wu, how are you? When we were coming here, Chu Feng mentioned you and said you helped him greatly." As for Zi Ling, she wasn't angry because of Chun Wu's mistake and instead, very respectfully bowed to her. She was very grateful to those who helped Chu Feng.

"Ehh, doesn't that mean you're my sister-in-law? Heh, hello sister-in-law!1" Chun Wu knew she made a mistake so her smile was very sincere.

"Senior Chun Wu, it seemed that you were waiting here for us?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"Yeah! Master knew you've stirred up a huge mess, and it's even said you took away quite a few people from the Zi family. You yourself are fine, but it's likely inconvenient for you to have people by your side. So, she told me to wait here, and if you came, to bring you up. The Misty Peak has already opened its gates, welcoming your arrival.

"I just didn't think I would have to wait this long. I even thought you wouldn't come! But, luckily, you still did. This at least means nothing

happened to you. Hehe…" Chun Wu's smile was very comfortable. It could be seen that she truly worried for Chu Feng's safety.

"So Lady Piaomiao already expected me to return." Chu Feng was ecstatic when he heard those words. Originally, he even worried she wouldn't accept them, but now, he could finally be at ease completely. As he felt grateful, he said to Chun Wu, "Senior Chun Wu, I'm truly sorry you had to wait here so long for us."

"Junior Chu Feng, please don't say that. Back then, in the Depraved Ravine, if it wasn't to save me, you wouldn't have killed Zhan Feng, and you wouldn't have had this grudge with the Immortal Execution Archipelago," Chun Wu said shamefully.

"Before I even met the Immortal Execution Archipelago, there was already enmity between us. The present situation was already fated to occur, and it was unrelated to you in any way." Chu Feng shook his head.

When she heard those words, Chun Wu couldn't help looking at Zi Ling. Then, as if she understood something, she didn't say anything more. Lightly smiling, she said, "Follow me. Senior Qiushui is also here. They will definitely be very happy when they see you."

Soon after, Chu Feng and the Zi family followed Chun Wu to the Misty Peak. Seemingly already prepared, after coming up the peak, Chun Wu brought Chu Feng and the others to a palace, and after entering, Chun Wu had Chu Feng and Zi Ling wait there, while Zi Xuanyuan, Zi Ling's parents, and the others were brought to elsewhere. From what Chun Wu said, she was arranging them into their residences.

"Chu Feng, you truly are a troublemaker!" Shortly after Chun Wu left, Qiushui Fuyan's voice rang out within the palace. Casting his gaze over, not only was she there, even the unfathomable Lady Piaomiao was slowly walking towards them.

Although they were two super-experts, when Chu Feng saw them again, he not only lacked any nervousness, there was even a hint of an intimate feeling.

After making such a huge mess, those who were willing to accept him—

if they were not ones harboring malicious intents—were people who would show him great kindness. Obviously, these two were the latter.

*

1. “Junior Chu Feng” would be more literally translated as “Junior Brother Chu Feng”, which is where the “sister-in-law” comes from.

Chapter 825: The Price of Kindness

“Chu Feng pays his respects to Senior Qiushui, Senior Piaomiao.” Although he was not afraid of them, the necessary etiquette was still necessary.

“Seniors, Junior Zi Ling pays her respects.” The amiable Zi Ling also sweetly smiled, and bowed to them along with Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, you’ve truly got good fortune to have such a beautiful fiancée! From what I see, her title of being one of the three great beauties of the Eastern Sea Region should be changed.

“How is this Zi Ling even one of the three great beauties? She is totally the greatest beauty in the Eastern Sea Region! In terms of appearances, Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu are both inferior.”

Qiushui Fuyan walked up to Zi Ling and looked at her with a smile. Her eyes were full of admiration, and even though there was still a veil covering her face, Chu Feng could still tell that her mood seemed to be quite good.

“Since you possess a Divine Body, you should have outstanding aptitude. Judging by your age, you shouldn’t be that much younger than Chu Feng. Why is your cultivation so ordinary though? You’re only in the first level of the Heaven realm.” However, in comparison to Qiushui Fuyan, what Lady Piaomiao was more concerned with was Zi Ling’s cultivation.

“I…” Zi Ling found the words difficult to form. She didn’t know where to start, so she cast her begging gaze at Chu Feng.

“Senior Piaomiao, Zi Ling should indeed have an exceptional aptitude. If everything was normal, it would be completely reasonable for her to surpass Murong Xun right now.

“However, the reason why her cultivation became this ordinary is because when she was born, she was forced to eat the Heaven Gripping Pellet.” Chu Feng spoke in place for Zi Ling.

“The Heaven Gripping Pellet?!” Lady Piaomiao’s expression couldn’t

help changing slightly when she heard that.

"Heaven Gripping Pellet? What's that?" Qiushui Fuyan clearly didn't know what that was as she asked Lady Piaomiao.

"The Heaven Gripping Pellet was originally a medicine from the Ancient Era. The rumours say it's a poison that can seal the power of a Divine Body or a possessor of a special bloodline. Because it strangles the talent —something granted by the heavens—of a genius, it's called the Heaven Gripping Pellet." Lady Piaomiao's knowledge was quite extraordinary; she indeed knew the origin of the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

"There's actually a poison like that? This Immortal Execution Archipelago truly is despicable. They must have feared Zi Ling's potential rise in power, which would threaten their position, so that's why they did this," Qiushui Fuyan said very furiously.

"It's not that simple. From what I know, the Heaven Gripping Pellet not only has the effect of sealing talent, it can even transfer that talent to others," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Transferring it to other? How so?!" Qiushui Fuyan was confused.

"Let's take Zi Ling as an example. When she was born, she was fed the Heaven Gripping Pellet. From that instant, the divine power that should have allowed her to become superior to all was sealed. And, along her growth, the seal on the divine power became more and more thorough. If this continues, she will only become more and more ordinary.

"And, when she reaches twenty years of age, the sealed divine power in her body will reach its peak. At that time, if she were to do the thing between a man and a woman, the sealed power would be transferred onto that man's body, and Zi Ling would become a cripple who cannot cultivate. As for the other person, because he was able to obtain Zi Ling's power, he would transform into a dragon," Lady Piaomiao explained.

"Dammit! This Immortal Execution Archipelago truly deserves to die. They not only took away talent that should have belonged to Zi Ling, they even want to take it for themselves! No wonder they didn't kill Zi Ling directly, and instead arranged a marriage for Zi Ling and Murong Xun.

They are truly despicable."

After knowing the truth, Qiushui Fuyan was even more furious. But then, after some thinking, there was something she felt confused about. She asked, "Then, before Zi Ling is twenty, if the person does the thing between a man and a woman with her, what would happen?"

"Twenty years is the limit of the Heaven Gripping Pellet. It is when the sealed power reaches the apex. The ripest time to take away the sealed power is only then. Before twenty years, if that thing were done, then the person wouldn't just be unable to obtain power, he would instead die by the backlash.

"So, that's why Murong Xun doesn't dare to touch Zi Ling before the age of twenty, and set the arranged battle on the day Zi Ling becomes twenty," Lady Piaomiao continued explaining.

"Lady Piaomiao, then what about after twenty?" Chu Feng asked with concern.

"After twenty, due to the oppression of the Heaven Gripping Pellet, the person with the sealed power will become weaker and weaker. Cultivating also becomes more and more difficult, where, in the end, the person becomes completely ordinary until they die," Lady Piaomiao replied.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago should truly die!" The fury in Chu Feng's heart was akin to an erupted volcano. It sprayed out and burst everywhere, surging throughout all parts of his body. If he could, Chu Feng would slaughter a path right up to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and make them pay the price for their evil actions.

But then, after a thought, Chu Feng asked again, "Senior Piaomiao, is there a way to remove the effects of this Heaven Gripping Pellet?"

"This Heaven Gripping Pellet comes from the Ancient Era. If you hadn't said that Zi Ling was forced to take this Heaven Gripping Pellet, and that her situation is indeed extremely similar to the symptoms of the pellet, I truly wouldn't dare to believe this pellet, lost for so long, had reappeared in this world.

“However, for everything in this world, there is always an opposite. It’s not like there isn’t a method of removing the effects of this Heaven Gripping Pellet,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Truly? Senior Piaomiao, can you help Zi Ling remove them then?” Chu Feng was elated when he heard those words.

“I don’t dare to guarantee it will succeed, but I can give it a try. However, this is not such a simple task. I need to find information and carefully study the compositions of this Heaven Gripping Pellet, then attempt to remove its effects. This requires a very long period of time because I don’t even know how a Heaven Gripping Pellet is made right now.

“But, don’t worry. I will do my best, so just hand Zi Ling over to me and don’t worry. I can guarantee her safety here,” said Lady Piaomiao.

“Then sorry for the trouble, Senior Piaomiao.” There was no need to mention what Chu Feng felt when he heard Lady Piaomiao’s agreement. It was simply like seeing a strand of light within endless darkness. Lady Piaomiao was truly a person who helped him greatly.

Afterwards, she specially arranged a place for Zi Ling to rest. Originally, Chu Feng wanted to accompany Zi Ling for a bit more, but due to the tone the Earth King had when sending him the message, there seemed to be something urgent. So, Chu Feng didn’t stay there for long and on that day, he left the Misty Peak and went forth to the Four Seas Academy.

However, before he even arrived at the Four Seas Academy, Chu Feng panicked because on the road, he discovered with astonishment that drawings of his face had already been posted at every major location. There was indeed someone who, by the incitement of rewards, sold Chu Feng’s appearance to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Dammit! If I knew this would happen, I should have killed everyone inside and outside the Zi family.”

When he saw drawings of himself, Chu Feng was truly furious because within the Four Seas Academy, there was really quite a few people who had seen what he looked like. At this moment, his drawing had already

been pasted here. It was likely that within the Four Seas Academy, everyone already knew Chu Feng's very actions, and So Rou, Su Mei, and the others were likely in danger.

And this... this was the price of kindness!

Chapter 826: Someone Is Waiting for You

Chu Feng knew things were going horribly. Thus, to an even greater degree, he could not ignore Su Rou and the others. In the end, he changed his appearance and went inside the territory of the Four Seas Academy.

However, Chu Feng felt odd after entering, because he actually couldn't even see a single wanted poster of himself. Furthermore, as he continued walking, he did not see anyone within the Four Seas Academy.

When he arrived at the entrance, only then did Chu Feng discover that it was actually sealed. No one could visit, and none of the disciples from the Four Seas Academy were permitted to step outside.

"What's going on? Did the Immortal Execution Archipelago already ally with the Four Seas Academy?" When he saw such a situation, Chu Feng became increasingly worried. The Immortal Execution Archipelago had sent an alliance invitation to nearly all of the powerful forces in the entire Eastern Sea Region. Due to the Four Seas Academy's strength and position, they were naturally included as well.

"My friend, Chu Feng, I've been waiting quite a while here!" Just as Chu Feng felt worry, a familiar voice suddenly rang through his ear—it was Taikou.

Chu Feng couldn't help but feel joy in his heart. He quickly looked around, and as he expected, in the south-east direction, he found traces of Taikou. The single-legged old man was currently heading over as he rode the wind.

"Senor Taikou, you can still recognize me even though I've turned like this?" Chu Feng felt quite shocked because he had transformed his face. Yet, Taikou still called out his name; he had clearly seen through his disguise, the Transformational Mask.

"Hoh, with your little toy, perhaps you can trick others, but it cannot deceive my eyes," Taikou said with a smile. On his aged face, a bit of pride appeared.

Chu Feng couldn't help being surprised when he heard those words. Even though he already knew Taikou's strength was unfathomable, after seeing him today, he appeared even more powerful. Chu Feng was nearly certain the old man possessed a minimal cultivation of a Martial King.

He didn't pressure Chu Feng in any way, and even gave off a very benevolent feeling. However, after his experience with many powerful experts, when Chu Feng examined Taikou once again today, he faintly felt that Taikou's strength was above people like Qiushui Fuyan and the Earth King, these rank one Martial Kings.

"Senior Taikou, you know about my circumstances?" Chu Feng asked.

"Do you mean you being Wuqing, or what you did in the Depraved Ravine and the Zi family?" Taikou said with a smile. There were even some hints of teasing within his words.

Chu Feng scratched his head and embarrassedly smiled. Without asking, he already knew Taikou knew everything. So, Chu Feng just asked directly, "Senior Taikou, are my friends well?"

"Don't worry, they should be fine because they've already left the Eastern Sea Region before news of you spread," Taikou said.

"They left the Eastern Sea Region? Where did they go?" Chu Feng asked.

"When they left, they even came and looked for me. I heard they said that the desolate and vast lands at the eastern side are divided into several continents, and that many of those continents are ruled by fallen dynasties.

"These dynasties don't have sufficient strength to establish themselves in the Eastern Sea Region, so they call themselves kings at such bleak places. Since they have plenty of time, they even hold an Assembly of a Thousand Clans every year, and this year's assembly has been set up at your homeland, the continent of the Nine Provinces. All of them have returned to support Jiang Wushang," Taikou said.

"How long have they left for?" Chu Feng asked.

"They set off just a few days after you left," Taikou replied.

“It means they should have arrived at the continent of the Nine Provinces by now. They should be fine.” Chu Feng’s tense heart was relaxed when he heard that.

“Don’t worry. Even if they didn’t leave the Eastern Sea Region, for a while, there’d still be no one who could harm them with me here,” Taikou said very confidently.

The gratefulness Chu Feng felt in his heart unavoidably increased by a bit more when he heard Taikou’s words. He and the Immortal Execution Archipelago were in eternal conflict—this was something the entire world knew.

Yet, despite these circumstances, Taikou still said those words. That meant he was clearly announcing which side he stood on. The old man who met Chu Feng by no more than mere coincidence prepared to support him to the end.

“Senior, why is the Four Seas Academy sealed off?” Chu Feng asked curiously as he felt gratitude.

“It’s a decision we made after I discussed it with the academy head,” Taikou said with a smile.

“What exactly is the reason? Could you possibly tell me?” Chu Feng quickly asked again.

“Of course I can, because the sealing off of the Four Seas Academy is related to you.” Taikou laughed, then said, “Before drawings of you even spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, I had anticipated this day.

“I was afraid your relationship with the Four Seas Academy would spread too fast, which would harm your friends, so after a discussion with the academy head, we sealed off the Four Seas Academy. Then, we looked through all the disciples that had seen you and removed these potential troubles.”

“Senior Taikou you... you actually did all this entirely for the sake of my safety... I truly cannot repay this favour.” No matter what, Chu Feng never would have thought the Four Seas Academy was sealed off because of

him.

“Ah, no need to thank me. I can seal information coming from the Four Seas Academy, but I cannot seal information outside the Four Seas Academy. As they say, ‘There are no air-tight walls.’ There are some things that cannot be hidden forever.

“However, this at least gives you some time. Return to the continent of the Nine Province and go find Jiang Wushang and the others. Tell them not to return to the Four Seas Academy, and not to return to the Eastern Sea Region,” Taikou said.

“Senior Taikou, if we just leave like this, will it bring trouble to your Four Seas Academy?” Chu Feng said worriedly.

“It won’t. If there’s truly someone who says you came to the Four Seas Academy, we can just deny it. They don’t have proof anyway, and that Immortal Execution Archipelago is free to come search. After all, none of you are even here. What can they do the Four Seas Academy if they can’t even find anyone?

“Besides, we aren’t any pushovers. Since they’ve already made enemies with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they definitely don’t want to make any more. From what I see, they still don’t have the guts to stir up trouble in the Four Seas Academy.

“It’s like how they know Lady Piaomiao will protect you, but they still won’t dare to do anything at the Misty Peak. Although the Four Seas Academy is not as powerful as the Misty Peak, we do possess some strength.” Taikou appeared very calm. One could tell he truly did not fear the Immortal Execution Archipelago looking for trouble. The reason he did all this was only because he feared Chu Feng would meet trouble.

“Senior, I eternally owe you this great favour, but I will definitely not leave it be. In the future, I will definitely repay the grace you have shown me.”

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn’t help bowing to Taikou again. The gratitude he felt towards him truly came from the bottom of his heart because Taikou again and again helped him without asking for anything

in return. That favour was truly too heavy.

"Okay, okay. The reason I helped you is because I have a good impression of you. I have no other aims, so don't make it seem like I'm helping you because I want something from you." Taikou smiled as he propped Chu Feng up. Then, he cast his gaze into the distant horizon and said, "Go, there is someone waiting for you."

Chu Feng turned his head around to look, but at that instant, he couldn't help being taken aback.

Behind him, other than vast white clouds, there was clearly no one there.

Chapter 827: Using Violence to Suppress Violence

At that moment, Chu Feng was standing still, blank-faced.

Not to mention looking with his naked eyes, Chu Feng couldn't even detect anything with his Spirit power.

However, Chu Feng knew Taikou wouldn't have said those words for no reason. So, he could only use the Heaven's Eyes and when he did, he was immediately shocked. He discovered a hidden person. Although he had intentionally concealed himself—thus his outline and shape were very blurry—with the powerful observational strength of the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was still able to identify him as the Earth King.

"He's waited here for a long time. He must have something to discuss with you, so I won't disturb you anymore.

"However, Chu Feng, if you need anything in the future, you can find me at any time. But, remember, do not come to the Four Seas Academy again after today."

As Taikou spoke, he gave a palm-sized crystal to Chu Feng. It was a Sphere of Sealing, and within it there was strange energy that supported a creature—a Delivery Bird. Clearly, that Delivery Bird could find Taikou and would help Chu Feng send messages to him.

"Thank you, Senior Taikou." After receiving the Delivery Bird, Chu Feng once again expressed his gratitude towards Taikou.

Taikou didn't say anything more. With a smile worn on his face, as he waved his hand in farewell, he drifted away.

"This person called Taikou truly is not simple. Chu Feng, do you know where he comes from?" After Taikou left, the Earth King also appeared and came to Chu Feng's side.

"I only know that this Senior Taikou is a Divine Instructor in the Four Seas Academy. As for anything else, I'm not too certain either," Chu Feng

replied truthfully.

"Divine Instructor? ...I truly didn't expect such a person to be hidden inside the Four Seas Academy." The Earth King remained looking in the direction of Taikou's departure, his eyes full of graveness and surprise.

"Senior Earth King, is this Senior Taikou very powerful?" Chu Feng asked in an attempt to salvage more information. As a Martial King, and a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, the Earth King could likely understand Taikou's power much better than him.

"This person's strength is far above mine," the Earth King responded.

"What?" After hearing those words, Chu Feng couldn't help but gasp deeply. Even though he already guessed that Taikou's strength was above the Earth King's, after he personally confirmed it, Chu Feng still felt disbelief, especially on the "far" word he spoke of—its meaning was extraordinary.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help looking back at Taikou, but only then did he discover that he had already disappeared. A question unavoidably popped into his mind at the same time it did to the Earth King's: Who exactly is this Taikou?!

"Chu Feng, you know about the current circumstances of the Eastern Sea Region, right?" the Earth King suddenly asked.

"I do understand it a bit, but I'm not sure if it's accurate or not." Chu Feng nodded, then told the Earth King what he knew about the present situation.

"Mm, it's not too far off. The present situation is as you said: the Immortal Execution Archipelago has formally declared war against the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and they are rallying allies from various place.

"However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect will still be able to handle it. Actually, the reason I came to look for you is because there's something related to you. After a discussion between me, the Gold King, and the Wood King, we decided it's better for you to personally take care of this,"

the Earth King said.

"Senior Earth King, what is it?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked. When he heard it was related to him, he subconsciously felt the news was nothing good.

"Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago feels overwhelming hatred for my Crippling Night Demon Sect, but their hatred for you alone is in no way inferior to the hatred they feel towards entire Crippling Night Demon Sect, because the things you did were indeed enough to put them in a very difficult spot.

"And, right now, they are unable to find you. The fury in their hearts cannot be released, so they redirect it towards those related to you.

"At present, they already know you come from a place called the continent of the Nine Provinces. So, they know that there are definitely people close to you in the Nine Provinces. They've decided to point their blades towards it and vent their hatred by destroying the Nine Provinces.

"However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago still puts up a righteous appearance to the public, so due to their name, they cannot do too heartless of an action. As such, they've set up a plan," the Earth King said.

"What are they planning to do?" Chu Feng quickly asked.

"Heh." The Earth King first smiled proudly, then said, "Members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect have been scattered throughout the Eastern Sea Region. Although this does cause the Crippling Night Demon Sect to be split, 'there are advantages for all disadvantages'. The members in various areas have become a powerful net of information for us.

"According to the report from one of our members, we have confirmation that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has hiddenly instructed a dynasty in the Eastern Sea Region. They want them to eradicate the continent of the Nine Provinces, using the excuse of seizing power.

"As for that dynasty, they are merely a small force. Naturally, they don't

dare to go against the intentions of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, several days ago, they have already started their journey. They are leading their entire clan's experts towards the continent of the Nine Provinces with the aim of commencing a massacre."

"Dammit!"

Chu Feng's expression changed greatly when he heard that. His fists subconsciously tightened, and on his face, what appeared coincident with his anger was worry. At this moment, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, there were indeed many people of importance to Chu Feng. Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi were at the Nine Provinces right now as well.

The Immortal Execution Archipelago had truly made a fierce move, and Chu Feng also knew who leaked the information to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, telling them he came from the Nine Provinces—the filthy Zi family.

"Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago has made a fierce move, there's no need to panic. The Crippling Night Demon Sect has already prepared a response, and the reason I wanted to meet you so soon is to discuss this with you," the Earth King said with a smile.

"Senior Earth King, then what should I do?" Chu Feng asked.

"Follow me." He leapt forward and up, flying away from the Four Seas Academy. Chu Feng followed.

After they left the territory of the Four Seas Academy, they arrived above a vast sea. The waves of that sea were so high they could touch the sky. The violent gales wreaked havoc, and other than the surging sounds of waves, it was the roars of sea beasts.

But to the vast Eastern Sea Region, a sea like this was no more than usual. One could even say it was one of the most typical seas.

At first, Chu Feng felt confused as to why the Earth King brought him to this place. Just as he was about to ask, he heard a huge explosion. From the sea below, an enormous wave sprayed up.

As the surging wave rose into the sky and rolled around, an enormous thing also appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight.

It was a warship—a black-coloured warship. It flew out from the sea and gradually rose into the air.

That warship was extremely large. On the surface, there were not only many Spirit Formations that could both attack and defend, there were even many large palaces and towers. It was simply as if it were a small castle made by steel.

Most importantly, Chu Feng could see, at the very front steel deck of the warship, over a thousand people standing orderly. The weakest was in the seventh level of the Heaven realm, while the strongest was in the ninth level of the Heaven realm. All of them were at the peak of the Heaven realm.

bang, bang, bang...

Quickly after, nine more huge waves soared into the sky, and after the waves returned below, nine more enormous black-coloured warships had shot out from the sea. When they rose into the air, they slowly drifted up to Chu Feng, forming a line.

Not only did the nine other warships have the exact same layout as the first ship, even the number of people and their strength were extremely similar to the first warship's.

Ten warships, and over ten thousand experts at the peak of the Heaven realm, currently stood before Chu Feng.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Just at that moment, another thirty-eight people flew over from nearby, and orderly stood in front of Chu Feng and the Earth King. They were thirty-eight Martial Lords, and even though their cultivations were only at the early stages of the Martial Lord realm, they were Martial Lords nonetheless.

"We pay our respects to Lord Earth King! We pay our respects to Lord Chu Feng!" After coming up to them, the thirty-eight Martial Lords all half-knelt in the air simultaneously, and greeted the Earth King and Chu

Feng.

"We pay our respects to Lord Earth King! We pay our respects to Lord Chu Feng!" At the same time, all of the Heaven realm experts on the ten warships simultaneously knelt onto the ground as well, greeting the Earth King and Chu Feng.

"Senior Earth King, this is..." Chu Feng didn't really even know what to do when he saw that.

As for the Earth King, he lightly smiled and said, "This is the response I've prepared for you: using violence to suppress violence!"

Chapter 828: Current Achievements

“Using violence to suppress violence?” Chu Feng already understood what the Earth King meant as he saw the fleet before his eyes.

These ten warships were very impressive. The value of each one could even be compared to an Incomplete Royal Armament. This was a real treasure built up by large investments.

No matter if it was the over ten thousand Heaven realm experts on the warship, or the thirty-eight kneeling Martial Lords in front of him, they were all of the younger generation. There were no elders there, not even a single middle-aged man.

It was clear that those ten warships and these people were specially prepared—prepared for Chu Feng. The Earth King wanted Chu Feng to lead the young experts of the Crippling Night Demon Sect straight into the continent of the Nine Provinces, so he could kill and display his might to all of the people who held unkind intentions towards the people close to him and the people in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“Chu Feng, I know quite a bit about the dynasty that is heading towards the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“They are called the Gao Dynasty. Their strongest is the current head—a rank six Martial Lord.

“This time, including the head himself, there are eleven Martial Lords who are heading towards the continent of the Nine Provinces, and over five hundred cultivators at the peak of the Heaven realm, as well as six thousand two hundred fifty-one Heaven realm cultivators.

“To destroy the continent of the Nine Provinces, this formation of people is more than enough. Actually, in all of the vast eastern continents, there are none who can defend against them. However, the formation of people I’ve prepared for you is definitely also more than enough to eradicate the Gao Dynasty.

“Lead these young ones to the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Afterwards, you don't need to look over them. Just dismiss them and tell them to return to the Eastern Sea Region on their own," the Earth King said.

"Senior Earth King, thank you." Chu Feng clasped his hands at the Earth King because the information he provided was really too important, and all of these experts were very important as well.

"Chu Feng, words of thanks are too much. You are already a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and those who dare to attack our members will have the choice to walk only one path—the path to death.

"Go. The Gao Dynasty has already moved. If you leave right now, with the speed of these ten warships, you should have no problem catching up. However, if you delay this any further, you may not make it in time," the Earth King said.

"Mm." Chu Feng didn't hesitate anymore. With an army of over ten thousand people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng led them back to the continent of the Nine Provinces, his homeland. He swore to kill all those who dared to invade his soil.

Of course, in the continent of the Nine Provinces, no knew about Chu Feng nor of him leading an army back. In fact, they didn't even know that an unprecedented danger had been gradually approaching.

So, at the Jiang Dynasty, it was full of decoration and extremely lively. On every single person's face, there was a smile that could not be wiped away.

It was for no other reason but because the prince whose aptitude was the greatest, Jiang Wushang, had returned.

Roughly a year had passed since Jiang Wushang left the continent of the Nine Provinces, and when he did, Jiang Wushang was already strong—he was at the third level of the Heaven realm. Moreover, Jiang Wushang was the person who possessed the strongest bloodline power in the Jiang Dynasty.

However, Jiang Wushang was now at the eighth level of the Heaven

realm. Moreover, what flowed within his body was no longer a Royal Bloodline, but a legendary Imperial Bloodline! How could the Jiang Dynasty not be excited?

The Imperial Bloodline—that was a dream they didn't even dare to think of. In many people's hearts, it was even a legend that came from ancient times.

Yet now, at present, there was a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline within the dynasty. It was something they could not even dream of; it would be difficult if they didn't want to be happy.

And especially since this year's Assembly of a Thousand Clans was held at their Jiang Dynasty, when the dynasties from many areas came, Jiang Wushang could boast the glory of their Jiang Dynasty. And from then on, in all of the eastern continents, there would no longer be a single dynasty that would dare to look down on the Jiang Dynasty.

One could even say on a certain day in the future, the Jiang Dynasty could slaughter a path back into the Eastern Sea Region under Jiang Wushang's lead, and hold a land in the place with many powerful clans.

That was why the entire Jiang Dynasty was enveloped by a joyous atmosphere. They even sent invitations to powers such as the Azure Dragon School and the World Spirit Guild and welcomed them to the Jiang Dynasty to share together such an elating news.

At that moment, within the Jiang Dynasty, there were banquet tables set up. Some of the most famous people in the entire continent of the Nine Provinces were all there as they entered the banquet.

"I truly would never have thought after a short year or so, the geniuses sent out would have such enormous improvements. All of them have already reached the peak levels of the Heaven realm!

"If another year passes, wouldn't they all become Martial Lords?" Within the banquet, the most famous and powerful person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Azure Dragon Founder, spoke with a smile.

As the strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces, he too felt happy for the accomplishments Jiang Wushang and the others achieved. And especially since three of the four geniuses were from his Azure Dragon School, that made him, the founder, feel proud.

"Senior, you praise us too much. The reason we were able to attain our current cultivation levels is all because of Big Brother Chu Feng's help. To be honest, even my Imperial Bloodline was obtained only because of him." As Jiang Wushang mentioned Chu Feng, his face was full of gratitude.

"Chu Feng? It's actually because of that Chu Feng?" When they heard those words, everyone on scene was stunned, especially the people from the Jiang Dynasty. All of their expressions changed greatly, because they never would have thought Jiang Wushang's current power of the Imperial Bloodline was acquired because of Chu Feng.

If that were true, then Chu Feng had truly helped the Jiang Dynasty greatly. That favour, not to mention them, even their future generations would not dare to forget it!

However, since that matter was an enormous one, it was simply inconceivable.

It was especially so for them, who possessed Inherited Bloodlines. They could not understand how Chu Feng helped Jiang Wushang obtain that Imperial Bloodline. After all, bloodlines were very complicated things. Outsiders shouldn't be able to help them at all, so that was why many of the dynasty's people doubted whether Jiang Wushang's words were true.

"Brother Wushang's words are very correct. The reason we have our present achievements is indeed because of Junior Chu Feng," Zhang Tianyi said, as if afraid they would not believe it.

"We sisters can attest to this as well." Su Rou and Su Mei also spoke.

And after all of their words, the people on scene looked at each other, their faces full of complicated emotions. If it was said they more or less doubted the validity of Jiang Wushang's statement since he spoke alone, then they had no choice but to believe it after all four of those geniuses

spoke.

They initially thought Jiang Wushang's rate of improvement was already astounding and could be titled as an unprecedented genius, but now, it didn't look like it.

Chu Feng, who had walked out of the Azure Province then stunned the entire continent, seemed to have even more outstanding achievements, ones far above Jiang Wushang and the others.

Chapter 829: Savior

"Wushang, what level of cultivation has that Chu Feng reached now?" Within shock, the old ancestor of the Jiang clan spoke. At the same time, almost everyone's gazes were cast towards Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

All of them wanted to know the strength of the young genius whose name astonished the Nine Provinces, whether he was truly stronger than the three of them.

"This..." Jiang Wushang did not reply, and instead, looked at Zhang Tianyi by his side, as well as Su Rou and Su Mei. Then, he said with a smile, "I also don't know what Big Brother Chu Feng's cultivation is right now. It's better that you personally ask him when he returns in the future."

Jiang Wushang did not lie, because to be precise, he truly did not know what Chu Feng's current cultivation was. The techniques he possessed were truly too complex. Moreover, his cultivation speed was really too fast, so he wasn't certain if Chu Feng's cultivation at present had remained on the same level as back then.

"Wushang, you aren't concealing his cultivation because that Chu Feng is inferior to all of you—yet you're afraid of speaking the truth and making him lose face—right?"

After Jiang Wushang spoke, one of the dynasty elders in the banquet spoke such a sentence. Moreover, his tone was even full of certainty, as if his guess were the truth.

"Nonsense! My brother is a genius! How could he be inferior to these three children?!" When he heard those words, the Monstrous Monkey King was enraged. He fiercely slammed the table and stood up, pointing at the dynasty elder, and loudly cursed at him. He did not feel that Chu Feng's cultivation would be weaker than Jiang Wushang's and the others'.

In reality, it was not only the Monstrous Monkey King who was furious. The Azure Dragon Founder's complexion was quite unsightly, and even Su

Rou, Su Mei, and Zhang Tianyi tightly furrowed their brows as strong displeasure emerged onto their faces.

If it weren't a banquet set up by Jiang Wushang's family, judging by their natures, it was likely they would have went into a rage because they did not allow anyone to speak ill of Chu Feng.

Not to mention the three of them, even Jiang Wushang, as a member of the Jiang clan, had a rather distorted face. There was even anger that would explode at any moment glittering in his eyes.

Chu Feng's position in his heart was truly too high. He truly looked at him like a savior.

So, even if the person who spoke was a relative in the same clan, when there was someone who was disrespectful towards Chu Feng, the spirited young man Jiang Wushang was uncontrollably furious.

Only he himself knew where his cultivation came from and what sort of assistance Chu Feng gave him. It was a favour simply akin to saving his life. A favour not only to him, but also his successors.

"I do not permit insolent behaviors! Chu Feng is the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces. His cultivation is not one you can doubt!

"Apologize to Lord Azure Dragon and Lord Monstrous Monkey King immediately!" Feeling the poorly progressing situation, the emperor of the Jiang Dynasty hurriedly shouted at that elder.

"Lords, I was mistaken. I shouldn't have doubted Chu Feng's cultivation. I ask for your forgiveness."

Even though the dynasty elder was very unwilling to, since the emperor had spoken, he naturally did not dare to go against his. He rose and bowed to the Azure Dragon Founder and the Monstrous Monkey King, apologizing and admitting his wrongs.

"Hmph. Mistaken? From what I see, you're more like an idiotic pig! You even dare to suspect my brother's strength? Have you forgotten who saved your Jiang Dynasty back then? If it weren't for my brother, your Jiang

Dynasty would have already been flattened! God damn, do you feel no gratitude?" However, the Monstrous Monkey King wasn't willing to accept the apology from the elder and even cursed at him with greater annoyance.

And when they heard that, even though some of the people from the Jiang Dynasty felt displeased, most of them couldn't help lowering their heads as shame emerged onto their faces. As the Monstrous Monkey King said, if it weren't for Chu Feng, their Jiang Dynasty would have indeed been destroyed.

No matter if Chu Feng helped Jiang Wushang obtain the Imperial Bloodline or not, something undeniable was the fact that Chu Feng was a person who had helped the Jiang Dynasty greatly—he was a person who had saved the Jiang Dynasty.

"Begone! From now on, you are not allowed to appear in all subsequent banquets! Those who do not respect a savior of the Jiang Dynasty are not worthy to show up in these banquets! Begone, now!" shouted the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty suddenly. His face was full of anger; he was appeasing everyone.

Even though the continent of the Nine Provinces might still be controlled by the Jiang Dynasty, in reality, the strongest force at that moment was still the Azure Dragon School. The Azure Dragon Founder was the strongest person in the Nine Provinces right now.

Actually, the reason why the Assembly of a Thousand Clans was arranged at the continent of the Nine Provinces wasn't because the Jiang Dynasty had the qualifications to set up the banquet. The only reason all the other dynasties gave the Jiang Dynasty that chance was because of the Azure Dragon Founder.

So, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty knew very well who was the true boss of the continent of the Nine Provinces. It was the Azure Dragon Founder, who even he himself didn't dare to offend.

After the outrage of the old ancestor, even though the elder who spoke rudely didn't want to accept it, he didn't dare to say anything. Gloomily,

he left the banquet.

"Haha, you've spoken too seriously! After all, Chu Feng hasn't returned yet. It's impossible to avoid doubt regarding his cultivation. There's nothing unrespectable about that, it's just human nature!"

Only after that person left did the Azure Dragon Founder start laughing. Although he said it wasn't all that serious, everyone knew that great character's thoughts didn't match his words. Otherwise, he wouldn't have spoken after the old ancestor drove the elder away.

"Seniors of the Jiang Dynasty, seniors of the continent of the Nine Provinces, I have a few words I want to say." Just at that moment, Jiang Wushang suddenly stood up. He first politely clasped his hands at the people in the banquet, then said very gravely, "I am indeed unable to confirm the level of Big Brother Chu Feng's present cultivation. However, what I can confirm is that his strength is superior to mine, by many times, since a long time ago.

"So, I ask all of you to not doubt his strength, because that is not only disrespect to him, it is disrespect to a person who has helped me greatly. And for those who are rude to him, no matter if they are my relatives, or seniors, I, Jiang Wushang, will not show any restraint in my actions. Without Big Brother Chu Feng, it would be impossible for me to acquire my present attainments."

"Huaa—" After Jiang Wushang spoke, a commotion instantly arose.

Their faces were filled with shock, especially those of the people from the Jiang Dynasty. They knew Jiang Wushang's character very well. Strictly speaking, Jiang Wushang was a proud, uncontrollable person. Not to mention outsiders, he didn't even put many people within the dynasty in his eyes.

However, right now, Jiang Wushang had actually said such words in public. It clearly represented his standpoint: no matter who it was, as long as they dared to speak of Chu Feng with disrespect, he would not treat them kindly, even if they were from his own family.

Such a change in character was truly too big, but it wasn't hard to guess

what caused such a change. There was only one thing—as Jiang Wushang said, Chu Feng had truly given him assistance the size of heaven. He had showed him a favour he would never be able to return.

Chapter 830: Assembly of a Thousand Clans

"Haha, Wushang, you've really made me curious by saying Chu Feng is several times more powerful than you. What cultivation does he have now... How about this. Roughly say the possible realm Chu Feng is in. Has he reached the peak of the Heaven realm?" After hearing Jiang Wushang's words, the Azure Dragon Founder's mood became much better, and actually asked for Chu Feng's cultivation as the crowd wanted to themselves.

At that instant, everyone's gazes were once again cast onto Jiang Wushang because they too were very intrigued at what level of strength Chu Feng had now possessed.

When he heard the Azure Dragon Founder's words, Jiang Wushang lightly smiled, then said, "Senior, to be honest, I'm afraid even you are far below my Big Brother Chu Feng's cultivation. Right now, the true strongest person in the continent of the Nine Provinces is no longer you, but my Big Brother Chu Feng."

After Jiang Wushang spoke, it was akin to a thunder in a clear sky. Everyone was silent, and what existed was only the sound of gasp after gasp.

Not to mention others on scene, even the Azure Dragon Founder's expression frozen. Quickly after, surprise and shock emerged onto his aged face.

It was because Jiang Wushang indeed gave them an answer that surpassed all expectations.

At that instant, they seemed to realize why the always proud and uncontrollable Jiang Wushang respected Chu Feng, the person in the same generation as him.

After that, the banquet continued, but no one mentioned Chu Feng anymore, as if invisibly, they felt fear towards him.

Not many days after the banquet, there were many people alien to the continent of the Nine Provinces entering their borders, and arriving at the Jiang Dynasty.

The long-awaited Assembly of a Thousand Clans was finally about to start.

The Assembly of a Thousand Clans was an assembly arranged by all dynasties at the eastern continents. It would be held nearly every year, and the location would usually be set at the continents with the most powerful dynasties.

This year, it was an exception. The reason it was held at the continent of the Nine Provinces, which the Jiang Dynasty was located at, was not because it was powerful, but because an exceptional person appeared in this continent—the Azure Dragon Founder.

Although it was titled as the Assembly of a Thousand Clans, in reality, there were only a few hundred imperial clans that participated every year. Moreover, the most important goal of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans was to increase the relationships between one another. As they did that, they also picked the most excellent people from their clan and used them to determine the degree of respect each clan deserved.

So, the events of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans were rather simple: other than exchanges by words, it was sparring. And, usually, the most eye-grabbing sparring was one between the younger generations, because that represented the future strength of a dynasty.

This year's Assembly of a Thousand Clans was held on time, and as the Jiang Dynasty expected, Jiang Wushang, who represented them in participating, became a dark horse everyone focused on. He dumbfounded the people who came from various places, various continents, and various clans.

A young man not only possessed the cultivation at the eighth level of the Heaven realm, he even had an Imperial Bloodline. What did that mean? That meant his cultivation potential was unlimited, and that he would have great achievements in the future.

With that child leading the way, the Jiang Dynasty was also fated to rise greatly in power. Not to mention them, fallen dynasties that escaped to the eastern continents, even the dynasties in the Eastern Sea Region would sooner or later be stamped underneath their feet. They would even have a position of their own in the entire Eastern Sea Region, and it was not an impossibility for them to enter the legendary Holy Land of Martialism.

It was because the Imperial Bloodline was a power completely above the power from Royal Bloodlines. It was power from the legends. It was a power destined to exceed everyone else.

However, things were not as successful as they had imagined. Just as Jiang Wushang, with the power of the Imperial Bloodline, was about to exert his dominance over all the younger generations of this Assembly of a Thousand Clans, he met a great enemy whom he had never even heard before.

This was also a possessor of a bloodline. Moreover, he was just over twenty years of age, not that much older than Jiang Wushang. However, Jiang Wushang could not see through his cultivation. No matter what techniques Jiang Wushang deployed, he was unable to suppress that person.

As for who he was, his name was Gao Peng.

boom boom boom boom

At that very instant, on the fighting stage, the battle between Jiang Wushang and Gao Peng remained ongoing. Moreover, as Jiang Wushang's attacks increased in strength, the circle of battle between the two became fiercer and fiercer. There were even some older generations at the peak of the Heaven realm who felt immense pressure. They couldn't help but consider if even they were able to defeat those two given they were on the stage.

"Dammit! I don't believe I cannot defeat you today!" When Jiang Wushang, despite using his entire arsenal of techniques, was still unable to defeat his opponent, he was furious because ever since they starting

fighting, he had a feeling that Gao Peng was toying with him, that he never once considered him to be a worthy opponent.

"HAA—" Suddenly, Jiang Wushang shouted. On his forehead, a golden "Imperial" word appeared, and at the same time, his aura rapidly soared. A might unique to an emperor burst out from his body, shocking all that felt it.

"The Imperial Bloodline! I've finally seen it again. This aura is indeed far above Royal Bloodlines'."

"This is too impressive. The Jiang Dynasty has been silent and unknown for so many years, but they have now truly shocked everyone with a single appearance! A possessor of an Imperial Bloodline has actually showed up! They will definitely rise greatly in the future, and no matter who, they won't be able to stop them."

Seeing Jiang Wushang exuding the power of the Imperial Bloodline, many of the higher echelons of the dynasties sighed endlessly. On their faces, there was admiration, but also envy because as long as Jiang Wushang was there, they had no choice but to consider the Jiang Dynasty carefully. They even hiddenly decided to better relationships with them.

"That child from the Jiang Dynasty has indeed surprised us all so suddenly. However, that Gao Peng from the Gao Dynasty is not to be underestimated. He has yet to show his true cultivation, and even I cannot determine his strength. I wonder what realm he has reached," said an expert at the ninth level of the Heaven realm seriously.

"Yeah! The Gao Dynasty... I have never heard of this dynasty before! And that Gao Peng, ever since he went on stage, he has concealed his strength. Never once has he used too powerful of a cultivation, but he has no problem defeating his opponents. In all the matches, he has yet to lose.

"Even though Jiang Wushang is currently using the power of the Imperial Bloodline, this child is unperturbed. With courage and intelligence such as his, he will definitely because an outstanding person in the future."

Up until now, they were not only dumbstruck by Jiang Wushang's performance, almost everyone was intrigued with Gao Peng as well. Even though his appearance wasn't as dazzling as Jiang Wushang's, he still surpassed everyone's expectations.

Most importantly, the clan Gao Peng belonged to was even less known than the Jiang Dynasty. It was everyone's first time hearing there was a dynasty called the Gao Dynasty at the eastern continents.

Chapter 831: Arrival of a Calamity

"Oh ho? This truly is an Imperial Bloodline. That's rather unbelievable. However, it is quite a waste for you to possess such a precious thing. Let my Gao Dynasty take care of it in your place."

Gao Peng smiled as he looked at Jiang Wushang. His gaze was not only one of disdain, it was also one of a hungry wolf staring at an extremely abundant feast with endless excitement.

"You speak quite arrogantly! You want my Imperial Bloodline? You are unworthy!"

At that moment, Jiang Wushang was incomparable furious. All of the members from famous dynasties at the eastern continents were all defeated by him, yet in the end, he was blocked on his path to power by someone who came from a dynasty he hadn't even heard of. That already made him displeased, but now, he even dared to provoke him as such? How could he tolerate it?

He no longer wasted any of his breath, and moved, leaping into the air. The might of the Imperial Bloodline burst from himself, and smashed down from above. Even the fighting stage made by special materials was violently trembling. Jiang Wushang wanted to thoroughly defeat Gao Peng with his might alone.

"Hmph." But even though Jiang Wushang's pressure had reached a terrifying stage of power, Gao Peng, who stood within the vortex of might, merely raised his head slightly as a hint of a derisive sneer appeared on his face.

"You are looking to die!" That sneer completely ignited Jiang Wushang's fury. Clenching one of his fists, he threw a punch filled with horrifying power towards Gao Peng.

"Powerful. Is this a possessor of an Imperial Bloodline? His fighting strength is so strong! Even if it was me, I wouldn't be able to defend against this punch!" Many experts at the peak of the Heaven realm revealed shock when they felt Jiang Wushang's powerful strike, because

they felt how terrifying he was.

In reality, many experts at the Martial Lord realm made preparations—preparing to help Gao Peng if he entered a critical state. It was because there was a rule in the Assembly of a Thousand Clans: spar appropriately; murder is forbidden.

boom

However, just as Jiang Wushang's punch was about to land on him, another unthinkable scene occurred. Gao Peng just stood on the spot and didn't even move. However, a hint of fierceness flashed past his eyes. Then, with a boom, an aura akin to a volcano erupting swept out from his body.

"Ah—"

The powerful strength not only forced back all of Jiang Wushang's might, it even forced him several meters back. Like a kite that had its string severed, he felt down and as he did, not only was his complexion pale, blood was all over his body. He had clearly suffered heavy injuries.

In that instant, Gao Peng's aura was finally revealed completely before the crowd.

Realm of Martial Lords, a rank one Martial Lord!

"This young man is a rank one Martial Lord?"

"That's unbelievable! He's a Martial Lord already at such an age? Isn't he too powerful?"

Geo Peng, who stood above the stage, stupefied everyone. Martial Lord—to the people from the eastern continents, that was an extremely powerful existence. The number of experts who were able to enter that realm was countable by one's fingers.

And, at present, this Assembly of a Thousand Clans had gathered a large portion of the people who possessed bloodlines from the eastern continents. Other than a few proud dynasties who saw it below themselves to participate in this Assembly of a Thousand Clans, almost

all of the royal clans that existed on the eastern continents had come.

But even though experts from over a hundred dynasties had gathered here, there were no more than ten who were Martial Lords. Moreover, none of those ten were not aged elders. The youngest was still over ninety years of age.

Yet now, Geo Peng, from the Gao Dynasty which he had never been heard before, was a Martial Lord at such an age. How could they not be shocked? But just at that moment, an even more shocking scene occurred.

whoosh Suddenly, Geo Peng leapt up and landed by Jiang Wushang's side. And, with a thought, Martial power only Martial Lords had emanated from his body. Like a rope, it tightly tied Jiang Wushang and lifted him into the air. He said with a cold smile, "It's too much of a waste for this Imperial Bloodline to remain on your body. It's better to give it to me."

"The sparring is finished! Do not attack again!" When he saw that, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty was enraged. He pointed at Gao Peng and shouted. If Gao Peng wasn't that powerful, it was likely he would have already came out to deal with the issue.

"Stop! The rules state spar until appropriate! If you break the rules, the imperial clans will join together and punish you." Just at that moment, an aged person with cultivation in the realm of Martial Lords spoke. He was one of the founders of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans. He was revered not only by his own dynasty, but also by many of the other dynasties. He was a famous and influential person at the eastern continents.

"Quickly stop! This child possesses a rare Imperial Bloodline. You are not permitted to harm him!" At the same time, several other Martial Lords from other dynasties shouted to stop him.

Even though Jiang Wushang wasn't from their clan, he still possessed the legendary Imperial Bloodline. So, Jiang Wushang was not only the Jiang Dynasty's hope, he was also all of their hope. Hope for them, the group of fallen dynasties.

"Hahaha, imperial clans? You think trash like you can call yourselves

‘imperial clans’? If I want to kill him, who can stop me?” However, something unexpected was as he faced the threats of the experts, Gao Peng was still not the slightest bit afraid. Instead, he started arrogantly laughing. His eyes were filled with disdain—not towards a single person, but every single person on scene.

“What an arrogant brat. If we don’t give you a lesson today, where will our dignity be? Where will the dignity of the Assembly of a Thousand Clans be?!” After hearing Gao Peng’s words, the ancient elders were not lightly angered at all. In an instant, several people shot out from the crowd.

Emperors from various dynasties and people such as old ancestors made their move. Even the Martial Lord who shouted to stop Gao Peng made his move.

“The arrogant one is not him, but all of you.” But just at that moment, a voice even more deafening than thunder exploded faraway. Then, a person rushed up like light, and instantly stood before Gao Peng. After arriving there, without even moving, he swept his fierce eyes over the attacking experts from the various clans.

“Ahh—” Their complexions changed greatly. No matter if they were Martial Lords, or people in the Heaven realm, at that moment, their bodies trembled, then blood sprayed out of their mouths. Like sandbags, they fell straight onto the ground, having lost any ability to fight.

“This aura... It’s very powerful. A rank six Martial Lord?” At that moment, not to mention others, even the Azure Dragon Founder couldn’t help but tightly furrow his brows because he felt the old man’s power in the instant he released his aura. Even he, the Azure Dragon Founder, was far inferior.

Chapter 832: Return of a Powerful Force

swish swish swish swish...

Just at that moment, nine more people arrived from above. All of them stood orderly behind the old man. Every single one of them was similarly a Martial Lord, and there were even rank two Martial Lords, rank three Martial Lords, and rank four Martial Lords amongst them. Any one of them could instantly kill everyone if they wished to.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh... But that was not the end. After all of the Martial Lords appeared, sounds of people descending from the sky rained down from above endlessly.

When they looked over, the people falling through the sky were akin to a meteor shower. All of them landed behind the old man—there were several thousand of them. All of them were in the Heaven realm, and five hundred of them were at the peak of the Heaven realm. If they took just a single step forward in cultivation, they would become Martial Lords.

“You aren’t from the eastern continents. Where are you from? Why have you come here to stir up trouble?” shouted the Azure Dragon Founder. His expression changed greatly as he stood up.

Due to the present circumstances, he had no choice but to stand out. All of the Martial Lords before, with the exception of him, were wounded by the old man.

The old man had already terrified the crowd, but who would have expected him to bring out such a powerful formation of people? That truly frightened the crowd completely, and at that moment, there wasn’t even someone who dared to question those people out of all the dynasties.

Instead, the Azure Dragon Founder, the outsider, became their backbone.

“Haha, there’s an interesting one here!

“You are correct. My Gao Dynasty’s bloodline is pure, so naturally we cannot poorly live our lives in these eastern continents and shame our

name.

"My Gao Dynasty comes from the Eastern Sea Region! We've come here to take over all you filthy beings!" shouted the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty coldly. His tone was akin to an emperor looking over peasants. The atmosphere made him seem like a lord descending into the world.

"Eastern Sea Region?" Those three words horrified everyone. All of their faces were pale as paper, and instantly their foreheads were drenched with sweat. Where did they even have their former noble appearances of royalty? They were simply like little terrified chicks as they stood on the spot, blank-faced.

They had a very deep impression of the Eastern Sea Region. Many, many years ago, their clans were on that land. However, due to continuous declines, they gradually lost the ability to survive on that land. As such, by their ancestors' lead, they moved to the eastern continents.

That made the Eastern Sea Region an eternal pain of theirs. To be able to lead their clan back was their dream.

However, they also knew very well the level of danger in the Eastern Sea Region. It was a world experts appeared in. It was not easy to return to that land, because any sort of influential force could eradicate them.

Most importantly, none of the dynasties able to live in the Eastern Sea Region were simple existences. One could say they were all unimaginable enormous entities.

And today, there was a Gao Dynasty that came from the Eastern Sea Region straight up to their doorsteps. They knew they were finished. At least, no matter what the Gao Dynasty wanted to do, none of them had any strength to resist.

The reality was indeed the same as their thoughts. Even though peak experts from many dynasties had gathered here, when facing the Gao Dynasty, none of them could even put up a scratch. They were currently akin to a fish on a cutting board, awaiting to be slaughtered.

Fear... Helplessness... Those words were clearly written on their faces.

“What are you planning to do?” the Azure Dragon Founder asked gravely.

“I’ve said it already. We are going to rule over all of you. To be clearer, we will make you into animals. We will make you into slaves to be used in the future,” said the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty with a sneer.

From the Jiang Dynasty, an elder said, stubbornly, “Don’t even think about it! You want us to serve you? You aren’t even—”

boom However, before he even finished speaking, a Martial Lord from the Gao Dynasty raised his palm and made the elder into a pool of blood.

At the same time, the old ancestor from the Gao Dynasty coldly smiled, then said, “You useless Jiang Dynasty, you fail to recognize your present state. You dare to refuse the recruitment of my Gao Dynasty? You truly don’t put us in your eyes!

“Men, destroy this Jiang Dynasty. Destroy the Nine Provinces as well. I don’t want to see anything alive on this continent that has trash running around.”

“What? This...” After hearing those words, they, who were already trembling from fear, now fell onto the ground from terror. Just because of a single retort their entire clan was going to be destroyed. Even the continent they were on was going to be affected. That was truly quite ruthless.

“You want to destroy the continent of the Nine Provinces? You truly possess an arrogant tone!”

However, just as everyone felt a disaster was imminent, a voice filled with fury exploded in the sky.

That voice was really too horrifying. When it rang out, not only did the earth tremble, the sky itself trembled slightly as well. There were even cracks that appeared on many of the Jiang Dynasty’s buildings, all caused by the voice alone.

“Oh? I didn’t think there would be experts hidden in this place.” After hearing that voice, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty furrowed his

brows slightly, but he did not panic too much. He swept his gaze over his surroundings and said indifferently, “If you want to interfere, then don’t keep hiding. Come out. Let me deal with you together with all of them.”

boom rumble rumble

Immediately after he spoke, a bolt of lightning suddenly appeared in the serene sky. When it struck down, it went straight for the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty, as if his arrogance had elicited the anger of the heavens and he was receiving divine punishment.

Seeing that, he frowned lightly. He waved his big sleeve, wanting to block it. He felt that the power of the lightning was absolutely not to be underestimated. But, who would have thought, just as he was about to come into contact, the thick lightning suddenly disappeared.

boom rumble rumble rumble

However, after the bolt of lightning disappeared, black clouds appeared everywhere and there were countless thick lightning bolts that filled the sky. It was as if the end of days had arrived, displaying an extremely horrifying scene.

“Heavens! What is going on?” At that instant, everyone could feel an extremely powerful burst of pressure permeating the air, covering the world.

There were even some younger people who, upon looking at the surging black clouds and the fierce bolts of lightning as thick as dragons, couldn’t help wailing as they were really quite terrified.

In reality, not to mention the people from the eastern continents, even the Gao Dynasty, who were all arrogant and looked down on everyone, were stupefied by the scene before their eyes.

At that very instant, they furrowed their brows tightly as uneasiness filled their faces. There was even terror that glittered in some people’s eyes, because the pressure that enveloped everything was truly quite powerful.

“Look, what’s that!”

Suddenly, someone cried out. Looking over in the direction of that person's finger, the expressions of everyone changed greatly as they felt stunned.

At that very instant, within the surging black clouds with snakes of lightning, there were ten incomparably enormous black warships. Those warships were truly too big—they were simply akin to drifting castles. Moreover, the destructive might they possessed pressed down from the skies as they gradually approached.

"Heavens! What is that thing! It's so terrifying!" The people from the continent of the Nine Provinces had, of course, never seen such a formation of people! All of them lay on the ground, their bodies trembling, and they didn't even have the power to climb up and escape—they were completely dumbfounded and petrified.

Along with the gradual descent of the warships, all of them were also able to see faintly several huge flags on the warships. If one looked more carefully, they would be able to see the symbol of a black, incomplete moon. Moreover, there were four big words written on the symbols.

Crippling Night Demon Sect!

Chapter 833: Power of a Single Punch

"Crippling Night Demon Sect?" When they saw those four big words, the people from the Gao Dynasty felt their hearts shake. They were frightened. An unprecedented fear birthed from their hearts.

Being from the Eastern Sea Region, they could not possibly know any clearer what the Crippling Night Demon Sect represented. In their minds, it was a group of demons who killed without blinking and didn't care what methods they used to achieve their goals. They were an existence they didn't dare to anger from the bottom of their hearts, and if it weren't for the enticement and blackmail of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they wouldn't dare to come to this place either.

On the surface, their mission here was to take over all the dynasties, but in reality, it was taking revenge on Chu Feng. When they recalled that, they felt even more uneasy because everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knew Chu Feng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Who are they? What a terrifying formation of people!"

As the warships gradually approached, the people looking at them felt more and more shocked. Even though many people in the continent of the Nine Provinces didn't know what the Crippling Night Demon Sect was, they could see that the warships were full of cultivation experts.

There were over ten thousand Heaven realm experts, and of them at least five hundred were at the peak of the Heaven realm. With just a single step in their attainments in cultivation, they would become Martial Lords. Of all of those experts, there were also several auras of Martial Lords.

No matter in terms of number, or in terms of strength, the people on the ten warships seemed to be superior to the Gao Dynasty. However, since they didn't know if they were an enemy or ally, amidst the shock, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces felt even more fear.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

However, just as anxiousness filled the crowd, the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect flew down from the ten warships, and like divine troops and generals descending onto the mortal world, they approached with a powerful demeanor. In the end, they half-surrounded the Gao Dynasty who stood on the surface while hovering in the sky.

“They’re heading for them? That means this powerful force isn’t an enemy?” Seeing the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect emanating animosity towards the Gao Dynasty, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces temporarily relaxed. However, they dared not to be too careless. After all, the people before their eyes were truly too horrifying. They were people they had never seen before.

“Everyone, I am the chief of the Gao Dynasty, Gao Kuncheng.

“May I ask what offense I have committed for a noble sect like yours to set up such a display?” Even though he knew something was wrong, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty still brought a smile onto his face and asked them, feigning confusion.

Unless absolutely necessary, they did not want to anger the Crippling Night Demon Sect. After all, a huge power such as theirs was not one the Gao Dynasty stood a chance against.

whoosh Immediately after he spoke, the Crippling Night Demon Sect suddenly split into two. They made a path within the ocean of people, and at that moment, a young person slowly walked out, and then showed himself at the forefront of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After seeing that person, the Azure Dragon Founder, the Monstrous Monkey King, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, and many other famous people of the continent of the Nine Provinces all widened their eyes as their pupils shrank, surprised expressions emerging onto their faces.

Even the people from the Gao Dynasty changed their complexions greatly because they were able to immediately recognize who that young man was.

That person was... Chu Feng!

“It’s Chu Feng! This... What’s going on?” After recognizing Chu Feng, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces instantly rejoiced, but coincident with rejoicing they felt disbelief, especially after seeing the Crippling Night Demon Sect experts’ respectful appearances towards him. They felt even more stupefied, and it was simply as if they were in a dream. They didn’t even dare to trust their own eyes.

Could that army have been brought back by Chu Feng? However, they were so strong, so how could Chu Feng... When they had such thoughts, they simply didn’t dare to continue their imagination because the scene in front of their eyes completely surpassed their expectations.

They knew, from Jiang Wushang and the others, that Chu Feng was a very impressive person. However, they never would have thought he would accomplish so much in the Eastern Sea Region, a place where countless experts came forth. He even reached such a powerful level of strength, and not only was his own cultivation unfathomably deep, he even had such a large group of experts serving him.

But as the people from the Nine Provinces felt shock, the expressions of those from the Gao Dynasty trembled because Chu Feng’s infamous name had already spread far and wide in the Eastern Sea Region.

Even recently, when Chu Feng made such a huge ruckus at the Flower Valley’s Zi family, he not only killed the patriarch of the Zi family, it was said he even killed two rank seven Martial Lords—experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. If that were true, then the strength he possessed was far superior to the Gao Dynasty’s old ancestor.

So, seeing the poorly progressing situation, the old ancestor had a clever thought and feigned ignorance. He pretended he didn’t know Chu Feng, and first respectfully bowed and clasped his hands at him, then said with a smile, “Milord, I don’t recall any conflicts between us, right?”

“No conflicts? You clearly stated you were going to destroy my homeland, kill my family, yet now you dare to say you don’t recall any conflicts?” Chu Feng faintly smiled as a hint of ridicule flashed past his eyes.

“This... Ah, milord, so this continent of the Nine Provinces is your homeland! I truly didn’t know! If I did, even if you lent me ten guts I still wouldn’t dare to come to this place!

“They say the ignorant cannot be blamed. Milord, I truly didn’t know this was your homeland! I beg you to grant me mercy!” The old ancestor’s face was full of humbleness. The arrogant aura he had before was gone completely.

“Haha, you truly don’t know who I am?” Seeing the amusing scene the old ancestor acted out, Chu Feng’s laughter became even louder.

“Milord, I haven’t even seen you before so how could I know who you are?” The Gao Dynasty’s old ancestor shook his head.

“Brother Wushang, please go ahead and tell them who... I am.” Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Jiang Wushang.

At that moment, Jiang Wushang still had heavy injuries and was still tied in the air by Gao Peng’s Martial power. When he saw Chu Feng’s arrival, he immediately burst in laughter and said, “You cowardly things, do you want to know who he is? I’ll tell you right now. He’s my big brother!”

“Bastard! He knows Milord! Release the binding and admit your wrongs!” The Gao Dynasty’s old ancestor hurriedly shouted at Gao Peng.

Naturally, Gao Peng didn’t dare to hesitate as he quickly released Jiang Wushang and knelt.

But, unexpectedly, Chu Feng smiled lightly and said, “No need for admitting your wrongs, since you won’t escape death either way.”

boom After speaking, Chu Feng suddenly extended his hand and threw out a punch. Instantly, a destructive power surged out of his fist.

Struck by such power, Gao Peng didn’t even have a chance to cry out before his body exploded, becoming a pool of blood. It was not only Gao Peng who was caught by that attack as several experts from the Gao Dynasty were affected as well. They too exploded immediately, and even three Martial Lords died.

Chapter 834: Shocking Everyone

“Chu Feng, damn all your ancestors!” Seeing that Chu Feng still attacked despite his humbleness, and killed several geniuses who were extremely rare to come by, the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty was enraged and started shouting at him, “You brainless animal, I planned to dissolve this matter into nothing, and avoid a life-and-death battle or any desperate measures.

“But you reject such advances and kill the younger generations of my dynasty! Since you ignore the steps I give you, and reject the face I grant you, I will let you know that my Gao Dynasty is no pushover! You want to destroy my clan? I will still make you pay a price!

“All members, attention! Today is a day to spread the might of our dynasty! Destroy these bastards from the Crippling Night Demon Sect!

“KILL THEM ALL—”

After his order, the people from the Gao Dynasty echoed his shout and all of them released their auras. In an instant, an uncontrollable might spread through the world, one that fought against the might from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

boom rumble rumble However, just at that moment, Chu Feng flipped his palm suddenly. The Royal Armament, the Silver Dragon Spear, appeared in his hand.

After it appeared, an incomparable pressure was exuded from the Royal Armament, and it instantly enveloped everything.

Who could even contest against an actual Royal Armament?

The might of the entire Gao Dynasty was instantly pressed back down. Not only was their power suppressed, even their physical bodies were being suppressed. They were like pigs and dogs as they curled up on the ground. If they were not rolling around, they were crawling. They had completely lost their ability to fight.

Even the old ancestor of the Gao Dynasty was no exception. His arms

pushed his body up, his knees were on the ground, and he was kneeling in front of Chu Feng.

ta, ta, ta...

After subduing all of the dynasty experts with the power of the Royal Armament, Chu Feng slowly walked up to the Gao Dynasty's old ancestor with the Silver Dragon Spear in hand. He coldly smiled, then said, "Old thing, what did you say just now? Repeat it."

gulp Facing the power Chu Feng emanated, and seeing the scene of absolute death, the old ancestor first gulped, then made a decision. He gnashed his teeth, raised his head, widened his mouth, and howled to Chu Feng, "I damn all your ances—"

puchi But before he was able to finish his words, a cold glint flashed past. Then a squirt of blood. Chu Feng pierced through the neck of the Gao Dynasty's old ancestor with the Silver Dragon Spear.

"The likes of you cannot insult my ancestors." After speaking, Chu Feng abruptly flicked his spear, then after a bang, the strongest person in the Gao Dynasty, the old ancestor, was made into a pool of blood.

"In the instant you served the Immortal Execution Archipelago you committed a capital offence." After executing the old ancestor, Chu Feng raised the Silver Dragon Spear up.

aooo

At that instant, the runes on the Silver Dragon Spear flared. First, a dragon's roar rang out from the inside of the spear, then a powerful burst of might surged out from the spear and swept below.

"Ahh—"

Being struck by such power, the people from the Gao Dynasty all cried out. Then, after many consecutive muffled explosions, several thousand experts from the Gao Dynasty, in front of the surprised and frightened gazes of the crowd, all became a large pool of blood. There weren't even any remnants; they were all slaughtered by Chu Feng.

“Heavens!” When they saw that, not to mention the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces, even the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect who had come from such a distance couldn’t help gasping deeply.

From start to finish, Chu Feng had simply not even asked for their help. With his own strength, he completely wiped out the experts from the Gao Dynasty. Putting aside his overwhelming strength, his ruthlessness and decisiveness was not something an ordinary person possessed.

“Who is this young man? What a terrifying way to kill, and he’s also from the continent of the Nine Provinces? Such a genius appeared from the continent of the Nine Provinces?”

“This is inconceivable. I even thought there had never been anyone outstanding from the continent of the Nine Provinces, but it seems now that we were absolutely incorrect.”

As for the people who came from other dynasties, they were stupefied by Chu Feng’s actions. In terms of age, Chu Feng didn’t even seem to be that much older than Jiang Wushang, but in terms of strength, the distance between the two was really too big.

Putting aside the fact that they themselves were far inferior to Jiang Wushang, Chu Feng, with his cultivation, was simply like a god to them because he did indeed have the strength to look down on all of them.

“Tidy up their resources.” Chu Feng indifferently looked at the weapons and Cosmos Sacks bathing within the blood, then ordered the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect behind him.

“Yes sir!” They did not dally and all of them leapt in, starting to carefully organize the resources the Gao Dynasty left behind.

“Brother Wushang, are you okay?” At that instant, Chu Feng came to Jiang Wushang’s side.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, I’m fine. You’ve truly come back at the perfect moment. Otherwise, it would have been disastrous.” Jiang Wushang nodded, but then added, “Big Brother Chu Feng, the weapon in your hand

is so powerful! What is it?"

"This is a Royal Armament." Chu Feng lightly smiled, then put away the Silver Dragon Spear and flew towards the Azure Dragon Founder and the others.

He left Jiang Wushang standing on the spot, unable to come to his senses for a long while. He said, with an extremely shocked tone, "I-It's a Royal Armament!"

After coming up to the seniors who had helped him before, he paid his respects.

The Azure Dragon Founder, Li Zhangqing, the Monstrous Monkey King, Qi Fengyang, old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, Jiang Hengyuan, Gu Tianchen...1

These were all seniors who had watched Chu Feng grow up bit by bit. At that moment, as they looked at Chu Feng, they couldn't hide their smiles. They were very happy. They were very excited, so much that they couldn't even speak. They didn't know how to express their current emotions, because Chu Feng's current achievements far surpassed their imagination.

Even though, some time ago, they had stood in front of Chu Feng with the position of super experts, and had given him different degrees of assistance, at present, their identities had been reversed. Today, it was not they who saved Chu Feng, but Chu Feng who saved everyone.

Chu Feng, the boy who was being chased after everywhere, had now become a true expert. Moreover, his strength surpassed everyone's expectations. He was now an existence every person in the Nine Provinces revered but could never reach.

"Lord Chu Feng, these are the resources taken from the Gao Dynasty." Soon, thirty-eight Martial Lords came up to Chu Feng, and along with them were the resources obtained from the blood of the Gao Dynasty's experts.

The so-called resources not only included Heaven beads, but also many

Martial Medicines. There were also innumerable Elite Armaments—things that were called priceless treasures in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

*

1. Li Zhangqing is the former head of the Azure Dragon School; Qi Fengyang is the head of the Qilin Prince's Mansion (which rules the Azure Province); Jiang Hengyuan is, or was, the mysterious World Spiritist, close friend of Qi Fengyuan; Gu Tianchen is the old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild.

Chapter 835: Reentering the Ghost Tower

“Seniors, let’s cut this short. Due to some circumstances, right now, a force in the Eastern Sea Region wants to destroy our continent of the Nine Provinces. This force is also something I am no match for currently.

“So, right now, we cannot remain in the continent of the Nine Provinces because I cannot guarantee if there’ll be others that come here after the Gao Dynasty. For safety’s sake, all of you need to temporarily move to another place and stay hidden.

“After moving, I hope everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces will not care about our difference and unite together, because right now, we are a family.

“Lord Founder, I’ll hand these resources over to you. Although there isn’t a lot, with these, it will still provide a raise in strength for all of you.” As Chu Feng spoke, he gave the resources taken from the Gao Dynasty to the Azure Dragon Founder.

After roughly examining the resources, even the Azure Dragon Founder’s expression changed greatly. He was frightened by the abundant amount, then couldn’t help sighing deeply, and said to Chu Feng with a smile, “Oh Chu Feng, don’t call me ‘founder’ anymore. Right now, I am inferior to you. If others hear an expert like you call me founder, I’m afraid I’ll be laughed at!” As he spoke, the Azure Dragon Founder’s face was full of embarrassment.

It was not only he who had such an expression. Zhuge Liuyunl, Li Zhangqing, and many others felt ashamed. Although seniority-wise, they were far above Chu Feng, strength-wise, the difference between them and Chu Feng was like the difference between heaven and earth.

“Lord Founder, what are you saying? As they say, ‘Master for one day, father for a lifetime’. Besides, you’re the founder!

“No matter when, I, Chu Feng, will not forget I am a disciple of the Azure Dragon School. No matter when, I will not forget I have a master in the Azure Dragon School called Zhuge Liuyun, and I have a founder called

the Azure Dragon Founder2," Chu Feng said seriously. These were words that came from his heart. No matter what time it was, he would never forget Zhuge Liuyun was master and the Azure Dragon Founder was his founder.

He didn't respect these two alone though. For many of the seniors there, Chu Feng would respect them for his entire life. No matter how powerful he became, his attitude on that would never change.

People could not forget their roots. They could not forget the people who had helped them when they had nothing, when they were so weak they couldn't even defeat anyone.

After hearing Chu Feng's words, the Azure Dragon Founder didn't say anything more. However, the relieved smile on his face had clearly expressed the emotions he currently felt.

Afterwards, Chu Feng let the clans from the other dynasties leave first. They, who had nearly died, knew the danger of the continent of the Nine Provinces. There was no need for him to drive them out as they hurriedly left on their own.

But even though they had safely left, they would never forget it was a young man called Chu Feng who saved them.

After urging the outsiders away, Chu Feng instructed all of the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect to move everyone closely related to himself using the ten extremely quick warships. As for the location, Chu Feng had already chosen it. It was still in the eastern continents, but it was absolutely safe.

That relocation was a huge project. However, since the ten warships were extremely quick, despite the large number of people, it was completed shortly after a month.

At present, everyone in the continent of the Nine Provinces closely related to Chu Feng, even the large powers closely related to him, were all swiftly moved out of their homeland.

As they were being relocated, in accordance to Chu Feng's instructions,

the Jiang Dynasty made an announcement to the world. They said there were some resources in the continent of the Nine Provinces that attracted the attention of outside powers, and that before long, said powers might lead an army to attack. They urged everyone to quickly leave in order to avoid any unnecessary involvements.

Moreover, when they announced such a thing, the Jiang Dynasty sent varying degrees of financial assistance to various powers and even commoners. Not only would it be sufficient to compensate for the losses in the relocation, it freely gifted them quite some wealth.

As for the forces willing to help people quickly move out of the Nine Provinces, they would be able to receive even more bountiful rewards.

Of course, such a sum was naturally not one the Jiang Dynasty could provide. All of it was provided by Chu Feng. After all, at present, the wealth he possessed was something the Jiang Dynasty could not even compare to.

In a situation like that, the higher echelons such as peak forces and the lower echelons such as commoners all started the relocation. Other than a small portion of people who were unwilling, most of them chose to leave.

In the near future, the continent of the Nine Provinces would become a desolate area where one would be troubled to find traces of humans.

After basically finishing the relocation, Chu Feng came to the territory of the World Spirit Guild because there was a place Chu Feng wanted to challenge before leaving: the mysterious Asura Ghost Tower.

At that moment, nearly all of the World Spirit Guild members had left. Only a small potion chose to stay behind to guard this land. Putting aside the fact that no one could stop Chu Feng with his current strength, no one would stop Chu Feng because of the relationship he had with the World Spirit Guild.

As such, he entered the Asura Ghost Tower with no troubles and came to the seventh floor; the Monstrous Monkey King was imprisoned on this floor.

“The Spirit Formation here is truly quite cleverly made. No wonder my monkey brother was locked in here for so long.”

At that moment, Chu Feng spread out his Spirit power and used his Heaven’s Eyes to observe his surroundings. With the Spirit Formation techniques he currently grasped, he easily deactivated the Spirit Formation that had imprisoned the Monstrous Monkey King. Moreover, he continued walking farther in.

However, the deeper he went, the more complex the Spirit Formation traps became. If he didn’t have the Heaven’s Eyes, Chu Feng simply wouldn’t have been able to locate the method of deactivation with his Spirit power alone. He would possibly not have even discovered these traps.

In a situation like that, the pressure Chu Feng felt became heavier and heavier. He didn’t dare to possess even a single trace of carelessness, and he had to admit: the master of the Asura Ghost Tower was indeed not a simple person at all.

However, due to such exquisite Spirit Formation traps, Chu Feng realized more and more that if there were truly a treasure sealed in this place, it would definitely not be any simple treasure.

“Eggy, what is with this Asura Ghost Tower? On the surface, it clearly only looks like a tower, but why has it become so large after I enter?” Chu Feng asked as he carefully ventured forth. He discovered that the seventh floor of the Asura Ghost Tower was really quite large. It was over dozens of times the size of the sum of the six floors below.

“Heh, this Asura Ghost Tower itself is a formation. When you entered the seventh floor, you’ve entered the true formation.

“As for how big it is, that’s an unknown. If it was created by an outstanding World Spiritist, then it’s not impossible for this formation to open up an entire, standalone world,” Eggy explained.

“It’s that powerful? When can you teach me how to create this Asura Ghost Tower then?” Chu Feng, who made a contract with an Asura World Spirit, felt an increasing interest in the Asura Ghost Tower.

“You? There’s still a long ways away.”

Eggy curled her lips, indicating that the Asura Ghost Tower wasn’t something that could be easily created. After all, opening a whole new space and letting it remain for over ten thousand years demanded an extremely powerful Spirit Formation technique. Chu Feng, at present, still lacked that ability.

“Heh…” Chu Feng was not upset when he heard Eggy’s words, and instead, chuckled. He looked forward, and said, “Then, what do you think about this? Behind this Spirit Formation Gate, is it a new world, or is it a trap?”

*

1. World Spiritist master of Chu Feng.
2. Side note, this is more correctly translated as “Azure Dragon Daoist” but didn’t think of that many months ago.

Chapter 836: A Shocking Discovery

At that instant, Chu Feng seemed to have walked to the end of the seventh floor because in front of him, a huge door appeared.

The door was surrounded by decorations, and even the relief statue above was quite exquisite. Most importantly, the door was not locked. If one went forth and gently pushed, it would be opened.

However, before that door was opened, it blocked all detection abilities. No matter if it was Spirit power, or his unique Heaven's Eyes, neither was able to see what was behind the door. Chu Feng thus could not determine if it was evil or luck, if it was fortune or misfortune.

"We've already walked up to here. No matter what's behind the door, judging by your nature, you're still going to take a look, right?" Eggy said as she sweetly smiled because she too did not know what was behind the door.

"That's true. Since we've come here, let's just open the door and take a look." Chu Feng lightly smiled, then waved his big sleeve. A pushing force came out from his sleeve which slowly pushed open the door.

When the door was opening, a blinding ray of light shone through. When the door completely opened, even Chu Feng couldn't help but widen his eyes slightly, and the smile on his face couldn't help but widen even more.

At that instant, what appeared before Chu Feng was truly a whole new world. Some person truly made a whole new space with Spirit Formation techniques.

Although that world wasn't very big, it was still rather large. Not only were there mountains, creeks, rivers, plains, valleys, there were even white clouds, a blue sky, and a sun high up. Moreover, there was a revolution of day and night.

"Impressive. I wonder what sort of techniques are required to lay such a powerful formation."

Chu Feng knew everything in this world, despite how realistic it appeared, was all fake. No matter if it was the mountains and creeks, or the rivers, or the blue sky, white clouds, stars, sun, or moon, all of it was fake. They were created by powerful formations, and as long as that formation was deactivated, everything inside would disappear along with it.

However, what sort of powerful technique was needed to create such a formation, and what sort of power was needed to maintain such a formation?

"Heh, it looks like the master who created this Asura Ghost Tower is truly not simple at all. This person has surpassed my imagination. However, the more powerful the master, the more dangerous this Asura Ghost Tower becomes.

"But since we've come, we can't do nothing here. Chu Feng, look around this fake world. The Asura Ghost Tower itself is a Sealing Formation. There would be no one who creates a tower like this just for display. The creator wants people to come here, so look around carefully. Perhaps there will be unexpected harvests.

"However, you must be careful because the master here is too powerful. The Spirit Formation traps outside are but a child's play. If he had truly wanted to seal this place, you would have simply not been able to enter. This is the most important location. If there are any traps here, unless you find something, avoid them. Otherwise, if they are triggered, you will certainly die," Eggy reminded very seriously.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded. He knew the degree of strength the master here possessed, but because of his nature, he was absolutely not going to leave empty-handed. As such, he leapt into the air and carefully observed the fake world.

Chu Feng first flew towards the east, but other than finding some beautiful sceneries, there were no other discoveries. Furthermore, he quickly reached the end. So, he could only turn around and head in the other direction.

Finally, Chu Feng discovered that this world was a rectangle. If he flew to the east, west, or south, he would arrive at the end very soon and would be stopped by an invisible Spirit Formation. However, if he headed to the north, it was very vast, almost as if it were endless.

"Heavens! That bird... It's so big!" After passing several mountains, Chu Feng's pupils suddenly shrank. His heart was also shaken because on a nearby mountain range, he discovered an enormous skeleton.

It was the remains of a huge bird. It had already died for a long time—at least several tens of thousands of years. On the skeleton itself, one could feel the old and ancient aura it exuded.

From the skeleton alone, Chu Feng knew that the bird was definitely terrifyingly powerful when alive because based on the strange and huge skeleton alone, it was enough to know it was not an ordinary species.

Casting aside its sharp claws, its size was really too big. It was as large as a small hill, and if it were still alive, it would have definitely covered the sky when it flew and stunned the world. A mere flap of its wings could create a violent hurricane, destroy mountains, ruin all living things, and slaughter a population. Doing all that would require it no more effort than a thought. As such, it was definitely not something kindhearted.

"Heh, it seems like it's a Monstrous Beast from ancient times! They're extinct now, but when it was alive, it looks like it was a peak Martial King. With just a step in cultivation, it would have been able to become a Martial Emperor, an existence that could rule this world. But sadly, when it was shaken by someone else's might, the bones throughout its body cracked, all of its organs broke down, and, in the end, even its Source Energy was cleanly sucked away," Eggy narrated.

When he looked carefully, Chu Feng too discovered countless small cracks on the huge bird's thick bones. It did seem like it was shocked to death by a person's might.

When he saw that, another hint of solemnness emerged into his eyes. With might alone, an existence such as this was killed. How powerful was that person?

“Wait, it’s not only one! This looks like an enormous group of the same species.” After flying past that mountain, Chu Feng felt even more shocked. On the vast mountain ranges, there were countless horrifying skeletons of huge birds scattered everywhere.

The total number was truly too big. There were at least several tens of thousands, and there were varying sizes, and varying strengths. However, the smallest was still several tens of feet high while the weakest was at the Heaven realm. Moreover, they were all killed by pressure of a person’s might. That was definitely a powerful Monstrous Beast species, yet it was eradicated by someone.

After passing through those mountain ranges, Chu Feng arrived at a vast valley. Within the valley, there was also an accumulation of countless skeletons of Monstrous Beasts. They were another Monstrous Beast species that were similarly powerful when alive, but now, they were only a pile of white bones.

In his journey afterwards, he was nearly able to see bones everywhere. Most of them came from Monstrous Beasts, and all of them belonged to a single species in unimaginable numbers. From the shape of their bones, one could imagine how powerful and terrifying they were when alive.

On the road, even Chu Feng, who had experienced quite a bit of the world, felt his heart tremble from fright. Complicated emotions and questions emerged as well.

So many powerful Monstrous Beasts were all killed by the pressure of might alone. The same method, the same massacre, thus it was likely all done by a single person. Yet, what sort of existence was able to slaughter so many powerful Monstrous Beasts, and what sort of deep animosity did that person have which led to such an eradication?

Chapter 837: Remains of a Martial Emperor

"This..."

However, when Chu Feng flew over another vast mountain range and arrived at an endless grassland, he was completely flabbergasted.

What appeared before his eyes was not a simple grassland—there were white bones densely covering its surface, forming an endless ocean of bones both grand and horrifying.

Moreover, within the vast skeletons, there were not only enormous Monstrous Beast remains, there were also remains of humans. There was truly too many; it was simply incalculable with numbers.

In addition, no matter if it was the humans', or the Monstrous Beasts', they were all well-known and powerful characters. Not a single one of them was subpar.

"This is truly terrifying. So many peak experts, and even so many peak Martial Kings, were all killed by pressure alone. What sort of existence was the one that killed them? Could it have been a Martial Emperor?" At that moment, even Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling deeply, unable to remain calm.

Of the multitudinous remains, there was nearly no one who was weak. It was likely any one of them, if released to the Eastern Sea Region, could become an overlord.

However, such powerful existences had all become bones. Moreover, they were forcibly killed by someone's pressure. It meant that the person who killed them was very powerful and very horrifying.

"Haha, interesting! This is getting more and more interesting..." But in contrast with the shock Chu Feng felt, Eggy on the other hand became more and more excited. She yelled out loudly, "Chu Feng, look! Look at the skeleton between those two Monstrous Beasts!"

“Which one?” Chu Feng asked.

“The translucent human skeleton over there that’s letting off a bit of light! Do you see it? When that person was alive, he was a truly a cultivation expert!”

Following Eggy’s words and looking over, Chu Feng too couldn’t help gasping deeply. There was indeed a very special skeleton. It was a human’s, and it was a very special one: white as a jade, containing divine might, and it was even emitting faint radiance. Not only did it look like a treasure on the surface, there was even a feeling of indestructibility. Not to mention Chu Feng, even Martial Kings would find it difficult to damage the bones in the slightest. It was the remains of a Martial Emperor!

“Heavens! It’s a Martial Emperor! A Martial Emperor was killed!” Chu Feng could not remain collected any longer. His face was filled with astonishment as he leapt forward, rushed down from the sky, and wanted to get closer to the Martial Emperor’s remains to investigate it.

boom

“Ahh—”

However, before he even touched it, a powerful burst of might spread out from the remains. It forced Chu Feng back into the air, and he only stopped after flying for dozens of miles.

When he landed on the ground, he felt that the bones throughout his body were nearly shattered. His blood was boiling, and he almost coughed up blood. Luckily, he wasn’t seriously injured, but he still received some wounds.

After wiping away the traces of blood at the corners of his mouth, Chu Feng’s complexion was quite unsightly. He said, “Eggy, even though the aura just now was very weak, it seemed to be an Imperial Might. Imperial Might only Martial Emperors possess.”

“It is.” Eggy nodded.

“But it’s clearly only a skeleton, and even its Source Energy was cleanly absorbed! How is it possible for an Imperial Might to remain?” Chu Feng

felt confused. The typical Source Energy wasn't there, so the skeleton should be normal. Yet, the one just now was clearly different.

"Idiot, a Martial Emperor is, after all, a Martial Emperor! It is a true powerful person, an existence that can call upon the winds and rains, and can move mountains and fill oceans. Even after death, their might remains. This remnant energy will never be extinguished, and with the strength you currently possess, you shouldn't even think of approaching it," Eggy explained.

"Powerful." After hearing Eggy's words, Chu Feng felt even more amazed. He wasn't amazed at the power of the Martial Emperor, but at the killer which murdered the Martial Emperor.

Even though he was unable to get too close up before being forced away by the Imperial Might, he still noticed a fatal injury on the Martial Emperor's skeleton.

That injury was very fiercely made, and the Martial Emperor was precisely killed by that single strike. Other than that strike, there were no other wounds on the skeleton of the Martial Emperor. That meant the unimaginably powerful Martial Emperor was killed by a person's single attack. That was quite unbelievable.

"Hehe, this is truly interesting. I didn't think there would be such a person in the continent of the Nine Provinces." Eggy started getting excited.

"Eggy, do you mean that everyone here was killed by the creator of this Asura Ghost Tower?" Chu Feng knew what Eggy meant from her words.

"It's most likely that. Otherwise, why would he seal these useless skeletons in the ghost tower?" Eggy said.

"That's true." Chu Feng nodded, expressing agreement.

"Heh, this is truly too interesting. Even I must admit the creator of this Asura Ghost Tower is a bit impressive," Eggy said with a smile. She was oddly happy after seeing so many skeletons of powerful animals and people.

“Yeah! To be able to kill a Martial Emperor in a single strike... What sort of power is that?” Chu Feng could also imagine how powerful that person was.

“But sadly, judging by the changes that have occurred to these skeletons, they have likely already died for several tens of thousands of years. It’s been too long ago... They are also likely from the Ancient Era. The existences from that era have nearly been all extinct. So, I’m guessing you won’t have a chance to see the powerful figure of the master of this Asura Ghost Tower,” Eggy said with a bit of pity.

“They’ve all died, huh?” Chu Feng’s complexion changed slightly, then he quickly asked, “The matters from the Ancient Era are like puzzles. Even though many legends have been passed throughout the ages, it’s impossible to determine which are true and which are false. Eggy, you seem to know about these ancient things?”

“How could I know? I’ve just heard a few things, that’s all. They say this world’s Ancient Era was the era where experts came forth, an era where there was an endless stream of people with unique abilities and geniuses.

“However, that has already become the past. Right now, the people of that era have nearly all died. The matters regarding that era also, along with the people, slowly disappeared.” Eggy shook her head. One could tell even the proud queen felt a bit of sorrow since she missed such a prosperous era.

“Then is there a possibility that the people from the Ancient Era survived with special methods, and are just unwilling to show themselves?”

When the Ancient Era was mentioned, Chu Feng couldn’t help but recall the huge face that covered the sky within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm on the Misty Peak, the mysterious and powerful existence, and also the powerful creatures he had never seen before. Chu Feng faintly felt they were not creatures belonging to their era.

Chapter 838: Emperor of Massacre

He thought of such a question because the Misty Peak came from the ancient times, and Lady Piaomiao, because of the special power on the Misty Peak, survived for nearly a thousand years. It was something that defied common sense, and even though she was a Martial King, she still didn't have the strength to live so long. The only reason she could was by relying on the special power of the Misty Peak.

That was also clear proof of something: besides raising one's cultivation to achieve longevity, one could also rely on external power.

And if, with Lady Piaomiao's cultivation, she could live so long by relying on the power of the Misty Peak, why could the peak experts from ancient times not have survived until now?

"Heh, whether they've survived I don't know, but I do know if there's someone who has survived since that era, they will definitely be an extremely horrifying person. It would be fine if they don't show themselves, but if they do, then it would stir up quite a commotion." Eggy lightly smiled. There was actually yearning on her beautiful little face.

Then, she said, "Continue checking. I have a feeling that there's something extremely powerful left behind here."

"Mm." Chu Feng also thought similarly. Without hesitation, he leapt up and continued flying over the vast sea of bones.

As he did so, Chu Feng found several more skeletons of Martial Emperors, and all of them had died by a single strike. Such a scene made the shock in Chu Feng's heart reach an extreme level.

In his mind's eye, he could see the overwhelming power of the experts represented by vast sea of bones. When they allied together, they manifested destructive might to fight against a single enemy, yet were slaughtered by that very same person's might, which resulted in them becoming that very scene.

"What is that?" As he flew above the bones, Chu Feng noticed a black

palace at the very end.

Indeed, a black-coloured palace. It was entirely pitch-black, akin to ink, and it was like an enormous sharp sword imbedded into the earth. It was very grand, and at the same time, gave others a majestic feeling—one that prevented any from desecrating such a place.

"Haha, finally, it's the end! Chu Feng, look! This is the end of the Asura Ghost Tower! If there is anything good in this place, it's definitely in this palace!" Eggy shouted excitedly.

"Indeed, we've reached the end." Chu Feng first gazed with alert, then discovered there was an invisible Spirit Formation blocking his path behind the palace. As such, he knew this was the end of the Asura Ghost Tower, and also the most important section.

Chu Feng had cast his Spirit Formation outward but was unable to detect anything. The black-coloured palace appeared as if it could block anything and everything. If he wanted to know what was within, he could only enter himself.

After landing onto the ground, Chu Feng found the palace was truly quite huge. In front of it there was a wide path, and on the path there were square, crystalline black stones. On the sides of the path, there were several statues of soldiers holding large swords.

They wore the same armour, and held the same weapon, but they all looked different. They were very overbearing and were dozens of meters in height. They were like guardians as they stood in rank and order by the sides of the path, protecting the glory of the palace's master.

As he continued on the path, he felt an even stronger feeling of the palace's majesty. Despite being completely black, it was not made out of the same materials. The palace was not all that big, but it gave people a feeling of immensity.

Finally, as he walked along the path, he reached the end, arriving in front of the palace's door. That huge door was at least thirty meters tall, and in the middle there was a special symbol. Chu Feng was unable to determine what it was, but it could be described with a single word:

overwhelming.

On the two sides of the door, and above the door, there were several big words written—they were a couplet.

Upper part of couplet on the right: "What are the truths in the journey of cultivation? Only I alone devote myself in killing monsters."

Lower part on the left: "In the world under heaven, who is the ruler? I slaughter my way to bring order to the universe."

Above: "Emperor of Massacre"

"Emperor of Massacre? Is that the master of this place?"

When he saw that, Chu Feng's eyes lit up. He could tell, from the font of the couplet, that the person who wrote it was most definitely an expert. Within the strokes, there was clear arrogance and domineeringness. One could see that when he wrote those words, he must have stirred up quite a scene. Most likely, these words were written by the creator of the Asura Ghost Tower.

"Heh, Chu Feng, quickly go in! There's definitely treasure inside, but after entering, be careful. Unless the master of this place is oddly generous, he will not let you take his things for no reason at all," Eggy reminded with both nervousness and excitement.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, then went up and pushed the huge door. After some rumbling, the space between the doors gradually increased, then the door was completely opened.

After pushing open the door, what appeared before Chu Feng's eyes was a very vast palace. It was enormous, and the decorations and style inside were very exquisite. However, it was the same as the outside—everything was black.

When he walked within the palace, Chu Feng had a feeling of tininess. Although there weren't treasures within the palace, it seemed that in the perspective of the master, for visitors to walk within the palace was an honour in itself.

But regardless of the palace's size, there would always be an end. After walking for just a short while, there was an odd light emitted in front of them—it was a forging furnace. Moreover, in front of the forging furnace, there was a sign.

Judging by its font, it was the same as the couplet at the door so it was likely written by the master of this place. As for the content of the sign, it was:

SPIRIT POWER FORGING FURNACE—IT AWAITS ONLY THE FATED.

NON-WORLD SPIRITISTS DO NOT ENTER!

"Spirit Power Forging Furnace? What is this?" Chu Feng asked in confusion.

Eggy was also looking at it carefully. After a good while, she said, "I'm not too sure either, but it should be some sort of formation for training one's Spirit power. It's likely it was created by the master of this place, but I don't know if it is good luck or bad luck. Is it a trap, or is it a rare opportunity? How about you use your Spirit power to examine it?"

But Chu Feng shook his head after hearing Eggy's words, and said, "It doesn't work. In front of this furnace, there's a Spirit Formation. I can't determine what exactly this furnace is.

"However, there's a trick to this Spirit Formation. Even though it is invisible, it's not just a simple obstruction. And since the master of this place is so powerful, if he truly wanted to harm someone, he could have just set up a trap.

"With his strength, he could kill countless people with just a simple one. It would be of no trouble for him to make an inescapable slaughtering formation. There's no need for him to spend so much effort to create this Asura Ghost Tower, requiring only those with experience to enter this place.

"So, I feel that this is an opportunity. An extremely rare opportunity," Chu Feng said firmly.

Chapter 839: Breaking Through the Gate of Life and Death with Intellect

"Mm, you're right. Even if it's dangerous inside, it's a test. What comes after the test are definitely things greatly beneficial for you.

"You've already looked through the entire palace, and the only thing interesting is this Spirit Power Forging Furnace. If there truly is something good in this place, then it can only be this.

"What are you preparing to do now? Do you want to venture in, or retreat?" Eggy asked with a smile.

"Hehe, since I've already arrived here, I do want to give it a try. Would you dare as well?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Hmph. It wouldn't be me if I didn't dare. Go in. You can bear the brunt of the blame anyway." Eggy curled her lips as an expression of yearning and excitement emerged on her beautiful face.

"Don't worry. I have a feeling that my intuition won't be wrong. The master of this place wouldn't have set a trap for no reason. As you said, it will be at most a test, and since we're here already, why would I fear his test?"

Chu Feng lightly smiled and similar to Eggy, a smile of yearning appeared on his face. Then, he stepped forward and headed towards the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. But before he even came all that close to it, Chu Feng felt his vision distort, and everything around him started to quickly spin.

When everything became silent, Chu Feng couldn't help but tightly furrow his brows as a hint of graveness flashed into his eyes. He thought, "There's indeed something good here, but it won't be that easy to get it. However, that's fine. I've already prepared for this."

The reason Chu Feng had such thoughts was because everything around him had changed. He was no longer within the palace but had entered a cuboid, medium-sized space of Spirit Formations.

There were two doors by the sides, and at the center, there were two people made of wood: one black and one white.

As for the ground, there were rows of words. On the topmost one, there were five: GATE OF LIFE AND DEATH

Underneath these words, there were the rules on how to deactivate this challenge formation:

Two Spirit Formation gates. One to life, one to death.

Two wood people, and both know which leads to life and which leads to death. However, one only speak truths, and one only speaks lies.

There's only one chance, and you can only choose one of the two wood people, and ask it a single question. As for life and death, it's not up to the heavens. It's up to you.

"How should we ask? Isn't this a bit too difficult? At least tell me which one speaks truths and which one speaks lies!" Eggy couldn't help cursing when she saw the rules.

"If they tell you that, it would be too simple, right?" Chu Feng shook his head as he smiled, and felt they wouldn't have given such an easy challenge.

"Then what should we do now? Rather than asking these two woodheads, why not just choose one yourself? Regardless, we don't know which one will tell you the correct answer. You can only ask one question, but no matter what they say, you can't believe it. In the end, isn't it just up to fate?" Eggy said as she curled her lips.

"That may not be so." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and without hesitation, he walked towards the white wood person. After coming up to it, Chu Feng pointed at the black wood person before asking the white one, "If I ask it which one is the door of death, how will it reply?"

hmm Immediately after Chu Feng spoke, the body of the white wood person trembled slightly. Then, it exuded a faint aura of life before it pointed at the door on the left, spitting out six words with a stiff and odd tone, "That is the door of death."

“Thank you.” Chu Feng smiled, then strode forth, briskly walking straight towards the door of death as pointed by the white wood person.

“Oi, Chu Feng, have you gone mad? That wood person said this is the door of death!” Eggy was terrified by Chu Feng’s actions.

However, as if he couldn’t hear Eggy’s words, he continued moving forward and in the end, without hesitation, stepped into the door of death.

hmm In the instant Chu Feng stepped in, everything in his surroundings twisted and transformed. When it all returned to normal, Chu Feng had returned to the palace and passed the invisible Spirit Formation. Currently, he was standing right in front of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

“Waa, we’re out! Chu Feng, how did you do it?” At that instant, Eggy was stunned. She could not understand how Chu Feng chose the correct one, and from the “door of death” nonetheless!

“Heh, I didn’t think the great intelligent queen would have such a slow-witted moment!” Chu Feng said smugly.

“Ehh... Less of that. I was just too lazy to think about it. Now quickly tell me how you did it!” Eggy quickly asked impatiently.

“This is actually very simple. I pointed at the black wood person and asked the white wood person what the black one’s reply would be if I asked which one was the door of death.

“If the white wood person spoke the truth and the black wood person lied, then the white wood person would definitely point at the door of life and tell me it was the door of death,” Chu Feng explained.

“Why? The white wood person speaks truths, so why did it tell you a lie?” Eggy was even more confused.

“Because I asked what the answer of the black wood person would be. It’s the one that speaks lies, so if I ask it, it will tell me a lie and say the door of life is the door of death.

“As for the white wood person, since it speaks truths, it won’t trick me

so it will say the exact same answer as the black wood person," Chu Feng explained.

"But, how are you certain the white wood person speaks truths and the black wood person speaks lies?" Eggy asked quickly again.

"Silly, if it's swapped and the white wood person speaks lies and the black wood person truths, then the black wood person will tell me which the true door life death is. However, the white wood person must speak lies, so it cannot say the same answer as the black wood person, as it would be a truth. As such, it will still give me the wrong answer," Chu Feng explained in detail.

"Ah, I understand! It's not that you took a guess at which spoke truths and which spoke lies, it's that your question was very tricky. No matter its reply, it will say the wrong answer so as long as you do the opposite you'll be fine!

"Haha, I'm truly too smart!" When she heard all that, Eggy, the queen, was elated as if it were all analyzed by her. One could tell that she felt really happy to have been able to solve the mystery in her heart.

Chu Feng lightly smiled at Eggy's reaction. It was in her nature to be so odd, but it was still rather cute.

However, right now, Chu Feng didn't have the mindset to admire Eggy's cuteness because after passing through the invisible Spirit Formation, Chu Feng was able to feel the exceptionality of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace at such a close distance.

Chapter 840: Seeking Quick Gains

The Spirit Power Forging Furnace was entirely black. Inside, there was a white flame burning. It looked mysterious, and it was clearly quite peculiar.

After he went near it, the Spirit Power Forging Furnace seemed to have already been completely activated. On its black exterior, rows of light-blue words appeared.

"The Spirit Power Forging Furnace can only be used once, and after entering, it will be fully activated. It can become stronger in accordance to the user's wish by transforming the flames.

"It's advised that the one destined here to judge your own abilities correctly. If you cannot continue, please leave the furnace. Do not be greedy, nor be rash and aim for short-term beneficial effects. Otherwise, all of your prior work will be lost completely.

"As expected, it's for training Spirit power! Moreover, it gives a clear warning. It seems that the master of this Asura Ghost Tower isn't bad at all," Chu Feng said quite joyfully.

"Isn't bad? He's clearly showing off his high-level techniques to make others revere him.

"Instead of making a formation like this, how much better would it have been to just leave some wealth behind?" Eggy curled her lips. She didn't seem to be too satisfied with a gift like this.

"Heh, I feel like this is precisely the sincere thoughts of the master. Of course, it would have been good if he had just left some wealth behind, but if he did that, he wouldn't have been able to test the people who came. Instead, this Spirit Power Forging Furnace can compensate for such a deficiency.

"To World Spiritists, this Spirit Power Forging Furnace definitely benefits them greatly, and it's something that can change one's own strength.

“As for the degree of change, that’ll depend on themself. I must say that the master of this place is quite skillful.” However, in contrast to Eggy, Chu Feng was very satisfied.

“You know how to feel content with what you have, huh? Since it’s like this, quickly enter. Let me see how long you can stay in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace,” Eggy said with a smile.

“Heh, just wait and see.” Chu Feng smiled, then stepped into the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

boom Immediately after entering, the white-coloured flames surged up to him like a wave. Not only did they surround Chu Feng, they fiercely attacked him.

Like its introduction, the flames were mysterious. Clearly they were flames, but they lacked any temperature. They were unable to burn Chu Feng’s clothes, and instead, strangely melded into his body, swirling straight towards Chu Feng’s intangible Spirit power.

At that instant, Chu Feng could feel his Spirit power changing slightly with the attacks from the white-coloured flames. His strength was being honed, but the effect wasn’t really noticeable. It was even inferior to his Asura Ghost Axe which he used to constantly train himself.

boom As though feeling Chu Feng’s disappointment, another huge explosion came from the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. The white-coloured flames actually transformed and became grey-coloured flames, which too started to refine Chu Feng’s Spirit power.

“Although it’s almost the same as my Asura Ghost Axe’s effect, it’s still too weak. Can’t you give some power into this?” Chu Feng loudly yelled.

boom Immediately after he spoke, the flames in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace changed once again, and became blue-coloured flames.

At that instant, Chu Feng subconsciously frowned, but joy emerged on his face.

As he was being “burned” by the blue-coloured flames, Chu Feng felt his Spirit power rising quickly in strength. That effect was superior to the

effect of his Asura Ghost Axe; however, alongside this training effect Chu Feng also felt some pain. It was akin to countless little needles stabbing here and there on his head.

"Finally, it's a bit interesting. Do you dare to make it even stronger?" Chu Feng howled excitedly.

boom As Chu Feng desired, the flames of the Spirit Power Forging Furnace turned purple from blue.

"Hmph!"

At that moment, even Chu Feng couldn't help but tightly furrow his brows. He gritted his teeth, then his legs trembled and with a poof, he knelt onto the ground because in the instant the purple-coloured flames changed, his head started bearing an extremely fierce jab of pain.

That feeling was akin to several sharp blades stabbing again and again at his head. It was extremely difficult to endure.

However, alongside the pain was an effect Chu Feng went ecstatic for. With the attacks of the purple-coloured flames, Chu Feng's Spirit power was strengthening with a frightening speed.

"Chu Feng, enough. These purple-coloured flames are your limit. Just continue training like this, and your Spirit power will receive a great rise in strength," Eggy reminded.

"You're right. These purple-coloured flames do provide great assistance. It can train my Spirit power at a frightening speed, and it isn't even a problem for me to receive the power of gold-coloured Spirit Formations.

"However, I will need to train here for a very long time—at least a year. I need to train here endlessly for a year before my Spirit power can reach that stage.

"I can't wait that long. I don't have that much time. So, this time, I can only seek a quick gain and take a risk." Chu Feng at that instant was pale. His forehead was drenched with sweat, but he still, resolutely, yelled, "I want even stronger flames!"

boom

Immediately after he spoke, the golden flames were born. Like ferocious wild beasts, they made ruthless attacks at Chu Feng with deafening roars and horrifying might.

“AHH—”

At that moment, even Chu Feng, who had went through all sorts of pain, couldn’t help crying out loud. Then, his hands tightly hugged his head and he started rolling to and fro within the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

Painful. It was too painful. It had reached a nearly unendurable state of pain. It was as if countless small cracks appeared on his brain and insects were consuming him within those cracks.

“Chu Feng, get out, quickly get out! Otherwise, you will die here!” Seeing that Chu Feng could not bear through such agony, Eggy was extremely anxious as she started hysterically yelling.

“No!” But who would have expected Chu Feng to speak those words with gnashed teeth. Not only that, he turned around, and used his fist to ruthlessly punch the ground. He had actually stood up.

However, he did not choose to leave the Spirit Power Forging Furnace. Instead, he sat cross-legged on the ground.

Simultaneously, he held out his hands at the same time and cast a meditation spell. Under such excruciating pain, Chu Feng did not choose to retreat. Instead, he chose to face it and continue bearing the suffering.

He was getting used to such suffering. He had to get used to such suffering because only then could he continue enjoying the benefits brought to him by the golden flames.

Chapter 841: Gold-coloured Spirit Formation

Ten full days had passed since Chu Feng entered the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

At present, the golden flames inside the furnace were still raging; they were even fiercer than the beginning.

boom Suddenly, there was a ripple within the flames as a person gradually appeared. He was walking slowly towards the exit of the furnace—that person was none other than Chu Feng.

At that moment, his complexion was pale and blue veins bulged everywhere on his body. Strings of blood filled his roundly widened eyes; it could be seen that even though he endured ten days in the Spirit Power Forging Furnace, those ten days were not passed well.

At that moment, every step Chu Feng took was akin to lifting a heavy rock. They required a great excursion of power, but the golden flames still remained unforgiving as they actually increased in strength, continuing to tangle Chu Feng, unwilling to let him go.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's eyes suddenly glittered as a boundless Spirit Formation power surged out of his body. Like several golden dragons, they spiraled upward—it was golden Spirit Formation power!

As they faced the retaliation of such power, the golden flames was like a hungry wolf that met a tiger. In but an instant, their attacks all dissipated and the flames all backed away. Immediately, the blazing flames within the Spirit Power Forging Furnace became extremely thin, and Chu Feng also successfully stepped out from inside.

"Haha, success! Obtaining the golden Spirit Formation power at the ninth level of the Heaven realm! The harvest here this time is truly not small at all!" Just at that moment, Eggy, who had been in silence for quite a while, couldn't help cheering.

Retrieving the boundless power he sent out, a smile also appeared on Chu Feng's face. In the past ten days, he had endured agonizing torture. But luckily, he did not undergo such torture for no gains as he had still received the appropriate reward.

"Senior, thank you for your generous gift."

Chu Feng couldn't help turning around, and he expressed his gratitude towards the Spirit Power Forging Furnace.

He was not giving respect to the furnace, but to the master of the Asura Ghost Tower. Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were already very skillful. And now, with the strengthening of his Spirit power, and obtaining the ability to use golden Spirit Formation power, that made his Spirit Formation techniques rise to another level.

If it were only a battle between Spirit Formation techniques, it was likely no one in the Eastern Sea Region could defeat Chu Feng. One must admit that the gains Chu Feng acquired here were quite bountiful.

And, of course, the reason Chu Feng had such enormous improvements was because of the master of the Asura Ghost Tower. It was the master of the Asura Ghost Tower who left this Spirit Power Forging Furnace behind, which in turn helped Chu Feng obtain power that others did not even dare to believe.

Becoming a Gold-cloak World Spiritist at the ninth level of the Heaven realm. That was indeed not something an ordinary person could do, and it could even be said to be unordinary. However, Chu Feng, with his special body, powerful spirit, and unyielding perseverance, had done it.

However, it was still because of the master of the Asura Ghost Tower that Chu Feng could achieve what he did. Although Chu Feng did pass through tests and fought for this power himself, as they say, "Recognize the favours given and repay them appropriately." Chu Feng was a person who knew that.

Right now, the master of the Asura Ghost Tower was not here, so Chu Feng could only give his salutations and gratitude facing nothing.

“So it can indeed only be used once, huh.”

After the thanks, Chu Feng raised his head. He discovered that the flames inside the Spirit Power Forging Furnace had already been completely extinguished. Even the black-coloured body of the furnace became illusory. As stated by the sign, the Spirit Power Forging Furnace was disappearing.

rumble rumble rumble...

Just at that moment, the ground underneath Chu Feng’s feet swayed left and right. Quickly after, the entire palace started swaying. Countless cracks spread from the palace, and they became larger and larger. Shattered rocks of various sizes endlessly fell from the cracks above—the palace was actually collapsing.

Chu Feng slightly frowned when he saw that. He quickly started flying with his tired body and rushed out of the palace.

However, after flying out, the uneasiness in Chu Feng’s eyes became even stronger because only after coming outside did he realize the cracking was not limited to the palace alone, but to the entire world.

The mountains, rivers, creeks, sky, earth, and even space itself was collapsing.

“This is bad. The master of this formation set a self-destruction system! After the destined person receives what he left behind, this Asura Ghost Tower will be destroyed. Quick! Quickly leave this place, or you too will disappear with everything in here!” Even Eggy started panicking when she saw that.

Naturally, Chu Feng dared not hesitate as he quickly used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique. He became an azure stream of light and speedily flew out from the path he entered.

On the journey back, Chu Feng couldn’t help sweeping his gaze over the vast ocean of bones. And when he thought of the fact that the former super-experts were about to completely disappear alongside this Asura Ghost Tower, there was an unspeakable emotion in Chu Feng’s heart.

However, right now, he didn't have time to think that much because the most important thing right now was escaping.

Luckily, Chu Feng was successful in fleeing before the Asura Ghost Tower collapsed.

boom

Shortly after Chu Feng stepped out of the Asura Ghost Tower, a huge explosion echoed out and the tower broke completely apart. First, it became countless fragments, then it became minuscule dust particles before disappearing entirely.

The Asura Ghost Tower in the Nine Provinces' Spirit Province that had stood for over ten thousand years had disappeared just like that.

"Lord Chu Feng, what happened here? Why has the Asura Ghost Tower disappeared?"

After hearing the deafening sound, the experts of the World Spirit Guild hurried over. However, when they arrived, they just happened to see the scene of the Asura Ghost Tower's destruction.

All of them tightly furrowed their brows as their complexions distorted greatly. They were all terrified by that scene.

To them, the Asura Ghost Tower was a treasure they had guarded for many years. Back then, it was precisely because of this Asura Ghost Tower that they were in conflict with the Jie clan.

One could even say the Asura Ghost Tower was the most precious thing to their World Spirit Guild, yet right now, it was actually destroyed. They truly didn't know what to do.

"It's not related to any of you. The creator just felt there was no more need for its existence." Chu Feng calmly smiled, then said, "Don't guard this place anymore. Follow me. Without the Asura Ghost Tower, there's no need for any of you to stay here."

"This..." When they heard those words, those people lowered their heads in silence. They were in a very conflicting situation.

“Don’t worry. I will explain to Senior Gu Tianchen what happened here. I guarantee they will not make anything difficult for you.” Chu Feng saw the reason of their internal conflict.

“Then thank you, Lord Chu Feng.” The experts of the World Spirit Guild were elated when they heard that. They hurriedly clasped their hands at Chu Feng, bowing and expressing their gratitude.

The reason they stayed behind was for the Asura Ghost Tower. Now, since it was gone, naturally there was no need for them to remain.

However, due to orders, they didn’t dare to leave despite knowing the continent of the Nine Provinces was dangerous. But since Chu Feng had spoken now, they could escape the upcoming calamity.

After all, they knew Chu Feng was now an actual powerful and influential person. In the Nine Provinces at present, who dared to not give Chu Feng face? Even their old ancestor of the World Spirit Guild, Gu Tianchen, was merely an insignificant person when compared to Chu Feng.

Chapter 842: Uneasiness

After the destruction of the Asura Ghost Tower, there was no one remaining within the Spirit Province who required Chu Feng's worry.

So, leading a group of experts, he left.

However, he did not leave the continent of the Nine Provinces immediately. He first returned to the Azure Province.

The reason he returned was naturally because of the Imperial Tomb. At first, Chu Feng prepared to enter and visit Qiu Canfeng. First, to report the situation in the Eastern Sea Region, and also hoping he could give him some sort of advice.

However, after entering, Chu Feng discovered that the Imperial Tomb was truly too profound. After a while, the traps that had been broken through by Huangfu Haoyue had already repaired themselves. Naturally, Chu Feng did not dare to challenge those horrifying Spirit Formation.

As he could do nothing else, Chu Feng had no choice but to give it up. However, before leaving, he did not forget to lay another Concealment Formation in front of the Imperial Tomb's entrance, in case there were experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who'd come and discover this place.

Actually, the Imperial Tomb being discovered was not too important, but if Qiu Canfeng were discovered that would not be good at all.

Although Qiu Canfeng, his so-called master, didn't give Chu Feng too much of an assistance, he was still his master. Chu Feng hoped nothing would happen to him.

After a few more events, Chu Feng finally brought the experts from the World Spirit Guild to the new residence of the people from the Nine Provinces. It was a land named as the Desolate Continent.

The Desolate Continent wasn't truly desolate. On the continent, there were still quite a few people living there, but there were very few cultivation experts. There were even fewer sects and things such as those,

so that was why it was named by the other continents as one of the most degenerated continents.

That was also why the continent wasn't attention-grabbing. It was even ignored by some, so Chu Feng chose to relocate everyone to this place.

As such, with the assistance of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the people from the continent of the Nine Provinces had now properly set themselves up in the Desolate Continent.

They didn't carry out any large-scale construction such as building cities in places where there were many people and instead, chose to live hiddenly deep in mountains and forests where there were Monstrous Beasts—places others didn't dare to enter.

Although many felt discomfort due to leaving their homeland, after Chu Feng returned, the crowd swept away their dispirited emotions and all of them were excited. To them, Chu Feng was not only a peak expert, he was also a person who saved them all—a huge hero in their hearts.

And since Chu Feng was in a hurry to relocate his relatives and friends, he simply didn't even have a good meal with the crowd. So, on the day he returned, a banquet was held just for him. He ate and toasted with many friends and seniors from the Azure Dragon School, the World Spirit Guild, and the Jiang Dynasty.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, are you still going to return to the Eastern Sea Region? Don't go! Right now, it is too dangerous there."

"Yeah! Junior Chu Feng, in my perspective, how about you just stay with us and hide here for a while! When we brothers all become Martial Lords, we can just directly walk onto the Heavenly Road and take a look at that Holy Land of Martialism."

"Yeah! Chu Feng, Brother Wushang and Senior Zhang are correct. Since you've already saved Sister Zi Ling, why not just bring her family here and peacefully cultivate with us!" During the banquet, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Su Rou, and Su Mei, the people close to Chu Feng, all urged him not to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

And when others heard about that, nearly everyone cast their gazes at Chu Feng. There was even a bit of pleading and urging in their eyes—all of them hoped Chu Feng would stay.

After the relocation, they too had learnt about the Eastern Sea Region from the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They already knew that the Immortal Execution Archipelago put up wanted posters everywhere for Chu Feng.

"Zi Ling has indeed been saved, and a huge stone in my heart has finally disappeared.

"However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has treated me well. I cannot just hide myself when the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago prepare to start a war." However, Chu Feng resolutely shook his head at the crowd's gazes, then firmly said, "I must return."

"But..." At that instant, Su Rou and Su Mei wanted to say something.

"Little Rou, Little Mei, just leave it be. Men are like this. Don't be softhearted and advise him to be unloyal." But just at that moment, the Azure Dragon Founder spoke.

Moreover, as he spoke, he stood up, raised his wine glass, and said, "Chu Feng, go ahead. A good man should not fear risks and he should fight even in the most desperate of situations. We will await your return. I'm sure when you do, you will become even stronger. That Immortal Execution Archipelago will also definitely not defeat you."

"Chu Feng, we support you! Go, do what you want! No matter when, we will support you to the very end!" After the Azure Dragon Founder spoke, the old ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, Zhuge Liuyun, and the others all raised their glasses. The seniors all toasted towards Chu Feng

"Seniors, thank you. I will definitely not disappoint any of you." When he saw that, Chu Feng felt greatly moved. He quickly rose and toasted the crowd.

Since even the many seniors of the continent of the Nine Provinces

spoke, there was no one who urged Chu Feng to stay behind any longer. They only chose to support Chu Feng.

However, after Chu Feng insisted on leaving, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi wanted to join the Crippling Night Demon Sect regardless of what they had to do, and fight shoulder-to-shoulder with Chu Feng when they returned to the Eastern Sea Region.

Naturally, Chu Feng didn't wish for them to do that, but he could not stop the four them the same way they could not stop himself. In the end, Chu Feng could only choose to compromise. Bringing the four of them, and the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they all returned to the Eastern Sea Region.

Before arriving, the army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, with their ten warships, split up with Chu Feng and the others. From what they said, the war between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago had already begun, so they had to quickly enter the battlefield.

As for Chu Feng, he was a very important person who required protection from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Yet, due to the war, all the experts who had showed themselves were fighting so there was simply no one who could protect him.

So, back then when Chu Feng led the army back to the continent of the Nine Provinces, the Earth King had told him there was no need to care about the army after handling the matter at the continent of the Nine Provinces. It would be fine for them to return on their own.

Moreover, before Chu Feng received any orders, he could not rashly face the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nor could he go find them himself. So, the Earth King advised him to go to the Misty Peak. With Lady Piaomiao's protection, the Earth King and the other Crippling Night Demon Sect experts could be more at ease.

In reality, even if the Earth King didn't say those things, the place Chu Feng wanted to go the most was still the Misty Peak. First, it was because Zi Ling was there so he wanted to know how went the development of the

cure for Zi Ling's Heaven Gripping Pellet.

Second, even though he promised Jiang Wushang and the others they could enter the Crippling Night Demon Sect and fight shoulder-by-shoulder with him, Chu Feng wouldn't let them die for nothing. As such, since he could not guarantee their safety, it was the best choice to bring them to the Misty Peak.

However, just as Chu Feng arrived at the entrance, he was met immediately by the guardians of the Misty Peak, and they brought him to Lady Piaomiao.

Seeing she was looking for him with such urgency, Chu Feng started feeling uneasy. He felt that something had happened.

Chapter 843: Good News

"Senior, what urgent matter does Lady Piaomiao need me for?" Chu Feng asked.

"I don't know. Lady Piaomiao only told us guards to immediately bring you to the Peak of Myriad Illusions after you've returned."

"The Four Seasons aren't here?" When he heard the Peak of Myriad Illusions, Chu Feng's expression changed slightly. He knew that peak was one of the most important peaks and normally only they and Lady Piaomiao could enter. Others were forbidden from nearing it.

Typically speaking, Chun Wu would bring him to a forbidden land like this, yet right now, Lady Piaomiao had such a normal guard bring him over. He had a feeling that something was wrong and subconsciously felt that Chun Wu and the others were possibly not here.

"Lady Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue are not here." The guide shook his head. Indeed, it was the same as Chu Feng's guess.

"Senior, do you know what they are doing?" Chu Feng quickly asked.

"Lord Chu Feng, I truly don't know this. Please forgive me." The guide had a very awkward face. It didn't seem like he was not telling Chu Feng and really did look like he knew nothing.

Chu Feng didn't continue asking, but there were some thoughts in his mind. Since Lady Piaomiao needed to see him with such urgency, something definitely happened. Otherwise, judging by her nature, she wouldn't have done that.

After arriving at the Peak of Myriad Illusions, Chu Feng discovered the scenery there was quite beautiful. However, on the entire peak, there was only a single tower. Its shape was normal, but there were several colours. The colours interweaved with one another and endless changed. It was very mystical and also extremely beautiful.

"Lord Chu Feng, Lady Piaomiao is waiting for you inside." The guide didn't dare to enter. He stopped three meters away from the tower.

“Mm.” Chu Feng nodded, then came up to the tower. He could see that it was a rather impressive tower. Not only was it constructed with special materials, it was even reinforced by a powerful Spirit Formation. If it were sealed, even he could not open it. However, since it was not sealed, Chu Feng gave a light push and the doors opened.

When he entered the tower, Chu Feng saw Lady Piaomiao. At that moment, her eyes were shut tight and she was sitting cross-legged. She was channeling power into a formation.

It was a Refining Formation. Within the formation, there were all sorts of odd ingredients being refined and merged together. Lady Piaomiao was concocting a pellet, and at that moment, judging by the quality of the materials within the formation, Chu Feng knew it was an extremely impressive pellet.

“You’ve come back. Have things been handled sufficiently well?” Lady Piaomiao didn’t open her eyes but knew Chu Feng had come.

“Senior Piaomiao, thank you for your concern. Things have been handled well,” Chu Feng replied truthfully.

“Mm. Don’t need to be anxious. I called you over so hurriedly is actually because I have good news. I’ve already found the method to destroy the effects of the Heaven Gripping Pellet. The thing I’m concocting right now is the cure,” Lady Piaomiao said.

When he heard those words, Chu Feng was elated. He quickly expressed his gratitude. “Thank you Senior!”

“However, don’t be happy too soon. Whether this method will work or not I am uncertain, but there will always be risks. Although Zi Ling herself is willing to take the risk and receive this medicine, as the closest person to her, you must be prepared mentally,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Instead of letting Zi Ling become a cripple, it’s better to look for some opportunities. I respect Zi Ling’s choice.” Chu Feng didn’t mind risks because he knew since Zi Ling agreed, it meant she didn’t want to become a useless person. She wanted to retrieve the power that belonged to her, and Chu Feng had the same thoughts.

“Mm.” After hearing Chu Feng’s words, Lady Piaomiao nodded. Then, she said, “However, there are truly too many required ingredients for this cure. Some of them cannot even be found in the Misty Peak, so I’ve already instructed Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and Yan Ruyu to go down the peak and search for them. The harvests are quite good.

“But, the core medicine I entrusted Lady Qiushui to search for has not been brought back yet. With her strength and abilities, to procure this medicine should be of no trouble and she should have come back already, but she has yet to return. I don’t know if there’s been a change in circumstances so I’m a bit worried.

“However, right now, I need to focus on concocting this medicine and I cannot leave. So, I want you to help me see why Lady Qiushui hasn’t come back yet.”

“Then… what is Lady Qiushui looking for, and where can it be found?” Chu Feng quickly asked. He was also a bit worried when he heard Lady Piaomiao’s words.

“What Lady Qiushui is looking for is the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. It is found in the old location of the Burning Heaven Church; however, at the entrance, there are profound slaughtering formations. Normal people cannot enter, so I want you to go take a look. After all, with the Spirit Formation techniques you possess, I do feel relatively at ease. Even if you cannot pass through the formations, at least you can retreat with everything intact,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“I am willing to investigate what happened.” Chu Feng nodded his head and decisively agreed.

Putting aside the fact that this was related to Zi Ling, Qiushui Fuyan was doing this to help him and Zi Ling. And, with her cultivation and status, she should have returned quickly if she went to the old address of the Burning Heaven Church to procure something. Yet, right now, she still hadn’t returned. Not to mention that Lady Piaomiao was worried, Chu Feng was worried as well.

“Mm. The entrance to the Burning Heaven Church is at the Winter

Plains. Go find Zi Ling and let her know that you've returned. Cast away your worries, and go to the Winter Plains. However, remember, if you cannot pass the slaughtering formation, do not force it. Know your own strength."

As Lady Piaomiao spoke, she opened her eyes. With one palm, she drew a map in the air. It was a map of the Winter Plains, and on it was the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

However, she only recorded the location of the entrance but not the method of deactivating the slaughtering formation.

"Then, I'll take my leave." After memorizing the map, Chu Feng left the tower. After he left, he discovered that the guide was still standing on the spot, waiting for him.

"Senior, do you know where Zi Ling is?" Chu Feng asked.

"Lady Piaomiao had instructed me already. Lord Chu Feng, follow me." The guide moved and started leading Chu Feng to another peak.

That peak was very beautiful; it was even superior to the Peak of Myriad Illusions. It could be said to be one of the most beautiful peaks on the Misty Peak, and on that peak, there was an extremely beautiful palace. The palace didn't have any aura of ancientness—it was completely new. Evidently, Lady Piaomiao had that specially built for Zi Ling.

Outside the palace, there was beautiful person raising her head and looking. After seeing Chu Feng, she quickly flew over. That person was Zi Ling.

"Lord Chu Feng, I'll take my leave." After leading the way, the guide left on his own accord.

"Chu Feng, you've finally returned! Why have you left for so long? I was so worried for you! Are Sister Su Rou and Su Mei well? Why don't I see them with you?" Joy filled Zi Ling's face when she saw Chu Feng. It could be seen that in the past days, she was always worried about Chu Feng.

Chapter 844: Winter Plains

"Don't worry, everything's good. Su Rou and Su Mei have come to the Misty Peak, and even Brother Wushang and Senior Zhang have come. They are being escorted to their residences right now," Chu Feng replied with a smile.

"Really? Bring me to see them!" Zi Ling was elated when she heard Chu Feng's words. She dragged Chu Feng and ran down the peak, impatient to see Su Rou and Su Mei.

Being led by the guide, Chu Feng and Zi Ling soon arrived at the residence of Su Rou and Su Mei. Because Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi's residence hadn't been arranged yet, the two of them were there as well.

Since Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi both knew Zi Ling already and their relationship was quite good, after seeing her, they were chatting quite naturally. That was something one would expect.

On the other hand, Su Rou and Su Mei had been in a coma before. They had only heard Chu Feng talk about Zi Ling but they had never truly seen her.

One would expect that after seeing Zi Ling, they should feel a bit distant. However, there was not even a tiny bit of unfamiliarity. Not only was there none from them, there was none from Zi Ling.

The three beauties were like sisters who had known each other for a long time. They chatted merrily, and even laughed joyfully. They completely cast Chu Feng, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi onto the side, ignoring them.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, to be honest, I truly feel a bit of admiration towards you." Seeing the three beauties talking to each other in harmony, Jiang Wushang spoke with a smile. His words were also full of teasing.

"Not only do you feel admiration, I also feel admiration! Thinking back then in the Azure Dragon School, I was still quite a character. Oh, how

many beauties expressed their love towards me! Although I said I wasn't finding a partner, I still clearly remember that of the women I knew, only Junior Su Rou's heart wasn't moved by me.

"At that time, I even thought she was the same as me: devoting herself in the pursuit for cultivation, so much she didn't even want to bother with men.

"But now, I know I was wrong. It wasn't that Junior Su Rou wholeheartedly devoted herself to cultivation, it was just that I didn't have enough charm! After Junior Chu Feng entered the Azure Dragon School, Junior Su Rou was quickly attracted by him.

"Not only was she conquered by you, even her sister, Little Su Mei, was conquered by you!

"Ah, even the legendary Divine Body Lady Zi Ling was conquered by you. And these three beauties even love you so much! Sigh, in this world, probably any man would admire you, Junior Chu Feng," Zhang Tianyi said strangely as he smirked.

As he faced the teasing from his two good brothers, there was only a happy smile on Chu Feng's face. He knew to have three loving beauties who would even sacrifice their lives for him was his great fortune. He had to treasure them well.

After the short meetup, Chu Feng had no choice but to leave. Even though he was extremely unwilling to in his heart, Zi Ling, Su Mei, and Su Rou, who were all considerate, didn't hold him back.

On the other hand, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang wanted to head out with Chu Feng, but this journey required him to break through a slaughtering formation. Chu Feng didn't know what it looked like, so he didn't know if he could protect the two or not.

And so long as they imagined they wouldn't be of any help and instead possibly a burden, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang also chose to remain on the Misty Peak.

As for Chu Feng, he had no choice but to step on the journey filled with

unknown, alone.

"I truly hope there will be one day I can give him a hand, so he won't need to do everything on his own," Zhang Tianyi said in a low voice as he looked in the direction of Chu Feng's departure.

"I have the same thoughts of course, but even with the Imperial Bloodline, it seems that it'll be very difficult to catch up to him." Jiang Wushang on the side also had a face full of helplessness.

"Actually, that may not be so. Junior Chu Feng told me his real cultivation right now is only the ninth level of the Heaven realm. He's only a rank three Martial Lord because of his special power.

"Now, I have a slight feeling that I will make a breakthrough soon. As long as I am successful, my cultivation will be the exact same as Junior Chu Feng! Moreover, with the strength I currently possess, as long as I can step into the ninth level of the Heaven realm, I can even put up a fight against a rank one Martial Lord.

"If I become a Martial Lord, I will be able to comprehend even stronger power from my Forbidden Mysterious Technique. At that time, perhaps I won't be as heavy as a burden as I am right now." As Zhang Tianyi spoke, a hint of yearning emerged onto the face.

"Big Brother Tianyi, I didn't expect this to be such a coincidence! Recently, I've also felt I'll make a breakthrough soon! How about... we have a race and see who makes the breakthrough first?" Jiang Wushang said with a smile.

"Any time!" Zhang Tianyi also laughed. He was elated when he imagined he would catch up to Chu Feng. This was not really a serious contest; they just hoped they could fight together with their brother and not always hide behind Chu Feng's protection.

Chu Feng of course knew nothing of their plans. Going through the Teleportation Array at the Misty Peak, it sent him straight to the Winter Plains, and since that Teleportation Array wasn't controlled by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng didn't need to worry about meeting any enemies.

But, just in case, Chu Feng still used the Transformational Mask to change his appearance. After all, wanted posters of himself had been interspersed about the Eastern Sea Region. He also didn't know whether the people at the Winter Plains knew his appearance, nor did he know whether they were enemies or allies. So, it was still better to disguise himself.

After a long journey within the Teleportation Array, the exit finally appeared in front of Chu Feng. After stepping out, a blinding white light shone into his eyes.

The Winter Plains was indeed as its name suggested. Ice and snow were endless and everywhere, covering the soil deep underneath themselves. Moreover, the sky was gloomy and it was snowing heavily.

Although the cold air could not harm Chu Feng's body, after seeing such a freezing scene, there was a mental effect on Chu Feng's heart; he couldn't help but feel a bit chilly.

"Quick! Quickly go! If we're late, we'll miss a great fight!"

"Who's come out?"

"They've all come out! The head of the Stone Sword Sect, many of their elders, and even their core disciples have all come out! This will definitely be a huge battle, and a great show that cannot be missed!"

Suddenly, there were rowdy noises coming ahead. At the same time, several people flew over. There seemed to be something lively there to watch.

The world of martial cultivation had never been peaceful. Battles between sects were the most common, and since Chu Feng had business in hand, he didn't want to nose into anything.

Especially so since he was not far from the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church, Chu Feng didn't care what was happening. Instead, he went the opposite direction of the liveliness, impatient in wanting to enter the Burning Heaven Church and see if Qiushui Fuyan was there or not.

If she wasn't, then Chu Feng would personally search for the so-called

Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix at the old address of the Burning Heaven Church. When she drew the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church, Lady Piaomiao also drew the image of the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix.

Clearly, Lady Piaomiao also hoped if Chu Feng were unable to find Qiushui Fuyan, he would directly bring back the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix to the Misty Peak.

swish swish swish But shortly after Chu Feng flew, there were several more people who flew in front of him. After hearing their discussions, Chu Feng's heart trembled and his expression changed slightly. He couldn't help stopping his forwarding steps and stood in the air, carefully listening to their words.

Chapter 845: Stone Sword Sect

"Doesn't this mean the Stone Sword Sect truly went over to the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side, and is making the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy?"

"Right now, the Stone Sword Sect is fighting people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! That is absolutely true!"

"Hurry, quickly! If we're late, we'll miss out on a good show!"

The people were rushing over. They flew over as they chatted, and simply didn't even give Chu Feng a glance. They flew past him, clearly in a great hurry.

However, after Chu Feng heard their conversation, he could not remain a bystander.

"People from the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" Chu Feng had never heard of the Stone Sword Sect, but from what they said, this Stone Sword Sect seemed to be truly fighting members from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

If the Stone Sword Sect were fighting with others, then Chu Feng wouldn't even bother interfering. However, they were fighting against the sect he himself belonged to. As such, Chu Feng could not ignore it.

So, he turned around and tailed those people. He flew towards the battle to see what exactly was happening.

Indeed, a few thousand miles away from the Teleportation Array, a villa was filled with corpses. Blood formed rivers, and outside the villa, there was a frightening battle in progress.

There were two groups. One group had a rather large number of people—they wore robes, held stone swords, and were laying a formation, surrounding ten or so people within.

Of the surrounded people, there were males, females, old, and young. There was also a varying level of cultivation strength—it was quite incongruous. There were Martial Lords, and also experts in the Heaven

realm. There were even children who hadn't started cultivation.

However, of the surrounding people, there were not only over a hundred people holding stone swords, they were also all Martial Lords.

Both sides were exchanging blows, and of the smaller group, there were only three Martial Lords who were suitable for fighting out of the entire group. Even though their strengths were quite outstanding, they were in a great disadvantage since they had to protect their companions and consider attacks from all directions. They were constantly taking steps back.

And other than that ongoing battle, there was another at the distant sky. There were two old men, and their cultivations were both of a rank seven Martial Lord. Moreover, their fighting strength could truly shock the heavens and the earth—it was quite intense.

"That is truly the head of the Stone Sword Sect! However, isn't that the Nine-fingered Old Man fighting him? Weren't the people killed by the Stone Sword Sect from the Nine-fingered Villa?"

"The Nine-fingered Old Man and the head of the Stone Sword Sect have always been close friends! Why are they now fighting to the death? So many people died from the Nine-fingered Villa... They weren't all slaughtered by the Stone Sword Sect, right?"

"What's happening? Wasn't it said that the Stone Sword Sect is fighting against the experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Why has it become an internal battle between the Stone Sword Sect and the Nine-fingered Villa?" Many locals frowned slightly after seeing such a scene, revealing confused expressions.

"None of you know this, huh? The Nine-fingered Old Man and the others are all members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! However, since they hid it so well before, no one had ever known," said a person smugly who knew what exactly was happening.

"What? So the Nine-fingered Old Man and his family were actually members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! However, the head of the Stone Sword Sect is clearly good friends with the Nine-fingered Old Man!

The old man had even brought experts from the Nine-fingered Villa and fought against enemies many times alongside the head of the Stone Sword Sect, yet he still has the heart to attack the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others?" The observers were stunned.

"The head of the Stone Sword Sect has wanted to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago for quite a while already, but they had never viewed such a small sect like the Stone Sword Sect with any importance. However, if the Stone Sword Sect kills the Nine-fingered Old Man and his family, then they would have accomplished something great! Not only would they receive an enormous power to rely on, they would even receive a splendid reward!

"As they say, 'If you don't think for your interests first, you won't be able to survive.' The head of the Stone Sword Sect chose to point his blade at his brother in the face of power and wealth. This is not something that can be blamed on him completely," some said.

"However, the Nine-fingered Old Man treated the head of the Stone Sword Sect like family! Yet now, he is actually doing this?! It is too unloyal and unrighteous," said another. There were many others who felt furious.

"Shh, quiet! If the Stone Sword Sect hears you, a disaster will fall upon your head!" Seeing that person's displeasure, there was a good friend of his who kindly advised him to be quieter; otherwise, he would possibly be killed.

At that instant, Chu Feng had also went near and coincidentally heard their discussions. At that moment, since the Nine-fingered Old Man and his family were all wearing casual clothing, Chu Feng could not determine whether they were members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

So, Chu Feng was left no choice but to use the Heaven's Eyes to examine them.

Before the Heaven's Eyes, all things were shown bare. In spite of the clothes, Chu Feng was still able to see their backs. As expected, the Nine-fingered Old Man's family who were currently surrounded and attacked

by the Stone Sword Sect—with the exception of children—all had a black incomplete moon on their backs. They were indeed members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Shi Jingtian, I viewed you as a brother and told you my secret of being from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Yet now, you aim to kill me, and want to slaughter my entire family! Today, I will tear your corpse into a million pieces, otherwise the hatred in my heart will eternally remain!"

At that moment, the Nine-fingered Old Man held an Elite Armament blade. He was enraged; every single strike and attack he made were aimed to kill.

"Haha, Jiu Zhi1, I'm afraid you won't have the chance to do that."

However, the head of the Stone Sword Sect did not show any weakness either. Although the Elite Armament in his hand was odd—it was a stone sword—as it swirled with light, its aura was extraordinary. While fighting against the Nine-fingered Old Man, radiance shone in all directions and shock waves swept out uncontrollably. It shocked everyone watching, and neither one of them was superior to the other.

Although the two of them were unable to determine who would win, the family of the Nine-fingered Old Man were an entire case completely. They were not in a good situation at all. Even though the strongest experts in the Nine-fingered Villa—other than the Nine-fingered Old Man—were within the remaining group, when they faced the surrounding attack of so many elders and disciples from the Stone Sword Sect, they were forced to exert an enormous amount of strength. Slowly, they were being defeated.

"Jiu Zhi, if you don't defeat me soon, your family will be completely killed! Even if you can escape, I'm sure there's no point in surviving all alone, right?

"Ahh, look! Your grandson's aptitude in cultivation is quite excellent, and in the future, he will definitely become a cultivation genius. However, quite sadly, no matter how much better his foundations are, he is still too young. Before he even has a chance to cultivate, he will die! That is truly a shame. Haha..." As the head of the Stone Sword Sect fiercely attacked,

he mocked the Nine-fingered Old Man.

"I will kill you!"

When he heard those words and saw the corpses of his relatives which were strewn across the ground below, and then saw his weeping grandson who hid behind his surviving family as well as his children who were drenched with blood, fighting ferociously, the Nine-fingered Old Man gnashed his teeth in fury. His entire body trembled, and after an enraged roar, he once again attacked with everything he had.

"Haha, it seems that you're truly desperate now! However, you won't have the chance to save them." The head of the Stone Sword Sect laughed more and more madly. Then, he howled, "You trash, what are you still hesitating for? A hundred people can't defeat a dozen?

"Quickly end their little lives. No matter gender or age, kill them all! I will reward those who can take down their heads!"

"KILL—" After hearing those words, the people from the Stone Sword Sect. acted as if they had chicken blood injected into them, as they started sending their most powerful attacks. With such a fierce bearing, they surrounded and attacked. They fought to behead the heads of the Nine-fingered Old Man's family. Even children barely several years old were not spared of their strikes.

As they faced such an attack, the family of the Nine-fingered Old Man all had deadpan faces. They knew, in a situation like this, they no longer had a chance at surviving. They couldn't help but give up on resisting.

"All of you truly deserve to die!"

However, in that absolutely crucial moment, a shout filled with bloodlust exploded in the air. At the same time, an extremely boundless aura surged forth. An immense horrifying bloodlust also descended from the sky, surrounding the battlefield, oppressing everyone from the Stone Sword Sect.

*

1. Nine fingers.

Chapter 846: It's Chu Feng

"Who?" The sudden change of events drew out surprise to those from the Stone Sword Sect. Only after raising their heads did they discover a young man. He was weaponless, but had the might of a rank three Martial Lord. Moreover, an aura full of bloodlust was engulfing them.

"Swords up, attack!"

Seeing the unfavourable change in circumstances, the people from the Stone Sword Sect quickly changed their positioning. They gave up on attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man's family, and instead, with raised stone swords, started to attack Chu Feng.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

A hundred swords faced the sky, its might endless. The atmosphere surrounding their attack was even fiercer than before when they were attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man's family.

boom However, Chu Feng opened his palm, and struck downward. The swords of light shot from the stone swords were all shattered by that single palm attack, and they all dissipated in the air.

Not only did it completely shatter their attack, even the stone swords in their hands shattered.

Of all the experts from the Stone Sword Sect, the ones with relatively powerful strength spat out blood and fell onto the ground. The ones with relatively weak strength exploded immediately, thus dying.

"Heavens! Who is that person? With only one strike, he completely defeated the Runic Stone Sword Formation laid by the peak experts of the Stone Sword Sect?"

When they saw that, the observers were all shocked. They, who were initially watching the battle between Nine-fingered Old Man and the head of the Stone Sword Sect, now all cast their gazes towards Chu Feng and the others.

In fact, even the two of them who were in an intense battle, fighting to

the death, cast their gazes over. After they saw the killed and wounded elders and disciples of the Stone Sword Sect, both of their complexions changed greatly.

"Who are you? There is no enmity between you and my Stone Sword Sect. Why have you attacked us?" shouted the head of the Stone Sword Sect in a rage.

Those who fell by Chu Feng's attack, no matter elder or disciple, were the elites of his Stone Sword Sect. Yet now, they were all heavily injured—and even killed—by him. He, the head of the Stone Sword Sect, had truly received quite severe losses by such an attack, so naturally, he was enraged.

However, seeing Chu Feng's age and strength, he felt that he had a special origin. As such, he didn't attack immediately and first asked him instead.

He wasn't the only one who had such a question. Nearly everyone closely looked at Chu Feng, desiring to learn of his origin and thus the origin of his strength.

"Hmph." Chu Feng snorted at that question, then raised his arm, covering his face with his sleeve, and when he dropped his arm, his countenance had transformed to its original appearance. Then, he said with a light smile, "Do you know who I am?"

"Heavens! It's him?" After seeing Chu Feng's face, almost everyone's expression changed greatly. They couldn't help but deeply gasp from the heavy shock they felt.

At present, in the Eastern Sea Region, there were drawings of Chu Feng posted almost everywhere. And since his name had already spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, after his wanted poster appeared, everyone went to look at it immediately. They wanted to know the appearance of such an outstanding genius.

As a result, in this very time and day, virtually everyone in the Eastern Sea Region knew Chu Feng's appearance. And now, since Chu Feng revealed it, the crowd naturally recognized him in an instant.

“You… You’re Chu Feng?” The head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his brows as a hint of uneasiness emerged into his eyes.

The rumours regarding Chu Feng were quite impressive in the Eastern Sea Region, especially when regarding the battle of the Zi family at the Flower Valley. That was something the entire Eastern Sea Region knew.

Chu Feng not only killed the patriarch of the Zi family, he even killed two rank seven Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

If that rumour were true, then the head of the Stone Sword Sect, as a rank seven Martial Lord, naturally had a disaster heading his way. Even if he didn’t want to be afraid, he couldn’t.

“Since you know who I am, why ask?” Chu Feng sneered, then loudly said, “Your tiny Stone Sword Sect truly has quite the nerve! You dare to attack members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Do you not know you’ve committed an enormity, worthy of the destruction of your entire sect?”

After hearing Chu Feng’s words, the brows of the head of the Stone Sword Sect were furrowed even tighter. The uneasiness in his eyes became even stronger, but after a short moment of blankness, he suddenly started laughing abnormally.

“In the instant I started attacking the Nine-fingered Old Man, I knew very well I would be an enemy to the Crippling Night Demon Sect in the future. So, I have already expected this to happen.

“However, if the one who came here today was an expert of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then I would not be able to do anything. But you… a hairless brat like you… I feel no fear.

“Right now, the world speaks of you like some sort of divine being. But I don’t believe you can defeat experts with far superior strength while you possess only the strength of a rank three Martial Lord.

“Elders, come out. I’ll hand this child over to you. Let the world know that this so-called genius is no more than a weakling.

“As for my Stone Sword Sect, it will be the one to destroy this legend.”

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

After the head of the Stone Sword Sect spoke, the sky in the distant started to tremble. At the same time, six boundless auras surged over amidst six aged figures.

Every single one had white and grey hair, and they were so thin that bone was directly beneath their skin. They were unsightly due to their age—old men who had lived for some unknown number of years. However, despite their age, they all possessed extraordinary strength—they were rank six Martial Lords, and their auras were all far stronger than the Zi family patriarch's.

"They are the six supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect! Isn't it said for prolonging their life, they decided to train in seclusion? Why have they also come out today?" The crowd endlessly cried out in surprise after seeing these six old men.

"They are indeed the supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect. In terms of seniority, they are above the head of the Stone Sword Sect, but their cultivations are a bit inferior. It's said that Chu Feng doesn't even put rank seven Martial Lords in his eyes! Will these six old monsters be able to defeat Chu Feng?"

However, even though those six experts appeared, there were some who doubted whether they were able to defeat Chu Feng.

In reality, not only did the observers doubt, even the head of the Stone Sword Sect lacked confidence. Although his tone was forceful just now, when Chu Feng had attacked, he was able to feel his extremely powerful fighting strength. It was indeed not something typical of a rank three Martial Lord.

But, since things had turned out the way they did, he could not give up so easily. If he successfully killed the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others, then he could go to the Immortal Execution Archipelago and take credit. Not only would he obtain a bountiful of rewards, he could even relocate to the headquarters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and receive their protection and resources. It would not be wrong to say he

would reach the heavens with just a single step.

But, if he failed, then judging by today's situation, Chu Feng would not let him go easily. What awaited his Stone Sword Sect would be the eradication of his entire sect.

Since he would die if he gave up or tried, then why not give it a try? He was being held in place by the Nine-fingered Old Man and was unable to attack Chu Feng himself. So, he could only call out the six elders to test Chu Feng's strength.

Chapter 847: Fighting the Six Elders

"You brat, you dare to attack the disciples of the Stone Sword Sect? We'll skin you alive!"

The six supreme elders of the Stone Sword Sect had come up to Chu Feng in a blink. Moreover, each of them flashed out a stone sword with light swirling around it. As they spoke, with the might of rank six Martial Lords, they stabbed their respective swords towards Chu Feng.

"Hmph." However, Chu Feng didn't fear the slightest bit as he faced the attacks from the six elders. He sneered, then with the flip of his palm, the Royal Armament, the Silver Dragon Spear, appeared within his hand.

boom Immediately after it emerged, its might shocked everyone. The weather changed colour and thunder bolts roared. The power Chu Feng emanated far suppressed the head of the Stone Sword Sect and the Nine-fingered Old Man's combined power.

"This is a Royal Armament?" After seeing the Royal Armament, almost everyone's eyes lit up, especially the head of the Stone Sword Sect's. Greed instantly came forth into his eyes after he saw it.

Royal Armament—to say it was a treasure of the legends would not be inappropriate. The number of people in the Eastern Sea Region who had truly seen the might of a Royal Armament was very, very few. At least, of those here today, none had seen it before.

"This child has such a weapon? We cannot be careless. Formation!"

Feeling the power of the Royal Armament, the six supreme elders who didn't put Chu Feng in their eyes at all now furrowed their brows tightly. They no longer dared to hold a single trace of carelessness.

Changing the direction of the stone sword in their hands, layers upon layers of runes were laid out, and they became a formation which imprisoned Chu Feng inside.

As he was within the envelopment of the runes, Chu Feng's power had been pushed down by quite a bit.

“Although these six old men are people soon to die, their fighting strength cannot be overlooked, especially the formation they laid. At the same time they suppressed me, they increased their own power. It seems that I cannot underestimate them.”

At that moment, even Chu Feng himself frowned slightly. He didn’t think the six old people from the Stone Sword Sect would be so exceptional.

One had to know that Chu Feng, who had the Royal Armament, could easily defeat typical rank six Martial Lords. He could even put up a fight against a rank seven Martial Lord.

Yet, right now, within the so-called Stone Sword Formation, the fighting strength of the six old men was truly not simple at all. Even though Chu Feng had the Royal Armament, he didn’t dare to be careless.

“Brat, die!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh

When the formation was laid, the six supreme elders received a boost in confidence. As all of them held stone swords in their hands, they started fiercely attacking Chu Feng with the power of the formation, perfect coordination, and skillful sword techniques.

“I’m afraid you won’t have the chance to kill me in your current lifetime.”

Even though he knew they were no simple people, Chu Feng was not afraid in the slightest. With the power he possessed, the six old men at most were of some difficulty. However, it was impossible for them to defeat Chu Feng. They shouldn’t even think of killing Chu Feng

whoosh whoosh whoosh

bang bang bang

Chu Feng was instantly in a fight against the six elders of the Stone Sword Sect. The Royal Armament and the six stone swords were unceasingly clashing with one another, and every time they did, a sky full

of sparks would be made in addition to violent shock waves. When they saw such scene, the observers were all dumbfounded. They sighed endlessly in admiration as astonishment filled their tense complexions.

"This Chu Feng lives up to his rumours! He truly is powerful. With the cultivation of a rank three Martial Lord, he is fighting against six rank six Martial Lords! If I wasn't personally seeing this, I wouldn't be able to believe it!"

"Haha, I've heard this Chu Feng possesses overwhelming fighting strength, and not only that, he possesses the legendary Secret Skills! He even made a contract with a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World, and now, with the Royal Armament, he will soon be invincible in this world!"

"It's said even rank seven Martial Lords are no match for him! From what I see, these six old monsters from the Stone Sword Sect are also no match for Chu Feng."

"Ah, don't underestimate these six elders from the Stone Sword Sect. When they entered seclusion back in the day, they were the peak experts of our Winter Plains!

"Not only did all of them have outstanding strengths, the Stone Sword Formation they laid in coordination with one another was absolutely unstoppable. It's rumoured even rank seven Martial Lords were killed by them! So, with these six fighting against Chu Feng, who obtains victory is still uncertain!"

Seeing the battlefield with endless appearances of sword attacks, afterimages, and destructive shock waves, the observers all sighed once again at the incredible scene between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect's six elders. Discussions burst out all around, but what could not be denied was that they were stupefied by Chu Feng's strength.

"This child's power is indeed impressive, worthy of the title of genius. But, from what I see, he is still unable to defeat rank seven Martial Lords.

"This won't do. I have to quickly defeat this Nine-fingered Old Man. Only after defeating him can I take care of Chu Feng. As long as I join up

with the six of them, this Chu Feng will die with no doubt.

"If I can kill this Chu Feng and take the Royal Armament from him, that will be a great accomplishment. We will become people who have performed great deeds for the Immortal Execution Archipelago."

At that instant, even though the head of the Stone Sword Sect was intensely fighting the Nine-fingered Old Man, he still had his eyes on Chu Feng's fight.

After having all those thoughts, a cold smile arose. Then, he flipped his palm and—not one, nor two—three Forbidden Medicine appeared on his hand. Opening his mouth, he consumed all of them at the same time. Afterwards, he roared with laughter and said, "Give me your life!"

boom After the consumption of the Forbidden Medicine, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rose greatly in strength. Every time he waved the stone sword in his hand, there would appear power that could cut the skies and split the earth.

"Dammit! This despicable bastard is dealing with me by using the Forbidden Medicine I helped him acquire!"

The Nine-fingered Old Man's expression changed greatly when he saw that. Initially, when fighting the head of the Stone Sword Sect, they were on a fairly equal scale. However, when the head used the three Forbidden Medicine, the equal scale started tipping. In merely an instant, he was in a disadvantage.

Most importantly, he recognized the Forbidden Medicine that the sect head had just consumed. It was taken from many powers back in the day—and he himself had helped him take them.

Moreover, because of camaraderie, the Nine-fingered Old Man didn't take a single one of them and gave them all to the head of the Stone Sword Sect. Yet, right now, he was actually taking these very same medicine to deal with him. How could he not be furious?

"Haha, don't overrate yourself. I didn't use these three for you, but for that Chu Feng. Right now, all of you will die! Hahaha..."

The head of the Stone Sword Sect sinisterly laughed when he heard the Nine-fingered Old Man's mutter—it was a very mocking laugh.

The Nine-fingered Old Man understood his intentions. He hurriedly shouted to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, run! Leave us behind! You are a rare genius, and the future hope of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Do not sacrifice your great future for our filthy lives! Ignore us and run!"

Upon hearing their shouts, Chu Feng too noticed odd power surging within the body of the head of the Stone Sword Sect. It was the effect one obtained upon using an extremely powerful Forbidden Medicine.

Chapter 848: Fighting with Life on the Line

Chu Feng didn't just know that the head of the Stone Sword Sect consumed Forbidden Medicine, he also knew after doing so, it was clear that the Nine-fingered Old Man would be defeated.

If everything remained the same and continued, then the Nine-fingered Old Man would be eventually killed. However, since Chu Feng had showed himself to help them, he would naturally not ignore them. He loudly replied, "Senior, don't worry. As long as I, Chu Feng, am here, I will not leave you behind and ignore you. I am also a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Since we are from the same sect, we are family! We should share both are fortunes and disasters.

"This Stone Sword Sect is truly audacious! They dare to make our Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy! Instead of letting our brothers kill them, why not we do it ourselves!

"Don't need to be afraid. At the very worst, we will only die. So, today, we will fight to the very end."

Chu Feng's shout drew out the praises from the crowd. Not to mention the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others who met Chu Feng for the first time, even the observers, completely unrelated to Chu Feng, gave him a thumbs up deep within their hearts.

It was because Chu Feng's words were the manifestation of a single word—righteousness.

In this world, everyone put their own interests at the forefront. There were truly very few who emphasized righteousness as much as Chu Feng. He even had such a mindset at such a young age! That was truly something rare to come by.

Today, even though the people watching had admired Chu Feng for quite a while already, they saw him in an entirely new light today.

Not only was his talent unparalleled, his character was also superior to those in the same generation. No matter how cruel and ruthless he

treated his enemies and how he cared not of the methods to achieve his goals, at least, when facing allies, he was a person worthy of trust.

Even though Chu Feng's words just now had given the Nine-fingered Old Man some confidence and perhaps he would thus last a bit longer, Chu Feng knew confidence alone would not increase his power. If all things remained the same and time continued forth, then the head of the Stone Sword Sect, without a doubt, was going to defeat the Nine-fingered Old Man.

As such, Chu Feng, who knew the circumstances were unfavourable, no longer hid anything. He used his full strength, waved the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand, and started an extremely ferocious attack. He wanted to quickly defeat the six old men in front of him, then go give the Nine-fingered Old Man a hand.

boom— But Chu Feng had still underestimated how annoying they were. With the Royal Armament, Chu Feng would defeat them sooner or later, but it was not easy to defeat them quickly.

"Seeing that you've all cultivated for many years, I had planned to leave you complete corpses, to leave you undamaged honour. But since you continue forcing this, you cannot blame me for showing no face." Suddenly, a hint of fierceness flashed past his eyes as he spoke with sinister on his face and in his eyes.

"Haha, little brat, quite some confidence you have there!

"We admit: you do have powerful fighting strength. You are a genius we had never heard before, but you want to defeat us six brothers? That's a foolish delusion. Today, you are dead."

The six supreme elders had lived in seclusion for many years, so they had clearly never heard of Chu Feng before. They didn't know how powerful he was, and now, they were shamelessly saying they were going to take Chu Feng's life.

hmm Chu Feng, who had already decided to quickly finish this fight, naturally gave them no more chances. With a thought, a World Spirit Gate appeared.

wuaooo– After it appeared, a strange howl came from inside. At the same time, peculiar black flames surged out, instantly enveloping the six old men.

“Ahh–”

“Dammit! What the hell is this?!”

At that moment, the six old men who were even brimming with smugness earlier changed their complexions instantly. They were in complete panic.

In the instant the black flames wrapped around them, they felt fear that they had never felt before. The Stone Sword Formation they so carefully laid was instantly destroyed.

“Remember. This power is called Asura.”

Chu Feng sneered, then he swung the Silver Dragon Spear. Six spear-shaped lights explosively shot out, and after six muffled explosions, the Stone Sword Sect’s six supreme elders no longer retained any signs of life. They were completely destroyed by Chu Feng, and not even any remnants of their corpses were left behind. Before they died, Chu Feng even absorbed their Source Energy.

“Eiyayaya, you’ve finally released me, huh?”

After the six old men were killed, a beautiful person slowly walked out of the World Spirit Gate. That person was the queen, Eggy.

“Waa, what a pretty woman? There’s actually such a beauty in this world? Who is that?”

“Idiot, that’s a World Spirit Gate. Since she walked out from it, it means she’s the rumoured ruthless World Spirit, the queen from the Asura Spirit World!”

“Powerful. In the end, the six supreme elders who had cultivated for innumerable years had still died by Chu Feng’s hands. This child’s fighting strength truly defies logic. He’s an outstanding genius and he truly does live up to his name!”

After seeing Eggy, the observing people were all tongue-tied. They were deeply stunned by the power she showed. But even though it was her who reversed the situation, the one they admired was still Chu Feng.

After all, regardless of the World Spirit's strength, they were still a part of the World Spiritist, their master. To make a powerful World Spirit serve you wasn't something all World Spiritists could do. In the end, it was all still a representation of Chu Feng's own abilities.

"Dammit! This brat is truly this terrifying! Even the six of them weren't able to defeat him!"

Seeing the six elders dead, the head of the Stone Sword Sect changed his expression greatly. The ruthlessness in his eyes became even stronger after knowing the extremely dreadful situation he was in. Then, with another flip of his palm, ten powerful Forbidden medicine appeared on his hand. Without a moment's hesitation, he consumed them all.

aooo—

After ingesting the medicine, his entire demeanor became completely different. Not only was his eyes blood-red, he even let out an odd roar. It was even more horrifying than a beast.

At that very instant, he didn't seem like a person. He seemed more like a humanoid monster. Not only were there changes in terms of appearances, the change in strength was even clearer.

"Heavens! The head of the Stone Sword Sect consumed so many Forbidden Medicine! Does he not desire his life?"

Seeing that he ingested so many powerful Forbidden Medicine, the observers were all frightened because every single one he used was invaluable. Although they were able to provide a great increase in strength, the backlash he'd receive would be very fierce as well.

The accumulation of backlash from so many Forbidden Medicine was extremely horrifying. His very actions were akin to committing suicide.

"No. He's preparing to fight by putting his life on the line! Chu Feng is too powerful. The head of the Stone Sword Sect can no longer retreat, and

if he doesn't do this, then he will die. If it were me, I would do the same." However, there were a few astute people who knew the intentions of the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

Chapter 849: The Furious Eggy

"Today, you will all die!" After the odd roar, the head of the Stone Sword Sect shouted angrily again. Then, he abruptly jabbed with his sword. A sword of light enhanced with layers of runes shot towards the Nine-fingered Old Man.

"Dammit!" At that instant, his complexion changed greatly. He knew it was a very powerful attack, so he quickly put forth his full strength. In a breath, he used several powerful defensive martial skills to block the strike from the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

At the same time, he rapidly backed away to dodge the ferocious attack.

bang bang bang bang...

But it was useless as his strike was simply too powerful. In the moment it collided into the Nine-fingered Old Man's defenses, it completely destroyed them all. Not only was its power undiminished, it instead became even more powerful and had already arrived in front of the Nine-fingered Old Man.

"Black Tortoise Armour Technique!"

However, just as he felt he was absolutely dead, Chu Feng had arrived in front of the Nine-fingered Old Man. He used the Secret Skill, the Black Tortoise Armour Technique, to block the attack from the Stone Sword Sect.

wuaoo—

Simultaneously, Eggy had flown up as well. With her black flames, she laid them in front of Chu Feng. It formed a black shield in the air.

boom rumble rumble

However, they had still underestimated the attack. After an explosion, even Eggy's black flames were split open.

When the shock waves burst out, Chu Feng, Eggy, and the Nine-fingered Old Man were forced back several thousand meters before they could

stabilize themselves.

At the same time, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rushed over again to attack with the stone sword in hand.

“Dammit! With the power of the Forbidden Medicine, he broke through my technique! I will make you a useless person!”

Her black flames being dispersed made Eggy furious. She leapt forward, and with the boundless black flames, she fought the head of the Stone Sword Sect who had taken thirteen Forbidden Medicine.

“Hahaha, so what if you’re a genius? So what if it’s a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World? Today, you will all die by my hands! Everyone in the Eastern Sea Region will know my name!”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect had neared insanity. He, who had obtained great power with the Forbidden Medicine, was cutting off his future. He opened his mouth and actually threw in two more in. With the stone sword in hand, he fought Eggy without any signs of weakness.

With the support of fifteen powerful Forbidden Medicine, the strength possessed by the head of the Stone Sword Sect was devastating. Even the strong Eggy felt enormous pressure. She was continuously forced back and was in a horrible situation.

“Senior, quickly bring your family away,” said Chu Feng decisively. He frowned lightly when he saw the unfavourable circumstances.

“No! Chu Feng, you risk your life to save us. We cannot leave you here.” The Nine-fingered Old Man shook his head, refusing.

“Senior, I have a way to defeat him. But, if you’re here, you will only become a burden. Quickly leave, otherwise I will be disturbed,” Chu Feng said gravely.

“Then... thank you. In the future, I will definitely repay this favour.”

The Nine-fingered Old Man no longer hesitated after hearing Chu Feng’s words. He flew back to his family, and with a wave of his sleeve, he lifted the surviving young ones. Then, he flew towards the Teleportation

Array, aiming to leave this warzone.

"You want to leave? All of you will die!" The head of the Stone Sword Sect was unwilling to let the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others leave. He jabbed out again, and a fierce sword light flew to take away their lives.

"Your opponent is me." But how could Eggy give him that chance? Channeling large amounts of black flames, she blocked his attack.

boom

"Ahh—"

However, Eggy, who was only focused on saving the Nine-fingered Old Man, was careless. The head of the Stone Sword Sect found an opening and a shock wave came forth, injuring her.

"You are looking to die!" She was already furious, and now, she was surprise attacked. That put Eggy in a rage. Like a volcano, layers of black flames surged out endlessly from her body. They were like black clouds as they covered everything, yet also like a huge wave as they rolled towards the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

However, he, who had taken fifteen Forbidden Medicine, was really too strong. Regardless of Eggy's strength, she was unable to defeat him.

In reality, seeing Eggy struck by a surprise attack made Chu Feng tightly clench his fists. He gnashed his teeth in anger, and he yearned to skin the head of the Stone Sword Sect alive. But he who still had some reason in him—unlike the sect head—knew that continuing fighting was not the best choice.

As such, Chu Feng forcibly endured the anger in his heart, and yelled at Eggy, "Eggy, run! Follow me!" After speaking, Chu Feng leapt forth and fled in another direction.

"You old bastard, you better remember this! In the future, I will strip away your skin and extract your tendons alive!" Despite furious, Eggy followed Chu Feng's instructions. She leapt, then entered the already opened World Spirit Gate, and disappeared.

“Hahaha… What genius? What Asura World Spirit? You are all nothing special! Before me, you can’t even take a single strike!”

Seeing that Eggy hid into the World Spirit Gate and Chu Feng stepped on an azure dragon, running for his life, the head of the Stone Sword Sect laughed. His laughter was full of madness, then with a flip of his palm, yet another Forbidden Medicine appeared in his hand. He threw it into his mouth.

After consuming that Forbidden Medicine, his body had twisted. Not only were his eyes fiery red, even his skin was fiery red. His body exuded bursts of heat, and even his robe was being burnt.

After his entire body was showed bare, everyone could see clearly that there seemed to be countless insects running around within his skin. His flesh was squirming—it was both horrifying and disturbing.

But the head of the Stone Sword Sect didn’t seem to feel how ugly he was at that moment. Instead, he was very proud, as if he were an invincible ruler.

As he felt such pride, he pointed at Chu Feng, who was escaping, and said, “Chu Feng, you can’t escape! Your Royal Armament is mine, and your World Spirit is mine!”

swish

He leapt forward, and after a huge boom, the air in which he stood on trembled, his figure disappearing afterwards. His speed was quick, so quick it was dumbfounding.

“Dammit, he’s consumed another Forbidden Medicine! How many does he have!

“If he didn’t have any, I would have killed him like a dog!” At that instant, Eggy had returned to Chu Feng’s body. However, she still felt hatred due to the surprise attack of the head of the Stone Sword Sect. She was gnashing her teeth, furious.

Chapter 850: Arctic Killing Formation

“Heh, the power he has right now is all due to the Forbidden Medicine. If it was a normal battle, he naturally stands no chance against my queen.

“But, since he dares to be so arrogant by relying on the power of Forbidden Medicine, then it would be too good of a deal to kill him right now.

“Rather than taking a risk and using the World Spirit power you lend me, I am much more willing to see him kill himself. In a while, let us watch him how pitiful he becomes as he receives the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine.

“He’s taken over ten Forbidden Medicine, and the backlash of every single one is something excruciating! I truly want to know how his life will end,” Chu Feng said with a smile. If he used Eggy’s power in addition to the Royal Armament’s might, it didn’t matter how many Forbidden Medicine the head of the Stone Sword Sect took—it would all be useless.

However, Chu Feng now knew the enormous risks associated with borrowing Eggy’s power to increase his strength. Not only risks to himself, but also to Eggy.

Typically speaking, after a World Spirit lends its power to its master, it would only increase the strength of the master’s physical body. There would be no rise in fighting strength, and even if there were, it would be negligible.

At least, with the cultivation Chu Feng currently possessed, after borrowing the power of the World Spirit, he shouldn’t have received an increase in fighting strength. It was for no other reason but because his body could not take it.

Yet, when he was fighting Old Feng and Old Lei back then in the Flower Valley, Chu Feng had acquired an enormous increase in fighting strength after borrowing Eggy’s power.

Chu Feng, who had a greater understanding in Spirit Formation

techniques, knew that was an atypical situation. Afterwards, Chu Feng had asked Eggy why that had happened.

At first, Eggy wanted to hide it, but upon constant questioning from Chu Feng, Eggy very unwillingly spoke the reason.

Back then, when Eggy lent her power to Chu Feng, not only did Chu Feng sustain huge risks, in order to decrease the damage done to Chu Feng, Eggy too had sustained huge risks and paid an enormous price.

Before even becoming an actual Martial Lord, Chu Feng had borne Eggy's power without dying. And, while receiving Eggy's power, not only was his physical body more powerful, his fighting strength had a huge increase. All of that was because of Eggy.

It was Eggy who sacrificed her own life by touching upon a taboo, which allowed Chu Feng to receive that rise in fighting strength.

That meant if Chu Feng wanted to use Eggy's power to increase his fighting strength, not only would Chu Feng have to pay an agonizing price, Eggy, the queen, would have to pay an even greater price than Chu Feng.

So, from the day he learnt of the truth, Chu Feng decided, unless absolutely necessary, to not use that ever again. He was willing to bear through pain, but he was not willing to have Eggy sacrifice so much for him.

"Chu Feng, hand over your Royal Armament and I'll leave you a complete corpse!" Just at that moment, a huge pressure came from behind. The head of the Stone Sword Sect had caught up.

"Heh, old thing. I'll let you feel proud for a bit more. In a while, let me see how painful you'll die."

Chu Feng had already expected that. Even though the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique was very fast, the head of the Stone Sword Sect had used his life as the price for his power. He ingested many Forbidden Medicine, so his strength was very horrifying as well. It was completely reasonable for him to possess the speed to catch up to Chu Feng.

But Chu Feng had already made preparations. He had first run in a circle to buy time for the Nine-fingered Old Man and the others to escape, and only after he felt they had safely fled did Chu Feng head towards a goal and fly quickly.

After a while, an icy mountain range appeared in front of Chu Feng. It was an extremely vast mountain range.

It was a very strange one too—there weren't any trees, nor any accumulated snow. What existed was only ice that exuded chilliness.

Moreover, the peaks on the mountain range were very straight—they were akin to countless enormous swords imbedded into the ground.

As for where that place was, it was the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church, the place titled as the Arctic Killing Formation.

swish At that instant, Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes. Before his fierce gaze, all sorts of traps appeared. A path others could not discover emerged into his eyes, and he locked onto it.

He increased his speed and entered the Arctic Killing Formation. This was the place where he was going to send the sect head to the grave.

"Hmph. You want to die together? Even if I die, I will first kill you! I will shred your corpse into a million pieces, then play with your beautiful World Spirit."

The head of the Stone Sword Sect had grown up in the Winter Plains. He was a person who had witnessed the glory of the Burning Heaven Church, so how could he possibly not know what sort of area the Arctic Killing Formation was? This was a forbidden land no one dared to enter in the Winter Plains.

But now, it was different. When he consumed all ten Forbidden Medicine at the same time, he had already prepared to die. But, he could not die for no reason at all. Before death, he wanted to kill Chu Feng, and to kill him with the cruellest techniques possible. Otherwise, he could not endure such resentment.

He had plotted this betrayal for a very long time. He had carefully laid a

trap. He initially thought he could rise immediately with this move.

However, everything that he had done was destroyed by Chu Feng. He was truly unable to endure that. He had to kill Chu Feng.

whoosh So, without even thinking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect followed Chu Feng straight into the Arctic Killing Formation.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

It was completely foggy within the Arctic Killing Formation. Even the vision of Martial Lords was restricted by such odd white fog.

Moreover, within the Arctic Killing Formation, there was a strange pressure. This was a very powerful formation. It was definitely laid by several peerless experts after exerting much of their energy.

The layout of the Arctic Killing Formation was complicated. There were countless traps, and if one took a single wrong step, they would die.

However, in such a perilous region viewed as a forbidden land, Chu Feng was like a fish in water. There were no traps that could harm him.

But the head of the Stone Sword Sect, the old cunning thing, was quite smart. He knew Chu Feng's Spirit Formation techniques were excellent. So, he closely followed Chu Feng's steps and walked only where Chu Feng walked in order to avoid death via the horrifying traps within the Arctic Killing Formation.

"Heh, it seems that I've still underestimated this old thing. He's able to follow me for so long! But, I would quite like to see how much longer you can continue."

But even so, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, he smiled oddly and no longer ran in circles. Instead, he flew straight towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

The Arctic Killing Formation was very vast, but to Martial Lords, they could easily pass through even larger regions because their speed was simply too quick.

So, in order to increase the difficulties of outsiders entering the Burning

Heaven Church, they made a huge maze within the Arctic Killing Formation.

One could even say if they wanted to enter the Burning Heaven Church, they had no choice but to enter the Arctic Killing Formation. Moreover, there was only one possible path. If a single incorrect step was taken, there would be no recovery.

Chapter 851: Rubbing Salt into a Wound

At that moment, Chu Feng had already discovered the secrets to the Arctic Killing Formation. If he wanted to continue wasting time here, then he had only one choice—to run straight towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church. Otherwise, if he ran into a dead end, then that would be quite tragic.

"Ahh—"

However, when Chu Feng approached the entrance, the head of the Stone Sword Sect finally couldn't continue. He first howled with pain, then opened his mouth and spat out putrid black blood.

At the same time, he lost the ability to fly. Like a sandbag, he fell onto the floor. After fiercely crashing down, he started painfully shrieking.

"AHH—"

At first, the head of the Stone Sword Sect planned to commit suicide when the pain of the backlash came. He knew how horrid he would end up after consuming so many Forbidden Medicine. Rather than bearing through such pain, why not just quickly finish it?

But, the power of the backlash didn't give him that chance. When the pain slammed into him, when the power he obtained from the Forbidden Medicine disappeared, he no longer had any chance to choose.

At that very moment, he had lost his control over his own body. He could only allow the agonizing backlash to engulf his flesh.

Right now, what he could do, other than bearing the price of the Forbidden Medicine, was only to let out the heart-wrenching screech akin to the howling of wolves and the crying of ghosts.

"Heh, has it finally started? Oh oh oh, he truly looks pitiful."

When he saw the sect head finally falling to the backlash, Chu Feng stopped running away. Instead, he turned around, and walked back. With crossed legs, he sat on a protruding piece of ice and squinted his eyes slightly. With an appearance of schadenfreude, he looked at the head of

the Stone Sword Sect.

Even though it was merely a glance, it was truly pleasant. The head of the Stone Sword Sect who had used sixteen super-powerful Forbidden Medicine was now feeling pain even Chu Feng hadn't felt before.

His skin had turned blood-red, the bones throughout his body were all cracked, and his internal organs were all full of injuries. How did he even look like a person lying on ice? He appeared more like a live pig being cooked in a pot—a scene near unbearable to watch.

In order to let Eggy personally see the head of the Stone Sword Sect's pitiful appearance, Chu Feng specially opened the World Spirit Gate and released her.

"Haha, well deserved. This is truly well deserved. You old bastard, who told you to consume so many Forbidden Medicine, huh?"

The depressed feelings Eggy had earlier were all swept away when she saw that. She felt even greater schadenfreude than Chu Feng. She was skipping, jumping, clapping, cheering, and even walked up to the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

"Sa-sa-save me...

"I-I'm begging you! Grant me death, grant me death!"

The head of the Stone Sword Sect really could not bear such pain. Tears had already flowed down his face, and after seeing Eggy, he actually acted as if he saw a savior and very shamelessly begged Eggy to kill him.

Of course, the usual benevolent and generous queen naturally couldn't just leave a dying person alone. Her lips curled upward, and on her beautiful face, there was a pitying smile. She said, "Don't worry, I won't let you die so quickly! Don't be afraid, I will make you live a bit longer."

As Eggy spoke, she willed the head of the Stone Sword Sect to rise into the air. Then, she released her black flames. After they appeared, being controlled by Eggy, they lay flat underneath the head of the Stone Sword Sect. As though roasting a pig, she started smoking him.

At the same time, Eggy raised her pure-white hand slight, then used her black flames to create a little dagger.

It was a very sharp dagger, and very odd as well. On its edges, there were countless minuscule hooks.

puchi Suddenly, Eggy stabbed downward with her dagger. It pierced deeply into his already messy body.

“AHH—”

Afterwards, Eggy pulled it out quickly. Not only did it bring black, fetid blood, there were large amounts of muscles and flesh on the hooks of the dagger. That made him once again shriek as if his heart were being torn out.

How was Eggy helping him? She was simply throwing a stone down a well, rubbing salt into a wound.

“Dammit! You monster, you demon!”

The head of the Stone Sword Sect even thought Eggy would help him escape such agony. Quite oppositely though, Eggy started to torture him even more ruthlessly. However, when Eggy spoke the following words, he could truly cry.

“You are correct! I am a monster, I am a demon.” Eggy was extremely beautiful, and her smile was extremely moving. It was quite disharmonious to her cruel move.

“Chu Feng, do you have pellets to temporarily prolong the life of a dying person?” Eggy asked Chu Feng with a smile.

“Oh, interestingly, I do have those pellets! What do you need them for?” Chu Feng also had a smirk on his face. He clearly knew what Eggy was thinking, but he still intentionally asked, feigning confusion.

“It’s not much, I just want to let this old bastard live for a bit longer, so he can enjoy a bit of this pain before dying. At least his life won’t be so despicably and shamelessly wasted away,” Eggy said with a smirk as well.

“Haha, good! Good idea! Here, take ‘em.” Chu Feng roared with

laughter, and as he spoke, he threw several pellets to Eggy.

When the head of the Stone Sword Sect saw that, his face already fiery red like a monster turned green immediately. He had seen some vicious people, but he had never seen people as vicious as them. So, he quickly closed his mouth, afraid Eggy would truly feed him those pellets that would prolong his life.

whoosh

However, Eggy didn't even bother saying anything. With a cold glint, the dagger in her hand swept past and actually cut off his lower jaw. Then, threw the several pellets into his mouth. Afterwards, she used her power to help push them into his stomach, then helped him refine them.

"Ahh—Mm—Ahh—"

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect who lacked a lower jaw could not speak. He could only make endless howls as tears streamed down his face.

At that moment, he truly regretted. He regretted angering Chu Feng and Eggy. If he knew a scene like the one now would appear, then he shouldn't have put everything on the line to fight Chu Feng. He should have just used a single Forbidden Medicine then escaped.

But, there was nothing he could do. There was no medicine for regret in this world, and similarly, there was no way to walk back the path he had already taken. Right now, the only choice he had was to endure the price due to his very action.

"You are truly two ruthless brats. But, you should stop when appropriate. How about you give me face today, and release him?"

But just at that moment, an extremely powerful voice rang out from afar. In the instant that voice rang out, even the Arctic Killing Formation —the Spirit Formation filled with runes—swayed violently. There were even countless small cracks on the surrounding ice.

At the same time, a boundless pressure swept over. It enveloped everything. That pressure belonged to a Martial King.

Chapter 852: Paradise

"Dammit! Eggy, run—"

Chu Feng's complexion changed greatly when he felt the powerful aura binding him. He quickly opened the World Spirit Gate and called Eggy back, preparing to escape.

"Hmph. You're lucky today." Eggy coldly snorted upon feeling the aura as well. After casting a glance at the head of the Stone Sword Sect, indicating she was not finished yet, she stepped into the World Spirit Gate.

"Haa—"

Chu Feng explosively shouted and tightly grasped the Royal Armament in his hand, increasing his power, to fight against the imprisonment of the Martial King's might.

"That Royal Armament does not belong to you. Return it immediately, and perhaps I can spare your life." That voice rang out again, and it was coming nearer and nearer. One could tell that person was quickly approaching.

"Who are you?" Chu Feng asked with the Royal Armament in hand as he used his Martial power.

"I am the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago." That voice rang out again. His tone was full of confidence, as if Chu Feng were already dead.

"As I thought, it's someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. You want to take back this Royal Armament? That's dependant on your ability."

However, after knowing who he was, Chu Feng coldly snorted. Then, he bent his knees slightly, and put force into his legs.

bang Afterwards, Chu Feng not only used the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, he even became a stream of light, flying towards the entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

He had actually escaped the binding pressure of a Martial King.

Chu Feng flew forth, channeling almost all of his strength into the skill. The Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago followed. That was not good at all.

Right now, Chu Feng understood the Immortal Execution Archipelago a bit, and he especially understood someone as famous as the Third Immortal. Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal wasn't just a rank two Martial King, his Spirit Formation techniques were very skillful as well.

Even amongst other Gold-cloak World Spiritists, his Spirit Formation techniques proved superior. Therefore, he became very well known within the entire Eastern Sea Region.

And, right now, there was an expert of such level following him. Chu Feng felt enormous pressure, but he had no other choice. He could only put his life on the line as he fled towards the Burning Heaven Church, because he had no other path to run towards.

He could only hope there were places to hide there so he wouldn't be captured by the Third Immortal.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng didn't have many hopes. First of all, he was unable to ascertain whether she was still inside.

Second of all, from what Chu Feng knew, even though Qiushui Fuyan was also a Martial King, she was only a rank one Martial King—at least, for now, she was only a rank one Martial King. So, even if she were here, unless she had some special technique, she wouldn't be able to defeat the Third Immortal.

Martial Kings and Martial Lords were different. The difference of ranks between Martial Lords was already very clear. To defeat those in superior levels was something done only by true geniuses.

As for the difference of ranks between Martial Kings, it was even clearer. There was a very small number of people who could defeat those in superior levels. At least, in the Eastern Sea Region, none had appeared yet.

The distance between the ranks of Martial Kings was very big. No matter what sort of powerful techniques one grasped, it was a near impossibility to defeat those in superior levels.

Right now, Chu Feng's only option was to escape and flee with all his might. He had to quickly rid himself of the Third Immortal.

whoosh Shortly after Chu Feng flew away, a person suddenly descended from the sky, landing by the side of the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

That old man had golden hair, and he was holding an exquisite World Spirit Compass in his hand. He was even clad in a golden World Spirit Robe, but it only loosely rested upon his body. As such, one could see the clothing underneath was one of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's.

That person was none other than the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. His Spirit Formation techniques were amongst the best in the entire Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"As I thought, he's not as simple as he seems. Although I was too far and my pressure was quite weak, an ordinary Martial Lord definitely couldn't have resisted something like that."

The Third Immortal had arrived at Chu Feng's former location, and as he looked in the direction Chu Feng had fled to, he lightly smiled. He, however, did not continue chasing after Chu Feng. Instead, he flipped his palm and took out several special pellets varying in colour and auras, then put them inside the mouth of the sect head.

Quickly after, he sat cross-legged, and with a thought, boundless golden Spirit Formation power was cast out. Under his control, it became a powerful formation which enveloped the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

It was a formation of healing, and it was very complex and profound. It wasn't one that a typical Gold-cloak World Spiritist could lay; unexpectedly, the Third Immortal wanted to save the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

"Mm, mm—"

Initially, the sect head thought he was absolutely dead, but after the

formation enveloped him, the unendurable backlash pain was diminished.

That feeling let him know his life was saved. As he looked at the Third Immortal, his eyes were full of gratitude. Yet, he could not speak and could only groan in thanks.

"Why isn't he chasing?"

However, Chu Feng knew nothing of the Third Immortal's actions. He only knew he hadn't caught up.

But even so, Chu Feng did not dare to relax. He continued rushing forward in madness, and like that, he finally reached the end.

He encountered a cave with pond inside of it. Since the pond wasn't frozen despite being located in the Winter Plains, Chu Feng knew he had arrived at the true entrance of the Burning Heaven Church.

Since this was the only path he could take, Chu Feng gave no signs of hesitation and with a splash, dived into the pond.

Chu Feng continued moving forward along the currents. After swimming for a good while—to the point where he had lost track of time—he finally reached the end.

When Chu Feng leapt out of the water, he discovered an entirely different world before his eyes.

The sky above his head was not overcast. Instead, there were white clouds and a blue sky. A bright sun hung high up in the air, illuminating everything beneath it.

As opposed to the outside, where he was met with falling snow, he encountered the vibrant scenery of spring within the Burning Heaven Church.

No matter the tall mountains in the distance, or the grassland beneath his feet, everything was lush with vegetation. All sorts of exotic flowers, herbs, and plants flourished in this area.

A burst of fragrance entered Chu Feng's nose as he inhaled the air. To

discover a world such as this within the Winter Plains... It could truly be considered a paradise.

whoosh Despite being dazed by the scenery before his eyes, Chu Feng did not stop to admire it. Instead, he leapt forward and continued fleeing. He didn't know when the Third Immortal would catch up, so he had to swiftly pull as much distance as he could.

ta Just as Chu Feng entered that new world, two people had also arrived within the cave inside the Arctic Killing Formation.

They were the Third Immortal and the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

At that moment, the sect head's complexion was as pale as paper. In comparison to before, he was much thinner. Not only was his aura weak, he was discoloured and exhausted, as though he would die at any moment.

However, his lower jaw had been restored, and the injuries throughout his body had disappeared. His external injuries were all healed. This was all due to the Third Immortal's treatment.

'This Chu Feng is truly not simple at all. I have entered this Arctic Killing Formation many times before, but I had never been able to find the entrance.

'I didn't think by following Chu Feng this time I would truly stumble upon this place! This child possesses quite a few unordinary techniques. I must capture him alive, otherwise I would have wasted his exceptional abilities.' Looking at the entrance in front of him, the Third Immortal's mouth curled up to form a hint of a peculiar smile.

Chapter 853: Two Treasures

"Lord Third Immortal, thank you for saving me. I didn't think an insignificant person such as myself would be worthy of your great exertion of power.

"You have given me a new life, something that can never be repaid. However, as long as you demand it, Lord Third Immortal, if you ask me to be an animal, I will not refuse."

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect felt endless gratitude towards the Third Immortal. He knew it was he who saved him. He also knew the Third Immortal had spent hefty sum on him—at least those several medicinal pellets were very rare treasures. Even to the point where the value of every single pellet was higher than himself, a rank seven Martial Lord.

"I've seen your determination and strong desire to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago. We must protect people like you with everything we have. If you truly feel grateful, then in the future, just devote yourself to the Immortal Execution Archipelago," said the Third Immortal with a faint smile.

"I will definitely pledge myself to the Immortal Execution Archipelago."

After hearing the Third Immortal's words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect felt even more grateful. But other than giving his thanks, there was nothing else he could do. In the end, he cast his gaze towards the pond and asked, "Lord Third Immortal, is this the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church?"

"Yes. The Arctic Killing Formation was not simple at all. It was all thanks to Chu Feng that we were able to come here.

"He must have seen a map, otherwise how did he know the entrance was here?

"From my understanding, the identity of Chu Feng's master is very enigmatic. Judging by my experience with him, he himself is quite special

as well. Not only is he related to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he's even related to the Burning Heaven Church. I truly want to know who his master is," said the head of the Stone Sword Sect curiously.

"You should have heard that Chu Feng has quite good relationship with Lady Qiushui, from the Lovers Terrace, right?" the Third Immortal asked with a smile.

"I have." The head of the Stone Sword Sect nodded.

"We've always suspected that Lady Qiushui was the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. And since Chu Feng is so closely related to her, naturally it means he is closely related to the Burning Heaven Church," said the Third Immortal with a faint smile.

"So that Lady Qiushui is the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church! But didn't they relocate into the Holy Land of Martialism? Qiushui Fuyan didn't go?" The head of the Stone Sword Sect was very shocked when he heard that.

"It's only a guess. It cannot be confirmed.

"The reason why I didn't capture Chu Feng immediately after discovering him was because I felt he had come here possibly for the Burning Heaven Church. So, I secretly followed to find his actual goal. It seems my speculations were correct and he had indeed come here for the Burning Heaven Church.

"Initially, I believed Chu Feng knew the true entrance of the Burning Heaven Church as well, which was why he dared to directly enter the Arctic Killing Formation.

"However, after coming here, I discovered he actually didn't know where it was. He'd always had a Spirit Formation activated, and was searching with a very special method. He had found this entrance himself. So, that's why I said he truly isn't a simple person at all," the Third Immortal said.

"This means he is truly quite amazing, and he truly does have Secret Skills on him. This child cannot slip away because he himself is a huge treasure.

“Lord Third Immortal, are we going to go down now and capture Chu Feng?” the head of the Stone Sword Sect asked.

“Of course, but judging by your state right now, you should not go. Follow this map and head back to the Stone Sword Sect.” The Third Immortal gave a map to the sect head.

Opening it and giving it a glance, he couldn’t help but be taken aback. The map seemed to be just created; it was likely drawn by the Third Immortal as he followed the path Chu Feng chose.

Clearly, the Immortal Execution Archipelago hadn’t had their eyes on the Burning Heaven Church for merely a day or two. It was likely that soon, the Burning Heaven Church would be renamed to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, after receiving the map, the head of the Stone Sword Sect did not leave immediately. He was hesitating over something. He looked as if he had something to say, but didn’t dare to speak.

Seeming to have seen through the sect head’s thoughts, the Third Immortal faintly smiled, then said, “Don’t worry and return. I’ve seen what you did. I’ve already ordered someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago to head to the Stone Sword Sect. He will arrange a spot in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and from now on, your Stone Sword Sect is an ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. You will receive our protection.”

“Thank you Lord Third Immortal, thank you Lord Third Immortal!” When he heard those words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rejoiced. He quickly bowed and clasped his hands at the Third Immortal. Only when he was urged away did he turn around and leave, following the path on the map.

After the head of the Stone Sword Sect left, the Third Immortal looked back at the entrance, and said with a smile, “This Shi Jingtian is correct: Chu Feng is indeed a huge treasure. But what is awaiting me is not only a single treasure, but two. Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, you have truly helped me greatly.”

After speaking, the smile on the Third Immortal's face became even wider, and as he spoke, he leaped and entered the water.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still flying quickly within that paradise. After some quick traveling, Chu Feng was certain he was safe.

Due to a moment of carelessness—causing him to be followed by the Third Immortal—Chu Feng had exhausted nearly all of his Spirit power to the most sensitive state. Moreover, he laid many Detection Spirit Formations, so he was certain the Third Immortal hadn't tailed him.

On the road, Chu Feng not only saw many beautiful sceneries, he even saw many exquisite and aesthetically pleasing buildings. All of the structures in here were made out of gold, and there were even engravings of flames. It was clear this was the Burning Heaven Church.

"Eggy, typically speaking, within an endless winter plains, such a paradise shouldn't appear, right? Say, is everything here real or fake?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

"The flowers, plants, trees, and even buildings are real. However, from what I see, the sky, clouds, and the fiery sun are fake. This is a space opened by a powerful World Spiritist," Eggy said.

"This is many times vaster than the space in the Asura Ghost Tower. However, back then, the strongest person in the Burning Heaven Church was Huangfu Haoyue. Judging by his strength, he shouldn't be able to open up a space.

"Could it be a senior from the Burning Heaven Church?" Even though he had made guesses, after Eggy confirmed that the world was not real and it was only a space created up by a Spirit Formation expert, Chu Feng still felt greatly astonished.

"Heh, silly, no one in the Burning Heaven Church has the ability to do this.

"However, judging by the various things from the Ancient Era in the Everlasting Sea of Blood and at the Misty Peak, there had truly been geniuses and experts in the Eastern Sea Region before. This place should

have been created by experts of the Ancient Era.

"But perhaps by chance, someone from the Burning Heaven Church discovered this place and received a lucky opportunity. As such, they established this place to be the Burning Heaven Church, and had quite a smooth development as well," Eggy analyzed.

"Mm, that makes sense." Chu Feng nodded, his question in his heart answered. However, suddenly, his pupils suddenly shrank as he shouted, pointing in front of him, "Eggy, look there!"

Chapter 854: Oddity

At that moment, Eggy's mind was concentrating on chatting with Chu Feng, so she didn't even notice the situation in front of them.

Only after hearing his words did she close her eyes, feeling Chu Feng's current gaze.

Though quite a trivial action, Eggy herself jumped in fright at what she saw. A hint of joy then emerged onto her beautiful little face.

Far away in the distance, there was a vast mountain range, and all sorts of peculiar peaks stood upright. But of those peaks, atop a mountain resembling a mantou, there was one peak that emitted various faint colours. It stood quite in contrast with the others; it was very captivating.

"There's seems to be something good there. Chu Feng, head over!" Eggy shouted.

Where was the need for Eggy's reminder? After discovering it, Chu Feng had increased his speed and flew towards the colourful mountain range.

The closer he approached, the more excited Chu Feng became. As he went even nearer, he was able to more clearly see what exactly that thing was.

It was a mountain peak—a very vast mountain peak. On it, there were all sorts of medicines. Not simple medicines, but very precious ones.

Even though they were used for creating pellets and weren't all that useful for cultivation, they were still worth quite a bit.

World Spiritists were also experts in concocting medicines. When he had spare time, Chu Feng would study the usages and states of various plants. Of those, naturally they included medicinal plants.

As such, Chu Feng was able to instantly tell that the medicines on the peak were very precious. Every single one was invaluable, and very difficult to find in the outside world. Yet now, there were so many in here. Most likely, the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was within those medicines.

“Haha, I’m rich now! I didn’t think the Burning Heaven Church had left behind such a large sum of wealth!” Chu Feng finally arrived on the peak.

Looking downwards at the glowing and invaluable medicines of varying effects, his heart was very excited. Even though those things didn’t help his cultivation, they were still very valuable.

Not to mention him, even such an enormous power like the Immortal Execution Archipelago, upon knowing of these medicines, wouldn’t hesitate to send a powerful battle force to occupy this place.

Most importantly, under the gaze of his Heaven’s Eyes, he had already found a very special-shaped medicine—it was the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix.

Within the vast world of medicine, the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was absolutely not the most precious one. There were many more that had stronger effects.

Even though Chu Feng had a great understanding of medicine, there were still quite a few here Chu Feng didn’t know the names of. The value of these medicines was priceless.

whoosh

But even so, Chu Feng still rushed up to a Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. After all, no matter the value of the other medicines here, the most important one to Chu Feng right now was the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix because it was a main component in helping Zi Ling fight the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

hmm After landing, without even thinking, Chu Feng used the golden Spirit Formation power and laid a boundless Spirit Formation above the medicine. It was an Opening Formation, a necessity in harvesting medicinal plants.

Medicinal plants and cultivation resources were different. In accordance to their strength, cultivation medicines possessed varying fighting power. No matter if it was spiritual medicine, Origin medicine, Profound medicine, Heaven medicine, Martial medicine, Spiritual Beings, or Sacred

Entities, they had their respective spirits, and they had the strength to protect themselves.

However, medicinal plants were different. Most of them did not possess intelligence, nor any powerful attacks. At least, most of them didn't possess either.

However, it was not as simple to harvest them. It required a World Spiritist to lay an Opening Formation in order to pick them.

If he picked them directly, then in the instant they left the soil, they would wither immediately and die. His effort would have been for nothing then. Similarly, in accordance to the different medicinal strengths of the medicinal plants, the strength of the formation would vary as well.

None of those plants were simple plants, and the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix was of that category. Luckily, Chu Feng was already a Gold-cloak World Spiritist; otherwise, to harvest it would truly require quite some effort. But now, it was much easier.

"Open!" Suddenly, Chu Feng shouted. The boundless formation in the air became a strand of golden light, and like a falling golden dragon, it shot straight towards the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix and enveloped it within.

rumble rumble rumble For an instant, even the earth trembled. Countless golden runes surrounded the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix and swirled around, pulling it from the ground.

In a situation like that, the medicine itself wanted to resist, but it was useless as Chu Feng's Spirit Formation was too powerful. No matter how unwilling it was, it could only be slowly removed from the soil. As it was enveloped by the golden Spirit Formation, it landed into Chu Feng's hands.

"Haha, I've finally gotten it!" With the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix in hand, Chu Feng carefully put it away because it was really too precious to him.

Just in case, Chu Feng picked several more ripened Holy Medicine of

Dragon and Phoenix, and only then was his heart at ease.

whoosh After harvesting them, Chu Feng did not continue blindly reaping these precious medicines, and instead, rose into the air and looked down from above. With the Heaven's Eyes, he gazed downward, carefully searching for the most precious medicines within that vast sea of medicine.

Chu Feng knew the ones to enter the Burning Heaven Church would definitely not be him alone. The Third Immortal would arrive sooner or later.

Even though the space in the Burning Heaven Church was very big, regardless of its size there would always exist an end. He didn't know when the Third Immortal would enter.

He did not have that much time to reap all the medicines here. He was short on time, so Chu Feng could only choose the most excellent ones and harvest them as such.

"This is truly not simple at all! What sort of spiritual power is in this soil? It actually bred so many medicinal plants that have an abundant of power! It seems that this journey has been quite worth it."

Suddenly, Chu Feng's eyes lit up. Then, he leapt forward and flew towards one of the medicinal plants.

That plant was very ordinary. It wasn't just dim, its appearance was very simple as well. Judging by its external appearance, it was simply an ordinary weed.

But, before Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes, its actual shape had been revealed. This plant was very powerful. It contained extremely strong medicinal power, and to say it was the king of medicines in this vast sea of medicine was quite appropriate.

whoosh As expected, before Chu Feng even went close to it, the medicine flashed with light and actually pulled itself from the ground. Then, with its two tiny legs, it started madly running on the ground. It was also very quick, and even Chu Feng was shocked.

“Haha, it has intelligence, and it has the ability to move! It is indeed the king of this place!” Chu Feng was elated when he saw that. He made a grab, and with the boundless envelopment of his pressure, he wanted to suppress the Medicine King.

But it was useless as the Medicine King was too powerful. It emitted a green-coloured light from the inside, and as it was surrounded by such a light, it ignored Chu Feng’s power and continued running.

Just as it arrived at the end of the sea of medicine, with a poof, it burrowed into the ground.

“Hmph. Where are you running off to?” Such a good medicine was a treasure. How could Chu Feng allow it to escape so easily? He leapt forth, and followed it, burrowing into the ground as well.

“Crap!” However, though he didn’t expect anything when he burrowed in, Chu Feng’s complexion changed once again. From his initial ecstatic face, it became completely pale. He even broke out in a cold sweat.

At that instant, Chu Feng was able to clearly feel an extremely horrifying killing intent emanating from deep underground.

Within the soil of the vast sea of medicine, there was something strange!

Chapter 855: Guardian Formation

Such a sudden change shocked Chu Feng. With the observational power of his Heaven's Eyes, he looked deep underground and discovered a terrifying killing formation.

It was a very strange formation. It seemed to be made by a person, yet also by nature. Even Chu Feng found it difficult to determine which one made it.

However, a fact that could not be denied was the power it contained was extremely horrifying. So much even a rank one Martial King could not defend against it—it had a very powerful attack.

Luckily, Chu Feng had reacted in time. Otherwise, if he had went just a bit deeper and entered the range of the formation, he would have completely activated it. At that moment, with the strength Chu Feng had, he would have been killed in just a blink.

"What a crafty Medicine King. It wanted to lure me in!"

After finding the source of such horrifying power, Chu Feng was a bit angry. Although the killing formation was frightening, as long as he avoided its range of activation, there wouldn't be any danger to his life.

On the other hand, the Medicine King could step into its range but not be harmed in the slightest. When he hid within the formation, Chu Feng could not capture it. In a situation like that, Chu Feng could really do nothing to it.

"Chu Feng, why would such a powerful killing formation appear out of nowhere?

"Moreover, this is a mountain peak. How can so many strong medicinal plants be grown? Don't you think this is very strange?

"Although the plants can receive the energy from natural essence and thus grow, this is a vast mountain range. A few appearing would be already quite good. Yet, on this single mountain peak, it is filled with medicinal plants. This doesn't make much sense.

“Moreover, there is such a frightening killing formation deep underground. Don’t you think this is odd?” Eggy reminded.

“Of course it doesn’t make sense! Let me look with the Heaven’s Eyes first.” Chu Feng didn’t hesitate as he leapt up, back to the surface, and started carefully circling around and observe the mountain peak full of medicinal plants.

With the detailed observation of the Heaven’s Eyes, as he continued his analysis, Chu Feng felt even more shocked. Even the suspicion in his eyes turned into joy, and that joy was becoming stronger and stronger.

In the end, he was even ecstatic. On his face, there was an uncontrollable excited expression.

Chu Feng discovered this land was truly not simple at all. There was definitely a Natural Oddity hidden in a certain part of this peak.

That killing formation was not a simple formation—it was a Guardian Formation Aperture. As long as he could deactivate it, he would be able to find the entrance and thus obtain the Natural Oddity.

“Hah, I originally thought this journey was worth it just by being able to obtain these medicine. No matter what, I never would have thought I would have a discovery like this! In this man-created space, a Natural Oddity formed! And it has even developed for at least several thousand years!”

There was no need describe how happy Chu Feng was.

There were many types of Natural Oddities. The most common ones were Spiritual Beings and Sacred Entities.

Spiritual Beings possessed intelligence. After formation, they had the ability to move, and could even transform into a human shape. They could cultivate in this world as a human, and since they were bred by the earth, they had very long lives. If they could mature, their future was unimaginable.

At first, the Phoenix of Ice at the Wolf Ivory Mountain was a Spiritual Being. However, it hadn’t been in development for very long, and it hadn’t

matured. It was merely an embryo. It could not leave its place of growth, so dealing with it was very easy.

As for Sacred Entities, they never possessed intelligence, nor could they form into a human shape. They would only remain in their place of growth, and continue to grow. They awaited for the fated to take them away.

In other worlds, Spiritual Beings were the children bred by the world, while Sacred Entities were gifts from heaven, bestowed to cultivators.

However, Sacred Entities were not like fish on a cutting board. Not anyone could take them away. Coincident with their growth, there would be a natural Guardian Formation Aperture that protected them.

Unless one were able to deactivate the formation, they shouldn't even think of getting their hands on it. They couldn't even look at them. That could be said to be a test from the heavens.

"It truly is a Natural Oddity! The Burning Heaven Church is able to use the power of this Natural Oddity to grow so many medicinal plants. It means they've already discovered it a long time ago.

"These plants require time to grow, so it's reasonable that they didn't take them when they left, since the plants were not ripened yet. On the other hand, this Natural Oddity is so precious. Why didn't the Burning Heaven Church take it away?" Eggy was still very confused after confirming it was a Natural Oddity.

"When we saw the Guardian Formation Aperture, it was changed. Quite clearly, it was changed by the Burning Heaven Church."

Chu Feng could already tell the reason the killing formation appeared was so strange was because it was formed naturally, yet also altered by humans.

"Interesting. But, I just don't understand why they did that.

"However, since it's a Natural Oddity and it had been growing for so long, it will definitely help your cultivation greatly. Perhaps you could even make a breakthrough and become a Martial Lord!

“However, if you can’t deactivate that killing formation, you won’t be able to find the Natural Oddity.” Eggy curled her lips, feeling quite a shame.

“Actually, I do have a plan. Perhaps it can help me get this Natural Oddity,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“What plan?” Eggy asked anxiously.

“Even though there are a large amount of medicinal plants grown here—a normal person would know this place is not simple at all—it’s very difficult to find anything off with this place using ordinary searching methods of a World Spiritist.

“As for that Guardian Formation Aperture, on the surface it looks like a very powerful killing formation so it’s very difficult to notice it’s an aperture for a Natural Oddity.

“Moreover, since the Burning Heaven Church had changed it, even if it’s deactivated, a typical person won’t be able to find the location of the hidden Natural Oddity.

“However, I have the Heaven’s Eyes. I have already roughly found its location. But, the aperture isn’t deactivated, so I can’t enter that place.

“In addition, I believe that the person who can deactivate this aperture has arrived. I can use him to break it open, and thus obtain the Natural Oddity,” Chu Feng explained.

“You’re saying to use that Third Immortal?” Eggy asked.

“Exactly. To use him.” Chu Feng firmly nodded his head.

“That would work, but at the same time, there are huge risks. I do want to know how you will attract him over though.” Eggy still had some doubts.

“Isn’t that simple? I can just use a few techniques and he’ll discover this place.

“However, that person is too powerful and is skilled in Spirit Formation techniques. Since I’m preparing to use him, then I will have to put a bit

more effort into this. Otherwise, the one who'll be at a disadvantage will be me."

Chu Feng oddly smiled, then flew down and laid a complicated formation.

After several hours, the Third Immortal had entered. Moreover, in order to find traces of Chu Feng and the treasure, he used a special technique that made his eyes light up even brighter than a lamp. That not only increased his range of vision, it even allowed him to discover things ordinary people could not discover.

At that moment, he was standing in the air with the World Spirit Compass in hand. He was looking down from above, aiming to find some clues.

Then, suddenly, his eyes lit up. The corners of his mouth subconsciously rose to form a smile.

At the same time, he put away his special gaze and concealed his aura. Then, he leapt forth and flew towards the direction he was looking at.

And that direction was the location of Chu Feng and the Natural Oddity.

Chapter 856: Hiddenly Observing the Fight

The surface of the peak full of medicinal plants was serene, as if completely untouched.

However, a strange invisible aura arose from the ground, into the air, and straight through the clouds, enveloping the space above the peak.

An auspicious aura—the indication of special treasure. Actually, with so many medicinal plants gathered in a single area, there was already an auspicious aura, though very weak.

Yet now, a very strong aura came from the depths of the ground. The reason for this was naturally due to Chu Feng.

Since the Third Immortal was a powerful World Spiritist, he definitely had special detection abilities others did not possess.

As such, Chu Feng knew if the Third Immortal were to approach this area, he would be quickly pulled into the false auspicious aura he created.

And since Chu Feng had increased the auspicious aura exuded by the medicinal plants and the Medicine King hiding within the Guardian Formation, even the Third Immortal wouldn't discover such a scheme. After all, Chu Feng too was very skillful in Spirit Formation techniques, and this was also made with intensive preparations.

At that moment, for safety's sake, Chu Feng hid in the air and looked down from above, silently watching the changes occurring to the peak full of medicinal plants.

He had already made all possible arrangements, and concealed his aura to a point barely any was leaked. Thus, he was not worried he would be discovered by the Third Immortal, nor worried he would be affected by the shock waves resulting from the Third Immortal laying a formation later.

hmm Suddenly, there was a ripple in space atop the peaceful mountain

peak. A person then appeared out of nowhere above the sea of medicinal plants—it was the Third Immortal.

"Heh, he's quite cunning. Not only did he conceal his aura, he even concealed his physical body."

Chu Feng smugly smiled. He had to admit, the Third Immortal was quite impressive. His technique of aura concealment was very powerful as well.

But sadly for him, Chu Feng was prepared. Regardless of the Third Immortal's following actions, he couldn't change the fact that he was in the open, while Chu Feng was hidden in the dark.

"I've heard there were large amounts of medicinal plants within the Burning Heaven Church, so I reckoned they wouldn't take them away since the plants were not fully grown yet. My suspicions were correct.

"The Burning Heaven Church has left for many years, and now, these precious medicinal plants have grown fully. There are so many which haven't even been taken by others. It's clear the heavens have prepared this for me."

The Third Immortal smiled lightly, but was not in a rush to harvest them. Instead, he walked over to the burrowing location of the Medicine King, and said with a smile, "The aura of auspiciousness is the strongest here. There is definitely an intelligent plant hidden underground and secretly growing.

"But sadly, even if you can hide yourself from others, you can't hide yourself from me. Reveal yourself!"

whoosh After speaking, the Third Immortal leapt forth and rushed into the ground. He didn't even move the soil as he used a special technique that allowed him to pass through normal soil and walls. It was named the Wall Passing Technique.

"Finally, he's fallen for the trap." Upon seeing the Third Immortal enter the ground, Chu Feng, observing in the dark, couldn't help making a smile.

Chu Feng felt, after the Third Immortal discovered the Medicine King hiding within the Guardian Formation underground, he definitely wouldn't retreat like Chu Feng due to his strength. Instead, it was more likely he would attempt to break through the formation with his full strength. After all, the Third Immortal did have the power to do so.

boom As expected, shortly after he burrowed into the ground, the entire peak trembled. However, the peak was clearly reinforced by some special power. Despite such intense shaking, only a few rocks fell and it was not destroyed. It remained quite firm.

whoosh Quickly after, a person shot out from the ground—it was the Third Immortal.

However, with contrast to his former calm expression, the Third Immortal now had a hint of seriousness, especially so for his fierce eyes. They emitted a blinding light, like two lanterns. He closely gazed at the surface of the Guardian Formation, giving it a careful examination.

aooo—

Just at that moment, a furious roar suddenly broke out. Afterwards, the soil on the surface surged and several thick tree branches of ten or so meters shot out from the ground.

Those tree branches were very strange. They were not only equipped with spikes, they even contained extremely horrifying power. On every single branch, there was a pair of blood-red eyes, resembling a monster.

"What a powerful Guardian Formation. It's even scarier than what I initially predicted. Luckily I didn't activate this before, otherwise I wouldn't even have had the chance to escape. I would have already been killed while still underground."

Chu Feng instantly knew the branch wasn't a true monster though. It was only a technique of some sort stemming from the Guardian Formation. However, something that couldn't be disagreed upon was the immense power of these several thick branches. They were extremely troublesome, and even a rank one Martial King would be no match for them. As such, the Third Immortal didn't dare to be careless in the

slightest.

At that instant, Chu Feng was very worried—worried the Third Immortal would give up due to the overwhelming strength of the Guardian Formation.

“Haha, interesting. The Burning Heaven Church even left behind a killing formation like this? It’s for protecting the Medicine King, which possesses intelligence?

“This killing formation could indeed stop quite a few people, but sadly, it cannot stop me. All the plants here are mine! Not a single one should even think of escaping!”

However, Chu Feng’s worry was unneeded. The Third Immortal had no plans to retreat, and he even expressed his excitement. With his sword-like brows furrowing deeply, he overlaid his palms and attacked the branches released by the Guardian Formation.

boom boom boom boom The Third Immortal’s attacks were very fierce. They weren’t all that beautiful, but every single strike was skillful and contained endless power.

The special power within the peak had made itself extremely tough. If it were any other peak, any of the Third Immortal’s attack would have destroyed it completely. There wouldn’t even be anything left.

In reality, other than that peak, which remained undamaged, all other peaks nearby became dust, disintegrated by the shock waves from the Third Immortal’s attack.

The power of a Martial King was indeed terrifying. It was several times superior to a Martial Lord.

aoo—

However, the branches sent by the Guardian Formation were not there for nothing. As they slashed through the air, they were able to cut even space itself. How did those even look like simple branches? They were simply unstoppable sharp blades.

boom

Suddenly, another wave came from the Guardian Formation. After being struck by that wave, flames appeared on the ferocious branches.

The flames were very strange. They continuously made crackling sounds, and even had the power to burn through everything. Before such fire, even air was set ablaze. In an instant, flames arose everywhere and engulfed everything within a hundred miles. Even though the peak was undamaged, everything outside the peak was buried beneath an inferno.

Luckily, Chu Feng was already prepared—he was hiding in the sky. Otherwise, the remnants of their battle alone could turn Chu Feng into dust.

whoosh However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's complexion suddenly changed. He couldn't help casting his gaze behind him, because he felt a person floating downwards nearby, landing atop a white cloud.

Chapter 857: Fierce Woman

When Chu Feng looked more carefully, his eyes lit up. He noticed the person who came was rather tall, and had a pure-white long-sleeve dress even whiter than snow.

That dress was quite long as it tightly wrapped around her body. Even her palms and shoes were covered by that long dress. One could truly say not a single inch of her skin was revealed.

However, judging by her firm and round chest, Chu Feng still knew that the person who came was female.

However, she also wore a white-coloured conical hat, and on the hat there was even a white veil that drooped down, covering her appearance.

At that moment, Chu Feng didn't dare to use the Heaven's Eyes, nor did he dare to use Spirit power. So, he could not determine her strength, true age, or appearance.

However, the innate aura she possessed was not something clothes could cover. Chu Feng was nearly certain she was not a simple person at all.

It was because she too had concealed her aura, and like Chu Feng before, was staring at the mountain peak, at the Third Immortal who was fighting the ruthless branches. Judging by feeling, Chu Feng knew she was not a kind one. Most likely, she had come here for the plants on the peak.

boom boom boom

At that very moment, the battle on the peak had become more and more intense.

The ablaze branches were akin to flaming dragons arising from the ground. They were very ferocious.

"The unique flames of the Burning Heaven Church... As I thought, this is something left by the Burning Heaven Church. That's fine. Let me see how strong you are!"

But in spite of all that, the Third Immortal was not afraid at all. With the flip of his palm, a long rod three meters in length appeared within his hand.

That rod was completely green, and there were interwoven runes engraved on it. It was an Incomplete Royal Armament.

When that rod appeared, the aura surrounding the Third Immortal became completely different. It had risen enormously.

swish

Then, he abruptly waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, and stirred up an ear-piercing swish.

After waving the Incomplete Royal Armament, a jade-green wave of light shot out from his Incomplete Royal Armament in a half-moon shape, slashing towards one of the branches. An explosion thus followed.

bang

The jade-green light wave was too powerful. With only a single strike, it cut one of the branches in half.

bang bang bang

Quickly afterwards, the Third Immortal kept on waving the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand. In a situation like that, the branches with horrifying flames had lost their ability to attack. One after the other, they were severed.

“So powerful. It’s said that Royal Armaments are prepared for Martial Kings. It seems that it is true.”

Chu Feng nodded when he saw such a scene. He was greatly convinced by the Third Immortal’s powerful fighting strength. He too had an Incomplete Royal Armament, but in his hands, he could not create power as strong as the Third Immortal’s.

Even though the body of a Martial King was superior to him by a few times, he had to admit that in the Third Immortal’s hand, the Incomplete Royal Armament had become several times stronger. He had truly

displayed the power of an Incomplete Royal Armament.

However, after such a scene, Chu Feng couldn't help but think if an Incomplete Royal Armament in the hands of a Martial King was so powerful already, what would happen if a Royal Armament were in the hands of a Martial King?

bang bang bang...

Just at that moment, there were several more explosions. After those explosions disappeared, the world beneath the sky had become extremely tranquil.

If one looked around, they would see that the horrifying flames which engulfed everything beneath the peak had disappeared. What remained were only pitch-black mountain rocks and dust.

Looking back at the mountain peak, the terrifying branches sent by the Guardian Formation had all been cut in two. They lost their former power and their frightening offensive strength.

At that moment, from its physical form, the branches became golden rays of light. Moreover, those rays of light were spreading apart, and becoming countless golden dots. They were like fireflies as they shrank back into the ground Those branches were only an attack from the Guardian Formation. Even though they were destroyed, the Guardian Formation was still undamaged.

Of course, the Guardian Formation which lacked an attack was akin to a tiger without teeth. It no longer presented any threat.

At that moment, as long as the Third Immortal used a bit of power, he could easily break through the Guardian Formation. Then, the Sacred Entity hidden here would also appear, and Chu Feng could then snatch it away after all his hard work.

"Hahaha, the killing formation of the Burning Heaven Church has disappointed me!

"It looks like even if the Burning Heaven Church were still in the Eastern Sea Region, they would be no match for the Immortal Execution

Archipelago!”

At that moment, the Third Immortal laughed madly. His laughter was very happy, and even a bit excited.

It could be seen that he assumed the Guardian Formation was the Burning Heaven Church’s killing formation—not a Guardian Formation. So, after breaking through such a formation, he was so happy.

After all, the Burning Heaven Church was named as one of the strongest powers in the Eastern Sea Region. The Immortal Execution Archipelago back then did not even stand a chance against them.

And even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago had risen in power now, the Burning Heaven Church existed no more. They were unable to compare themselves with the Burning Heaven Church. However, this killing formation had satisfied the Third Immortal’s heart of pride.

“Little thing, without the protection of this killing formation, where are you going to escape now?” After laughing, the Third Immortal abruptly extended his hand and grabbed downwards. He wanted to completely break open the Guardian Formation deep underground and pull out the Medicine King hiding inside.

When he saw that, Chu Feng’s pupils shrank. He felt a lump rise in his throat as he felt extreme nervousness.

The situation before his eyes was really too crucial. As long as the Third Immortal completely opened the Guardian Formation, the Sacred Entity that had been growing for several thousands of years would appear. Regardless of its appearance, it was a cultivation treasure to Chu Feng that he could not miss out on. He had to get his hands on it.

whoosh In such a crucial moment, the white-dress female hiding within the clouds leapt forth and emanated an extremely powerful might. Like light, she rushed towards the mountain peak.

“This aura!” Seeing the white-skirt woman making her move, Chu Feng’s complexion changed greatly because at that instant, he could feel

what cultivation she possessed.

A rank nine Martial Lord. She was a rank nine Martial Lord, but her aura was different from others. That feeling was extremely similar to Chu Feng's aura—it was an alteration in aura due to extremely powerful fighting strength.

From that, it could be seen that despite being only a rank nine Martial Lord, she was still very strong, possibly even relatively stronger than Chu Feng.

"Who are you?" The Third Immortal also noticed her at that moment. He stopped breaking open the formation, and cast his fierce gaze as well as his boundless pressure of a rank two Martial King towards the sky, planning to shock her completely.

However, the woman ignored the Third Immortal's question. She didn't reply to the Third Immortal's question, and not only that, the pressure from the Third Immortal—a rank two Martial King's—was of no effect to her.

boom She even, when less than three thousand meters from the Third Immortal, waved her sleeve and made her move first. She attacked the Third Immortal.

Upon seeing such a scene, not to mention Chu Feng, even the Third Immortal, as a rank two Martial King, changed his expression greatly.

It was because the attack she sent had completely destroyed the Third Immortal's pressure. It was very powerful, causing even the Third Immortal to feel very astonished.

Chapter 858: Frightening Strength

boom rumble rumble

A boundless attack was sent out upon a sweep of the woman's sleeve. It was a burst of chilliness—chilliness that pierced the bones. In front of such chilliness, one could even see frost appearing in the air.

Even the pressure sent by the Third Immortal collapsed immediately. The chilliness, with a horrifying bearing, descended from the sky and went straight for the Third Immortal.

"What an audacious brat! You dare to attack me?"

Even though he felt she was not a simple person at all, she was still a rank nine Martial Lord. Why would the Third Immortal, a rank two Martial King, be afraid?

whoosh He waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand and several green light waves, which had severed the horrifying tree branches, burst out, flying towards the white-dress woman in the air.

"Break." Just at that moment, an extremely pleasant voice came from the woman's mouth. That voice was very mellifluous—it was akin to a clear bell, yet also to a soft cry of a bird.

The power that came with that voice was extremely strong. When the woman lightly shouted, a snow-white hand appeared from the end of her sleeve, one as exquisite as jade.

A boundless pressure came along with the appearance of that hand. With a boom, just by a single attack from her palm, it destroyed the attack from the Third Immortal's Incomplete Royal Armament.

boom boom boom boom

However, that wasn't even much. After destroying the Third Immortal's attack with a single strike, she sent more palm attacks forth.

With the attacks continuously raining down, it invisibly made a formation of attack akin to a storm. However, the power the formation

contained was not something a storm could even match.

After those palm attacks appeared, even the Third Immortal tightly furrowed his brows. He clenched the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand and quickly flung it about. He continued sending green light waves to block her attacks.

whoosh However, she was just too powerful. Just as the Third Immortal finished destroying the palm attacks she sent, she had already appeared behind the Third Immortal like a ghost, and slammed her palm down at his head. The power it contained was as if it could break through everything.

swish In a situation like that, the Third Immortal was quite frightened. His aged face instantly turned pale because he never expected a mere rank nine Martial Lord to be so powerful.

At that moment, even though he wasn't willing to admit she was strong, he didn't dare to be careless. He leapt forward and fled to the distance. He had found out she was too quick, and her attacks were too strong. The chilliness she exuded from her body pierced the bones at short distances. It was unendurable, so he had to keep his distance.

However, the woman who had already neared him simply didn't give him a chance to escape. As the Third Immortal flew through the air, the woman also followed as her dress fluttered.

She waved her arm, and flipped her palm. Layers upon layers of destructive power endlessly surged towards the Third Immortal.

She was really too powerful. Her attacks were blunt and fierce and without weakness. Even though the Third Immortal held an Incomplete Royal Armament and put forth his full strength, he could only dodge her attacks but do nothing else.

Since her attacks were so fierce, the Third Immortal was actually wounded by the remnants of the attacks. His clothes were quite ragged, and his long hair was in chaos. Even his face swelled, and layers of frost started appearing and spreading in all parts of his body.

“If I may ask, what past animosity do you have towards me to prompt such relentless attacks?” the Third Immortal asked as he felt he was at a disadvantage.

He knew she wasn’t a normal rank nine Martial Lord. The strength she had made even him fearful.

As such, he felt that she was likely some peak expert from the Eastern Sea Region who concealed her identity and cultivation. That was why she was so powerful.

However, she did not respond to the Third Immortal’s question. Not only that, her attacks became even fiercer, to the point it was nearly putting the Third Immortal to death.

“Haha, this is truly interesting! I didn’t think there would be such a powerful person in this Eastern Sea Region!

“Chu Feng, this person likely hasn’t concealed her cultivation. A rank nine Martial Lord—that’s probably her actual cultivation.

“And to possess such strength with merely this cultivation... that is almost comparable to you! Finally, someone decently presentable has appeared in this region of mediocrity.

“It seems that you’ve finally met a good opponent!” The battle which disgraced the Third Immortal made Eggy elated.

“Yeah! From what I see, I don’t think she’s all that old. She likely in the same generation as me, yet she has such ferocious strength. It is truly quite unbelievable.

“As a rank nine Martial Lord, she forced a rank two Martial King to a state like this, and the Third Immortal even has an Incomplete Royal Armament, which increased his fighting strength greatly.

“Yet, that woman is not only bare-handed, she feels it beneath herself to even use a martial skill! With might alone, and the most direct physical attacks, she forced the Third Immortal to a state like this.

“Impressive. Truly too impressive. But, who is she? Such a powerful

person shouldn't be so unknown.

"Why have I never heard of her before?"

Chu Feng was also dumbfounded by that woman's powerful strength. This was the first time, ever since meeting Zi Ling, that Chu Feng met a person who had superior fighting strength to him yet also in the same generation. Moreover, her strength was clearly superior to even Zi Ling. It was truly unimaginably powerful.

"I am the Third Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Senior, I dare say I have never met you before, and it's likely that the Immortal Execution Archipelago isn't your enemy either. Yet, Senior, you don't even say anything before your attempts to kill me. I am very puzzled.

"Senior, please speak of the reason and let me die with meaning. Even if I am beaten, I would like to know why." Seeing as he was about to be defeated, the Third Immortal did not loudly curse. Instead, he had a respectful attitude as he asked the origin of his opponent.

whoosh And after he spoke, the woman suddenly stopped attacking and stood in air.

Seeing that, the Third Immortal quickly took that chance to pull apart the distance. Only after he felt safe did he stop.

At that moment, the Third Immortal not only had disorderly hair, he was even gasping for breath as sweat drenched him. His body was trembling slightly as well.

Chu Feng could see a layer of frost on his clothes. It was clearly due to the woman's unique and peculiar aura of chilliness. One must admit that the appearance of the Third Immortal right now was an unbearable sight to behold.

But, after seeing her horrifying strength, the Third Immortal did not rashly make a move. Instead, he clasped his hands at her, bowed, and politely said, "Senior, may I ask for your name? What action has this junior done to displease you? Could it be that this is your territory?"

“I am not the owner of this place, but since I have come here, everything belongs to me. I don’t care where you came from, but you cannot take even a single blade of grass from this place.

“You are old, even older than my grandfather. Yet, you call yourself junior, and call me senior. This is truly pitiful.

“Due to that, I’ll spare your life today. Scram. If I see you again, I will not let you off so easily,” said the woman mockingly as she moved her long sleeve.

Chapter 859: Shameless and Despicable

When he heard such words, the Third Immortal's mouth twitched as his complexion became quite distorted.

Her words were truly too ridiculing. She was clearly telling the Third Immortal that she wasn't, in his eyes, a hidden expert, an old monster that had cultivated for many years.

She, instead, was a young person, much younger than the Third Immortal. Otherwise, she wouldn't have said her grandfather wasn't even as old as the Third Immortal.

Putting aside status and age, her words of "I am not the owner of this place, but since I have come here, everything belongs to me" meant she didn't put the Third Immortal in her eyes at all, especially so when she said "scram". That was too mocking.

To the Third Immortal—a person whose status and strength was very high, and one of the peak characters in the Eastern Sea Region—it was a bare insult to him.

"Thank you." Though displeased, the Third Immortal didn't say much. Instead, he clasped his hands at her, then leapt forward and drifted away.

After the Third Immortal left, the woman stood on the spot and carefully looked. She even cast her extremely fierce Spirit power to be certain he had truly left.

"What a powerful Spirit power." After feeling the woman's Spirit power, the admiration in Chu Feng's eyes became a bit stronger. He could feel that it was very strong; it even surpassed his own. That meant she not only had frightening strength, she was even a World Spiritist. Her Spirit Formation techniques were likely very powerful as well.

whoosh Only after confirming the Third Immortal had left did the woman float down. As her snow-white dress fluttered, she came up to the Guardian Formation and examined it.

At that instant, Chu Feng's heartbeat sped up. His entire body was

tense, as if the lump he felt in his throat was as big as his heart.

She was too powerful, so he truly worried that she could tell there was a Sacred Entity concealed in this place. If that were the case, his work would have been for nothing, and instead, it would have helped someone else instead.

But it seemed Chu Feng's worries were unneeded. After she gave it a glance, she didn't have any shocked expression, nor was she in a hurry to capture the Medicine King hidden in the Guardian Formation.

Instead, she came up to a very ordinary medicinal plant, laid a formation, and prepared to harvest it.

Her Spirit Formation techniques were truly quite impressive. Due to the golden Spirit Formation, Chu Feng could tell she was not only a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, her Spirit Formation strength was not weaker than Chu Feng at all, possibly even stronger. She truly possessed a horrifying level of strength.

In front of such a powerful Spirit Formation, the medicinal plant could not resist. In merely a blink, it was harvested by her, and put into her sack.

After successfully harvesting a single medicinal plant, she still didn't pay attention to the Medicine King. Instead, she went up to another very ordinary medicinal plant and continued harvesting.

"Why isn't she rushing to harvest the Medicine King, and instead, is harvesting these relatively ordinary plants?"

Chu Feng felt confused at her actions. He didn't really understand what her target was, but he couldn't really do anything. He could only silently watch and await her to quickly pick the plants.

rumble rumble rumble However, just at that moment, the sky suddenly started violently trembling. Quickly after, the world started trembling. An aura belonging to someone extremely powerful was rapidly nearing, twisting even air itself.

"Brat, you are arrogant and disrespectful! Today, I'll kill you!" At the

same time, a fierce shout came forth. It was the Third Immortal. He did not truly leave, and instead, had returned to take revenge on the woman.

"You are looking to die." After knowing the Third Immortal had returned, the woman coldly snorted. Then, she leapt forward and with icy killing intent, met the Third Immortal head-on.

"Brat, die!" Just at that moment, the Third Immortal had come close. His figure had appeared within Chu Feng's and the woman's vision.

However, at that moment, his demeanor was completely different. Not only did his power rise, there was dazzling radiance swirling around his Incomplete Royal Armament. It also emanated destructive and horrifying power.

boom Just as Chu Feng saw the Third Immortal, he had attacked. He abruptly waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, and a boundless pressure instantly enveloped the woman. Then, a white light soared into the sky, becoming a huge sword that could cut even the world itself. With light-like speed, he stabbed it towards the woman.

"This is a Mortal Taboo martial skill, the Illusory Sword Technique!"

When he saw this, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling deeply because Chu Feng could truly not be any more familiar with that strike.

It was a Mortal Taboo martial skill, called the Illusory Sword Technique. It was a core skill only cultivated by the higher echelons of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, Chu Feng had seen Ya Fei, Zhan Feng, and also Murong Wan use it before. He knew its power was very frightening.

However, the young Martial Lords who had used it clearly couldn't be compared to the Third Immortal, a rank two Martial King, because the Illusory Sword Technique he used was much more horrifying. It was as if its might could simply destroy this world.

boom—

As shock flooded Chu Feng, the Illusory Sword Technique had arrived,

engulfing the unprepared woman.

The Illusory Sword Technique streaked through the air, and the pressure it exuded alone shattered space itself, causing endless darkness to appear in mid-air.

Then, soon after, the Illusory Sword Technique exploded as well. Its blinding light engulfed everything as if the sun had descent upon the earth. Moreover, a destructive might swept through everywhere.

"This damned Third Immortal. He's this despicable! So the reason he admitted his loss was to channel this Mortal Taboo martial skill. After it finished, he used special techniques to secretly approach, then surprise attack her. That is too shameless."

Seeing the horrifying ripples wreaking havoc over on the woman's side, Chu Feng tightly furrowed. Even though he and she were unrelated—both the woman and the Third Immortal could be called his enemy—when the Third Immortal, a senior, used such methods against a junior such as her, Chu Feng couldn't continue watching.

aoo—

But just at that time, a deafening howl suddenly rang out. At the same time, in the direction of the Illusory Sword Technique's explosion, a violent hurricane appeared. The deafening howl had come from that hurricane.

The hurricane was extremely large, and after it appeared, what came from it was suction power. It was absorbing the energy ripples sent by the Illusory Sword Technique.

The power released by the hurricane was too horrifying. In merely a blink, it had completely absorbed the shock waves from the Illusory Sword Technique, and space itself, which had already collapsed due to the Illusory Sword Technique, gradually returned to its natural state like broken glass shards.

At the same time, the woman once again appeared before Chu Feng and the Third Immortal.

“Heavens, this girl…”

After seeing her, even though Chu Feng had experienced quite a few things in this world, his complexion couldn’t help changing as he felt dumbfounded.

Chapter 860: Tan Taixue

At that moment, she was standing in the air. Her snow-white dress was undamaged, and it fluttered with the wind.

However, the hat she wore on her head had disappeared. Thus, without the concealment of the veil, her appearance appeared within Chu Feng's vision.

Even though, in his angle, he could only see half of her face, he was still frightened by her complexion.

Her appearance could be described with two words: incomparably ugly.

She was truly incomparably ugly. There was acne all over her face, and of varying sizes. Because there were really too many, one could not even see her facial features all that clear. With a glance, it gave a single feeling to others: revolting.

Her skin was as white as snow, yet on such a fair countenance, there were some red and some purple acne. They densely filled up her entire face. Was it not revolting?

Moreover, putting aside the acne, the outline of her face was very odd as well. Likely, even without the ache, she would have still been an ugly person.

"Ugly! Why are there so many disgusting things on her face? As a World Spiritist, she's allowing such nasty things on her face and isn't doing anything about them?" When she saw that, even Eggy was frightened quite a bit because her complexion was definitely the most ugly she had seen.

"There are only two possibilities in consideration of what I know. The first is that she's intentionally using these things to cover her face, thus hiding her identity.

"The other is that it is innate, and it cannot be changed through external power. Even with Spirit Formation techniques it cannot.

"I feel that it's likely the latter for her. There are many ways to hide

one's appearance, so there was no need for her to choose this one. Besides, her fighting strength is quite overwhelming. It's possible to say her body is special. Those with special bodies are indeed unable to change certain things. One's complexion is one of those things.

"However, rather than her face, I'm more interested in her true strength. I really want to know how powerful she is. She remains unharmed even after forcibly taking a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Only the hat on her head was hit away." Chu Feng frowned slightly. The astonishment in his eyes was fully shown. He felt quite a bit of admiration towards her powerful strength.

However, in contrast to Chu Feng, the Third Immortal's expression changed greatly. On his old face, there was shock everywhere because the Illusory Sword Technique was one of the strongest trump cards he had.

Yet, such a powerful killing blow, when forcibly taken by her, did no damage. How could he not panic? Such a scene meant one thing—her strength was far above his own, so far that he could not truly harm her in any way.

A rank nine Martial Lord had fighting strength above a rank two Martial King. If that was said to others, no one would believe it because that was not something that made any sense.

Yet, right now, it had indeed happened, and it had happened on a famous person like the Third Immortal.

whoosh

Seeing as things were progressing poorly, the Third Immortal turned around, and with a gale spawned beneath his feet, he shot into the distance as if he were light. It was a powerful bodily martial skill, and it was very quick. He wanted to escape.

"You truly deserve death."

But just at that moment, an extremely horrifying aura burst out of the woman's body, instantly enveloping several miles of land.

It was not only might. There was also icy, bone-chilling bloodlust. She

was enraged. She was several times more furious than before. It was not only because the Third Immortal didn't stay true to his words and returned to surprise-attack her, it was more so because the Third Immortal made her hat fly away, causing her appearance to be shown.

"I will kill you!"

Suddenly, she shouted. When her voice came out of her mouth, everything violently quivered. The clouds in the sky were blown away, and the mountains underneath her were destroyed. Everything within a thousand miles collapsed or cracked.

"Ah—"

Before such might, the Third Immortal, who was swiftly fleeing, trembled before a mouthful of blood was coughed out. Not only that, even his entire body instantly cracked. Large amounts of blood started gushing out of various places, and the sharp-red blood had instantly dyed his clothes red.

Soon after, like a kite with its string snapped, he fell from the air.

"She's this powerful?" When he saw that, Chu Feng was shocked once again. It was one thing if she only had the strength to defeat a rank two Martial King, but a single furious howl half-killed the Third Immortal! And that was even with his strong body! If it were a normal person, then before such might, they would have exploded and become a pool of blood! Nothing would even remain.

It was too horrifying. The fighting strength she displayed was too powerful. It was simply so powerful that it was unfathomable. By rough estimations, even if it were a rank three Martial King she could put up a fight. She was a true monster.

boom

However, just as the Third Immortal was about to land on the ground, an extremely powerful aura burst from his body. He then flew up again, and fled to the distance. He instantly disappeared in the horizon.

"Hasn't he just run again? But, the price for that is still quite heavy."

Chu Feng heaved a long sigh. Since she didn't chase after him, Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal was successful in his escape.

But, Chu Feng could also tell the reason he had such an abrupt burst of power was because he consumed a Forbidden Medicine, and a very fierce one at that.

So, Chu Feng knew the Third Immortal wouldn't stay here anymore. He would definitely leave quickly; otherwise, when the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine attacked him, he would lose all his ability to escape. If he were caught by her, then he was as good as dead.

"What is your name? Do you dare speak it?" But just as Chu Feng felt the Third Immortal had been successful in keeping his life, his voice rang out again. He still dared to speak so loftily at her.

But upon another thought, it was still understandable. A grand rank two Martial King, a famous person whose named shocked the Eastern Sea Region, was forced into consuming a Forbidden Medicine due to a rank nine Martial Lord, and forced to escape whilst bruised as well. That was quite laughable. His bitter feelings were within reason.

"I am Tan Taixue. However, there's no need to search for revenge. I will go visit your Immortal Execution Archipelago." The woman did not back down and loudly replied.

"Tan Taixue. Damn Tan Taixue. I've remembered it. The next time we meet, I will definitely make you pay the price for today's actions." The Third Immortal's voice rang out again, and one could even hear his gnashing teeth. However, his voice was fading away more and more, and it was quieter and quieter. As such, one knew he had truly escaped.

"Hmph. A little Immortal Execution Archipelago. You think I'm afraid?" However, the woman did not see the Third Immortal's threat as anything. She grabbed out in the air, and the hat that flew away reappeared within her hand.

After putting the hat back on, the woman floated down and continued harvesting the plants.

“Tan Taixue, huh?” However, even when Chu Feng saw her drive the Third Immortal away then continued harvesting the medicinal plants, he did not feel too happy. Instead, he thought, “Tan Taixue, oh Tan Taixue, I don’t care where you came from, nor who your master is. I just want to know why you aren’t harvesting the precious plants, and instead, harvesting these ordinary ones?

“Please, I’m begging you, take that Medicine King and help me deactivate this Guardian Formation!”

Chapter 861: Completion

Chu Feng was very anxious. He didn't understand why the powerful Tan Taixue ignored the most precious Medicine King and, instead, harvested the most commonly found medicinal plants.

Chu Feng was very worried—worried that Tan Taixue was an odd person. He was worried she didn't need precious medicinal plants and instead, only needed the typical plants. If that were true, then it'd mean Tan Taixue would ignore the Medicine King, which in turn meant she wouldn't help Chu Feng deactivate the Guardian Formation.

The formation was very strong, and even though the most horrifying attacks were gone—it was now like a toothless tiger—a tiger was still a tiger. Even if it didn't have teeth, Chu Feng wasn't certain if he could control it or not with the strength he currently had.

However, Chu Feng's worries were superfluous because after a while of observation, Chu Feng discovered a few thing regarding Tan Taixue's increasingly pleasant expression.

Actually, it wasn't that she liked only normal medicinal plants, she just had a habit of collecting things from low to high, from the worst to the best.

She had started harvesting the most worthless medicinal plants, and bit by bit, she started harvesting the more precious ones. To her, that was a very enjoyable progress, and now, she was feeling quite joyful.

However, that made Chu Feng very anxious because if she continued that, even if she harvested them quickly, there was an entire mountain peak of plants! It would take at least several days for her to harvest them all. Chu Feng did not want to hide in the sky for several days and do nothing at all.

whoosh

ji ji ji However, it seemed that the heavens were helping Chu Feng. Just as he panicked, not knowing his next step, the Medicine King that was

hiding within the Guardian Formation suddenly came out of the ground.

The Medicine King's movements naturally attracted Tan Taixue's attention. So, she too couldn't help casting her gaze at the medicinal plant.

However, when it saw Tan Taixue's gaze, it even dared to wave its leaves, doing a provocative action towards her. Then, it burrowed back into the ground, and returned to the Guardian Formation.

"It is truly looking to die!" The medicinal plant's action successfully attracted Tan Taixue's fury. With a slight tremble of her body, she disappeared.

boom Coincident with her disappearance, an explosion came from underground. It was caused by Tan Taixue. She had invisibly entered the ground and was deactivating the Guardian Formation.

Shortly after the explosion, Tan Taixue once again appeared above the mountain peak. Moreover, there was an extra plant in her hand—it was the Medicine King.

Tan Taixue's Wall Passing Technique was too powerful; it was even stronger than the Third Immortal's. She was able to pass through soil without even making any sound.

But, at that very instant, Chu Feng didn't have the mind to notice such a thing because his gaze was already completely attracted by the intangible change on the peak.

He was staring at a place—a wall near the bottom of the mountain peak. It appeared very normal, but in reality, it was an entrance. Moreover, that entrance had already been opened.

"Success, finally! I've waited for long, so many unexpected things happened, but at last, the Guardian Formation has been deactivated!"

Chu Feng was elated at that moment. Not only was the Guardian Formation deactivated by Tan Taixue, the entrance Chu Feng predicted had completely opened as well. So long as Chu Feng entered, he would find the Sacred Entity hidden within.

Chu Feng didn't stand in the sky anymore. He carefully shifted forward towards the entrance.

Even though the concealment techniques Chu Feng used right now required a great deal of time for careful setup, when facing such an incomprehensible expert like Tan Taixue, he didn't dare to be careless in any way. Instead, he moved slowly to the bottom of the peak from high in the air.

That required half a day...

When Chu Feng reached the bottom part of the peak, it was already midnight.

At the apex of the peak, golden radiance still endlessly appeared. Tan Taixue did not rest yet. Instead, she was continuing her harvest, enjoying this fun task.

As for Chu Feng, he was extremely excited. He had already passed through that wall and entered a cave.

In the instant he entered, Chu Feng's heart was rapidly beating. He could feel an unspeakable aura that filled the entire cave. The emitter of such aura was pushing him forward, deeper into the cave.

Finally, Chu Feng reached the place with the strongest aura. This was a very narrow end of the cave, and there was a strange rock here. The aura that made Chu Feng's body feel extremely comfortable came from that rock.

It was too beautiful. Although it was a rock, its shape resembled more a tree. It was very similar to a willow tree; no wonder its Guardian Formation—its strongest attack—was several branches.

Quite obviously though, the rock was not a tree because the power it contained had told Chu Feng of its identity—it was the Sacred Entity.

"I've finally found you." There was no need to even mention the joy Chu Feng felt. His merry smile was uncontrollably revealed on his face. He could truly not wipe away his grin.

Despite very happy, Chu Feng knew the current circumstances very well. So, he didn't examine it and instead, quickly used a Spirit Formation to sever its connection with the peak.

The Sacred Entity was grown within the peak. The peak was akin to its mother—there was a connection between the two. Only by cutting that connection could it be taken away, and after doing so, the peak would also lose its special power.

After severing the link between the oddity and the peak, just in case, Chu Feng laid a simple formation which wrapped around this Sacred Entity. Only then did he put it into his Cosmos Sack and slipped away.

At that moment, Tan Taixue, who was still at the apex of the mountain peak, was completely focused on harvesting medicinal plants. Naturally, she didn't notice Chu Feng's actions.

And when Chu Feng felt he had escaped Tan Taixue's range of detection, he hurriedly used the Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, and went onto the path he used to enter, and quickly escaped.

As for whether there were other treasures in the Burning Heaven Church, Chu Feng didn't even bother checking. With Tan Taixue, such a horrifying existence, Chu Feng was also afraid there would be any unexpected situations. So, he knew when to stop—right now.

As for the Third Immortal, Chu Feng was not too worried about him. He felt that the Third Immortal was already like a bird frightened by the sound of a released bow. After escaping, he was definitely heading towards a safe place to heal himself. He would not dare to stay here for long.

And since the Third Immortal himself had left, he naturally wouldn't send other experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago to commit suicide here. As such, Chu Feng felt now was the best time to leave this place. Otherwise, if the Immortal Execution Archipelago had come later on, that wouldn't be good at all.

Chu Feng's expectations were the same as reality. After Chu Feng went through the Arctic Killing Formation and returned to the Winter Plains,

he hadn't seen any person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and thus he safely left this disastrous area.

However, shortly after Chu Feng left, the multitudinous medicinal plants on the mountain peak started to wilt. Nearly all of the ones not harvested yet died in a blink.

"Why has this happened?"

Such a sudden changed made Tan Taixue's expression change greatly. She felt she was in a daze, and didn't know what to do.

Chapter 862: Rushing to Become a Martial Lord

As Tan Taixue stood atop the peak, she didn't move. As she looked at the medicinal plants that were originally swirling with light, yet now wilted and died, she contemplated for a good while.

Suddenly, it seemed that she thought of something. She flipped her palm, and a special World Spirit Compass appeared within her hand. She willed her boundless Spirit power outward, then she flew into the air.

She carefully examined every single inch of that peak as she circled around it. She aimed to get to the bottom of this.

Finally, when she arrived at the wall entrance, she stopped.

After seriously looking at it, her body couldn't help but tremble. She cried out with an extremely joyful tone, "I didn't expect this to be a place of growth for a Sacred Entity! No wonder that killing formation was so strange."

After discovering the secret in this place, she was elated. She took a big step forward and passed through the wall, entering the narrow cave. However, when she arrived at the deepest part of the cave, as if petrified, she was frozen instantly on the spot.

She did not see the thing she expected. However, that thing had, truly, appeared here. It was just that all the evidence pointed her towards one answer: she had come late.

Looking at the empty end of the cave, at the already severed link, and feeling the remnants of the special aura, an immense bloodlust exploded from her body. She coldly shouted, "Who? Who did this?!"

After she shouted, the entire world shook. The mountain peak which extended into the clouds fragmented with a boom.

Moreover, the aura full of bloodlust had spread out. Everything it passed was shattered. It was very frightening.

However, Chu Feng simply couldn't hear such a furious roar and such horrifying bloodlust, nor could he feel it.

At that moment, Chu Feng was still at the Winter Plains. He came to a rather remote area, and hid within thick layers of ice. He truly couldn't help himself from refining the Sacred Entity.

"No wonder the Burning Heaven Church didn't bring this Sacred Entity away even though they could have.

"This Sacred Entity does have a tiny bit of spiritual nature. If it continued its growth, after some number of years, perhaps even it could develop intelligence and become a Spiritual Being. At that time, its power would even be above typical Spiritual Beings.

"In addition, the energy in this Sacred Entity is too violent. Normal people simply cannot refine it. Other than using it to grow medicinal plants, it truly isn't useful for anything else.

"The Burning Heaven Church must have felt it'd be useless to bring it with them. So, it was just better to leave it in the peak and leave it up to grow on its own." Chu Feng discovered its specialness after examining the Sacred Entity.

"The Burning Heaven Church teaches kindness to others. That's why they left this Sacred Entity here.

"However, if it were the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they wouldn't have been as kind as that. From how they do things, what they cannot obtain, others shouldn't even think of obtaining either. They would rather destroy this Sacred Entity than keep it there and let it grow," Eggy said.

"Of course. If I couldn't refine this and if it weren't so useful to me, I wouldn't have cut off its future. After all, it does have a bit of a spiritual nature. After some number of years, perhaps it too will be a life." Chu Feng nodded, expressing his agreement with Eggy thoughts.

"Chu Feng, although this Sacred Entity has been in growth for quite a while, and the energy contained within is extremely violent, since it had bred so many medicinal plants for so many years, the natural energy

inside has been exhausted quite a bit. It's not too powerful right now. Do you think it can help you make a breakthrough, and let you become a Martial Lord?" Eggy asked.

"I don't know either because the lightning beasts in my body are having bigger and bigger appetites. I don't even know how many cultivation resources they need to help me make a breakthrough.

"But no matter what, this Sacred Entity will help me greatly. We will know the result when I refine it." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and without waiting for any more words, he overlaid his hands and cast a special spell. A golden Refining Formation enveloped the Sacred Entity.

hmm After the activation of the formation, the outside layer of the Sacred Entity started becoming illusory. Strands of faint entities of light kept on drilling out from the Sacred Entity. Like little snakes, they swirled around the Sacred Entity.

However, the seemingly very soft light bodies were very horrifying. After they appeared, the areas they passed made black cracks appear—they were tearing the fabrics of space.

The energy contained within the Sacred Entity was extremely violent. However, right now, they were being shaved off bit by bit by Chu Feng with the Spirit Formation.

Once a small amount of energy was released, Chu Feng opened his mouth and a boundless suction power surged forth. He started absorbing the energy into his stomach and started the refining.

If it were a normal person, that was something simply unimaginable because the energy within the Sacred Entity was really too terrifying. If a normal person had absorbed it like Chu Feng, likely only a single strand would completely destroy their body.

However, Chu Feng was able to. Not only absorb it, but truly refine it. He didn't even waste a single speck as he converted the violent energy into energy that could increase his cultivation, after which he refined it.

In a situation like that, Chu Feng's cultivation that had stood in place

for a long time started growing rapidly. The several lightning beasts within his dantian, silent for quite some time, started moving as well. They greedily engulfed the energy procured from the Sacred Entity.

The Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's dantian was very powerful. Even though there were already three that entered his bloodstream, it did not diminish the rate of consumption nor the speed of refining.

Even though the Sacred Entity had very berserk energy, to them, it was no more than a tasty dish.

Just like that, as Chu Feng expected, the Sacred Entity that could not be refined was being broken down by the Spirit Formation, then refined in his dantian.

Chu Feng's Spirit Formation technique was still limited. Even though his Divine Lightning's speed of refining was very quick, his speed of breaking down the Sacred Entity could not match it. So, Chu Feng only roughly finished refining the Sacred Entity after several days.

At that moment, not only half a fist's size remained of that Sacred Entity. Its initial appearance of a willow tree, due to refining, left only several branches.

As for Chu Feng's aura, it had increased several times in strength. That feeling was one of nearing a Martial Lord infinitely. With one more step, he could step past the Heaven realm and become a Martial Lord.

A true, genuine, Martial Lord.

Chapter 863: Divine Lightning Shooting into the Sky

BOOM— Finally, a horrifying explosion burst within Chu Feng's dantian.

It was a very strange sound. More deafening than thunder, more moving than a tiger's roar, mightier than a dragon's howl... However, others could not hear that sound. Only Chu Feng alone could.

At the same time of the explosion, Chu Feng's aura rapidly rose. It was extremely quick, and it was simply shocking.

Simultaneously, with Chu Feng as the center, Martial power within several thousand miles, as if they were summoned, started quickly surging towards Chu Feng's body and gathering around it.

At that instant, his aura was clearly different from before. There was a change in essence—this was true power.

He had made a breakthrough. Before the Sacred Entity had even been completely refined, Chu Feng's cultivation had rose. He had successfully surpassed the Heaven realm, and became a Martial Lord. He had truly become a Martial Lord.

Martial Lord—how many people worked for their entire life yet could not even touch this level and could only admire those who were able to? It was a realm seen as godlike in many people's eyes.

But Chu Feng, before the age of twenty, had entered such a realm. That was definitely quite an achievement.

At least, within the Eastern Sea Region, and to those in the eastern continents, only very few geniuses could accomplish such a feat.

Even though he was only a rank one Martial Lord, that was before Chu Feng used the power of the Divine Lightning. Now, this cultivation was one that belonged to Chu Feng himself—it was his real cultivation.

"Haha, success! I've finally succeeded! I've finally become an actual

Martial Lord!" Chu Feng was elated and excited. His expression could not be represented by words.

Although Chu Feng hadn't really used too much time to become a Martial Lord from the Heaven realm, the price he paid was very hefty. It was something a normal person could not afford.

Although there was a portion of luck in today's success, it could not be denied that Chu Feng had exchanged his hard work for that success.

"Crap, this feeling!" However, just as Chu Feng felt elated, his complexion suddenly changed greatly. An unprecedented fear emerged in his eyes.

Chu Feng discovered with astonishment that when he became a Martial Lord, a strand of red lightning had surged out of his dantian, rapidly moving about in his body.

Typically, that was something normal and Chu Feng should be happy. After all, as long as Chu Feng passed a huge realm, he was able to obtain the power of a single lightning and freely use it for himself.

However, right now, it was a bit different. The red lightning, as it surged within his body, didn't meld into his blood at all and give a feeling of union. Instead, it wanted to rush out of his body. The lightning wanted to break out, and leave the shackles of Chu Feng's physical body.

Most important though, it was not only the red lightning that wanted to rush out. The gold, blue, and purple ones that had already merged with Chu Feng's blood also wanted to rush out. They restless surged with the red lightning; they were all attempting to leave Chu Feng's body.

How could Chu Feng remain calm?!

Due to the restriction of the Divine Lightning, to make a single level of breakthrough required Chu Feng to pay a price several times of others. That made Chu Feng's outstanding comprehension strength useless. As such, he had to gather sufficient cultivation resources in order to raise his cultivation.

But, unquestionably, for all disadvantages there were advantages.

Although the Divine Lightning increased Chu Feng's difficult in making breakthroughs, it gave him fighting strength that surpassed others. Moreover, the Divine Lightnings were truly very strong—unimaginably strong.

Right now, there were four lightnings that wanted to break out of his body and leave Chu Feng. No one knew if that was fortune or disaster, something of joy or of sorrow.

However, what was fated to happen would happen eventually. There were some things that Chu Feng could not stop, nor change. And for the Divine Lightning in Chu Feng's body, he could not control them either.

bzzzz...

Finally, from Chu Feng's body, a burst of lightning surged out. They—gold, blue, purple, and red—shot out from Chu Feng's body, pierced through the layers of chilling ice, straight into the sky.

In an instant, the initially pitch-black sky was taken over by the four colours of lightning. The rays of light illuminated everything, nearly enveloping the entire Winter Plains.

aoo—

Most importantly, after the four lightnings appeared in the sky, they became four huge beasts of varying shapes. They went through the clouds, above the Nine Heavens, and started darting. They let out deafening roared, shocking the world, stunning everyone.

"Heavens! What is that?"

"It's so scary! It looks like lightning, but why has so much lightning appeared? There are even four colours!"

"Don't be foolish. How can lightning make such a horrifying noise? They are clearly four huge beasts. Four huge beasts of lightning, so unimaginably powerful."

Even though it was already deep in the night, the lightning that suddenly engulfed the entire Winter Plains, and the deafening roars, woke

everyone up.

When they walked out of their houses, and looked at the sky, every single one of them was shocked. They were dumbfounded by the scene in the sky.

After feeling shock, the first emotion they felt afterwards was endless fear.

The four lightning beasts in the sky were truly too terrifying. No matter their shape, or their roars, both did not belong this world. Moreover, their power, inestimably powerful, told them a fact.

It was that no matter what occupied the sky, it was not something kind. If they decided to attack, then everyone living in the Winter Plains would die—no doubt. Likely, the vast Winter Plains itself would be completely destroyed.

At that instant, not to mention young children who were wailing from fear, even adult cultivators cried out in alarm.

In a split moment, the Winter Plains was flooded by panic. Most people could not continue looking at the scene in the sky, and even more people chose places to hide themselves in order to avoid such a calamity.

There were even some people who ignored their children, ignored their family, and flew up towards the Teleportation Array. They wanted to quickly leave this soon-to-be disaster zone.

At the same time, another person within the chilly icy mountain range was attracted by the scene in the sky.

She wore a conical hat, and had a snow-white long dress. It matched quite well with the surrounding ice and snow, as if she were an elf that walked amongst the snow and ice. As she stood in the night sky, she appeared rather beautiful. She was Tan Taixue.

“What a frightening phenomenon. However, this does not look like a premonition of a certain special body’s descent. It seems more like one that has appeared because of a breakthrough in cultivation.” However, in contrast with the fear of others, Tan Taixue was very calm. So calm it was

even a bit terrifying.

Chapter 864: Rank Five Martial Lord

"Hoh, this is truly interesting. I didn't think there would be a person with such strength in a desolate place like this. It seems that I've truly underestimated the people here." After observing for quite a while, Tan Taixue suddenly laughed. However, her laughter was very strange.

One could tell she was not afraid of the four terrifying lightning beasts in the sky, but instead felt surprise and shock by its appearance. The person who evoked such a phenomenon to occur had made the horrifying woman overturn her prior disdainful perspective. She even wanted to see the person.

As for the one who made such a scene appear, he was still hiding deep beneath the layers of ice.

However, Chu Feng, at that moment, was no longer alarmed. Instead, there was even a bit of joy on his face.

He discovered even though the four lightning had left his body, the connection between them still remained. He didn't need to leave this place yet could see everything in the sky. He could even see some things he otherwise wouldn't have.

When Chu Feng closed his eyes, his vision was the exact same as the four lightning beasts' in the sky.

He could see that they were very high up. It was a distance incalculable from the ground surface, and they were simply about to enter the stars. It wasn't a height reachable by a Martial King.

Right now, the four lightning beasts were running around the stars. They loudly roared. They were boasting of their strength. They wanted to let everyone know their power.

They were displaying their might!

aoo—

Suddenly, they made yet another roar, then flew down. From the sky, they rushed straight towards the Winter Plains.

When many of the people on the Winter Plains saw such a scene, their expressions changed greatly from fear. There were even some who just went limp and couldn't move anymore.

And, there were even some who became incontinent. There were also quite a few who just fainted from terror.

They could feel a true destructive aura descending from the sky, and it was impossible for them to survive from such an aura.

whoosh The four lightning beasts went through the clouds, and when they all saw that, they felt a calamity had arrived.

However, the beasts suddenly disappeared. The night sky illuminated as bright as day instantly returned to darkness. It returned to its former tranquility, as if the four lightning beasts had never appeared.

"What happened? Where did the lightning go?" Due to such an abrupt situation, the crowd first looked at each other, then looked around. They didn't know what happened.

As they all felt confusion, Chu Feng, sitting cross-legged underground, suddenly opened his eyes.

bzz

When he widened his eyes, radiance shone everywhere. In his eyes were the four lightning coiled—they had returned to his body.

Moreover, at that very instant, the four lightning were changing within Chu Feng's body. They were merging with him; not only into his blood, but also into his bones, organs, meridians... They were truly, absolutely, merging with Chu Feng.

During the merge, Chu Feng's cultivation rose once again. Rank one, rank two, rank three, rank four, rank five. Chu Feng's cultivation had soared immensely, and he became rank five Martial Lord.

However, such a climb had also stopped at rank five Martial Lord. At the same time, the lightning that surged within Chu Feng's eyes disappeared.

However, at that instant, Chu Feng felt elated because the four lightning had thoroughly fused with his body. The sudden rise in four ranks of cultivation was brought by the four lightning.

"Haha, has it finally approved of you, and have they completely become one with you?

"You've made a breakthrough straight to a rank five Martial Lord! That is quite unexpected." Eggy was incomparable excited. She was skipping and jumping in the World Spirit Space, and she was simply even happier than Chu Feng himself, as though the one who received such a great benefit was her.

He had become a rank five Martial Lord straight away, and it was also different from before.

At first, Chu Feng was only able to raise his cultivation by using the power of the Divine Lightning. Now, however, it was different. The lightning had fused completely with Chu Feng, and his current cultivation—a rank five Martial Lord's—was entirely his.

"That's not all. These four lightning hadn't only given their cultivation strength to me." Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He had simply reached the extremes of joy.

"Chu Feng, what do you mean? Have you gained something else?" Eggy asked curiously.

"Heh, come out. I'll show you." Chu Feng chuckled, then opened the World Spirit Gate. Eggy also leapt out.

"Quick quick quick! Let me see what you've also gotten!" said Eggy impatiently. There was even a glint of expectation reflecting upon her beautiful eyes. From that, one could tell how much the queen wished for Chu Feng to become even stronger.

"The four lightning have completely merged with me, causing my cultivation to rise greatly. However, in reality, even if they didn't, I could have still controlled them, which would have still raised my cultivation.

"The only difference between the two is that back then, although the

lightning were in my blood, it was still external power in the end. Even though I could raise my cultivation with them, strictly speaking, it was not my actual cultivation.

"But right now, they have completely merged with me. The power they bring me is always surging within my body. Right now, rank five Martial Lord is my true cultivation.

"Despite a seeming lack of difference on the surface, the essence is completely different. That being said, however, the beneficial effect I gain is the same nonetheless.

"It didn't matter if the four lightning became one with me or not. As long as they remain within myself, I can still acquire the power of a rank five Martial Lord.

"So, the reason I'm so happy is because in the instant they returned to my body and merged completely with me, I have received an entirely new power from the four lightning. Furthermore, I can control this power myself.

"The nine Divine Lightning have been in my body for so long, but this is the first time feeling I've truly grasped some of their power," Chu Feng said with a smile. The excited expression on his face became stronger and stronger.

"Ahh, you! You think I wouldn't know this?

"What I want to know right now is what you've received. What did you get from that Divine Lightning? Quickly show me!" Eggy stamped her feet. If Chu Feng still remained silent, then she really would jump over and bite him.

Chapter 865: Lightning Armour

"Heh, my queen, watch carefully because this is the first time ever that I'm truly able to employ the power from the Divine Lightning."

Chu Feng lightly smiled, then his eyes became fierce. With a crackling noise, the sound of interweaving lightning, the four colours reappeared within Chu Feng's eyes.

But that was merely the beginning. The four lightning not only appeared within Chu Feng's eyes, they burst out from Chu Feng's body. In an instant, countless lightning snakes gushed out of his body, through his robe, and covered his entire body.

At that very instant, Chu Feng was tightly wrapped by the four-coloured and different-natured lightning, becoming a lightning person with shining radiance.

The overbearing helmet, armour, and boots were all constructed by lightning.

They not only shone with brilliance, patterns resembling lightning were on his body. It was quite a domineering appearance.

Most importantly, when Chu Feng wore the lightning armour on his body, his cultivation rose again. He became a rank six Martial Lord.

His strength was not the only thing raised. The atmosphere he had surrounding him became completely different. At that very instant, he exuded a slightly frightful aura—fright only produced by the Divine Lightning in his body.

It was that powerful aura which did not belong to this world.

"Waa, you can even raise your cultivation by using the Divine Lightning's power! Not only your cultivation, but also your strength! Chu Feng, you've truly become strong!"

Eggy was very surprised because she found out Chu Feng hadn't just become a rank six Martial Lord, his fighting strength had also been raised. Right now, he was just as powerful as when he held a Royal

Armament before!

Which also meant Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, had no problem defeating typical rank nine Martial Lords. If he had the Royal Armament, then his fighting strength would be even greater. Even if he couldn't defeat a Martial King, he could at least escape from one.

Chu Feng's breakthrough this time had truly gave him a leap in his essential strength. If he were to encounter Murong Xun again, Chu Feng would not fear him at all.

One could even say within the Eastern Sea Region, other than the horrifying woman Tan Taixue, there were no Martial Lords who could defeat Chu Feng.

"Eggy, you're right. This Divine Lighting truly has exceeded my imagination. I've only understood just a tiny portion of it, yet I feel completely different from before. It's as if I'm an entirely new person! In the future, if I can completely grasp this power...

"Heh, I look forward to that!" The Chu Feng's lips curled to form a hint of a yearning smile.

"You and this Divine Lightning are already one. It means it has approved of you. As long as you continue your development, the remaining five Divine Lightning will sooner or later be yours.

"However, right now, you should return to the Misty Peak quickly.

"First of all, you fiancée is still waiting for this main component. Second of all, due to your cultivation right now, it's time to cultivate the Earthen Taboo martial skill, the Firmament Slash," Eggy reminded.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, but he made an odd smile as he said, "However, before leaving, there's a place I still have to visit."

"Heh, if I'm not mistaken, you want to head over to the Stone Sword Sect, right?" she said with a slight giggle.

"Mm. Although reasonably speaking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect

is most definitely dead, since his Stone Sword Sect dared to attack the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I cannot let them continue living peacefully. I must kill one to warn a hundred, and let the world know the result of making an enemy out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Otherwise, there will be more and more powers that ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago in order to fight the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That wouldn't be good at all," Chu Feng said.

"That's fine. Then let's head there and use this little sect to test your current abilities." Eggy's face was one of expectation. She really wanted to see how powerful Chu Feng had become.

whoosh After deciding, Chu Feng leapt up, through the ice, and flew towards the Stone Sword Sect.

The Stone Sword Sect existed within the Winter Plains. Although it wasn't the strongest sect, it could be counted as one of the peak existences.

Right now, it was already deep into the night, but the Stone Sword Sect was very brightly lit up. There were singing and dancing, and in the plaza, several tens of thousands of people had gathered and drank together. That was quite a grand sight to behold.

Moreover, there were not only people from the Stone Sword Sect. The peak forces and characters of the Winter Plains were all there.

The reason so many people were celebrating with toasts and still hadn't left despite the night was all due to the head of the Stone Sword Sect, Shi Jingtian.

He was saved by the Third Immortal back then. Not only did he keep his life, he even brought with him the chance to lead the Stone Sword Sect into the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, due to the battle with Chu Feng, the Stone Sword Sect had heavy losses. Not only were their most powerful elders and disciples sacrificed, even the six supreme elders were killed by Chu Feng. At present, the Stone Sword Sect truly lost a great deal of its spirit. It was far

inferior to before, and even other than the head of the Stone Sword Sect, there wasn't really a single true expert.

In order to hold a certain position after entering the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the head of the Stone Sword Sect, with the name of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, invited all peak forces and characters in the Winter Plains to ally with his Stone Sword Sect, and join the Immortal Execution Archipelago together.

Although this alliance sounded good on the surface, it was, in reality, engulfing other powers. No matter which sect or school, there was none that was willing. However, due to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it didn't matter how unwilling they were. They did not dare to refuse. They could only accept the terms and choose to ally with the Stone Sword Sect.

In order to express his sincerity, the head of the Stone Sword Sect even hosted an alliance assembly.

Today was the third day of this assembly, and also the last day. After tonight, the head of the Stone Sword Sect would lead the many experts forth to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They would, from then on, set up at the Immortal Execution Archipelago and leave the Winter Plains.

"Everyone, what do you think about the four lightning beasts in the sky just now? Was that a sight due to the arrival of a Divine body?"

In the middle of the plaza at the Stone Sword Sect, there was a huge palace. At the peak of this palace, there was a very bountiful banquet.

Those who were at that banquet were the most famous people in the Winter Plains. The head of the Stone Sword Sect was also there, and now, they were discussing the phenomenon Chu Feng stirred up just now.

Although the Stone Sword Sect had returned to its joyous scene of singing and dancing, the frightening sight before still remained within their minds. Even though the sight had disappeared, their hearts could not remain calm.

Chapter 866: Unworthy of a Mention

"It's unlikely something caused by the Divine Body. I've heard when Zi Ling of the Zi family was born, there was indeed a phenomenon that had appeared. Moreover, many people had seen that. Although it was frightening, it was not as horrifying as today's."

"Yeah! I've also heard that the phenomenon of a Divine Body is only an omen of the arrival of a Divine Body. Although it appears powerful, it would not terrify others like the one just now, nor create an illusion of a disaster.

"On the other hand, the strange lightning before was completely different. Not only was it frightening, its horrifying aura seemed as though it would destroy this world! I truly do feel quite some fear when recalling it."

Those famous people of the Winter Plains still had some cold sweat on their faces. They were endlessly recalling the previous scene before. If it weren't for the head of the Stone Sword Sect who forbade them from leaving, it was likely they would have all flown away and escaped for their lives when the lightning appeared.

To them, the lightning was really too horrifying. So horrifying they could not control their fear, and could not resist.

So, even though the lightning beasts were gone, they could not retain a calm heart because they didn't know whether it would reappear, and whether they would be able to survive if it did.

In reality, that uneasiness had spread throughout the entire Stone Sword Sect. If the peak characters from various forces were in such fear, then naturally, the young ones, the disciples, felt terror.

"Everyone, if the thing before wasn't an omen of a Divine Body, then what do you think it is?"

Finally, the head of the Stone Sword Sect who had been in silent spoke with a smile. He appeared rather calm, in contrast with the others.

However, no one knew this calmness was forced out by him. Since the crowd were so frightened, he had to soothe their emotions, and since he had to soothe their emotions, he would have to soothe his own first. Thus, he had to pretend to be very calm, and only then could he convince everyone else.

“Sect Head Shi, do you think the scene before truly represented the arrival of a Divine Body? Wouldn’t that mean on the Winter Plains, there is a new Divine Body?

“However, if that were really an omen of a Divine Body, then in the end, there should be an indication telling everyone where it had appeared.

“From what I know, the Divine Body of the Zi family had such an indication. Everyone could see the descent of the huge purple bell in the sky, which quickly became a purple stream of light and swirled above the Zi family. After quite a while, it landed into the Zi family, and only then did Zi Ling appear.

“Yet, the frightening lightning just now was not like that. When it appeared, it was as if it were going to destroy everything. Although it still disappeared, it was a very strange disappearance. No one knows where it went.” However, there was someone who expressed suspicion to the sect head’s words.

It was a short monk as thin as a match. He was very old, and not only was his skin full of wrinkles and marks, they were very loose, as though they were detached from flesh. He was simply like a dead person already in a coffin.

He was a rank seven Martial Lord, and his cultivation was not inferior to the sect head’s. He too was a famous person in the Winter Plains, named Monk Pingjing.1

“Sir Pingjing’s words are reasonable.” After hearing that monk’s words, the crowd nodded, expressing agreement.

Seeing there was someone speaking against him, the head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his brows. He felt quite displeased, but didn’t know how to defend himself. As such, he could only cast his gaze at the

black-haired old man by his side.

That black-haired old man was not a simple person at all. He was not only a rank eight Martial Lord, he was even sitting on the main seat in the banquet. Moreover, the clothes he wore made everyone feel both respect and fear, because he was a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Many of the peak characters in the Winter Plains had gathered here for that person, not really for the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

“Who made the rule that the omen for the arrival of a Divine Body couldn’t contain deterrence?

“And who made the rule that the arrival of a Divine Body demanded an announcement to the world which family it would appear in?” The black-haired old man calmly spoke, but his serene words were full of threat.

“Eh...”

“This...”

After he spoke, the crowd was speechless. No one dared to argue whether the lightning was an omen of a Divine Body. Not because they didn’t know how, but because they didn’t dare.

“Haha, Lord Yan is correct. It’s most likely a Divine Body, otherwise how could something like that suddenly appear?

“But so what if it’s a Divine Body? A Divine Body did appear at that Zi family, but other than a beautiful complexion, she had no accomplishments in cultivation.

“So, legends will only be legends. Even if it truly appears, it may not be as powerful as rumoured.” After a short moment in silence, there was someone who added on, agreeing with that Lord Yan’s perspective. It was quite a well-done bootlicking.

“Yeah! Not to mention the Divine Body isn’t as powerful as the legends, even if it were, so what? Right now, it’s said the most powerful genius is Chu Feng in the Eastern Sea Region. He is indeed quite shocking and

grasps many legendary techniques.

"Yet, back then, wasn't he still driven away by Sect Head Shi? Even an exceptional genius will be no match in front of a true expert." More and more people started joining in. They used Chu Feng's escape due to Shi Jingtian as an example to insult the title of "genius".

"That's right, that's right! I've also heard of that, but regretfully, I wasn't able to personally see it. Sect Head Shi, how about you tell us what happened back then?"

"Right right right! Sect Head Shi, quickly tell us whether that genius was as powerful as the rumours, and how he was beaten away like a dog by you!"

At that moment, the crowd's tense emotions started to be relieved. They, who did not know the truth, actually took Chu Feng as a joke. They even asked the head of the Stone Sword Sect to narrate Chu Feng's disgraceful scene.

As he heard their words, the head of the Stone Sword Sect first drank a cup of wine, then wiped his mouth before proudly smiling and saying with a wave of his hand, "That Chu Feng was no match for me. He's unworthy of a mention."

"Unworthy of a mention, or too embarrassed to mention?

"You're afraid of telling the truth and being laughed at everyone here, right?" But just at that moment, a voice filled with mocking rang out from the disciples below. It shocked everyone.

"Insolence! Who dares to be so audacious and speak such nonsense?!" The head of the Stone Sword Sect was enraged when he heard that. He violently slammed the table, then stood up and loudly questioned as he pointed at a certain location in the plaza.

Seeing that, many disciples changed their expressions greatly from the fright. Their bodies trembled, and all of them drew some distance from the person who spoke, greatly afraid they would be affected by that fearless person. They wanted to rid themselves of fault.

In a situation like that, the densely packed plaza very soon became empty. Only a single person remaining standing there.

It was a young man. He was not only fearless, he even had a smile on his face. He was smiling and looking at the head of the Stone Sword Sect who stood at the peak of the palace, and said, “Old bastard, I didn’t expect you were still alive.”

*

1. Pingjing = calm.

Chapter 867: Chu Feng's Attack

"Chu Feng? It's Chu Feng!" After they saw his person, everyone was shocked.

The famous people within the peak of the palace all stood up, as if they were facing a huge enemy. The disciples on the plaza all rose into the air, quickly backing away, creating some distance.

At present, his name was too ferocious. And, since everyone here was a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were enemies to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, to them, Chu Feng was definitely an extremely dangerous person.

However, at that instant, the person who felt the most alarmed was none other than the head of the Stone Sword Sect. He was the only person here who had seen Chu Feng's strength and techniques.

He knew very well what sort of person he was. Not only was his strength unbelievably strong, as a person, he was ruthless and cruel. He would never forget how Chu Feng and Eggy tortured him when he was receiving the backlash of the Forbidden Medicine.

If the Third Immortal hadn't arrived, who knew how much more pain he would have felt.

So, when he saw Chu Feng again, he felt very afraid. His fear towards Chu Feng was already imbued into his bones.

But, no matter how afraid he was, he could not display any of it, and when he thought of the Third Immortal's subordinate, Lord Yan, he felt quite a bit more at ease.

So, the head of the Stone Sword Sect coldly snorted, and said domineeringly, "Chu Feng, you truly have quite the nerves! Back then, I spared your life, yet you still dare to stir up trouble in my Stone Sword Sect? Do you truly think I won't kill you?"

"Haha, what a joke! Spared my life? You are quite shameless.

"Have you forgotten the torture you felt back then in the Arctic Killing

Formation?" Chu Feng laughed loudly. His laughter was very ridiculing.

"What? Arctic Killing Formation? Torture? What happened?" The crowd was taken aback by those words. As they looked at each other, they felt confused. Then, they cast their gazes, pleading for answers, at the head of the Stone Sword Sect, asking, "Sect Head Shi, what does that Chu Feng mean?"

"Don't listen to his rubbish! When have I been tortured by him?" The head of the Stone Sword Sect had quite an unsightly face as he heard the crowd's question. But, he still refuted Chu Feng's accusation. He couldn't, after all, admit that he was nearly killed by Chu Feng's torture in the Arctic Killing Formation, right?

He was planning to rule over the people here! If he admitted to such a thing, where would his face go? Where would his dignity go? So, even if he were beaten to death, he would not speak the truth.

"That's right! Back then, I had personally seen Sect Head Shi chase after Chu Feng as he was escaping. I didn't think he would dare to so brazenly claim he tortured Sect Head Shi in the Arctic Killing Formation!

"Sect Head Shi, this person doesn't want any face, so there's no need to give him any mercy! Just do the same before and give him a good lesson!" someone shouted suddenly.

"That's right! He's right! This Chu Feng killed the Stone Sword Sect's six seniors! That is a capital offense! Sect Head Shi, you don't need to be kindhearted and spare him. You must kill him and avenge your six elders!" At that moment, even more people spoke.

"Kill him, kill him!"

The recollection of the six supreme elders being killed incited the fury of the elders and disciples from the Stone Sword Sect. In an instant, various shouts exploded and like thunder, resounded within the Stone Sword Sect.

"This..."

At that instant, the head of the Stone Sword Sect tightly furrowed his

brows. He felt his heart beating as though his heart were a drum. He knew very well he could not defeat Chu Feng.

"What's wrong? Without Forbidden Medicine, you're afraid?

"Or perhaps, you know you're no match for me, yet you're afraid of your lies being revealed, thus you don't dare to fight me?" Just at that moment, Chu Feng calmly smiled and spoke with ridicule.

"Nonsense! You think I'm afraid of you?" Although he was indeed afraid of Chu Feng, his words still enraged the head of the Stone Sword Sect. Chu Feng was humiliating him in front of the many elders and disciples of the Stone Sword Sect, as well as all peak experts in the Winter Plains

If he didn't counterattack, it would mean he admitted Chu Feng's words to be fact. It would be akin to using his face to sweep the ground! He wouldn't hold any more power then.

Amidst his helplessness, he cast his gaze at Lord Yan behind him.

Seeming to understand what he was worried about, Lord Yan calmly smiled and sent a mental message to him. "Go. With me here, I won't give him any chance to humiliate you."

After Lord Yan spoke, the head of the Stone Sword Sect rejoiced. Although Chu Feng's fighting strength was quite powerful and he had a Royal Armament, he knew Chu Feng wasn't so strong as to defeat a rank eight Martial Lord. If Lord Yan made his move, Chu Feng was undoubtedly dead.

With Lord Yan supporting him, the head of the Stone Sword Sect wasn't as afraid as before.

But, just in case, he still said, "Chu Feng, the reason you're so arrogant is only because of you have a Royal Armament. If you don't, do you think you're worth anything?"

"Hoh, it seems that you're just afraid I will use this Royal Armament. No problem, I'll satisfy your wish. I won't use the Royal Armament.

"Come, I don't need a Royal Armament to litter the ground with your

teeth and make you into a cripple," Chu Feng said confidently.

"Quite the words you have there! Today, I'll show you the distance between us!"

The head of the Stone Sword Sect gained much more confidence seeing Chu Feng truly didn't plan to use his Royal Armament. He leapt into the air, and soon after, with his palms waving about, bursts of violent Martial power surged forth. They became glowing huge hands which slammed down at Chu Feng like a meteor shower.

It was a rank eight martial skill, and its power was very frightening. As such, one could see that the head of the Stone Sword Sect truly feared Chu Feng. Even though he didn't use a Royal Armament, that didn't mean the sect head could be careless. His first attack was a killing blow.

However, against all expectations, Chu Feng stood on the spot and didn't even move while such a horrifying attack came towards him.

"What is that Chu Feng doing? He's not attacking, nor is he dodging! Is he looking to die?" Chu Feng's action spread bewilderment amongst the crowd. All of their eyes glittered as they were clueless to Chu Feng's action.

boom boom boom boom boom

Amidst the confusion, the sect head's attack had struck their target. In an instant, not only did shock waves burst outward, explosions endlessly rang out. The plaza Chu Feng stood in was being bombarded. The ground was even violently shaking.

Seeing the chaos stirred up by the horrifying shock waves, everyone revealed joyous expressions because the sect head's attacks were very terrifying. Very few people on scene could block them.

Yet, such a powerful martial skill had blown on Chu Feng's body. Regardless of Chu Feng's strength, he was most likely dead—that was everyone's feelings.

huuu—

But just at that moment, a gale suddenly swept out and instantly blew away the turbulent shock waves. At the same time, Chu Feng once again appeared within the crowd's line of sight.

"Heavens! This... How is this possible?!"

After seeing Chu Feng, everyone was dumbfounded. A single word was written across their faces: astonishment. There were even some cowardly people who backed away, quite frightened.

Even Lord Yan from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had a great change in expression. He too felt disbelief.

Because at that very instant, the plaza Chu Feng stood on was filled with pits and holes. It was horrifically blown up, yet Chu Feng was still standing on the spot, his hand behind his back.

Not only were his clothes undamaged, he was uninjured in any way. There was even a mocking smile on his face.

Chapter 868: Skinned Alive and Tendons Extracted

"The glorious head of the Stone Sword Sect only possesses this level of strength?" Chu Feng said with a mocking smile.

"You..." The sect head's mouth twitched when heard those words. His face was distorted, and he couldn't help but cast his gaze towards the people at the peak of the palace.

After he saw them gazing towards him with raised heads, he frowned even tighter.

He was truly in a difficult situation. On one hand, he discovered that Chu Feng was too terrifying. He seemed to be many times stronger in comparison to the day they clashed before. He really didn't want to continue fighting him because he knew Chu Feng was a freak.

On the other hand, everyone thought Chu Feng was no match for him. They were looking forward to Chu Feng's death, and for a great display of might.

Right now, it was truly like he was riding a tiger and couldn't get off. Despite the uneasiness in his heart, he had no retreat. Thus, he could only continue fighting Chu Feng.

whoosh As he had no choice, the head of the Stone Sword Sect could only make his move again. With the flip of his palm, a stone sword—a unique symbol of the Stone Sword Sect—appeared in his hand.

When it appeared, light swirled around it. The head of the Stone Sword Sect was using his full strength to channel his power into the stone sword.

He was not only channeling his own Martial power into it. All of the nearby Martial power was gathering towards the stone sword.

Due to that, the runes on the sword not only shone brightly, it even rocked to and fro. It endlessly trembled like a furious beast impatient to

rid itself of its shackles to tear the enemy before it.

"This power... Could it be the strongest technique in the Stone Sword Sect, Stone Sword Execution?"

"Right! It's Stone Sword Execution! I've heard if it's mastered, it's even superior to a rank nine martial skill!

"Today, we can finally see Sect Head Shi use this technique! It's extremely fierce, so I would quite like to see how that monster Chu Feng will stop it!"

When they saw such a scene, the crowd cried out in surprise. They were dumbstruck by the power emanated by the stone sword.

When he heard their discussions, the head of the Stone Sword Sect looked even prouder. He shouted, "Chu Feng, you have been audacious! First you killed my elders, then you come to my sect to challenge me! Today, with this stone sword, I will take your filthy life!"

After speaking, the head of the Stone Sword Sect released his hand. The stone sword swirling with radiance flew down, and with such a horrifying aura, pressed its way towards Chu Feng.

That stone sword was an accumulation of nearly all his Martial power. Its power was truly terrifying. Before it was even near Chu Feng, the ground he stood on cracked. The plaza already filled with holes was bearing an enormous pressure. It was now collapsing.

But even so, Chu Feng remained unmoving. His hands were behind his back, he looked at the sky, and brought a smile to his face. He was not planning to dodge at all.

Only when the stone sword was about to collide into him did Chu Feng slowly raise his hand, and opened up his five fingers towards the stone sword.

"What is he doing?"

The crowd was puzzled by Chu Feng's action at first, but after the stone sword had reached Chu Feng, they were terrified so much their heads

went numb. Chills went down their spines. Everyone's expression changed greatly.

Chu Feng not only stopped the stone sword with the power of a single hand, and thus stopped this horrifying Stone Sword Execution, with the clench of his sword, and a huge explosion, he shattered the stone sword.

The technique named as the sect head's most terrifying strike was turned into dust by just one of Chu Feng's palms. That strength truly surpassed all of their imagination. None of them could accept such a fact.

But that wasn't even much. After shattering the stone sword, Chu Feng looked at the head of the Stone Sword Sect in the sky and coldly shouted, "Old bastard, your life is finished today. Get the hell down here and receive death."

After speaking, an insane suction power surged out of his palm, instantly enveloping the head of the Stone Sword Sect.

"Ahh—"

Before such suction power, the head of the Stone Sword Sect cried out in alarm. Not only did he lose his ability to fly, he was even like a kite with its string cut as he lost balance, swayed left and right in the air, and rolled around as he shot straight in Chu Feng's direction.

"Heavens! The difference in their strength is this big?"

"How is this the Sect Head Shi who beat up Chu Feng, forcing him to escape? He doesn't even stand a chance against Chu Feng!"

"This is unbelievable. This is truly unbelievable. This Chu Feng is even stronger than the rumours." Everyone was tongue-tied and dumbfounded when they saw that. Discussions arose as they shouted in surprise.

Even though they already knew Chu Feng possessed very powerful strength, they didn't think he was that powerful. After they saw Shi Jingtian chase after the panicking and escaping Chu Feng before, they naturally felt Chu Feng was now no match for the sect head either.

Yet, when they saw this scene, they were truly taken aback. They

couldn't help but look at Chu Feng in another light because how could the sect head even chase after Chu Feng? He simply didn't even have any strength to fight against Chu Feng!

"Lord Yan, save me!" In a situation like that, the head of the Stone Sword Sect knew how poor the present circumstances were. So, he quickly asked for help from that Lord Yan.

whoosh In reality, Lord Yan had already made his move. He waved his big sleeve and the aura of a rank eight Martial Lord burst out. A powerful suction power surged from his sleeve, wrapping around the sect head in the air. He wanted to save him.

"This brat..." However, it was useless. Even though his suction power had enveloped the head of the Stone Sword Sect, it was unable to save him.

In the end, he could only watch as the sect head landed into Chu Feng's hands and was grabbed by the neck.

"Old bastard, you have been audacious! You dare attack members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?! Right now, I shall skin you alive, and extract your tendons!"

After grabbing hold of the sect head, Chu Feng did not spare him anything. Back then, Shi Jingtian had killed the Nine-fingered Old Man's family and aimed to kill Chu Feng. The fury of him wounding Eggy surged into his head.

With anger overwhelming his heart, Chu Feng's next moves were merciless. Grabbing his neck, he flung him around like a sandbag. Only after swirling him a few times in the air did he slam down abruptly. With a bang, he was thrown into a deep pit underneath his feet.

"Ahh—"

Chu Feng truly put too much force into that slam, so much that the deep pit was unable to bear his strength. The head of the Stone Sword Sect actually shot straight into the ground like a sharp arrow, and one could only hear his heart-wrenching scream.

"Get the hell back here." But how would Chu Feng let him go so easily? He grabbed out at the pit, and the head of the Stone Sword Sect returned to his hand.

However, at that moment, not only was blood all over him, his body even made creaking sounds—it was the sound of shattered bones. Chu Feng's strike had nearly completely destroyed the sect head's physical body. Not only his bones were destroyed, nearly all his organs were broken.

But clearly Chu Feng was not satisfied. He extended his palm, and like a sharp blade, it stabbed into the sect head's arm. Then, after pulling it back out, there was a blood thing within his hand—the tendon of Shi Jingtian's arm. At that instant, it was forcibly extracted by Chu Feng.

"AHH—" The pain was unendurable. Shi Jingtian screamed even more painfully than before.

But that wasn't even much. After Chu Feng pulled out one of his tendons, he extended his hand, and pulled. With a tearing sound, Chu Feng had torn off the skin of Shi Jingtian's entire face.

Chapter 869: Outcome Decided

"AHH—"

At that instant, a heart-rending and extremely anguished scream rang out endlessly.

Other than that scream, there was nothing else that could be heard. The entire Stone Sword Sect was frighteningly silent.

It wasn't because there were no one in the Stone Sword Sect. Quite oppositely, there were many people in the Stone Sword Sect—several tens of thousands of people.

However, the reason for such quiet was because they were all stupefied by Chu Feng's powerful strength and cruelty.

Seeing the bloody Shi Jingtian rolling back and forth on the ground, one of his tendons extracted and his skin ripped off, the crowd truly felt chills and their hearts were beating heavily from their chest. An indescribable chilliness engulfed their bodies, causing all their hair to stand on end. They felt numb, and there were even many people who were trembling from fright. There were also a few who lost control of their excretory system.

"What a ruthless brat. Since you're so cold-blooded, to prevent any more innocent murders, I will remove a beast like you for the sake of the Eastern Sea Region's population!"

Finally, Lord Yan could not continue watching. As a person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he couldn't even protect someone who joined them. He felt he had no more face.

He first explosively shouted, then flew up. With an Incomplete Royal Armament in hand, he rushed towards Chu Feng with the powerful might of a rank eight Martial Lord.

"Hmph. You've come at the right moment. Since you're from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, you shouldn't even think of leaving here alive."

However, Chu Feng didn't just feel fearlessness towards the incoming Lord Yan, he also sneered. Then, with the slight bend of his knees, he leapt forth. Like an inverted meteor, he flew into the sky and fought Lord Yan.

Violent shock waves brought about havoc. Powerful martial skills were used endlessly, and the battle between the two was undecidable.

However, their clash had truly frightened both the heavens and the earth. It was thrilling to the crowd, so as they watched, they sighed in admiration, yet also in fear and terror.

"What happened? Isn't it said Chu Feng was a rank three Martial Lord when he first arrived at the Winter Plains? Why has he become a rank five Martial Lord after a few short days?"

"That's not even important! The important part is that Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank five Martial Lord, easily tormented the head of the Stone Sword Sect, a rank seven Martial Lord! Even Lord Yan, a rank eight Martial Lord, can't defeat him! This child's strength is too terrifying. He's even more powerful than the rumours!"

Everyone could also feel Chu Feng's cultivation at that instant. They now knew Chu Feng was no longer a rank three Martial Lord, but a rank five Martial Lord.

However, they felt such shock and fright not because of his cultivation. It was more because of his fighting strength. Such horrifying strength was something they had never seen before. Likely only true geniuses could do such a thing.

"What should we do right now? We've already agreed to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, yet this Chu Feng is so powerful! If Lord Yan is defeated, we won't escape death either!" Amidst shock, some started feeling they couldn't be guaranteed their lives.

"There's no need to be afraid! No matter how strong Chu Feng is, he's only a rank five Martial Lord. Although he is strong, Lord Yan has been the Third Immortal's subordinate for many years! He is no pushover. It's uncertain who will win in the fight between these two." However, there

were also some confident people who felt Lord Yan might not lose to Chu Feng.

"Don't be foolish! Chu Feng isn't using his full strength right now! Back then, I personally saw how powerful he became after using the Royal Armament! He has yet to even touch it, so if he does, even Lord Yan will be defeated!" Some people also felt quite certain that Chu Feng would win.

"What? Doesn't this mean there's a disaster heading our way, and we're certainly dead today?" When they heard those arguments, the experts at the peak of the palace had pale-as-paper faces. Their bodies trembled, and even some couldn't stand stably—they almost fell on the ground.

They didn't dare to escape. If they did, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn't forgive them. They would then completely lose their protection. However, if they didn't escape, Chu Feng clearly wouldn't forgive them either. Either choice was difficult, so they didn't know what to do. They only felt that a disaster was falling upon their heads and they had no retreat.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

Just at that moment, an explosion rang out above. A person also shot out from the shock waves and into the distant mountain range.

At that instant, they could see the one still standing in the air was Chu Feng, and as such, the person who was shot into the mountain range was Lord Yan.

whoosh Suddenly, Chu Feng also shot forth and instantly disappeared. With a powerful aura, he rushed into the mountain range.

boom boom boom boom boom

Quickly after, they could hear bursts of rumbles resounding continuously in the distance. The energy ripple could even light up the sky.

"Let's escape! Lord Yan is no match for that Chu Feng! We will all die!"

“We can’t escape! Chu Feng is so powerful! If he wants to kill us, how could we escape?”

“In my perspective, we are certainly dead if we escape. But if we don’t, there might be a chance at survival. After all, in the end, we haven’t harmed anyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. We have also not truly joined the Immortal Execution Archipelago!”

The many experts atop the palace were indecisive. Their thoughts were incongruous: they wanted to escape, yet didn’t dare to escape. That feeling of nervousness and uneasiness nearly made their minds collapse.

hmm However, just at that moment, the head of the Stone Sword Sect suddenly stopped his painful shrieking.

Radiance shone everywhere from his bloody figure, then a ray of light shot out into the distance—it was a Consciousness. Shi Jingtian’s Consciousness. Seeing he could not retain his life, he didn’t give up. He abandoned his physical body and escaped via his Consciousness.

“Where are you escaping!” However, before he was even able to run for any sizable length, Chu Feng’s furious shout rang out.

At the same time, a boundless suction power shot out from the faraway mountain range. It streaked above the Stone Sword Sect, and chased after his Consciousness.

“Ahh—” Quickly after, a painful scream rang out. A Consciousness flew across the sky, drawn over by the suction power.

Shortly after he was caught, Chu Feng flew over from afar and once again appeared above the Stone Sword Sect.

However, when they saw him again, the several tens of thousands of people in the Stone Sword Sect were absolutely silent. A single word was written across their faces: terror.

Because, at that moment, Chu Feng was not only undamaged, there was even a faint smile on his face. However, there were two bodies of light grasped within his hand—two incomparably weak bodies of Consciousness.

Judging by their appearances, one was the head of the Stone Sword Sect's, the other was Lord Yan's of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

The battle had concluded, the victor and defeated definite.

Chapter 870: Returning to the Misty Peak

"Lord Chu Feng, have mercy! Lord Chu Feng, have mercy!"

Suddenly, a person at the peak of the palace knelt onto the ground, and started kowtowing at Chu Feng, begging for forgiveness.

Chu Feng had already shown his power. Even Lord Yan of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was no match for him, so naturally it was impossible for any of them to defeat Chu Feng.

"Lord Chu Feng, have mercy! We haven't joined the Immortal Execution Archipelago yet! We were forced to show up here! Lord Chu Feng, I ask for a clear judgement! We truly wouldn't dare to impudently make an enemy out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!"

After that person, many others atop the palace knelt orderly. Other than Monk Pingjing, who refuted the head of the Stone Sword Sect, everyone else knelt on the ground.

"HAVE MERCY—"

The most famous people in the Winter Plains knelt and asked for forgiveness. No matter if it was the elders or disciples from the Stone Sword Sect, or the elders or disciples from other places, all of them kowtowed and begged for mercy.

Seeing the terrified crowd, Chu Feng lightly smiled, then said, "I know you were forced here, so I won't do anything to you. But, remember this well. If there is anyone who dares to make the Crippling Night Demon Sect an enemy, or join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, these two are how your life will end."

Suddenly, a hint of fierceness emerged into his eyes. A special power was sent from his palm, and like a flame, enveloped the bodies of Shi Jingtian's and Lord Yan's Consciousness, starting to burn and refine them.

"AHH—"

"Chu Feng, you bastard! I curse you! Even as a ghost, I will not forgive you!

"AHH—"

When they were set ablaze by such special flames, Lord Yan and Shi Jingtian felt endless pain. Even though they had already lost their physical bodies, they were still able to feel the pain of their Consciousness being refined.

Just like that, as they crowd gazed upon them, they were refined, slowly. It only ended when they completely disappeared from this world.

After refining their Consciousness, Chu Feng suddenly waved his sleeve. An invisible shock wave spread out and enveloped the entire Stone Sword Sect.

Quickly after, upon another wave of his sleeve, several cries of terror rang out from the crowd. At the same time, several people flew over towards Chu Feng as they rolled around in the air.

However, before they reached Chu Feng, they were turned into pools of blood amidst muffled explosions resembling firecrackers.

"These are those who followed that old bastard Shi Jingtian and killed members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They deserve death.

"But the rest of you... are very innocent. So, I will spare all of you today. However, I advise you to do what's good for you."

After Chu Feng spoke, he moved and became a stream of light, flying towards the Teleportation Array.

"Thank you Lord Chu Feng for your mercy, thank you Lord Chu Feng for your mercy!"

Even after Chu Feng left, the people in the Stone Sword Sect still didn't dare to rise. They continued to kneel and kowtow while giving their thanks. One could tell they were truly quite frightened by Chu Feng.

Only after a good while, after confirming Chu Feng had left, did they dare to fly up like frightened group of birds.

No matter if it was the people from the Stone Sword Sect, or the people from other forces, they were escaping with everything they had. They

wanted to quickly leave this dangerous zone of disaster.

After finishing that up, Chu Feng immediately went towards the Misty Peak through the Teleportation Array.

As he travelled, Eggy had asked Chu Feng why he didn't kill everyone from the Stone Sword Sect as a warning.

Chu Feng said that the head of the Stone Sword Sect deserved to be killed, and that Lord Yan deserved to be killed. However, there were some people who could not be killed.

Right now, he was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. His very actions represented not only himself, but also the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Thus, even though the people had indeed gathered at the Stone Sword Sect's plaza, and technically speaking they were slightly related to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they had, as they said, yet to truly join the Immortal Execution Archipelago. So, they could be killed, yet could also not be killed.

Rather than commencing a massacre, which would frighten the world, why not make a clear line between grudges and favours? That would also let the world know the people of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were not insane, nor would they kill the innocent.

With that, it could avoid evoking fury from the population, and it could also, to a certain degree, prevent more and more forces from joining the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, Chu Feng anticipated after today, the people from the Stone Sword Sect would leave the Stone Sword Sect. Not only would they leave, it was likely they wouldn't even dare to continue living in the Winter Plains and would scatter to various areas in the Eastern Sea Region.

And, as they were interspersed amongst the Eastern Sea Region, they would also spread today's events to various places. They would let those who wished to join the Immortal Execution Archipelago know the result was death if they were to make the Crippling Night Demon Sect an

enemy.

It would also let the people who misunderstood the Crippling Night Demon Sect know that they weren't as ferocious as they had imagined. In reality, they were just a sect who knew the line between favours and grudges. They only treated their enemies fiercely.

After a while of hurrying, Chu Feng finally returned to the Misty Peak. After he did, he discovered that Chun Wu had returned as well.

He knew because she was currently standing at the entrance to the Misty Peak.

Chun Wu wasn't the only one there. Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei were also standing at the entrance. Those four, as they stood there, were chatting quite merrily.

As for the reason, it was quite simple. Clearly, they were waiting here for Chu Feng because after they noticed he was there, they all revealed joyous expressions. They flew up and welcomed him.

"Chu Feng, you've finally returned!"

When they saw Chu Feng, they were very happy, especially so for Zi ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei. On their faces, there was not only happiness, there was also peace. One could tell when Chu Feng had left, these three fiancées had worried about Chu Feng quite a bit.

"Junior Chu Feng, your cultivation! You've actually..." On the other hand, Chun Wu had noticed Chu Feng's change in cultivation. He had made breakthroughs, and it was even two levels continuously. He had caught up to Chun Wu.

"Waa, Chu Feng, you've made a breakthrough again?" After hearing Chun Wu's words, Zi Ling and the others also noticed Chu Feng's rise in cultivation. Right now, he had become a rank five Martial Lord.

"Heh, I have indeed gotten some unexpected harvests at the Burning Heaven Church." Chu Feng nodded with a light smile.

"Ha, this is truly good news! However, after Senior Zhang and Brother

Wushang, who've impatiently awaited your return, learn of this, I wonder if they will be a bit dispirited," Su Mei said with a smile. Moreover, there was a smirk on her face.

"Little Mei, what do you mean?" Chu Feng's face was full of confusion.

"Heh, Chu Feng, after you left, Senior Zhang and Brother Wushang went in seclusion for training. They wanted to catch up to your level, and right now, they have already made a breakthrough. Both have entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

"But, looking at it now, I'm afraid their wish will be denied because our Chu Feng hadn't stopped improving and instead, improved at an even quicker speed than them!" Su Mei said with giggles.

"Eh... This..." There was some shame on Chu Feng's face after he heard that.

Chapter 871: A Question

"You are truly quite insane. After becoming a Martial Lord, those who can make one rank of breakthrough within several years are already not simple at all. Yet you've gotten two ranks of cultivation within such a short period of time! How can others even compete with that!

"Not to mention your two friends who want to catch up to you, even I'm depressed," Chun Wu said as she curled her lips after hearing Su Mei's words.

"Senior Chun Wu, don't joke with me! Your junior has so many enemies. If I don't raise my cultivation quickly, I won't be able to protect myself!" Chu Feng smiled embarrassedly, then quickly changed topic and asked, "Senior Chun Wu, any news on Senior Qiushui?"

"Senior Qiushui has already returned, and she has already gotten the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix. Right now, my master is concocting the medicine in seclusion, so you don't need to worry.

"But..."

"But what?"

"But Senior Qiushui knew you went to the Winter Plains. Afraid something would happen to you, after she returned with the Holy Medicine of Dragon and Phoenix, she went back to the Winter Plains to search for you."

"What? You said Senior Qiushui went back to the Winter Plains?" Chu Feng's expression changed when he heard that.

The Burning Heaven Church had now been discovered by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not only could the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago enter the Burning Heaven Church, there was even a terrifying woman inside.

It was no longer a serene paradise, and instead, an extremely dangerous place.

"Chu Feng, you've made it quite troublesome for me!" But just at that

moment, Qiushui Fuyan's voice rang out. At the same time, the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church appeared before Chu Feng and the others.

"Senior Qiushui, you've returned?" Chu Feng's heart which had just tensed up returned to being at ease immediately after he saw Qiushui Fuyan.

"I've not only returned, I've also heard what you did~" Qiushui Fuyan said.

"What he did? Senior Qiushui, what did Junior Chu Feng do at the Winter Plains?" Chun Wu was immediately intrigued. As for Zi Ling, Su Ru, and Su Mei, they too cast their curious gazes at Qiushui Fuyan.

"This boy has done quite a huge thing!" Qiushui Fuyan didn't conceal anything as she narrated what occurred between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect in the Winter Plains.

From that, Chu Feng also learnt that Qiushui Fuyan had truly returned to the Winter Plains, and she had also returned to the Burning Heaven Church. However, when she was there, Chu Feng had already left, and the woman had already left as well. There was not a single person at the Burning Heaven Church.

That was why Qiushui Fuyan only knew what happened between Chu Feng and the Stone Sword Sect, but not what happened between Chu Feng and the Third Immortal—and the mysterious woman—in the Burning Heaven Church.

However, when Qiushui Fuyan discovered there was someone who intruded into the Burning Heaven Church and had done some damages, she then used a technique outsiders knew nothing about and changed the Arctic Killing Formation, thus completely sealing the entrance to the Burning Heaven Church. Unless it were her or other higher echelons of the Burning Heaven Church, that seal could not be deactivated.

"Waa, Junior Chu Feng, even rank eight Martial Lords stand no chance against you! Then doesn't that mean the next time you see that Murong Xun, you can give him a good beating and take revenge for what he did

back then?" After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's narrations, Chun Wu's face was full of admiration, and one could also tell that she truly felt happy for Chu Feng.

Since Chun Wu felt that, naturally, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei felt even happier.

There were really too many enemies Chu Feng had right now, and like he said, only by quickly developing could he protect himself.

"Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, all of you return first. I have something I need to speak with Chu Feng alone," said Qiushui Fuyan suddenly.

"Then, Senior Qiushui, we'll take our leave."

Zi Ling and the others looked at each other when they heard that, then said their farewells with Qiushui Fuyan. However, before leaving, Zi Ling went close to Chu Feng's ear and said with a low voice, "I, Sister Rou, and Sister Mei are waiting for you~"

After speaking, Zi Ling smiled charmingly, and with Su Rou, Su Mei, and Chun Wu, she entered the beautiful Misty Peak.

"Follow me." After they left, Qiushui Fuyan moved and flew towards the vast sea region outside the Misty Peak.

As for Chu Feng, he closely followed. Qiushui Fuyan only stopped after they were a good distance from the Misty Peak.

"Senior Qiushui, what do you want to discuss with me?" Chu Feng asked only after she stopped.

"Chu Feng, I have a question for you first. Is your rise in cultivation related to that Sacred Entity in the Burning Heaven Church?" Qiushui Fuyan asked.

"Truthfully replying, Senior, that Sacred Entity has been taken by me, and my cultivation was also obtained from refining it."

Chu Feng concealed nothing and replied honestly because from the very beginning, he had never planned to hide that from her. Even if Qiushui

Fuyan didn't ask him, he would have told her on his own accord.

"You truly refined it? How much?" Qiushui Fuyan seemed a bit excited upon hearing Chu Feng's response.

"I refined all of it. But, Senior, my body is a bit special, and for every rank of cultivation, I require an increasing amount of cultivation resources. So, even though the energy in the Sacred Entity was very powerful, it only allowed me to make a single rank of breakthrough," Chu Feng said.

"Haha, you've truly shocked me! Although I already knew your body was special, I didn't expect you could even refine that Sacred Entity! That was something no one from the Burning Heaven Church could anything to!" After hearing Chu Feng's words, Qiushui Fuyan didn't blame Chu Feng at all. Instead, she was both surprised and cheerful.

"Senior, that was still something that belonged to your Burning Heaven Church, yet I refined it just like that. Don't you blame me?" Chu Feng asked.

"That thing is only useful for growing some medicinal plants, and it could only be used in the Burning Heaven Church. It couldn't be moved.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago had always wanted to take over the Burning Heaven Church. Even though they can't deactivate the Arctic Killing Formation now, who can guarantee they won't be able to in the future? As long as they can, that would mean the entire peak of medicinal plants would belong to them.

"Rather than giving such an advantage to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it's better to just let you refine it. Besides, you are no stranger," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's words, Chu Feng felt very happy as well because she truly cared about him. Yet, she clearly didn't owe him anything.

"That's right. Chu Feng, the reason I called you out here was for something else. I just also asked about the Sacred Entity," said Qiushui

Fuyan suddenly.

“Senior Qiushui, if there’s anything you want to ask, just go ahead. As long as I know about it, I won’t hide it from you,” Chu Feng said.

“Has Huangfu Haoyue already gone insane?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

Chapter 872: Unrelated to You

“Senior Qiushui, you’ve heard about it?” Chu Feng couldn’t help but be taken aback by those words.

He had never told her that Huangfu Haoyue went mad. He only said he saw him in the continent of the Nine Provinces. Reasonably speaking, Qiushui Fuyan shouldn’t know that Huangfu Haoyue went insane, unless...

“Answer me first. Has Huangfu Haoyue gone insane?” Qiushui Fuyan quickly asked.

“This...” Chu Feng was in a bit of an awkward situation while facing that question. To a certain degree, the reason of Huangfu Haoyue’s insanity was related to his father. At least, he assumed he was.

But even so, Chu Feng couldn’t bear hiding the truth from Qiushui Fuyan because she had truly treated himself well. Ever since she saved him from Ya Fei, she had given Chu Feng much help.

So, in the end, Chu Feng still said, “Senior Qiushui, when I saw Huangfu Haoyue for the first time, he had already went insane.”

“As I thought... As I thought, it’s him.” Qiushui Fuyan instantly felt downcast.

“Senior Qiushui, what’s wrong? Yo-you didn’t see Senior Huangfu, right?” Chu Feng thought of a possibility when he heard her words.

“I saw him. The reason I returned so late from the Winter Plains is because I saw him there.

“However, he doesn’t even recognize me anymore. I chased after him for a long time, and passed through several regions, yet in the end, I still lost him. Even though he had changed a lot, that feeling of his would never change. I knew he was Huangfu Haoyue.” Qiushui Fuyan even choked a bit when she said that.

“Senior Qiushui, sorry I hid it from you. I should have told you earlier.

"Also..."

"Chu Feng, you don't need to say anything, nor do you need to feel any shame. I know why you didn't tell be at the very beginning, and I also know why Huangfu Haoyue has turned into this.

"How would I discover nothing after following him for so long? I could tell he was afraid of something, and if I'm not mistaken, the existence he's afraid of is related to you, right?" Qiushui Fuyan's tone was very soft. It could be seen she didn't resent Chu Feng.

"Senior Qiushui, I can't give you a definite answer either. I've also been thinking that the ones Huangfu Haoyue is afraid of is my family," Chu Feng replied truthfully. Only then could the shame he felt diminish a bit.

"Chu Feng, you don't need to be like this. Back then, when Huangfu Haoyue carried you here, you were still a baby. No matter what he experienced—and even if your family did something to him—it's your family's fault. None of it is related to you, so you don't need to feel ashamed.

"Moreover, it's already a matter of the past. What we should do right now is think of a way to cure him. Although he's gone mad, it's only madness. As a World Spiritist, you should know there's nothing a World Spiritist can't do, especially related to deficiencies of one's body. We can heal that as well," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Mm, Senior Qiushui, you're right. But, what are you planning to do?" Chu Feng felt quite a bit better after hearing Qiushui Fuyan's words,

"Right now, the most important thing is to first find Huangfu Haoyue. I've prepared to leave today in order to search for him," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"But do you know where Senior Huangfu is right now?" Chu Feng asked.

"I don't know, but even if I don't know, I must still look for him. Even if I need to search the entire world I must still find him. I can't let him live a beggar's life in insanity," Qiushui Fuyan resolutely said.

"Senior Qiushui, how about I contact the Crippling Night Demon Sect

and ask them to help you?" Chu Feng said.

"No need. As they say, rather than asking others, why not ask oneself? Putting aside the fact they aren't that close to you, so not everyone will believe you, I also don't trust them too much.

"I'm not too friendly with the higher-ups of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so how can I hope for them to help me?" Qiushui Fuyan shook her head, firmly rejecting Chu Feng's thought.

"Senior is correct." Chu Feng nodded after hearing Qiushui Fuyan's words. Although she was a bit too cautious, her considerations were absolutely reasonable.

Even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect was treating Chu Feng quite well, they still didn't completely trust Chu Feng yet. At least, the Crippling Night Demon Sect still emphasized the gains of the sect; Chu Feng was merely a member.

If there were truly one day when Chu Feng's existence threatened the benefit of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who knew if they would deal with him in the future or not.

Chu Feng would not forget the gazes of the Earth King and the others when he attempted to pull out the Royal Armament, the Demon Sealing Sword. At that time, Chu Feng truly felt if he had pulled it out, the Earth King would have killed Chu Feng with no hesitation because that was a weapon only usable by the head of the Demon Sect.

The Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn't hand such an armament over to Chu Feng.

"Okay, Chu Feng, then it's decided. As of now, just let me look for Huangfu Haoyue.

"At present, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is still searching for you. Unless absolutely necessary, for safety's sake, it's best that you stay in the Misty Peak and avoid leaving," Qiushui Fuyan reminded.

"Senior, thank you for the reminder. I understand." Chu Feng nodded.

“Remember, don’t feel ashamed because of Huangfu Haoyue. Even if it’s related to your family, it’s not related to you.

“Also, I’ve chatted with your three fiancées and found out they are quite decent in many places. Most importantly, they do truly love you.

“So, do not disappoint them. You should take care of yourself even if just for their sake. Don’t do overly risky things and take your life as a joke.”

After speaking, Qiushui Fuyan lightly smiled, then rose into the air, flying towards the Teleportation Array.

From this, one could tell she was truly concerned with Huangfu Haoyue. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have headed out so quickly to search for him.

After Qiushui Fuyan left, Chu Feng entered the Misty Peak. He first went to Zi Ling’s residence, and when he came, not only were Su Rou and Su Mei there, even Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang were there.

“Junior Chu Feng, I’ve heard you’re now a rank five Martial Lord. Is that true?” After seeing Chu Feng, Zhang Tian and Jiang Wushang quickly surrounded him. From head to toe, they carefully examined him.

Chapter 873: Good Brothers

When they were closely examining Chu Feng, Chu Feng too discovered Zhang Tianyi's and Jiang Wushang's cultivation had risen to the ninth level of the Heaven realm.

Actually, before refining the Sacred Entity, Chu Feng's actual cultivation was also the ninth level of the Heaven realm. The reason the world thought he was a rank three Martial Lord was all because Chu Feng used the power of the three lightnings to raise his cultivation to rank three Martial Lord. Thus, the actual cultivation level he revealed to the world was merely an illusion.

Jiang Wushang and Zhang Tianyi also knew this, so that was why they felt as long as they entered the ninth level of the Heaven realm, they would have caught up to Chu Feng.

However, after Chu Feng refined the Sacred Entity, there was a change in essence regarding his cultivation. The three lightnings were no longer external power but one with Chu Feng. Right now, his true cultivation was no longer the ninth level of the Heaven realm, but rank five Martial Lord.

"Heavens! You... you're too strong, aren't you? You've truly become a rank five Martial Lord, and you haven't even used the power from the lightning! You... You... You...

"What are we supposed to do now?!"

Suddenly, Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang shouted at the same time. They had looked at Chu Feng's eyes for a very long time, and discovered there was no lightning. So, they confirmed that not only was his cultivation raised, his cultivation was without the aid of the lightning.

However, even though they were grieving loudly, as though they received a huge blow to their hearts, because Chu Feng once again widened the gap in their cultivations, he could tell that they were actually very happy. They felt happy because Chu Feng was able to improve so greatly.

These were true brothers.

But since Chu Feng had some strength now, he wasn't willing to see his brothers and lovers travel too slowly on the journey of cultivation.

Although it was very difficult for Chu Feng to help the others, Jiang Wushang now had an Imperial Bloodline! Moreover, there was a single similarity between him and Chu Feng—the rise in cultivation relied on cultivation resources. And... Chu Feng had received quite a few good quality cultivation resources from Lord Yan of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Even though to Chu Feng, resources such as Heaven medicines and Martial medicines weren't of much use to him anymore, to Jiang Wushang, they would likely help greatly.

As such, Chu Feng only left a small portion of the cultivation resources to use as currency, and gave the rest to Jiang Wushang.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, you've already given me enough help. I can't accept these cultivation resources. Just keep them for yourself." But, who would have expected Jiang Wushang to refuse Chu Feng's good intentions.

"You're being so polite even to me? If you don't take it, then don't call me 'Big Brother' anymore!" Chu Feng forcibly stuffed the cultivation resources to Jiang Wushang.

"Ahh..."

After a long hesitation, Jiang Wushang still took and put away the cultivation resources. However, as he did so, he helplessly heaved a long sigh.

"Brother Wushang, is there something troubling you?" Chu Feng asked.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, after acquiring the Imperial Bloodline, I do have greater requirements for cultivation resources, but my comprehension strength has become stronger as well. Yet, even so, I am still no match for you," Jiang Wushang said depressingly.

“Brother Wushang, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked.

“Big Brother Chu Feng, you said as long as you have enough cultivation resources, you can directly make breakthroughs. For you, the accumulation of power within your dantian is the difficult part, and the comprehension part when making a breakthrough is a piece of cake.

“So, I originally thought after receiving the Imperial Bloodline, I too could be like you. But I’ve discovered I was wrong.

“Even though the Imperial Bloodline has strengthened my fighting power, causing change throughout my body, even making my comprehension strength more powerful, but... if I want to make a breakthrough, I still find it quite difficult.

“Especially right now, when I’m facing the huge gap to become a Martial Lord. I have a premonition that even if I accumulate enough power, and understand the method of breakthrough, it will still be very difficult to succeed on my first try,” Jiang Wushang said.

“You’re saying there are high requirements to make a single breakthrough in regards to comprehension strength?” Chu Feng asked.

“Mm.” Jiang Wushang nodded, then as he looked at Chu Feng, his eyes were full of admiration. He said, “Big Brother Chu Feng, you are truly a genius. A true genius.”

“Brother Wushang, what’s with you now? Why did you suddenly say that?” Chu Feng was confused.

“It’s because I’ve discovered you acquired your cultivation attainments not only because you grasp special power, but also because your innate aptitude is extremely strong.

“The reason you have such powerful comprehension strength is perhaps related to your special power, but it is more so related to yourself. You’ve always had great talent in cultivation, so what’s why you have all these accomplishments.

“As for me, I don’t have your powerful comprehension strength, nor talent as good as yours. So, even though I now have the Imperial

Bloodline and sufficient resources, I'm unable to quickly make breakthroughs like you," Jiang Wushang said.

After hearing Jiang Wushang's words, Chu Feng really didn't know how to console him. He already knew about that—the Divine Lightning had indeed strengthened his body and brought him powerful strength. On the other hand, his outstanding comprehension power seemed more innate.

Before, when Chu Feng didn't know much about cultivation, he felt his exceptionality in everything was all brought by the Divine Lightning. But, along with his greater knowledge and experience, he learnt that some aptitude in people was decided when born.

"However, Chu Feng, you don't need to worry about me. Even if I'm inferior to you, I'm at least superior to others. I will work hard. I will work hard to catch up to you, Big Brother Chu Feng.

"Also, I've discovered that the Imperial Bloodline is very powerful. As long as I can become a Martial Lord, my fighting strength will rise again. Perhaps, at that time, it won't be any weaker than yours!

"Moreover, that doesn't only apply to me. It also applies to Big Brother Tianyi. Although he doesn't have an Imperial Bloodline, the Forbidden Mysterious Technique he cultivates is very special. Before you returned, we had sparred and it ended up a tie!

"He also told me he has a faint feeling when he becomes a Martial Lord, he will be able to grasp an entirely new power. So, even if I become a Martial Lord and become stronger, he won't be afraid of me," Jiang Wushang said with a smile, as if afraid Chu Feng would worry.

In reality, Chu Feng was indeed much at ease after hearing his words.

Just like that, after Chu Feng had a small gathering with Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi at Zi Ling's residence, Chu Feng headed towards Chun Wu's residence.

He was preparing to cultivate the Taboo martial skill, the "Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash". However, that required a special land of cultivation.

Chapter 874: Coincidentally Meeting Yan Ruyu

At that moment, in order to concoct a cure for Zi Ling's Heaven Gripping Pellet, Lady Piaomiao had remained isolation for quite a while, and it was said she still needed more time before coming out.

Since Chu Feng didn't really like Xia Yu and Dong Xue, nor was he too familiar with Qiu Zhu, when he had requests, he always enjoyed looking for Chun Wu.

"Senior Chun Wu, I'll take my leave first." However, before entering Chun Wu's palace, Chu Feng heard a rather familiar voice.

jii—

Just as Chu Feng prepared to knock on the door, it was suddenly opened. At the same time, a familiar person appeared within Chu Feng's line of sight.

A tall figure, a bewitching body, white skin, charming face, and a unique aura—that person was Yan Ruyu.

After she saw Chu Feng, she couldn't help but be taken aback. Her beautiful eyes glittered endlessly—she was panicking slightly.

Chu Feng lowered his head, a bit embarrassed, when he saw Yan Ruyu. He didn't dare to look straight at her, because at that moment, he unavoidably recalled the scene of forcing her in the bed back then in the Azure Province.

But that was a thing of the past. After all, it had been quite a while, so following just an instant of hesitation, Chu Feng put on a light smile, raised his head, and wanted to greet Yan Ruyu.

whoosh

But who would have expected before Chu Feng spoke, she had already moved and passed Chu Feng, leaving behind only a faint bodily fragrance.

Chu Feng did seem to expect that to occur, so he dryly chuckled, but

didn't brood on that for too long. He strode forth and prepared to enter.

"Chu Feng." But when Chu Feng put one foot past the doors, Yan Ruyu had spoken.

"What is it?" Chu Feng turned his head around. He saw that she had already stopped and was looking at himself with a gaze containing complicated emotions.

"Thank you," Yan Ruyu said with a gentle tone, then after meaningfully looking at Chu Feng, she turned around, and left.

Seeing her fading figure, a relieved smile was worn on Chu Feng's face. From her eyes, he could tell Yan Ruyu didn't hate him at all. Instead, there was a hint of gratitude.

The old grudge with Yan Ruyu was finally resolved.

"Junior Chu Feng, what are you doing standing at the entrance?"

Just at that moment, Chun Wu's voice rang out. When Chu Feng looked into the palace, he saw Chun Wu smiling as she looked at him.

"Senior Chun Wu." Chu Feng walked in.

"Junior Chu Feng, didn't you say Junior Yan was your friend? Back then, you too had done quite a bit in order to save her! However, judging by that just now, you don't seem too close to her.

"Have you hid anything from me?" The intelligent Chun Wu instantly saw that the relationship between Chu Feng and Yan Ruyu wasn't close. They were definitely not friends.

"To be honest, Senior Chun Wu, we are indeed not friends, and there was even a misunderstanding before! So, I suppose I owed her," Chu Feng said with a bitter smile.

"No matter if you owed her or not, you've done enough for her. Even if there was a disagreement, it's been compensated by now. After all, it was you who saved her life.

"But, don't worry. Although Junior Yan doesn't speak much, and it feels that there's a layer between us, I don't think she's a bad person. I will still

take care of her even without you asking. Also, my master likes her as well."

As if afraid Chu Feng worried she wouldn't take care of Yan Ruyu because of their distant relationship, Chun Wu specially expressed her thought towards Chu Feng.

"Thank you, Senior Chun Wu." Chu Feng was truly thankful for Chun Wu's concern. Concern not only directed towards Yan Ruyu, but also directed towards himself and everyone close to him. It could even be said she was the closest person to him in the Misty Peak, and also one who helped him with all her power.

And, the greater the intimacy, the less the constraint. So, Chu Feng said with a smile, "However, I have come here because I have a request, Senior Chun Wu."

"You are my savior! If you say another word of thanks, I'll kick you out!" Chun Wu curled her lips, feigning anger. Then, she said with a smile, "What is it? Just say it. If I can do it, I will help you with my full strength."

"Senior Chun Wu, you remember I got a Taboo martial skill at the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, right? Since the requirement of it was too high, I have yet to do much with it.

"However, right now, I feel like I can give it a try. So, I'm preparing to cultivate it," Chu Feng said.

"You... Don't scare me like that! If I remember correctly, the martial skill you got was an Earthen Taboo martial skill!

"According to my master, that's a martial skill even Martial Kings have difficulty controlling! Its power is very frightening, and it has extremely high requirements on one's physical body. Its cultivation difficulty is very high as well.

"Junior Chu Feng, although your strength is very powerful, that Earthen Taboo martial skill is too fierce! You cannot rashly cultivate it; otherwise, if there's a tiny bit of a mistake, it can possibly leave permanent damage

to your physical body! It will also have an unimaginable effect on your future cultivation!" After knowing Chu Feng wanted to cultivate that Earthen Taboo martial skill, Chun Wu's complexion changed greatly. She hurriedly attempted to convince him otherwise.

"Senior Chun Wu, thank you for your good intentions, but I more or less understand the requirements of this Earthen Taboo martial skill. I truly feel like I can attempt it right now, so that's why I want to give it a try," Chu Feng said with a smile. Moreover, there was not a single trace of fear on his face. Instead, it was filled with confidence.

"Junior Chu Feng, are you certain?" The worry on Chun Wu's face instantly became shock.

"Senior Chun Wu, you've known me for so long! Have I ever lied to you?

"Believe me. If I don't have a certain grasp on it, I wouldn't even go touch that Earthen Taboo martial skill.

"I know it is very difficult to cultivate. Its difficulty is even dozens of times the Mortal Taboo martial skills, and hundreds of times rank nine martial skills.

"So, I will definitely not force my way through. If I cannot continue, I will stop when appropriate," Chu Feng said.

"You truly do bring astonishment to others. My master clearly told me even typical Martial Kings find it difficult to successfully cultivate an Earthen Taboo martial skill. Yet you, a Martial Lord, are already preparing.

"Ahh, this is truly infuriating! Sometimes, I truly do suspect whether you are from our world. You wouldn't be from the Holy Land of Martialism, right?" Chun Wu said with a joking tone.

"Senior Chun Wu, don't joke with me! If I came from the Holy Land of Martialism, I wouldn't be in the Eastern Sea Region right now!"

Chu Feng had a bitter smile. Although he didn't know whether he was from the Holy Land of Martialism, he knew he was likely not from the Eastern Sea Region or the eastern continents.

Chapter 875: Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation

"Since you're planning to cultivate the Earthen Taboo martial skill, I'll have to prepare a special area for you," Chun Wu said.

"The one who truly understands me is indeed my Senior Chun Wu. I've come here exactly for that." Chu Feng didn't bother hiding anything and stated his intentions.

"Tch. Would I not understand you? Follow me. I'll show you a mysterious place in this Misty Peak." Chun Wu smiled, then walked towards the exit of the palace.

Chu Feng quickly followed because this Misty Peak was truly very special. He knew the place Chun Wu and the others cultivated martial skills was definitely a very special place, so he really wanted to see the appearance of the Misty Peak's unique area for martial skill cultivation.

After all, everything here came from the Ancient Era.

Indeed, with Chun Wu leading, they passed through several heavily guarded checkpoints before arriving atop a peak.

Outside the peak, there was even a firm Spirit Formation Wall. Even Chun Wu needed to use a special Spirit Formation Key to open it.

Only after climbing onto the peak did Chu Feng notice the peak was very vast, but at the apex of this vast peak, there was a little tower less than ten meters in height and three meters in width. Not only was it quite broken, one felt quite pitiful as they gazed at it.

However, the ancient aura it exuded told Chu Feng the little broken tower was not as simple as it appeared. Most likely, this was the most important part of this peak.

So, Chu Feng directly walked towards the tower, and only after nearing it did he discover there were several words written at the top: Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

“Junior Chu Feng, this is one of the most mysterious places of the Misty Peak, the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. It is a holy land for cultivating martial skills.” Indeed, as Chu Feng expected, this broken little tower was the place for cultivating martial skills.

Right now, Chun Wu had already opened the door to the tower, and after opening, what Chu Feng saw through the door was not the inside of the tower, but a world. That tower was a gate to a whole new world.

“Impressive! It’s another gate to a new space! This Misty Peak is truly a treasure land.” Chu Feng endlessly sighed in admiration. Along with his increase in experience, he knew that powerful World Spiritists could open an independent space.

So, Chu Feng knew very well no matter if it was the Martial Marking Immortal Realm before, or the world within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, they were both likely spaces opened by a powerful World Spiritist.

“Heh, of course. If there were nothing good about our Misty Peak, the Immortal Execution Archipelago wouldn’t want to occupy this place. If it weren’t for my master threatening them, it’s likely they would have already made a move on the Misty Peak.

“That’s right, I don’t mind telling you a secret.” Suddenly, Chun Wu lowered her voice. After putting her mouth close to his ear, she still chose to tell Chu Feng with mental messaging, “On the Misty Peak, there are many mysterious peaks. Even though my master is the guardian of this place, there are several peaks even she cannot climb onto. So, even my master doesn’t completely know what sort of special power is concealed in which special places.”

“Heh, anything from the Ancient Era is indeed nothing ordinary.” Chu Feng nodded, then asked, “Senior Chun Wu, other than this independent space, are there any other special things with this Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation? Why did you say this is the holy land for cultivating martial skills?”

“It’s better for you to experience it yourself. Just remember this: you can

destroy anything you see in there. No matter if it's someone alive, or an existence undefeatably powerful, don't be afraid. Just trust me.

"Oh, that's right. Most importantly, don't walk too far, and don't forget the path of return. Otherwise, if you can't come back, I can't save you!" Chun Wu said with a mysterious smile.

"Heh, you make it seem so impressive, and now I want to experience this mysterious land!" After hearing all that, Chu Feng was truly impatient. He stepped forth, and entered the ancient tower's door, stepping into the new space.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered there was no sun, nor a blue sky, nor clouds. Everything above his head was foggy. Beneath his feet was sand, and gales were howling in the distance. The feeling it gave Chu Feng was represented by one word: desolate.

When he turned his head around, he still saw the door, and Chun Wu was standing outside the door. She said, as she looked at Chu Feng with a smile, "Remember! What you are cultivating is an Earthen Taboo martial skill! Do not aim for short-term benefits, and you must stop when appropriate!"

"I will remember your instructions." Chu Feng bowed to Chun Wu with complete seriousness.

"You... Hmph, I won't bother with you anymore. Go play on your own!" Chun Wu feigned anger as she curled her lips, then closed the doors. But, before closing the doors, a voice was sent inside.

"That's right. When it's time for the three meals, remember to come back to this place. I will bring you food at a fixed time."

"Hehe, this little girl is quite nice! Chu Feng, should you consider stopping? After all, you already have three fiancées. You don't need another one!" said Eggy, who was in Chu Feng's body, as she giggled.

"You're thinking too much." Chu Feng didn't bother caring what she said, and leapt up, into the air, carefully examining this world.

After flying for a while, a lush green mountain range appeared. Above

the mountain range, even the sky was different. At that place, there was a blue sky and clouds. When such a scene appeared within such a chaotic desert, it truly stood out.

After circling around the mountain range, Chu Feng saw an endless sea. On the sea, huge waves rolled about, and there was even the roar of sea beasts. It was a dangerous region of water.

It was dangerous because as he flew above the surface, Chu Feng could regularly see beasts killing each other. They were not only violent, they were bloodthirsty. Moreover, those beasts were not only enormous, they were very powerful as well. The weakest were in the Heaven realm, while most possessed strengths of a Martial Lord.

After flying for a while above the boundless sea, Chu Feng saw a green island in the distance.

That island was floating above the sea, and there was nothing special. Yet, it attracted Chu Feng's attention because the waves that surged around the island were very strange. When he looked more carefully, he saw a dozen or so huge water snakes within the water.

Those snakes were truly large—every single one was over a hundred meters long. Not only did they have sharp teeth, there were sparkling scales on their bodies as well, resembling armour. They covered their bodies, making them nearly indestructible.

Moreover, every single one of them emanated the aura of a rank nine Martial Lord. Their auras were even more powerful than the typical peak Martial Lord.

At that moment, those huge snakes at the bottom of the sea were baring their teeth and making deafening roars at the island.

At first, Chu Feng felt confused at such a scene. He didn't understand why they were so angry as they circled an island.

Only when the island started trembling and an extremely powerful aura burst out did Chu Feng understand.

Chapter 876: Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash

aoo— A thunderous roar came from the island, and the serenity changed abruptly. An indescribable huge mouth rose up to the surface from the bottom of the island, and it was slowly widening.

After that mouth opened, a revolting stench came from it. The large teeth within the mouth even terrified Chu Feng.

boom

After that huge mouth widened, it bit down at the water snakes, directly engulfing three. As it chewed, large amounts of blood gushed out without end, instantly dying the sea red.

wuaoo—

The remaining several huge snakes at the bottom of the sea panicked from horror. They first let out a timid sound, then quickly burrowed deep into the ground with frightening speed, aiming to escape.

aoo—

But before they even made much distance, the island opened its mouth again. A boundless suction power burst out, drawing back those sea snakes amidst their terrified cries. All of them entered the island mouth and were engulfed.

At that instant, Chu Feng couldn't help inhaling deeply. He captured all of that in his eyes. How did that even look like an island? It was simply a sea beast—a huge tortoise as big as an island.

Not only was it enormous, it was very powerful as well—a Martial King.

But even so, Chu Feng was not afraid. He didn't escape, and instead, spread his legs, entering a fighting stance as he stood in the air. Then, his left hand held an illusory bow, his right hand pulled an illusory arrow, then as his arms moved back and forth, his hand opening and closing, countless golden arrows became a horrifying rain of arrows that flew

down the sky, straight towards the huge tortoise.

whoosh whoosh whoosh...

When the golden arrows rushed down from the sky, its might could truly force ghosts and gods to evade them. They were extremely frightening, and before they even dropped down, the sea beneath was already stirred up in a mess as it surged about.

boom rumble rumble However, just as the golden arrows were about to collide, the huge tortoise seemed to had detected them. With the move of its body, it controlled the boundless sea water. Like pillars, they rose into the sky, instantly breaking Chu Feng's attack.

Afterwards, the huge tortoise slowly raised his enormous head, and cast its incomparably huge eyes which let out a bloody glint towards Chu Feng.

Those eyes unrestrainedly showed fierceness. However, it did not attack Chu Feng, nor was Chu Feng afraid. Instead, he flashed it a light smile, and made a provocative gesture at the sea tortoise.

aoo—

It seemed to understand that gesture as it made a furious roar in protest, but in the end, it put away its gaze, and burrowed its head back into the sea. Then, with rumbles, the surrounding waves rolled to and fro, and up and down. The huge tortoise didn't attack Chu Feng, and instead, swam away.

Shortly after it left, the blood drifting around the surface started to condense and change, becoming a dozen or so sea snakes!

They looked the exact same as the ones engulfed by the huge tortoise before, but they acted as if nothing had ever happened. They truly resembled the ones before, and after roaming around in the water, they went their own ways and swam into the distance.

"This is truly not simple at all. It really is a holy land for cultivating martial skills!" A faint smile was on Chu Feng face because he now knew the importance of this place.

This space was independent, so one could say everything Chu Feng saw in here was fake. No matter if it was the mountains, or the sea, or the creatures in this world, they were all fake.

Everything here was created by the powerful formation. They wouldn't harm Chu Feng, but they would stop his attacks, and also dodge his attacks. Even if they were destroyed, or destroyed by other beings, they would be revived.

It was because their value in existing was to be attacked by others. They were the perfect existence for practicing martial skills.

After understanding the mysteriousness of this place, Chu Feng felt even more curious as to who the master was, since he was able to lay such a powerful formation.

But this place was already a mystery, so how could Chu Feng know who the master was?

Since he didn't know, then he didn't bother thinking about it. Chu Feng started to close his eyes and review the method of cultivating the Firmament Slash.

EARTHEN TABOO—FIRMAMENT SLASH.

CREATED BY GREAT EMPEROR FIRMAMENT AT TWO THOUSAND YEARS OF AGE.

SUMMON THE AURA OF THE FIRMAMENTS TO CAST DESTRUCTION UPON THE WORLD.

IT IS THE HIGHEST QUALITY WORK OF EARTHEN TABOO MARTIAL SKILLS.

THOSE WHO WISH TO CULTIVATE THIS MUST BE GREATLY

VIGOROUS.

THEY MUST POSSESS A BODY OF KING-LEVEL MARTIAL POWER.

THOSE BELOW MARTIAL KINGS ARE FORBIDDEN FROM CULTIVATION.

OTHERWISE, THE BACKLASH WILL BRING UPON THEMSELF:

A CHRONIC ILLNESS IF SUPERFICIAL;

IMMEDIATE DEATH IF SEVERE.

The Firmament Slash was very complicated, but in simpler terms, it was to use special techniques combined with King-level Martial power to create something called the Aura of Firmament. When this Aura of Firmament was released, it would create terrifying destruction—that was the Firmament Slash.

However, putting aside the fact it was very difficult to create the Firmament Slash, even if he were able to, there still remained the high physical requirement, since the Firmament Slash harmed the physical body greatly. That was especially so in the instant it was released as it would strike the body with heavy force.

If his physical body weren't strong enough, he wouldn't be able to receive the force of the Aura of Firmament. Even if he could create it, before it struck his enemy, he would have already killed himself.

But to Chu Feng, that was not a problem. His physical body had always been strong, and now, since he was an actual Martial Lord, his body was strengthened once again. The lightning armour would not only raise Chu Feng's cultivation by one rank and raise his fighting strength, it was even

able to reinforce his physical body.

So, with Eggy's assistance, and the protection of the lightning armour, Chu Feng's physical body was sufficient to endure the Aura of Firmament. At least, he could endure it once within a short period of time. Although he would still receive a backlash, at least he could bear through it.

As for King-level Martial power... Chu Feng wasn't a Martial King, so he simply didn't have that. That being said, though he didn't have any, his Royal Armament did.

Royal Armaments were created by King-level Martial power. Thus, they not only had the power, they could summon it as well. Therefore, as long as he had the Silver Dragon Spear, that was not an issue either.

Right now, the only issue Chu Feng had was how to create the Firmament Slash.

That... was truly very difficult. Extremely, extremely difficult. Not to mention a typical Martial Lord, even an ordinary Martial King, without several years of cultivation, should not even think of creating it. As such, it could be seen how difficult it was.

But before Chu Feng even started, he had already roughly found the steps. What he required now was only practice. Practice his steps to control it—to control the Aura of Firmament.

It could even be said with Chu Feng's comprehension strength, he would have no problem successfully cultivating the Firmament Slash. What he needed was only time.

Moreover, Chu Feng already had a feeling regarding the power of the Firmament Slash. If he failed, then whatever. If he succeeded, however, then Chu Feng would even be able to put up a fight against Martial Kings.

Chapter 877: Something Happened to Chu Feng?

Without feeling the passing of time, Chu Feng had entered the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation for two full months already.

In those two full months, Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei would come over and bring Chu Feng food every day.

Although they were never able to see him, the food they sent would usually be cleanly finished off. That also let them know that Chu Feng was doing very well. So, they didn't think much of it.

However, in the past three days, all the food they sent hadn't been picked up. As they looked at the food accumulated for three full days, Chun Wu, Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei all couldn't help but worry.

Putting aside the fact that the space within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation was very huge and there was the risk of getting lost after entering, an Earthen Taboo martial skill was very difficult to cultivate. Attempting to do so at Chu Feng's current realm was simply suicidal. So, after the third day, the four of them couldn't continue holding themselves back.

"Senior Chun Wu, let's go together to search for Junior Chu Feng!"

"Yeah! Senior Chun Wu, three whole days have passed! We are truly worried for Chu Feng."

At that moment, within Chun Wu's palace, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, and even Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang had come. They were asking Chun Wu to let them into the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation so they could search for Chu Feng.

"This..." Chun Wu was in a very difficult situation as she faced their requests. She said very helplessly, "Actually, I am very worried about him as well, but my master had said if Chu Feng wants to enter the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, he can, but none of you are allowed due to your cultivations.

“Even though everything inside the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation is illusory and won’t attack us, no one can guarantee that it won’t go astray one day. If it does, not to mention you, even with the cultivation I have, there’s no doubt I will die inside.

“Right now, Chu Feng has entered but has yet to return. It’s quite possible something wrong happened when he was cultivating the Taboo martial skill, and it’s also quite possible something wrong happened to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. After all, regardless of its profoundness, it’s still only a formation. No one can guarantee a formation that has existed for several tens of thousands of years will continue working safety.

“Besides, there has been a few times where issues regarding the formation arose.”

“Senior Chun Wu, just let us enter! No matter life or death, it will be unrelated to you. It’s just that I cannot leave him alone!” Zi Ling begged with a face of sincerity. She, who was usually strong, now had sparkling tears flowing from her eyes.

“Senior Chun Wu, we’re begging you!” Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi all begged as well.

“Right now, my master is concocting in seclusion. I truly don’t know whether something has happened within the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation. For your safety, I cannot let you enter. However, I myself can enter and look for Junior Chu Feng,” Chun Wu said.

“Why are you all here? I could hear you talking from far away! Has something happened?” Just at that moment, a voice suddenly rang out outside. When they looked over, they discovered it was Qiushui Fuyan. Qiushui Fuyan had returned.

Moreover, for some reason, there were even four beautiful people behind her—Yan Ruyu, Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and Qiu Zhu. Those four had followed Qiushui Fuyan here.

“Senior Qiushui, you’ve returned! This is really great!” Chun Wu acted as if she saw her savior when seeing Qiushui Fuyan. She immediately

rejoiced.

It was because Qiushui Fuyan was a Martial King! Judging by her cultivation, even if something truly happened inside the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, she would be able to take care of it.

So, Chun Wu, without hiding anything, told her everything that had happened.

“This Chu Feng is too overconfident! The Earthen Taboo martial skill is a legendary martial skill! In the entire Eastern Sea Region, there has been no one who’s cultivated it, but judging by the Mortal Taboo martial skill, one can imagine the cultivation difficulty required by the Earthen Taboo martial skill. Why does he dare to even touch it with the cultivation he possesses?”

Qiushui Fuyan’s complexion changed greatly after she heard what happened. As she felt condemning feelings, she walked straight towards the exit.

Chun Wu and the others quickly followed when they saw that. Originally, they even wanted to lead the way for Qiushui Fuyan, but later on, they discovered she simply didn’t need their guide.

She led the way and easily walked towards the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation with no problems. None of the people who guarded the checkpoints dared to stop her.

When they saw that, Chun Wu and the others felt confusion. They weren’t confused as to why the guards didn’t stop her. That, they could understand. After all, Qiushui Fuyan was their master’s friend. It was something everyone in the Misty Peak knew. She had always walked where she wished, so who dared to stop her?

However, in Chun Wu and the others’ memories, Qiushui Fuyan never liked walking randomly in the Misty Peak. She shouldn’t have ever come to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation, yet how did she know its location?

Even though they were confused, no one asked her because what they

were more concerned about was Chu Feng's safety.

Finally, with Qiushui Fuyan leading the way, they soon arrived at the entrance to the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

After opening the door, they saw that the food sent by Chun Wu and the others was still accumulated at the entrance—not a single bite was taken.

So, without saying anything more, Qiushui Fuyan strode forth and entered. But just as she entered, she returned around and yelled, "What are you entering for? If there's really something wrong here, you are only looking to die by entering!"

"Senior Qiushui, we really can't cast our worries away! Please let us come with you!" Zi Ling said.

And when Qiushui Fuyan saw their faces full of anxiousness and their moist eyes, her heart was shaken. She didn't say much either, and with the wave of her sleeve, a boundless Spirit Formation surged out, enveloping Zi Ling and the others. The, she leapt into the air, and brought along with her the Spirit Formation that wrapped around them.

Qiushui Fuyan had quite an in-depth understanding of the geography of this place. She actually knew there was a sea and many sea beasts here. Moreover, she knew they were relatively powerful and it was the best place for martial skill cultivation. As such, she flew towards that sea.

boom boom boom boom boom...

However, before she was even near, they were able to hear bursts of explosions endlessly erupting at the sea. At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan's tense heart was finally at ease. A hint of peace emerged onto her anxious face.

But she did not stop there, and instead, continued flying in the direction of the explosions.

Finally, they arrived at the origin of the noise. However, after they saw everything in the distance, almost everyone's expression changed greatly. Even Qiushui Fuyan herself couldn't help deeply inhaling. She cried out, "This guy!"

Chapter 878: Horrifying Slash

At that moment, atop the sea, violent gales arose and explosions resounded endlessly.

Fierce energy ripples were akin to sharp blades as they cut open space itself and split the sea. There were violent explosions upon the waters, and with uncontrollable shock waves bringing about havoc, the Martial Lord sea beasts who unintentionally passed by were instantly blown into pieces. Its power was very frightening.

The origin of all that was actually a weak body—Chu Feng.

At that moment, Chu Feng was wearing lightning armour, he was holding the Silver Dragon Spear Royal Armament, and even on his back, there were two black wings made by black flames.

With all of that, Chu Feng's cultivation had risen to rank six Martial Lord. His fighting strength was even more terrifying; the aura he exuded would even force rank nine Martial Lords to evade him. He could simply be said to be invincible against all Martial Lords. As he stood there, he didn't even look like a person, but more like a god.

At that moment, Chu Feng was waving the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand and unceasingly sending out ferocious attacks. As the Royal Armament was waved about, silver dragons made created by white light continually shot out from the Silver Dragon Spear. Their teeth were bared, their claws were brandished, and they were spitting out clouds and mist as they shot towards the sea surface, attacking something.

The thing floating in the sea stirred up gales and waves. It was very horrifying. Not only was its roar deafening, its appearance really did catch the eye—it was a huge tortoise as big as an island. Not only did it have a terrifying appearance, its strength was extraordinary—a rank one Martial King.

So, Chu Feng, with the cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, was fighting a super-huge tortoise, with the cultivation of a rank one Martial King.

“Has Chu Feng gone mad? He’s challenging this huge tortoise?! That’s the overlord of this sea! Before, when we cultivated in this place, we’ve always avoided it and never dared to go near it!” Dong Xue’s face was one of astonishment when she saw that.

“No need to worry. It doesn’t matter how powerful that tortoise is. It will only block Chu Feng’s attack with its power due to the restriction of the formation. It will not attack Junior Chu Feng,” Chun Wu explained, but was also frightened by Chu Feng’s actions.

Fear was always created in people’s hearts from powerful things. Although they knew the huge tortoise was restricted by the formation and wouldn’t attack them, they still stayed far away. It was for no other reason but because it was too powerful. If it lost control, then they were dead. However, Chu Feng was doing the exact thing they didn’t dare to do.

“Haha, as expected from my Junior Chu Feng! His strength is really too powerful. Although he’s only a rank six Martial Lord right now, his fighting strength allows him to even fight against a Martial King! This is truly admirable.” Zhang Tianyi was excited. He felt proud to have such a powerful brother like Chu Feng.

“It doesn’t matter what his strength is, he won’t be able to defeat a Martial King. He only dares to do this right now because he knows the tortoise won’t attack him. If it could, he would already be dead. No matter how strong Martial Lords are, they are still only Martial Lords. How can they even put up a fight against Martial Kings? Even peak Martial Lords can’t, let alone him.” But just at that moment, Dong Xue curled her lips, refuting Zhang Tianyi’s perspective.

Ever since coming out from the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, she and Xia Yu had tried to get closer to Chu Feng many times, but it was all useless. So, after confirming he wouldn’t bother with them anymore, they too didn’t look for unhappiness themselves.

However, due to their personalities, of course they would resent Chu Feng. Actually, they chose to come here not to find Chu Feng, but instead, to check whether he was dead or not. One had to know, in their hearts,

they wished Chu Feng were dead.

However, after seeing that scene, they were not only disappointed, they were shocked. Chu Feng was becoming stronger and stronger. He had already left them far behind, and in their eyes, that was not anything good.

"You're saying Chu Feng is inferior to a peak Martial Lord?" Dong Xue's words naturally evoked the displeasure from the crowd. Zi Ling led the way and questioned Dong Xue.

"Hmph. Junior Chu Feng is indeed strong, but that's only because he's relying on special techniques. Without the Royal Armament, and without that special technique, can he defeat those with superior cultivation?" Dong Xue curled her lips. Although Zi Ling was a Divine Body, her current cultivation was very weak. Naturally, she was not afraid of her.

"Shut up!" Just at that moment, Qiushui Fuyan suddenly shouted furiously. Although her words were directed at everyone, her unkind gaze was cast towards Dong Xue.

When she saw that, Dong Xue's heart trembled. Her initially proud face paled from fright. She lowered her head, silent.

Suddenly, Chu Feng stopped his insane attacks. He stood in the air, and closed his eyes.

At the same time, the fabric of space around Chu Feng started trembling slightly. The weak power in the air then became strong, and the quivers of space trembled more intensely. Even cracks in space appeared, and an extremely powerful aura was even going to shatter that space.

With such a change, boundless Martial power gathered towards Chu Feng like a hurricane. As they faced such immense Martial power, even Qiushui Fuyan's eyes lit up. She, as a Gold-cloak World Spiritist and a Martial King, could feel that the surging Martial power was of the King level.

To create such a tremendous martial skill was not even something she,

a Martial King, could do. Yet, right now, Chu Feng had done it.

At that instant, Qiushui Fuyan's eyes did not shift. She was tightly staring at Chu Feng because there was a question in her heart. That question was, Chu Feng wouldn't truly have cultivated this Earthen Taboo martial skill, right?

When she thought of that question, she simply didn't dare to continue thinking. Putting aside the cultivation difficulty of an Earthen Taboo martial skill, two months of time simply did not allow for such an impossible feat.

boom

However, just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his eyes. At the same time, a ferocious aura appeared within his gaze, which then shot towards the huge tortoise.

wuaoooooo—

When it saw Chu Feng's fierce gaze, the huge tortoise's blood-red eyes glittered and it actually let out a timid low growl. At the same time, it exuded a boundless aura from its body as it quickly started moving. As the waves around it surged, the tortoise was planning to escape.

ji ji ji ji...

But it was already too late. Before the huge tortoise was able to escape, a blood-red gaseous mass shot out from Chu Feng's body.

That was a very odd gaseous mass. It looked like a sharp blade, yet resembled a water snake. Not only were they innumerable, they even made an ear-piercing shriek. It was even frightening quick, and with just a blink, it had enveloped everything, sealing the huge tortoise within.

Then, at that moment, Chu Feng's lips moved slightly as he said four great words, "EARTHEN—TABOO—FIRMAMENT—SLASH!"

boom

After that shout, akin to an order from a lord, the strange and horrifying gaseous masses gathered in the direction of Chu Feng's gaze with its

destructive might.

Finally, after a huge explosion, a blinding slash appeared above.

When that slash emerged, the destructive aura burst out as well, and thus, instantly engulfing a portion of the sea.

Chapter 879: Unfinished

When the destructive slash exploded, it was as if there were nothing that could stop its destruction. Blood-red energy ripples spread out everywhere, as though it were a huge pool of blood, and also as if it were a bloody mouth. Amidst the ear-piercing howls, it engulfed everything.

That sea region had become hell.

gulp

There was not a single person who wasn't shocked upon seeing the strange and horrifying blood-red ripples. Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others even paled from fright, and couldn't help gulping.

They had never seen such a horrifying martial skill. No matter the atmosphere it exuded, or its power, both aspects were horrifying. If they hadn't personally seen it, they definitely wouldn't believe such a slash was cast by Chu Feng, a Martial Lord.

In reality, not only them, even Qiushui Fuyan, who was quite experienced, couldn't help deeply gasping. She said with an extremely astonished tone, "He's actually succeeded. In two short months, he cultivated a legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill!"

"Senior Qiushui, you're saying Chu Feng used an Earthen Taboo martial skill just now?" Xia Yu and Dong Xue both widened their mouths in shock.

There was actually a Mortal Taboo martial skill free to cultivate on the Misty Peak, but since it was too difficult, even they weren't successful in their attempts.

As for an Earthen Taboo martial skill, that was a martial skill from the legends. It was said its cultivation difficulty was a dozen times a Mortal Taboo martial skill.

They couldn't even control a Mortal Taboo martial skill, yet Chu Feng grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill. How could they not be shocked?

"Have either of you seen a martial skill with such power?" Qiushui

Fuyan did not give them a direct reply, but her question had indirectly told them the answer.

"Are you two deaf? Didn't you hear what my Junior Chu Feng said just now? Before using that slash, he clearly yelled 'Firmament Slash'. Is there any room for doubt?" Zhang Tianyi coldly mocked. He was already quite displeased with Xia Yu and Dong Xue.

At that instant, the two of them were speechless. With everything that had happened, they had no choice but to admit Chu Feng had grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill within a short two months.

However, that fact was too astounding. If it were known, it would definitely create quite a commotion amongst the population once again.

aooo—

Just at that moment, within the berserk blood-red ripples, another furious roar rang out. Although that voice was quite a bit weaker, it was undoubtedly from the huge tortoise—it hadn't died yet.

hmm

Indeed, as the blood-red ripples gradually dissipated, they were able to see the huge tortoise slowly appearing within their sights. The enormous monster truly hadn't died yet.

Although it hadn't died, on its indestructible shell, there were several cracks that appeared. From those cracks, large amounts of blood kept on flowing out, dying the sea water red. Even though the huge tortoise hadn't died yet, it was still heavily injured.

"Ah!" Suddenly, Chu Feng, in the sky, coughed out a mouthful of blood. Then, his body started swaying and he nearly fell down from the sky.

"Chu Feng!" Qiushui Fuyan was the first to react. She leapt forth and came up to Chu Feng, supporting him.

After she did, the lightning armour on Chu Feng's body as well as the wings made by black flames started disappearing. As such change occurred to him, not only did Chu Feng's aura return to rank five Martial

Lord, it was several times weaker than before.

Even, at that instant, Qiushui Fuyan could feel all the bones in Chu Feng's body shattered, and his skin all cracked. Nearly half of his physical body was damaged. From that, even though it could be seen that Chu Feng had successfully cast the Earthen Taboo martial skill, he had indeed paid a huge price.

"Senior Qiushui, this... Earthen Taboo martial skill is truly difficult!" After Chu Feng saw Qiushui Fuyan, he first bitterly smiled, then his head went limp and he lost consciousness.

"You... The Earthen Taboo martial skill, something even a Martial King doesn't dare to easily touch, was successfully cultivated within the short span of two months. Yet you're still saying it's difficult? What about us then?" Qiushui Fuyan felt quite helpless at Chu Feng's words before he lost consciousness.

"Senior Qiushui, is Chu Feng fine?" At the same time, Zi Ling and the others went up. As they looked at the pale and unconscious Chu Feng, they felt very worried.

"Don't worry, he's fine. To use the Earthen Taboo martial skill with his current cultivation, a backlash like this is already very light. There's no need for you to worry. He'll be back to normal after a few days of resting." Qiushui Fuyan smiled, then led Chu Feng out of the Tower of Martial Skill Cultivation.

Chu Feng went unconscious for several days. When he woke up, there was still a bit of pain on his body, but it was not as bad.

"Supreme genius, you've finally woken up?" Just as Chu Feng awoke and before he even got hold of his bearings, a gentle voice entered his ears.

Turning his head to the side, he saw Qiushui Fuyan walking towards him. However, at that moment, she did not use her veil to cover her appearance. Her beautiful complexion was revealed before him.

Although Qiushui Fuyan had already entered the middle-ages, she still looked like a lady in her mid-twenties. Moreover, the experienced and

mature aura around her made her even more enchanting; the former number one beauty of the Eastern Sea Region indeed lived up to her name.

"Senior, don't joke with me..." Chu Feng smiled as he scratched his head.

"What joke do you mean? In two months, you cultivated a legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill. The title of 'Supreme Genius' is completely deserving!

"To be honest, even Huangfu Haoyue back in the day was far inferior to you," Qiushui Fuyan said with great praise.

"Cultivated? How have I even cultivated it? I've merely just started." However, Chu Feng shook his head at Qiushui Fuyan's praise.

"Just started? You haven't completely grasped the Earthen Taboo martial skill?" Qiushui Fuyan felt a bit surprised at those words.

"Of course not. This Firmament Slash is really too difficult. There are in total nine slashes, and every single slash has double the power of the previous one. However, the pressure it puts on the body doubles as well.

"Due to my current physical body, I can only use the first slash. If I were able to use the complete ninth slash, how would that huge tortoise merely be injured? It would have been turned into dust already," Chu Feng said.

"From what you said, the power in the Earthen Taboo martial skill truly isn't something a Mortal Taboo martial skill can be compared to. It is truly terrifying." Qiushui Fuyan was shocked after hearing Chu Feng's words.

"Yeah! But sadly, I, right now, am still unable to grasp it completely. Moreover, when using it, the preparation time is too long. It's very difficult to use it in battle," Chu Feng said.

"Don't worry. Completely grasping this Earthen Taboo martial skill is only a matter of time with the aptitude you have. You don't need to rush," Qiushui Fuyan consoled with a smile when she saw Chu Feng a bit

downcast.

"Senior Qiushui, were you able to find Senior Huangfu?" Chu Feng asked.

Qiushui Fuyan shook her head, but then very quickly said, "Although I haven't found Huangfu Haoyue's whereabouts, I have discovered one thing in my journey. I'm sure you will really want to know this as well."

Chapter 880: The Scheme of the Immortal Execution Archipelago

“Senior Qiushui, what is it?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s related to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I wasn’t planning to tell you because nothing good will stem out of this. I was afraid you’d be rash.

“However, you are still a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. After some contemplation, I decided it was better to tell you,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Senior Qiushui, what happened?” Chu Feng felt a bit uneasy, and subconsciously knew that they were in a bit of trouble.

“The battle between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect has completely spread far and wide. Both sides are fighting back and forth, and both sides have been wounded. However, since the Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been hidden, the ones suffering have always been the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“As I was searching for Huangfu Haoyue, I inadvertently stumbled upon a meeting between the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

“Both sides typically don’t have any dealings with each other. However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has sent an alliance invitation to the Three Great Monstrous Clans, inviting them to deal with the Crippling Night Demon Sect together. The Inferno Divine Bird clan is one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

“When I saw them together, my first thought was the possibility they had already allied together. These two enormous powers were going to fight the Crippling Night Demon Sect together.

“So, I secretly snuck in and eavesdropped on their conversation.

“Their plans matched my expectation. They had truly allied, and they were planning a counterattack towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect,”

Qiushui Fuyan said.

"What are they planning to do?" Chu Feng suddenly stood up. He could not continue just sitting there, because regardless what others said, he was still a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He couldn't just do nothing as the Crippling Night Demon Sect was in danger.

"There are a limited number of experts in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. At present, battles are erupting frequently so all Martial Kings from the Immortal Execution Archipelago are overseeing a single region of land, guarding important territories.

"The Crippling Night Demon Sect knows that well, so they don't attack any territories guarded by Martial Kings. They send experts to attack places with no Martial Kings. Although it's a bit despicable, it has made the Immortal Execution Archipelago suffer greatly.

"Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is planning to use that tactic to counterattack. They've intentionally let out news that Murong Xun and some experts left the Immortal Execution Archipelago, thus attracting an attack from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"The sect has always kept a close eye on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Martial Kings. After confirming none have been sent, they are definitely going to ambush Murong Xun.

"However, they will not know there are two Martial Kings from the Inferno Divine Bird clan hidden within the group led by Murong Xun.

"Those two Martial King Monstrous Beasts are really not simple at all. They are the two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan. Although they are only rank one Martial Kings, they possess a bloodline power only Monstrous Beasts have. They also have an extremely strong combination technique, and a typical Martial King cannot defend against that.

"If your Crippling Night Demon Sect is truly going to send experts, then it would be somewhat fine if they send two Martial King. However, if they only send one, it will be suicidal.

"And, if your Crippling Night Demon Sect hasn't discovered this will be

a trap, they will definitely only send one.

"So, it's best that you notify them and tell them to avoid falling into the trap," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Crap!" Chu Feng instantly furrowed his brows tightly, then said, "They can contact me, but I can't contact them, nor do I know where they are. I simply can't get in touch with them."

"If that's true, then this is quite a bit more troubling." Qiushui Fuyan shook her head.

"Senior Qiushui, do you know where Murong Xun and the others are preparing to go? And where on their path is the most suitable place for an ambush?" Chu Feng asked.

"The reason I hesitated in telling you is because I was afraid you would be rash. This is a trap! Are you going to jump into that trap in order to save them? You know that you're the one the Immortal Execution Archipelago wants to kill the most!" Qiushui Fuyan instantly knew his plans when she heard Chu Feng's question.

"But Senior Qiushui, as a man, I should put the word 'loyalty' at the forefront of my mind. If I had never learnt of this, then there would really be nothing I could do. However, since I have learnt of this, I cannot ignore it. I'm sure if the Crippling Night Demon Sect knew I was in danger, they would definitely come and save me.

"Right now, I already have a certain amount of strength to protect myself. Even Martial Kings may not be able to do much to me. At least, they shouldn't even think of killing me.

"Besides, I'm not throwing myself into a trap. I just want to stop the Crippling Night Demon Sect before they make a move," Chu Feng explained.

"Chu Feng, don't be so stubborn! First of all, you aren't even that close to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It's not worth it to risk your life for them.

"In addition, even if you don't think for yourself, you should at least

think for Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei, right?

"Do you know how worried they get every time you head out? Of course, everything would be fine if you return peacefully. However, if something truly happens to you, do you think they will continue living?" Qiushui Fuyan said strictly.

At that instant, Chu Feng's face expressed his conflicting state of mind. Of course, it wasn't that he didn't know such logic, but he still said, "Senior Qiushui, I know you are thinking for my sake.

"However, you also don't want me to be an unloyal and unrighteous person, right? I'm sure even if Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei know about this, they'll definitely support me."

"Ahh, whatever, whatever. I can't be more stubborn than you. But this journey is a very dangerous one. In order to guarantee no accidents, I'll just come with you," said Qiushui Fuyan, in the end, with quite a bit of helplessness.

Chu Feng was elated when he heard she was going to go with him. He quickly said, "Thank you, Senior Qiushui Fuyan. You truly treat me quite well."

Qiushui Fuyan was a Martial King, and the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church. Although she was only a rank one Martial King, her strength was definitely not weak. With her, Chu Feng's confidence was boosted greatly.

After deciding, Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan didn't dally much. After saying their farewells with Zi Ling and the others, they left immediately. After all, that was a huge matter—saving lives.

During the journey with Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng heard that Murong Xun and the others left the Immortal Execution Archipelago's headquarters to head towards another region to pick up something important. It was an iron called Ancient Adamantium.

It was rumoured to be a type of iron that came from the Ancient Era. Although it was not a cultivation resource, it was extremely valuable—it

was a main component in creating Royal Armaments.

Although there weren't any Royal-cloak World Spiritists in the Eastern Sea Region, thus no one could create a Royal Armament, they were still able to create imitations of Royal Armaments—the Incomplete Royal Armaments There were many Ancient Adamantium Ingots, and if they were made into Incomplete Royal Armament on a large scale, that would greatly raise the total strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Moreover, he learnt from Qiushui Fuyan that the rumours spread by the Immortal Execution Archipelago were still true, despite being a trap. The Immortal Execution Archipelago had indeed dug up large amounts of Ancient Adamantium Ores, and Murong Xun was indeed heading over to pick them up back to the Immortal Execution Archipelago's headquarters in order to create Incomplete Royal Armaments.

However, they also took this chance to release rumours. They wanted to set up a trap for the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

As such, no matter what he had to do, Chu Feng decided he was not going to let the Immortal Execution Archipelago's scheme succeed.

Chapter 881: Good Show

The land where the Ancient Adamantium Ores were dug up was called the Gale Plains. Since there was a mining area from the Ancient Era within the Gale Plains, it was one of the most important territories of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It was said the one who oversaw this area was the Sixth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Nine Immortals.

The Sixth Immortal was the same as the Seventh and Eighth Immortal—he was also a rank one Martial King. However, his fighting strength far surpassed those two. It was said with his strength, he could even put up a fight against a rank two Martial King.

That meant even though the Sixth Immortal was a rank one Martial King, due to his power, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not going to directly attack the Gale Plains just to avoid any unexpected situations.

And since the Crippling Night Demon Sect also wanted to get their hands on the Ancient Adamantium Ores, they were most likely going to ambush Murong Xun and the others when they left the Gale Plains with the cargo. Not only would they obtain the ores, they would even be able to capture Murong Xun. That was truly hitting two birds with one stone. Yet, how could they possibly know a huge trap was what awaited them?

However, after Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan left the Teleportation Array and arrived at a potential ambush location, they received very bad news: several days ago, Murong Xun had already led the Immortal Execution Archipelago experts and headed towards the Gale Plains.

If everything went according to plan, Murong Xun and the others had very possibly already arrived at the Gale Plains and picked up the Ancient Adamantium Ores, and were returning right now.

That truly made Chu Feng anxious because if the Crippling Night Demon Sect had truly come, it was most likely they had already set up a trap. At that very moment, they could have already fell into the Immortal Execution Archipelago's ploy.

“Chu Feng, don’t worry. Even if just for your sake, I won’t do nothing.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago has invited two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan, but they definitely would have never expected me to come here and help. If the Crippling Night Demon Sect has truly entered the trap, it isn’t too big of a deal. We can just destroy their trap.

“The flames of the Inferno Divine Bird clan are very powerful, but I will show them the most powerful flames are the Burning Heaven Church’s Burning Heaven Flames,” Qiushui Fuyan said as she saw Chu Feng’s agitated emotions.

“Senior Qiushui, I truly apologize for dragging you into the battle between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.” Chu Feng felt very grateful for Qiushui Fuyan’s words. At present, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were truly in a calamity, and even though accepting Qiushui Fuyan’s assistance would make her an enemy of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng could not refuse.

After all, if the Crippling Night Demon Sect had truly fallen into the trap, he could not save them with his own strength. However, if Qiushui Fuyan helped, then they more or less had some strength to turn the battle around.

“Silly boy, what are you talking about? The Immortal Execution Archipelago hasn’t had their eyes on my Burning Heaven Church for just one or two days. We are already enemies, and sooner or later, there will be a conflict between us. Rather than later, why not sooner? After all, I’m the only one remaining from the Burning Heaven Church. What can they do to me if I do what I want?” Qiushui Fuyan faintly smiled. Her face was calm, lacking even the slightest bit of fear towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chu Feng couldn’t help but smile after hearing her words as the shame in his heart dropped quite a bit. She was very correct. Even if not for his sake, Qiushui Fuyan was, in reality, already an enemy of the Immortal

Execution Archipelago.

"There are people coming." But suddenly, Chu Feng frowned. In order to find the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he had spread out his Spirit power, thus his detection was very sensitive. Even though there was still some distance between him that those people, he still discovered their appearance.

Qiushui Fuyan also detected those people. However, she did not panic. Instead, she made a light smile, and said, "I know these people. Since they've come from the Gale Plains, perhaps we can acquire some information."

"Senior Qiushui, you know these people?" Chu Feng asked.

"Mm, they're from the Lovers Terrace. Don't say anything. I'll go ask them," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Mm." Chu Feng nodded, and at the same time, used the Transformational Mask and changed his appearance. At the same time, he also lowered his cultivation, and followed behind Qiushui Fuyan like a servant.

Qiushui Fuyan intentionally lowered her speed, and flew forth without a hurry. Indeed, shortly after, several people were also flying towards them.

They were five elderly people. They wore common clothings, and their cultivations were at the peak of the Martial Lord realm. Although Qiushui Fuyan covered her face with her veil, they still recognized her. So, after seeing her, they quickly flew over, clasped their hands a hundred meters away, and asked in a probing manner, "Is the person ahead Lady Qiushui of the Lovers Terrace?"

"Long time no see, everyone," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

"Ahh, it truly is Lady Qiushui!" The five elders were quite happy after they heard her voice. Since they had already confirmed her identity, they came over and one even said, "Lady Qiushui, are you planning to head towards the Gale Plains?"

"Indeed." Qiushui Fuyan nodded.

“I would advise you not to go. Right now, the journey to the Gale Plains is not too peaceful,” that person said.

“Why isn’t it peaceful? Has something happened?” Qiushui Fuyan asked, feigning ignorance.

“To be honest, the reason we’re here is because we were captured,” that elder said helplessly.

“Captured? What do you mean?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“A few days ago, there was someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago who came to the Lovers Terrace. With the excuse of inviting us, they forced us there. We were brought directly to the Gale Plains, into the territory of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“At first, we were still quite worried. We were worried whether we offended the Immortal Execution Archipelago and they were going to harm us.

“However, later on, there was an unending stream of scattered cultivation experts who were also captured by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. There were even many small sect heads brought into the Gale Plains. Moreover, they treated us quite well with food and drinks. Other than restricting our freedom, they were respectful in all ways. They seemed to mean no harm.

“We asked them why they brought us here, but they didn’t tell us. They only said they invited us here to witness a good show.

“And today, they’ve finally released us, and we’ve also finally learnt what their ‘good show’ is.

“So it turns out that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has allied with the Inferno Divine Bird clan and they’ve set up a trap together. They’ve lured the Crippling Night Demon Sect and want to capture their experts all at once.

“Right now, they have already been caught and they are being killed by the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Inferno Divine Bird clan. To this so-called good show, none of us had the heart to enjoy it, so we left,”

the elder narrated in detail.

"Lady Qiushui, right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect are still fighting one another. Do not head over. Otherwise, if they learn of that, who knows whether they will think we've started to associate with the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"If they drag us into their fury while they're in a rage, that would not be good at all."

"Yeah, yeah! Quickly join us and leave! Let's quickly leave this disaster zone!" the four others urged.

When he heard that, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists as his heart was submerged within anger. No matter what, he didn't expect the Immortal Execution Archipelago would be that despicable. Not only did they lay a trap, they even looked for a crowd beforehand and wanted to humiliate the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Chu Feng, let's go." In reality, it was not only Chu Feng who was enraged. Even Qiushui Fuyan couldn't continue staying here. She grabbed Chu Feng, then disappeared instantly. With the quickest speed possible, they flew towards the Gale Plains.

At that moment, they left the five elders standing on the spot. Their expressions were frozen as they looked at each other, saying simultaneously, "Just now, Lady Qiushui seemed to have said... the young man by her side was Chu Feng?"

As they spoke, their complexion changed greatly. They suddenly realized the calamity they had made, and without saying anything more, they fled with their lives.

Chapter 882: Public Humiliation

There was a large number of people gathered ten thousand miles away from the Gale Plains.

Their cultivations were not weak—most were peak Martial Lords. Although they couldn't be called as peak experts, they were still slightly famous people who occupied their own spot in the Eastern Sea Region.

At that moment, they were watching a battle—a battle between the two strongest forces in the Eastern Sea Region: the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that moment, the surface of the plains was splattered with blood. There were even some limbs lying around. Only a small portion of the people there retained a complete corpse; however, at that moment, none exhibited any signs of life.

Those people, other than some from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, were mostly from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Moreover, they were all Martial Lords.

Above the sky, there were two battlefields. One was the interweaving of fire and water—their battle covered the sky and sun, and might born from their clashes was extremely terrifying. In that battlefield, there were four people fighting back and forth, endlessly switching from offense to defense.

Two of them wore a fiery-red robe. They were clearly young men, yet there were beautiful feathers on their heads. On their bodies, there were also many precious ornaments. Their decorations made them appear neither male nor female, but more like two humanoid monsters.

In reality, those two weren't human—they truly were monsters, because they were Monstrous Beasts. They were the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

The ones exchanging blows with those two Protectors were two old men. One of them had long red hair, blazing like an inferno, while the

other hand long blue hair, soft like water. At that moment, they were controlling immense volumes water and fire, and fighting the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan. They were the great and famous Water King and Fire King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

The battlefield of four Martial Kings was extremely intense. No matter the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, or the observers invited by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they didn't dare to approach them, fearful of being swirled into the uncontrollable shock waves. After all, those four were too strong. Even a single remnant shock wave would be sufficient to kill a Martial Lord.

Other than that battlefield, there was another one, and it was similarly eye-catching. Similarly as well, there were four people, and they were all rank eight Martial Lords. However, they were not fighting two-on-two, but one-on-three.

The reason it was so fascinating was because they were the publicly acclaimed peak geniuses in the Eastern Sea Region. The young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—Murong Xun—as well as the disciples of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Three Protectors—Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

At that moment, they were exchanging blows, like they did at the Depraved Valley. The difference, however, was that Murong Xun now did not have a Royal Armament. At that moment, he was holding an Incomplete Royal Armament. As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they were the same.

But even though Murong Xun only held an Incomplete Royal Armament, his fighting strength was still very strong. He alone actually forced back Xuan Xiaochao and the others, and on their bodies, there were even injuries of varying degrees. Even as all three of them fought a single person, they could still not defeat Murong Xun.

"Everyone, do you see this? These are the trash of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"They only know how to bully the fewer with more, and bully the weak

as the strong. In these days, they have not used any few number of these despicable methods to ambush my Immortal Execution Archipelago. They are truly the epitome of shamelessness.

"Today, my Immortal Execution Archipelago wants to let the world know if the Crippling Night Demon Sect does not have any advantage in numbers or strength, they are no match for us." Suddenly, a clear voice rang out—it was from an enormous warship.

On that colossal warship, there were several thousand experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, all standing orderly. Moreover, at the forefront of the warship, there was an old man sitting who had white hair on both sides of his head, and black hair for the rest.

That old man's eyes were akin to an eagle's. They were mighty even with the lack of anger, and at that moment, he was actually sitting on ten peak Martial Lords. If one looked carefully, they would discover those ten peak Martial Lords were the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers.

At that moment, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were all bloody and bruised. Even though they were very furious, they could not rid themselves of that person's pressure. In battle, they could only fall one after the other, and allow that old man to sit on their bodies as they endured such humiliation.

But that could not be blamed on them, because the person who sat on them was a Martial King. Moreover, not a normal Martial King, but the Sixth Immortal who oversaw the Gale Plains.

Just in case, he too had temporarily left and followed Murong Xun and the others. So, even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect had sent two Martial Kings, the Water King and the Fire King, they were no match for the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

As the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan were suppressing the Fire King and Water King, the Sixth Immortal commenced a massacre. He completely slaughtered the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, leaving behind only the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, Fu Fengming, the Water King,

and the Fire King.

"Why isn't that Sixth Immortal making a move to finish off the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Instead, he's allowing them to continue fighting. Does he not fear a change in circumstances?" The Immortal Execution Archipelago was clearly able to end the battle, yet they didn't. When they saw such a scene, some observers felt confused.

"You are truly foolish! Can't you tell? Why else do you think the Immortal Execution Archipelago detained us and said there was a good show? This, right now, is the good show they want to show us.

"He wants them to fight, and let the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan kill off the Water King and Fire King, then let Murong Xun kill off the Three Protectors' disciples.

"With that, not only would their strength be shown, it would even emphasize the Crippling Night Demon Sect's powerlessness. They want to tell the entire world that if they fought on equal ground, the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago," explained someone who understood what was happening.

"Hahaha, you shameless fools from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Right now, I will not do anything! I give you a fair confrontation, and as long as you win on either battlefield, I will allow all of you to leave safely! However... I'm just afraid you won't be able to use this chance!

"Oi oi oi, Water King Fire King, what are you two old things doing? Back in the day, weren't you two so mighty? Are both of you old now? Or that you've always been useless, and can only scare others with the facade of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?

"And you three brats, aren't you all a bit too useless? At least the Water King and Fire King are in a fair match, but why can't the three of you even defeat a single person? Why are you all so useless? The Three Protectors' disciples don't really seem to be all that impressive, huh?" The Sixth Immortal felt even smugger when he heard the crowd's discussions. What he aimed for was this effect. He wanted to humiliate the Crippling Night Demon Sect in public.

“Hoh. The Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been a bunch of shameless people. They only know how to ambush the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s younger generation with the old dogs who’ve cultivated for many years. They are simply cowards, don’t you think?” As Murong Xun held a large golden blade and fought Xuan Xiaochao and the others, there was no end to his sneering and mocking as his sinister face also filled itself with arrogance.

Chapter 883: Chu Feng Has Come

“Murong Xun, that’s quite a proud smile you have there. Have you forgotten when my Brother Chu Feng pushed down your fiancée Ya Fei and your sister Murong Wan?” You Tonghan did not back down as Murong Xun mocked him, and instead, counterattacked by reminding him of Ya Fei.

“You’re looking to die!” Murong Xun was enraged when he heard that, because that was a pain that would eternally remain in his heart. It was humiliation he could never erase in his entire life.

At that instant, he was like a dog that went insane as he continuously brandished the golden blade in his hand. Golden half-moon blades of light appeared endlessly as they slashed towards You Tonghan.

bang bang bang Before such attacks of madness, You Tonghan was thrown into a passive state. Even though Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming did their best to help him, they could not stop Murong Xun’s attacks.

puchi

“Ah!”

Finally, a golden blade of light passed through their defences, and You Tonghan instantly cried out.

When they looked at him, Xuan Xiaochao’s and Fu Fengming’s expression changed greatly. They were able to see You Tonghan’s face splattered with blood—his lower jaw was forcibly cut away, and even his tongue was chopped. He, at that moment, was in quite a pitiful state.

“Hahaha, you wanted to insult me, huh? These are the consequences of insulting me!” After cutting off You Tonghan’s tongue and lower jaw, Murong Xun roared with laughter and started to ridicule them again.

“Murong Xun, I will kill you!” Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, good brothers of You Tonghan, could not tolerate that. Both of their eyes were blood-red and their fury soared. Putting forth their full strength, they

attacked Murong Xun.

"AHH—" As for You Tonghan, he was incomparably furious. He, who could not even speak, let out a horrifying roar. As he waved the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he too wanted to attack Murong Xun.

whoosh whoosh whoosh The attacks from the furious three were not to be underestimated. When powerful martial skills were added onto the three Incomplete Royal Armaments, their weapons truly became three bloodthirsty fierce beasts. With bursts of gales, howls, and their horrifying might, they surrounded and attacked Murong Xun.

Even a typical rank nine Martial Lord would be defeated by such attacks, and from that, it could be seen that their strength was quite powerful.

"Hmph." Yet, Murong Xun snorted disdainfully at such ferocious attacks. The golden blade in his hand waved and when a boundless pressure erupted, a golden blade of light also swept over.

With a boom, their attacks blended with one another. As the uncontrollable ripples were wreaking havoc, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming all cried out in pain. When their vision was clear once again, all three of them were heavily injured, blood everywhere on their bodies. They lost their ability to fly as they fell down from the air. Then, in the end, like three piles of mud, they crashed onto the ground, and also lost their ability to move.

"My gods, Murong Xun alone actually won against three!"

"He's too strong! Those three are not ordinary rank eight Martial Lords, they are the direct disciples of the Three Protectors! They are the geniuses chosen from several tens of thousands of people! Yet, even when they had joined hands, they were still no match for Murong Xun!"

"Powerful. He's too powerful. Murong Xun is deservedly the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region!" The crowd cried out when they saw that as they were completely convinced by Murong Xun's powerful strength.

As for the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they were ecstatic. They even raised their fists and loudly shouted at the same time:

"Number one genius!"

"Number one genius!"

"Number one genius!"

"Number one genius!"

"..."

In an instant, the three words "number one genius" exploded. They were even more deafening than thunder as they spread through the air.

As he heard such cheers, Murong Xun laughed smugly, and he loudly shouted, "In the Eastern Sea Region, of the same generation, who even stands a chance against me, Murong Xun?"

Arrogance was transparent in his words. He had truly reached the extremity of arrogance. But even so, there was not a single person who refuted him. Instead, they all nodded their heads, expressing agreement because the strength he displayed was worthy of the title of the number one genius.

"Number one genius, huh? How about you give me some pointers?" However, just at that moment, a mocking voice rang out from the distance.

Such a sudden shout attracted everyone's attention. Even the Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan and the Water and Fire King fighting intensely in the sky temporarily stopped. They cast their gazes in the direction of the voice. They wanted to see who exactly was challenging Murong Xun at a moment like this.

When they looked over, they could clearly see a person appearing from the horizon. Many World Spiritists could feel it was a rank five Martial Lord. Yet, they didn't understand why a mere rank five Martial Lord dared to provoke Murong Xun in such a way. Where did his courage come from?

That person was also very quick. His minuscule body endlessly grew

larger within their line of sight, and after they saw his appearance, not a single person wasn't stupefied.

"Chu Feng? It's Chu Feng!" At that instant, they were all dumbfounded. All of them roundly widened their eyes and their mouths. Their tongues were truly tied in a knot was they felt immense shock.

Currently, in the Eastern Sea Region, who didn't know Chu Feng?

Chu Feng had not only killed experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he even took away Murong Xun's Royal Armament. Not only that, he even took away Murong Xun's fiancée. Not only that, it was said he even violated Ya Fei and Murong Wan! They were Murong Xun's fiancée and sister!

Chu Feng's very actions had laid an irreconcilable hostility between himself and the Immortal Execution Archipelago. He could even be said to be the person the Immortal Execution Archipelago dreamt of killing.

He was already a heavily wanted criminal in the Eastern Sea Region. The reward for his capture moved innumerable people's hearts.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng so openly appeared in front of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. How could they not feel shocked?

"Chu Feng!"

In comparison to the mere shock others felt after seeing Chu Feng, Murong Xun on the other hand tightly clenched his fists. An indescribable fury and bloodlust surged forth. When he saw Chu Feng who was coming closer and closer, he truly wanted to pounce up to him and bite him to death.

But he could not, because if he did, everyone would feel that the rumour he violated his fiancée and sister was true. He had to endure, at least he had to endure right now. He had to act as if nothing happened. He had to have a bearing of a young master.

Other than Murong Xun's overflowing hatred, the Sixth Immortal and the others from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt indescribable fear and uneasiness. All of them carefully swept their gazes over their

surroundings with nervousness.

They all felt the reason Chu Feng dared to so daringly challenge Murong Xun was likely because he was prepared. It was very possible that the Crippling Night Demon Sect had sent reinforcements.

But after careful examination, they discovered other than Chu Feng, there were not even any signs of anyone else. So, they couldn't help but feel their worry decrease slowly.

Then, replacing it was unspeakable excitement because they felt Chu Feng had come here to die.

Chapter 884: Who's a Genius

"Chu Feng, you truly have quite the nerves!" After confirming Chu Feng had come alone, the Sixth Immortal first sneered, then said with an extremely furious tone, "You killed members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, took away my Immortal Execution Archipelago's Royal Armament, and yet, you still dare to appear in front of us! Are you not afraid of dying?"

However, Chu Feng completely ignored the Sixth Immortal's words. After coming over, he flew down, and amidst the shocked gazes of the crowd, he came up to Xuan Xiaochao and the others.

Chu Feng first took out six pellets—for pain killing and healing—and fed them to Xuan Xiaochao, Fu Fengming, and You Tonghan.

"Mm—"

However, when he fed the pellets to You Tonghan, one of his hands tightly grasped Chu Feng's wrist. He, who could not speak, was making odd sounds. At the same time, he stared at Chu Feng with a pleading gaze.

Chu Feng understood what he was trying to say. He nodded, then patted You Tonghan's shoulder. Afterwards, he looked at Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming, then said, "Brothers, I understand. I will avenge all of you."

After speaking, Chu Feng suddenly rose up. After he was in the air, he first looked around with his fierce gaze, then stopped turning around at Murong Xun. He said with a calm voice, "Murong Xun, you said you're the number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Today, I, Chu Feng, will challenge you, a rank eight Martial Lord, as a rank five Martial Lord. If you win, I'll return your Immortal Execution Archipelago's Royal Armament.

"However, if you lose, release everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect. How about it?"

"You are truly arrogant. You, a mere rank five Martial Lord? You think I

would be afraid of you?" How could Murong Xun, who was itching to kill Chu Feng, be afraid of him? Without even thinking, he agreed. But then, he quickly shouted, "Since you overestimate yourself and dare to challenge me, I'll add another condition. I just don't know if you dare or not."

"Add what? Tell me," Chu Feng said with a calm tone.

"Whoever loses must kneel and beg for forgiveness. They must also, in front of everyone, call the winner 'grandfather' ten times, and say he's a 'grandson'. Do you dare?" Murong Xun loudly shouted. His tone was filled with fury, because he truly hated every fibre of Chu Feng.

"I'm willing to do that, but I'm just afraid you won't stick to your word." As Chu Feng spoke, he cast his gaze towards the Sixth Immortal because he did not believe the Immortal Execution Archipelago would truly let them go after his victory.

"Don't worry. The Immortal Execution Archipelago stays true to their word. As long as you win, I will allow all of you to safely leave," the Sixth Immortal said with a smile.

He had absolute confidence in Murong Xun, so he felt it was impossible for Chu Feng to win. He felt the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were undoubtedly going to die today. Since victory was grasped within his hand, he didn't mind letting everyone here watch a longer spectacle. He would let everyone know that Chu Feng wasn't any genius, and that he was simply no match for Murong Xun.

"Murong Xun, go ahead. However, some advice: don't be too careless because I will give you a fierce lesson." Chu Feng cast his gaze towards Murong Xun after the Sixth Immortal's agreement.

"You want to give me a lesson? You must have forgotten how pitiful you were back then in the Depraved Valley," Murong Xun said with a cold smile, because back then, he had indeed beaten Chu Feng quite painfully.

However, Chu Feng was not angered in the slightest. Instead, he said with a smile, "What cultivation did I have back then, and what cultivation did you have back then? Right now, my cultivation has increased, but

what about you?

"I, Chu Feng, before twenty years of age, am already a rank five Martial Lord. You, on the other hand, are already over thirty years old, yet you're still a rank eight Martial Lord. Back then, when you defeated me, that was merely the elder bullying the young, the strong bullying the weak. What is there to be proud of? What is worthy to be proud of?"

"You..." When Chu Feng refuted him in such a way, Murong Xun was instantly speechless. He didn't know what to do amidst the anger.

"Yeah! Chu Feng's right! We've only saw the difference in cultivation, but forgot the difference in age. We've forgotten about their time in cultivation! They are over ten years apart, so their time in cultivation is also over ten years apart. Yet, right now, Chu Feng already dares to challenge Murong Xun. I must say that he's truly quite courageous, and he does possess this strength."

"That's right. When Chu Feng went famous, he had just shortly become a Martial Lord. Yet, at that time, Murong Xun was already a rank eight Martial Lord. Right now, with the passing of time, Chu Feng is a rank five Martial Lord. His speed of improvement in cultivation can even be called divine! Yet, Murong Xun is still only a rank eight Martial Lord. He could be said to be walking on the spot."

"Both of you are right. No matter the time in cultivation, or speed of improvement, Chu Feng is indeed superior to Murong Xun.

"I've even heard two months ago, Chu Feng had appeared in the Winter Plains and killed the head of the Stone Sword Sect as well as a rank eight Martial Lord from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. If that's true, it means Chu Feng truly has the strength to defeat a rank eight Martial Lord."

"That means even though Murong Xun, a rank eight Martial Lord, can defeat Xuan Xiaochao and the others, also rank eight Martial Lords, when compared to Chu Feng's insane fighting strength, the difference is truly enormous!

"Not only that, it's said Chu Feng also grasps three Secret Skills and the

World Spirit he made a contract with is from the Asura Spirit World! Even the Royal Armament he got from Murong Xun had completely approved of Chu Feng with Absolute Submission! These are things Murong Xun hadn't done before!"

"Yeah! This means the distance between the two is really too big. Putting aside strength, just in terms of aptitude, Chu Feng and Murong Xun are on two completely different levels! Chu Feng is indeed far above Murong Xun, and Chu Feng is the deservedly supreme genius, the number one person in the Eastern Sea Region's young generation!"

At that instant, the crowd burst with discussion. Even though they had lowered their voices, and some even sent mental messages, it couldn't escape the ears of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. When they heard all that, everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago had twisted faces as they were all furious.

They were not only furious at their discussion. In the end, they were furious towards Chu Feng. It was Chu Feng who did so many shocking actions that made Murong Xun completely ordinary.

As for Murong Xun himself, he was enraged. He didn't expect just a few simple words from Chu Feng pushed himself onto the very front of criticisms, making everyone feel he was inferior to Chu Feng.

However, Murong Xun was no ordinary person. His fury was not revealed, and he instead sneered. He continued clawing at Chu Feng's weak point, not letting go. He loudly said, "Chu Feng, you only talk about today, but not of the past. However, it was a fact that you were stepped beneath my feet. In my perspective, you think it's shameful so that's why you don't dare to mention what happened back then, right?"

"Hoh." However, Chu Feng still gave a light smile at Murong Xun's humiliation techniques, then said, "Murong Xun, since you enjoy mentioning the past, how about I tell everyone how I took your Royal Armament deep within the Depraved Valley, and how I greatly made love to Ya Fei and Murong Wan?"

Chapter 885: Murong Xun Displaying His Might

"You're looking to die!" Murong Xun was enraged when he heard this. He truly could tolerate it no longer. He threw out a palm, and started attacking Chu Feng.

When that palm attack was sent, gales crossed with one another, and howls rang out everywhere. Countless bursts of Martial power gathered from all directions, and condensed to create golden images of a palm.

That palm not only contained horrifying power, there were also many. As they densely filled up the sky, they were like an army of locusts as they surged towards Chu Feng.

This was not an ordinary attack—it was a rank six martial skill. Although it wasn't too high of a level, in Murong Xun's hands, it became extremely fierce. The power it contained was enough to destroy a part of this world, and there would be no problem killing tens of thousands of commoners with that strike.

However, Chu Feng merely smiled at his attack because Murong Xun was not calm enough. His agitation announced the world one fact: Chu Feng not only took away the Royal Armament from his hands, Chu Feng had also truly violated his fiancée and sister.

Thinking that if this were to be publicly announced, it would not only make Murong Xun lose face, it would even regain face for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng felt endless excitement. He was extremely happy, and even loudly said, "Immortal Execution Archipelago! You laid this trap and invited a crowd just to disgrace the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You've truly done quite some work this time!

"And today, I, Chu Feng, won't put your efforts to waste. I will let the world know that your Immortal Execution Archipelago's young master, the so-called number one genius of the Eastern Sea Region, is useless."

As he spoke, an extremely powerful aura erupted from Chu Feng's body.

Then, he spread open his arms—left hand pulling an illusory bow, right hand pulling an illusory arrow—and as his arms pulled and released, countless swishes rang out. A myriad of golden arrows were shot out—that was the rank five martial skill, the Bow of Hundred Transformations.

boom boom boom boom

Although the Bow of Hundred Transformations was merely a rank five martial skill, in Chu Feng's hand, its power was extremely frightening. When they collided into Murong Xun's countless golden palms, they were not in any inferior standings.

"Heavens! Chu Feng's actually able to fight against Murong Xun as a rank five Martial Lord!"

When they saw the dazzling golden radiance endlessly exploding in the sky, the observers were all astonished. Although their attacks were fairly equal, they could tell that their ranks were different. Murong Xun was using a rank six martial skill, while Chu Feng was using a rank five martial skill.

Chu Feng, a rank five Martial Lord, used a rank five martial skill that was able to fight off the rank six martial skill used by Murong Xun, a rank eight Martial Lord. How could the observers even remain calm?

That was sufficient to prove one point: Chu Feng's fighting strength was indeed as insane as rumoured. It was simply unimaginable, and worthy of admiration.

"You do have a bit of skill." Murong Xun's complexion changed slightly when he saw that. He frowned a bit, and in his eyes filled with fury, a hint of seriousness emerged.

Recalling back then, when he met Chu Feng, since his cultivation was far superior to him, he had no need to use any techniques and just by pressure alone, he was able to suppress Chu Feng. So, he couldn't feel Chu Feng's fighting strength at all, which led him to constantly look down on him.

Yet, after the exchange today, he felt something was off. Although he

didn't use his full strength in the martial skill just now, he did not hold himself back. Yet, Chu Feng was able use a martial skill a whole rank lower than his own to fight against him. That was evidence of Chu Feng's strength—it was not a mere rumour.

Murong Xun was no fool; instead, he was extremely smart. He could be counted as the peak amongst the younger generation.

So, even though he hated Chu Feng completely, he was not blinded by hatred. Right now, he didn't dare to be careless in any way. He knew he had to put forth his full strength, because he could not afford to lose. If he lost, he would not only shame himself, he would shame his entire Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"Chu Feng, I would quite like to see how you'll take this next one!"

After being aware of Chu Feng's power, Murong Xun suddenly shouted. Then, he leapt, explosively back. His left hand in a fist, layers of purple ripples were emerging and layers upon layers of powerful strength condensed within his fist.

His right hand opened up, and again there were outlines of a golden palm appearing. Their might was not only frightening, the energy contained within them was even inestimable powerful.

"This aura... It's the Immortal Execution Archipelago's rank nine martial skills, Fist of Soaring Purple Aura and Palm of Golden Wisdom!" When they saw that, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago all had changes in their expressions. They couldn't help shouting in surprise.

"What? He's using two rank nine martial skills at the same time? Murong Xun's aptitude is this high?" After hearing those words, the observers felt greatly shocked.

Rank nine martial skills were already difficult to cultivate, and they were not something ordinary Martial Lords could control. However, to a genius like Murong Xun, it wasn't a big deal. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say he could pick one up casually.

But using two rank nine martial skills at the same time was extremely difficult. As the saying went, A single heart cannot be used for two things, let alone two rank nine martial skills!

So, when Murong Xun displayed that technique, it was sufficient proof to his outstanding aptitude in cultivation.

“Today, I’ll let you experience what a combined technique is.”

After channeling the two rank nine martial skills, Murong Xun, who had shot backwards, suddenly pounced towards Chu Feng. When he was near, he attacked.

boom With the simultaneous attack of a fist and a palm, an explosion burst out. Two powerful techniques respectively became a purple stream of light and a golden image of a palm.

Both of them were incomparably powerful, but when they were cast, they gradually combined and in the end, they became a huge palm bursting with purple light, yet filled of golden lines as well.

That huge palm was too horrifying. As it streaked through the air, rumbles rang out in the sky and it even tore into space itself, becoming afterimages of darkness.

“My gods, we’ve really underestimated Murong Xun too much! He didn’t just use two martial skills at the same time, he even combined them together to increase their power!” When they saw the combined martial skill, everyone was shocked once again.

Even to the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan, and the Water and Fire King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, a hint of surprise flashed into their eyes. For a technique like that, not only were there extremely high requirements for cultivation, the most important part was its extremely high requirements for aptitude.

Speaking honestly from the soul, even they, four Martial Kings, found it difficult to combine two rank nine martial skill into one. However, Murong Xun had done it. They had to admit that Murong Xun indeed deserved the title of genius, because he truly was powerful.

“Murong Xun is this powerful? It seems that he really is far above us.” At that instant, even Xuan Xiaochao and the others, who did not accept the fact Murong Xun was strong, now frowned and were made aware of the distance between themselves and him.

Chapter 886: A Humiliating Counterattack

"Heh, you do have a slight bit of skill, and that suits my intentions perfectly. Otherwise, it would be a bit too boring."

In reality, not to mention others, even Chu Feng himself felt that Murong Xun's attack was not to be underestimated. The combination of the two martial skills into a rank nine martial skill had ascended. It was very powerful—something a normal rank nine martial skill was no match for.

Regardless of Chu Feng's level of arrogance, he had to admit that Murong Xun's strength had far surpassed typical rank eight Martial Lords.

However, in spite of that, Chu Feng was still not afraid at all. He overlaid his palms, and with a thought, he suddenly shouted, "Immortal Shield—Triple-layered Door!"

dong, dong, dong

After Chu Feng spoke, three deep bell sounds rang out. Along with the emergence of such a sound, three enormous and firm huge doors appeared above Chu Feng.

Each one was a hundred meters tall. Not only were they large, their shape was very overbearing as well. When they appeared, there were also some white clouds and mist that accompanied them, as if they came from paradise.

In the end, with extremely quick speed, the three doors fell and landed in front of Chu Feng. The three became a line that stopped the path of the combined technique.

"A rank nine martial skill instantly created! Chu Feng is this practiced with martial skills?!"

When they saw the three doors descending from the sky, the people who were initially dumbfounded by Murong Xun's combination martial skill couldn't help deeply gasping. They could feel that Chu Feng too had

cast a rank nine martial skill.

Yet, Chu Feng had cast such a powerful martial skill with just a thought. That had truly surpassed everyone's imagination, because that was even greater proof of Chu Feng's control over martial skills.

boom boom boom

Amidst the shock they felt, Murong Xun's combined technique had arrived. After three frightening explosions rang out, the rank nine martial skill Chu Feng made, the Immortal Shield—Triple-layered Door, was destroyed and shattered.

Most importantly, even though Murong Xun's technique had been weakened quite a bit after Chu Feng's defense broke into pieces, it did not dissipate. Instead, with a still horrifying might and blinding purple light and golden lines, it continued in Chu Feng's direction. Moreover, it was extremely quick—it had already arrived before him.

"Scatter." Chu Feng did not use any martial skills in a situation like that. Instead, he waved his sleeve as a boundless might was cast out, expelling the remnants of the combined technique.

However, the remnants were too powerful. Even though he had dispelled them, he was still struck by the remaining shock waves. Although he was not injured, he was still blown back by them, and only stabilized himself after a few steps.

"You, a 'supreme genius', don't seem like much! You can't block my attacks when I use just a bit of a technique." Murong Xun couldn't help but make a smug grin as he saw his attacks were effective.

"Heh, a combination technique, huh? Interesting. As they say, do unto others as they do unto you. How about you too receive my combination technique?"

Suddenly, a strange smile was worn on Chu Feng's face. Then, his left hand formed a fist, his right hand spread to form a palm, and two extremely powerful bursts of might started gathering within that fist and palm.

When they saw the golden lines and purple light appearing from Chu Feng's hands, everyone who watched was astounded, especially the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Their face greened immediately.

At that moment, the martial skill Chu Feng prepared to use was the exact same as Murong Xun's before—the Fist of Soaring Purple Aura and Palm of Golden Wisdom.

Those two rank nine martial skills were the core techniques of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Not only were they not publicly spread, only the high echelons of the Immortal Execution Archipelago could cultivate them.

However, at that very instant, Chu Feng not only grasped those private martial skills, he was even casting them in tranquility. He was simply slapping the Immortal Execution Archipelago's face in front of the crowd.

"Take this well!

"Haa—"

Chu Feng abruptly shouted, and cast the two martial skills at the same time. It was the exact same as Murong Xun's before—the two martial skills quickly combined into one, and their power multiplied as well.

The only difference was the combined technique Chu Feng sent was a bit louder. Although those two martial skills were combined, there were some odd waves.

Some people analyzed that it was possibly because Chu Feng's combination technique wasn't perfect, so that was why it was too loud, and also why waves had appeared.

However, if they knew it was the first time Chu Feng combined two techniques, they would definitely not think he was weak. Instead, they would definitely be stunned because due to its difficulty, no one had truly ever successfully combined two techniques on their first try.

Moreover, they didn't know there was something special hidden within the combined technique Chu Feng cast.

“Bastard, you kill the members from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and you even dare to cultivate martial skills from my Immortal Execution Archipelago! Do you truly know no shame?”

When Murong Xun saw his own martial skills being used against himself, he gnashed his teeth in anger. However, he didn’t dare to be careless. He quickly called forth Martial power and used a powerful defensive martial skill to defend.

After all, Chu Feng was the first who did that, so now, he had to do the same. As long as he could use a rank nine martial skill to stop Chu Feng’s combined technique, he could prove to the world that his strength was above Chu Feng’s.

hmm Murong Xun’s Martial power surged and very quickly, he made a shining protective barrier. It was different from the Three-layered Door Chu Feng used before—it didn’t protect a single direction, but instead, enveloped him completely. It could block attacks from all directions.

However, there are disadvantages for all advantages. Although it was also a rank nine martial skill, its defensive strength was clearly inferior to Chu Feng’s Three-layered Door. So, in order to avoid being defeated by Chu Feng, he even used a small technique: as he cast that martial skill, he imbued Spirit Formation power into it, and laid a simple but powerful defensive Spirit Formation.

When those two combined into one, its defensive strength was greatly increased. It was even much firmer than the martial skill Chu Feng used before.

Chu Feng’s technique was very quick. Almost at the same time Murong Xun finished creating his barrier, it had arrived. After a huge explosion, violent energy ripples became ferocious beasts that swept in all directions, engulfing everything.

“Heavens! This is?!”

However, when the ripples faded away, the observers all had a great change in expression. All of them widened their mouths in shock, and as they looked at Murong Xun, their eyes were full of shock and confusion.

In their perspective, Murong Xun's defensive martial skill was very powerful—even more powerful than the one Chu Feng used before. Even if he couldn't completely block Chu Feng's combined technique, he would, at most, be forced a few steps back like Chu Feng.

However, at that moment, it was completely different from their expectation. Murong Xun was not only blown a thousand meters away, his hair and clothes were in a mess. He simply looked exhausted, as if he had passed several years inside a gale. Otherwise, he wouldn't look so pitiful from such a blow.

"How has this happened?" That was everyone's question. The same attack, the same defense. Even if Murong Xun were inferior, he shouldn't be in such a bad state, right?

"I've got it! I know what happened!" Just at that moment, the Water King from the Crippling Night Demon Sect cried out. At the same time, his eyes as he looked at Chu Feng were filled with respect.

Chapter 887: Comparison of Techniques

"I see. That boy called Chu Feng didn't just combine two rank nine martial skills, he even combined a third martial skill—some sort of sound wave. That's why it made the technique seemed so oddly loud. It made it seem like it was unstable, but it was actually all created by the martial skill." Just at that moment, one of the Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan spoke. It too seemed to see what had happened.

"What a skillful technique. In stealth, he merged a third martial skill into the two rank nine martial skills, and even we didn't know about it. It seems that this boy called Chu Feng is truly not simple at all. Since he's an enemy, no matter what, he must not leave today." At the same time, the other Protector of the Inferno Divine Bird clan nodded. Moreover, strong killing intent emerged into its eyes.

After hearing their words, everyone understood why Murong Xun was in such a pathetic state even though they both used the same attack. It was all because of Chu Feng, who built on the existing technique and added in a sound wave martial skill amidst the two rank nine martial skills.

Although the sound waves didn't deal much damage to Murong Xun, they made his clothes chaotic. They had to admit that Chu Feng's techniques were truly quite skillful. At least, this counterattack towards Murong Xun was really too beautiful.

"Chu Feng, you despicable bastard! You dare to use such lowly methods! Today, I will cripple you!" Murong Xun was completely enraged. With the flip of his palm, the Incomplete Royal Armament he put away earlier reappeared within his hand. After it appeared, Murong Xun's aura instantly soared.

"Don't make it seem like you will let me go even if I did nothing to you. Regarding what kind of person you are, Murong Xun, do you not know yourself?" Chu Feng coldly smiled, then flipped his palm as well. He did not bring out the Royal Armament, and instead, took out his own Incomplete Royal Armament, the Dragon Marking Sword. Afterwards,

without saying anything more, he fought Murong Xun.

dang dang dang dang dang dang...

bang bang bang bang bang bang...

The two, with Incomplete Royal Armaments in their hands, didn't use any martial skills. Relying only on their own reactions and the most direct attacks, they started meeting force with force.

A large golden blade, and a long golden sword. When those two armaments clashed together, not only did they make ear-piercing sounds, they also brought out dazzling sparks. Every collision made a horrifying energy ripple which then spread in the air.

However, in the battle between two tigers, there would always be one wounded. No matter how close their strengths were, there would always be one stronger and one weaker.

At first, everyone even felt that in close combat with the Incomplete Royal Armament, Murong Xun would be the one with an advantage.

After all, what they were putting forth not only included cultivation aptitude, but it included more so fighting experience. In such a distance, for every single strike and move, there was no space for error. Otherwise, it would be disastrous.

Murong Xun had been cultivating for so long, and he had been in innumerable battles. Not to mention the younger generation, even many in the older generation were defeated by his hands. So, that was why they felt his fighting experience was bountiful, and he would gain an absolute advantage in close combat.

However, they quickly realized they were wrong. The Dragon Marking Sword in Chu Feng's grasp was handled very skillfully, and it was extremely fierce. The profound sword strikes, the unexpected attacks, and the unpredictable patterns. In many areas, he was superior to Murong Xun.

In the close combat battle between two geniuses whose cultivations were three ranks apart, the strong and the weak was quickly decided. And,

the strong was actually Chu Feng, who was three ranks weaker.

"I truly wouldn't have dared to imagine this! If I hadn't personally seen it, I truly wouldn't have believed such a genius appeared in the Eastern Sea Region!" The eyes of the Water King lit up. He was deeply attracted by Chu Feng's performance. He was convinced by his strength.

"Before, the Earth King and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers praised this Chu Feng incessantly. I still had my doubts, when after seeing him today, he truly surpasses my expectations. His aptitude is indeed outstanding. He really is a rare genius.

"Moreover, he even dared to appear and save us when we fell into such a state of despair. He ignored the safety of his own life and jumped into this perilous hellhole. I can tell that he's a very loyal child. It is truly our fortune to be able to recruit a young person such as him." The Fire King also nodded in praise.

"This child must be protected. Even if we use everything, we cannot let him die for us and destroy his great future," the Water King hiddenly sent.

The Fire King also nodded again, and returned, "My thoughts exactly. Such an excellent younger generation is the hope for our Crippling Night Demon Sect's glory. Later on, if the Sixth Immortal or those two birds from the Inferno Divine Bird clan dare to interfere, I will use the Forbidden Flame Mysterious Technique, and put forth everything for an opportunity to let Chu Feng, Xuan Xiaochao, and the others escape."

boom boom boom

Chu Feng did not know anything about their praises, and at that moment, he was using the skillful combination of the Dragon Marking Sword Technique and the Dragon Marking Sword to heavily oppress Murong Xun. As he did so, he did not forget to also mock him. "Murong Xun, aren't you a bit too weak? Why do you only know how to retreat? You don't know how to attack? This is too boring. Can't you give me a bit of pressure?

"The grand number one genius is only a trash like this? Other than bullying those with weaker cultivation, what else can you do?"

“You…” Murong Xun already felt greatly annoyed and displeased when the observers’ discussions and mocking words entered his ears. Yet now, Chu Feng, without holding anything back, started provoking him. That truly made him so angry even his heart and lungs were about to explode. He was itching to kill Chu Feng immediately and tear his corpse into a million pieces.

However, Murong Xun was no simple person. He was backing away right now, but that was because his attacks were indeed inferior to Chu Feng in head-to-head combat. On the other hand, however, he was doing the exact same thing Chu Feng’s did. A sinister technique was stealthily being channeled.

So, he did not refute Chu Feng, nor did he conceal his own fury. Instead, he emphasized his emotions and made his fury appear on his face, letting everyone see it.

Murong Xun was furious on the surface, but sneering inside. He thought sinisterly, “Keep feeling smug. I’ll immediately show you how deception is everywhere in a fight. A true fight is not only a contest of strength, but also intellect.”

As time dripped away, Chu Feng’s attacks because fiercer and fiercer. Bursts of golden swords of light were like a serpent as they were not only continuous and elegant, they were extraordinarily overbearing.

Some people even felt that watching Chu Feng fight was a type of enjoyment because his attacks were not only powerful, they were oddly beautiful as well.

“Mortal Taboo—Illusory Sword Technique!”

But out of nowhere, just as they were wholeheartedly watching that fight, Murong Xun suddenly shouted.

At the same time, the golden blade in his hand glittered with radiance. Its might multiplied, and an extremely horrifying aura exploded. It shot towards Chu Feng, who was close by.

Chapter 888: Rage

"Crap! This Murong Xun intentionally retreated so he could secretly channel a Mortal Taboo martial skill!"

Nearly everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect had a great change in expression. They were drenched in sweat from terror, because from such a distance, the power of a Mortal Taboo martial skill was very horrifying. Chu Feng had nearly no chance to escape.

"Beautiful!" In contrast to their expressions, however, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan, brightened up and felt Murong Xun's counterattack was magnificent.

"White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!"

But out of nowhere, just as they thought a disaster had fallen upon Chu Feng, he suddenly shouted and at the same time, pushed his palm forth. A tiger's roar then rang out.

A white claw shot out of Chu Feng's hand, and with terrifying might, collided into Murong Xun's Illusory Sword Technique.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

When those two horrifying attacks clashed, they instantly transformed into a ferocious energy wave. The wave brought about chaos and swept through everything, immediately engulfing Chu Feng and Murong Xun.

At that instant, no matter if they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago or the Crippling Night Demon Sect, all of them tightly furrowed their brows. Their nervousness reached the apex.

The wave of energy was really too horrifying. Chu Feng and Murong Xun were at the very center, so one could imagine the power they were up against.

Even though both of their attacks became an energy wave, and as such, the power from both the Illusory Sword Technique and the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique had been diminished greatly, an ordinary person

could absolutely not survive from such a wave.

swish Just at that moment, a person suddenly shot out from the wave and landed onto a warship from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It was Murong Xun.

However, at that moment, not only were his clothes in disorder, blood was everywhere on his body—he had been heavily injured. The hand grasping the Incomplete Royal Armament was injured especially horrendously: not only were his eerie white bones revealed, there weren't even any signs of his flesh and blood. It was truly an unbearable sight to behold.

hmm

After Murong Xun escaped from the wave, it started to disappear. At that instant, everyone was able to get a clear view of Chu Feng's position before he disappeared within the wave. A jade-green barrier had appeared, and Chu Feng was standing within it. His clothes were not only undamaged, he didn't even have the slightest of wounds.

"Heavens! Both of them were clearly struck by that wave, yet Murong Xun is the one wounded bloodily right now while Chu Feng is uninjured at all! What exactly happened?"

After seeing Murong Xun's pitiful state, then back to Chu Feng, whose clothes were unruffled, everyone was astonished. They couldn't think of a reason for such a scene.

"Murong Xun, you think yourself to be skillful, but you don't know I had already captured it all within my eyes when you were channeling your Mortal Taboo martial skill. Before you even made your move, I had already thought of a counter.

"Although my White Tiger Slaughtering Technique is a Secret Skill, I have not mastered it yet. There is still a gap between it and your Illusory Sword Technique. The reason I used it wasn't to break through your Illusory Sword Technique by overwhelming power, but instead to destroy it, causing your Taboo martial skill and my Secret Skill to become an energy wave.

“In the instant the wave spawned, I had already used the Black Tortoise Armour Technique. As such, no matter the power of the wave, it would not harm me in any way.

“You, on the other hand, were different. You simply did not anticipate I too would send an attack in the instant you sent an attack, nor did you expect I would turn your Illusory Sword Technique into an energy wave.

“That’s why you simply could not react when the wave was created, nor did you have time to arrange any defensive measures. You could only face the wave, created by your Illusory Sword Technique and my White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, head-on.

“You want to play tricks with me? I’ve let you know what a true trick is.

“How is it, Murong Xun? Does it feel good to be injured by the martial skill you yourself sent?” Chu Feng wore a smile on his face. He explained to Murong Xun and everyone else in detail the process of what had occurred.

Chu Feng’s very action was undoubtedly slapping his face in front of everyone. He was telling all of them that Murong Xun thought he was being clever with his trick, but in reality, Chu Feng had already seen through all of his preparations.

“Huu—”

After everything that had happened, other than the Immortal Execution Archipelago, everyone else couldn’t help deeply inhaling. They were thoroughly convinced by Chu Feng’s tactic.

The gap of three ranks between Chu Feng and Murong Xun was one thing, but after several confrontations, Chu Feng had always been superior to Murong Xun. He could not gain any sort of advantage from Chu Feng’s hands, as if his mind were read completely. He simply had no chance to speak of, and could only suffer again and again.

When the fight had progressed to its present state, there was not much meaning in continuing because everyone could tell that no matter aptitude, or strength, or strategy, Chu Feng was above Murong Xun.

Right now, the person with the title of the Eastern Sea Region's number one genius was fated to change, because so long as Chu Feng existed, Murong Xun could not be worthy of such a title.

Right now, the person who truly deserved to be called the Eastern Sea Region's number one genius was Chu Feng.

At least, in many people's eyes, that title could not belong to anyone else other than Chu Feng.

"Sixth Immortal, didn't you say the Immortal Execution Archipelago always stays true to its word?

"You're preparing to release them? Or, are you only willing to release them when I beat your young master into a cripple?" Finally, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the Sixth Immortal.

"This..." The Sixth Immortal's expression changed when facing Chu Feng's question. He had no clue how to respond.

He never would have expected Murong Xun to lose. He simply didn't expect Chu Feng to suppress Murong Xun to such a pitiful state.

Looking at the current circumstances, Murong Xun was indeed no match for Chu Feng. Even if the contest continued, they would gain only more humiliation. There was simply no need to persist.

Yet, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had made so many painstaking preparations for today! How could they so easily release Chu Feng and the others?

However, there were so many people watching this. If he truly did not release them, that would mean he went back on his word. It was not good for such a thing to circulate amongst the populations.

Yet... they could not kill everyone who wasn't a part of the Immortal Execution Archipelago just to conceal that secret.

After bringing them here, the Immortal Execution Archipelago did not continue restricting the observers' freedom. That led to many people who didn't wish to watch such a "good show" to leave.

So, it was impossible to hide what happened today. Sooner or later, it was going to spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region. He could not release them, yet he could not not release them. It was truly an extremely difficult conundrum.

"I have not been defeated yet!" Murong Xun suddenly shouted. At that moment, blood was all over his body, his complexion was ashen, but in his eyes, there was strong rage and bloodlust. The power of his bloodlust even twisted space itself nearby.

One had to admit that when they looked at Murong Xun, he did seem a bit scary. Everyone could feel the rage and bloodlust he felt—it was truly the last straw for the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, Chu Feng was not afraid of Murong Xun, regardless of the anger he felt. Not only that, he even strode forth in the air, and as he walked towards Murong Xun, who was in a warship floating in the air, he said with a smile, "Murong Xun, oh Murong Xun. It seems that you are truly unwilling to give up until you are completely defeated. Since it's like this, then I won't hold myself back. This time, I will beat you until you beg for forgiveness."

Chapter 889: Vicious Demonic Technique

Chu Feng's long hair fluttered to and fro as his robe followed suit. As he stood in the air, he was akin to a lord who had never been defeated. As he slowly stepped forward, the several thousand Martial Lords on the warship greatly changed their expressions. All of them couldn't help backing away as they were deterred by Chu Feng's might.

"Chu Feng, don't think you're already invincible! If I truly want to kill you, you stand no chance!"

But who would have thought as he faced Chu Feng, who arrived with a powerful bearing, Murong Xun wasn't just fearless, he even let out an explosive shout.

"HAA—"

After that shout rang out, Murong Xun's eyes instantly became blood-red. Moreover, a boundless blood-red aura burst out from his body, and like a chain, passed through the several thousand Martial Lords standing behind him.

"Ahh—"

When those chains pierced through their bodies, all of them made painful screams. They were kneeling on the ground, rolling around, hugging their heads, and howling—they were feeling great agony.

As they shrieked in pain, layers and layers of power could be clearly seen surging out of their bodies and entering Murong Xun's body through the blood-red chains.

When such power channeled into him, Murong Xun started recovering. The clearest sign of that was when his boney hand, which lacked any flesh or blood, started returning to its original state. There wasn't even a hint of a scratch, as if he were never wounded in the first place.

Moreover, Murong Xun's weak aura also started to recover. Not only recover, it even started to soar. In just a blink, his cultivation rose to a rank nine Martial Lord's. That powerful aura could nearly be compared to

a Martial King's.

"AHH—"

However, even though Murong Xun's aura had risen unbelievably, the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, bored by the blood-red chains, were quite appalling.

For all several thousand people, they not only had pales faces, in just that instant, they had aged dozens of years. Their skin shriveled, lacking any vigor. They, who were at a robust age, now became old elders. All of them turned feeble and weak.

"Heavens! What happened?"

"Evil practices! This is definitely an evil art! Forcibly absorbing the power of others to forcibly increase one's own cultivation—this is a demonic technique!"

"This is truly infuriating! The young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago cultivates such a demonic technique like this! And even uses it on his own clan's forces! This is an action of a demon! The heavens will not allow such an act to go without retribution!"

Everyone could tell what was happening. Clearly, Murong Xun had used a special demonic attack and stripped away the several thousand Martial Lords of their cultivation and life, thus strengthening himself.

On the journey of cultivation, although there was no absolute righteousness, it was unacceptable to increase one's own cultivation by destroying another's future. It was even something to be despised.

That was why, at that very instant, other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nearly everyone else felt furious. They were furious at Murong Xun, who, in order to defeat Chu Feng, used such a despicable and cruel method. It was truly shameless and ruthless.

"YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN! YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN! YOUNG MASTER WILL WIN!" But out of the blue, the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago who had a portion of their cultivation and life sucked away dragged their weak bodies up, raised their arms, and

cheered. They loudly cheered for Murong Xun, who took away their most important things!

Looking at how they acted, it was as if they simply did not blame Murong Xun for what he did to them, and instead felt it was an honour.

The observers were truly dumbfounded when they saw such a scene. What they did was no longer loyalty, but asininity.

"Don't worry! In the future, I will compensate all of you for today's sacrifice! After returning to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, I will reward you even more!" Murong Xun satisfiedly nodded his head at his subordinates' actions, then cast his gaze bursting with bloodlust at Chu Feng, then said, "Chu Feng, bring out the Royal Armament. Today, I will personally take back my Royal Armament from your hands!" Suddenly, Murong Xun leapt. With a horrifying atmosphere, he rose from the warships and dashed towards Chu Feng.

"Heh, with just this little strength, you are still not worthy for me to use the Royal Armament." However, even though Murong Xun forcibly raised his cultivation by one full rank, Chu Feng still did not see him as a worthy opponent.

"Lightning Armour." With a thought, four colours of lightning surged within his eyes. At the same time, bursts of lightning surged out of his body and became an armour of lightning that enveloped Chu Feng's body.

After it appeared, Chu Feng's cultivation also rose. From a rank five Martial Lord, he became a rank six Martial Lord.

aoo—

After increasing his cultivation, an azure dragon appeared beneath Chu Feng's feet. The Black Tortoise Armour Technique around his body remained, and with a tight clench over the Dragon Marking Sword, and with his cultivation of a rank six Martial Lord, the power of two Secret Skills, and the might of an Incomplete Royal Armament, he fought Murong Xun.

boom boom boom boom boom

Two figures of extraordinary demeanor clashed together. In an instant, all sorts of rumbles rang out endlessly, and there was no end to the uncontrollable shock waves that were created.

Murong Xun was thoroughly enraged. Even though he was not weak at all with the Incomplete Royal Armament in his hand, he still kept on sending out fierce martial skills and put everything on the line to kill Chu Feng.

As for Chu Feng himself, with the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique and the Black Tortoise Armor Technique—the two Secret Skills' powerful defensive strength and skillful movement—and also with the masterful attacks from the Dragon Marking Sword, he made a fool out of Murong Xun as he circled around him. He was completely in the advantage.

"Chu Feng, stop dodging and evading! Could it be you don't dare to fight me straight on?" Murong Xun's attacks all met air when Chu Feng toyed with him. That made him gnash his teeth in anger, and he was simply about to go insane.

"White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!" However, immediately after Murong Xun spoke, Chu Feng suddenly attacked. A White Tiger Slaughtering Technique struck out, and it gave Murong Xun nearly no space to react. Instantly, it destroyed all of Murong Xun's attacks.

"Ahh—" Finally, unable to defend against such a strike, Murong Xun took on the attack with his entirety. Amidst a cry, he was shot several miles away, and landed into the crowd of the observers.

"Huaa—" At that moment, the observers quickly scattered. As they looked at the pale-faced and bloody Murong Xun, who was lying in the air and even lost half of his arm, they all gazed with cold eyes. Not a single person went up to help him.

Chapter 890: The Holy Daughter Appears

"Ahh, this Murong Xun uses such sinister demonic techniques to absorb so many experts' cultivation and life, yet he is still no match for Chu Feng. His time has truly gone. His current title of number one genius is fated to leave."

"Yeah! The distance between them is really too big, and that's not only in terms of strength and aptitude. In many other places, Murong Xun is far inferior to Chu Feng!"

At that moment, not only was there no one who helped Murong Xun, there were even many who discussed secretly amongst themselves, jabbing at his pains and criticized everything about him.

That made Murong Xun, who already had a stomach filled with anger, even more enraged. He roared, "You dare to talk about me like this? Who the hell do you think you are?!

"You trash! I didn't invite you here to slander my Immortal Execution Archipelago! I give you a good treatment, but you reject it. What use do you have now then? Go die!"

Murong Xun suddenly roared. The blood-red aura was akin to a fierce beast as it, amidst a strange sound and horrifying might, burst out from his body again, instantly engulfing all the observers at that location.

"AHH—"

At that instant, all sorts of painful cries rang continuously. Those who were enveloped by the blood-red aura all felt so much pain they wished they were dead as their howls reached even the heavens.

The demonic technique Murong Xun used right now wasn't simply just absorbing a portion of their cultivation and life. It was completely refining their life and cultivation—he was killing them.

As they were absorbed so heartlessly, all of them, from undamaged bodies, became persons of blood as they were horrifically mangled. In the end, they became pools of blood—they were all cleanly engulfed by

Murong Xun, and died without a complete corpse.

"This dammed Murong Xun, he's actually this cruel..."

When they saw such a scene, nearly everyone's expression changed greatly. Their feelings of anger sprang up coincident with indescribable uneasiness and fear as all those emotions flooded their hearts because they knew, today, they were going to face a disaster.

"Immortal Execution Archipelago, attention! Kill all these outsiders who ignore our kindness. Leave none alive!" the Sixth Immortal ordered. Indeed, as the saying went, "whatever one worries is whatever will happen"—the Sixth Immortal worried about killing the observers, and that was the exact thing that happened.

"Yes sir!" Everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, after hearing his words, revealed their killing intent. They cast their gazes full of bloodlust towards the fearful-faced observers who were scattered outside the battlefield.

"Run! The Immortal Execution Archipelago are planning to silence us!"

At that instant, the observers had already confirmed death was nearing them. As they cursed the Immortal Execution Archipelago's various vile acts, they escaped for their lives. They wanted to search for a chance of escape within the chaos.

However, how could the Immortal Execution Archipelago give them that chance? Seeing that typical Martial Lords could not catch up to those observers, the Sixth Immortal emanated his aura of Martial King to deter everyone. He was personally going to kill those who were witness to Murong Xun's usage of demonic technique.

He was going to kill them all in order to prevent them from spreading this news!

"Some Immortal Execution Archipelago this is! You aim to silence them after your wicked acts are revealed? Is this the famous upright clan that rids evil and guards righteousness?"

But just as the Sixth Immortal prepared to eradicate them all, a

woman's voice suddenly rang out. At the same time, a white-clothed beautiful figure soundlessly appeared before the observers, and stopped the Sixth Immortal and the others' path.

Most importantly, after she appeared, she emanated an aura no weaker than the Sixth Immortal's. It was the aura of a rank one Martial King, and naturally, that person was Qiushui Fuyan.

"Who are you?" the Sixth Immortal loudly questioned as he tightly furrowed his brows at her sudden emergence. His expression changed slightly when he faced this rank one Martial King, and did not make any rash movements.

In reality, the Sixth Immortal was not the only one who had such a reaction. Almost everyone's expression changed greatly as they couldn't help but cast their gazes at that woman.

At this moment, of nearly all Martial Lords, Chu Feng was invincible. Even Murong Xun was no match for Chu Feng, and likely even if all Martial Lords from the Immortal Execution Archipelago attacked at the same time, they would still do nothing to Chu Feng.

So, in terms of Martial Lords, even though the ones from the Crippling Night Demon Sect and in addition to the observers from many parts of the Eastern Sea Region were inferior in number to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, their strength was superior.

On the other hand, in terms of Martial Kings, the Immortal Execution Archipelago not only had the Sixth Immortal, they also had the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan. Yet, the Crippling Night Demon Sect only had the Water King and Fire King. No matter strength or numbers, they were inferior to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

And since a Martial King's strength was superior to all—it was simply not an existence a Martial Lord could fight against—everyone felt for today's battle, the Immortal Execution Archipelago grasped the ticket to victory. If they truly decided to kill them all, then the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the observers would all die.

Yet, right now, another rank one Martial King appeared, and judging by

aura, that person's strength was very powerful as well, an existence no weaker than the Sixth Immortal.

If that woman was from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then the absolute disadvantage they had would not only equal out, there was even the possibility of it becoming an advantage.

That person's appearance was of utmost importance. It was related to the outcome of this battle.

So, who that woman was and which side she stood on became the most crucial part. That was why everyone looked at her without shifting their gazes.

Qiushui Fuyan did not directly respond to their gazes and the Sixth Immortal's question. Instead, she raised her hand, and slowly lifted her veil. She showed her beautiful appearance that did not diminish over the years right in front of everyone.

"Yo-you're Qiushui Fuyan?!

After the Sixth Immortal saw her complexion, his expression changed greatly. His calm face could remain collected no longer.

He had thought of countless possibilities, but her being Qiushui Fuyan was one he didn't think of.

"What? Qiushui Fuyan? Which Qiushui Fuyan? The Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church? The former number one beauty of the Eastern Sea Region?"

"Rubbish! How many Qiushui Fuyans can there be in the Eastern Sea Region? Both this shocking appearance, and powerful strength, confirms without a doubt that this is the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church!"

"But, but... hasn't everyone from the Burning Heaven Church relocated to the Holy Land of Martialism?"

At that instant, not to mention the Sixth Immortal, nearly everyone's faces changed greatly. They were all dumbfounded, and with faces full of

shock, they examined the lithe Qiushui Fuyan. They felt this was not reality, that this was inconceivable.

No one would have thought they would still see the Holy Daughter of the Burning Heaven Church whose name was known throughout the world.

However, when she appeared so alive before their eyes, they could only feel shock and nothing else.

Chapter 891: Commencing a Massacre

"I've got it. As expected, our master guessed correctly. Lady Qiushui is Qiushui Fuyan. You didn't go to the Holy Land of Martialism, and had always remained in the Eastern Sea Region."

Finally, the Sixth Immortal's expression was slightly relieved. He sneered, seeming to understand what had happened in the past, then quickly said, "If I'm not mistaken, you've come here today likely for Chu Feng.

"But, Qiushui Fuyan, there has never been any enmity between my Immortal Execution Archipelago and your Burning Heaven Church. If you side with a brat like Chu Feng, you will make an enemy out of us. You must carefully think about the interests and detriments!"

"Since you know the reason I've come, why the useless question?" Qiushui Fuyan faintly smiled at the Sixth Immortal's words, then added, "Also, don't threaten me, because I have never been afraid of your Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"In the end, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is merely a force that used all sorts of despicable methods to rise in position amidst the power-struggle chaos, and you were only able to because there was no one powerful in the Eastern Sea Region. Who gave you the courage to dare to threaten me?"

"You..." The Sixth Immortal was not lightly angered at all. He didn't think Qiushui Fuyan would give no face at all by humiliating the Immortal Execution Archipelago in public.

"Everyone, the 'good show' is over. I'm sure all of you have also seen the true appearance of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"This force that raises a banner of righteousness is in reality the most despicable power. In comparison to the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who are outright and dares to claim responsibility for all the things they've done, the Immortal Execution Archipelago is truly unworthy to be the Eastern Sea Region's ruler.

“Everyone, go your own ways, but don’t forget to tell the world what happened today. It will also act as a warning for everyone to not blindly join the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and jump into this huge hellhole that does every evil thing imaginable.”

“Thank you for saving us today! We will not disappoint your wishes. We will tell the world today’s truth!”

After Qiushui Fuyan spoke, the observers felt endless gratitude. They clasped their hands, and after thanking together, they leapt forth and used all sorts of ability to flee into the distance. In order to avoid being captured in one net, they did not escape in one direction, but instead scattered and it was every person for themselves.

“Today, no one should even think of leaving!” The Sixth Immortal’s face turned cold when he saw their attempts. His overwhelming bloodlust was let out, and in an instant, black clouds appeared in the clear sky, gales arose, and it was as if the end of the world had arrived.

“You don’t decide if they leave or not.” However, Qiushui Fuyan, who had her eyes on the Sixth Immortal, did not give him a chance to kill them.

She raised her pure-white hand slightly in the air, and after a huge explosion, she willed into existence flames that could touch the sky itself. They became a blazing ocean of fire, submerging the Sixth Immortal within.

“Dammit!” When there was an attack from a rank one Martial King heading his way, how could the Sixth Immortal distract himself by chasing after others? He quickly flipped his palm and released a powerful martial skill to block Qiushui Fuyan’s flames.

aoo— Seeing the Sixth Immortal stopped by Qiushui Fuyan, the Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan also fiercely shouted and became enormous birds with a body ablaze with flames. They looked exactly like the huge bird seen back then in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

After the two Protectors transformed into their original appearances, a

sky full of flames gushed out. The flames pressed forth in all directions; they wanted to burn the people who were escaping to death.

"If you want to kill them, you must first pass through us!" The Water King and Fire King, who had rested for quite a while, didn't hesitate as they released their unique power of water and fire. First, they blocked their ferocious flames, then they started fighting the Inferno Divine Bird clan's Protectors once again.

"KILL—" With the eruption of battle, everyone from both sides did not waste any time as all the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago started bellowing "kill", and all leapt out from the warships.

Although no one dared to interfere in the fights between Martial Kings—they even had to stay far away from them—they still dared to interfere in the fights between Martial Lords. At that instant, several thousand Martial Lords surrounded Chu Feng. They wanted to suppress Chu Feng with numbers and bully the few with more.

Even though an entire warship of Martial Lords pounced towards Chu Feng, there was also a portion who headed towards Xuan Xiaochao and the others, including the injured Ten Gold-cloak Brothers. They truly prepared to kill all of them.

"None of you are worthy of killing us."

Due to Chu Feng's assistance with healing, and his own as well, the injuries on Xuan Xiaochao and the others had turned quite a bit for the better. Even You Tonghan's cut jaw and tongue, with Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming's help, were restored.

They were already brimming with anger, and now, there were people who looked for trouble. The three had found their targets to vent their fury.

All of them grasped within their hands an Incomplete Royal Armament. They sent out ferocious auras, and rushed into the battlefield. As if they were cutting fruits and vegetables, they started killing the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Even though they were all Martial Lords, the three's powerful strength had been displayed perfectly.

Although they were no match for Murong Xun, it was relatively easy to kill those people.

"Formation!"

The young ones bravely slaughtered their enemies, so naturally the old ones could not do anything inferior. Even though the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers were heavily injured, without the suppression from the Sixth Immortal, they acted as if they were revived. They too set out powerful fighting strength, and after laying their unique formation, they attacked with defense, quietly awaiting the arrival of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army.

Let alone these normal Martial Lord, their formation could even put up a fight against Murong Xun who had a Royal Armament!

Even though there was a large number of people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and they too were in a formation, the ten old men calmly received the arrival of attacks. With flawless coordination, they became fierce beasts. Regardless how many came, they killed them all. The experts' offensive attacks were akin to committing suicide. It was only a one-way path as they all became pools of blood.

If the heavily wounded Xuan Xiaochao and the others, and the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, were so brave and ferocious, then one could imagine how much more relentless Chu Feng was, who was uninjured and possessed outstanding strength.

At that moment, Chu Feng was simply like a slaughtering weapon. With him in the center, within a circumference of a thousand meters, it was like a bloody colosseum.

Those who stepped within that range would instantly be butchered. Not only instantly killed, even their Source Energy was refined by Chu Feng.

"AHH—"

In an instant, all sorts of painful cries rang out. Blood was like rain as it showered downward. The over ten thousand Martial Lords on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's three warships were unable to kill Chu

Feng and the others. Instead, they were like animals as they were slaughtered instead.

Chapter 892: Decided by One Strike

"You useless people! In order for all of your development, so many cultivation resources were wasted, and so much time was wasted. In the end, what were they for?

"Everyone, get the hell back here!" Murong Xun's eyes were full of blood from anger as he looked at his subordinates who were falling one after the other. He couldn't help but curse at them loudly.

At that instant, none of the experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago dared to go against his words. They no longer went to send their lives away, and instead, put away their attacks and entered a defensive state. Finally, all of them half-knelt orderly in front of Murong Xun, and said together, "We have been incompetent! Young master, please grant us punishment!"

"Punishment? You indeed deserve punishment for wasting so many years of my Immortal Execution Archipelago's care! You tell me, how should I punish all of you?!" Murong Xun shouted furiously with his eyes roundly widened.

"Young master, please give us punishment! If you want to kill or cut us, we will not give a single word of complaint!" replied the half-knelt crowd in unison.

"Very well. Since you've said that, then use your blood and flesh to repay the work my Immortal Execution Archipelago has put into you."

When he heard their reply, Murong Xun wasn't moved at all. Instead, a hint of fierceness flashed within his gaze.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, a cold glint reflected off of Murong Xun's blood-red eyes. The boundless blood-red aura once again shot out, transforming into countless blood-red chains, and it pierced through the kneeling crowd amidst howling noises and the squirting of blood.

"AHH—" When the blood-red chains passed through their bodies, the

cultivation and life they had accumulated for many years rapidly streamed out. The agony of being squeezed dry and refined made them involuntarily scream.

But in spite of that, there was not a single person who escaped or backed away. Instead, they endured such pain within such resounding screams, and allowed their cultivation and life to flow incessantly into Murong Xun's body. They did not complain in any way whatsoever.

And with over ten thousand people's power channeling into him, Murong Xun's aura once again soared. He had now infinitely neared the realm of a Martial King, and there was even a feeling of making a breakthrough.

However, as Murong Xun's power rose higher and higher, the people bore through by the blood-red chains became more and more pitiful. At that moment, they looked neither human nor ghost. They were akin to zombies, and even the sound they made was as terrifying as a ghost's howl.

"He is truly insane. He is refining such loyal subordinates in such a manner. Is he even human?" Seeing the horrifically developing situation, Xuan Xiaochao and the others came up to Chu Feng as they held their Incomplete Royal Armaments.

"Chu Feng, luckily you were here today. Otherwise, it's likely we would have died already. Right now, Murong Xun has already gone insane, and insane people will do insane actions. Let us join you and fight him together."

The Ten Gold-cloak Brothers had also come over, but in comparison to Xuan Xiaochao and the others, as the ten of them looked at Chu Feng, their gazes were rather complicated. They would never forget how weak he was back then in the Depraved Ravine. He was so weak he had to ask them for help; yet, he not only surpassed them now, he even saved them.

"It's true that this Murong Xun is crazy, but I don't think he has truly gone insane. His very actions are at most his actual nature.

"Seniors, Brothers, don't worry. Although his demonic technique is

powerful and cruel, it still has a restrictions. It cannot infinitely transfer the power of others to himself.

"Even if Murong Xun refines all of his subordinates until death, the highest he will reach is rank nine Martial Lord. As long as he bound from being a Martial King, I will still be able to beat him into a cripple." As Chu Feng spoke, he flipped his palm. The Royal Armament Silver Dragon Spear then appeared within his hand.

When it emerged, its unique aura swept through all directions. Chu Feng's strength increased by many times instantly, and at that very moment, Chu Feng gave others an illusion: even if it were a Martial King, perhaps Chu Feng could even truly put up a fight against him.

"Royal Armament?!" After feeling the might of the Royal Armament, no matter the Sixth Immortal, or the Water and Fire King, they couldn't help but look at the Silver Dragon Spear in Chu Feng's hand.

"It is indeed a Royal Armament. With his cultivation, he's able to grasp this Royal Armament so thoroughly?"

After confirming it was truly a Royal Armament within Chu Feng's hand, there was praise in the Fire King's and the Water King's eyes, there was fury in the Sixth Immortal's eyes, and in the Inferno Divine Birds' eyes, there was greed.

bang bang bang bang bang...

Just at that moment, bursts of muffled explosions endlessly rang out. In Murong Xun's direction, the myriad of bodies had disappeared. In their place was a mist of blood that drifted in the air, and a shower of blood that rained down.

When they cast their gazes back at Murong Xun, his body had swollen and deformed. From a tall and suave man, he became a fatty who could explode at any moment. Moreover, none of the skin on his body was a good colour—it was blood-red, quite terrifying.

Although his aura was still very powerful, it had remained at rank nine Martial Lord. As Chu Feng said, the power of Murong Xun's demonic

technique didn't matter, as there would always be a restriction. He could not completely refine and absorb their power.

"CHU FENG, COME! A SINGLE STRIKE TO DECIDE LIFE AND DEATH!"

Suddenly, Murong Xun let out a thunderous roar. His voice was no longer his original tone. With it came endless fury and resentment, akin to a demon's voice.

However, at that moment, what was more horrifying wasn't that voice, but the pressure he exuded as he leapt up and rushed towards Chu Feng.

At that instant, even the colour of the sky above Murong Xun's head changed—it changed into blood-red. It looked as if the person who approached wasn't actually a person, but a demon that was dyed in the blood of countless lives.

As they faced Murong Xun who was in such a state, even Xuan Xiaochao, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and the others, who were quite fearless, couldn't help deeply gasping. Bursts of slight horror emerged onto their faces, and they subconsciously backed away.

Scary—truly scary. Murong Xun, who had refined the blood and flesh of over ten thousand people, had too terrifying of an evil aura about him. He truly could not be described as human.

"My thoughts exactly."

But the terror of Murong Xun's horrifying aura did not matter. Chu Feng remained fearless, and not only that, there was even an excited glint that surged within his eyes.

boom

Suddenly, Chu Feng made his move. His move shattered even space itself in his former position. Even Xuan Xiaochao and the others who had backed quite far away were forced even further back by the remnants. From that, one could see the fierceness of Chu Feng's might.

As Chu Feng held the Silver Dragon Spear, he rose into the air, and like

a comet, rushed straight into Murong Xun who reeked with blood.

When they were not even three thousand meters away, Chu Feng suddenly increased his speed. With a howl of a dragon, Chu Feng's entire being became a white stream of light.

When the white stream of light streaked through the air, it was like a white dragon, appearing for just an instant. When the white stream of light disappeared, Chu Feng had already come up to Murong Xun. He waved his arm, and the Silver Dragon Spear in his hand became a white light, and with a muffled stabbing sound, large amounts of blood gushed out. Chu Feng's Silver Dragon Spear had pierced into Murong Xun's chest and out from his back.

Their confrontation was decided by a single strike.

Murong Xun—lost!

Chapter 893: Kowtow and Admit Your Wrongs

A spear pierced through his chest. With a single strike, Chu Feng had defeated Murong Xun, who had refined the lives of over ten thousand Martial Lords.

Such a scene completely dumbfounded Xuan Xiaochao, the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, and the others. They had expected such a conclusion, but they had never expected such progress. It was really too quick. So quick the outcome was decided in an instant.

They too had faced Murong Xun earlier—they knew how horrifying he was. Yet, Chu Feng still defeated him with a single strike. One had to admit that in comparison to Murong Xun, Chu Feng was the true monster.

"Young master!"

Amidst the shock Xuan Xiaochao and the others felt, the Sixth Immortal was enraged. After a long roar, he raised his hand, and started an attack towards Chu Feng.

boom However, in the next instant of that strike's release, it was stopped within a huge explosion—Qiushui Fuyan stopped his attack.

"Qiushui Fuyan, if anything happens to the young master, I will definitely kill you!" The Sixth Immortal's face turned blue from anger when Qiushui Fuyan persisted in stopping him. He didn't continue blinding attacking Chu Feng, and instead, cast the fiercest attack he knew in an attempt to kill Qiushui Fuyan.

"Even if you didn't plan to kill me, I had never planned to let you go." Qiushui Fuyan merely smiled lightly at the Sixth Immortal, who was nearing insanity. On her beautiful face, there was not a hint of fear at all. Instead, within her eyes filled with intelligence, there was even a trace of disdain.

hmm After piercing Murong Xun's chest with his spear, Chu Feng

waved his big sleeve, and a boundless golden Spirit Formation emerged. Then, with another wave of Chu Feng's sleeve, the Spirit Formation shrank rapidly, and transformed into the size of a fingernail. It entered Murong Xun's body through his wound.

"Ahh—"

After the formation went into him, Murong Xun let out a painful shriek. At the same time, large amounts of blood-coloured aura gushed out from his body. However, this time, they did not become blood-red chains, and drifted away instead.

When such a thing occurred to him, Murong Xun's swelled body rapidly contracted. Even his powerful aura diminished.

With that Spirit Formation, Chu Feng sealed Murong Xun's odd demonic technique, which caused the power he stripped away from others to leave his body.

After Murong Xun's power completely dissipated, Chu Feng flicked his arm and threw the Silver Dragon Spear onto his shoulders like a shoulder pole. He then threw Murong Xun onto it, and landed on a warship.

After landing, Chu Feng flicked again, and like a sandbag, fiercely threw Murong Xun onto the ground with a thump.

"Chu Feng, I will tear your corpse into a million pieces!" After being thrown onto the ground, Murong Xun stood up in a stumbling manner. While gritting his teeth, he was like a mad dog as he pounced towards Chu Feng.

"Kneel down." However, Chu Feng swirled around quickly, and arrived behind Murong Xun. The tip of the spear in his hand swept past, and after two bloody slashes, Murong Xun's leg tendons were cut.

thud With his tendons severed, Murong Xun's legs couldn't support himself and he fell onto the ground.

After Murong Xun knelt, Chu Feng stood in front of him and said, "Kowtow and admit your wrongs."

“Go to he—Ahh!”

Murong Xun wanted to curse at him, but before he even finished his words, he felt pain from his head. Chu Feng had tightly grabbed his hair, then, pushing down, slammed Murong Xun’s head onto the ground.

bang bang bang...

For a short moment, kowtowing sounds louder than even drumming rang out continually. After a short instant, blood started flowing from Murong Xun’s head.

“Chu Feng, damn your ancestors!”

Seeing his young master subjected to such suffering, the Sixth Immortal was even about to explode. He flipped his palm, and several Forbidden Medicines appeared. Without saying anything, he consumed them all at once.

aooo—

After he ingested those Forbidden Medicines, bursts of colourful auras endlessly soared within his body. At the same time, his power was rocketing. He even exhaled peculiar mist from his mouth and nose.

“Crap.” Qiushui Fuyan’s complexion could not remain calm when she saw the change occurring to the Sixth Immortal. If it were before, when she fought the Sixth Immortal, not only could she face him cool, calm, and collected, she even stood on a bit of an advantage.

But now, the Sixth Immortal ignored the risks to his life and ignored the pain of backlash. He consumed so many Forbidden Medicines, and due to that his strength was incomparable to before. Now, he had surpassed Qiushui Fuyan’s limit.

aooo— Just at that moment, the Sixth Immortal furiously roared again, and threw a punch at Qiushui Fuyan.

That fist truly made the world tremble, and took away the light from the sun and moon. Even though Qiushui Fuyan put down layers of Spirit Formations, and used the strongest defensive martial skills she had, she

remained no match for it.

boom

“Ahh!”

Finally, after bursts of rumbles, Qiushui Fuyan let out a cry. She was forced several miles back by the power of that punch.

“Senior Qiushui!” When he saw that, Chu Feng couldn’t help shouting in alarm.

aooo However, after forcing Qiushui Fuyan through the air, the Sixth Immortal was still unwilling to stop. He waved his big sleeve, and a boundless suction power burst out, drawing her back to him.

When Qiushui Fuyan returned, the Sixth Immortal’s fist had been risen again. Moreover, an extremely horrifying aura was being channeled. If that fist were to land, Qiushui Fuyan was most likely going to die.

“STOP!

“If you dare harm Senior Qiushui again, I will slice this Murong Xun into pieces.” Capturing into his eyes the killing intent of the Sixth Immortal, Chu Feng did not hesitate as he abruptly waved the Silver Dragon Spear downward, and sliced off Murong Xun’s left shoulder.

“AHH–

“Sixth Immortal, save me!” Murong Xun could endure the pain of his arm being chopped off, but he could not endure Chu Feng’s bloodlust. He could feel the lack of guarantee to his survival. So, he quickly put away his pride and started shouting for help.

“You...” The Sixth Immortal’s expression changed greatly. Although he was furious, he hurriedly stopped and didn’t dare to move even a single inch.

“You two, stop as well.” Seeing its effectiveness, Chu Feng cast his fierce gaze at the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

The two first glanced at the Sixth Immortal, and after a communication through their eyes’ expression, they dashed backwards, left the range of

the Water King and Fire King, and returned to their human appearances.

“Lady Qiushui, are you all right?” When such an intense fight was eased, the Water King and Fire King first supported Qiushui Fuyan in the air, then landed onto the warship Chu Feng was on. As for Xuan Xiaochao and the others, they too quickly went there.

“Release my young master, and I’ll safely let you go.” The Sixth Immortal spoke. That was not something he desired, but there was no other choice right now. He could not let Murong Xun die.

Chapter 894: Mysterious Force

"Chu Feng, let's go." Xuan Xiaochao and the others were elated when they saw the Sixth Immortal was going to release them. They quickly urged Chu Feng to leave.

Right now, the Sixth Immortal had consumed Forbidden Medicine. His strength was too fierce, and not to mention Qiushui Fuyan alone, it was likely the combination of the Water King, the Fire King, and Qiushui Fuyan wouldn't necessarily be sufficient to defeat him.

However, at that instant, Chu Feng did not reply. He turned his head around and looked at Qiushui Fuyan.

Seeing her pale complexion and white dress splattered with blood, in addition to the frightening bloody wound on her neck and face, Chu Feng remained silent. He slowly closed his eyes.

Chu Feng wanted to prepare the Earthen Taboo martial skill and fight the Sixth Immortal in order to avenge Qiushui Fuyan.

bam However, Qiushui Fuyan hurriedly grabbed Chu Feng's wrist. After Chu Feng opened his eyes, she shook her head. Clearly, she had guessed Chu Feng's intentions and didn't want him to take the risk.

Chu Feng's heart was instantly moved seeing the hints of pleading in her eyes. Indeed, the Sixth Immortal, in this instant, was too powerful. Chu Feng was not even sure whether his Firmament Slash would succeed. If it failed, then they were going to be in a horrible situation.

"Quickly let my young master go! Otherwise, even if we all die together, I will make your death miserable!" The Sixth Immortal panicked slightly when Chu Feng was still unwilling to let Murong Xun go.

"Even if we all die together? With power such as yours?" However, just at that moment, an aged voice rang out. An elderly figure simultaneously appeared in front of Chu Feng and the others.

It was an old man, nearly two meters tall, yet as thin as a stem of hemp. On his body, one could not feel the slightest trace of aura, as if he were

not a cultivator but an ordinary commoner.

However, as he stood there in the air, there was this persistent feeling of abnormality because he had a very terrifying appearance—his tall nose and dark green eyes made him seem like an old monster. If a child saw him, they would wail immediately. If an adult saw him, they would trip from fear.

"Master!" But when he saw that old man appear, You Tonghan rejoiced and quickly went up to greet him.

"We pay our respects to Lord Protector!" Not only did You Tonghan greet him, at that very instant, everyone else from the Crippling Night Demon Sect had faces full of joy as they half-knelt.

Chu Feng too came to his senses after seeing their reaction. Quite evidently, that was You Tonghan's master, one of the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, You Mingdeng.

"I pay my respects to Lord Protector!" Chu Feng didn't hesitate after learning of that. He bent his knee, clasped his fists, and greeted the senior in front of him.

The Four Protectors were the strongest people within the Crippling Night Demon Sect. His strength was absolutely not something the Sixth Immortal stood a chance against. With him here, it didn't matter how many more Forbidden Medicines the Sixth Immortal consumed—it would all be useless.

"You Mingdeng?" As expected, after recognizing him, the face of Sixth Immortal and the two Protectors all turned green. Who was You Mingdeng? They were definitely no match for someone like him!

"Not bad, I haven't come too late. Everyone, rise." You Mingdeng turned around and looked at the crowd with a smile. However, he did not look at Qiushui Fuyan, nor at Chu Feng, as if ignoring them.

Qiushui Fuyan frowned at this small detail, but Chu Feng did not mind it too much. Along with You Tonghan and the others, he too stood up.

whoosh whoosh But just at that moment, the two Protectors from the

Inferno Divine Bird clan rushed and became two streams of light, fleeing into the distance. They wanted to escape.

"Stay here for a while." You Mingdeng did not even turn his head around as they attempted to escape. With a thought, a golden Spirit Formation emerged and instantly sealed the two Protectors.

That Spirit Formation was really too powerful. No matter how they attacked, it would not shatter. In the end, they could only allow it to drift back and arrive in front of You Mingdeng.

hmm At the same time, another golden Spirit Formation emerged. It enveloped the Sixth Immortal who had yet to escape, and brought him forward towards You Mingdeng.

In front of him, the Sixth Immortal and the others, who were incomparably arrogant before, didn't even have any strength to escape. They were like a tortoise in a jar, and everyone else from the Crippling Night Demon Sect all had faces of satisfaction.

You Tonghan even went up and asked, "Master, how should they be dealt with?"

"Bring them all back. They will be of great use." As You Mingdeng spoke, he willed another golden Spirit Formation to appear, sealing Murong Xun who was in front of Chu Feng.

No one presented any objections to his decision. Putting aside the fact that he had the most power at this very moment, his decision was very correct as well.

Just killing Murong Xun and the others would be too good for them. Other than diminishing a bit of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's strength, there was no other meaning to it.

On the other hand, perhaps there would be some use in leaving them alive. That was especially so for Murong Xun. He was the future master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago! It was likely no one in the Immortal Execution Archipelago wanted him to die.

"I'm afraid today, you may not take them away."

However, just at that moment, a faint chuckle rang out in the sky. At the same time, two people soundlessly emerged, and stood above the Spirit Formation that bound Murong Xun.

Everyone's expression changed greatly when they cast their gazes over. The ones who had come were two young males. Judging by their appearances, they were young men just slightly above twenty years of age. Yet, they were already Martial Kings.

One rank one Martial King, one rank two Martial King.

They not only possessed powerful strength, the clothings on their bodies were very special as well. There were talismans stuck all over, and even on their neck, there was a very long string of beads. They looked like some monks who were practitioners of evil, but due to their long black hair, they were clearly not monks.

However, something everyone felt was the indescribable aura of danger on those young men's bodies. Even Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and the others couldn't help but take a few steps back. Intuition told them to stay far away from those people.

At that moment, only You Mingdeng remained unmoving, standing in the distance. There weren't many changes to his expression, nor did he attack them immediately. He calmly asked, "You are not from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Why must you interfere in the conflict we have with them?"

"You don't need to care who we are, and we don't want to interfere in this conflict. However, right now, I want them to stay here.

"You can choose to leave right now, and you can also chose to leave a few things behind before leaving." The rank two Martial King indifferently spoke. There was not the slightest hint of respect in his tone, and instead, there was a greatly superior feeling that came from it. He did not put You Mingdeng in his eyes at all.

Chapter 895: You Are an Outsider

"Go to h..." You Tonghan flew into a rage upon seeing such disrespect toward his master. He pointed at them, preparing to let out a string of curses.

But before he finished speaking, You Mingdeng extended his hand, indicting him to remain silent.

Although You Tonghan felt furious—Xuan Xiaochao and the others also felt furious—since You Mingdeng made a sign for them to remain silent, they naturally didn't dare to say anything.

Actually, at that moment, You Mingdeng too had quite an unsightly expression, but he didn't say anything. Instead, after meaningfully looking at those two young men, he waved his big sleeve, and a gale arose, which brought Chu Feng and the others away.

After You Mingdeng left, the rank two Martial King raised his fist slightly, and after three muffled explosions, the three Spirit Formations made by You Mingdeng were easily burst open.

"Thank you for saving us! May I ask for your name? In the future, my Immortal Execution Archipelago will thank you greatly." At that instant, Murong Xun ignored his own injuries and hurriedly bowed and clasped his hands as an expression of thanks towards those two young men.

"Thanks? What can your Immortal Execution Archipelago give to thank us?" However, absolutely unexpectedly, the two young men did not accept his thanks, and the rank one Martial King even made a mocking smile on his face.

Murong Xun frowned slightly at their reaction, but didn't say much.

"Eat it. It will ease your Forbidden Medicine's backlash pain." The rank two Martial King threw a pellet to the Sixth Immortal.

"This..."

After receiving the pellet, the Sixth Immortal was a bit hesitant because he discovered that the pellet was very odd. There was no medicinal

fragrance, and instead, there was a bit of a fetid stench.

It was as though it was made by the blood of humans. Moreover, tiny runes carved on that pellet. Every single one of those runes was very profound. Even though the Sixth Immortal was a Gold-cloak World Spiritist, he did not understand them in any way whatsoever.

The Sixth Immortal was afraid. He didn't dare to eat it.

"It's given to you, so eat it. You think my senior will harm you?

"If he did, he could've just killed you with a slap. Why go through all this trouble? Eat it." The rank one Martial King spoke angrily when seeing his hesitation.

The Sixth Immortal was a bit annoyed at those words. He did not know who they were, and even though they did save him, he had no clue whether they were enemy or ally. If he consumed that pellet, thus allowing them control over himself, which then led him to harm the Immortal Execution Archipelago, what could he do then?

However, just at that moment, the rank two Martial King suddenly cast his gaze over.

When he saw those eyes, the Sixth Immortal's heartbeat sped up. An indescribable fear surged into his heart, and without saying anything more, he swallowed the pellet.

"Return to the Immortal Execution Archipelago. My two seniors are still waiting for you there." The rank two Martial King only nodded after seeing the Sixth Immortal's consumption of the pellet. With no rush, he headed towards the Teleportation Array. However, he suddenly stopped, turned his head around, and said indifferently, "Remember. Don't ask us what our name is. If you want to, you can call us 'master'."

After speaking, the man lightly smiled, then continued his way.

As for Murong Xun and the Sixth Immortal, they looked at each other, their faces quite distorted. Even the two Protectors from the Inferno Divine Bird clan had dazed complexions. But, in the end, all of them went in the same direction as the two men.

At the same time, Chu Feng and the others were led by You Mingdeng and brought to a peaceful area.

“Master, I don’t understand. Those two were only a rank one Martial King and a rank two Martial King, but you’re a rank four Martial King! Killing them required no more effort than raising your hand, so why did you need to be afraid of them?” You Tonghan asked with a face full of confusion. His emotions were a bit agitated.

“Insolence!

“Do you speak to your master like this?” However, You Tonghan’s question fetched him You Mingdeng’s berating.

“This disciple doesn’t dare to disrespect Master, but I just don’t understand why they were released in such a manner. They had nearly took our lives!” said You Mingdeng a bit timidly.

“What is the extent of your knowledge? Those two young men were not from the Eastern Sea Region. We cannot afford to offend them,” You Mingdeng said straightforwardly.

“Not from the Eastern Sea Region? Where are they from?” You Tonghan’s face was one of confusion.

“Lord Protector, do you mean those two were from the Holy Land of Martialism?” the Water King asked in a probing manner.

“Their cultivation at such age, their special clothing, their arrogant demeanor, and also their otherworldly aura… They are definitely not from the Eastern Sea Region. Most likely, they’re from the Holy Land of Martialism.” You Mingdeng nodded, his face full of seriousness.

After hearing his words, You Tonghan and the others couldn’t help inhaling deeply. Their complexions became quite odd.

The Holy Land of Martialism—what sort of place was that? They knew very well. It was the cradle of geniuses, the heaven of cultivation experts. It was a place all cultivators wanted to go, and it was even a legend to some.

It was said the natural energy that place contained was many times stronger than the Eastern Sea Region, but similarly, the people from the Eastern Sea Region could not even be compared to the experts at that place.

Yet, right now, in the Eastern Sea Region, someone from the Holy Land of Martialism had appeared, and they even protected their enemy. That made them feel extreme uneasiness. A formless terror had enveloped their hearts.

“Master, putting aside why people from the Holy Land of Martialism have come here, why would they side with the Immortal Execution Archipelago? Why are they helping them?” You Tonghan asked, puzzled.

“That’s the most important piece of this puzzle. Putting aside how they came here, it is a fact that they are here. Moreover, there is a relationship between them and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“It doesn’t matter how they are related to the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but as long as they help them, I’m afraid the war between us and them cannot continue,” You Mingdeng said.

Everyone went silent because they understood what You Mingdeng was trying to say.

“Senior, do you mean we should surrender? Do you think after surrendering, the Immortal Execution Archipelago will forgive us?” Finally, Chu Feng spoke.

But after hearing Chu Feng’s words, You Mingdeng’s complexion twisted. When he looked at Chu Feng, his gaze was also a bit icy. He said with an extremely fierce tone, “Chu Feng, it is already your fortune that I saved you. When we, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, are discussing, can an outsider like you not barge in?”

Chapter 896: No Good Compensation for Being a Good Person

“What?

“Outsider?

“You said who’s an outsider?

“You’re saying I, Chu Feng, am an outsider?” Chu Feng’s expression changed immediately. It twisted quite a bit, and there was even a bit of fury in his eyes.

In order to save the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he had hurried over here from the faraway Misty Peak. When they were in a desperate situation, he ignored the risks to his life and went to save them. He even dragged Qiushui Fuyan, who was completely unrelated to his matter, into this trouble. That brought her serious wounds on her body, and she nearly lost her life.

But now, one of the Protectors, who held the highest position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect and had the most power, said he was an outsider. How could Chu Feng not be furious?

“Master, what are you saying? How is Chu Feng an outsider? He is a brother of our Crippling Night Demon Sect! Besides, he only came here today to save us! If he hadn’t appeared on time, perhaps we would have already died! How can you say this to him?!” You Tonghan also stood out at that moment, attempting to give You Mingdeng an explanation.

bam But before You Tonghan even finished speaking, You Mingdeng waved his hand and landed a resounding slap on You Tonghan’s face.

That slap sent You Tonghan several meters away in the air. He even crashed into several trees one meter thick. From that, it could be seen how much strength You Mingdeng put into that slap.

“You unfilial thing, are you doubting your master’s words?” You Mingdeng howled extremely furiously after slapping You Tonghan.

As for You Tonghan, he hurriedly stood up and rubbed his red and swelling face. He hesitated some more, but didn't say anything.

"Lord Protector..." But in spite of that scene, the Water King still stood out, and wanted to defend Chu Feng.

"All of you, shut up!" However, You Mingdeng did not give them any chances to speak. After he shouted explosively, he released his aura of a rank four Martial King.

That might was really too powerful. Even though You Mingdeng had already held himself back, all of them still felt they were suffocating and their bones would shatter at any moment.

As they were subjected to such pressure, who dared to speak any more? Everyone remained silent—even the Water King and Fire King.

At that instant, You Mingdeng once again cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and icily said, "You ask who I'm talking about? Then right now, listen well. I'm talking about you. You are an outsider."

"You speak nonsense!" Chu Feng was enraged as he spoke furiously. He didn't care whether he was a senior or not.

bang But then, out of nowhere, You Mingdeng suddenly gripped Chu Feng's shoulder, flicked it, pressed Chu Feng onto the ground, then grabbed Chu Feng's robe, ripping it, thus revealing his sturdy back.

At first, everyone felt confused as to what You Mingdeng was doing, but after he pointed at Chu Feng's back, and said his following words, they understood.

"On your back, I do not see the incomplete black moon, the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! On what basis are you saying you're a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?!" You Mingdeng loudly questioned.

"Master, there's a reason the symbol cannot be imprinted on Chu Feng," You Tonghan hurriedly explained.

"Shut up! The Earth King has told me about Chu Feng, but no matter

why, as long as the incomplete black moon cannot be imprinted, that person is not a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect!" You Mingdeng appeared especially heartless, then pointed at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, you know so many of my Crippling Night Demon Sect's secrets, and you even possess a Royal Armament and Secret Skills. I have already shown you kindness by leaving you alive. I hope you know what's best for you. If you dare to inhibit any malicious intents, I will not be this polite the next time we meet."

After speaking, he extended his palm, and a burst of suction power surged out. It drew away Chu Feng's badge into You Mingdeng's hand—it was the badge the Earth King gave him.

After putting it away, You Mingdeng looked at the crowd, and shouted with an extremely fierce tone, "From today on, all of you mark your borders clearly with this Chu Feng. Listen up! He is not a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. You are not allowed to associate with him in any way."

At that instant, Xuan Xiaochao and the others had very unpleasant expressions. They couldn't help but cast their gazes at Chu Feng. They seemed to want to say something, but in the end, they said nothing.

whoosh Just at that moment, You Mingdeng waved his big sleeve, and after a burst of a gale, he had brought Xuan Xiaochao and the others away.

"Chu Feng, are you all right?" After You Mingdeng and the other left, Qiushui Fuyan helped Chu Feng up, who was lying on the floor.

After Chu Feng climbed up, he first looked at her body full of wounds, and the shame in his heart immediately surged forth. He said, "Senior Qiushui, I am truly sorry. In order to help me, you've been harmed to this extent." Chu Feng felt very ashamed.

"A little wound like this is nothing. It is merely an external injury." Qiushui Fuyan sweetly smiled at Chu Feng's embarrassed gaze, and forced an appearance that made it seem nothing had happened. Then, she said to Chu Feng, "But this time, at least you know what the Crippling

Night Demon Sect is truly like, right?

"You Mingdeng is not the only who's like this. Even Xue Xiyue and Fu Liansheng are the same.

"No matter how others from the Crippling Night Demon Sect support you, as long as those three dislike you, you will never gain a footing in the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"However, you don't need to worry because the Crippling Night Demon Sect has always been like this. If their internal portion was united, they wouldn't have fallen to this state.

"Actually, You Mingdeng is quite correct. He has truly shown you kindness by leaving you alive, because to a person with his nature, it is truly unimaginable to suppress their desire for your Royal Armament.

"Perhaps he did that because of the things you've done for the Crippling Night Demon Sect. However, you are really too outstanding. So outstanding that it threatens their very position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He won't allow you to rise in power—or, at least, he won't allow you to rise in power in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, because that would impede his goal to sit on the position of sect head."

After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's words, Chu Feng went silent. How could he not understand what Qiushui Fuyan was trying to say?

In reality, long before today, Chu Feng had anticipated a day like this would occur because from the very start, Qiu Canfeng had hiddenly warned Chu Feng to be wary of You Mingdeng and Xue Xiyue. Of the Three Protectors, only Fu Liansheng could be trusted.

Yet, until this very day, Chu Feng had still done quite a few things for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, especially so today. He had come from quite the distance and risked death in order to save them. Yet, in the end, he was treated in such a manner. If he said it was fine and if he said he was not angry, those were definitely lies.

But even so, Chu Feng could not sever his relationship with the Crippling Night Demon Sect. It was for no other reason but because he

still had to save Qiu Canfeng. For Qiu Canfeng, he could only endure, because only after seeing Fu Liansheng and saving Qiu Canfeng could Chu Feng rid himself of his relation with the Crippling Night Demon Sect in reassurance, and do the things he wanted to do.

Chapter 897: A Clean Cut

"Whatever, don't brood over it too much. As they say, you gain a bit of wisdom when you gain a bit of suffering. Just view this as a lesson. However, right now, this place is not safe. We have to quickly return to the Misty Peak," Qiushui Fuyan urged, but then murmured, "For no reason at all, why have two people from the Holy Land of Martialism appeared? I feel that they've come here with some sort of goal... I just hope it won't affect us."

Chu Feng couldn't help recalling the woman called Tan Taixue after Qiushui Fuyan spoke. He suddenly felt such a powerful woman who wasn't well-known at all very possibly didn't come from the Eastern Sea Region. She quite likely also came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

However, Chu Feng was not too worried. Instead, a hint of a smile was worn on his face.

Although it was quite possible a huge turmoil in the Eastern Sea Region would arise due to the arrival of the people from the Holy Land of Martialism, their arrival itself proved Chu Feng could reach the Holy Land of Martialism from the Eastern Sea Region via the Heavenly Road, something he was uncertain of before.

Whether that was fortune or misfortune was still an unknown.

Chu Feng followed Qiushui Fuyan and returned to the Misty Peak. Just in case, they went in other less direct paths to avoid meeting people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Luckily, there were no more incidents and both of them safely reached the Misty Peak.

After they returned, Lady Piaomiao was still concocting medicine in seclusion, and Qiushui Fuyan, due to the battle, gained new insights. She prepared to cultivate in seclusion to make a breakthrough to rank two Martial King.

This was not her first attempt. Before today, she had tried sixteen times,

but had yet to succeed. However, this time, she said she had gained many insights and could likely succeed.

As for Chu Feng, he didn't leave the Misty Peak. The world outside was really too chaotic. Even people from the Holy Land of Martialism had appeared, and they even seemed to be on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side. Right now, the Misty Peak was the only place that guaranteed their safety.

At the same time, Chu Feng had been pondering an issue. You Mingdeng had ordered the Crippling Night Demon Sect to sever their relation with him. How to find Fu Liansheng became a huge problem.

Moreover, Chu Feng, who had seen many acts of deception, no longer dared to be certain whether that Fu Liansheng was truly worthy of trust. If this continued, the hope in saving Qiu Canfeng was really too remote. If he attempted it, not only would it increase the danger to himself, it was likely the ones close to him would be affected as well.

"Chu Feng!" On that day, Chu Feng was still thinking about that question. Zi Ling's sweet and soft voice then suddenly rang out outside.

"Oh? You've come!" Chu Feng flashed a dazzling smile when he opened the door, because not only was Zi Ling in front of him, even Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang had come.

These were the closest people to Chu Feng, and also the ones he cared about the most.

After entering Chu Feng's residence, Zi Ling and the others did not quickly sit. They looked at each other, and from their facial expressions and eye contact, Chu Feng could tell they seemed to be forcing one another to do something.

Chu Feng couldn't help lightly smiling, and said, "Is there something you want to say to me?"

"Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, Zi Ling has something she wants to say to you," Jiang Wushang said as he chuckled.

"That's right, that's right! Zi Ling has something she wants to discuss

with you," Zhang Tianyi said, also with a smile.

"You..."

Zi Ling curled her lips at their shameless actions, and couldn't help but cast her gaze toward Su Rou and Su Mei.

But who'd expect them to just stand and giggle on the spot, not saying anything for Zi Ling. Clearly, those two also wanted Zi Ling to be the one to speak.

"Zi Ling, if all of you have something you want to say, then just go ahead. What worries would you have with me?" Chu Feng could instantly tell that they had something to discuss with him, and it was also something that was difficult to speak of.

"Chu Feng, do you know in a few months, the Heavenly Road to the Holy Land of Martialism will open?" Zi Ling asked, seeing that Chu Feng himself had spoken.

"Oh? The Heavenly Road will open? I truly didn't know." Chu Feng felt rather surprised. Ever since coming to the Eastern Sea Region, he'd always had his heart on saving Zi Ling and Qiu Canfeng, so he truly didn't think much of the Heavenly Road.

"The Heavenly Road opens every year, and right now, there's no longer any need to remain in the Eastern Sea Region. We've come here today because we want you to enter the Heavenly Road with us," Zi Ling said again.

"Enter the Heavenly Road? You're preparing to head towards the Holy Land of Martialism this year?" Chu Feng was taken aback. He indeed viewed the Holy Land of Martialism as a goal of his, and the Heavenly Road was also confirmed to be a path he had to walk on because it likely concealed the mystery of his ancestry inside.

However, Chu Feng didn't think of entering the Heavenly Road so early, because he still had one thing he hadn't taken care of—he hadn't saved Qiu Canfeng yet.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, didn't we say before we would go to the Holy

Land of Martialism together? It's time now," Jiang Wushang said as well, seeing a bit of hesitation in Chu Feng.

"Junior Chu Feng, there is no benefit in staying in the Eastern Sea Region at this present time. Rather than surviving in this place with fear of danger and ambushes perpetually, why not head to the Holy Land of Martialism and experience the world?" Zhang Tianyi said.

"Yeah! Big Brother Chu Feng, didn't you and Senior Qiushui already see a person from the Holy Land of Martialism? Although I haven't personally seen them, I can tell from your descriptions that the people in the Eastern Sea Region are really no match for those from the Holy Land of Martialism.

"We are both of the younger generation. Yet, we're still in the Heaven realm, while they're already Martial Kings. From this, it can be seen that the Holy Land of Martialism is the true place for breeding geniuses. We shouldn't limit our horizons anymore. It's time to check out that place." Jiang Wushang's face was also one of yearning.

"You should know why I have come to the Eastern Sea Region." Chu Feng's face expressed his difficult standing.

"Of course we know! However, Junior Chu Feng, that Crippling Night Demon Sect doesn't care about loyalty, so you truly don't have to work so hard for them. Just leave them to their own lives," Zhang Tianyi urged.

"I know Chu Feng is a very logical person. He is certainly also furious that the Crippling Night Demon Sect treated him like this. But, he's not willing to leave, so he definitely has some sort of trouble we don't know of. Chu Feng, am I right?" Just at that moment, Zi Ling spoke again.

Chu Feng relievedly nodded his head at her words, then said, "Indeed, I don't need to care about the Crippling Night Demon Sect anymore due to their treatment. However, I became a disciple to one of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's Four Protectors, Qiu Canfeng. I promised I would save him, and even though I can sever my relationship with the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I cannot ignore my master, Qiu Canfeng!"

"Does this mean if Qiu Canfeng is saved, you can rid yourself of the

Crippling Night Demon Sect?" After Chu Feng spoke, a faint chuckle rang out outside the door.

When they looked over, Chu Feng was instantly taken aback.

Chapter 898: Sister

"Senior Qiushui, you..."

After a temporary moment of daze, Chu Feng's complexion suddenly turned to joy. He said, "Senior Qiushui, congratulations."

At that very instant, the one entering the palace was no outsider—it was Qiushui Fuyan.

However, not only was her complexion rosy, she was full of smiles. Even her aura was several times more powerful. She had made a breakthrough—she had successfully become a rank two Martial King.

"Congratulations, Senior Qiushui! You've succeeded!" At the same time, Zi Ling and the others also sent their congratulations. Although their detection strength wasn't as strong as Chu Feng's, they knew Qiushui Fuyan had been successful due to Chu Feng's reactions.

"After so many times, it's time that I succeed. Otherwise, I would have disgraced the title of the Burning Heaven Church's Holy Daughter." Qiushui Fuyan beautifully smiled, so much it even moved one's hearts. One could tell she was very happy because of her success.

"However, Chu Feng, I've heard your conversation just now. You should have told me about Qiu Canfeng earlier! Do you think I wouldn't help you?

"You don't need to waste so much effort finding that Fu Liansheng. I can help you save your Senior Qiu Canfeng. Even putting aside you, there is a bit of a friendship between me and him. He's in trouble right now, so I won't do nothing about it," Qiushui Fuyan said.

Chu Feng's eyes lit up when he heard that, but then couldn't help but cast his gaze at Zi Ling.

When he was conversing with Zi Ling and the others, though he had mentioned Qiu Canfeng, he had never said he was going to look for Fu Liansheng and ask him to save Qiu Canfeng.

Chu Feng had only told Zi Ling alone the entire story in detail, and now,

Qiushui Fuyan clearly knew about the “Fu Liansheng” part, though he had never told her. She definitely didn’t overhear it accidentally, but knew it beforehand.

That pointed Chu Feng directly at the reason—quite obviously, Zi Ling had also told Qiushui Fuyan the story, and the reason Qiushui Fuyan came to this place today was by no coincidence. They had planned this out beforehand, and their goal was to convince Chu Feng to abandon the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“Chu Feng, don’t blame me! I just don’t want you continue risking your life! Besides, Senior Qiushui has treated us so well, so we shouldn’t hide it from her,” Zi Ling quickly explained honestly, seeing that Chu Feng saw through her little scheme.

“Chu Feng, I asked Zi Ling this on my own accord. Don’t blame her.

“As for you, you truly shouldn’t have hid it from me. Isn’t it just saving Qiu Canfeng? Rather than taking a risk to get into contact with Fu Liansheng, and being beaten up by the Crippling Night Demon Sect, why not just ask me for help? You wouldn’t doubt me, would you?” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Senior Qiushui, it’s not that I don’t trust you, but you’ve really given me too much help. I truly don’t want to trouble you anymore. Besides, this is truly a bit complicated.

“First of all, my master Qiu Canfeng clearly said to ask Fu Liansheng for help. Other than him, he forbade me from telling anyone else. In the end, this is something related to the core of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Outsiders shouldn’t interfere, and I should listen to him as well.

“Furthermore, my master is imprisoned in an Imperial Tomb. I had personally experienced the danger there, and to be honest, even though Senior Huangfu was so powerful, he was still agitated within the Imperial Tomb. So... I truly don’t want you to risk your life just to help me,” Chu Feng said with an apologetic face.

“Even if it’s more dangerous, so what? And even if I cannot save Qiu Canfeng, Lady Piaomiao could, right? Would she be inferior to that Fu

Liansheng?" Qiushui Fuyan said a bit displeasedly.

"Senior Qiushui, you mean...?" Chu Feng's heart was incomparably excited. He knew what she was trying to say.

"When Lady Piaomiao finishes, I will tell her about this. Isn't it just saving Qiu Canfeng? To her, it is an easy task. You don't need to spend so much effort to get closer to the Crippling Night Demon Sect," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Senior Qiushui, this... Truly, how should I thank you?" The emotions in Chu Feng's heart truly reached a peak after Qiushui Fuyan spoke. Of course he hoped Lady Piaomiao could rescue Qiu Canfeng.

However, Lady Piaomiao had a very odd nature. Even though she had helped Chu Feng greatly, there always seemed to be a barrier between them. That made a certain gap appear in his heart between himself and Lady Piaomiao, and thus she was less close to him than Qiushui Fuyan.

Besides, Qiu Canfeng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Who knew if Lady Piaomiao would be willing to save him or not?

However, Chu Feng could tell that the relationship between Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao was not ordinary at all. At least, the two of them were very close to each other, and thus they also had a certain understanding of one another.

There was quite a large gap in age between the two; one gave others a feeling of guile, and the other gave others a feeling of liveliness and amiability. They were simply two different people.

However, they were indeed friends. Although nearly undetectable, Chu Feng could still tell their relationship was truly very good. Since Qiushui Fuyan had spoken like that, then Lady Piaomiao was most likely going to help.

If it were before, perhaps asking her for help wasn't the best choice, but at this very moment, it was most definitely the best decision.

As long as Qiu Canfeng could be saved, then he likely had his own plans regarding the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Chu Feng wouldn't need

to wade through such muddy waters.

As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, this common enemy, Chu Feng could just ignore them after saving Zi Ling.

Chu Feng had brutally beaten up Murong Xun, and took away his Royal Armament, and even "slept" with his fiancée and sister. On the other hand, Murong Xun hadn't even touched Zi Ling. He hadn't even seen her.

So, in the end, Chu Feng hadn't suffered much from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and quite oppositely, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had suffered quite a bit due to him.

Chu Feng had no need to take huge risks and continue fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Rather than risking his life in the Eastern Sea Region, why not just leave this disaster zone with Zi Ling and the others?

"Chu Feng, although there are great dangers inside the Heavenly Road, the mystery of your ancestry is most likely hidden inside. I feel that you must enter it.

"As for the risks of the Heavenly Road, I have told Zi Ling and the others about it. However, they've insisted on following. To have lovers and brothers who are willing to accompany you, I feel that you should not reject their kindness.

"After Lady Piaomiao finishes concocting the pellet and cures the Heaven Gripping Pellet in Zi Ling's body, I will tell her about saving Qiu Canfeng. Then, I will search for Huangfu Haoyue. After finding him, I'll heal his injuries and restore his mind. At that time, we can also ask him a few things about the Heavenly Road.

"If this can all be finished before the Heavenly Road opens, there's no need for any of you to continue waiting here. Just enter the Heavenly Road this year then," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

"Sorry to trouble you then, Senior Qiushui." Chu Feng was truly grateful for what she did, because Qiushui Fuyan had already planned out their future.

“Thank you, Senior Qiushui!” At the same time, Zi Ling and the others thanked Qiushui Fuyan.

“Don’t start talking and calling me ‘senior’ here and there. It’s not like I’m all that older than you. If you don’t mind, then just call me sister,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

Chu Feng and the others, who were in a great mood and felt endless gratitude, didn’t even think before saying in unison, “Sister!”

bang However, as they were amidst such joy, the door that Chu Feng had closed was suddenly kicked open. The amount of force put into that kick was quite powerful, and it immediately shattered the door.

Chapter 899: The Invasion of an Army

Such an abrupt situation shocked everyone.

However, when they looked towards the exit, they were shocked even more, because the ones who broke down the door weren't any stranger, but Chun Wu and Xia Yu.

At that moment, their faces were full of panic. One could even say Chu Feng had never seen them with such panicked expressions before. After seeing Qiushui Fuyan, they acted as if they saw their savior. They said, together, "Senior Qiushui, this is bad!"

"What happened? Did something go wrong with Lady Piaomiao when she was concocting the pellet?" Qiushui Fuyan asked upon seeing their anxious expressions.

"No. She's fine, but the situation right now seems to be even worse," Xia Yu said.

"What exactly happened? Tell me in detail," Qiushui Fuyan quickly asked.

"Senior Qiushui, I can't explain this in short. It's best that you follow us." Chun Wu immediately turned around and ran down the peak. Seeing that, Qiushui Fuyan quickly followed, and as for Chu Feng and the others, they too followed.

With Chun Wu leading the way, all of them arrived at the centermost peak of the Misty Peak. On it, there was an enormous palace. Outside that palace, Chu Feng saw Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and even Yan Ruyu.

However, they were not the only ones there. On that peak, everyone with high positions was there. All the experts on the Misty Peak had gathered there. They stood orderly, with a battle-ready appearance.

At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan had realized how serious this was. She did not stop, and instead, stepped directly into the palace. As for Chu Feng and the others, they also stepped in.

After they entered the palace, Chu Feng's eyes lit up because there was

a very profound formation there. To be more precise, it was a very special Formation Aperture.

On the outside of that Formation Aperture, there were thirty-eight elders sitting cross-legged. They all had snow-white hair, and faces full of wrinkles. Judging by their appearances, one knew they had at least lived for over a hundred years. Their cultivations were not that weak either—they were all peak Martial Lords. With just a step forward in cultivation, they would be able to become Martial Kings.

Chu Feng had never seen those elders before, and as such it could be seen that they had always been guarding this Formation Aperture and didn't take even half a step away from this place.

When looking towards the aperture, Chu Feng discovered it was truly quite mystical. Within it, Chu Feng could see the strength of the formation. After detailed observation, Chu Feng could even see a picture inside—a map.

Typical people would simply be confused by the content of that map, but Chu Feng understood. He could see several symbols within the map.

The Misty Peak, Teleportation Array... Nearly everything within the borders of the Misty Peak was clearly indicated on the map. Even the sea beasts swimming at the bottom of the sea and the birds flying through the air were clearly shown in the Formation Aperture.

It not only indicated all living beings within the borders of the Misty Peak, even the living beings outside were indicated. Moreover, based off of their strength, they differed in colour.

At that very instant, innumerable living beings appeared in every single direction around the Misty Peak. They were like an army of ants as they flew towards the Misty Peak with extremely quick speed.

Moreover, due to the dark-red colours, Chu Feng knew there were also many Martial Kings within the army flocking forth from every single direction.

"Activate the formation!" Qiushui Fuyan explosively shouted.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh After her words, the thirty-eight elders all opened their eyes in unison, their hands quickly changing as they endlessly cast unique spells, which finally formed a seal. After a light shout, the Formation Aperture started to change.

boom rumble rumble

Chu Feng and the others felt a faint tremble beneath their feet. Casting their gazes to the outside, they discovered several enormous Spirit Formations surging in the sky. It sealed the entire Misty Peak—it was a defensive formation.

“Senior Qiushui, what do we do? It seems that there’s an army coming to invade the Misty Peak.” Chun Wu and the others heaved a sigh of relief after seeing the activation of the defensive formation. However, the fear on their faces did not diminish.

“We are not certain whether they are enemy or ally. I will first go notify your master.” As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she prepared to head off.

“Northwest direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Northeast direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Southwest direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“Southeast direction, there is army invading our borders.”

“…”

However, before Qiushui Fuyan left the palace, the thirty-eight elders surrounding the Formation Aperture all started speaking.

When she turned her head around to look, Qiushui Fuyan’s expression changed greatly because only then from the map, a dense body of people entering the borders of the Misty Peak from every single direction. They were nearing the Misty Peak.

whoosh When she saw that, Qiushui Fuyan didn’t hesitate. She leapt out and disappeared.

“Stay here, don’t go anywhere.” After Chu Feng left those words behind for Zi Ling and the others, he left the palace and went straight for the

peak's entrance.

However, Zi Ling and the others who realized that there was something wrong didn't listen to Chu Feng's words. They also followed Chu Feng and ran towards the entrance.

"Heavens, this..." After they arrived at the entrance to the Misty Peak, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, and everyone else were instantly stupefied.

At that very instant, several miles away, the dense body of people had surrounded the entire Misty Peak.

They were many people there—at least several tens of millions. Most importantly, of that army of people, the weakest were at the peak of the Heaven realm, while the rest were all Martial Lords.

There were simply innumerable peak Martial Lords, and there were even several Martial Kings.

The group with the largest number of people all wore the same clothing. Everyone recognized who they were—they were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Other than the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army, there were also many people from other forces. Clearly, they were the ones who had allied with them.

Other than humans, there were even many other Monstrous Beasts. Of those, the ones that caught the eye the most were the huge birds swirling around in the sky, bodies ablaze. They were the Inferno Divine Bird clan, one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

Other than them, there were also monsters with bodies akin to rock. One could not see their facial features, and could only see their blood-red eyes. The smallest was still over a dozen meters tall, and the tallest were dozens of meters tall. When they stood in the air, they were like a mountain peak that had been plucked into the sky. They seemed indestructible as they deterred the world.

Without even thinking, one could tell they were another powerful Monstrous Beast clan of the Three Great Monstrous Clans, the Boulder

Mutation Beast clan.

"Look, there are also things in the water!" Suddenly, Su Mei shouted as she pointed at the surging waves.

Looking over, there were indeed peculiar bodies swimming within the surging waves. Those things seemed like fishes, yet also like beasts. Their blood-red scales throughout their bodies did make them seem ugly; however, their aura was extremely powerful.

Even the Monstrous Beasts that lived in this sea, after seeing them, let out cries and quickly evaded. From that, one could tell how terrifying these blood-coloured odd fishes were.

They were naturally no ordinary sea beasts. They were one of the Three Great Monstrous Clans of the Eastern Sea Region, the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan.

Today, not only did the Immortal Execution Archipelago arrive, even the Three Great Monstrous Clans had come.

Chapter 900: Horrifying Formation

“Not only the Immortal Execution Archipelago, even the Three Great Monstrous Clans have come?

“Could it be... Could it be that the Three Great Monstrous Clans have already allied with the Immortal Execution Archipelago?” When she looked at the figures in the sky and in the sea, Dong Xue felt very shocked. She couldn’t even help but trembled slightly. One could tell how scared she was.

“Is there even a need to ask? The Three Great Monstrous Clans have always kept a low profile and they’ve never participated in the battles between humans. Today, they’ve pretty much sent out their entire battle strength by sending so many experts here.

“Without much thinking, they’ve definitely already allied with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. It seems that this time, they have truly not come with any kind intentions.” Although Xia Yu did not panic as much as Dong Xue, she still knitted her brows tightly as her eyes were filled with uneasiness.

“It’s you! They must have come here to capture you! Get out, don’t drag us down with you!” After hearing that, Dong Xue felt even more afraid. She directly pointed all the blame towards Chu Feng as she fiercely shouted at him.

“Senior Dong Xue, this is not the time for internal arguments. Besides, our master is still here. Even though they are large in numbers, we may not need to be afraid of them. You don’t need to be so nervous,” Qiu Zhu urged.

“Senior Qiu Zhu is correct. Master is the one who will decide what to do. Who needs you to talk so much?” Chun Wu berated and coldly snorted.

“You...” Dong Xue felt furious at Chun Wu’s words, but her current fear greatly overwhelmed her anger. So, she did not argue with Chun Wu. Instead, she kept on looking behind her, awaiting Lady Piaomiao

appearance.

The army outside was really too powerful. Not only were there many people, they were all cultivation experts—over several tens of millions of cultivation experts. They covered up the entire sky; it was really too horrifying.

Even though the people here had seen quite a bit of the world, they had never seen such a formation of people. It would most definitely be a lie to say they were not afraid.

After all, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was the publicly recognized number one force in the Eastern Sea Region.

As for the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they had always been low-profile and rarely associated with humans. They had always just guarded their own land, and it wouldn't be wrong to say they were cut off from the world.

However, their strength was undoubtable. Right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago had allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and they had come here together. Who could stop them? Even though their Misty Peak's defensive formations were firm, even though their strength was powerful, the crowd's hearts were lacking of confidence.

Despite being calm on the surface, nearly everyone's hearts were drumming. Fear and uneasiness were the emotions echoing within their hearts.

Chu Feng did not mind Dong Xue and the others' remarks, because he simply didn't have the mind to bother with them. He was carefully observing the army that had arrived at the Misty Peak, and what sort of power it had.

There was a total of five Martial Kings from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

One of them was the Sixth Immortal, and Chu Feng could not possibly be more familiar with him. At that moment, he was standing there in perfect condition. Which meant the Forbidden Medicines he consumed

back then didn't do much damage to him. At least, his injuries should have all recovered since he was prepared for battle.

There was another who was also a rank one Martial King like the Sixth Immortal. Chu Feng hadn't seen this person before, but judging by the strength of his aura, Chu Feng felt he was very possibly the Seventh Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Back then, Chun Wu's report stated the Immortal Execution Archipelago sent their Martial Kings to the Depraved Ravine, and one of them was this Seventh Immortal. However, for some reason, he hadn't appeared, which was why the battle dragged out, leading to Chu Feng activating the formation and bringing victory for the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Today, he had finally seen the appearance of this Seventh Immortal.

At that moment, by the sides of the Sixth and Seventh Immortal, there were two more elders who wore the robes of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They were quite old, but they were not rank one Martial Kings, but rank two Martial Kings.

Although they were rank two Martial Kings, their auras were a bit weaker than the Third Immortal who fought Tan Taixue back then in the Burning Heaven Church. So, Chu Feng deduced that they were likely the Fourth and Fifth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Nine Immortals, only seven remained, and today, four had appeared.

As for why only four and not five, it was because the remaining Martial King from the Immortal Execution Archipelago clearly wasn't one of the Nine Immortals.

That old man also had white hair, but there wasn't a single wrinkle on his face. He appeared especially spirited, and the clothes he wore were also different from the others.

Although they were different, there was still a symbol of the Immortal Execution Archipelago sown into them. The hat on his head was even quite similar to a crown, and on it there was also the symbol of an

Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Most importantly, that old man's aura was extremely powerful, even more powerful than You Mingdeng. Since he did not conceal his aura, Chu Feng could tell his strength was far above the four Immortals—he was a rank five Martial King.

With such powerful strength, his special and noble clothing, his overbearing hat, and also the respectful attitude from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, without much thought, Chu Feng knew who that person was.

Most definitely, he was Murong Xun's father, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong!

Other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, there were also many experts from the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

The two Protectors of the Inferno Divine Bird clan had come, and other than those two, there were also three Martial Kings. Of those, two were rank two Martial Kings, and the last one was a rank four Martial King. They wore clothing made out of golden feathers, and their auras were extraordinary. He had an airs that was equal to Murong Niekong, and likely he was the chief of the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

As for the Boulder Mutation Beast clan and the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan, they brought even more Martial Kings than the Inferno Divine Bird clan and the Immortal Execution Archipelago—they both brought six Martial Kings.

Of those, two were also rank four Martial Kings. Judging by their special and noble clothings as well, different from the other clan members, one could tell that the chiefs from those two clans had also come.

The strongest from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans had all come. That formation was very horrifying.

However, Chu Feng also noticed within that army, there was another person. That person made Chu Feng feel even more uneasy.

It was a young man, and at that moment, he was standing behind all

those Martial Kings, beside Murong Xun. His position did not attract much attention, but that man, who Chu Feng hadn't met before, made the young master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago look inferior in every possible area.

That man's age was definitely less than thirty—he was even younger than Murong Xun.

Moreover, he was not only robust, his face was rather handsome as well. His sharp brows especially made him seem full of courage—much more than Murong Xun.

Most importantly, although his aura was concealed, Chu Feng discovered he was a rank four Martial King. His aura was extremely strong as well, even stronger than the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. To have such cultivation at such age was simply unimaginable.

Chapter 901: Flattening the Misty Peak

"I didn't expect they would also come. This means I'm not their sole target... Their goal is likely the Misty Peak." Chu Feng furrowed his brows. Suddenly, he felt that this situation was not as simple as it appeared.

That young man really was too terrifying. Not only was his strength powerful, his clothing made others uneasy—the talismans all over his body, and the long string of beads over his neck. His appearance looked the exactly like the two young men who had saved Murong Xun. However, his strength was far above those two.

If those two had come from the Holy Land of Martialism, this person definitely came from there as well.

It was one thing if this was only a battle between those from the Eastern Sea Region. However, if the people from the Holy Land of Martialism interfered, then their present circumstances were far from reassuring.

"Chu Feng! As I thought, you're here!"

Just at that moment, Murong Xun discovered Chu Feng and the others. He was in a frenzy, like a cat that ate rat feces. His fierce appearance made it seem as if he wanted to eat Chu Feng's flesh and drink his blood.

"So this infamous brat is Chu Feng! It truly is best to see for myself than to listen to rumours. In these days, you've truly made quite the commotion in the Eastern Sea Region!

"I had thought you were some impressive young man, but in the end, you were merely a coward who hides within the Misty Peak," sneered the chief of the Inferno Divine Bird clan.

"Chu Feng, I'm sure you know why we have come here today. If you're a man, then come out right now! I can ask Archipelago Master Murong to leave you an undefiled corpse."

At the same time, the chief from the Boulder Mutation Beast clan also

spoke. His voice was like thunder as it resounded through the air.

"Chief Panshi1, you really view this Chu Feng too highly. If you ask me, this brat's nerves were all broken upon the sight of so many people! He's already performing a miracle by standing there with some sort of stability! You want him to walk to his own death? Hehe, that's simply impossible," said the chief of the Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan with an odd and mocking smile.

"Chu Feng, I am the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong! As long as you hand over my son's Silver Dragon Spear, then kneel and beg for forgiveness, for all the evil actions you've done to my Immortal Execution Archipelago, I can cast the blame solely on yourself. I won't harm your friends, nor will I blame the Misty Peak for taking you in."

Finally, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong, spoke. However, he had a very nasty attitude. His words meant there was no doubt Chu Feng was dead today. He even wanted Chu Feng to kneel and beg for forgiveness before he would release his friends. Otherwise, he would kill them all.

"Murong Niekong, that's quite the tone you have here! Where do you think this is? This is not your Immortal Execution Archipelago. This is the Misty Peak! After coming to this place, you think you can do whatever you want to?" However, no one expected Chun Wu to shout at a famous and powerful person such as Murong Niekong with such a harsh tone.

At that instant, everyone from the Misty Peak couldn't help inhaling deeply. They were not lightly frightened, Xia Yu and Dong Xue especially. They quickly sent her mental messages, telling her not to speak out of turn.

"Which brat did this one come from? You dare to speak to me like this? Do you not know who I am?" Indeed, a hint of displeasure flashed into Murong Niekong's eyes after being retorted.

"I am the disciple of Lady Piaomiao, Chun Wu. No matter who you are, I will not show you any politeness if you come looking for trouble at the

Misty Peak!" Chun Wu was very unyielding. Even though she knew they had powerful strength, she was no inferior in terms of outward bearing.

Actually, when she spoke, Chun Wu was very afraid. Her current fearless appearance was something she forced out entirely, because it would most definitely be nonsense to say she wasn't afraid of such a formation of people.

However, to still dare to retort while fearing them was not something an ordinary person could do.

From that, one could tell even though they were all Lady Piaomiao's disciples, Chun Wu was indeed stronger than Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, and Dong Xue. At least, in terms of courage, she was superior.

"So you're a disciple of Lady Piaomiao. No wonder the arrogance. However, you are still young, and thus lack experience. For Lady Piaomiao's sake, I won't fault you.

"However, that Chu Feng is a person whose hands has murdered countless lives and whose back is burdened with countless sins. It will only taint your unblemished land to allow a person like him to stay in the Misty Peak. Quickly send him out. I can then ignore anything that has happened."

After knowing Chun Wu's identity, the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago actually put away his furious complexion, and instead smiled lightly.

He planned to put Misty Peak at a higher position, while he at a lower one. He was giving her face.

But there was another meaning behind those words, and it was very clear as well: he had already given Lady Piaomiao face now. If she were to return it, then she should tell Chu Feng to go out.

If not, that meant she rejected his offer. And if that were the case, then no kindness would be shown today.

So, at that instant, everyone within the Misty peak understood what Murong Niekong intended. They all involuntarily cast their gazes towards

Chu Feng.

Other than those extremely close to Chu Feng, Dong Xue, Xia Yu, and some guardians of the Misty Peak all brought forth some expectation in their eyes—they wanted to push Chu Feng out.

They did not want to die because of an outsider like Chu Feng.

"What if we don't?" However, at that moment, Chun Wu resolutely spoke. Moreover, there was something else behind her words—they would not send Chu Feng out.

"Hahaha, if you don't, then I won't mind flattening your Misty Peak," Murong Niekong said with a smile.

"What a joke! What do you take the Misty Peak as? You think a ragtag bunch like you can flatten the Misty Peak?" Chun Wu mocked.

"Ragtag bunch? Hoho. I will let an ignorant girl like you know whether or not we're a ragtag bunch."

At that instant, Murong Niekong made an odd smile. Then, he slowly raised his arms, then abruptly dropped them quickly. He yelled, "Flatten the Misty Peak!"

After he spoke, it rose the spirits of the army of millions, invoking incomparable excitement. They all rose their arms and shouted:

"FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!

"FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!

"FLATTEN THE MISTY PEAK!"

The unison cry of tens of millions of cultivation experts was even more deafening than thunder. It shook the world itself, making it as if it were about to collapse.

*

1. Panshi = boulder.

Chapter 902: King of All Kings

The shout from several tens of millions was far more deafening than thunder. Even the air could not withstand the penetrating strength of such a noise as it endlessly trembled.

The army was in high spirits, as if their flames of desire for battle were completely ignited. They looked as if they were utterly prepared to initiate a battle—one that could stomp over anything.

When facing their unstoppable might, the people within the Misty Peak tightly frowned. They felt very uneasy. There were even many who couldn't help backing away, their eyes filled with fear.

Within their shouts, they could feel their unhesitating resolution to fight. This time, they had truly came prepared. So, those from the Misty Peak were terrified.

They even started to suspect whether their Misty Peak's defensive formation would truly hold up if this army of tens of millions were to start advancing.

What if all of them attacked at the same time? With Lady Piaomiao's power, could she truly withstand that?

If the formation couldn't hold up, and if Lady Piaomiao were defeated, then wouldn't all of them die as well?

"Flatten the Misty Peak? You?!"

However, just at that moment, a voice filled with weight rang out. After that voice resounded, the trembling air started to violently rock. There were even cracks in the fabrics of space, as if it were about to collapse.

At the same time, the sea beneath surged. An enormous wave arose, and it could simply touch the sky.

A shock wave that could even flip the universe upside down broke out from that shout, bursting outwards from the Misty Peak.

In an instant, the army standing upright in the air could not stop such

violent shaking. All of them rolled and fell, and there were even many who lost the ability to fly. They were akin to rain as they rained down from the sky, falling into the huge surging waves.

At that very moment, of the army of tens of millions, only Martial Kings could stand stably. Even the powerful Murong Xun tumbled in the air. They were all in quite a bruised state, and they did not look like an orderly army at all.

Everyone from the Misty Peak rejoiced because they all knew Lady Piaomiao had come.

As expected, when they turned their heads around, two people, from the depths of the Misty Peak, were walking slowly towards the entrance.

Of course, those two were Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh After Lady Piaomiao appeared, Murong Niekong waved his big sleeve and released a burst of powerful aura.

That aura of a Martial King was very strong, and it had the power to calm everything. In the areas it passed, all the shaking subsided, and in the end, they were all suppressed.

But even so, no one dared to underestimate Lady Piaomiao. Instead, all of their faces were grave. With just a furious shout, she brought disorder throughout their entire army. Thus, they knew that Lady Piaomiao's strength was no mere rumour. She was indeed the strongest person in the Eastern Sea Region.

"Lady Piaomiao, that was quite magnificent. This junior's borders have been widened today." After calming the disturbance, Murong Niekong slightly smiled, then put away his prior arrogance and quite humbly greeted Lady Piaomiao.

"Murong Niekong, you can discard this facade. Were you the one who said you were going to flatten my Misty Peak?" Lady Piaomiao coldly asked, her gaze fierce.

"I was indeed the one who said that, but there was a reason.

“That Chu Feng has killed countless members of my Immortal Execution Archipelago. He’s also taken away my son’s Royal Armament, taken away my son’s fiancée, and even killed the granddaughter of my archipelago’s First Immortal, Ya Fei.

“The animosity my Immortal Execution Archipelago has with this child is irreconcilable. Lady, you truly shouldn’t protect him,” Murong Niekong said.

“Hoh… I protect whoever I want to. No one can tell me otherwise. However, all of you, listen up. I will remember those who have come to invade my Misty Peak.

“Inferno Divine Bird clan, Boulder Mutation Beast clan, Blood-Scale Monstrous Fish clan. You three clans are truly quite impressive! It’s one thing to ally with the Immortal Execution Archipelago to oppress others, but now you dare to oppress me! I will clean this debt with all of you in the future.”

Lady Piaomiao’s complexion was calm, but it was as if there were two sharp blades of icy air in her eyes. With a mere glance it made those who saw them feel bone-piercing iciness.

“This…”

Lady Piaomiao was truly powerful. After she spoke, the people from the Three Great Monstrous Clans panicked. Even their chiefs tightly furrowed their brows and some uneasiness started glittering in their eyes. From such a reaction, even though they were a peak force that ruled over a part of this world, they still feared a superpower character such as Lady Piaomiao.

However, despite the fear, they did not retreat. As such, it could be seen that they did not come here for any righteous deed. They had truly made their decision.

“Haha, as expected of the one I respect. This is truly quite a terrifying might.

“However, Lady Piaomiao, although you are strong, do not

underestimate us young ones. I spoke politely to you in respect that you're a senior. But do not take advantage of your seniority and reject the face I offer. Don't think we don't have the ability to flatten your Misty Peak.

"I'll say a few slightly unpleasant-sounding words: if we did not have this ability, we would not have come here today!" At that instant, Murong Niekong put away his smiles and revealed the demeanor of a king.

"Don't think of just having a battle of words. If you think you have this ability, then go ahead. Try." Lady Piaomiao's gaze suddenly flickered and her indifferent expression instantly turned icy cold.

boom

At the same time, her clothes started rapidly fluttering. An extremely boundless aura burst from her body.

When that aura emerged, space itself outside the Misty Peak collapsed. The areas touched upon by such aura turned pitch-black.

"This aura... She's a rank six Martial King!"

After feeling that incomparably fierce aura, everyone's expression changed greatly.

They could clearly feel Lady Piaomiao's current realm of cultivation. The famous and powerful person who had lived for nearly a thousand years was a rank six Martial King. Her cultivation was even above the Immortal Execution Archipelago's master.

At that instant, a commotion arose within the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Fear visible by the naked eye appeared on many people's faces.

In contrast to them though, the people from the Misty Peak had elated expressions. Even though they knew Lady Piaomiao was strong, they didn't expect her to be this strong.

If a rank five Martial King was already the peak of the Eastern Sea Region's experts, then a rank six Martial King was above all experts—a king of all kings.

Chapter 903: Lady Piaomiao's Junior

"I truly didn't expect Lady Piaomiao's strength to have reached such a level! This is truly worthy of celebration!"

Seeing the horrifying aura surging in the air, the people within the Misty Peak all felt ecstatic, especially so for Dong Xue, Xia Yu, and the others whose faces had been brimming with fear. At that moment, they were the ones who smiled the most happily, because they themselves did not expect their master to be this powerful.

A rank six Martial King—that was definitely the peak power in the Eastern Sea Region. Numbers could not bring them an advantage when facing a rank six Martial King.

So, they felt that not only was the Misty Peak guarded, the army of tens of millions who were invading had a disaster heading their way.

A rank six Martial King definitely had the strength to massacre them.

boom However, just as they felt the outcome to be determined, an explosion erupted in the sky. Following that explosion, another boundless aura emerged, surging over.

That aura was very strong—it was actually able to fight Lady Piaomiao's without any signs of inferiority. In the end, it repelled Lady Piaomiao's aura.

The aura of a rank six Martial King being repelled by another person. There was only one explanation for that—the person the aura belonged to was also a rank six Martial King.

"This... How is this possible? There's another rank six Martial King?" Xia Yu and Dong Xue who were full of smiles before now turned ashen.

They were not the only ones who had such a reaction. Almost everyone felt greatly surprised. If Lady Piaomiao's cultivation reaching rank six Martial King was something they could accept, then they had absolutely no clue who else could reach that realm within the Eastern Sea Region.

"As I thought, you've hidden an expert. Since you've here, don't hide

yourself anymore. Come out. Let me know who is concealed within this army."

Although Lady Piaomiao also felt surprised, there weren't many changes in her expression. She remained collected, and had spoken with a powerful voice.

"I didn't expect you to still be this oppressing, even though we haven't seen each for so many years!" Just at that moment, a raspy, aged, and "smiling" voice rang out in the sky. Looking over to the its origin, they saw the air in front of Murong Xun ripple, and an old man then appeared out of nowhere.

That old man wore a golden robe, and there was even radiance that shone from it. He was quite gorgeously dressed up, and it was even nobler than the clothes of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's master, Murong Niekong.

However, that old man was really too old. His head was bare—there were merely a few strands of white hair. They swayed with the wind, and it was quite an ugly appearance, but he allowed the white hair to remain on his head, unwilling to remove them.

Then, when one's gaze lowered onto his face, they would see he was truly all skin and bones. No, to be more precise, his skin had left the bones. There were wrinkles all over his face, his skin lacking the slightest bit of elasticity. His skin was loose, and simply looked as if it would fall off his face at any second.

At that moment, the old man was smiling—grinning, actually. Those with sharp eyes could see there wasn't even a single tooth in his mouth. From that, they could really tell he was a person about to die.

At that moment, as he stood in the air, the first feeling he gave others was represented by five words: on the verge of collapse.

He was truly on the verge of collapse, because his body, from the surface, looked too weak. It was even a miracle he was able to stand in the air, and some even felt his entire being would crumble by a huge gale.

However, when that old man appeared at this time, no one dared to be careless because clearly, he was the rank six Martial King who drove off Lady Piaomiao's aura.

After that old man appeared, no matter the Three Great Monstrous Clans, or the people from the Misty Peak, they were all taken aback because in their eyes, there was a word that appeared: foreign.

They had no clue who that old man was. Not a single person recognized him. Yet, how could a person with such strength be not known?

"We greet Ancestor!" Just as guesses were thrown around as to who that old man was, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army, with Murong Niekong's lead, orderly half-knelt on the ground, and greeted the old man.

"Ancestor? When did an ancestor appear in the Immortal Execution Archipelago? Who is this person?"

At that instant, other than the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nearly everyone else had faces full of shock—even the ones from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. They couldn't recall when there had ever been an ancestor-level person in the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Before today, they had never heard about a person like him in the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They had never seen this ancestor!

"Murong Mingtian, it's you?" Lady Piaomiao, however, slightly furrowed her brows, in contrast to the crowd's bewilderedness. Her eyes lit up; she clearly knew who he was.

"Senior, I didn't think you would still recognize me even though I look like this now. My heart truly feels warm.

"But sadly, time flows too quickly. In a blink, several hundred years have passed. Senior, your elegance has gone, and as for me, I am also a person about to die. How sorrowful. How pitiful," Murong Mingtian said with a faint smile.

"What? Senior? She's calling Lady Piaomiao senior? What exactly is happening?"

“Where did this Murong Mingtian come from? Why have I never heard of him?”

“Yeah! I know all the generations of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but I have never heard of this person called Murong Mingtian, nor have I never seen him. How did he become the ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and how does he have such terrifying strength?

“Not only that, I have also never heard she has a junior! Several hundred years ago, she had inherited the position of the Misty Peak’s guardian. If she truly has a junior, doesn’t it mean he too has lived for nearly a thousand years?” After hearing how Murong Mingtian called Lady Piaomiao, everyone felt even more puzzled.

“Hoh, I see. In the end, it was you who made this Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“No wonder it rose so quickly in power after the Burning Heaven Church relocated. It must have been you who’s always been controlling in the dark, right?

“But that does make sense. If it were you who covertly removed those inimical forces, it would have proved no difficulty. However, I didn’t expect you to hide yourself so deeply.” Lady Piaomiao smiled. She seemed to have understood everything.

However, Chu Feng discovered despite the serenity on the surface, Lady Piaomiao’s eyes were glittering with strong killing intent. Although she had concealed it quite well, Chu Feng still caught sight of it. One could thus tell she had a great hatred for that person.

Chapter 904: Madness

“Senior, you are truly smart. However, it seems to be a bit too late discovering that now.” Murong Mingtian’s face was one of smugness.

“Hoh, actually, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago first appeared, I had my doubts. However, I was certain you had already died, so I didn’t make an investigation. I didn’t expect that you were alive, and have even lived this long,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Haha, the reason I’m able to live this long is all because of my own ability. Really, so what if you had doubts? From what I know of you, without any evidence, you wouldn’t have attacked a force that was just created.

“My plans were also meticulously thought through as well. No one would have been able to discover any relation between me and the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Besides, so what if you discovered there was? At most, you would have just destroyed the Immortal Execution Archipelago and killed my heirs.

“However, as long as you didn’t find me, I could just change my appearance and rise again like the sun from the eastern mountains. If I want to create a power, who can stop me?” Murong Mingtian appeared extremely proud, and his tone was very overbearing.

“Haha, heir? Master had already cut off that place with a seal. Where would the heir come from?” After hearing the word “heir”, Lady Piaomiao suddenly started laughing—it was a very mocking laugh.

As she laughed, she even looked at Murong Niekong and sneered, “Murong Niekong, oh Murong Niekong, you wouldn’t truly think this Murong Mingtian is your Murong family’s ancestor, right?

“I don’t mind telling you that he’s just a useless person who can’t even copulate! How could he possibly bring you up?”

“Shut up! Do not insult my ancestor!” After hearing Lady Piaomiao’s words, Murong Niekong, Murong Xun, and the other people from the

Immortal Execution Archipelago were furious.

"She's correct. It has indeed been cut off by a seal by my master back in the day, so I prevents me from ever recreating it. Right now, I do indeed lack the ability to reproduce. That's not something I won't admit. It happened, so it happened. I don't feel that it's any sort of shame."

However, unexpectedly, Murong Mingtian did not feel any indignity at Lady Piaomiao's words. Instead, he quite frankly admitted them.

"Ancestor, you..." At that moment, Murong Niekong and the others all felt shock. Clearly, they could not accept this fact.

"Even though you are not my own offspring, you are the successors I've raised. In my heart, you are my sons. Everyone in the Immortal Execution Archipelago is my successor. You are all my sons and daughters!" Murong Mingtian said sanguinely.

"Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor! Ancestor!!" At that instant, everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago cheered loudly together. Some even shed tears in passion.

"Senior, do you feel no shame by humiliating me with this? Have you forgotten this happened all because of you?" Suddenly, Murong Mingtian looked at Lady Piaomiao furiously.

Murong Mingtian's words spread his rage towards the members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They loudly yelled:

"Kill Lady Piaomiao, flatten the Misty Peak, avenge our ancestor!"

"Kill Lady Piaomiao, flatten the Misty Peak, avenge our ancestor!"

The word "avenge" resounded endlessly. The true goal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was now shown.

Even though Lady Piaomiao and Murong Mingtian hadn't talked about much, everyone drew some information from their conversation.

It seemed that this person called Murong Mingtian was truly Lady Piaomiao's junior. He was the same as her—a disciple of the previous guardian of the Misty Peak. And, for some reason, his "root of life" was

severed by the previous guardian, and he thus lost the ability to reproduce.

That person retained a heart of hatred, and after leaving the Misty Peak, he established the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Although everyone knew the creator of the Immortal Execution Archipelago was Murong Longcheng, it was clear this Murong Mingtian was its true creator.

The previous masters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago were no more than puppets. They had always listened to this person's orders, and it was likely Murong Niekong, whose name spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region, was also a puppet.

Murong Mingtian had controlled the Immortal Execution Archipelago so many years in the dark, and expanded it from a nameless little force into the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region. Moreover, for several hundred years, no one discovered his existence. From that, one could see how impressive he was.

That was especially evident from his words before: he didn't deny the fact he lost his thing, and instead admitted it truthfully.

On the surface, that appeared like a very idiotic action, but he had successfully inflamed the anger of the Immortal Execution Archipelago as they faced the Misty Peak. That was truly something quite impressive.

Even though there were a few things the crowd could not confirm, and there were still some inside stories unknown, they still understood a truth.

The Immortal Execution Archipelago had gathered so many experts at this place not just for a simple action as killing Chu Feng. Their true goal was, in reality, to take revenge on the Misty Peak.

"As I thought, it's him. He's the person who harmed my master. I didn't think this old thing was still alive." At that instant, Chun Wu came to a realization. She gritted her teeth with a face of fury.

"Senior Chun Wu, who is that person? Can you tell me?" Chu Feng asked with mental messaging after pulling her to the side.

"Junior Chu Feng, this person is definitely the most inhuman bastard in

the world. Back in the day, he and Master entered the Misty Peak together. He has always drooled over the position of the Misty Peak's guardian, and even thought he was the only person who could continue this position.

"However, when my ancestor's life neared the end, she suddenly announced to the Misty Peak that only a female could inherit the position of guardian. That made Murong Mingtian furious, and he revealed his animalistic side.

"He actually put poison into my ancestor's and other elders' belongings. My ancestor had powerful cultivation, so after being poisoned, she only passed out temporarily. However, since the others didn't have as great as a cultivation, they died.

"Luckily, my master was testing a cure that day, and since she hadn't used it, not much harm was dealt to my master.

"At that time, Murong Mingtian thought he had succeeded. So, he took my ancestor's Spirit Formation key, entered the Misty Peak's forbidden land, and took away a Forbidden Mysterious Technique my ancestor believed was a taboo to cultivate.

"Afterwards, Murong Mingtian, who had went mad, even prepared to release the sealed demon. Luckily, my master stopped him and only then was a crisis averted.

"However, since there was still poison in my master's body, her cultivation was restricted and she wasn't able to defeat Murong Mingtian. Because of that, he actually..." After saying all that, Chun Wu started to sob. Tears rolled down her cheek—she actually started to cry.

"Senior Chun Wu, what did he do?" Chu Feng asked after wiping away Chun Wu's tears. He knew Murong Mingtian must have done something heartless to Lady Piaomiao.

Chapter 905: Immortal Sword Formation

“Actually, my master was originally very beautiful. We had seen a drawing of her young self, and she was truly pretty back then, even more than Senior Qiushui right now.

“However, that mad Murong Mingtian destroyed my master’s complexion. Not only that, he even used my ancestor’s Forbidden Medicine so my master could never restore her appearance.

“In reality, my master’s face is fake. Her true countenance has already destroyed.” Chun Wu silently wept.

At that instant, Chu Feng tightly clenched his fists. An indescribable rage spread from his heart. He seemed to know why Lady Piaomiao only gave herself an ordinary appearance even though she was so powerful.

Perhaps her mentality was changed due to the destruction of her beauty, and felt rather than having some exquisite complexion, it was better to have a more ordinary one.

“Originally, Murong Mingtian even wanted to destroy my master’s cultivation, but luckily, my ancestor awakened.

“Seeing so many disciples killed, and even my master’s beautiful complexion had been touched by such a venomous scheme, she went into a rage. She ruthlessly tormented Murong Mingtian, of it included using a powerful seal to cut that part off from Murong Mingtian, and dealt a peraenent damage to his physical body.

“However, Murong Mingtian, with some sort of special method, escaped. He was heavily injured, so both my master and ancestor felt he was doomed and could not survive. So, they didn’t bother searching for his whereabouts.

“However, unexpectedly, he not only survived, he even created the Immortal Execution Archipelago and had lived for this long.

“Typically speaking, even after becoming a rank six Martial King, he shouldn’t be able to live this long. The reason he is to, however, must be

because he's relying on something he got from the Misty Peak.

"And now, this bastard even dares to bring so many people to attack the place that raised him! I have never seen such a despicable person like him." Chun Wu's body was trembling from anger, and from that, it could be seen how furious she was.

Chu Feng, who finally knew what had happened, felt the rage surging throughout his body as well. He involuntarily cast his gaze towards Murong Mingtian, his eyes full of strong bloodlust.

Putting aside what he did to Lady Piaomiao, since he was the true ruler of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Chu Feng knew that the one who bound Zi Ling with the Heaven Gripping Pellet was him.

He had truly committed an enormity. He could not be forgiven.

"Shut up!

"Who let you flatten the Misty Peak? This is the place that raised me! Are you going to flatten the place that raised me?" However, who would have expected Murong Mingtian to suddenly berate the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Of course, the Immortal Execution Archipelago quickly shut their mouths, and no one dared to say even half a word. It could be seen how much deterrence this unseen ancestor had in the hearts of the army.

"Some Immortal Execution Archipelago this is. Immortal Execution... Immortal Execution... These two words have quite the meaning! It looks like you've planned for this day when you made this name.1

"Coming here to capture Chu Feng is merely an excuse, and the true reason you came here is to take revenge on the Misty Peak, right?" Lady Piaomiao asked.

"Senior, why must you make it sound so unpleasant? There are some conflicts between you and me, but I have none with the Misty Peak! Like I said, this is the place that raised me. I've come here today to express my gratitude," Murong Mingtian said, lacking any shame on his face.

“Expressing gratitude requires so many people?” Lady Piaomiao also mocking smiled.

“If I don’t bring so many people, I’m afraid you won’t let me in, senior!” Murong Mingtian said.

“Hoh, if I let you in, I’m afraid I’ll have to leave. To me, you aren’t here to express your gratitude, but instead, your life has neared the end. You want to borrow the power of the peak to prolong your life,” Lady Piaomiao said with cold words.

“Heh, my senior is truly understanding. Since you’re so clear on that, why the extra question? If you put away the defensive formation and let us in, I’ll just ignore everything that had happened.

“If you force me to break through the formation, then at that time, you can’t blame me for a massacre,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Break through the formation? That’ll depend whether you have the strength or not.” Lady Piaomiao’s face turned cold, and she closed her eyes. Then, her hands rapidly changed position, then she shouted, “Immortal Sword Formation, activate!”

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Countless huge swords shining with golden radiance shot out from the defensive formation. Every single sword was over a dozen meters long, and all contained extremely powerful strength.

At that very instant, by rough estimations, there were several tens of millions of golden swords. As they spun, they were like an army that guarded a city. Not even water could pass through the seal of swords regardless of direction. It exuded a powerful aura, making it seem as though nothing could break through it.

“I have heard of this Immortal Sword Formation from Master, but I’d never had the chance to see it. I’ve seen something new today.” Murong Mingtian frowned slightly at the formation of millions of swirling swords, because he had heard how powerful it was.

“Ancestor, this Immortal Sword Formation is very strong. If we forcibly

make an attack, I'm afraid we won't succeeded," Murong Niekong couldn't help saying. At that very moment, everyone felt the strength of that Immortal Sword Formation.

He felt that the power of the Immortal Sword Formation seemed to have far surpassed a typical rank six Martial King. If they forced an attack, it would truly be difficult.

"I haven't been a rank six Martial King for just a few days. The reason I hadn't come to this Misty Peak wasn't because I feared Lady Piaomiao, but because I fear this Immortal Sword Formation.

"This formation's strength is dependent on the guardian's strength. Although Lady Piaomiao is as strong as me, since she's controlling this Immortal Sword Formation, I am truly no match for her," Murong Mingtian said.

"Ancestor, what should we do? We've put painstaking effort into allying with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and came here, taking the risk that the Crippling Night Demon Sect may attack our headquarters. We can't just return with nothing, right?" Murong Niekong said worriedly.

Their dispatch of army this time could truly be said to be all they had. Only a few experts were left behind to guard the headquarters. If the Crippling Night Demon Sect took this chance to invade, their base would likely not hold.

"Ever since that Crippling Night Demon Sect's sect head died, they warrant no fear. Right now, we've allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Is it not an easy task to kill them all? The Eastern Sea Region no longer allows for the Crippling Night Demon Sect to exist!

"As for the headquarters, if it cannot be kept, then it can be abandoned. This Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. It is the holiest place in the Eastern Sea Region. As long as we take it down, this will be the Immortal Execution Archipelago's headquarters," Murong Mingtian said.

"However, this Immortal Sword Formation is so powerful! How do we break through it?" Murong Niekong felt confused.

*

1. Full title of Lady Piaomiao is Immortal Lady.

Chapter 906: Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers

“Indeed, I cannot break through this Immortal Sword Formation. However, this friend from the Holy Land of Martialism does have a plan.

“Am I right, my friend Jiang Qisha?” Murong Mingtian smiled as he turned around, casting his gaze towards the handsome young man whose body was covered with talismans.

“Murong Mingtian, remember what you guaranteed me. If you dare to go back on your word, I will let you know what true destruction is.” Jiang Qisha indifferently looked at Murong Mingtian. There was not the slightest bit of respect in his eyes, and instead, there was a hint of disdain.

After speaking, disregarding the crowd’s expressions, he went straight past Murong Mingtian, towards the very front of the army.

At that instant, Murong Niekong’s and the others’ faces were not all that well. There was actually someone who dared to speak to his ancestor like that, and, as the younger generation, it was truly unbearable to see such disrespect.

However, with Murong Mingtian’s indication, no one dared to say anything. After all, they knew very well the origin of this young man called Jiang Qisha. Putting aside his strength, his status alone brought forth fear from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Chu Feng furrowed his brows upon seeing Jiang Qisha’s preparations to break through the formation. His greatest fear was the interference from those of the Holy Land of Martialism. Now, it seemed that his fear came true.

“Fuyan, this is the person you said came from the Holy Land of Martialism, right?” Lady Piaomiao asked Qiushui Fuyan, who was behind her. Clearly, she too had noticed that this Jiang Qisha was not simple at all.

“His clothes are indeed the same as the person I saw back then, but he is even stronger than those two. I truly don’t know how many people have come from the Holy Land of Martialism.” Qiushui Fuyan also frowned. Her greatest fear was also an alliance between the people from Holy Land of Martialism and the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“I’m not afraid of Murong Mingtian, nor am I afraid of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but I have to be on guard against this person.

“The Misty Peak originates from the Ancient Era. As the guardian of this place, although I do not have a total grasp on everything, I do know there are treasures that others do not know hidden here.

“If the person from the Holy Land of Martialism interferes, I’m afraid I won’t be able to hold this place.” Lady Piaomiao’s face was serious. Her fierce gaze was locked tightly onto that Jiang Qisha.

At that moment, he was standing at the forefront of the army. He held a one-meter-long old book. It was very thick, and no one knew what was recorded within. Jiang Qisha was reading through it with no hurry, ignoring the gazes of the crowd. He truly put no one in his eyes.

“Lady Piaomiao, that...” Qiushui Fuyan also started getting nervous. In the moment of anxiousness, she grabbed Lady Piaomiao’s hand.

“Don’t worry. I’m just worried about the people from the Holy Land of Martialism. After all, that’s an unfathomable land. There are many experts there, and if some have truly come here, then we can’t really deal with them.

“However, if it’s just this little one who wants to break through my Misty Peak’s Immortal Sword Formation, then he’s truly overestimating himself.

“Moreover, even if this formation is truly broken through, I won’t stubbornly defend to the end. After all, I still have all you with me. If I can’t hold this place, then I will do everything I can to slaughter a path out of this place.” Lady Piaomiao’s words were spoken very calmly. One could tell she was already prepared.

However, they could also tell she was not absolutely confident she could stop Murong Mingtian and the others.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha closed his eyes, and his flipping speed through the book suddenly sped up. The pages on the book were run through as if there were a gale, and at the same time, a very peculiar aura spread from that ancient book.

hmm The book shone with brilliance, as if it were day. It was so blinding the people nearby could not even open their eyes.

“Release!” Quickly after, Jiang Qisha shouted, and after a boom, the book in his hand transformed into an enormous door over a thousand meters tall.

This was truly an enormous door. It touched the clouds, and dipped into the sea. As it stood upright in the air, it was like a ladder that connected the heaven and the earth.

Its shape was very odd as well—it was the same as Jiang Qisha’s clothing. Strange talismans were stuck all over it, giving others an extremely eerie feeling.

“Everyone, with the exception of Martial Kings, channel the power of your life’s root into this door,” Jiang Qisha said.

But after he spoke, the tens of millions of people all looked at each other, not a single one following his order. The power of one’s life’s root was no joke. That did not only affect cultivation, it affected Source Energy as well. If not done well, there was a possibility of death. Who would so easily channel such power into something else? Especially so for such an odd-looking formation.

“Everyone, I’ve brought you here not truly to put your life on the line against the Misty Peak.

“You’ve seen the Immortal Sword Formation as well. If we force an attack, it’s likely we won’t succeed regardless of our numbers. In the end, it would be no more than a suicidal action.

“But, while knowing this, I’ve called you here today. Naturally, it’s because I need you. At this moment, it is time that I require your power.

“So, everyone, don’t hesitate and put forth the power of your life’s root. Don’t worry, I, Murong Mingtian, swear with my honour that this formation only requires your power to activate. It will not affect your cultivation, nor take your life,” Murong Mingtian said.

“We listen to Ancestor’s order!” The Immortal Execution Archipelago first responded, then without any more hesitation, all of them channeled their power into the odd door.

whoosh whoosh whoosh Quickly after, the army from the Three Great Monstrous Clans also, with the indication of the three chiefs, channeled their own power.

Layers upon layers of formless but strong power started merging into the door filled with runes. When such a thing occurred, the countless talismans stuck on the door started shining with faint radiance. Moreover, they shone brighter and brighter, and the runes on the talismans even started to squirm, as if they had received life.

Jiang Qisha’s closed eyes burst open when the talismans on the door started to tremble intensely. He shouted, “Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers, activate!”

aooo— After his words, a peculiar howl exploded within the door. Quickly after, a figure shot out.

That figure was over three meters tall. It was in the shape of both a human and beast. It held a spear, and its aura was very powerful—it was a peak Martial Lord.

aooooo— Quickly after, several more howls rang out. The runes on the huge door unceasingly changed, and tens of thousands of figures continually shot out. No matter shape or strength, it was the exact same as the monster before.

In the end, when the door returned to tranquility, nearly everyone who saw the scene before their eyes couldn’t help deeply inhaling. At that very

instant, the number of powerful monsters standing before the door reached several tens of millions.

Several tens of millions of peak Martial Lords. That number was truly terrifying!

Chapter 907: Forced to Ask for Assistance

Tens of millions of monsters with strength of peak Martial Lords stood straight in the air. That number was the exact same as the number of people in the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans; however, their strength in total was more uniform and powerful.

Moreover, every single one of them seemed as if they had true life. No matter appearance or their inside, it did not seem like they were made by a formation. It truly appeared as if they were living beings that had their own intelligence.

"In this world, there's a formation like this? It's able to create such lifelike entities..." Even Chu Feng, who was very skilled in Spirit Formations, frowned. He didn't expect Jiang Qisha to be able to create such a masterful formation.

Although Jiang Qisha had used the power of tens of millions, it was truly quite horrifying for him to summon tens of millions of powerful monsters with cultivation of peak Martial Lords.

"Hoh, I've finally seen a technique from the Holy Land of Martialism. However, you underestimate me too much if you want to break through my formation with merely this."

The corner of Lady Piaomiao's mouth curled up slightly, then her eyes lit up as the golden swords of the Immortal Sword Formation, as if they received an order, stopped spinning around the peak and instead, pointed their tips in all directions. They looked as if they would massacre any invaders.

However, Jiang Qisha disdainfully smiled at the change occurring to the Immortal Sword Formation. He pointed his hand at the Misty Peak, then shouted, "Kill—"

aoo— After his words, the tens of millions of monsters pounded their chests and stamped their feet as they let out a world-shaking roar. Like inverted meteors, they densely flew straight towards the Misty Peak.

At that moment, many people within the Misty Peak were terrified. Other than Lady Piaomiao, Chu Feng, and the others, a large portion of people backed away in fright. They were afraid the monsters would break through the formation and instantly kill them.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh However, the Immortal Sword Formation was obviously not something useless. When the army of monsters reached a certain range, the countless huge golden swords shot towards them with light-like speed and a might that could crush anything.

boom boom boom boom

Explosions rang out, and shock waves were endlessly created. It didn't matter how powerful the monsters were; they were unable to withstand the attacks from the huge golden swords. As long as they were struck, they would shatter immediately. There was no chance for them.

However, the monsters were not simple either. As long as they weren't struck by the golden sword, it didn't matter how horrifying the shock waves were. None would harm them, and like unstoppable arrows, they shot straight past the golden swords, into the defensive formation.

boom, boom, boom, boom...

Although the golden swords were powerful, their numbers were limited. Moreover, the monsters were very quick, and they also had intelligence, leading to their guile.

So, the golden swords simply could not destroy them all. The monsters started to unendingly pass through the Immortal Sword Formation, and after doing so, they did not blindly advance. Instead, with some sort of self-destruction technique, they diminished the power of the defensive formation.

Although their cultivations were only of peak Martial Lords, their self-destruction power was very terrifying, to the point every time they blew up, the entire defensive formation slightly trembled. That strength was even comparable to the strongest attack from a Martial King.

And with the increasing number of monsters that passed through the defensive line of the Immortal Sword Formation, the trembles began increasing in frequency. The entire defensive formation was in a very perilous spot.

“He does possess a bit of skill—he knows he cannot destroy the Immortal Sword Formation, so he directly attacks the defensive formation. It seems that I’ve underestimated him.” Lady Piaomiao knitted her brows. She knew that person was no simple character.

“Lady Piaomiao, there are special talismans on those monsters, and the reason their self-destruction strength is so powerful is due to the talismans.

“Although the strongest attack from a Martial King cannot threaten this formation, since there are so many attacks unendingly occurring, the power of this defensive formation doesn’t matter anymore! It can’t completely resist their attacks,” Qiushui Fuyan said worriedly.

“Fuyan, you’re right. Their formation is very powerful and it has truly surpassed my imagination. I won’t be able to hold them off if this continues. We can now only plan for the worst.

“Right now, bring Chu Feng to the Altar of Exorcism. Try to make contact with the mysterious existence in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm. See if it’s willing to help us escape this disaster for Chu Feng’s sake.

“If it’s willing to, then even the people from the Holy Land of Martialism will die here today. If not, then we can only leave,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“However, as the guardian of this place, wouldn’t it be better for you to go?” Qiushui Fuyan expressed confusion.

“If I could have, then I would have already. In the eyes of outsiders, I am the guardian of the Misty Peak and they feel that I’ve gotten great things from this place.

“However, I myself know very well that the so-called guardian of the

Misty Peak is merely a watchdog that cleans up trash for that mysterious existence.

"It does not care who guards this place as long as there is a guard. However, Chu Feng is different. Chu Feng seems to have received its approval, so perhaps he can come into contact with it.

"Bring Chu Feng there. As long as the mysterious existence helps us, that will be good. However, don't stay there for too long. If there's a response, then great. If not, then don't force it and quickly return." As she spoke, Lady Piaomiao's tone was rather helpless.

"I understand." Qiushui Fuyan didn't continue asking. She turned around, grabbed Chu Feng, and flew deep into the Misty Peak.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh Just when Qiushui Fuyan brought Chu Feng away, the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans once again channeled their power into the runic door.

With another activation from Jiang Qisha, the door once again shone with brilliance. Millions upon millions of horrifying monsters appeared again. They were the exact same as the ones before, and they started to continuously advance towards the Misty Peak.

At that instant, everyone from the Misty Peak were terrified. They could tell if that continued, the defensive formation would be destroyed— destroyed when their enemy hadn't even spent a single soldier. This time, they had truly entered a horrendous situation.

In reality, it was not only Xia Yu, Dong Xue, and the others who thought that. Even the guardian of the Misty Peak, Lady Piaomiao, frowned. However, she could do nothing. She could only use everything she had to hold up the defensive formation.

As she did so, she hoped Chu Feng could make contact with the mysterious existence in this place and borrow its power. If he were able to, then it could eradicated everyone outside the Misty Peak.

Chapter 908: Opening up a Path of Blood

Another round of attacks smashed into the defensive formation, and the shock it received was even more intense than before.

Even though Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan had come deep into the Misty Peak, they were still able to see the pressure the defensive formation withstood, as well as the endlessly exploding shock waves.

"Chu Feng, you should know what to do, right?" Seeing the already cracked formation, Qiushui Fuyan cast her gaze towards the altar on the peak.

"Sister Fuyan, I will do my best." Chu Feng nodded, then walked towards the so-called Altar of Exorcism.

The altar looked very odd on the surface—it was like a sinister monster's skull, and its huge mouth was the entrance.

After Chu Feng entered, he discovered that the inside was even odder. What was burning within were black flames, but those black flames were able to emit faint light. It made the large palace a bit gloomy, and also a bit eerie.

But in reality, due to Chu Feng's current cultivation, even if there were no flames he could still see everything inside clearly. He could see that the altar was very large, but very empty. The only important thing was its center.

In the center of the altar, there was a tall stage where a mirror stood. It was oval-shaped, and a dozen or so meters tall. It was also nearly ten meters wide, and looked like a vertical eye staring at himself.

Chu Feng knew the mirror was the thing he needed to use to make contact with the mysterious existence. So, Chu Feng went up to the mirror, half-knelt on the ground, and deeply bowed.

"You came here to ask me for help, right?" But before Chu Feng even spoke, an aged voice—one that seemed it had been through eons of immense changes—came from the mirror. That voice was the exact same

as the mysterious existence's back then in the Martial Marking Immortal Realm.

Even though it was only a voice, Chu Feng's heart still couldn't help lightly trembling. That person was really too powerful. Just by hearing the voice alone let him know how horrifying of an existence it was.

"Senior, since you know about everything that's happening outside, why aren't you driving them away? Instead, you're allowing these people to disturb your peace?" Chu Feng asked, feigning confusion.

When they were heading over to this altar, Qiushui Fuyan had told him a few things. The Misty Peak was originally a Sealing Formation. As for the master of this place, no one knew who it was. Lady Piaomiao had suspected that the sealed mysterious existence was, in reality, the true master of the Misty Peak.

So, Chu Feng knew the mysterious existence he saw within the Martial Marking Immortal Realm, though seemed like a monster whose strength was immense, might not have been sealed here for a simple reason. No one knew the truth, but what they did know what this mysterious existence had the ability to save them.

Chu Feng's mission was to do everything he could to get this mysterious existence to help.

"Why should I do anything? That girl is the guardian of this place. If she doesn't have the ability to guard, then so what if the person is switched?" The mysterious voice rang out again, lacking any sort of empathy.

"But Senior, Lady Piaomiao [Immortal Lady Piaomiao] has guarded this place for so many years. Even if she hasn't done great deeds, she has still put hard work into it. Can you bear letting her die from battle because she's guarding this place?" Chu Feng asked.

"Immortal Lady? She's worthy of this appellation of 'immortal'? Do you think she's gotten any few amount of benefits from this place? If she hadn't cultivated on the Misty Peak, with the aptitude she has, how could she possess her current cultivation, and how could she have lived up to

today?

“She’s guarding this place not to guard me, but to guard herself. If she can’t fight them off, then it can’t be blamed on any person.

“However, for you, I will point you a path of life.”

hmm Suddenly, a ripple appeared on the mirror. A body of light the size of a fingernail bore out from it, and floated up to Chu Feng.

Giving it a detailed examination, Chu Feng discovered it was a rune, but absolutely not a simple one. The energy contained within seemed to be able to change a few things.

“Take this. Go nine thousand miles away from the Misty Peak, and at that time, this will shine with light. Crush it, then a formation will appear. It will seal everyone behind you within the Misty Peak. Within twenty hours, it will deactivate.

“This time should be sufficient for your escape. But the precondition is that you can break through this surrounding attack and put all of them behind.” That voice started to gradually fade away before it completely disappeared.

Chu Feng knew the mysterious existence had left. No matter how he pleaded, it would be useless.

That existence came from the Ancient Era, and lived for several tens of thousands of years. It had likely seen all sorts of things, and it couldn’t be convinced just by a few words.

So, Chu Feng didn’t bother with it anymore. He stood up, and after bowing, he walked straight out of the altar.

“Chu Feng, how is it? Were you able to make contact with the mysterious existence?” Qiushui Fuyan was waiting outside. She quickly went up after seeing Chu Feng exit.

“Sister Fuyan, I’ll make this short. The mysterious existence replied, but it’s unwilling to help. However, it is not ignoring us either, and gave us a chance to escape.

“It’s this.” As Chu Feng spoke, he took out the mysterious rune, and told her its usage.

“It’s hard to imagine it actually responded to you. This is truly unbelievable.” After hearing what had happened, Qiushui Fuyan’s face was full of shock. However, she did not dally and after simply sealing that place, she brought Chu Feng back to the entrance.

boom boom boom boom boom boom

After arriving at the entrance, the attacks coming from Jiang Qisha’s formation became fiercer and fiercer. Chu Feng could clearly see, as those monsters blew up, glass-like cracks appearing on the defensive formation. It was truly in immediate danger, and it would shatter at any moment.

“Fuyan, Chu Feng, how did it go?” Lady Piaomiao quickly asked.

At that moment, she was a bit pale. Clearly, she had exhausted quite some power by holding up both the defensive formation and the Immortal Sword Formation.

“Lady Piaomiao, I’ll give this to you.” Chu Feng quickly gave the rune to Lady Piaomiao, then gave her a simple explanation on how to use it to escape.

Chu Feng could tell the Misty Peak could not be defended. Right now, if they wanted to survive, the only way was to break through the surrounding attack.

“Chu Feng, since it gave this to you, then you use it.” However, after knowing what had happened, Lady Piaomiao did not put away the rune and instead gave it back to Chu Feng.

Quickly after, she extended her finger and drew a circle on the ground. Only then did she cast her gaze towards the crowd behind her, and shouted, “Chu Feng, Fuyan, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Yan Ruyu, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi! All of you stand inside the circle. Today, we will slaughter our way through, and open up a path of blood.”

Chapter 909: Lady Piaomiao Showing Her Might

Chu Feng and the others didn't dare to hesitate as they quickly stepped into that circle.

After they all entered, Lady Piaomiao rapidly made hand gestures, then with the wave of her big sleeve, a Spirit Formation with countless runes appeared, enveloping them all.

hmm However, when the Spirit Formation was finished, the runes within the formation quickly swirled like light. As they did, the Spirit Formation materialized and became a sack filled with runes.

whoosh After it became a sack, Lady Piaomiao then made an astonishing action: she took out her Cosmos Sack, and as the runes glowed and swirled, the Spirit Formation that held Chu Feng and the others was put into her Cosmos Sack.

When they witnessed that scene, not to mention bystanders, even Chu Feng and the others were shocked. Living beings could not be put into a Cosmos Sack, yet Chu Feng and the others were clearly all living organisms. That shouldn't be possible.

The reason it could was obviously because of Lady Piaomiao's Spirit Formation.

Most importantly, after they entered the Cosmos Sack, they could even clearly see everything through it. One had to admit that Lady Piaomiao's technique really was powerful. Even Chu Feng admired it quite a bit.

"Lady Piaomiao, save us! Lady Piaomiao, save us!"

After seeing Chu Feng and the others taken into the Cosmos Sack, the elders who were responsible for guarding the Misty Peak panicked. Many of them quickly ran up to Lady Piaomiao, then knelt and kowtowed.

They could tell that she didn't prepare to bring them away. However, without Lady Piaomiao protecting them, as her subordinates, they were

dead once the army broke through the defensive formation.

"At first, when you came to the Misty Peak, you had sworn to live and die with the Misty Peak's existence. Today, the Misty Peak will perish. Are you now planning to abandon your oaths?" Lady Piaomiao coldly questioned.

"Lady Piaomiao, spare us! Lady Piaomiao, spare us! We don't want to die just like this! We still want to follow you! Please bring us with you!"

After hearing Lady Piaomiao's words, a small portion of them stopped begging and stood up, returning to their original positions. However, there was still a large portion of people who were still kowtowing and begging, hoping they would have a chance of survival.

From that, it could be seen when faced with death, these elders who had lived for many years could throw away dignity for life.

whoosh When she saw that, Lady Piaomiao swung her finger and drew a circle on the ground.

"Thank you, Lady Piaomiao! Thank you, Lady Piaomiao!" The ones begging quickly climbed up and ran into that circle.

boom But who would have thought before they were able to, Lady Piaomiao waved her big sleeve and blew back all of them. They coughed up blood, and they were pale. Lady Piaomiao had heavily injured them.

"Only in the crucial moment of peril will true loyalty show itself. You cowardly ones are unworthy to continue following me. Remain here and perish."

Lady Piaomiao waved her sleeve again, and actually brought those who did not or stopped begging into the circle, then cast another formation, taking those people into the Cosmos Sack as well.

After doing all that, Lady Piaomiao abruptly turned around, cast her fierce gaze at the army of millions outside the Misty Peak, and shouted, "No matter who it is, those who dare to invade my Misty Peak will die by my hands!"

boom rumble rumble rumble

After she spoke, the Immortal Sword Formation and defensive formation were instantly deactivated, and at that instant, Lady Piaomiao shot out like light.

However, she did not only escape. Instead, she waved her sleeve and released a boundless Martial power.

wu ya ya ya ya—

When the Martial power was sent out, it became countless peculiar birds. They were very beautiful, but had very odd appearances. Moreover, they were extremely ferocious. They were like millions of arrows—as they let out ear-piercing cries, they flew everywhere and even cut into space itself, causing black curves in air to appear.

Even the powerful talismanic monsters were unable to stop the flying birds' attack as they were all pierced through. The birds were even more powerful than the golden swords from the Immortal Sword Formation.

"This might... It's a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Lady Piaomiao can actually cast it so casually despite its difficulty?" At that moment, Chu Feng, who was in the Cosmos Sack, had a face of amazement. He was stunned by Lady Piaomiao's technique.

boom, boom, boom, boom, boom...

However, the talismanic monsters were clearly no pushovers. After the Immortal Sword Formation and defensive formation were deactivated, all of them flew towards Lady Piaomiao and surrounded her. However, before they went up close, they suddenly exploded. They wanted to blur Lady Piaomiao's vision by the violent energy shock waves, thus creating an opening which could be exploited to bring her a fatal strike.

"That brat's this powerful? So this is the power of the Holy Land of Martialism?"

Seeing the horrifying shock waves brought by the monsters' continual explosions, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans had shocked faces. They could feel the

horrifying shock waves generated by the countless explosions. Not to mention a Martial Lord, even a typical Martial King would die within.

wu ya ya ya ya ya

However, in spite of all that, amidst the shock waves that covered the entire sky, ear-piercing cries of birds rang out once again. At the same time, the countless strange birds, with a terrifying might, flew towards the army. They had passed through the surrounding attacks of the talismanic monsters, and had prepared to engage in a counterattack.

“Everyone, be careful! Lady Piaomiao is preparing to attack!”

The chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans and Murong Niekong all tightly furrowed their brows. They gave a warning to the surrounding crowd nearly at the same time while their faces were filled with graveness. Not a single one of them dared to underestimate their enemy.

They knew very well who they were up against—Lady Piaomiao, one of the strongest persons in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

wu ya ya ya ya*

However, they had still underestimated Lady Piaomiao’s technique. When the army had made all preparations, the bird cries once again rang out. Nearly everyone was stupefied when they looked.

They saw the dense body of birds stack atop one another like a cloud. The amount was simply inestimable.

Furthermore, at that very instant, they were rapidly spreading, surrounding them all. With an unbelievable speed, they flew towards the army.

“Lay a Spirit Formation, stop the attacks!” Under Murong Niekong’s command, the experts from the alliance of powers attacked at the same time to defend against Lady Piaomiao’s Mortal Taboo martial skill.

wu ya ya ya ya

However, the strange birds were really too fast. They were not only large in numbers, their flying direction was very cunning as well. Even though

the many Martial Kings had sent out their own counterattacks, they were unable to stop them all.

pu pu pu pu pu pu

In the end, the birds were still able to break through their defenses and entered their ranks. Along with their entry was the endless appearance of blood, and the continuous shrieks of pain. A massacre had accompanied their arrival, and in just a blink, several tens of thousands of people had died within the army of tens of millions.

One after the other, spirited lives had become corpses lacking of awareness. They all fell from the sky.

And these—these were the consequences of invading the Misty Peak.

Chapter 910: White Silk Royal Armament

At that moment, the bird cries rang out incessantly, and they were akin to the overture of death. Hearing that sound alone sent chills down everyone's spines.

Those birds pierced through the army, and endlessly through the chests of the army. They brought away with them not only large amounts of blood, but also their lives.

"Dammit! This Taboo martial skill is too powerful. We cannot stop it. Ancestor, what should we do?" At that moment, Murong Niekong tightly furrowed his brows. Although he, as a rank five Martial King, was powerful, he stood no chance against Lady Piaomiao.

In reality, not to mention him, even if were Murong Mingtian he could only stop a large portion of the birds—but not all. So, that was why the entire army was submerged in chaos.

"When capturing bandits, capture the leader first. As the head of a sect, you don't even understand such basic logic," Jiang Qisha suddenly said.

At that moment, in his hands was the closed thick ancient book—the one before that opened the enormous doors. He had put away the formation already, and was looking at Murong Mingtian and the others with a smile.

"Jiang Qisha, you intentionally let her escape, right?" Murong Mingtian's eyes glittered, a hint of suspicion emerging.

His Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers could even dodge the Immortal Sword Formation's swords and thus attack the defensive formation. Even if it could not stop Lady Piaomiao's attacks, it shouldn't have been broken through so quickly. As such, Murong Mingtian knew it was intentional—Jiang Qisha intentionally released Lady Piaomiao.

"I am only responsible for breaking open this formation. I never said I would help you deal with that old granny." Jiang Qisha smiled and didn't even deny his suspicions. Instead, he very calmly put away the ancient

book.

"Hoh, don't think we're helpless without you." Murong Mingtian coldly smiled, then leapt forth and rose into the air. He flew in Lady Piaomiao's direction.

Murong Mingtian had made his move. He, as a rank six Martial King, had an aura no weaker than Lady Piaomiao. He flipped his palm, and a three-foot azure blade appeared within his hands.

The azure sword looked very normal, but when it appeared, the atmosphere started fluctuating. An overlord's pressure descended from the sky, and even Murong Mingtian's fighting strength increased by several times—that was a Royal Armament.

"Illusory Sword Technique!"

boom

When the Royal Armament was brought out, Murong Mingtian immediately started attacking. As he pointed his sword at Lady Piaomiao, a white light shot out. It became an extremely enormous and powerful sword of light. It jabbed towards Lady Piaomiao—it too was also a Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Although they were both Mortal Taboo martial skills, Murong Mingtian's was clearly even stronger than Lady Piaomiao's.

First of all, the one he cast focused only on a single point, which meant the Mortal Taboo martial skill's power was concentrated and strengthened. Furthermore, and the most important part, the power of his Royal Armament had merged with his Taboo martial skill.

Royal Armaments had always been made for Martial Kings. Only in their hands could their true destructive power be shown in their entirety. Typically speaking, when a Martial King had a Royal Armament, they could destroy everything within a region. The martial skill itself didn't matter much when compared to the power acquired from the Royal Armament.

However, after Murong Mingtian took out his Royal Armament, he cast

a Mortal Taboo martial skill on top of it. That power was naturally devastating, and it far surpassed Lady Piaomiao's own Taboo martial skill.

"Murong Mingtian, you were disloyal to your master, killed your ancestors, betrayed the place that raised you, and today, you even dare to bring an army to attack the Misty Peak! You have done all possible sinful and unrighteous things. Today, I will avenge my seniors and juniors, and kill you, who has gone completely mad."

Upon seeing Murong Mingtian's attack, Lady Piaomiao was not afraid in the slightest. She waved her sleeve, and white silk shot out from her sleeve.

When it appeared, it rapidly enlarged. Like a python covering and coiling around the sky itself, it surrounded Murong Mingtian's Mortal Taboo martial skill.

That made the crowd shocked, but the most shocking scene still hadn't come yet. The white silk suddenly shrank, and after a boom, it shattered the materialized Illusory Sword Technique.

"How is this possible? The Mortal Illusory Sword Technique cast by Ancestor is a peak martial skill! This level of an attack can cut through everything! How could it be shattered so easily?" Murong Xun felt very confused.

"That is not just simple white silk—it's a Royal Armament. However, Lady Piaomiao intentionally concealed its Royal Armament aura. In reality though, her power has already been increased," Murong Niekong explained.

"But, even if it is a Royal Armament, it shouldn't destroy his Illusory Sword Technique so easily! After all, it was created by him using the power from the Royal Armament!" Murong Xun still felt it to be inconceivable.

"This..." Murong Niekong was also taken aback. He didn't know how to explain.

"An idiotic question." Just at that moment, the young man Jiang Qisha

from the Holy Land of Martialism lightly smiled. His smile was even brimming with ridicule.

“What are you saying?” Murong Xun asked a bit displeasedly.

“Both hold in their hands a Royal Armament, yet she’s able to destroy your ancestor’s attack with the Royal Armament’s power alone. Do you not know what that means?

“That means the old granny’s strength is superior to your ancestor’s! It seems that this time, he’s in danger because he’s simply inferior to that old granny,” Jiang Qisha said.

“Nonsense! My ancestor has cultivated for nearly a thousand years. His strength is powerful, and even a rank seven Martial King may not defeat him! How could he not defeat Lady Piaomiao?!” Murong Xun was enraged. He simply could not accept others talking about his ancestor in such a manner.

“Do not speak to me with that tone. Has your ancestor not told you that?” At that moment, although Jiang Qisha’s expression was unchanged, there was a hint of killing intent that flashed within his gaze.

ta ta ta After seeing that, Murong Xun’s complexion changed greatly. He took several steps back, and nearly tripped and fell from the sky

“Xun’er, do not be impolite.” Murong Niekong quickly helped Murong Xun up, then pretended to strictly berate, “Quickly apologize to Lord Jiang Qisha.”

The crowd was taken aback by his action. They were confused as to why the great master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, a rank five Martial King, feared Jiang Qisha in such a way.

Murong Xun, who was furious before, stopped moving. After standing himself stably, he quickly clasped his fists and bowed, saying very respectfully, “This little one has been disrespectful. I ask for your forgiveness, milord.”

He did not dare to refuse to apologize, because in the instant he met Jiang Qisha’s gaze, he saw a single word: death.

He was too terrifying. He was simply the most terrifying existence he had met up until now. Even Murong Xun, who was arrogant and wild, didn't dare to put up any haughty airs. Even though Jiang Qisha was younger than him, Murong Xun had no choice but to admit the young man who came from the Holy Land of Martialism was really too horrifying.

Chapter 911: Tearing down the Bridge after Crossing the River

boom boom boom boom

In the sky, Murong Mingtian was in a battle with Lady Piaomiao.

Two rank six Martial Kings, both wielding Royal Armaments, were exchanging attacks back and forth. There was no end to their usage of powerful martial skills and fierce attacks. Their might was too ferocious; even the alliance of armies couldn't help backing away, afraid of being swept into the violent shock waves and losing their lives.

Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army avoided Lady Piaomiao's slaughter because of Murong Mingtian, at that very moment, they were tightly furrowing their brows.

The battle between two rank six Martial Kings was frightening and devastating. No matter speed, or power, a typical person was no match for either. Many people watching couldn't even see their attacks clearly. They could only see the violent shock waves exploding, and spreading throughout the sky.

However, they were no fools. After a brief exchange of blows, they discovered, as Jiang Qisha said, Murong Mingtian really was no match for Lady Piaomiao.

Even in the instant they started fighting, Lady Piaomiao was the one who took the advantage and continued suppressing Murong Mingtian. Moreover, the level of suppression became clearer and clearer. He now looked as if he would be defeated soon.

Everyone felt trepidation when they saw this. Murong Mingtian, in their eyes, was the only existence who could fight off Lady Piaomiao. If something were to happen to him, one could imagine what situation they would be faced with—they could recall Lady Piaomiao's horrifying strange birds.

Such a powerful person like Lady Piaomiao could not be defeated by

numbers alone. It wouldn't matter how many people they had. In front of Lady Piaomiao, they were no more than ants. If she wanted to kill them, she would, and it would require no effort.

Fear permeated everyone's hearts. Uneasiness splattered across their faces. Lady Piaomiao's power had surpassed their imagination.

Before, when the Crippling Night Demon Sect still ruled the Eastern Sea Region, when the might of the sect head stunned the world, there was nearly no one who could defeat the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

However, back then, someone had said Lady Piaomiao was the sole person who was roughly equal to the sect head. Many people didn't believe that, but now, today, they do.

boom

boom

boom

Just at that moment, the endless explosions rang out again. At the same time, layers upon layers of uncontrollable shock waves burst out. Although, because of distance, the shock waves were harmless, the hurricanes that arose because of the shock waves were fiercely striking.

With a surging might, the huge wave of gale dashing through the air pounced at the army.

"This isn't good." Murong Niekong and the chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans had a great change in expression. They were aware of how bad things were. They quickly laid Spirit Formations and defensive martial skill to stop the gales.

"Ahhhh—" However, the gales were simply too quick. Before they even finished constructing their defenses, they had arrived.

No one, with the exception of Martial Kings, could stop the fierceness of the hurricanes. The army of tens of millions were like little fishes struck by a huge wave. Amidst bursts of shouts, they were rolling and staggering

due to the wind, and they thus scattered about.

In just an instant, all the experts gathered by the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were in absolute chaos.

"Heavens, this..."

However, when Murong Niekong and the others cast their gazes back at the battlefield between Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao, panic emerged on their already uneasy complexions.

At that moment, the berserk shock waves had dispersed, and in the distant sky, they could see two people fighting it out.

The white silk within Lady Piaomiao's sleeve covered the immense sky. It looked as if it were formed by the vast sea of clouds, yet also looked like a white dragon that flew within the sky. Not only was it ferocious, its might was terrifying.

On the other hand, although Murong Mingtian, with the three-foot azure sword in hand, had undiminished might, there were traces of red on his golden robe. There were even frightening wounds on his aged face and his hand which held the Royal Armament. He had actually been injured.

"Lord Jiang Qisha, please lend my ancestor a hand!" Murong Niekong cast his pleading gaze towards Jiang Qisha upon seeing the disheartening circumstances.

The chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans felt confused at Murong Niekong's words, but from his sincere attitude, they were able to see a bit of his plan.

In the Eastern Sea Region, Chu Feng's fighting strength had already thrown away common sense. He was titled as a genius, and could even fight those above his level and defeat those three ranks above himself.

Since there was such a monster within the Eastern Sea Region, then in such a mystical land as the Holy Land of Martialism, perhaps there were many similar people to Chu Feng. Perhaps this Jiang Qisha was a genius like him as well.

Their suspicions were further confirmed when they recalled the formation he laid earlier. He didn't even need them, Martial Kings, to do anything. Using only the power of Martial Lords, he broke through the indestructible defensive formation. Recalling all that, they were more certain that this young man called Jiang Qisha was extraordinary as well.

So, perhaps, he could truly become the crucial existence to save them.

"What benefit is there to save your ancestor?" Jiang Qisha did not do anything after hearing Murong Niekong's words. Instead, he asked him a question with a smile. Within his smile, there was deep meaning—he truly wanted some sort of gain.

"What are you saying? We are in an alliance! It is completely reasonable for you to help out, and you want some benefit? Could it be... after borrowing our power to destroy this defensive formation, you feel that there is no use to us anymore, and want to dispose of us?!" The Fifth Immortal of the Immortal Execution Archipelago could finally take it no more. He could not tolerate Jiang Qisha's arrogant attitude.

"Shut up." Murong Niekong quickly yelled at the Fifth Immortal, afraid he would offend Jiang Qisha.

"It's nothing. He's very correct. Right now, I do feel that none of you retain any value. If I want to dispose of you, what can you do to me?" However, what no one expected was Jiang Qisha to admit the Fifth Immortal's words.

Moreover, as he spoke, he swept his squinted gaze over the crowd. A hint of chilliness glinted in his eyes.

At that instant, no one could remain calm anymore. They couldn't help but back away and kept a certain distance from Jiang Qisha. They even hiddenly used Martial power to put themselves in the optimal fighting condition.

At that moment, not only did Murong Niekong have a distorted expression, the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans were the same. Their eyes glittered unceasingly. There was fury, yet also fear.

At that moment, he had already stated his words so clearly. No matter who it was, they would not be able to remain collected, especially when Jiang Qisha origin was so special, and his background and strength were powerful. If he had finished using them, and truly killed them all to take all the benefit for himself, then a disaster was truly heading their way.

Chapter 912: My Master Comes from the Cursed Soil Sect

Although livid, when considering the present circumstances, Murong Niekong endured the fury, organized his emotions, and said, “Lord Jiang Qisha, my ancestor has come from this Misty Peak. He knows the inside very well.

“Rather than a blind search, why not allow my ancestor to help you search instead? Although Lady Piaomiao is the master of this place, she will absolutely not help you. I’m sure you know the advantages and disadvantages very well.”

“Haha, look at you! I was just joking. Since we’re in an alliance, how can I ignore him when he’s in trouble?” After hearing his words, Jiang Qisha laughed. He looked as if everything before was merely a joke.

But at that very instant, Murong Niekong and the others, though calm on the surface, had fluctuating hearts. They knew this young man was too cunning and dangerous. They truly shouldn’t have allied with him. But sadly, they could do nothing now because they were already forced to go along with the momentum he set.

boom rumble rumble

Just at that moment, another deafening explosion rang out. There was yet another confrontation in the distance between Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao. Moreover, the might it created this time was even fiercer than before.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, are you willing to lend me a hand?” Murong Mingtian couldn’t help but speak as well. He truly had no choice.

Right now, his injuries were even more serious. Even his aura started to slip. His face was pale, there was blood all over his body, perspiration drenched his body, he was gasping for air, and even the hand which held the Royal Armament was trembling slightly.

On the other hand, Lady Piaomiao was not merely unwounded, she

looked invincible. Her clothes fluttered, and the white silk was akin to an incomparably enormous white draconic serpent. As it flew in the air, it looked as if it could break anything.

"Murong Mingtian, when all's said and done, you're still a man who's cultivated for several hundred years. Yet, you can't even beat an old granny? Isn't this a bit too embarrassing?"

Jiang Qisha slowly walked over in the air, allowing shock wave after shock wave to endlessly sweep past his body—they were unable to stop his advance.

"Lady Piaomiao, although that Jiang Qisha is only a rank four Martial King, his fighting strength is absolutely not as simple as a mere rank four Martial King. Don't fight him; it is best to take this chance to escape," Chu Feng quickly reminded. From the start, he had felt the true threat wasn't the Immortal Execution Archipelago, but Jiang Qisha who came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

"I don't care where he comes from, nor what strength he has. Since he's dared to invade my Misty Peak, I will not forgive him."

However, Lady Piaomiao simply ignored Chu Feng's words. She, who was in a rage, didn't plan to leave immediately. Instead, she wanted to initiate a fierce attack. She ignored the slowly forwarding Jiang Qisha, and as she controlled the white silk Royal Armament, she once again threw it towards Murong Mingtian, aiming to take his life.

"Old granny, are you ignoring me?" Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then stepped forward. With the flash of light, he disappeared instantly, and when he reappeared, he was in front of Lady Piaomiao.

"Old granny, let me test your strength."

When Lady Piaomiao reacted to his appearance, Jiang Qisha, with faintly squinting eyes, had already powerfully sent his palm towards Lady Piaomiao's face amidst a fierce howling of wind.

whoosh Lady Piaomiao dodged to the left, and with an agile body and extremely quick speed, she perfectly dodged Jiang Qisha's attack.

But, unexpectedly, Jiang Qisha flipped his wrist, then a powerful gale created by King-level Martial power shot out from his palm, towards Lady Piaomiao's face again.

whoosh That palm-gale was not to be underestimated, so Lady Piaomiao could only evade again.

However, Jiang Qisha held out his other hand. Clenching tightly, as the air around it rippled, he punched out. Its pressure instantly enveloped everything. The seemingly ordinary punch was actually a powerful martial skill. Its area of attack was vast; it covered all of Lady Piaomiao's escape.

hmm Since she could not dodge that punch, she willed a golden Spirit Formation to appear as she retreated backwards. It covered her front to block the attack.

boom However, she had still underestimated Jiang Qisha. The might of his punch not only broke Lady Piaomiao's Spirit Formation, it even shattered it.

"Dammit!"

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao tightly knitted her brows. She felt that continuously dodging wasn't the solution. So, she lightly flicked her robe, and from the white silk that curled in the air, she instantly released the aura of the Royal Armament. With an oppressing and destructive might, it attacked back at Jiang Qisha.

But even so, Jiang Qisha's smile did not diminish. He didn't put much attention on the Royal Armament's attack. As he dealt with it, he continued attacking Lady Piaomiao. His attacks were fierce, and they were simply continuous and completely surprising. Even Lady Piaomiao herself felt enormous pressure.

"Powerful. This Jiang Qisha has truly suppressed Lady Piaomiao, and he doesn't even need to use a Royal Armament?"

"Suppressing a rank six as a rank four. This one is indeed a genius. So is this a monster from the Holy Land of Martialism? No wonder he was so

arrogant."

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans all couldn't help but deeply inhale. Martial Kings and Martial Lords were different. The difference between ranks in Martial Kings was much more obvious than the latter. Strength that could suppress an opponent two ranks above was absolutely no weaker than Chu Feng's, who could suppress those three ranks above—perhaps it was even stronger.

However, after truly seeing Jiang Qisha's power, Murong Niekong and the others tightly furrowed their brows. Their expressions were grave, because his strength and cunningness, to them, might not be good.

"Lady Piaomiao, he is too strong. Don't fight him anymore, and first leave this place. It is never late to take revenge." Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help persuading Lady Piaomiao as well. Judging by what was happening, anyone could tell Jiang Qisha had kept some of strength unrevealed. However, Lady Piaomiao clearly hadn't kept much hidden. The one stronger and the one weaker was already known. If they continued, Lady Piaomiao would only enter a greater disadvantage.

"Brat, where did you come from? Do you dare to report your background?" Lady Piaomiao furiously asked, evidently bitter.

"Old granny, since you've asked, listen up. Today, I'll tell you. Prick up your ears. I've come from the Holy Land of Martialism's 'Cursed Soil Sect'.

"If you want revenge, you are welcome any time. However, with the aptitude you have, even if you cultivate for several tens of thousands of years, to my Cursed Soil Sect, you will be no more than garbage. You won't even pass my gates." Jiang Qisha curled up his lips, his smile full of ridicule. He completely looked down on Lady Piaomiao.

Chapter 913: The Powerful Jiang Qisha

"Hmph. Arrogant. You better watch out." Lady Piaomiao coldly snorted, then waved her other sleeve. Amidst a burst of ear-piercing cries, countless birds shot out from her sleeve, then surrounded and attacked Jiang Qisha.

This was the Mortal Taboo martial skill she used to slaughter the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army earlier. However, this time, the densely packed mass of birds focused on one point, and surrounded only one person.

The might they exuded was truly terrifying. With merely a glimpse, the observers felt their scalp itch and chills go down their spines.

After Lady Piaomiao used that powerful Mortal Taboo martial skill, she did not continue attacking with the opportunity that emerged. Instead, she turned around, and used an extremely quick bodily martial skill. She became a strand of light and flew into the distance. Her plan was to leave this land.

"Don't worry, I will let you go and give you a chance to take revenge. However, since I've made my move, naturally I won't allow all of you to leave. Leave a few things behind first."

However, Jiang Qisha merely smiled coldly at the birds. He flipped his palm, and a talisman appeared in his hand. He flicked his arm, and threw it out.

After that talisman left his hand, it rapidly swirled and started to change. In the end, it became an enormous black hole that stood vertical in the air. That black hole looked odd, and felt even stranger. It was truly like a hole that stretched out to infinity, and from it was the birth of boundless suction power.

wu ya ya ya ya

Regardless of the number of birds, they could not fight against the horrifying suction power. In the end, amidst ear-piercing cries, they were

all drawn into the black hole.

"This brat..."

Even Lady Piaomiao's complexion changed greatly. With astonishment, she discovered even her speed had significantly slowed after the emergence of the black hole. If her martial skill wasn't powerful, then in this moment, she definitely would have been sucked in already.

"Senior, don't leave so quickly, let's have a longer chat!" At the same time, Murong Mingtian flew over with an odd smile on his face. He wanted to take that chance to deal with her.

"You want to stop me? It's won't be that easy." Lady Piaomiao's eyes glittered, then she waved her sleeve. The Royal Armament left her sleeve, and became a white dragon.

That white dragon had horns and claws, and even had sparkling white scales. With its enormous body and powerful aura, it flew in the air, and it was just like a real dragon.

aoo— The white dragon formed by white silk was very fierce. When it opened its mouth, it could even swallow the clouds. Its claws could rip through space itself, and as if it had intelligence, it fought Murong Mingtian, and stopped him.

aoo— Lady Piaomiao waved her sleeve gain, and another stream of white silk flew out. It too became a white dragon that attacked Jiang Qisha.

"Heh, interesting. I didn't think in a place like this there would be a person who could create a pair of Royal Armaments.

"But sadly, something of this degree cannot stop me." Jiang Qisha's expression remained unchanging as he faced the fierce white dragon. He turned his wrist, and several talismans appeared.

whoosh whoosh whoosh He flicked his arm, and the talismans were akin to arrows as they shot out in all directions, howling as they swished through the air. At the same time, golden Spirit Formation power flowed out from his body, and connected with all the talismans.

“Formation!” After finishing, Jiang Qisha lightly shouted. A blinding light flashed past, and the connected talismans became a materialized big net that enveloped the white dragon.

Afterwards, the net rapidly shrank. It became the size of the original talismans, and like a bun of talisman, it landed into Jiang Qisha’s hand.

Although the bun was shaking left and right, intensely struggling, the white dragon made by a Royal Armament had clearly lost any opportunity to fight Jiang Qisha. It was captured.

For two exact same Royal Armaments, one had easily stopped Murong Mingtian, while Jiang Qisha effortlessly subdued the other one. The difference of those two was enormous, and also sufficient to prove Jiang Qisha’s strength.

“Dammit. How does this brat possess such revolting techniques.” Lady Piaomiao’s expression turned for the worse when her Royal Armament was suppressed. However, she did not turn around and instead continued quickly flying forward.

However, Jiang Qisha clearly did not prepare to let Lady Piaomiao go. He threw out two talismans and stuck them underneath his shoe. He travelled dozens of miles in a step, and as he dashed with large strides, he was beginning to catch up to Lady Piaomiao with unbelievable speed.

“Cursed Soil Sect... So this is someone from the Holy Land of Martialism?”

Seeing Jiang Qisha, who did not give up and kept on using techniques he had never seen before, Chu Feng’s eyes flickered unstably. It was the first time he saw the methods of someone from the Holy Land of Martialism. One could say Jiang Qisha’s performance did not disappoint him, and instead even made him a bit surprised.

Chu Feng could tell the techniques Jiang Qisha grasped was reliant on the special talismans. He used those to strengthen himself, and no matter offense, or defense, or even speed, they all greatly rose due to the talismans.

Chu Feng even felt if it were a relative comparison of fighting strength, Jiang Qisha might even be stronger than him. Moreover, Jiang Qisha came from the Holy Land of Martialism, but that was all. It did not mean he was the strongest genius within the Holy Land of Martialism.

And if that were the case—that he wasn't the strongest genius in the Holy Land of Martialism—what would the strongest be like? And how powerful were the experts of that land?

Perhaps... Martial Emperors, that were like legends in this world, were alive and of no shortage there?

Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the words Jiang Qisha said to Lady Piaomiao before. Perhaps he was right: Even if Lady Piaomiao were to cultivate for several tens of thousands of years, perhaps she might not even be able to barge into his sect. It was like how the strongest in the continent of the Nine Provinces could not do much in the Eastern Sea Region.

The strength of Jiang Qisha made Chu Feng uneasy, because right now, he could very possibly block their road of life.

But at the same time, Jiang Qisha's strength made Chu Feng excited. He looked even more forward to entering the Holy Land of Martialism. As they say, you become stronger when you meet the strong. Only the land abundant in experts was the true holy land for great change.

"Old granny! Today, I'll let you off. However, leave them behind."

While Chu Feng was in a daze, a voice suddenly rang out. Raising his head, he discovered Jiang Qisha had already caught up. Moreover, a talisman had left his hand. Like lightning, it landed onto Lady Piaomiao's Cosmos Sack.

boom

When the talisman struck its target, the Cosmos Sack actually exploded. It did not just forcibly break open the Cosmos Sack, even the formation containing Chu Feng and the others instantly broke.

In an instant, Chu Feng and the others all appeared in the air. They left

Lady Piaomiao's protection, and stood before Jiang Qisha.

Chapter 914: Lady Piaomiao's Resolution

"Dammit!"

Lady Piaomiao's expression changed greatly when Jiang Qisha broke her formation, releasing Chu Feng and the others from her Cosmos Sack. She struck out with her palm, and sent a fierce attack at Jiang Qisha. She swirled the air with her other sleeve, aiming to regather and protect Chu Feng and the others.

"Hehe, you can leave today—I won't force you behind. However, none of these should even think of leaving."

Jiang Qisha coldly smiled. He lightly waved his arm, and King-level Martial power surged forth, easily breaking Lady Piaomiao's attack. At the same time, he lightly opened the other hand, and several talismans shot out.

When they appeared, they started converging into a single area, becoming an enormous black hole. Its appearance immediately brought out a boundless suction power. Wind drawing them into that hole made Chu Feng and the others look like kites with their string severed as they were forced by the power to fly towards the black hole.

"Dammit!" Chu Feng knew the current situation was nothing good. With a thought, he released several golden Spirit Formation chains, binding Zi Ling, Su Rou, Zhang Tianyi, and the others, connecting them with himself.

However, it was useless as the suction power was too strong. Even Chu Feng himself could not escape, so it was a meaningless action to bind himself with Zi Ling and the others.

Right now, not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan, a rank two Martial King, could not resist the boundless suction power and was also being drawn into the black hole.

"Ahh—"

All sorts of screams rang out; someone had already entered the black

hole, and had disappeared. Not even a hint of aura remained, as if they completely vanished.

Horror. Uneasiness. Those emotions permeated everyone's heart and face, because they knew very well what being sucked into the black hole meant—it meant death.

"Dammit!" At the instant, Chu Feng gritted his teeth, his heart full of both fury and hatred.

He was furious because Jiang Qisha, who came from the Holy Land of Martialism, forced them to this state. He felt hatred—hatred at his own inferiority. He could not even put up an iota of resistance, and could only watch as the ones closest to him, like himself, were being drawn into the black hole.

"Eggy, what should I do? Tell me what to do!" When all options were exhausted, Chu Feng asked Eggy for help.

"Chu Feng, don't panic. From what I see, that black hole is only a Spirit Formation entrance. It seems more like a cage. He is only capturing, not killing," Eggy reminded. But, in reality, this queen did not have much confidence either.

bzz lalalala... Just at that moment, the sound of chains rang out, and at the same time, golden radiance shone in all directions. Like a golden serpent, they wrapped around Chu Feng and the others, stopping them from being drawn into the black hole.

"Lady Piaomiao?" When they turned their heads around, the crowd rejoiced because they could see that the golden chain, engraved with complicated runes and markings, came from Lady Piaomiao. She had saved them.

However, at that moment, her complexion was very poor. One could see she was under great pressure due to the black hole.

hmm

"Ahh—"

Suddenly, the crowd cried out. They felt the suction power instantly increase, and even Lady Piaomiao couldn't help taking a step forward. It didn't seem that she would be able to hold on for long.

When they looked back, they saw Jiang Qisha standing on the spot, and gazing at them with a light smile. Although he did nothing to Lady Piaomiao directly, he was throwing one talisman after the other into the black hole.

Every time he threw one in, the black hole would enlarge by a bit. At the same time, the suction power would also double.

"Old granny, if you leave now you can still make it. If you don't leave, however, beware my change of heart," Jiang Qisha said indifferently. His tone contained strong confidence, as if keeping or release Lady Piaomiao was merely dependent on a whim.

whoosh chachacha

"Ahh—"

As expected, in front of the ever increasing black hole, the chains could not last. Many people started letting out painful cries.

"Lady Piaomiao, this won't do. Even if you can prevent us from entering the black hole, the powerful suction power will not diminish because of that. If this continues, even if we don't enter the black hole, our bodies will break by the suction power," Qiushui Fuyan said.

She was correct. The suction power was too horrifying. If one resisted, they would face the powerful strength of the suction power. It was really too strong of a power, and likely many people here could not withstand the force. In the end, their bodies would be crushed and they would die.

"Lady Piaomiao, leave us! Go!" Chu Feng also spoke. His words came from the bottom of his heart.

After everything that had happened, he had a transparent understanding of the current situation. Jiang Qisha was too powerful, and his strength was definitely not as simple as what was shown. Lady Piaomiao was truly no match for him, and if the present circumstances

continued, it would only bring Lady Piaomiao down with them. Rather than letting Jiang Qisha capture all them alive, why not just let Lady Piaomiao safely leave?

"No. I cannot leave any of you behind." Lady Piaomiao gnashed her teeth, and at the same time, a hint of resolution flashed into her eyes.

Suddenly, an explosion rang out. A white light appeared within her body. In that instant, Lady Piaomiao's aura increased significantly.

"Lady Piaomiao, you..." Qiushui Fuyan's complexion changed greatly when she saw that.

"Master, don't..." At the same time, Chun Wu and the others screamed.

"This feeling?" It was not only they who knew something was off. Even Chu Feng felt it. The power Lady Piaomiao released was too powerful. This was an abnormal situation.

Through sensitive detection power and the observation strength of the Heaven's eyes, Chu Feng discovered the power Lady Piaomiao acquired demanded an even greater price than using Forbidden Medicine.

She was actually using a special Mysterious Technique to set ablaze her own life and cultivation. She was using her life and cultivation to save everyone.

"Master, leave us behind! Go!"

"Lady Piaomiao, you cannot do this for us!"

Chun Wu and the others cried. Even Qiushui Fuyan's eyes went red. They clearly knew what it meant when Lady Piaomiao used this technique.

However, Lady Piaomiao completely ignored them. She muttered to herself, "Several hundreds of years of painstaking cultivation, all just to protect my dearest ones.

"The moment has come; I burn my body. If a man blocks, I kill that man. If a god blocks, I kill that god!"

After speaking, the white light burst. Like a sun, it lit up the world,

instantly engulfing everything in its reach. Even the great army far away could see it in absolute clarity.

Not to mention the tens of millions of experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, even Murong Mingtian who was still fighting the white dragon tightly furrowed his brows. His complexion changed greatly, and he cried out, “She’s actually cultivated that Mysterious Technique?”

Chapter 915: Fighting to the Death

Lady Piaomiao's body was like the sun. The dazzling brilliance had nearly engulfed everything.

Those who were enveloped by the radiance could feel the power of the strongest person in the entire Eastern Sea Region.

Looking at the land shone upon by the brimming white light, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were uneasy. They didn't dare to approach her, and they even backed away because they were all very afraid.

If Lady Piaomiao fought Jiang Qisha and won, that did not mean Jiang Qisha's sole defeat. It also meant all of their defeat.

hmm

However, just at that moment, a speck of black appeared on the side of the white light. Moreover, the black speck was rapidly enlarging, and in the end, it stood up against the white light.

"Jiang Qisha?"

Those from the Immortal Execution Archipelago rejoiced because they could tell that the black speck was from the black hole. At that moment, there was an essential change in the black hole's volume. The suction power it released simply reached the extremities of horror.

In front of the suction power, even the faraway clouds could not resist and were sucked in continuously. Even the white light itself was being sucked in.

Within a short moment, over half of the radiance emitted by Lady Piaomiao faded away, and other than some light still surrounding her body, there was only some that surrounded Chu Feng and the others via the Spirit Formation chain.

The white light was protecting them. Otherwise, they would have been torn apart by the horrifying suction power. However, at that very instant, the white light was very weak, and it was becoming weaker and weaker. It

seemed it would disappear along with the rest.

"You..." Lady Piaomiao's complexion was very unsightly. Right now, she was using a Forbidden Mysterious Technique to burn her life! Yet, even so, it still seemed insufficient against Jiang Qisha. This was the first time in her life that she tasted this feeling—powerlessness.

"Like I said, you can leave, but you should not even think of taking a single one of them.

"Don't think I don't mean my words. I, Jiang Qisha, am not a person who likes to speak lies." He stood in the air, and looked at Lady Piaomiao with a light smile. His gaze seemed as if he were looking at an ignorant person.

Moreover, he even swept his gaze over Chu Feng, as though telling him what a real genius was.

Lady Piaomiao, however, put away her furious expression when Jiang Qisha gazed with such disdain. She wore a hint of a smile, and said, "You said I can't even take a single person, but let me show you how I will bring them away."

After speaking, Lady Piaomiao let out an even brighter radiance. Her aura once again soared.

whoosh

She leapt forward. As her clothes fluttered, she rushed in Jiang Qisha's direction with a boundless might.

"Heh, you want to put your life on the line and initiate counterattack? Let me see what strength you have."

The smile on Jiang Qisha's face did not diminish and instead increased, despite seeing the fiercely approaching Lady Piaomiao. He didn't dodge, and instead, just stood on the spot, awaiting the arrival of her attack.

bam

bam

But when Lady Piaomiao passed by Chu Feng, her expression suddenly

changed. Who would have expected her to hold out her hand, then grab Chu Feng? Then, as she rushed back, she held out another hand and grabbed Qiushui Fuyan.

After doing that, she didn't even turn her head around and released all of the Spirit Formation chains, allowing Zi Ling and the others to be sucked into the black hole. Ignoring them completely, she fled into the distance.

"Hmph. You're playing a trick like this? You underestimate me too much."

A chilly glint appeared in Jiang Qisha's eyes for a flash. He waved his big sleeve, and the black hole rapidly shrank. It became a talisman that landed into his hand. Then, he leapt forward and advanced with large strides, chasing after Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh, whoosh, whoosh... Jiang Qisha was extremely quick, and that horrifying speed was not even his limit. It was still rapidly accelerating.

However, Lady Piaomiao did not show any inferiority. The change within her body became stronger and stronger, and her face became thinner and thinner—however, her power also became fiercer and fiercer. At that moment, she had infinitely neared rank seven Martial King, and was even about to enter that realm.

"Chu Feng, is the distance still not enough?" Qiushui Fuyan loudly asked seeing Jiang Qisha persisting on his chase, and was even cutting the distance between them.

"It's not enough. There's still a bit more." Chu Feng held the rune in his hand, his face also filled with graveness. He knew what this meant.

"It matters not. Today, I will bring you both safely away." The resolution in Lady Piaomiao's eyes became even stronger. She once again let out her boundless aura, and with a flash, she disappeared instantly. She was truly quick—so quick she flashed past the sky, and observers would simply not even see her shadow.

"Even if you burn yourself into ashes, you will not bring them away!"

Jiang Qisha's gaze turned icy. His movement changed as he used a special bodily martial skill. Every step he took left an afterimage of a talisman. He was not even the slightest bit slower than Lady Piaomiao, who had burst forth.

"Dammit!" At that moment, Qiushui Fuyan was in desperation. Not only were her eyes red, tears had streamed down her face because she could feel Lady Piaomiao's life rapidly flowing away. If this continued, it would likely lead to Lady Piaomiao's death.

"Senior Qiushui." However, just at that moment, Chu Feng's voice suddenly rang out. She turned her head, and Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help being taken back. She asked in confusion, "Chu Feng, what are you doing?"

At that instant, Chu Feng was holding out the rune to Qiushui Fuyan.

"I cannot just leave Zi Ling and the others behind," Chu Feng said with a bit of shame.

"Have you become an idiot? Even if they are captured, it does not mean necessarily mean death to them. However, if you are captured, there is no doubt you will die.

"In fact, only if you successfully escape will Zi Ling and the others be safe. You are the person most feared by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They are afraid you will take revenge on them after you develop in strength. Killing Zi Ling and the others mean they are cutting off their own lives.

"However, if they leave Zi Ling alive, they can threaten you," Qiushui Fuyan said with a bit of irritation.

"But..."

"There is no 'but'! Right now, in order to save us two, Lady Piaomiao is burning her life! Even if we can safely escape this time, she will not have long to live. Do you have the heart to betray her kind intentions?" Qiushui Fuyan continued berating.

At that moment, Chu Feng tightly clenched one fist. There were

unspeakable emotions in his heart. Afterwards, he raised his head, and looked at Lady Piaomiao. He discovered, at that moment, not only was she glowing in light, her complexion had aged quite significantly. She looked like a patient who was on the border of life and death—one that had already reached the end of their life.

Chapter 916: A Mocking Laugh

Feeling Chu Feng's gaze, Lady Piaomiao turned her head over as well and said, "Chu Feng, my abilities are limited. I can only save you and Fuyan. If you want to go back, I won't stop you, but I'll leave you with some words.

"Only by staying alive can you exact revenge. Otherwise, everything else you do will be useless."

Chu Feng's eyes reddened. They moistened. But, he remained silent. He closed his eyes, allowing Lady Piaomiao to bring him away. He chose to leave.

Only when Lady Piaomiao flew far, when they could no longer see any traces of the Misty Peak, did the corner of Chu Feng's eye tremble slightly before the fall of a single tear.

At the same time, Chu Feng clenched his hand, which held the rune.

boom—

huuuu—

An explosion erupted when the rune was crushed. A powerful shock wave wreaked havoc, and they interfered the lives of every being. Even Lady Piaomiao, who flew speedily in the air, was shaken by that shock wave. She swayed left and right, and almost fell from the sky.

Turning their heads, no matter Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, or Lady Piaomiao, all of their pupils shrank. Their eyes widened, and their faces were full of shock.

At that very instant, only two words could describe the scene behind them: absolute chaos.

Above: black clouds rolled about, thunders rang out in bursts, as if the sky itself had been torn.

Below: the waves were surging, and the waves were roaring, as if there was some evil beast soon to be spawned.

Most importantly, as such change occurred to the sky above and the sea beneath, a visible barrier appeared. It sealed off everything in the direction of the Misty Peak, and separated Chu Feng and the others on the other side.

That barrier was like a wave. It was colourless, auraless, and if one gave it a careful detection, they would discover it was unmovable as well.

"It succeeded! Chu Feng, you've succeeded! We've succeeded!" Qiushui Fuyan was ecstatic. She was so excited she could nearly jump. She knew this was the thing the mysterious existence gave them. This was a technique of the mysterious existence. With this barrier, Jiang Qisha's strength didn't matter anymore. He was no longer able to catch up to them.

"What is this?" Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha had been quickly rushing over. His first appearance was in the distant horizon, and after his second step, he had arrived before them.

However, Jiang Qisha clearly noticed the barrier already. He kept some distance; he stood in the air, and with a fierce gaze, looked at the barrier that stopped his advance.

"Chu Feng, Qiushui, let's go," Lady Piaomiao said after seeing Jiang Qisha.

"Ah." However, just after she finished speaking, her body tilted and she lost her ability to fly, beginning to fall from the sky.

"Lady Piaomiao!" Alarmed, Qiushui Fuyan quickly held her up.

At that instant, the light surrounding Lady Piaomiao's body started disappearing. As it started fading away, Lady Piaomiao's complexion also started to change.

Not only was her face starting to fill with wrinkles, her skin dried and was full of darkened spots, as if there weren't even have an ounce of water or life in her. Even her visage changed—it became one full of scars. Those scars were extremely terrifying, and every single one was a horrid sight to behold.

Chu Feng's heart beat quicker upon seeing her change in state. An unspeakable fury surged forth. He knew this was Lady Piaomiao's true appearance after living for nearly a thousand years. The scars on her face were the evidence left behind by Murong Mingtian's criminal actions.

"Cough cough cough... Go. Fuyan, quickly take Chu Feng away from this place," Lady Piaomiao said with a weak voice. In spite of her present state, she was still concerned with Qiushui Fuyan's and Chu Feng's safety.

"Chu Feng, let's go." With one hand supporting Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan used the other to pull Chu Feng, and continued flying forward.

"Don't even think of leaving!" A chilly glint flashed in Jiang Qisha's eyes as he raised his hand and threw out a talisman.

The talisman rapidly changed as he flew in the air. As radiance swirled around it, it became a sharp blade dozens of meters long. It slashed through the air, and its might was terrifying. If struck, not to mention Qiushui Fuyan, it would mean an instant death for even Lady Piaomiao.

whoosh

However, when the sharp blade came into contact with the barrier, there was no explosion. As if engulfed by water, it was sucked in.

"This..."

At that instant, even Jiang Qisha's expression couldn't help changing. His face, filled with fury before, paled immediately. The chilly glint in his eyes not only disappeared, it was replaced by deep fear.

He couldn't help but back away. Quickly after, he carefully examined the barrier blocking his way in front of him. After a good while, the fear in his eyes faded away, and instead, his eyes surged with an indescribable excitement. He said, with a smile, "Misty Peak? Some Misty Peak this is... I didn't think there would be a treasure like this in such a worthless land."

"How is it? They escaped?" After a moment, someone came flying over—it was Murong Mingtian. He looked at the scene before his eyes, and

stared at the squirming barrier. He frowned.

"With this thing in the way, would you be able to catch up?" Jiang Qisha cast his gaze at Murong Mingtian.

"I..." Murong Mingtian felt rather speechless. He was no fool, so he could instantly tell how powerful that barrier was. And especially as a person who had cultivated in the Misty Peak, he knew even more what the world-sealing barrier represented.

"You told me before that this Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. Now, I believe your words. Let's go. Let me see the things left behind in this place," Jiang Qisha said.

"Should we wait a bit longer? This thing shouldn't stay here forever," Murong Mingtian said as he pointed at the barrier.

"Even if it disappears, they are already long gone. However, that old granny used a forbidden technique. Her cultivation will not be retained. Without her here, that woman and brat are two pieces of garbage. What do you need to fear?" Jiang Qisha said.

"Actually... the one I'm truly worried about isn't Lady Piaomiao, nor Qiushui Fuyan. It's that boy called Chu Feng. You just don't know, but that brat is a monster, and his origin is an unknown. I have always suspected whether he is also a person that came from the Holy Land of Martialism, like you," Murong Mingtian said.

"What? Came from the Holy Land of Martialism? Him?

"Haha, hahaha, hahahaha..."

After hearing those words, Jiang Qisha burst with laughter. Moreover, he laughed very loudly, and very mockingly. Only after a good while did he say, "You think that Chu Feng is qualified to have come from the Holy Land of Martialism?"

Chapter 917: No Escape

"Are you certain he isn't from the Holy Land of Martialism? It's such a big place, yet you are absolutely certain he isn't from the Holy Land of Martialism?" Murong Mingtian asked in a probing manner.

"I can guarantee to you that he is not from the Holy Land of Martialism. However, you better not ask me why, because you should not inquire about things I don't wish to speak of." A chilly glint emerged into Jiang Qisha's eyes—he was warning Murong Mingtian.

"Very well, I won't ask. But this time, it is truly all thanks to you that I could regain this Misty Peak. I will engrave this favour into my heart." Murong Mingtian laughed as he felt the poor atmosphere and very obsequiously changed the topic.

"Don't worry. This Misty Peak is yours... but the things inside are not." Jiang Qisha smiled smugly.

Murong Mingtian's expression changed slightly and a hint of displeasure emerged. However, the displeasure faded in a flash and he continued obsequiously nodding his head.

The smile on Jiang Qisha face became even wider. He said, "Also, you don't need to worry about that Chu Feng, because he will not escape."

"Could it be that you...?" Murong Mingtian seemed to have thought of something.

"I still have three juniors who aren't here. That's because they are staying outside. Although their strength is inferior to mine, since Lady Piaomiao has lost her strength, the rank two Martial King woman alone is no match for my juniors. Any one of them can kill her.

"Besides, didn't you send that old man called Zhan Jiuxiao in their direction as well? You should have anticipated if they were to escape, they would flee in the very same direction, right?" Jiang Qisha said as he pointed in Chu Feng's direction.

Murong Mingtian's complexion was truly a bit distorted now. He hadn't

told anyone he left a backup like that, but Jiang Qisha knew. This was beyond his anticipation.

However, he could not refuse to answer Jiang Qisha's question. So, he could only explain with a smile, "Jiuxiao wasn't a part of this mission, but he wanted to come no matter what. Considering that Chu Feng killed his son, I brought him as well.

"But exactly because Chu Feng killed his son, I was afraid he would bear too great of a resentment and lose control of himself and thus attack him rashly. Since he is no match for Lady Piaomiao, he would only be sending his life away if he were to attack out of turn. I might not be able to save him either.

"So, I ordered him to wait outside. I originally planned to have him deal with Chu Feng after capturing him, but I didn't expect what I attempted to avoid occurred nonetheless. Chu Feng and the others truly broke through the surrounding forces and ran in Jiuxiao's direction. Perhaps this is unavoidable destiny. Perhaps the heavens want Jiuxiao to personally avenge his own son."

"Haha, you yourself know exactly what happened.

"However, I'm not concerned with that right now. I'm concerned with the Misty Peak's treasure.

"You said if I help you break through the Misty Peak's defensive formation, you would bring me to the entrance towards the treasure. Right now, it's time to keep your word." As Jiang Qisha spoke, he went towards the Misty Peak.

Murong Mingtian didn't stay behind. However, before he moved, a hint of an imperceivable sinister expression flashed past his eyes.

At the very same moment, Qiushui Fuyan was supporting Lady Piaomiao and Chu Feng, fleeing in the distance. Although the barrier could stop Jiang Qisha and the others, she knew very well that its time was limited. She had to leave the area within that time period.

However, Qiushui Fuyan did not blindly flee in a random direction. She

clearly knew where to go, as she had always went straight and did not make any turns.

Chu Feng's emotions were very complicated at that instant. He felt as if there were a large boulder pressing on his chest. It was extremely heavy, and could nearly crush his chest flat.

His lovers and his brothers were in the hands of his enemy. Who knew what sort of torture they were about to face. Who knew if they were still alive now.

Yet, at present, he was escaping, and he was even escaping with the help of another person. Not to mention protecting his lovers and brothers, he didn't even have the ability to escape on his own.

He felt hatred. Extreme hatred. Not towards others, but towards himself. He hated how weak he was.

"Chu Feng, it's not the time to blame yourself. There are some things in life that must be faced. Without experiencing sufficient setbacks, how can one truly grow? None of the single peak expert in this world have been swimmingly going through life. Which one hasn't experienced unendurable sufferings that ordinary people could not bear, all in order to become a supreme individual?" Eggy consoled, knowing what Chu Feng felt.

Chu Feng did not reply. He understood that, but at a time like this, his emotions were not something that could be calmed with some reasoning.

"Chu Feng, if you want to throw away your life, I can accompany you. Who cares if they come from the Holy Land of Martialism or wherever. Go there, and release the other World Spirit sealed in the gate and destroy everything. If they don't want you to live well, then none of them should even think of living either," Eggy said again.

"No. Someone left that World Spirit inside me because they want me to tame it. They want me to borrow its power, not to destroy myself with it. If I truly use it and destroy everything, then I will have disappointed that person's intentions." Chu Feng shook his head.

"If you know that, then great. Get yourself together. No matter if it's Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, or Jiang Wushang, they wouldn't want to see you in this state. They feel honoured for you. They feel pride for you. They are waiting for you to save them. You cannot lose your spirit and lose your intent to fight," Eggy said.

"Eggy, thank you. You don't need to worry about me. I won't destroy my future. The reason I chose to escape with Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan is so I can one day slaughter my way back," Chu Feng replied.

"This is the Chu Feng I know. No matter which world it is, those who wish to accomplish great things should not bother with the minor things. Not only must you be cruel to enemies, you must be cruel to yourself—that includes the ones close to you." Eggy heaved a sigh of relief. She was truly worried Chu Feng would be unable to jump over this hurdle of Zi Ling and the others being captured, which would have affected his future.

As for Chu Feng, he could naturally feel Eggy's good intentions. That girl truly thought for him in every area. He had to admit that Eggy's concern made Chu Feng feel a trace of warmth amidst extreme chaos and depression.

"Crap." But suddenly, Chu Feng's pupils shrank. He quickly sent a mental message to Qiushui Fuyan, saying, "Senior Qiushui, quickly turn around! There's a rank three Martial King in front blocking our way!"

"What?" Qiushui Fuyan felt rather surprised. In order to avoid any unexpected situations, she too had cast her Spirit power to maximum distance in order to observe her surroundings. However, she did not discover any anomalies.

But even so, she listened to Chu Feng's instructions. She quickly turned around and flew in another direction.

BOOM— However, just as Qiushui Fuyan turned around, a boundless might erupted from afar. The aura of a rank three Martial King came suppressing forth.

At the same time, a voice filled with resentment and rage exploded like thunder.

“CHU FENG, YOU WILL NOT ESCAPE TODAY!”

Chapter 918: Who Is It?

A boundless aura swept over from one side, and it formed a surrounding dome. Even Qiushui Fuyan could not withstand such an aura and her path was instantly sealed off.

“It’s a rank three Martial King?” Qiushui Fuyan tightly furrowed her brows, panic emerging into her eyes. She could feel the strength of their opponent from his aura—rank three Martial King. That was not an existence she could deal with.

When Qiushui Fuyan looked at Lady Piaomiao, she discovered Lady Piaomiao was now unconscious, and her aura was becoming weaker and weaker. Her survival itself was uncertain, so Qiushui Fuyan simply could not hope for her to help.

“I’ve been too careless! I didn’t think Murong Mingtian wouldexpect us to escape this way. He definitely also knows there’s a Teleportation Array in this direction.

“Ahh... Does this mean even the heavens wishes for our demise?”

Qiushui Fuyan no longer attempted to escape, because she had no strength to escape. She knew she simply could not escape. Helplessness and despair filled her beautiful face.

As for Chu Feng, at that moment, he could only stand by Qiushui Fuyan’s side. Even she felt enormous pressure, so naturally, the pressure he felt was even greater.

“Chu Feng, do you know who I am?”

Finally, within the surging might, an old man’s body appeared. He had black hair, and his visage was brimming with fury. A pair of livid eyes were fiercely glaring at Chu Feng. That gaze made him seem as if he wanted to drink his blood and eat his flesh.

After seeing that person, Chu Feng frowned slightly because no matter his cultivation or his face, they pointed him towards one person. So, Chu Feng said very calmly, “You are Zhan Feng’s father, the Second Immortal

of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Zhan Jiuxiao."

"Since you know who I am, swiftly kneel!" Zhan Jiuxiao furiously roared.

"Kneel? If I kneel, will you let us go?" Chu Feng returned with a question and a sneer.

"Let you go? Even if you kowtow a million times, it will not bring my son back to life! I will never forgive you! I will skin you alive, tear out your tendons, otherwise the hatred in my heart cannot be pacified!" Zhan Jiuxiao said as he gritted his teeth.

"What? Zhan Feng died?" Chu Feng felt rather surprised.

Back then, in the Depraved Valley, Chu Feng had indeed crippled Zhan Feng, but he didn't kill him. Moreover, from what he knew, he was brought back as quick as possible to the Immortal Execution Archipelago by their experts. He should have left the Depraved Valley already, and he shouldn't have experienced the battle that subsequently came, and thus, he shouldn't have died.

"You crippled my son. He felt there was no honour in living, so he ended his own life and died within the family. This is all because of you. You killed him! Kneel!" Zhan Jiuxiao became even angrier as he spoke of Zhan Feng's death.

"Hoh. Zhan Feng was crippled because his skills were inadequate. He could not continue living, and so committed suicide. What the hell does that have to do with me?

"Besides, since you plan to torture me regardless if I kneel or not, why should I kneel?" Chu Feng coldly smiled. He looked at Zhan Jiuxiao as if he were looking at a fool.

"Kneel! You must kneel! You kneel not for me, but for my son!" Zhan Jiuxiao waved his sleeve. A one-foot wide three-foot long wooden tablet appeared in his hand.

It was a spirit tablet. On it there was a name—Zhan Feng, who Chu Feng crippled on the day at the Depraved Valley.

“He... is unqualified for my kneeling. You... are also unqualified,” Chu Feng said indifferently.

“There is no room for discussion.” But just at that moment, Zhan Jiuxiao coldly snorted. A boundless pressure then descended from the sky.

“Mm—” A painful expression emerged on Qiushui Fuyan’s face. She was bearing an enormous pressure.

“If you kneel, I’ll give them a quick death. If you don’t kneel, I’ll torture them until they die. Will you kneel or not?!” Zhan Jiuxiao furiously shouted.

Chu Feng hesitated, but after an instant of hesitation, his knees started bending slightly. He was going to kneel on his own accord.

Although he himself could endure torment, he could not allow Qiushui Fuyan and Lady Piaomiao to be tortured due to him. Thus, he had no choice but to kneel.

“Chu Feng, don’t kneel. Since we will die regardless, why receive such humiliation?

“Torment? Hoh. I, Qiushui Fuyan, have gone through all sorts of pain. Will I fear his measly torture?” However, Qiushui Fuyan stopped him.

“You’re looking to die!” Zhan Jiuxiao was incensed at Qiushui Fuyan’s prevention. He willed his Martial power to become several half-moon shaped blades as gorgeous lights shone. The blades were no bigger than a finger, but had an unstoppable destructive power.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

At that moment, those blades had already been sent out. With swishing sounds through the air, they flew straight towards Qiushui Fuyan. Although the positions they were aimed at would not lead to fatal injuries, if struck, a large chunk of flesh would most definitely be cut away. Zhan Jiuxiao was truly sinister—he wanted to cut off the flesh of a beauty like Qiushui Fuyan.

“Dammit.” Qiushui Fuyan wanted to counterattack, but she could do

nothing about Zhan Jiuxiao's pressure. It was like a formless rope as it tied around her, preventing any movement. She didn't even have the strength to use her Martial power.

She, as a rank two Martial King, simply stood no chance against Zhan Jiuxiao, a rank three Martial King.

"Damn."

A hint of chilliness flashed past Chu Feng's eyes. He flipped his palm, and the Royal Armament Silver Dragon Spear appeared within his hand. At the same time, his body lit up with lightning. His aura rose to rank six Martial Lord from rank five Martial Lord.

Simultaneously, he used the Black Tortoise Armour Technique, and the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique appeared beneath his feet as well. With spear in hand, Chu Feng stood before Qiushui Fuyan. He wanted to block that attack for Qiushui Fuyan with everything he had.

"Chu Feng, dodge!" Qiushui Fuyan howled. She clearly understood the power within an attack from a rank three Martial King. Even if Chu Feng used every single technique he possessed, he would be unable to stop it.

"A mantis trying to stop a chariot. However, even if you want to die, it won't be that easy." Zhan Jiuxiao coldly snorted. His fingers moved slightly, and the several blades changed directions, avoiding Chu Feng's fatal areas and instead towards his flesh.

If struck, there would be nothing resembling Chu Feng, but he would absolutely not die.

Chu Feng had closed his eyes. Actually, he knew very well he stood no chance against Zhan Jiuxiao's attack. However, Zhan Jiuxiao wouldn't kill him so easily, because he wouldn't let him die so easily. He would only torture him—fiercely torture him. So, as long as he stood in front of Qiushui Fuyan, he could temporarily prevent her from harm.

bang bang bang bang bang bang

But just at that moment, the several blades exploded. The shock waves from the explosions vanished as well, and didn't harm Chu Feng in any

way.

"Who?" Zhan Jiuxiao's expression changed greatly at such a change. He swept his furious gaze at his surroundings.

Chu Feng also opened his eyes, and looked together with Qiushui Fuyan. Chu Feng found this person, and he focused his gaze closely in the south.

Chapter 919: Encountering Tantai Xue Again

Before Chu Feng's gaze, a certain space in the south started squirming. Very soon, the figure of a beautiful person slowly came into view, appearing in their line of sight.

It was a woman. She wore a white dress, but one could not see her face because on her head, she wore a veil.

"It's her?" Chu Feng couldn't help being taken aback, because he recognized her. She was the mysterious person who defeated the Third Immortal in the Burning Heaven Church, Tantai Xue.

Chu Feng felt very surprised. He didn't understand why Tantai Xue appeared in this place, and why she had saved him.

But at the same time, he secretly rejoiced. Although Tantai Xue's origin was mysterious, she was powerful. If it were her, perhaps she could fight off Zhan Jiuxiao.

"Who are you?" Zhan Jiuxiao frowned as he examined Tantai Xue gravely.

He discovered that the woman nearby was really not simple at all. Clearly, she was only a rank nine Martial Lord, but she had stopped his attacks without even making a sound. That was not something an ordinary person could do. At least, her act alone meant her strength was outstanding.

"You can view me as a passerby, but in reality, I am the one who will kill you." Tantai Xue spoke. Her words were indifferent, but their chilliness was oppressing.

"Kill me? A girl like you wants to kill me?" Zhan Jiuxiao was furious. Although he discovered this person was not simple at all, he did not believe she could defeat him. After all, no matter what one said, she was only a rank nine Martial Lord. He, on the other hand, was a rank three Martial King.

With fury striking his heart, Zhan Jiuxiao attacked immediately. Boundless Martial power concentrated in one area, and became a ferocious wild beast. That beast had a very peculiar appearance—it was the appearance of a mountainous fist. Though a fist, it still had four limbs and pointed teeth.

That was not a normal martial skill—it was a rank nine martial skill. Moreover, when cast by Zhan Jiuxiao, a rank three Martial King, he could truly be said to have utilized its power fully. The destructive strength it contained would easily destroy a region of land.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help deeply gasping at that attack. She knew very well if that martial skill were sent towards Chu Feng and her, both of them would die. They would have no chance to survive. Even Lady Piaomiao, right now, would be eradicated.

However, Tantai Xue remained calm and indifferent. She didn't dodge, and instead, let out a disdainful sneer from her veil, "Actually, if I want to kill you, I don't even have to do it myself."

hmm

After speaking, a ripple came from the inside of Tantai Xue's body. At the same time, a Spirit Formation gate appeared in front of her—it was a World Spirit Gate.

At the same time it emerged, a figure rushed out—a World Spirit. It was humanoid, but extremely enormous. Its appearance was akin to a flower—it was female. However, the demeanor she had made herself seem holy, like something that could not be desecrated.

From her beautiful appearance and sacred bearing—it was, without a doubt, a World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World.

Although that Fairy World Spirit had a pretty countenance, she was very fiercely clad. On her body, she wore golden armour, and as she stood there, she held in her hands a golden bident. She looked like a majestic and undefeated female general.

When the destructive rank nine martial skill came over like a storm, she

wave the golden bident in her hand. Not only did it pierce through the martial skill beast, it blew it up.

"What a powerful World Spirit!" Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan with both shocked at that. That World Spirit didn't just come from the Fairy Spirit World, her aura was of a rank three Martial King.

Tantai Xue, as a rank nine Martial Lord, had a rank three Martial King World Spirit!

"How is this possible? You—How is this possible?!" Zhan Jiuxiao's complexion changed greatly. He, also a World Spiritist, truly did not dare to believe Tantai Xue, a Martial Lord, could have a rank three Martial King World Spirit.

Most importantly, he felt an unfathomably powerful pressure from that World Spirit—her strength was actually above his own.

"Those who dare disrespect my master dies!" A chilly glint flashed in the World Spirit's eyes. Bloodlust rose, and with the golden bident in hand, she attacked Zhan Jiuxiao.

He didn't dare to hesitate. Flipping his wrist, a three-meter long blade appeared. It was red, and fiery runes were engraved all over it—it was a Royal Armament.

With Royal Armament in hand, Zhan Jiuxiao's aura rose significantly. Then, with the wave of his blade, and a sound of flames whooshing in the air, a sea of fire emerged before him and surged towards the World Spirit.

boom However, the World Spirit was really too fierce. When she wielded the bident, she cut the raging flames apart. Moreover, in a blink, she arrived right in front of Zhan Jiuxiao.

"Dammit!" Zhan Jiuxiao could not remain collected when he saw the ineffectiveness of the Royal Armament's attack. He turned around, and wanted to escape.

"Where do you think you're going? Hand over your life."

The flying World Spirit was unforgiving. When she made a step, the air

around her squirmed and she disappeared.

When she reappeared, she was behind Zhan Jiuxiao. Moreover, the bident in her hands was merciless as it stabbed towards Zhan Jiuxiao. She was truly going to take his life.

“Spirit Destruction Talisman!”

boom

But out of the blue, a talisman soundlessly appeared above the World Spirit and in the instant it appeared, it exploded.

“Ahh!”

The explosion of the talisman sent out an odd shock wave. When it passed through the World Spirit’s body, she let out a cry, as if heavily injured, and was forced back. She only stabilized herself after several miles through the air.

Coincident with the World Spirit being struck back was the emergence of a person in the air. He stood beside Zhan Jiuxiao.

It was a young man. He wore a robe of talismans, and a string of beads on his neck. It was a rank one Martial King.

Chu Feng recognized that person—it was someone from the same sect as Jiang Qisha. Back then, in the Gale Plains, he was one of the two mysterious young men who saved Murong Xun and the Sixth Immortal.

“Haha, I had planned, by the order of Senior, to guard the outside and take care of some fishes that escaped the net, but I didn’t expect to receive such an unexpected harvest and caught you!” That person was very excited at that moment; however, he did not even take a glimpse at Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan. Instead, with bright eyes, he stared at Tantai Xue, as if he had discovered a treasure.

“Kuang Bainian, that’s quite the words you have there! Caught me? When have you caught me?”

Tantai Xue mocking smiled. From their words, Chu Feng could tell that they knew each other already. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have known his

name.

"Witch, less rubbish! Quickly hand that thing over to me, and I'll leave you with an undamaged corpse and give you a quick death." A chilly glint flashed past Kuang Bainian's eyes as he pointed at Tantai Xue and furiously shouted.

Chapter 920: Confrontation of Monsters

"And if I don't?" Tantai Xue indifferently replied, her tone filled with disdain.

"If you don't, I'll let you know what it feels like to yearn for death." Kuang Bainian's complexion suddenly turned cold. He flipped his palm, and several hundred talisman left his hand.

After they shot out, the runes on the talismans began squirming and changing. The entire group of talismans shone with brilliance, and transformed into several hundreds of skeletal monsters.

Those monsters held two blades in their hands, and a talisman was stuck on each of their foreheads. The aura every single one exuded was even stronger than Kuang Bainian's own—these were several hundred rank two Martial King skeletons.

"Heavens, this..." Zhan Jiuxiao couldn't help deeply gasping at that scene.

Kuang Bainian was merely a rank one Martial King, yet he was able to summon so many rank two Martial King monsters in such a casual manner. One had to admit that this technique truly did make one sigh in admiration.

"As I thought, their strength is very exceptional. None of them are even relatively weaker than me. Moreover, the techniques they grasp are something no one in the Eastern Sea Region possess.

"It seems that You Mingdeng's choice to avoid them was correct." Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the scene in the Gale Plains.

You Mingdeng, a grand Protector of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, a rank four Martial King cultivation expert, was scared by a rank one Martial King and a rank two Martial King, who were both from the Cursed Soil Sect.

You Tonghan and the others had felt very confused, but in hindsight, You Mingdeng must had detected an unfavourable situation which was

why he avoided fighting.

You Mingdeng's decision was correct. The several people who came from the Cursed Soil Sect of the Holy Land of Martialism, despite their young age, had techniques so ridiculously powerful. Any one of them could shame the peak experts in the Eastern Sea Region.

The Holy Land of Martialism was indeed a place of brilliance.

"Now, how would you deal with this?" Amidst shock, Chu Feng cast his gaze towards the unperturbed Tantai Xue.

Her cultivation was much weaker than Kuang Bainian's. After all, he was still a rank one Martial King, yet Tantai Xue was still only a Martial Lord.

However, Chu Feng had seen the power of that girl. He knew she must also possess techniques others knew not of, and Chu Feng had also suspected she had come from the Holy Land of Martialism.

After their conversation, Chu Feng was now certain this mysterious but strong woman definitely wasn't a person from the Eastern Sea Region.

So, Chu Feng knew clearly that this was not a simple exchange of blows between two geniuses. It was the confrontation between two monsters from the Holy Land of Martialism.

aoo— Just at that moment, the several hundred skeletons made by Kuang Bainian suddenly let out deafening and horrifying roars.

Quickly after, all of the skeletons leapt forward abruptly, and like an inverted meteor, as they swung the double blades in their hands, they flew towards Tantai Xue with a horrifying bearing.

"Who dares to touch my master?!" However, the rank three Martial King World Spirit rushed back.

She was like light as she dashed into the army of skeletons. The bident in her hand was akin to an unstoppable blade; she looked like a mighty and valiant general.

As the bident swept across the air, the skeletons that came into contact

with it shattered. This rank three Martial King World Spirit alone instantly destroyed all of the skeletal monsters.

"Spirit Destruction Talisman!" Kuang Bainian frowned, seeing his technique destroyed. Lightly waving his arm, another talisman shot out. It was very strange, and extremely quick. However, it suddenly disappeared as it flew through the air.

whoosh The World Spirit's eyes lit up upon seeing that and quickly dodged. Indeed, immediately after she dodged, the disappeared talisman exploded in her previous position.

hmm The explosion of the talisman brought forth another strange shock wave. It truly was an odd shock wave. It seemed to be of no threat to humans, but had an unexpected harm to World Spirits.

But the World Spirit preemptively evaded the shock wave this time and was uninjured.

"Such vile and crooked techniques! I shall bring forth retribution!"

The World Spirit already harboured resentment after being struck by the attack before. She didn't expect Kuang Bainian would dare to use it again! That made her even more furious and irritated. She attacked Kuang Bainian as she wielded her bident.

"Hmph. You've got a bit of skill, but I've seen through it already. The reason you dare act so arrogant is just because you have a World Spirit like this! It is merely a rank three Martial King from the Fairy Spirit World. Do you truly think you can face me with this?"

Kuang Bainian roared with laughter when he saw the World Spirit's attack. Then, he willed ten World Spirit Gates to appear in front of him.

When those ten gates appeared, ten figures stepped out—ten World Spirits from the Monster Spirit World. Moreover, all of them also had the aura of a rank three Martial King.

However, there was a difference in strength amongst World Spirits. Although the World Spirits from the Monster Spirit World were powerful, it was evident they were less fierce than those from the Fairy Spirit

World. Even though there were ten rank three Martial King World Spirits, it was still a level inferior to the single World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh...

But Kuang Bainian seemed to have expected something like that. He flipped his palm, and ten talismans appeared, all of them shooting towards the ten World Spirits' bodies.

hmm...

When those talismans were stuck onto their bodies, radiance shone and a strange power merged with them. At that instant, the initially weak ten World Spirits, now with a peculiar light swirling around them, soared greatly in aura. Every single one of them was not weaker than the Fairy World Spirit.

aoo—

At that instant, the ten World Spirits' confidence was boosted greatly. After a roar, they fought the Fairy World Spirit. They had close coordination, and flawless offense and defense. When they struck, they were the ones who had the initiative as they suppressed the Fairy World Spirit.

"Hmph. You are simply committing suicide by comparing World Spirit techniques with me." At that moment, Kuang Bainian first coldly snorted, then laughed in madness. His laughter was very loud, and very arrogant.

"Powerful. Truly powerful. My friend Kuang Bainian, you've truly widened my horizons." Zhan Jiuxiao couldn't help praising when he saw a scene like that. He truly admired Kuang Bainian's techniques from the bottom of his heart.

Although he was only a rank one Martial King, and typically speaking, Zhan Jiuxiao would look down on him, any one of the ten World Spirits Kuang Bainian summoned could easily kill him. Zhan Jiuxiao had now truly seen Kuang Bainian's strength.

"Hmph. That's of course. When it's about control with World Spirits,

who stands a chance against my Cursed Soil Sect?" Kuang Bainian's smile was even smugger after Zhan Jiuxiao's praise.

Tantai Xue was silent at that moment. With a thought, the space around Kuang Bainian and Zhan Jiuxiao began to squirm.

Then, there were a hundred World Spirit Gates that emerged all around them, surrounding them.

When the hundred World Spirit Gates materialized, a hundred figures walked out of the gates.

These were a hundred World Spirit from the Fairy Spirit World. There were both females and males. They too wore golden armour, held golden bidents, and every single one of them was over three meters tall as they exuded a holy aura that didn't belong to this world.

Most importantly, the cultivation of these hundred World Spirits were the exact same as the one before—they were all rank three Martial Kings.

"Kuang Bainian, what did you say just now? I couldn't hear it," Tantai Xue indifferently said.

Chapter 921: Help You

"This... You..." Seeing the Fairy World Spirits simply flooding towards him, even the greatly arrogant Kuang Bainian now had a great change in expression. He was a bit overwhelmed.

A hundred World Spirits. Actually, at a realm like theirs, that number wasn't much. Even though they were only Gold-cloak World Spiritists, to summon a hundred World Spirits wasn't something difficult. After all, they were Martial Kings.

However, these hundred World Spirits were all rank three Martial Kings! Furthermore, the summoner was still only a rank nine Martial Lord! That, on the other hand, was admittedly rather difficult. If they hadn't personally witnessed such a sight, it'd be something no one would believe.

"Witch, don't think you can defeat me with something just like this. Comparing you and me, you are still far inferior!"

But even so, Kuang Bainian did not retreat. Instead, he furiously let out a shout. The talismans on his robe shone with brilliance, and at that instant, his aura was rapidly soaring.

"Is that so? Then take a careful gaze at who's the inferior one." Tantai Xue sneered, then said, "Capture him alive."

"As you wish." The hundred Fairy World Spirits responded in unison immediately following Tantai Xue's command. Simultaneously, golden rays of light shot out from their bodies. Those hundred rays flew into the sky, and became an extraordinary formation that brimmed with golden radiance.

After the appearance of the formation, a boundless pressure came down from above. It was powerful, and both Zhan Jiuxiao and Kuang Bainian stood no chance against it. It was as if they were both tightly bound by a formless rope—thoroughly bound from inside to outside.

"Dammit!!" Kuang Bainian roared in extreme bitterness; however, he had already lost all strength to resist. Even the talismans that were

brimming with light dimmed away, returning to their former dull appearance. His aura was now even weaker than before.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, countless strands of light burst out from the formation. They looked like golden whips as they flew down from above and thrashed Kuang Bainian and Zhan Jiuxiao.

bam bam bam bam

Once, twice, ten times, a hundred times, a thousand times. In just an instant, they were whipped several thousand times. Not only were their clothes ripped and destroyed, even their skin was stripped. They were truly mangled, but even so, the whips did not stop. They continued striking them both fiercely.

"Master—" Kuang Bainian's ten Monster World Spirits were enraged. They turned around and flew over with the aim of saving him.

boom rumble rumble But before they even went close, ten golden bolts of lightning shot out from the boundless formation. They struck the ten World Spirits and crushed them.

Kuang Bainian was livid upon seeing his ten World Spirits instantly killed. He knew very well how much effort he spent to successfully make contracts with those ten World Spirits. "Witch, I am not finished with this! I will—"

bam However, before he finished speaking, a golden whip came flying over, striking his jaw.

whoosh whoosh whoosh After another outburst of fierce whipping, the golden strands of light slid down the formation, and became several chains. Layers upon layers, they tightly bound Kuang Bainian, making him look like a large golden rice dumpling.

"Retrieve." After tying him up, the golden formation in the sky slowly descended. After enveloping Kuang Bainian, it rapidly shrank, and became a bundle the size of a fist.

One of the World Spirits then handed the bundle with Kuang Bainian sealed inside to Tantai Xue. Only then did they return to their World Spirit Gates and back into Tantai Xue's body.

However, although those World Spirits easily subdued Kuang Bainian, Chu Feng could tell their complexions were not too well. Even though the formation they created in combination was powerful, it had likely exhausted quite a bit of their strength.

Holding the bundle with Kuang Bainian sealed, Tantai Xue threw it a few times into the air like a small sandbag, then said to Zhan Jiuxiao, "Do you want to live? If you do, hand your Royal Armament over."

After speaking, not even giving Zhan Jiuxiao a chance to reply, she held out her hand, and amidst a suction force, drew over Zhan Jiuxiao's golden blade into her hand, and then into her Cosmos Sack.

After putting away Zhan Jiuxiao's Royal Armament, Tantai Xue said, "Go back and tell Jiang Qisha this: his little junior Kuang Bainian is now in my hands. If he wishes no harm dealt to his junior, tell him to treat his hostages well. If anything happens to those people, even if they lose a single hair, then his little junior will have quite the horrible end to his life."

"This..." Zhan Jiuxiao hesitated. He seemed as if he was happy because he could survive from such a disaster, yet also bitter because he lost his Royal Armament.

"What the hell are you looking at? Scram!" Tantai Xue coldly shouted when Zhan Jiuxiao remained unmoving.

Only after feeling Tantai Xue's killing intent did Zhan Jiuxiao come to his senses—he was in no position to discuss anything.

So, he quickly turned around, dragging his mutilated body, and limping away towards the Misty Peak. As though afraid Tantai Xue would regret releasing him, he even used his most powerful bodily martial skill. His panicked appearance truly looked quite brutal, and quite pitiful as well.

"Let's go. I'll protect you as you leave this place," Tantai Xue said to

Chu Feng after Zhan Jiuxiao was afar.

Before even letting Chu Feng reply, she went forward—Chu Feng and the others were planning to go the very same direction.

Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Feng looked at each other, but didn't say anything and just followed Tantai Xue.

Finally, Tantai Xue stopped above a sea.

Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help be taken aback. The surprise in her eyes became even stronger, because underneath this sea surface was a Teleportation Array. However, it was very hidden—there was a Concealment Formation guarding it. Normal people simply could not discover it, yet Tantai Xue clearly did.

"Why are you helping us?" Chu Feng went up and asked. He had to ask, because he wanted to be certain whether Tantai Xue was an ally or enemy.

"I'm not helping you. Jiang Qisha and the others came to this place only because of me. If it weren't for me, they would have never appeared here, nor would they have joined with the Immortal Execution Archipelago to deal with you.

"One could say it's because of carelessness that I brought a calamity with me. But no matter if it was intentional or not, in the end, this is related to me. I will help you deal with them."

Tantai Xue's tone was very calm, even cold, so cold it made people feel they were a thousand miles away. Although she said she would help Chu Feng, it gave him a very distant feeling.

"You alone will deal with them all?" Chu Feng was shocked. Although Tantai Xue was very strong, so strong she could easily subdue Kuang Bainian and drive away Zhan Jiuxiao, Jiang Qisha was not as simple to deal with as Kuang Bainian. After all, they were separated by three ranks. Besides, in terms of dealing with business, Jiang Qisha was far superior to Kuang Bainian, no matter the method itself or scheming. He was someone extremely difficult to deal with.

Chapter 922: Cursed Soil Seven

"Right now, yes, I cannot fight Jiang Qisha, but that may not be so after a few days," Tantai Xue said very confidently.

Chu Feng's heart was shaken. Although Tantai Xue's strength was quite some distance from Jiang Qisha's, he could tell from her tone that she was not joking. She likely had a fifty-fifty chance of assurance.

She was too powerful—so powerful she was unfathomable.

"Don't worry, nothing will happen to your friends. Including me, there are five people who have come to the Eastern Sea Region. The other four are called Jiang Qisha, Wu Kunlun, Zhao Yuetian, and Kuang Bainian. All four of them are the disciples of the Cursed Soil Sect.

"In the Cursed Soil Sect, there are seven very special disciples. They are geniuses personally chosen by the patriarch of the Cursed Soil Sect as he travelled through the lands. They are titled the Cursed Soil Seven.

"They are the direct disciples of the patriarch. They hold very high positions, when any disciple in the Cursed Soil Sect—no matter strength or age—sees them, they must pay their respects. Even elders do the same and don't dare to offend them.

"Everyone knows that the future patriarch of the Cursed Soil Sect will be from one of them. Even those who cannot become the patriarch can become Enforcement Elders who wield great authority. Since the day they entered the Cursed Soil Sect, their future was already fated to become unlimited. They were fated to control the future of the Cursed Soil Sect.

"Jiang Qisha, Wu Kunlun, Zhao Yuetian, and Kuang Bainian are four of the Cursed Soil Seven. So, you should know how important Jiang Qisha's life is to the Cursed Soil Sect, right?" Tantai Xue asked with a smile.

Chu Feng felt rather shocked. He knew Jiang Qisha and the others came from the Cursed Soil Sect, but he didn't expect them to hold such high positions. No wonder they were so arrogant and looked down on everything, and no wonder their strength was so superior to others.

They were the elites within elites, the geniuses within geniuses. They were true dragons within men.

"Actually, putting aside position in their sect, Kuang Bainian's life is still very important to Jiang Qisha and the others. They've grown up together since a young age, and to each other they're like their own very hands and feet. They are very close to one another.

"In their eyes, the lives of the entire Eastern Sea Region is probably less than Kuang Bainian's. So, threatening Jiang Qisha with Kuang Bainian's life means he won't do anything rash.

"As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they won't dare to do anything to your friends with Jiang Qisha there. At least, for each day Kuang Bainian is in my hands, it is a peaceful day for them." Tantai Xue once again spoke. She could tell that Chu Feng was very worried about Zi Ling and the others.

"Thank you." Chu Feng clasped his hands and bowed at Tantai Xue. The greatest knot in his heart, the thing he worried about the most, was indeed their safety. After hearing Tantai Xue's words, his worry had indeed been diminished quite a bit.

He didn't think Tantai Xue was tricking him. Moreover, he could tell Jiang Qisha was simply using Murong Mingtian and the others. Therefore, it was unlikely he would do anything to Zi Ling and the others based solely on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's resentment.

Especially after taking his junior hostage, Jiang Qisha would not even scratch them. Like Tantai Xue said, they were safe, at least temporarily.

After thanking, Chu Feng asked, "If I may ask, what sort of force is the Cursed Soil Sect in the Holy Land of Martialism?"

Chu Feng felt that he and the Cursed Soil Sect were fated to become enemies. It was for no other reason but because Jiang Qisha and the others came from that sect. So, he had to familiarize himself with the Cursed Soil Sect.

"A sect that has a Martial Emperor overseeing it. What sort of force do

you think it is?" Tantai Xue returned with a question.

"What? Martial Emperor?!" Chu Feng tensed up when he heard those words.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, she couldn't help deeply gasping as well. She even cried out in surprise, then asked with disbelief, "Martial Emperor? You're saying in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are truly Martial Emperors?"

No matter the Eastern Sea Region, or the eastern continents, Martial Emperors were legendary existences.

In both regions, the accomplishments of Martial Emperors were innumerable, but no matter which one, they existed only in legends. In this sea region and in this world, the shadow of Martial Emperors had been long gone. It was a legend and a limit that current cultivators could not reach.

So, to the people in the Eastern Sea Region, a Martial Emperor was simply god.

Godlike characters existing in the Holy Land of Martialism naturally made one shocked.

"Of course there are Martial Emperors, but even in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are not many. The sects that do have Martial Emperors are famous and powerful forces in the entire Holy Land of Martialism.

"Now, you should know what sort of force the Cursed Soil Sect is, right?" Tantai Xue calmly smiled, then added, "Chu Feng, I know what you're thinking. You must be planning to take revenge on the Cursed Soil Sect, right?"

Chu Feng frowned slightly. He indeed had such a plan, but he didn't expect Tantai Xue to have guessed it. He felt more and more that this woman was too horrifying. Simply nothing could be hidden from her.

"I've heard of what you've done. I know you are a person who will always take revenge.

“But don’t blame me for not reminding you: the Cursed Soil Sect isn’t the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the Holy Land of Martialism isn’t the Eastern Sea Region. You may be able to do whatever you wish to in the Eastern Sea Region, but if you aim to do the same in the Holy Land of Martialism, you must first consider your strength.

“Perhaps you are the most dazzling star in the Eastern Sea Region, but there are countless people like you in the Holy Land of Martialism.

“However, most of those who dare to act arrogant and rash with their slight bits of talent and fearlessness do not end up well,” Tantai Xue said with a sneer. Within her tone, there was a bit of mocking.

“Thank you for your kind intentions. I will consider them.” Chu Feng clasped his fists. Although Tantai Xue’s words were not too pleasant to hear, Chu Feng knew it was a kind reminder. So, he was not angry, and with a bit of gratitude, he asked, “I’m wondering… when will you prepare to make your move towards Jiang Qisha and the others?”

“What? You want to help me?

“There’s no need. With your cultivation, you will be of no use. However, if you want to watch the show, you are free to come.

“Carry this with you. When it’s time, I will come find you.” As Tantai Xue spoke, she gave an exquisite jade ornament to Chu Feng.

He knew it was something that indicated his location. On it there was likely Tantai Xue’s mark. She would be able to find him as long as he kept it on.

“Then I’ll await your news,” Chu Feng said to Tantai Xue after putting the jade ornament away.

Actually, he still had many questions he wanted to ask Tantai Xue; however, he was unfamiliar with her, and furthermore, the present circumstances were urgent, and this wasn’t the place to chat. Seeing Tantai Xue didn’t prepare to walk with them, Chu Feng endured his curiosity and asked no more questions, choosing to quickly leave instead.

Chapter 923: Hostility

"Lady Tantai, great favours need not thanked by words. The grace you have showed us today will definitely be repaid in the future." Qiushui Fuyan also bowed towards Tantai Xue.

Only after doing so did she bring Chu Feng and turn around. They prepared to enter the sea, through the Teleportation Array, and leave this perilous zone.

"Wait." But just when they prepared to leave, Tantai Xue stopped them. She looked at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, I have a question I want to ask you. I hope you can answer with the truth."

"Lady Tantai, please ask," Chu Feng politely said.

"In the Winter Plains, someone initiated a phenomenon in the sky. Nearly everyone in the Winter Plains saw that frightening scene.

"It just so happened that you were also in the Winter Plains back then. If I'm not mistaken, the person who initiated that sight was you, right?" Tantai Xue asked.

"Mm. Lady Tantai, that was me." Chu Feng nodded, and did not deny.

First of all, if Chu Feng denied it, there was quite a big possibility Tantai Xue would see through it. If she were made angry and then refused to help him deal with Jiang Qisha, that would be quite bad.

Moreover, Chu Feng had no need to deny. He could feel despite having an extremely cold and distant exterior, Tantai Xue did not possess any enmity towards him. His strength, to Tantai Xue, was of no significance. She was likely merely curious.

"It's nothing, you can go now." Indeed, after hearing Chu Feng's response, Tantai Xue satisfiedly nodded her head. One could thus see she had already known it was Chu Feng who made the sight appear. The reason she asked was just because she wanted Chu Feng's trust.

"Lady Tantai, we can actually leave together through the Teleportation Array beneath. We can help you go wherever you want to," Qiushui Fuyan

said.

"No need, you can go." Tantai Xue waved her hand, then no longer looked at Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan. Her attitude was very cold.

Qiushui Fuyan didn't say anything more after that. Turning around, she jumped into the sea, and Chu Feng closely followed as he leapt into the sea with surging waves.

In the end, with Qiushui Fuyan leading the way, they arrived in front of a huge underwater rock. After deactivating the formation, the rock became a Teleportation Array.

It was really too old, so there were not many places it could transport them to. Moreover, normal people would not know how to use it, but Qiushui Fuyan clearly knew how.

After some adjustments, it slowly began activating. Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and the fainted Lady Piaomiao entered it together, and along with some changes occurring to the Teleportation Array, they disappeared.

After they left, the Teleportation Array slowly transformed and in the end, returned to its state of a huge rock. The sea also returned to its former tranquility.

Above the sea, Tantai Xue was looking at the bottom. After knowing that Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan had safely left, she leapt forward and disappeared. No one knew where she went.

During the few days after Chu Feng and the others left, the army of the Immortal Execution Archipelago entered the Misty Peak. They not only took over, they started extensive constructions outside the Misty Peak such as building floating palaces. One could see that they were truly preparing to make this their headquarters.

At that moment, on the apex of a peak, there was a strange palace. Within it came sounds akin to the howling of wolves and ghosts. Some figures with fierce appearances and seemed like Consciousnesses were running all about. Those were not simple organisms—they were demons who had lost their physical body.

Those demons unceasingly let out ear-piercing howls. An indescribable eerie aura enveloped the entire palace.

However, within such a horrifying palace, Murong Mingtian was standing in the center. At that moment, he felt not the slightest trace of fear. Instead, his eyes were red, and when he widened his mouth, a boundless suction power surged forth. Several demons, amidst shrieks, were drawn into his mouth. He was actually absorbing the terrifying demons floating about in the palace.

Although those demons were powerful, they stood no chance against Murong Mingtian and could only allow themselves to be sucked into his stomach.

When one demon after the other entered, Murong Mingtian's aura also started to rise rapidly. He was using a special Mysterious Technique to refine those demon. When he refined the final one, he had successfully made a breakthrough in cultivation—he became a rank seven Martial King.

"Ancestor, congratulations on becoming a rank seven Martial King! You are another step closer to becoming a Martial Emperor," Murong Xun said in both admiration and excitement as he walked up from his position of observation.

"It's just rank seven Martial King. It is still too far from Martial Emperor.

"Lady Piaomiao must have been killing the demons sealed in this place in these several hundred years, so that's why there are far too few in this place. Otherwise, I might have even become a rank eight Martial King," Murong Mingtian said with a bit of pity.

"That Lady Piaomiao should be damned. She destroyed Ancestor's good occasion back then, and she once again destroyed your good occasion now," Murong Xun said as he gritted his teeth.

"No matter. 'There is no fear in running out of wood if a forest is left alive'. I have refined the demons sealed in this place, and not only has my cultivation been raised, my life has been prolonged. There will be no issue

to cultivate for another hundred years.

"Xun'er, you've seen it, right? This is the benefit of the Soul Devouring Demonic Technique. But sadly, it has very high bodily requirements. Not everyone can cultivate this.

"You are the only person, other than me, in the Murong family who can cultivate this Soul Devouring Demonic Technique. Don't fail me!" Murong Mingtian said with a smile.

"Ancestor, don't worry. I will not disappoint your hopes," Murong Xun guaranteed solemnly.

"Ancestor, you've succeeded?" Just at that moment, Murong Niekong walked in. After feeling Murong Mingtian's aura, he too felt elated.

"Mm." Murong Mingtian nodded, then asked, "How's Jiang Qisha? Is he still in the Road of Immortalization?"

"Ancestor, Jiang Qisha has already come out. He didn't die, but from his complexion, he likely hasn't gotten anything," Murong Niekong replied.

"Hmph. Which of the people who guard the Misty Peak isn't a person even the heavens take pride in? In history, so many guardians had tried the Road of Immortalization. If there were any treasures that could be taken, they would have been taken already. How could it possibly be Jiang Qisha's turn? He is already quite lucky, since he didn't die inside," Murong Mingtian sneered.

"However, that Jiang Qisha is not easy to deal with. After helping us take this Misty Peak, he hasn't gotten anything. He must be feeling bitter right now. Would he turn his annoyance into rage, and feel that we're tricking him? Will he make an enemy out of us because of this?" Murong Niekong said worriedly.

"Jiang Qisha is no fool, but exactly because he's smart, he must have detected there truly is a treasure within the Road of Immortalization after entering. However, because of his own lack of abilities, he can't get his hands on it. Who can that be blamed on?

"Besides, he is no longer of any use. Even if he doesn't make an enemy

out of us, I will not let them safely leave." A hint of fierceness flashed into Murong Mingtian's eyes.

Chapter 924: Each Possess Their Own Plans

“Ancestor, do you mean you’re going to kill Jiang Qisha and the others?” Murong Niekong asked with a bit of surprise.

“They must die. Everything in the Misty Peak is mine. Even if I’m not here in the future, this Misty Peak must be succeeded by you. I cannot allow anyone else to take over this place.

“Jiang Qisha and the others come from the Holy Land of Martialism. At that place, there are all sorts of odd people. It is the gathering place of true experts. Even if Jiang Qisha cannot make his way through the Road of Immortalization, it doesn’t mean that others from the Holy Land of Martialism cannot.

“If Jiang Qisha and the others spread the news that there’s something from the Ancient Era in the Eastern Sea Region, then the Misty Peak will no longer belong to us,” Murong Mingtian said.

“But Ancestor, that Jiang Qisha doesn’t seem to be so easy to deal with. Should we take time to discuss and plan this out?” Murong Niekong was bit worried. After all, they had seen Jiang Qisha’s techniques before.

“It doesn’t matter how strong he is—he’s only a rank four Martial King. Yet, right now, I’m a rank seven Martial King. Do you think I’ll be afraid of him? Besides, I won’t attack him directly. First, I’ll test his strength,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Ancestor, how will you do that?” Murong Niekong asked.

“Isn’t he unwilling to hand Zi Ling and the others over to us because his junior was caught? Now, I will use that as the excuse to meet with Jiang Qisha and see how strong he is.” As Murong Mingtian spoke, he walked towards the exit.

At that moment, there were many people standing outside. The Second Immortal and other peak experts were awaiting.

Murong Mingtian didn't say anything after seeing them. He continued walking straight down the peak, and as for the experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, they followed him in order and also went down the peak.

At that moment, Jiang Qisha had already returned to his palace. It was Lady Piaomiao's, but now, it had become his and his brothers' residence.

Within that palace, there were two firm but transparent Spirit Formation cages. One was rather large, and there were many people imprisoned within it. All of them were the people from the Misty Peak: Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Yan Ruyu, Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, and also some elders.

On the other cage, it was smaller, but also much more comfortable. There were chairs, tables, beds, sheets, and there were only three people locked in here—three young women whose appearances were like flowers and had exceptional beauty: Zi Ling, Su Rou, and Su Mei.

At that moment, they were not only uninjured, there was not even a scratch on them. There were even fresh fruits and delicious snacks on the table. Though they were imprisoned, they were not treated poorly.

"Senior Jiang, do you think the so-called Road of Immortalization is merely a scheme? Perhaps there isn't any treasure inside, and that Murong Mingtian is tricking us?" asked one of the men furiously, He was Wu Kunlun, also a genius disciple of the Cursed Soil Sect. At that moment, he was a rank three Martial King.

"Yeah! Senior, that Murong Mingtian is simply an old cunning fox. If we don't give him a lesson, he won't speak the truth," said another rank two Martial King. He was Zhao Yuetian—he was the one who appeared at the Gale Plains with Kuang Bainian.

"No, he didn't trick me. There is indeed treasure inside the Road of Immortalization. It could even be said that the entire Misty Peak is a huge treasure. It's just not that easy to acquire them," Jiang Qisha said.

"Are there truly treasures? What sort of treasures?" Wu Kunlun's and Zhao Yuetian's expressions turned to joy as they couldn't help themselves

from asking Jiang Qisha.

"I don't know the specifics, but from my observations, this Misty Peak is truly not simple. It is indeed something from the Ancient Era.

"Nothing from the Ancient Era is simple. Since this Misty Peak is so undamaged and complete, it is even less simple. It's not impossible for there to be an Imperial Armament or even more precious things inside," Jiang Qisha said with a smile, after drinking some tea. Although he returned with empty hands, his mood was actually quite good.

"What? Imperial Armament?

"In such a lowly place, there's an Imperial Armament?!"

"Haha, just now, your face was not too encouraging when you returned and we even thought you were tricked. I didn't expect there would truly be treasure here, and it's even an Imperial Armament! This is unbelievable." Wu Kunlun and Zhao Yuetian were ecstatic when they heard the two words "Imperial Armament". They knew what sort of thing it was.

"I cannot confirm what it is; it's just an analogy. But regardless, the treasure is, without a doubt, invaluable. Even in the Holy Land of Martialism, it's enough to stir up a war. Moreover, I feel that there is not only a single treasure in this place. There is likely also a frightening secret hidden here—a secret from the Ancient Era.

"If my Cursed Soil Sect can thoroughly open this Misty Peak, unravel all its secrets, use them, and pass them down, it's not impossible for us to become the overlords of the Holy Land of Martialism!" Jiang Qisha said with expectation.

"Doesn't that mean we've done quite a good deed?" Wu Kunlun's mouth could even crack from his excited grin, and he couldn't put away his smile.

"Haha, I didn't think we would inadvertently find a treasure land like this! At first, I even thought we were unlucky, but now, we would truly have to thank that witch," Zhao Yuetian said with a face of excitement as well.

“Thank her? She stole the Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute, and even captured our junior to threaten us! This witch should be damned. If I capture her, I will defile her, then beat her and skin her alive!” Wu Kunlun said as he gnashed his teeth.

“Yeah! Senior Jiang, right now, our junior is still in the hands of that witch. And since she is so vicious, will she do anything to him?” Zhao Yuetian asked Jiang Qisha with a bit of worry.

“She won’t. If she truly wanted to do something, she would have already. There’s no need for her to use him to threaten us. Moreover, she knows we are coming for her. She can’t even avoid us in time, so why would she look for trouble instead?

“Although I don’t know the specifics, I’m fairly certain that witch is preparing to help that boy called Chu Feng.

“However, that’s perfect for us. Perhaps we can use these people to capture that which,” Jiang Qisha said a bit sinisterly.

“Right. As long as we capture her, we can return. Although we lost Patriarch’s Talismanic Soul Stealing Flute, if we capture her and bring the complete flute back, we may not be punished.

“Moreover, we’ve discovered a treasure from the Ancient Era in the Eastern Sea Region. This is definitely a great deed. Maybe Patriarch will even reward us instead!” Zhao Yuetian’s face was full of excitement.

Chapter 925: Confrontation

“Junior Yue, don’t get happy too soon. She isn’t that easy to deal with,” Wu Kunlun said, extinguishing his flames of excitement. He then asked, “Senior Jiang, what plan to do you have? Why not tell us about it?”

“The witch’s matter still requires long planning. Since there’s still some time until the opening of the Heavenly Road, we just need to deal with her before then.

“But first of all, there are some people visiting us right now. They even want us to give them a lesson!” Jiang Qisha sneered at the enormous palace door. As he spoke, he waved his big sleeve and the shut doors opened with a bang.

At that instant, Wu Kunlun and Zhao Yuetian instinctively knew something was going to happen. They orderly stood behind Jiang Qisha, and with an expressionless face they looked at the outside scenery.

As expected, after a moment, Murong Mingtian appeared. Moreover, behind him followed Murong Niekong, Murong Xun, the Second Immortal, and many other experts of the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They were walking over towards the palace in a grand manner.

Moreover, their current bearing was completely different from before, Murong Mingtian especially. Although he had a smile on his face, there was no longer any of his former obsequiousness.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, you’ve returned! How was it? Have you gotten anything from the Road of Immortalization?” Murong Mingtian said as he laughed after entering the palace.

“Murong Mingtian, why ask when you already know? If I had truly gotten something within the Road of Immortalization, I’m sure you wouldn’t be laughing this happily, right?

“But don’t worry. Everything here is the Cursed Soil Sect’s. I can take anything I want at any time. There is no rush.

“You, on the other hand, shouldn’t have come here just to give me those useless words, right?” Jiang Qisha wore a light smile on his face. As he spoke, his tone was extremely fierce and didn’t leave any face.

Many people’s complexions from Immortal Execution Archipelago were very distorted, but no one dared to say anything. They just stood behind Murong Mingtian orderly.

They had basically all seen Jiang Qisha’s techniques, and they had personally seen his killing strength and his ability to reverse the situation completely. They had seen him defeat Lady Piaomiao, and they knew the terror of this young man, a rank four Martial King. They didn’t dare to easily offend him.

“Haha, my friend Jiang Qisha, you truly are smart. I also enjoy dealing with intelligent people.

“I have come here today for no other reason but because I want to take Zi Ling away.

“No matter what crime she committed, she is, after all, my Murong family’s fiancée. It is not too appropriate that she is subjected to imprisonment here.” As Murong Mingtian spoke, he cast his gaze towards Zi Ling.

At the same time, Murong Xun’s gaze was also cast towards Zi Ling, his so-called fiancée. Moreover, his pair of eyes were restlessly examining Zi Ling’s perfect body.

He already knew the lovers’ relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling. So, from his vicious and concealed lecherous gaze, one could see how he planned to take revenge.

“No, I’m not going with you! I’m not a part of your Murong family. I am Chu Feng’s fiancée,” Zi Ling loudly said.

“Heh, that’s not up to you.” Murong Mingtian sneered, then held out his palm. A burst of powerful suction power then surged out towards Zi Ling. He wanted to destroy the cage that locked Zi Ling.

hmm However, before the power even neared, a ripple appeared. It

soundlessly dissipated Murong Mingtian's attack.

"Jiang Qisha, what are you doing?" Murong Mingtian's expression did not change as he looked at Jiang Qisha. He knew he was the one who did that.

"Murong Mingtian, it's not that I'm not giving you this face, but my junior Kuang Bainian is now in the hands of others. That person clearly said nothing can happen to Zi Ling, so thus I must guarantee her safety. It would be better that you leave." Jiang Qisha very casually waved his hand. He was driving them away.

"Zi Ling is my Murong family's fiancée. How could I possibly wish to harm her?" Murong Mingtian cunningly argued.

"That may not be so," Jiang Qisha indifferently said.

"Jiang Qisha, does this mean you don't trust me?" Murong Mingtian's expression was a bit unsightly.

"That's right. I have never trusted you from the very beginning." Jiang Qisha stood up. He stared at Murong Mingtian with his fierce gaze, and spoke very gravely.

"Jiang Qisha, let me advise you: don't go too far. I tolerate you again and again only because of my respect towards you as an ally. Don't think I'm afraid of you," Murong Mingtian furiously shouted as he pointed at Jiang Qisha.

"Ally? Actually, I forgot to tell you. In my eyes, you are no allies to me. You are mere dogs. Do I have to respect a group of dogs?" Jiang Qisha roared with laughter—it was a very ridiculing laughter.

"Jiang Qisha, you've gone too far!" Murong Mingtian was finally enraged. He flipped his wrist, and put into his hand a Royal Armament that shone with light. He was already powerful as a rank seven Martial King, and in addition to a ruler's bearing from the Royal Armament, the might he now possessed was enough to frighten the world. He was simply unstoppable.

At that instant, layers upon layers of boundless aura because an

uncontrollable hurricane, endlessly surging outward from Murong Mingtian's body.

It made the entire palace shake. The countless number of little items decorating the palace started to slide and break. If the palace weren't from the Ancient Era thus giving it its extreme firmness, it would have likely been shattered already by such a powerful might.

"Hoh." However, even though Murong Mingtian looked so powerful, Jiang Qisha was not afraid in the slightest. He sneered, then flipped his palm. A fiery-red halberd appeared within his hand.

hmm What came immediately after its appearance was the release of an extremely horrifying aura. In just an instant, it enveloped the entire palace, and even submerged Murong Mingtian's powerful aura beneath it.

At that very instant, everyone in the palace, other than Jiang Qisha and the others, could feel enormous power. An indescribable pressure pushed onto them, making it difficult to breathe.

Even the Royal Armament in Murong Mingtian's hand was slightly trembling. It, as a Royal Armament, was actually afraid.

Murong Mingtian's expression paled instantly. He once again carefully examined the fiery-red halberd in Jiang Qisha's hand, and the longer he looked, the stronger the fear became in his eyes.

In the end, with the slight wave of his robe, he put away his Royal Armament. At the same time, he also put away his pressure of a rank seven Martial King, and said with a face of shame, "My friend Jiang Qisha, I've been rash just know. Please don't take offense."

Before the confrontation even officially started, Murong Mingtian had already admitted defeat.

Chapter 926: No More Than Dog

Jiang Qisha coldly smiled when Murong Mingtian surrendered. As he held the fiery-red halberd, although he was only a rank four Martial King, his aura was even stronger than Murong Mingtian's.

As he stood there, he was like an undefeatable god of war. He had the ability to kill everyone on scene, and he spread fear amongst their hearts.

Suddenly, Jiang Qisha waved the halberd in his hand. As the entire palace violently trembled, he pointed at Murong Mingtian and shouted, "Murong Mingtian! Respecting the fact that you were a senior, I have always kept a bit of face for you and didn't make things difficult in front of your successors.

"However, when I give you face, you reject it! If I don't make it clear, you forgot who's strong and who's weak. You forget who's the master and who's the slave! You truly think you, a mere rank seven Martial King, can sit equally against my Cursed Soil Sect?"

As Jiang Qisha spoke, he released boundless pressure from his halberd. It was so powerful that even Murong Mingtian's body couldn't help trembling. He only managed to stabilize himself after taking two steps back.

Other than Murong Mingtian, however, the rest of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt their knees go weak. They were forced to kneel on the ground by such strong power, and some were even forced to lie onto the floor. They simply had no strength to rise.

"My friend, Jiang Qisha, please be magnanimous! I was wrong before. I hadn't made my own position clear.

"As long as you give us a chance to start anew, my Immortal Execution Archipelago will be willing to follow your Cursed Soil Sect and do anything for it. We will do everything we can for your benefit, and we will not dare to give any disrespect," Murong Mingtian begged extremely pettily as he quickly bent his waist and bowed.

However, Jiang Qisha just gave an indifferent smile before such a scene. Then, he said, “If you want to live, then kneel, kowtow, and ask for forgiveness. If you make me happy, then I’ll give you a chance.”

Someone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago furiously shouted, “You want my ancestor to kowtow to you? Don’t even think ab—”

boom However, before he even managed to finish speaking, a muffled explosion rang out. That person was turned into a pool of blood.

“You...”

They were surprised and terrified, but there were also some who were enraged. To them, Murong Mingtian was their ancestor. They could throw away dignity, but Murong Mingtian could not. Jiang Qisha’s demand to kneel was something they could not tolerate.

“All of you, shut your mouths!” But just at that moment, Murong Mingtian fiercely shouted.

After speaking, he bent his knees and knelt onto the ground. Then, with a face full of sincerity, he said, “My friend Jiang Qisha, I, Murong Mingtian, have been insolent. If you want to kill me or torture me, I have no words of complaint, but please give my successors a chance to live.”

Then, he bent over, and powerfully slammed his head onto the ground. He was truly kowtowing and admitting his wrongs.

whoosh But before his head touched the ground, a hand suddenly appeared, holding his head, stopping his downward movement.

When he raised his head, he saw it was Jiang Qisha. At that moment, he had already put away the horrifying halberd, and was looking at Murong Mingtian with a smile. He said, “Murong Mingtian, why did you do it in the first place if you were going to show regret right now? However, since you are genuine, I naturally won’t make things difficult for you.”

After speaking, Jiang Qisha helped Murong Mingtian up, then walked over to a chair in the palace and sat down. Only then did he wave his hand and say, “All of you, rise.”

Although Jiang Qisha had spoken, and he had also put away his boundless pressure, none of the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago rose.

“Everyone, rise,” Murong Mingtian said as he turned his head at the crowd.

Only after Murong Mingtian spoke did they rise. At that moment, they were drenched with sweat.

Odd expressions were worn on their faces, but most importantly, their bodies were trembling. Even the master of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, Murong Niekong, was the same. He acted as if he had experienced an extremely brutal war.

“Don’t worry. To outsiders, we are still in a cooperative relationship. You are still the overlord of this Eastern Sea Region.

“However, you must know this well in your hearts. We are not sitting on equal ground. We are your masters.

“If there is a second time, if there’s anyone dares to disrespect their superiors and goes against our words, then I won’t be as polite as today. Understand?” Jiang Qisha spoke in a tone that was akin to a master scolding his servants.

“My friend Jiang Qisha, thank you for your generosity,” Murong Mingtian said as he nodded.

“Leave. Do things well for me, and in the future, I can bring you away from this little place and go to the Holy Land of Martialism to widen your horizons. I can show you the true world of cultivation.” Jiang Qisha casually waved his hand.

Murong Mingtian and the others first bowed, then turned around and left. However, in contrast to the arrogance they entered with, at that moment, they had truly reached the extremities of pettiness.

Everyone from the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt extreme oppression in their hearts, but they could do nothing. No one dared to say anything.

Only when they walked down the peak did Murong Mingtian say, “You must all be very confused why I didn’t start attacking Jiang Qisha and instead just conceded, right?”

“Ancestor, I’m sure you have something in mind,” Murong Niekong said. Murong Xun and the others also nodded in agreement.

In all these years, the reason the Immortal Execution Archipelago developed so smoothly was all because of this ancestor. They put great trust in his decision.

“The armament Jiang Qisha took out just now was not simple at all. It wasn’t just a Royal Armament. It had the same nature as the Demon Sealing Sword—it was able to deter my Royal Armament.

“In the battle between Royal Armament, if there is already one side that’s feared before the battle even begins, then it’ll be an uphill battle. Besides, I cannot be certain that the special Royal Armament is Jiang Qisha’s final trump card.

“In a situation with no assurance, I won’t introduce complete hostility between us, because if I can’t defeat him, not only will I lose my life, all of you will die as well,” Murong Mingtian said.

“Ancestor, what should we do now?” Murong Niekong asked.

“Ahh…” Murong Mingtian heaved a deep sigh, then said one word, “Endure.”

At the same moment, within the palace, Jiang Qisha and the others were standing with faces full of smugness.

“Senior, that Murong Mingtian made a breakthrough to rank seven Martial King, then he showed his true face immediately and dared to attack us! This person cannot stay alive. Why didn’t you just kill them immediately?” Zhao Yuetian and Wu Kunlun asked in confusion.

“If I fight him, naturally I will win. But a rank seven Martial King is no pushover. Even if I can reign victorious, I will still be forced to pay some sort of price.

“Right now, we are facing the same enemy. There’s simply no need to kill each other.

“Besides, in my eyes, he is a dog. Whether this dog is loyal or not, it’s fine as long as he can bite others for me.

“But you must also remember that a dog will eternally be a dog. There’s no need to look at them as if they were human. If, one day, this dog truly dares to bite its master, then we can just kill it and eat its meat.

“Everything is within my grasp. Who stands a chance against us in this weak little Eastern Sea Region? We have only one true opponent—that witch. However, an opponent she may be, but she will not escape my grasp.” Jiang Qisha wore a smug and confident smile on his face.

Chapter 927: The Father of the Holy Daughter

Jiang Qisha's words were not spoken in private via mental messages. So, nearly everyone within the palace heard them crisp and clear.

"This Jiang Qisha is too terrifying. At such a young age, his thought progress is already so elaborate. I've never had a feeling of safety in his hands. Instead, I feel even more dangerous," Su Mei said a bit worriedly as she sent mental messages.

"He is indeed not a good person at all, but at least temporarily, we are safe in his hands. If Murong Mingtian truly brought us away, Murong Xun wouldn't have let us go," Su Rou replied.

"I heard that you've got a Divine Body?" Just at that moment, Jiang Qisha cast his gaze towards Zi Ling. Moreover, with a light smile, he walked towards her.

"Hoh. Divine Body? It's the first time that I've seen such a weak Divine Body. She's even less than trash." Zhao Yuetian also walked over and he looked at Zi Ling with a face full of disdain.

However, after he carefully examining Zi Ling's countenance, he curled his lips vilely. He said with an odd smile, "Although her cultivation's a bit weak, she doesn't look too bad. This face is truly the most beautiful I've ever seen."

As he spoke, Zhao Yuetian looked at Jiang Qisha, then said, "Senior, how about you take this girl? Although she's very weak, with that face alone, you can invoke quite a few people's admiration if you bring her back."

"Junior Zhao, Senior Jiang is not someone who greeds over beauty. If you ask me, you want to take this Zi Ling back, right?" Wu Kunlun walked over, then said to Jiang Qisha, "Senior, I've asked around, and she is indeed a Divine Body. When she was born, the sight she triggered had caused quite the scene. Many people had personally witnessed it, so the

fact that she's a Divine Body should be true.

"However, I just don't know why her aptitude in cultivation is this weak. She's the weakest out of all these people."

"The exact reason why can be known through an examination." As Jiang Qisha spoke, she willed a door to open in the Spirit Formation cage that locked Zi Ling and the others. He then strode in.

"What are you doing? Stay away from my Sister Zi Ling!" Su Rou and Su Mei leapt forth, wanting to stop Jiang Qisha.

However, there was such a huge distance in cultivation between these two groups. How could the two of them possibly stop him? In the instant they started moving they were enveloped by Jiang Qisha's aura, and were completely frozen. At the same time, Jiang Qisha had grabbed Zi Ling's wrist as he began seriously observing her.

"Hahaha, the heavens are helping me, the heavens are helping me! Murong Mingtian, you old fox, you're quite vicious! But sadly, your preparations have been a gift for myself."

Jiang Qisha let go after a brief moment. On his face, an elated smile emerged. He started loudly laughing, and could not calm himself for quite a while.

Zhao Yuetian and Wu Kunlun felt confused at such an outburst. However, they definitely knew it was something good. So, they asked at the same time, "Senior Jiang, what did you discover?"

"Haha, I cannot leak a divine secret, but in short, this girl is mine." Jiang Qisha looked once again at Zi Ling. It didn't seem as if he was looking at a beauty, but instead, at a treasure.

Zi Ling and the others tightly knitted their brows. They knew why he said that. He must have discovered the secret of the Heaven Gripping Pellet, and wanted to take Zi Ling's power for himself.

Time flew past, and after a blink, several days had elapsed.

Within a certain forest in the Eastern Sea Region, there was a worn out

little temple. Inside were Chu Feng, Qiushui Fuyan, and Lady Piaomiao.

Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were in quite a decent state, but worry was worn all over their faces. They looked with extreme anxiousness at Lady Piaomiao who lay on the ground.

Ever since Lady Piaomiao lost consciousness, she had yet to awaken. Moreover, her aura kept on sliding downward. She, initially a rank six Martial King, had now become a rank five Martial King. Her cultivation was shrinking.

Not to mention Chu Feng, even Qiushui Fuyan could do nothing about that. They were out of ideas.

“Sister Fuyan, if this continues, Senior Piaomiao’s cultivation will keep dropping, and it’s likely she won’t be able to survive either. We cannot await her death at a place like this, and we should think of something,” Chu Feng said with concern.

“She’s used a technique she shouldn’t have used, so we can’t do anything about it. There is only one person who can save her. Looking at the time that has passed... He should be arriving soon,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Someone’s coming? Who?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“You know this person,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“I know him?” Chu Feng was even more puzzled.

Qiushui Fuyan’s expression abruptly changed slightly, then she rubbed the necklace on her neck and she said, “Speak of the devil; he’s here.”

Chu Feng quickly cast his gaze outside the little temple, and as expected, a person soon appeared and quickly flew in.

“Senior Taikou?”

However, after seeing that person, Chu Feng’s expression changed greatly. His eyes were full of surprise, because Chu Feng truly did know that old man. He not only knew him, this person had helped him many times before. He was the powerful and famous person in the Four Seas

Academy, Taikou, whose origin was mysterious and whose cultivation was unfathomably deep.

"Fuyan, how's your mother's condition?" Taikou's face was one of anxiety after he entered. He didn't greet Chu Feng as he directly asked Qiushui Fuyan a question.

"What? Mother?" Chu Feng's heart was shocked. That word truly frightened him.

"Go in yourself and take a look." Qiushui Fuyan did not reply, and instead cast her gaze at Lady Piaomiao.

Taikou didn't bother with any more questions. He leapt forward and immediately appeared in front of Lady Piaomiao. He sat on the ground cross-legged, and observed Lady Piaomiao's present state.

After a while, Taikou took out several medicinal pellets with special properties and put them in Lady Piaomiao's mouth. After helping her refine them, he looked back at Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Feng, and said, "Don't worry. Although she used a forbidden technique, causing serious damage to her body, at least her life is not at peril."

After speaking, he didn't pay any more attention to them. He directly used a Mysterious Technique, laid a formation, and started healing Lady Piaomiao with special methods.

"Chu Feng, let's go. Don't disturb him." As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she walked out the little temple. After glimpsing at Taikou and Lady Piaomiao, Chu Feng followed her out because he knew Qiushui Fuyan had something she wanted to say to him.

"I'm sure you've made a guess or two, right?" Qiushui Fuyan asked with a smile after coming to a peaceful corner.

"I..." Chu Feng was a bit hesitant, and ultimately, did not respond.

"You are correct, Lady Piaomiao is my mother, and Taikou is my father," Qiushui Fuyan said with a bit of sorrow.

Chu Feng sucked in a deep breath of air. Although he had guessed it

already, Chu Feng still felt very shocked when he confirmed it from Qiushui Fuyan herself. In an instant, the emotions in his heart surged and he could not remain calm.

Chapter 928: Lady Piaomiao Awakes

“Sister Fuyan, there’s a few things I’m not sure if I should ask or not,” Chu Feng said after learning of such shocking news.

“There’s nothing that cannot be asked between us. Ask whatever you want to,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“You, Senior Piaomiao, and Senior Taikou are family. Why couldn’t you live together, and instead, have lived in separation? Is there some reason?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“It was actually an accident that my mother and father gave birth to me. My mother’s master had once told her she was forbidden from harbouring feelings for any man. She was afraid the feelings between a man and a woman would bind my mother’s heart, preventing her from fully putting her mind to guard the Misty Peak and influencing her decisions in choosing a successor.

“My mother promised her master she wouldn’t, yet unintentionally had a relationship with my father, and even became conceived with me. She felt ashamed, so she didn’t meet with my father.

“However, I know that she loves him. She has always blamed herself, and she has always felt she treated my father unfairly because of a vow. She felt that she’d let down my father.

“As for my father, he too loves my mother very much. Even though my mother unreasonably drove him away and was unwilling to meet him, my father hadn’t found any other partners. Also, he seemed to understand my mother’s predicament, so he had never looked for me or my mother on his own accord.

“Right now, I wonder if my mother will blame me for calling my father over. He has never seen her true appearance, and I think she wouldn’t want him to see what she looks like now either,” Qiushui Fuyan said a bit worriedly.

“But isn’t Senior Taikou the only one who can save Senior Piaomiao? If

you didn't call him over, perhaps she wouldn't even have a chance at survival. I'm sure Senior Piaomiao won't blame you, Sister Fuyan," Chu Feng consoled.

"Mm. Even if my mother blames me, I had to call my father over. I can't just watch as my mother dies," Qiushui Fuyan said.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan waited outside the temple. They did not go in to disturb Lady Piaomiao's treatment.

Since her injuries were very severe, the healing process was very lengthy. It required two full days and one night.

During that period of time, both Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were very worried. They were afraid Lady Piaomiao wouldn't be able to bear through this tribulation.

"Fuyan, Fuyan..." Finally, Taikou walked out of the little temple and lightly called Qiushui Fuyan's name.

"How is it? How are my mother's injuries?"

Qiushui Fuyan quickly rose, and Chu Feng also followed. At that instant, Chu Feng carefully observed Taikou. Finally, he could detect his strength. This old man was indeed a Martial King, and his cultivation was powerful, even above Qiushui Fuyan's—he was a rank four Martial King.

Although he was a bit weaker than peak characters such as Lady Piaomiao, Murong Mingtian, and Murong Niekong, his cultivation was already extremely strong in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, at that moment, Taikou had a very weak aura. His face was pale as paper. One could tell that he had exhausted quite a bit of his strength in order to save Lady Piaomiao.

"Her injuries are essentially stable. She would wake up soon. However, let me ask you this: who was the one that forced her into this state?" Taikou had a very calm tone, but Chu Feng could see the concealed fury within her eyes. There was a strand of extreme rage.

"It's the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and also

people from the Holy Land of Martialism. They are too strong. They were even able to force Mother to this state, so don't do anything rash! Otherwise, if anything happens to you, my mother will feel even more ashamed," Qiushui Fuyan urged.

"Your mother doesn't owe me anything, so why should she feel any shame? But no matter how she looks at me, in my heart, I, Qiushui Taikou, will always have her as my wife, and I will always have you as my daughter.

"Right now, my wife and daughter have been bullied to a state like this. How can I just do nothing?" Taikou was clearly unwilling to leave this matter alone.

"Fuyan...

"Fuyan..."

A weak calling voice came from the temple. It was Lady Piaomiao; she had awakened.

"Fuyan, quickly go in and check on your mother." Taikou rejoiced, but he himself did not dare to enter.

"Both of you, wait for me here. Father, don't leave." After leaving behind such instructions, Qiushui Fuyan entered the broken temple.

At that moment, Lady Piaomiao had indeed awoken, and she was sitting cross-legged. Although her complexion was still quite poor, she was in a much better state in comparison to her unconscious moments. At least, she had survived from such a risk.

However, her cultivation was still at rank five Martial King; it hadn't returned to its initial rank six Martial King. One could see that despite keeping her life, she had still paid quite a price.

"Your father's come, right?" Lady Piaomiao calmly said after seeing Qiushui Fuyan.

"He hasn't," Qiushui Fuyan denied subconsciously.

"Don't pretend. I've actually been up for quite a while. I know he's here.

Other than him, there's no one else who could have save me," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Mother, don't blame me! You know only my father could have saved you. So, I could have only called him over. Otherwise, if anything happens to you, he'll definitely blame me for the rest of my life!" Qiushui Fuyan was a bit nervous. One could see that she was quite afraid of Lady Piaomiao.

"Silly child, why would I blame you? But, it's just that... he's now seen my ugly appearance. He must be really regretting having a relationship with me, right?" When Lady Piaomiao spoke, although she looked very calm, a hint of worry flowed within her eyes.

"He hasn't! He's only angry—angry that someone forced you to a state like this! He's even preparing to avenge you.

"However, Father is still only a rank four Martial King. Not to mention the Holy Land of Martialism's Jiang Qisha and that despicable and cunning Murong Mingtian, he won't even be able to deal with Murong Niekong.

"But, he's not listening to my words, and I can't convince him no matter what! Mother, how about... you try? Father will definitely listen to your words," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Does your father truly not feel disgust at my appearance? Nor has he blamed me for leaving him for so long?" But it seemed that Lady Piaomiao was more concerned with Taikou's opinion of her.

"Mother, don't worry. Father loves you a lot, and what he's concerned with isn't your appearance, but you as a person. In his heart, there is only you. Otherwise, why would he remain alone for so many years? What sort of woman would he be unable to find with cultivation like his?" Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile.

Chapter 929: Pearl of Immortal Inheritance

Lady Piaomiao went silent in deep thought. After a while, she sighed, as if releasing some pent up emotions. She seemed to have decided on something. After she made a bitter yet expectant smile, she said, “Fuyan, go call in your father. I have some words I want to personally say to him.”

“Really? That’s great! Mother, hold on, I’ll call Father right now.” When Lady Piaomiao truly wanted to see Taikou, Qiushui Fuyan rejoiced, and she hurriedly ran out.

After Qiushui Fuyan left, Lady Piaomiao quickly cleaned up her clothes and hair. Although her face was full of scars, and she was incomparably ugly, she still wanted to tidy up herself the best she could before seeing Taikou.

“Father, Mother wants you to go in,” Qiushui Fuyan said with a faint smile. It seemed that she’d looked long forward to this day.

“What? Your mother wants me to enter? She’s willing to see me now?” Taikou was taken aback. He was both surprised, and uneasy.

“Absolutely true. Quickly go in; she is waiting.” Qiushui Fuyan gave an even prettier smile.

“Ah, ahh~” Taikou no longer hesitated. As he nodded his head, he hopped over to the temple with his single leg. Usually, he would have flown over, but he didn’t—proof of his extreme nervousness.

Chu Feng couldn’t help smiling at that scene as well. In his mind, Taikou was an odd old person who feared nothing. However, judging by his actions today, it seemed that he had someone he feared. But that wasn’t anything embarrassing because the one he feared was the one he loved.

Questioning oneself, did Chu Feng not fear Zi Ling, Su Rou, and the others as well? He did, but it was not the fear that first came in mind. He was afraid they would feel grievances. He was afraid of their anger.

Although it was fear, but it was essentially different. Fear in this manner was an expression of love.

The reason Chu Feng smiled was because he felt happy for Taikou. From his and Qiushui Fuyan's expression, Lady Piaomiao had called Taikou over because of something pleasant. Very likely, this pair of husband and wife who had separated for many years would be together once again.

As expected, after a while, Taikou floated out of the broken temple cheerfully. His face was full of youthfulness, and he could not even hide his smile. There was not even a need to mention how happy he was.

"Chu Feng, quickly enter! My wife has something she wants to say to both of you! Hahaha..."

Taikou's smile was truly quite dazzling, and saying the word "wife" revealed why he was so happy. At least, he dared to say that definitely because Lady Piaomiao allowed it, as they were likely not going to live separated anymore. They had reconciled.

Chu Feng first looked at Qiushui Fuyan, smiled, then walked in the broken temple together.

After stepping out to call for Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan, Taikou returned to the temple, and he was intimately putting clothes over the cross-legged Lady Piaomiao. How did this loving atmosphere even seem like one of lovers who had separated for many years? They simply seemed more like an old couple who helped each other in times of need.

There was not any unfamiliarity in feelings due to the separation of many years.

Lady Piaomiao raised her head when they entered. After looking at Taikou behind her, who then returned with a gentle smile, a hint of resolution flashed past Lady Piaomiao's eyes.

whoosh whoosh

Suddenly, Lady Piaomiao crossed her hands, and cast a special spell. She closed her eyes, and at the same time, bursts of gales surrounded her

body. Her aura started to change, and it was continuing to drop. It was dropping so quickly it was dumbfounding.

Rank four Martial King.

Rank three Martial King.

Rank two Martial King.

Rank one Martial King.

Rank nine Martial Lord.

In just a blink, Lady Piaomiao, a Martial King, had become a Martial Lord. Moreover, her cultivation was still rapidly dropping, and it was even speeding up.

Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan were terrified when that happened, but after seeing Taikou's calm and peaceful appearance, they didn't put forth any questions. Very clearly, he knew what she was doing, and he had likely agreed to it already.

Finally, Lady Piaomiao's cultivation vanished completely. She, a rank five Martial King, became a normal person who didn't even have a hint of cultivation aura.

whoosh But just at that moment, Lady Piaomiao opened her mouth, and from it she spat out a pearl-sized object that glowed with faint light.

Chu Feng's eyes lit up when his gaze fell upon that pearl. It was not simple at all. There was extremely powerful strength contained within—it was all of Lady Piaomiao's cultivation.

Chu Feng understood. Her cultivation was not dropping for no reason at all. It had just transformed into this mystical pearl, and more importantly, it seemed to be intentional.

"Chu Feng, the Mysterious Technique I cultivated is called the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. With that Mysterious Technique, other than obtaining greater power by ignition of one's own cultivation, there is something else it can do: it can condense one's cultivation into a pearl. It can temporarily assist any successors in a

crucial moment for battle.

"As for this pearl, it's called the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance. All of my cultivation has been coalesced into it. I have, however, used quite a bit of strength in doing so, so the cultivation within this pearl is not rank five Martial King, but rank four Martial King.

"But, if you can refine it, and add it onto your fighting strength, perhaps you can deal with that Jiang Qisha," Lady Piaomiao said with a smile.

"Lady Piaomiao, I cannot do that!" Chu Feng was frightened as he hurried pushed such an important thing away.

"Listen to what I have to say first. Burning one's own cultivation is already a taboo. Even if I don't condense my life's cultivation into this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, I will never make any more progress in cultivation for the remainder of my life. Moreover, my cultivation will quickly fade away, and ultimately, I will still become a useless person as I am now.

"Rather than letting it vanish on its own, why not instead condense it into a pearl and let it give you a hand? Not only do you have to save Zi Ling and the others, you must avenge me and take back the Misty Peak. I promised my master that I would not let the Misty Peak fall in the hands of others.

"Right now, the only person who can help me is you. Do you understand what I'm trying to say?" Lady Piaomiao asked with a smile. In comparison to her former coldness, she was now quite a bit warmer.

"I understand." Chu Feng nodded. He indeed understood.

Due to touching upon a taboo, Lady Piaomiao's cultivation was fated to dwindle away, and she was thus fated to become a person with no cultivation. It was merely a matter of time.

The reason she condensed her cultivation into a pearl was because she wanted Chu Feng to use it to take back everything she lost.

This was something she couldn't help but do, and it was the solution amidst no solutions. If she did this, there would perhaps be some

chances. If she didn't do this, then there would be no chance at all.

Chapter 930: A Huge Gamble

"Mm. You're a smart person. I'm sure you know you cannot easily obtain the power within this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance.

"Even if you refine it, its cultivation will not be permanent. It will only provide you assistance for a short period of time.

"After a certain time limit passes, not only will the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance's cultivation leave your body, you will be met with a painful backlash. Its agony, although insufficient to take your life, is near unendurable. You must be mentally prepared for that," Lady Piaomiao added.

"I understand. If I can save Zi Ling and the others, take back the Misty peak, and avenge you, a measly bit of pain is nothing." Chu Feng's face was one of resolution.

Although Tantai Xue had already said she would deal with Jiang Qisha, she was still only a rank nine Martial Lord. Chu Feng didn't know what arsenal of techniques were at her disposal, nor was he certain she would defeat him.

As the saying went, rather than relying on others, why not rely on oneself? If it were something within his capabilities, he would still rather rely on himself even if he had to pay a certain price. So, if there were a chance, Chu Feng wanted to personally save Zi Ling and the others. After all, they were his lovers and brothers.

"Mm. I knew I wasn't mistaken." Lady Piaomiao nodded her head in content, then added, "But Chu Feng, this Pearl of Immortal Inheritance cannot be refined easily. It can be refined by only those who cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

"As for the technique itself, it can only be read but not spread. It is engraved on the Mysterious Technique Tablet in the Misty Peak. If you want to refine my Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, you must first cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, and if you want to do that, you must first sneak into the Misty Peak," Lady Piaomiao said.

“Sneak into the Misty Peak? How is that possible? Right now, the Misty Peak has already been taken over by the Immortal Execution Archipelago!

“Putting aside the dangerous threat of Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian alone is very difficult to deal with. Sneaking in is already difficult, and if you want to cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique in front of the stone tablet, that’s impossible!” Qiushui Fuyan’s face was one of shock. She felt it was something out of the question. It was really too dangerous.

“It is indeed very difficult, but if you take a risk, there is still a chance,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior Piaomiao, do you have some sort of plan?” Chu Feng asked.

“I do have a plan, but it is very dangerous,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, please tell me.” Chu Feng was decided. As long as there was a chance to save Zi Ling and the others, he was willing to do even more dangerous things.

“First of all, you must first alter your appearance. That’s not too difficult, but your Transformational Mask cannot be used because it will absolutely not work in front of Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha. If you meet them, you’re dead.

“There is an Alteration Pellet in my Cosmos Sack, left behind by my master. If you consume it and change your appearance, they will not recognize you.

“Fuyan, you give it to him.” As Lady Piaomiao spoke, she gave her Cosmos Sack to Qiushui Fuyan.

She received it, and very quickly found a pellet that contained extremely powerful medicinal strength. She gave it to Chu Feng after taking it out, but then said, “Mother, even though this Alteration Pellet can change Chu Feng’s appearance and allow him to sneak into the Misty Peak, he still can’t approach the stone tablet that records the Mysterious Technique!”

“Fuyan, take out my Immemorial Jar,” Lady Piaomiao said.

Qiushui Fuyan came to a realization; she now seemed to understand Lady Piaomiao's plan. From the Cosmos Sack, she brought out a slightly ruined mud jar.

Chu Feng was near Qiushui Fuyan, so he examined the jar when she took it out. He discovered that it was very special—it was some sort of treasure item. The formation on it was not a simple one at all, and it exuded a mysterious feeling Chu Feng could not describe.

"This is?" However, when Chu Feng cast his gaze into the mud jar, his expression changed greatly. He was shocked.

Within the mud jar, there was the Consciousness of an unconscious woman. Chu Feng recognized her—it was Murong Xun's fiancée, Ya Fei.

"Senior, what is this all about?" Chu Feng asked with a stunned face.

Back then, in the Depraved Ravine, Chu Feng had personally seen Ya Fei's death! Yet, this Consciousness was undoubtedly hers! She hadn't died!

"When you were in the Depraved Ravine, I was there as well. I felt Ya Fei would be of use, so when Murong Xun killed her, I used a technique to snatch her Consciousness.

"Right now, your success in cultivating the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique will be solely dependent on her," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Senior, I don't understand what you mean." Chu Feng was already very shocked, and now, he was even a bit stupefied.

"The Immortal Execution Archipelago's First Immortal dotes on Ya Fei, his granddaughter. From my knowledge of him, his love for Ya Fei far surpasses his loyalty to the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"After knowing of Ya Fei's death, the sorrow he felt was akin to death. If he were to learn that Ya Fei was actually killed by Murong Xun, he would definitely eat his every being.

"So, as long as you take Ya Fei's Consciousness to the First Immortal,

then tell him I have a method to revive her, he will most likely help you," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Mother, what if that First Immortal promises us to help us, but then harms Chu Feng after bringing him into the Misty Peak? What should we do then?" Qiushui Fuyan was very worried.

"Ya Fei is in our hands. The First Immortal will not risk his granddaughter's life. Besides, like I said, there is a huge risk that accompanies this mission. If there's an absolute chance of success, then there wouldn't be any risk to speak of," Lady Piaomiao said.

"But..." Qiushui Fuyan was still worried.

"Sister Fuyan, it's fine. Just leave this to me. If I'm not mistaken, right now the First Immortal isn't in the Misty Peak but their former headquarters instead. It shouldn't be difficult to meet him." As Chu Feng spoke, he stretched towards the mud jar and wanted to swiftly begin.

"Chu Feng, don't rush. We must still plan in detail." Lady Piaomiao spoke again. Moreover, she waved her hand, indicating Chu Feng to not take the mud jar.

So, Chu Feng sat back down. He knew she definitely had a plan.

"I know Murong Mingtian's nature very well. Even though it may seem he treats Murong Niekong and the others very well, in reality, they are merely his chess pieces. He does not give absolute trust to anyone.

"Even if the First Immortal sneaks you into the Misty Peak, you may not have a chance to go to the Mysterious Technique Tablet and see the cultivation method of the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

"So, if you want to succeed, you must make a huge gamble," Lady Piaomiao said.

"Senior Piaomiao, what sort of gamble is the one you speak of?" Chu Feng asked.

"It is a 'make or break' gamble," Lady Piaomiao said seriously.

Chapter 931: Saving Qiu Canfeng

“Senior Piaomiao, what are you planning to do?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s not what I’m planning to do, it’s what you’re planning to do. From start to finish, the success of this will depend on you.” Lady Piaomiao looked at Chu Feng seriously.

“Please give me some advice, Lady Piaomiao,” Chu Feng pleaded.

“Chu Feng, do you remember the Demon Sealing Sword in the Depraved Valley?” Lady Piaomiao asked.

“I do,” Chu Feng replied.

“That Demon Sealing Sword is the weapon of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s sect head. After he passed away, there has been no one who’s been able to pull it out.

“However, I’ve heard before the sect head died, he had said if there were a person who could pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, that person would rule the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect. And, if I’m not mistaken, you are able to pull it out,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior Piaomiao, you want me to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Then, while they create chaos, have me look for an opportunity and reach the Mysterious Technique Tablet in the Misty Peak?” Chu Feng suddenly understood a few things.

“That’s right. I have a plan, but it requires many people for its success. As such, the Crippling Night Demon Sect must follow our commands.” Lady Piaomiao nodded.

“But if this fails, doesn’t it mean everyone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect will die with us?” Chu Feng said with a frown.

“Of course. That’s why I said this is a ‘make or break’ gamble. We can only succeed. Failure is not an option.

“Besides, that is only one of the reasons. The other reason is that you must have the Demon Sealing Sword.

“Although Jiang Qisha’s only a rank four Martial King, his strength is definitely not as simple as it was when I fought him. He didn’t even use a Royal Armament, so he definitely has some sort of hidden trump card.

“Even if you are powerful, perhaps as powerful as him, it will still be very difficult to defeat him with the techniques you currently possess.

“However, that Demon Sealing Sword contains endless power. In the Eastern Sea Region, it is the king of Royal Armaments. After you refine the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, then fight Jiang Qisha with the Demon Sealing Sword, your chance of victory will be a bit greater,” Lady Piaomiao said.

“Senior, I understand. Back then, I’ve seen their deactivation technique in the Depraved Ravine. So, it won’t be hard to get my hands on the Demon Sealing Sword. However, I’m afraid it won’t be as easy to hold command over the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“It will be especially harder when news of the Misty Peak spreads. The degree and amount of conflicts and resentments won’t matter anymore. It’s likely the Crippling Night Demon Sect won’t dare to meet them head-on.

“So, if I want to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect, then I would have to save my master first,” Chu Feng said.

“Save your master? What happened to Qiu Canfeng?” Lady Piaomiao was taken aback. She also wanted Chu Feng’s master to appear and help Chu Feng control the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but clearly she didn’t know anything regarding Qiu Canfeng’s imprisonment.

“Mother, since it was a bit urgent, I forgot to tell you. Actually, Qiu Canfeng is...” Qiushui Fuyan knew what happened, so she quickly told Lady Piaomiao about that he was confined in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“I would have never expected Qiu Canfeng to be this lucky and survive from such a dangerous thing like the Imperial Tomb. But Chu Feng, don’t worry. If, as you said, Fu Liansheng has the strength to save your master, then we have no problem doing the same right now.” She cast her gaze

towards Taikou.

Taikou was already prepared. He patted his chest, guaranteeing, “Don’t worry. Leave this to me.”

After confirming Taikou would come, Chu Feng wanted to head to the continent of the Nine Provinces with the two of them only, but after some further consideration, they decided to all go together and leave the Eastern Sea Region for safety’s sake.

On that very day, they began their journey.

The continent of the Nine Provinces was quite far away from the Eastern Sea Region. However, for an expert like a Martial King, that distance wasn’t really anything.

After several short days, they had arrived at the eastern continents. But in order to avoid accidents from happening, they didn’t bring with them Lady Piaomiao, who had already lost her cultivation.

Instead, they sent her to the hiding location of everyone from the continent of the Nine Provinces. They also had Qiushui Fuyan stay there to take care of Lady Piaomiao.

Only after settling her down did Chu Feng begin again with Taikou. They came to the continent of the Nine Provinces and snuck into the Imperial Tomb.

There were many dangers inside, and also many traps. They were created in a cycle, so even if they were destroyed, they would automatically repair themselves after a while and once again become a barrier of traps that sealed off the Imperial Tomb.

However, Taikou, the rank four Martial King, was no pushover. Although he wasn’t as powerful as Huangfu Haoyue, who had the strength to barge through everything, it wasn’t difficult for him to destroy the traps.

Finally, after passing through the many obstacles, Chu Feng and Taikou arrived at the deepest part of the Imperial Tomb.

“What a powerful Imperial Door. This Imperial Tomb is truly not simple at all!” From quite some distance away, Chu Feng and Taikou saw the Imperial Door that stood vertical, glowed with golden radiance, and had an inviolable holy aura around it.

Chu Feng, who once again saw the Imperial Door, felt rather sentimental as he recollected his former weak state. He had become many times stronger, but even so, the Imperial Door still gave him the same feeling as before. Nothing felt different despite his increase in strength.

“My master is over there. The thing that is binding him is called the Four Symbols Binding Formation.”

They just gave the Imperial Door a glimpse before Chu Feng cast his gaze towards a distant formation, as he was more concerned with Qiu Canfeng’s current state.

The formation was very powerful, and on its four sides were the engravings of four fierce huge beasts—it was the Four Symbols Binding Formation that bound Qiu Canfeng.

At that moment, he was sleeping deeply within the formation. He was sleeping quite comfortably too, and possibly because of his power being sealed, he didn’t detect Chu Feng and Taikou even though they had come quite near.

When Chu Feng approached, he carefully examined Qiu Canfeng. Even though two years had passed, Qiu Canfeng was still in quite good shape. His complexion was even more spirited.

But sadly, due to the barrier of the Four Symbols Binding Formation, Chu Feng could not detect Qiu Canfeng’s cultivation, even though his Spirit power was quite strong. However, the Four Protectors’ cultivations should be roughly the same, and since You Mingdeng was a rank four Martial King, Chu Feng assumed Qiu Canfeng was the same realm as well.

“This Four Symbols Binding Formation is very powerful; however, a large portion of its power has been used to seal Qiu Canfeng’s cultivation.

It won't be too difficult to deactivate it. I just need a bit of time... Roughly ten days." Taikou was also carefully examining this Four Symbols Binding Formation.

"Actually, I have a method of deactivation. I just need your help, and in twenty hours, we should be finished," Chu Feng said.

"Twenty hours?" Taikou was taken aback by those words, and a hint of doubt flashed past his eyes.

Ten days was the quickest time he predicted, but now Chu Feng had said twenty hours instead. In his perspective, that was nearly impossible.

Chu Feng didn't say anything concerning his doubt. Instead, he held out his finger, and drew in the air. Very soon, a glowing and shining picture of lines and runes stood upright in the air.

Taikou's eyes lit up when his gaze landed on that diagram. After a brief moment, he lightly smiled, and said in praise, "Chu Feng, you are indeed outstanding. Let's follow your instructions."

Chapter 932: Breaking the Formation

After deciding on Chu Feng's method, Taikou followed the written out instructions to create the formation. Chu Feng helped him as well.

"Chu Feng, is that you?" However, shortly after they started, Qiu Canfeng awoke.

"Master, you're awake!" Chu Feng went up, paid his respects, and greeted him.

As the proverbs said, "Master for one day, father for one life." Qiu Canfeng hadn't taught Chu Feng anything, really, and didn't perform any of his duties of a master. However, in Chu Feng's heart, since he made Qiu Canfeng his master, then that relationship would persist and never change throughout his life.

It was the same for Zhuge Liuyun and the Azure Dragon Founder. Even though Chu Feng's current cultivation had far surpassed theirs, he still held great respect towards them. That sort of humbleness was unrelated to strength; in Chu Feng's heart, they were eternally seniors who demanded his honour.

"Chu Feng, it's really you?" But when Qiu Canfeng woke up and saw Chu Feng outside the formation, he even though it was a dream. It felt so unrealistic.

"Master, it's me. Your disciple has come to save you.

"Ah, that's right. Master, I'll introduce him. This is Senior Taikou. It was he who broke through the traps on the way here and brought me to you," Chu Feng said as he pointed at Taikou.

"Qiushui Taikou?!" However, after seeing Taikou, Qiu Canfeng's eyes lit up. He felt quite shocked, and from that, one could tell he knew who he was.

"Qiu Canfeng, we have truly not seen each other for quite some time." Taikou lightly smiled. It was clear they knew each other before, but from their expressions, it seemed they didn't have much of a friendship.

Instead, there had likely been some conflicts.

"Chu Feng, why did you bring him here? Didn't I tell you to ask for Fu Liansheng?" Qiu Canfeng asked in confusion, but there wasn't any blame in his eyes. He just didn't understand why Chu Feng was with Taikou.

"Master, I am really sorry. There's been some change to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I am truly unable to meet Fu Liansheng.

"Moreover, the situation right now is urgent. I have to quickly save you. Senior Taikou is the person I can trust the most, and he is also willing to save you, Master. So, with no other choice, I asked him to come here.

"Master, I do hope that you can forgive me for this offense," Chu Feng said apologetically.

"Silly boy, you have done all you could to save me. Why would I blame you?" Qiu Canfeng shook his head. He didn't condemn Chu Feng or anything, and he truly did feel grateful.

He cast his gaze towards Taikou with a bit of sentiment, and said, "I just didn't expect the one to save me would be him. But that's fine. There's no need to mention the past. Qiushui Taikou, I, Qiu Canfeng, will repay you for what you've done today."

"There's no need. I've come here for Chu Feng's sake, not yours.

"But, Qiu Canfeng, I must say that you've got quite good luck to have received a disciple like Chu Feng. He will be the pride of your entire life." After speaking, Taikou continued laying the formation.

Chu Feng also quickly helped. That formation was very complicated, but everything was within Chu Feng's grasp. With them working together, a boundless deactivation formation very soon came into existence.

"Chu Feng's become this powerful?"

Qiu Canfeng, who was personally witnessing all that, wore shock in his eyes. He could tell that even though the core strength of the formation was on Taikou, the one who provided the core techniques was Chu Feng.

Although he already knew Chu Feng was a genius, he didn't expect him to be a genius to such a degree. In less than two years, Chu Feng had grown to such a state. That truly surpassed his imagination, and made him, the master, look at his disciple in an entirely new light.

"Master, we will soon break through this Four Symbols Binding Formation. In a while, we will need you to coordinate with us from the inside. With that, we will be able break through this formation even quicker," Chu Feng said after finishing all the preparations.

"Mm," Qiu Canfeng nodded. Naturally, he understood.

Quickly after, Chu Feng and Taikou stood in two Formation Apertures and started laying the formation.

hmm

Radiance instantly shone forth upon activation. Countless runes stood in order, and like an army of millions attacking a city, the runes madly rushed towards the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

aoo—

However, one could not break the formation so easily. Feeling the bombarding attacks, furious roars arose instantly. The four great beasts—Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise—all appeared.

They were enormous and ferocious. They oversaw each side of the formation, and all had their respective abilities. They were like guardians as they stopped the attacks of the runic army.

But Chu Feng and Taikou had already expected that to occur. Without panic, they channeled power into the formation and sent an even fiercer attack.

aooo—

When continuously attacked, the four huge beasts were enraged. They roared, and simultaneous to their defense, they sent out their own attacks at Chu Feng and Taikou. The attacks were simply unimaginably powerful.

boom rumble rumble

Luckily, the formation Chu Feng and Taikou laid was equipped with both offense and defense. The strength of the four beasts didn't matter; all of their attacks were stopped.

But the spirit a human possessed was limited, and this formation was also relying completely on Chu Feng and Taikou's channeling of power. Since they were defending and attacking, the strength of the formation itself had been decreased. As such, they were thrown into a passive state.

aoo—

Although the four huge beasts were made by a formation, it seemed as if they were truly alive. They knew their assaults were effective, so as they blocked the incoming attacks, they returned fire even more ferociously.

The four huge beasts had various abilities, and the power they possessed was at the level of a rank four Martial King. Moreover, their strengths were absolutely no weaker than Taikou's.

The most important thing though was that their power was still rising, seeming as if it would reach rank five Martial King at any moment. As such, Chu Feng and Taikou felt the pressure become even greater. If the four beasts' cultivation truly reached rank five Martial King, not to mention breaking the formation itself, Chu Feng and Taikou would likely die here today.

"These damned things. You've bound me for so long already, and you still want to continue binding me?!"

However, just at that moment, within the Four Symbols Binding Formation came a furious shout. Qiu Canfeng, who had remained silent, finally erupted.

When he roared, his power rolled out. It surged out from his body like a swirling hurricane, and it endlessly struck the Four Symbols Binding Formation.

Before such force, the seemingly indestructible Four Symbols Binding Formation instantly appeared as if it would collapse. With just an extra

touch of force, Qiu Canfeng would be able to break the formation and escape its shackles.

"Master's cultivation is..." Chu Feng and Taikou both couldn't help being shocked. At that very instant, they were finally able to feel Qiu Canfeng's aura and what realm it was at.

He was not a rank four Martial King—he was a rank five Martial King. Moreover, his aura was powerful, meaning it was likely he had reached the peak of rank five Martial King.

Chapter 933: The Imperial Door Opens

aoo—

After Qiu Canfeng made his move, the four huge beasts instantly panicked. Their powers were limited; before, they were only concentrated on suppressing Chu Feng and Taikou, which meant they drew some power from Qiu Canfeng's suppression.

That meant the power initially used to suppress Qiu Canfeng became weaker and weaker, and only then was Qiu Canfeng able to find a chance to release his aura and fight back.

The four huge beasts started to put their full strength in salvaging the poorly progressing situation, but Qiu Canfeng's power had already erupted, and their power was limited.

If they wanted to suppress Qiu Canfeng, they'd be forced to give up Chu Feng and Taikou. If they wanted to suppress Taikou, they'd be forced to give up Qiu Canfeng. Their front and back were under attack, and they were now powerless. They were fated to lose.

booom—

Finally, there was an explosion. The entire tomb started violently shaking, and layers upon layers of shock waves were akin to ferocious beasts as they swept across the air with a terrifying speed, instantly engulfing everyone and everything.

However, Chu Feng, Taikou, and Qiu Canfeng, who were at the very center of the shock waves, had joyous expressions. They couldn't help but heave a great sigh of relief.

The four huge beasts finally met their end. The fierceness of the shock waves didn't matter, as to Chu Feng and the others, they were of no threat. The Four Symbols Binding Formation was broken through, and not even sixteen hours had passed since they first started.

"Master, congratulations on being released and regaining freedom." Chu Feng cheerfully bowed and clasped his fists towards Qiu Canfeng, as it

was his duty as disciple to do so.

"Chu Feng, rise, don't bow! I really feel too ashamed. I took you in as a disciple, but I haven't taught you anything and instead needed you to save me instead. I should be the one thanking." Qiu Canfeng quickly pulled Chu Feng up, his face full of gratitude.

"Master, don't say that! This is something I should be doing," Chu Feng said.

"Haha, I am truly fortunate to have a disciple like you!" Qiu Canfeng was full of joy and he was very pleased with Chu Feng's actions.

Amidst those emotions, he looked at Taikou, and said, "Brother Taikou, thank you."

"Right now, we are on the same side. There's no need for customary words." Taikou casually waved his hand, but after seeing such a polite attitude, he did become quite a bit friendlier.

"This feeling?" Just at that moment, Chu Feng's expression changed and complicated emotions emerged onto his face.

"Chu Feng, what is it?" asked Taikou and Qiu Canfeng as their expressions changed as well. They saw a hint of unknown fear on his face.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble—

A deep sound like the repeating crash of thunder rang out from afar. Accompanying this shocking noise was the tomb violently trembling from its gradually calming state.

Taikou and Qiu Canfeng couldn't help turning around and cast their gaze at the Imperial Door. Qiu Canfeng even waved his sleeve, releasing his rank five Martial King power, and thoroughly removed the still rampaging shock waves.

However, after the shock waves vanished, their uneasy expressions unavoidably changed greatly again.

Their worry was that sound came from the Imperial Door, and their

worry was true. At that moment, the Imperial Door, with a dazzling golden radiance and inviolable aura, slowly opened.

On the other side of the Imperial Door, there was a world that made people shocked—it was a boundless starry sky.

The Milky Way glittering with silver, the shooting stars streaking through the air, and the stars that shone with fluctuating light—all of this was so near.

When the Imperial Door spread open, there was a wide path laid out by a seven-coloured rainbow. On the sides of this wide path, there were tall and mighty statues.

They were clad in golden armour that glowed with light. Although they stood unmoving, one knew, with a mere glimpse, that these golden statues possessed intelligence. They were very powerful existences, and it was likely a single one alone held the strength to kill all three of them in an instant.

At the end of the rainbow path was a very grand city. Not only were its buildings exquisite, they were beautiful. It made the city seem like a paradise.

However, the gates to that city were closed, thus its true appearance could not be seen.

“The Imperial Door opens... this is a true Imperial Tomb!” Qiu Canfeng couldn’t help exclaiming.

“A true Imperial Tomb? Master, what do you mean?” Chu Feng asked curiously. He could feel that the inside of the Imperial Door was not simple at all.

“I will have to start from the very beginning. Imperial Tombs are a very high-level treasure. The bare minimum you must be to enter this place is to be a Martial King.

“In the Eastern Sea Region, there are a few Imperial Tomb, but the ones discovered have been ventured through already. Everything inside has also been cleanly taken.

“For example, a large portion of the Royal Armaments in the Eastern Sea Region come from the Imperial Tombs. In reality, however, there is a difference in rank even for Imperial Tombs. It’s said that only those that have an Imperial Door is a true Imperial Tomb.

“From what I’ve heard, an Imperial Door is built by a Martial Emperor. It is something that a true expert left behind.

“Outside the Imperial Door are common items, and only within the Imperial Door do true treasures exist. A legend like this has been spread throughout the Eastern Sea Region for a very long time, but there has yet to be anyone who’s seen an Imperial Tomb that encompasses an Imperial Door.

“But after coming to a place like this, I have seen it. I’ve not only seen the Imperial Door, I’ve seen a true Imperial Tomb and how powerful it is. Being locked up in this place for nearly two years is evidence of that,” Qiu Canfeng narrated with solemnness.

“Doesn’t that mean this Imperial Tomb is the strongest one in the Eastern Sea Region and the eastern continents?”

Chu Feng was even more shocked. He never would have expected this Imperial Tomb which he discovered long ago was a rank that hadn’t even been seen in the Eastern Sea Region.

“At least, in all of the ventured Imperial Tomb, this is the only one that has an Imperial Door. It has a maddening power, and similarly, a destructive might.

“It’s said that one cannot force their way into an Imperial Door—they could only enter by it opening on its own. No matter what, I would not have expected a day like today to come. Not only have I luckily seen the fabled Imperial Door, I have even seen it open. I have seen the mystical world within the Imperial Door,” Qiu Canfeng said with emotion.

“Yeah! When I heard you were locked in the Imperial Tomb, I was wondering what sort of tomb could bind someone like you. After I arrived and saw the Imperial Door, I understood everything.

“But I too would not have expected it to open after saving you.

“This vast starry world... beautiful. Truly beautiful. I really do want to enter and take a look,” Taikou said with an emotional smile as well. Moreover, there was an expression of yearning that filled his aged eyes.

Chapter 934: Unattainable

"Since there are true treasures concealed within this Imperial Door, doesn't that also mean there are true dangers concealed within this Imperial Door?" Chu Feng asked. He had experienced the might of the Imperial Door, so he knew how horrifying it was. He retained deep fear for this Imperial Door.

"The three of us aren't even qualified to walk pass the first statue. Don't even think about it. At least as of now, we cannot enter the Imperial Door." Taikou shook his head.

Although Qiu Canfeng said nothing, he shook his head in agreement. Though it was clear these two Martial Kings coveted the treasures inside, they no longer dared to advance.

"Eggy, what do you think about this?"

Chu Feng had no choice but to ask Eggy for advice. He too could feel there were huge gains to be had within the Imperial Door, but as Taikou said, there were incomparable dangers as well.

"To be honest, there are various mechanisms in the Imperial Tomb, and every Imperial Tomb laid by a Martial Emperor varies as well. Because of that, I'm not too clear on the things inside the Imperial Tomb, so I am less clear on the things regarding the Imperial Door.

"But I can feel that this Imperial Door is not simple at all. That's why I had said this Imperial Door may very well be an Imperial Armament.

"After another look today, I am even more certain," Eggy said sweetly.

"Imperial Armament? Eggy, you're saying that this Imperial Door is truly an Imperial Armament? But what's with the vast starry sky?" Chu Feng asked.

"My understanding of Imperial Tomb is limited, but I do have a decent understanding of Imperial Armaments. A true Imperial Armament is very powerful. Not only does it have an unstoppable Emperor-level Martial power, it is the creation of a powerful Immortal-cloak World Spiritist. So,

naturally, it has the ability to create an independent space.

"Therefore, this Imperial Door is definitely an Imperial Armament. It's too perfect of a match. Moreover, it is a Masterless Imperial Armament," Eggy said with certainty.

"Masterless Imperial Armament?" After hearing those three words, Chu Feng's heartbeat quickened. An indescribable feeling of elation stemmed from his heart. A Royal Armament was already so powerful, so one would not even be able to imagine the strength of an Imperial Armament. And now, there was even a Masterless Imperial Armament lain before him. To say his heart wasn't moved would be a lie.

"Chu Feng, one must consider their own strength before acting. The treasures within the Imperial Door aren't within our abilities to acquire. However, it is our luck that we've been able to discover this place," Qiu Canfeng quickly urged. He seemed to have seen Chu Feng's strong desire in his eyes, and was afraid he would do some sort of rash and fatal move.

"Chu Feng, your master is right. With your aptitude, it is greatly possible that you become a Martial Emperor in the future. Since no one's discovered this place yet, this is basically just a treasure left solely for you. As long as you have more success in cultivation, you can come back and take it any time. There's no need to be in any sort of rush," Taikou urged as well.

"Yeah yeah! These two old ones are right! The power of a Masterless Imperial Armament is limitless. It's not something you can control, nor something you can gain the approval of. It's better to work hard in cultivation and in the future, when you have a certain amount of strength, you can come back and take it. Hehe." Even Eggy spoke with a giggle.

Chu Feng couldn't help bitterly smiling at their words. He really did want to get his hands on the Imperial Armament, and he really did want to seize it for himself, but he knew very clearly that he was simply unqualified right now to wield this Imperial Armament.

However even though he knew he could not enter the Imperial Door, Chu Feng couldn't help himself. He used the Heaven's Eyes as he stood

outside the door, and carefully observed as he cast his gaze inward.

Before the Heaven's Eyes, all things showed their true form.

Yet... even though he knew the starry sky within the Imperial Door was fake, Chu Feng could see no evidence of that. The strength of the person who built everything within the Imperial Door could thus be seen.

Although Chu Feng was unable to see the essence of the thing inside the Imperial Door, Chu Feng noticed a formation engraved atop the shut city gates. Within the formation, there were three round gaps. Around those gaps were special engraved patterns.

Chu Feng recognized those patterns: one represented ice, and one represented fire. These two markings merged with each other.

The first thought that sprang into Chu Feng's mind was that the key to open the gates related to ice and fire.

Judging by the size of the gap, Chu Feng couldn't help but think of Su Rou, Su Mei, and the Azure Dragon Founder.

The size of those three gaps were the exact same as the Ice and Fire Pearls within Su Rou's and Su Mei's Body, and the Azure Dragon Founder's pearl that led to his body's immortality.

"Those three pearls are so mystical, and they have inestimable power. Perhaps it is the critical solution to opening the gates.

"However, the Ice and Fire Pearls are sealed in Little Rou's and Little Mei's body. This...

"Whatever. This Imperial Armament isn't something I can take right now anyway. With sufficiently powerful strength, there are no impossibilities. I can always think about this later in the future."

After some consideration, he had indeed learnt how far he was before he could interact with the Imperial Door. So, he didn't bother looking for annoyances and obediently left with Qiu Canfeng and Taikou.

However, before they left the Imperial Tomb completely, they covered up its last entrance together with great seriousness and detail. The reason

they did that was solely for the treasure within.

They naturally did not wish for others to discover that treasure.

Afterwards, Chu Feng and the others went to meet up with Lady Piaomiao and Qiushui Fuyan.

"Even Lady Piaomiao has come? Chu Feng, Brother Taikou, what's happened in the Eastern Sea Region?" Qiu Canfeng asked. After knowing that even Lady Piaomiao had come to the eastern continents, he had realized the severity of the present situation.

Chu Feng didn't hide anything as he carefully narrated to Qiu Canfeng everything that had happened up until now: He joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, but You Mingdeng drove him out; the conflicts between the Crippling Night Demon Sect and the Immortal Execution Archipelago; and the attack onto the Misty Peak by the Immortal Execution Archipelago's alliance as they used the excuse of Lady Piaomiao's protection.

After knowing everything that had happened—especially after knowing You Mingdeng drove Chu Feng out of the Crippling Night Demon Sect even though he had done so much for them—Qiu Canfeng gritted his teeth from anger. He was extremely furious.

However, at the same time, Qiu Canfeng was also very happy. He never would have expected his disciple could pull out the unpullable Demon Sealing Sword. One must know that he, and the three other Protectors, had attempted to draw out the Demon Sealing Sword in their struggle over the position of sect head, but they had all failed.

"Chu Feng, don't worry. Your master here will collect everything the Crippling Night Demon Sect owes you. They fear that you will affect their influence? I'll do exactly that. I'll push you onto a position they will fear," Qiu Canfeng said gravely.

"Master, do you mean?" Chu Feng asked.

"I will have you become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect," Qiu Canfeng said solemnly.

Chapter 935: Rank Seven Martial Lord

"Master..." Chu Feng was shocked. He knew he had to lay hold of the Demon Sealing Sword and command the Crippling Night Demon Sect if he wanted to save Zi Ling.

However, in reality, Chu Feng didn't want to become the head of some demon sect. Even if he pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, he felt he was unqualified. On the other hand, no matter experience or strength, his master was fully suited for that position. Moreover, Chu Feng knew Qiu Canfeng did really want this role.

Yet, right now, even Qiu Canfeng wanted Chu Feng to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That truly put him in a difficult position, because he knew Qiu Canfeng wasn't joking.

"Chu Feng, listen to me first. Before he passed away, the sect head had said no matter who it was, as long as they were able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Similarly, the only person qualified as head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect is the person who is able to wield the Demon Sealing Sword.

"Although I do wish to command the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I do not have the ability to pull it out. Even if I can subdue everyone with my strength, it will only be a submission of mouth, not of heart. That would instead be worse.

"But you are different. You're able to pull the Demon Sealing Sword out, so you are the sole person qualified to rule the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Chu Feng, I'm sure you've seen it too. Right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is in pieces. We're already no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and the Immortal Execution Archipelago will sooner or later destroy us completely if the present circumstances persist.

"If we rebuild the Crippling Night Demon Sect right now, perhaps we can put up a battle against them. Any later, when we wait until the

Immortal Execution Archipelago comes to deal with us themselves, it will be all too late," Qiu Canfeng urged when Chu Feng hesitated.

"Chu Feng, a master's order is hard to turn down. Just accept. Besides, even if you become sect head, you don't have to stay in the Eastern Sea Region. When you want to venture off to the Holy Land of Martialism, wouldn't it be fine to just have your master handle the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" Taikou urged as well.

The meaning behind his words was very simple: Chu Feng just had to wear the title of "sect head" while the person who truly controlled the Crippling Night Demon Sect remained to be Qiu Canfeng. And, Qiu Canfeng could only fairly and reasonably rule over the Crippling Night Demon Sect when Chu Feng became the sect head.

"Then... fine. Master, I will follow your instructions." With this much persuading from his master and Taikou, Chu Feng naturally couldn't refuse. Thus, he could only agree to their suggestions.

"Mm, that's how it should be." Qiu Canfeng satisfiedly smiled after Chu Feng accepted. As he spoke, he handed a Cosmos Sack to Chu Feng and said, "This is what I promised you before. Although it's less than Lady Piaomiao's Pearl of Immortal Inheritance, it will more or less help you. Your chances of victory when facing that brat from the Holy Land of Martialism will also increase a bit."

"Thank you, Master." Chu Feng could not hide his grin when he received the Cosmos Sack. It was filled with cultivation resources, and they were not even ordinary cultivation resources. The amount was so staggering it made one dumbfounded.

These resources were very special. To a normal person, it would prove greatly difficult if they wanted to refine them. There were even some things in there that normal people simply could not refine, yet Chu Feng could, even within a short period of time.

If he refined so many cultivation resources, he would not merely become a rank six Martial Lord. Perhaps Chu Feng could make continuous breakthroughs and become a rank seven Martial Lord.

Moreover, other than large amounts of cultivation resources, Chu Feng also discovered something that made him excited within the Cosmos Sack—it was a Spirit Formation. A mystical creature was sealed within the Spirit Formation.

It seemed like a peacock, but it was something more beautiful, more overbearing, and more ferocious.

It was a vermilion bird. Very evidently, this was the final Secret Skill that lay within the Imperial Tomb—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, Black Tortoise Armour Technique, and Azure Dragon Dashing Technique had been obtained. What remained was only the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

Chu Feng had a premonition that these four Secret Skills were connected. Only after successfully cultivating all of them could their true power be used. Chu Feng had awaited this day for a very long time. Finally, it had come.

After meeting up with Lady Piaomiao and the others, they didn't leave immediately because Chu Feng prepared to restart their journey only after refining the cultivation resources and cultivating the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

After all, Chu Feng had an important mission this time by returning to the Eastern Sea Region. No matter becoming the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or attacking the Misty Peak, he required even more powerful strength. He had to first raise his power.

He went to work immediately. On the day they reunited, he found a peaceful area, went in seclusion, and started refining the resources he received from Qiu Canfeng.

There were many resources, and they were very special as well. Thus, they were very difficult to refine. However, to Chu Feng, it was a very simple task, even simpler than eating and drinking. As a result, after less than half a day, Chu Feng had finished.

Moreover, as Chu Feng expected, he had truly made continuous breakthroughs in cultivation after refining all of those resources—from rank five Martial Lord, he became a rank seven Martial Lord.

Back then, Chu Feng was relying on the power of the Divine Lightning to become a rank five Martial Lord. So, he himself didn't really know the immensity of cultivation resources required to make a breakthrough.

However, he knew it was definitely a horrifying amount. When he truly became a rank seven Martial Lord after refining all of those cultivation resources, Chu Feng felt surprised, and excited.

He could feel that he was now not only just a rank seven Martial Lord—there was still extremely strong power that accumulated within his dantian. Right now, he was likely at the peak of rank seven Martial Lord. He was only a step away from being a rank eight Martial Lord.

Chu Feng had to admit that the cultivation resources within the Imperial Tomb were indeed extraordinary. They even surpassed his imagination.

"Haha, how impressive! Chu Feng, do you see this? This is your strength. As long as you have sufficient cultivation resources, your rate of cultivation improvement is absolutely terrifying! In this world, I doubt there's anyone who can compare to you.

"The amount of cultivation resources in the Eastern Sea Region is limited. However, when you reach the Holy Land of Martialism in the future, the cultivation resources at that place will definitely be abundant. After all, that's a place with Martial Emperors.

"At that place, although experts are as common as clouds, you are a person who becomes strong when you meet a strong person. You will be like a fish in water. Right now, you are a rank seven Martial Lord, and you're just a step away from being a rank eight Martial Lord. But I can already see the day that you become a Martial King.

"No, your cultivation will not just be limited to Martial King—Martial Emperor. Sooner or later, you will become a Martial Emperor. It's not even an impossibility that you become an existence that surpasses

Martial Emperors!" Eggy was actually even more excited than Chu Feng when she felt his present cultivation.

On his journey of cultivation, Eggy had experienced the very same troubles Chu Feng had faced. She had personally watched as Chu Feng, from a little outer sect disciple of the Azure Dragon School, a trash with cultivation in the Spirit realm, slowly develop to his present state. She knew Chu Feng hadn't done this easily, but at the same time, she knew how huge of a potential was concealed within Chu Feng.

She looked very forward, with Chu Feng, to stepping onto a stage much vaster, and stepping onto a journey much more perilous.

Chapter 936: Vermilion Bird Revival Technique

“Mm, yeah! Although remnants from the Ancient Era and even complete products like the Misty Peak remain in the Eastern Sea Region, there’s no one who can expose every single part of the Misty Peak.

“As for the areas that can be opened up, everything inside has already been cleanly looted. The opportunities I have in this place will always be limited, just as how I reached a dead end in growth in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

“As for the Holy Land of Martialism, it is filled with the unknown, and it is filled with even more dangers. However, at the same time, I’ll definitely have a greater chance in finding treasures.

“I truly want to see the strength of a legendary Martial Emperor as well. I wonder if they’re truly like gods?” Chu Feng not only wore a joyful and prideful expression, he also wore a confident smile.

The Divine Lightning required a vast amount of cultivation resources, which limited his aptitude and slowed his rate of improvement. However, as Eggy said, Chu Feng’s cultivation speed would be astounding when there was a sufficient amount of resources.

He lacked cultivation resources. He lacked the opportunities to procure more cultivation resources; however, in the Holy Land of Martialism, there were definitely many of those opportunities, but they were just hidden from sight.

He firmly believed he would become powerful. There would be one day where he’d be able to hold control of the world he once looked up to, and the power to defy heaven itself.

Martial Emperor? He knew he would reach that realm one day, but even Martial Emperor wasn’t his final stop.

“It’s time to ask this senior to appear.” After a sigh, Chu Feng flipped his palm. He brought out the formation that sealed the Vermilion Bird

Revival Technique and broke it.

aooo— A mellifluous cry rang out immediately, and a strand of red light simultaneously shot out of Chu Feng's hand. It became an enormous creature which appeared before Chu Feng—it was the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

"No wonder those guys gave their approval. You brat, you're indeed quite extraordinary. Although the junk resources Qing Xuantian left behind aren't anything good, it's not as if normal people can refine them. You have potential." The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique gazed at Chu Feng with its beautiful eyes, and nodded with quite some satisfaction.

"Qing Xuantian?" Chu Feng's heart was shaken upon hearing that name. He knew of Qing Xuantian—ten thousand years ago, he was an outstanding genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces.

The legends said the Imperial Tomb was Qing Xuantian's tomb. But, after all, a legend was only a legend; there was no way to verify the facts. At present, however, since the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique had spoken such words it meant the legends were likely true.

"Mm? Brat, you know Qing Xuantian?" asked the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique with a bit of surprise.

"Of course I do! Senior Qing Xuantian is the number one genius in the continent of the Nine Provinces. His accomplishments have been spread down for ten thousand years, and he's a legend in the continent of the Nine Provinces!" Chu Feng replied truthfully.

"Haha, time truly flows fast! Ten thousand years felt just like a blink. Has that Qing Xuantian become a legend already?

"However, he is worthy of the title of 'legend'. I just wonder how his successors will feel if they know he's become a legend already..."

The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique's expression suddenly turned sentimental as it said in a low voice, "It's been ten thousand years, but he hasn't returned yet. Has he already..."

"Senior, does that mean Senior Qing Xuantian hasn't died yet?"

Chu Feng felt a bit shocked. There were many legends surrounding Qing Xuantian. Of those, the most reasonable one was he had died already and the Imperial Tomb was his tomb. But, from what the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said just now, he hadn't died yet. Or, at least, there was such a possibility.

"Qing Xuantian's dead? Who said that? How did he die?" But when it heard Chu Feng's words that implied Qing Xuantian's death, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique suddenly became very agitated. Surprising Chu Feng, it not only gave no reply, it fiercely questioned him.

"This... This is only a legend..." Chu Feng hurriedly explained, and told everything he knew to it.

"Rumours and the sort are fake. Back then, he had indeed built some sites and had the four of us wait in there, but they weren't Imperial Tombs. They were just simple sites." The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique heaved a deep relieved sigh. It could be seen that it was very concerned with Qing Xuantian's life.

"Senior, do you mean Senior Qing Xuantian left this place? And after ten thousand years, he's still alive?" Chu Feng asked in a probing manner. The life of a human was limited. Although one could prolong their life through special techniques, ten thousand years was really too much time. If one were able to, not only were extraordinary methods required, it also demanded an overpowering degree of strength.

"Hoh, it's merely been ten thousand years. You think he would die of age? No person can kill a man like him. His only true threat was himself," the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said proudly.

Chu Feng seemed to roughly understand Qing Xuantian was in fact an impressive existence. Otherwise, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique wouldn't have said such words and shown such pride.

Deducing from its words before, Chu Feng knew that even the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique itself wasn't certain whether Qing Xuantian was alive or not.

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng continued probing, "Senior, then where did

Senior Qing Xuantian go? Could it be the Holy Land of Martialism?"

"Holy Land of Martialism? Hoh..." The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique disdainfully smiled, and seemed as if it wanted to say something. But very soon, its face darkened and as it glared at Chu Feng, it said, "You brat, why are you asking so many questions? There are some things you shouldn't ask."

"Senior, Senior Qing Xuantian is the pride of the continent of the Nine Provinces, and I do really admire and respect him. So, I want to learn more about his achievements. Please, show me some kindness and tell me a few more things about him," Chu Feng said as he smiled.

He knew the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique possessed intelligence. However, if it were to grant Chu Feng its power, it would lose its ability to speak. So, Chu Feng had to take this chance to first ask what he wanted to know.

"You give me less of that! Do you think I'd be tricked so easily?" But the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was an old cunning fox. It instantly saw through Chu Feng's ploy. It knew Chu Feng didn't really adore Qing Xuantian; he was just speaking flattering words.

Chu Feng could only giggle foolishly and didn't bothering defending his antics. However, he used his pair of innocent eyes to look at the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique, hoping it could show some generosity and tell him a bit more.

"Ahh... You seem so curious and look like you know absolutely nothing. Did those three old guys tell you nothing?" the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique asked.

"They didn't. Senior Azure Dragon, White Tiger, and Black Tortoise didn't say anything to me. If it weren't for you, I wouldn't even be certain the Imperial Tomb was built by Qing Xuantian."

Chu Feng quickly nodded. He could see that the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique prepared to speak. He also had a premonition it'd be something extremely important.

“Those three old bastards are truly damnable. You’re lazy to speak, so push everything onto me?! I’ll be sure to return this favour!”

The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique muttered to itself, then carefully examined Chu Feng from head to toe before seriously speaking.

“Brat, I must congratulate you!”

Chapter 937: Successor

"Congratulate? Senior, what do you mean?" Chu Feng asked confusedly.

"You are very lucky—you have a chance to become Qing Xuantian's successor! You tell me, should I congratulate you?" said the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

"A chance?" Chu Feng was still puzzled.

"Heh, didn't you see it? That Imperial Door is an Imperial Armament! If you can get your hands on that Imperial Armament, it's equal to receiving half of Qing Xuantian's inheritance. That Imperial Armament is a concentration of Qing Xuantian's painstaking efforts! It is a very impressive Imperial Armament," the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said.

Chu Feng understood what it meant. Since Qing Xuantian had spent so much work on the Imperial Armament, wouldn't it mean the one to receive Qing Xuantian's inheritance was who got their hands on it?

As for the "opportunity" the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique spoke of, it was because Chu Feng only had a chance to acquire the Imperial Armament. Whether he could truly obtain it depended on Chu Feng himself.

"Senior, that Imperial Armament is indeed very impressive; I have seen it. However, I just don't understand why you said it represented only half of Senior Qing Xuantian's inheritance. Where is the other half of the inheritance then?" Chu Feng said astutely.

"Oh? You're quite sharp. I didn't think you would notice! Haha." The Vermilion Bird Revival Technique laughed, and his impression of Chu Feng couldn't help but change. Then, he said, "Back then, Qing Xuantian built these sites in the continent of the Nine Provinces because he feared he wouldn't be able to return one day, and thus his work would have been for naught. As such, he left behind two very important things in the continent of the Nine Provinces, hoping that one day there would be a fated person who could receive his inheritance.

“One of those two is the Imperial Armament he forged with great effort and the usage of all sorts of oddities. The other are the four Holy Beasts that had followed him for many years as he set out in an expedition in the world: the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Tortoise.”

“The other half are the four of you seniors? But didn’t they already grant their power to me?” Chu Feng was a bit shocked. He truly didn’t expect the four Secret Skills to be the other half of the inheritance.

Although Secret Skills were powerful, they were only Secret Skills. How could they be even discussed on the same level as Imperial Armaments?

“Could it be that… you aren’t Secret Skills?” But after a quick thought, Chu Feng came to a conclusion. He noticed that the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique didn’t call itself a Secret Skills, but instead a Holy Beast.

“Hahaha, you are indeed sharp. Brat, you’re right.

“The four of us aren’t any Secret Skills. That’s just a cover that conceals our true identity.

“The four of us were born with Qing Xuantian. We originally existed together with him, but with special techniques, he created physical bodies of ourselves and separated us from him, making us into four independent living organisms.

“But back then, in the Holy Land of Martialism, Qing Xuantian had met a great enemy. In order to protect him, the four of us were willing to sacrifice ourselves to seal that thing.

“He wasn’t willing to let us throw our lives away, so with a special method, he stripped away our consciousness and nature from our physical bodies, then turned us into Secret Skills so we could live eternally.

“However, as long as our spirits can merge back into our physical bodies, we can revive. So, if you can bring us four back to life, we will be loyal to you as how we were loyal to Qing Xuantian. That way, you would

have received the other half of Qing Xuantian's inheritance," the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique said.

"So the four of you seniors weren't simple Secret Skills, but instead four Holy Beasts! Seniors, if there's truly a method of revival, I will do my best to accomplish that goal."

Chu Feng secretly rejoiced. He could feel that the four Holy Beasts were not simple at all. If they could truly be brought back to life, then that would be a huge helping hand to him.

"Less with this 'senior' here and 'senior' there. You are the only person all four of us approved of in nearly ten thousand years. However, approving of you is one thing. It does not mean we've submitted to you.

"We promised Qing Xuantian we would find a successor for him. So, we will do our duties until the very end. However, before you conquer that Imperial Armament, we will not advise you on anything, nor will we tell you the location of our sealed our physical bodies.

"However, if you do acquire the Imperial Armament, we will tell you everything. Those are things people in the Holy Land of Martialism coveted to know!"

As he spoke, its body turned illusory. It was preparing to merge into Chu Feng's body, and preparing to grant him its power.

"Senior, please wait! At least, you have to tell me how I can get that Imperial Armament, right? Otherwise, if it kills me, wouldn't you have waited ten thousand years for nothing?" Chu Feng hurriedly asked. It didn't matter how powerful this Vermilion Bird Revival Technique was before. Right now, it was only a Secret Skills. Even though it had its own intelligence, it would lose its ability to speak if it were to enter Chu Feng's body. None of Chu Feng's questions could be replied then.

"If you want to know, then get your hands on the Imperial Armament first. Afterwards, we will resonate with it, and then we can communicate with you at any moment.

"However, if you fail and it kills you, that means you aren't qualified to

receive Qing Xuantian's inheritance. We've already waited for ten thousand years. We don't mind waiting a bit longer."

It had then become a strand of red light and burrowed itself into Chu Feng's forehead.

He felt a sharp pain to his head before a bundle of information appeared in his mind. He also gained an extra power—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

It was a technique to strengthen his physical body, and also a technique to heal not only himself, but others as well.

If mastered, the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique would take but an instant to repair broken limbs. It was akin to having an imperishable body, so that was why it had such a name.

"As I thought, after gathering these four Secret Skills... this is truly extraordinary! If I cast them all at the same time, there will be a surprising effect." The corners of Chu Feng's mouth curled up to form a pleasant smile—one that showed just a slight surprise.

It was no longer as simple as receiving the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique. What he would receive soon was Qing Xuantian's inheritance.

Chu Feng looked very forward to grasping the Imperial Armament. Simultaneously, he looked very forward to knowing where Qing Xuantian had gone. He even wanted to know about the existence that nearly took away Qing Xuantian's life, one that could only be sealed after the sacrifice of the four Holy Beasts.

The Holy Land of Martialism—he knew Qing Xuantian had gone there a long time ago. With his nature, perhaps he had already left many shocking achievements in that land.

As for Chu Feng, he would soon enter that world as well. He was going to step onto the same journey, but he was going to create an entirely different world.

But before all that, he had to first defeat Jiang Qisha. He had to eradicate the Immortal Execution Archipelago. He had to take back the

Misty Peak, or else those were all useless thoughts.

Chu Feng tidied up his clothes, and left. He went to meet up with Lady Piaomiao and the others, preparing to return to the Eastern Sea Region.

Chapter 938: Selecting a Sect Head

Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Qiu Canfeng, and Taikou were together to discuss the countermeasures against Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha.

"It's not easy to refine any of the Imperial Tomb's cultivation resources. Although Chu Feng said it was sufficient to give him a day, is it truly possible to refine so many in such a short time?"

Qiu Canfeng was a bit worried. He knew of the volatile power these resources contained. Many of them were so dangerous even he didn't dare to refine them.

"Qiu Canfeng, it seems that you really don't know anything about your disciple! Chu Feng is the most monstrous young man I have ever seen in my entire life. He even refined the Natural Oddity no one dared to touch in the Burning Heaven Church. What do you think he can't refine?" Lady Piaomiao said with a faint smile.

"Natural Oddity?" Qiu Canfeng's expression changed and a hint of shock emerged in his eyes. He of course knew of Natural Oddities, but he didn't know there was also a Natural Oddity within the Burning Heaven Church. However, based on her words just now, he could tell that the Natural Oddity was not an ordinary one.

"Master, Senior Piaomiao, Senior Taikou, Sister Fuyan." A joyful call— Chu Feng had returned.

"Chu Feng, you've made a breakthrough?"

"You continuously made two levels of breakthroughs, and became a rank seven Martial Lord?"

All of them were amazed. They already knew Chu Feng was very freakish, but didn't expect him to be this freakish. When typical people cultivated in seclusion, they usually took several days, several months, even several years.

But Chu Feng had just used less than half a day, which was even

quicker than his own initial projection. That truly surpassed their expectations.

"Chu Feng, you've refined all of it?" Qiu Canfeng asked with shock.

"Mm, I refined all of it. I've also gotten the Secret Skills." Chu Feng smiled as he nodded.

"Haha, good, good! I, Qiu Canfeng, have truly received an excellent disciple!" Qiu Canfeng couldn't even stop grinning after confirming what had happened. There was praise and pleased expressions within his eyes.

"It's wonderful that it's a success! Chu Feng, we've already planned out how to deal with Murong Mingtian and the others. Come and look through it as well."

Lady Piaomiao completely and detailedly narrated their plan. Without a speck of doubt, Chu Feng was the pivotal point that decided their victory and defeat.

First, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng were to go to the Depraved Ravine and acquire the Demon Sealing Sword. Then, they were to think of a way to gather the ones who held some position in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Finally, Qiu Canfeng would use his strength of a rank five Martial King to directly push Chu Feng into the role of sect head.

As for Qiushui Fuyan, she would go find the First Immortal with Taikou. With the condition of helping Ya Fei restore her physical body, they would have the First Immortal help them. Of course, they wouldn't easily trust him. So, Lady Piaomiao prepared a special poison.

They would have him consume this poison. That way, they'd have shackles over both his and Ya Fei's life. This ensured he wouldn't dare play any tricks on them.

If everything went successfully, they would send the army to the Misty Peak.

Of course, since the Immortal Execution Archipelago was so powerful, even the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect was no match for it. Thus, they wouldn't have a head-on confrontation. They would only use various

methods to throw the Immortal Execution Archipelago into chaos, opening an opportunity for Chu Feng to find the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

This method was very simple—there was a formation no one knew of deep within the Misty Peak's sea. Lady Piaomiao had constructed that formation over several hundred years with the Misty Peak's resources.

Originally, that formation was used for guarding the Misty Peak. However, since it was incomplete, a single person could not activate it—there was a minimum requirement of several tens of thousands of people, even millions of people. The more people there were, the stronger the power. This formation would definitely catch Murong Mingtian and the others off guard, thus creating havoc.

At that time, Chu Feng could follow the First Immortal and go forth to the stone tablet and cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Then, he would be able to refine the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance and receive Lady Piaomiao's cultivation—rank four Martial King.

Although it was only rank four Martial King, it depended on who possessed such cultivation. If Chu Feng were a rank four Martial King, his fighting strength would absolutely be much more terrifying than the former Lady Piaomiao, a rank six Martial King. In addition to the power of the Demon Sealing Sword, Jiang Qisha might not even be able to defeat Chu Feng if he wielded the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

Every single thing was done for Chu Feng. The outcome of this depended solely on him.

If Chu Feng succeeded, then they could remove a great enemy and take back everything. If Chu Feng failed, then the entire Crippling Night Demon Sect who participated in this would die along with him.

As Lady Piaomiao said before: this was a gamble. A "make or break" gamble, one where failure was not an option.

"The greater the power, the greater the responsibility. Chu Feng, this'll depend on you alone." Lady Piaomiao spread open her palm, and gave

Chu Feng the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance which contained her cultivation attainments over several hundred years.

"Senior, don't worry. Although I do not dare to guarantee this will succeed, I will do everything within my abilities," Chu Feng swore after receiving the Pearl of Immortal Inheritance.

Chu Feng and the others directly departed afterwards. As for Lady Piaomiao, she remained here.

She stood atop a peak, and watched the four people who disappeared instantly in the horizon. Her expression started changing when she couldn't see them anymore. Its initial calmness existed no longer. Replacing it were endless worry and uneasiness.

No one was certain of this battle's outcome. No one knew who would live and who would die. However, she knew if Taikou and Qiushui Fuyan were to die, she would not live on.

It was dead silent on their journey...

After they all reached the Eastern Sea Region, they went their own ways.

Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng hurried to the Depraved Ravine. Everything went according to their expectations, but when they arrived, they couldn't help being shocked.

They discovered with astonishment that the Spirit Formation which sealed the Depraved Ravine had been deactivated. Outside the Depraved Ravine was a large number of people. There were at least several millions, perhaps near ten million.

Moreover, there was some similarity between them—they wore the same clothing. They also had outstanding cultivation; these were the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. They had gathered together.

Although this was not the formation back at the Crippling Night Demon Sect's peak era—it was even less than half of back then—after being interspersed about the Eastern Sea Region for so many years, it was really not easy to have gathered so many members.

“It seems that the news of the invaded Misty Peak has been known. Those three old things are impatient now. That’s probably why they showed up at the same time and summoned all of them.”

Qiu Canfeng faintly smiled. With his and Chu Feng’s hearing strength, there was no need to ask anyone as they eavesdropped a few things from the ocean of people underneath.

The news had been spread: the Immortal Execution Archipelago allying with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and seizing the Misty Peak, and the unknown conditions of Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Chu Feng, and the others.

The Crippling Night Demon Sect, as the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s archenemy, were aware of this peril.

The reason so many members appeared in the Depraved Ravine was due to the summon from You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng.

As for the goal of summoning the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army, it was to choose a new sect head!

Chapter 939: Perfect Royal Armament

You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng knew the present situation was not assuring.

They, as the Three Protectors, knew very well if they kept the Crippling Night Demon Sect split up, only one result awaited them—eradication.

If they remained ununited, judging by the Immortal Execution Archipelago's nature, they wouldn't accept Crippling Night Demon Sect's surrender. They would only annihilate them.

Therefore, they had to quickly reorganize the Crippling Night Demon Sect and gather the members scattered across the Eastern Sea Region. No matter if they were to live or die, or battle or escape, they were going to do it together.

However, the exact reason why the Crippling Night Demon Sect had split into pieces was because they were akin to a group of dragons that lacked a leader. Even amongst the Three Protectors, none of them were willing to obey each other. It wasn't that easy to choose a sect head.

In reality, there were many people who didn't know how they prepared to come to a conclusion, but Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng did. This was a chance provided to them.

"Master, it seems that we can use their own plan against them," Chu Feng said smilingly.

"Mm. Disguise yourself. Let's take a look at this, though there's no need to rashly do anything. Let me see what these three old things are planning." Qiu Canfeng nodded his head as he smiled as well.

Just like that, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng, the pair of master and disciple, snuck into the vast ocean of people after transforming into ordinary people. They avoided showing themselves.

They headed directly into the Depraved Ravine's underground palace. They knew the selection of sect head was going to be carried out in the palace that held the Demon Sealing Sword.

On their way, the two of them discovered that the underground palace had been refurbished. Although it hadn't become all that exquisite, it was quite a bit wider, even several times wider than before. This was most definitely to accommodate for the larger number of people.

One could tell the Three Protectors had spent quite some work and time for today.

But in spite of their efforts, it was still very crowded. There were already a million people squished within the underground palace. By some rough estimations, they found out there was truly quite a few members gathered here today. In addition to those above ground, there were already over ten million people present.

This was evidence of the loyalty the members held towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Their sect had split up, and they scattered throughout the world, lacking any superiors to rely on. However, when the sect's order was sent, they still hurried over. Risking their lives, disregarding sufferings, and preparing to do all they could for the sect.

Finally, Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng arrived within the Demon Sealing Sword's palace. It was reconstructed to become even bigger—right now, there were several hundred thousands of people within the palace. Its vastness could thus be imagined.

However, only those who held some position within the sect could enter that palace. There were even guards at the entrance to check identities. Ordinary members were not allowed entry.

Though it might seem unreasonable on the surface, it was understandable after some thought. This was, after all, the place a sect head was to be chosen. It wouldn't matter how big this palace became, since there was always a limit. It could not accommodate all the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

With this checkpoint, it secluded many of those who wished to personally witness the progress of the sect head selection. But that proved no difficult for Chu Feng and Qiu Canfeng as with a bit of trickery, they

snuck in.

"Chu Feng, go ahead. I can just wait here," Qiu Canfeng said via mental messaging.

"Mm." Chu Feng knew Qiu Canfeng didn't want to reveal himself yet. So, he alone forced himself into the center of the palace from the very outskirts of the crowd.

The palace was quite enormous, but it was already crammed with people. As such, when a young man like Chu Feng squeezed himself forth so shamelessly as he pushed others aside, that invoked quite a few people's displeasure. There were many curses and grudgeful words thrown about as Chu Feng advanced.

But as if he heard nothing, he continued these blatant actions.

Finally, he arrived at the forefront of the observers after passing through the crowd. At that moment, several familiar people also appeared within his line of sight.

Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming were all there. They were conversing in secret, and chatting quite merrily. But, one could still tell there seemed to be something that pressured them heavily.

Other than the three of them, there were many others who he knew of: the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Water King, Fire King, Earth King... In reality, all five Elemental Kings were present.

Of the five Elemental Kings, the strongest one was the Gold King—he was a rank three Martial King.

Of course, the ones with the greatest statuses, who possessed the commanding power to call so many members here, were of course the Three Protectors.

You Mingdeng—Chu Feng had seen him before. He naturally recognized this old bastard who held animosity towards him.

He was sitting on a chair made out of Spirit Formations. He appeared to be quite at ease, and by his side were two other people sitting as well.

One was a woman who had a bewitching figure and heavy makeup, while her body exuded an odd fragrance. She looked middle-aged, but everyone knew she was an old granny who'd lived for nearly two hundred years.

The other one was a white-haired old man who wore simple but fitting cloth clothing. He appeared quite ordinary, but within his gentle eyes was an indescribable fierceness. It let people know he was no kind pushover.

Needless to say, those two were the two other Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—respectively Xuan Xiaochao's master, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Fengming's master, Fu Liansheng.

Both of their cultivation was really high—they were the same as You Mingdeng, rank four Martial Kings. Their lips were moving slightly at that moment, but they let out no sound. They were clearly using mental messages for some sort of discussion.

However, rather than concentrating on these famous people, Chu Feng's gaze was focused more on the center of the palace, because there was one thing that lay there: a large black sword with an overbearing aura—it was the Royal Armament, the Demon Sealing Sword.

Chu Feng was now a person who possessed a Royal Armament. So, when he had a second glance at this Demon Sealing Sword, he could feel its power. This Royal Armament indeed deserved to be called the King of Royal Armaments. An ordinary one was truly no match for the power this sword contained.

"The quality of this Royal Armament is definitely the highest possible. If I'm not mistaken, the person who made it is unlikely a Martial King, but a Martial Emperor. Only a Royal Armament made by a Martial Emperor can hold such quality," Eggy said.

"A Royal Armament forged by a Martial Emperor, huh? That does make sense. The difference in strength between a Martial King and Martial Emperor is like the heaven and earth. Their comprehension in cultivation is on a completely different level.

"Although they are both creating Royal Armaments, there's an

enormous disparity in quality. If a Martial King's Royal Armament more or less has imperfections, then a Martial Emperor's Royal Armament will be absolutely perfect." Chu Feng nodded, agreeing with Eggy.

Chapter 940: Shameless You Mingdeng

Royal Armaments weren't objects ordinary Martial Kings could create. They demanded not only cultivation of a Martial King, but also the realm of a Royal-cloak World Spiritist.

This was why there was a limited number of Royal Armaments despite there being quite a few Martial Kings—there was not a single Royal-cloak World Spiritist in the Eastern Sea Region.

Imperial Armaments were the same. Not just any Martial Emperor could create Imperial Armaments, because there was still the second requirement: being an Immortal-cloak World Spiritist.

It was a fairly normal occurrence for a Martial Emperor to forge a Royal Armament; however, undoubtedly, a Royal Armament that came from a Royal-cloak Martial Emperor would have superior quality to one that came from a Royal-cloak Martial King. As for this Demon Sealing Sword, it likely came from a Martial Emperor.

"Chu Feng, the formation that surrounds the Demon Sealing Sword seems to be changed," Eggy said.

Upon a careful inspection, Chu Feng found that the formation surrounding the Demon Sealing Sword had indeed changed. There were layers of closely connected circles, and there were ten layers in total. The pressure within every layer was different.

"They didn't switch the formation; they just changed something from the original one. It must be the work of those Protectors, but I have no clue what they're preparing to do," Chu Feng said.

"Heh, these foolish clowns still dare to select a sect head! Don't they know the person who's fulfilled all requirements is here already?" Eggy said as she giggled. The person she spoke of was naturally Chu Feng.

"No matter. We still have time anyway, so we can watch the show they put up." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and prepared himself for a good spectacle.

Back then, the reason You Mingdeng treated him so poorly was solely because he feared Chu Feng's potential. He, You Mingdeng, feared his position would be affected if Chu Feng continued staying in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He was afraid of Chu Feng's ever increasing fame, which would push him to become the sect head eventually.

But today, when You Mingdeng plotted to rise to the role of sect head, Chu Feng was already all prepared. No matter what You Mingdeng did, Chu Feng would make all his plans fall flat, because this position was Chu Feng's.

"Everyone, I'm extremely grateful to all of you for returning to the Crippling Night Demon Sect from faraway places and peaceful established lives.

"I had thought, with us three old bones' rallying power, there'd definitely be quite a few brothers who would be willing to rejoin the Crippling Night Demon Sect and recreate our dominion.

"I had never, however, expected it to be this powerful. After being separated for so many years, just some words from us recalled millions of brothers. This has truly exceeded my imaginations.

"As I feel joy, I must say that I also feel grateful. I thank you all—I thank you, my brothers. If Sect Head is up in heaven, he must also feel very relieved."

You Mingdeng stood up, and spoke with a solemn and appreciative tone. He even deeply bowed to the Crippling Night Demon Sect's members in an expression of his gratitude.

"Brothers! Do you remember our Crippling Night Demon Sect's mantra? Do you remember the declarations when we joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" shouted someone amongst the crowd.

"I share my lives with the Crippling Night Demon Sect! I share my dignity with the Crippling Night Demon Sect! When the sect is honoured, I am honoured! When the sect is shamed, I am shamed! When the sect lives, I live! When the sect dies, I die!"

The first shout was the catalyst for the response of the entire crowd. The ones within the palace were the first to shout, then the ones within the tunnel, then, in the end, everyone—over ten million members—who gathered in the Depraved Ravine shouted in unison.

"WHEN THE SECT LIVES, I LIVE. WHEN THE SECT DIES, I DIE!"

The Crippling Night Demon Sect's declaration was even more deafening than thunder. It not only shook the lands, it shook everyone's heart.

"Good! My brothers are indeed all courageous men! You are indeed dragons amongst men!

"However, a crowd of dragons cannot lack a leader—the Crippling Night Demon Sect is the same.

"If it weren't for a lack of leadership in so many years, we wouldn't have allowed that Immortal Execution Archipelago to rise in power, nor would we have allowed them to disgrace us like this.

"Right now, we are facing a crisis. We cannot sit and await death. We must engage in a counterattack, but before doing so we must find a suitable leader.

"Today, we have asked all of you to assemble here just for this. I'm sure there's a fitting leader in everyone's hearts right now.

"And if I'm not mistaken, many of you wish for the leader to arise from us Four Protector, and of those people, half of them certainly hope that Qiu Canfeng enters that role.

"That's right. At this moment, the person most qualified to become sect head is undoubtedly Big Brother Qiu Canfeng. He is the leader of the Four Protectors, but sadly, Big Brother Qiu Canfeng has disappeared for nearly two years. I haven't even heard anything from him as of yet.

"Even though the Crippling Night Demon Sect is about to begin fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he hasn't appeared yet. However, from what I know of him, he is absolutely not a person who ignores such matters. If he knows we will soon battle, he would definitely stand out for us, and even be the first to do so.

“But now, he hasn’t. This doesn’t make sense. I have even searched through his residence but I saw no sign of him. No one knows where he’s gone.

“There is no reason for Big Brother Qiu Canfeng to disappear. So, there is only one explanation—he has been met with misfortune, and has been struck by the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s venomous hands,” You Mingdeng said quite sorrowfully.

“What? Great Protector Qiu Canfeng...” Everyone was astonished. They found great difficulty in accepting this as an indescribable sadness and shock spread throughout the crowd.

“He is truly shameless. For his own benefit, he says my master is dead!” Chu Feng cursed in his heart. He, at last, had seen signs of You Mingdeng’s shamelessness.

“Although it is only a guess, it is likely true. Although Big Brother Qiu Canfeng is powerful, I’m sure you all know that the Immortal Execution Archipelago has an old monster—Murong Mingtian.

“Murong Mingtian is able to even defeat Lady Piaomiao, and I’m afraid only the sect head, if he were alive, could stand a chance against him. Even if Big Brother Qiu Canfeng were to fight him, he would likely be defeated.”

Just at that moment, Xue Xiyue also spoke. Even her eyes were a bit red—she had a face of fake sadness.

“Avenge Great Protector, avenge Great Protector!

“A debt of blood must be paid in blood! A debt of blood must be paid in blood!” shouted someone loudly. Quickly following that were others who also raised their fists and yelled. Their voices were like thunder, every single word loud and clear. One could thus see that Qiu Canfeng held a very high position in all of their hearts, his position even surpassing the other three Protectors combined.

Chapter 941: Choosing the Sect Head

“Everyone, be calm! Revenge must be exacted, but before that, we must still decide on a sect head.

“I’m sure everyone must feel that I, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng are the most fitting to lead the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Actually, from the start, our thoughts were the same.

“However, we’re old. Even if one of us does become sect head, how many years could we last for?

“So, after careful discussion, we decided to abandon this position and instead choose to develop a substitute sect head from an entirely new generation,” You Mingdeng said.

“What? Choose a substitute sect head?”

“But other than the Three Protectors, who else is qualified to hold this position?

“The Five Elemental Kings? No, that’s not right. They too are not young, so if the Three Protectors aren’t going to strive for that position, then they wouldn’t either!”

You Mingdeng’s words made the crowd very shocked. They started discussing amongst themselves, and some people even started panicking. They felt the Three Protectors were the most suitable, but if they refused this position, then there would be no one else who would be suitable.

“Hoh. Let me see what sort of tricks you are playing.”

Chu Feng on the other hand was very calm. He had already understood You Mingdeng’s nature. He was not a person who’d give up power so easily. If Chu Feng was not mistaken, You Mingdeng would think of a way to seize the authority of sect head into his hands. His words regarding a substitute sect head had already stated his intentions as clear as day.

“The substitute sect head must be a young person, one that has both ability and potential.

“Of all the people in the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s younger generation, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming are the most suitable nominees. So, I first suggest them three.

“Of course, regarding this decision, we must make it absolutely fair: as long as it is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s younger generation, anyone can participate in this.

“As for the method of selection, it’s very simple. The Demon Sealing Sword is the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s most valuable treasure. When Sect Head was alive, he had left a few words behind: no matter who it is, as long as they are able to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could inherit his position and become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. The members must all listen to that person’s orders as well.

“However, the Demon Sealing Sword is too powerful. Other than Lord Sect head, there is simply no one who is qualified to grasp it. Even us three, and Big Brother Qiu Canfeng as well, were unable to pull it out.

“Right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect is facing an unprecedented danger. We must quickly select a sect head, so we have no choice but to alter Lord Sect Head’s wishes.

“We will borrow the power of the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation and lay a new formation. There are ten layers in total, and the closer one approaches the Demon Sealing Sword, the greater the pressure.

“Within the formation, whoever advances the most will become the substitute sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. That person will be developed by me, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng until he becomes a true sect head.

“Right now, the sect head selection will officially begin. Any person in the younger generation can attempt this formation.” You Mingdeng shouted.

A bit of ruckus arose immediately after he spoke. Xuan Xiaochao and the others were the publicly acclaimed geniuses of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. If a substitute sect head were to be chosen from the younger generation, then only the three of them were the most qualified.

Besides, putting aside personal strength, they even had the backup of the Three Protectors. There was truly no one who was worthy to contest against them.

As a result, those who knew their limits didn't stand out to challenge the position. However, there were always exceptions. Though most people were logical, there would always exist some fearless people, or perhaps some strong people. People like them were always brimming with confidence, and they would never submit to others.

In fact, after a few brief moments of dead silence, there were a few young people who came out.

They were all Martial Lords, and their cultivations were not weak either: the lowest was a rank three Martial Lord. Including You Tonghan and the others, there was a total of eighteen people who prepared to run for sect head.

"Not bad. Applaudable courage. Our Crippling Night Demon Sect needs exactly brave youths as yourselves."

On the surface, You Mingdeng appeared very happy towards the young people who were with his own disciple, but from his smile and squinting eyes, Chu Feng saw one word: overestimation. From the bottom of his heart, You Mingdeng looked down on those people who came forth.

"Lord Protectors, Seniors, this untalented Zhao Hu will go first." A brawny young man clasped his fists at the Three Protectors and their disciples. Then, he went straight for the formation.

hmm His steps were stable, and he was quite robust. However, in the instant he stepped into the tenth layer, his expression changed greatly as an enormous pressure fell upon him.

But he did not give up just like that. Gritting his teeth with widened eyes, he advanced forward one step at a time.

boom

"Ahh!"

Suddenly, he slipped and let out a cry. Blood sprayed straight out of his mouth, and simultaneously he lost control of his body. He shot out from the formation and flew out.

He was whizzing through the air so fast if he were to collide into something, he would receive a heavy injury.

whoosh

You Mingdeng seemed to have expected that. He waved his big sleeve, and a gentle breeze flew over, slowing the male and landing him down safely, thus avoiding any serious injuries.

“Thank you, Lord Protector, for saving me. This untalented Zhao Hu is unable to pass even one layer,” he shamefully said as he wiped the traces of blood on the corner of his mouth.

“No matter. This formation is very powerful. Being able to successfully enter already means you have great aptitude. Work hard and you will have extraordinary results,” You Mingdeng consoled with a smile. He spread open his palm, and a healing pellet flew into Zhao Hu’s hand.

“Thank you, Lord Protector.”

Zhao Hu received the pellet and thanked with a bow and a clasp of his hands. Before the gazes of the crowd, he returned.

After Zhao Hu, others continuously stepped into the formation. However, most of them were like Zhao Hu. They could not even safely pass through the tenth layer, and the one with the best result could only reach the eighth layer but was still unable to enter the seventh.

One after the other, outstanding youths were shot out by the power of the formation. When the observing crowd saw that, they finally knew of the formation’s strength, and also of the Demon Sealing Sword’s power.

Finally, everyone left with failures, leaving behind only Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

However, they were looking at each other as they wore complicated emotions on their faces. It seemed as if they didn’t want to take even a

single step. They didn't want to fight over this position of sect head.

Chapter 942: Outcome Has Been Decided

"Coughcough." You Mingdeng deeply coughed, then said in a mental message, "What are you three hesitating for? Don't you know there are so many people waiting?"

"This..." Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan were speechless. They knew You Mingdeng was forcing them in.

"Let's not make it so distant between ourselves. If we're going, let's go in together," Fu Fengming said with a faint smile.

"That's not a bad idea. Then, let us brothers enter together." Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan nodded their heads in agreement.

Afterwards, they walked together, shoulder-to-shoulder, towards the formation.

Everyone fixed their gaze on them. There were even many heartbeats that quickened.

They knew very well that the future sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect would be born from one of these three.

whoosh Xuan Xiaochao and the others advanced with large strides, and easily entered the tenth layer. That shocked everyone, because that proved how powerful their aptitudes were.

Their speed decreased slightly upon entering the ninth layer, but their expressions remained unchanging. They still, with relative ease, passed through the ninth layer and entered the eighth layer.

However, upon entering the eighth layer, not only did their speed drop, even their complexions changed. Two words could briefly represent their condition: great exertion.

In spite of that though, the three of them still successfully passed through the eighth layer, and arrived at the seventh. However, every step became difficult when they reached that layer. When they drew farther inward, perspiration drenched their foreheads.

Their breathing started turning erratic. Their complexions turned pale. They walked with so much difficulty it was as if there were several mountain peaks tied with their legs.

One step. Two steps. Ten steps. Twenty steps. They had then, finally, arrived at the border of the fifth layer.

However, all three of them stopped moving. Not a single one of them stepped forth. Instead, they looked at each other as a hint of a smile surfaced onto their faces.

As for the observer, they couldn't help but hold in their breaths. The lumps in their throats felt as large as their hearts. With such a scene occurring before their eyes, they could see that Xuan Xiaochao and the others were indeed dragons amongst men. Every single one of them had the potential to succeed the position of sect head.

However, there could only be one sect head. Since the sixth layer was already so difficult, the fifth layer was definitely the concluding layer.

"Come! Let us go together. No matter who becomes sect head, we will remain good brothers!" Fu Fengming said.

Xuan Xiaochao and You Tonghan nodded their heads. Then, a tinge of resolution flashed into their eyes. They took a large step, and entered the fifth layer simultaneously.

"Ahh!" However, just as he entered the fifth layer, Xuan Xiaochao let out a painful cry and he flew out.

whoosh Xue Xiyue frowned. She then flew up and took Xuan Xiaochao into her embrace, then landed back at her previous position.

"Ahh, you brat, why didn't you try your best?" Xue Xiyue scolded disappointedly after inspecting Xuan Xiaochao.

"I'm sorry, Master, I've embarrassed you," Xuan Xiaochao admitted his wrongs with an apologetic face.

"Ahh, whatever. You put too much emphasis on camaraderie. In the future, even if you become sect head, you won't be decisive. Rather than

letting you, it'd be better to let one of those two to become sect head so the Crippling Night Demon Sect wouldn't fall by your rule." Xue Xiyue waved her hand. Although she had quite unsightly expression, she didn't blame him too much.

Many were confused at that exchange of words, but Chu Feng saw the truth: Xuan Xiaochao had intentionally backed out. If he persevered, he could have continued, but he just didn't want to fight over this position.

Though Xuan Xiaochao had no interest, You Tonghan and Fu Fengming were clearly different. At that moment, they were gnashing their teeth and even their eyes turned blood-red. One could really imagine the immensity of the formation's pressure.

However, they weren't really desiring the position of sect head. It was just difficult to go against their masters' orders. They were struggling right now, not for themselves, but for their masters.

For their masters, who had put great effort into raising them, the two of them would not easily give up. They decided to continue until the very end.

However, one of them was fated to fall before the other, and the fifth layer was their end. With the strength they had, they could not step past the fifth layer.

"Dammit!" Fu Fengming's complexion suddenly changed. Then, a mouthful of blood sprayed out. His body trembled slightly, and he slipped. Like an arrow that had just left a bow, he shot out from the formation.

whoosh Fu Liansheng willed a soft power to emerge, which brought Fu Fengming to his side.

"Master, I have been useless. Please grant me punishment." Fu Fengming immediately knelt after landing.

"It's a fair competition, so what crime have you committed? Besides, I know that you've done your best." Fu Liansheng faintly smiled, then helped Fu Fengming up; he was quite a bit gentler than Xue Xiyue.

At that instant, You Mingdeng was elated. He knew his disciple, You

Tonghan, had won. So, he didn't care whether he held his composure or not. He said, "Han'er, you've won. There's no need to continue; come out!"

You Tonghan was completely focused on withstanding the enormous pressure. He didn't even notice Fu Fengming had lost, and he only came to his senses after hearing You Mingdeng.

whoosh After flying out of the formation, he first wiped the sweat off his forehead, then asked with a bit of doubt, "Master, I've won?"

"Han'er, you've won! You will become the Crippling Night Demon Sect's sect head," said You Mingdeng as he nodded. This ugly old thing could not even hide his grin.

You Tonghan's face also brimmed with an incomparably excited smile. He knew he had finally made his master proud.

"Lord Protector, I feel that this position of sect head cannot be decided just like this." But suddenly, someone had spoken.

Looking in the direction of the speaker, they discovered it was the head of the Ten Gold-cloak Brothers, Old Liu. He said those words just now.

"What do you mean?" There was a bit of displeasure on You Mingdeng's face.

"Lord Protector, since the substitute sect head is to be chosen from the outstanding younger generation, how could Chu Feng be excluded?

"Everyone knows that Chu Feng is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He is also a publicly acclaimed genius in the Eastern Sea Region. Even Murong Xun stands no chance against him. If I may ask, which youth in the Eastern Sea Region can defeat Chu Feng?

"Besides, Chu Feng had come up to the Demon Sealing Sword and even touched it! Lord Earth King can attest to this.

"So, although I feel the sect head can come from the younger generation, it cannot be selected without Chu Feng because that would not be fair," Old Liu fiercely said. From his attitude, one could tell he spoke bravely only because he had made his resolve. He was risking his

life to demand some fairness for Chu Feng.

Chapter 943: Chu Feng Appears

"Yeah! Why is Chu Feng left out? Even though You Tonghan is very powerful, he seems to be quite lacking when compared to Chu Feng!"

"Actually, I wanted to ask this question quite a while ago. On such an important day, why hasn't Chu Feng appeared?" Old Liu's words were like fuse as a ruckus exploded amongst the crowd. Many people started guessing the answer to that question.

"Heh, you must not know. I've heard that Chu Feng's a coward who's afraid of death! Because he fears the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he doesn't want to be affected by the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so he's already withdrawn!"

"What the hell are you talking about? I've personally seen Brother Chu Feng's glory before. How does he even resemble a person who fears death or the Immortal Execution Archipelago?

"Besides, Chu Feng had eradicated a sect in the Winter Plains for our brothers! He even killed experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago!"

"I've heard Chu Feng fought Murong Xun in the Gale Plains, and in addition to saving Xuan Xiaochao and the others, he even saved the Water King and Fire King! There are even many people who can act as witness to this!

"Chu Feng, as a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, was willing to risk his life. How could he possibly betray us because he's scared of dying? If you ask me, there's someone who's jealous of Chu Feng's abilities and intentionally forced him out!"

"Shh, you cannot say things like this! The Three Protectors intentionally nominated their own disciples to become sect head. Don't you understand what they mean by that?"

"Don't make such random conjectures! Why would the Three Protectors cast away Chu Feng? When the Immortal Execution Archipelago allied

with the Three Great Monstrous Clans and attacked the Misty Peak, Chu Feng was there. He was heavily injured on that day, and right now, no one knows whether he is alive or not. If you ask me, he's likely dead. That's why he hasn't shown up."

"Ahh, has he truly died? That would be quite a pity. I truly do want to see Chu Feng's glory! If Chu Feng stepped into that formation, he wouldn't have been stopped at just the fifth layer, right?"

Everyone was talking about Chu Feng amidst their discussions. There were even many who felt Chu Feng was treated unfairly by lacking a chance and protested. Some felt Chu Feng left the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

There were also some who felt Chu Feng had died when the Immortal Execution Archipelago attacked the Misty Peak.

But regardless of their opposing thoughts, one could tell from their very words that they actually really hoped Chu Feng could become the sect head.

"I truly didn't expect this brat Chu Feng to build up such fame within the Crippling Night Demon Sect during short two years." Qiu Canfeng, who was standing amongst the crowd, smiled smugly at the praises directed towards his disciple. He couldn't help feeling a bit proud.

"Everyone, shut up!" You Mingdeng suddenly shouted. His complexion was very, very distorted.

"All of you, listen up! It is unknown where Chu Feng comes from, and he holds an ulterior motive in his heart! Everything he's done for the Crippling Night Demon Sect is for a scheme!

"Putting aside whether he is alive or dead, even if he comes, he cannot allowed to become sect head!

"Do not think my words are blatant lies! Earth King, you tell them! When you tried imprinting the Incomplete Moon Formation on Chu Feng, what exactly happened?!" You Mingdeng furiously said.

"This... Chu Feng's body was special, and I had failed to imprint the

formation on him," the Earth King said.

"What? The formation couldn't be imprinted on Chu Feng?"

"The Incomplete Moon Formation is the symbol of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Without it, it means he hasn't joined us!"

"Does it mean Chu Feng wasn't a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect from the very beginning?"

Many people felt You Mingdeng's words were reasonable. As a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, they all took pride in the Incomplete Moon Formation on their backs.

Similarly, it was the indication of their sect. So, they reasonably felt those without the formation weren't from the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"I know you have a rather deep friendship with Chu Feng, but as Big Brother Qiu Canfeng's old subordinates, you best know your boundaries. If you dare to support that Chu Feng again, I may not be so polite," You Mingdeng fiercely shouted as he pointed at Old Liu.

At first, he still wanted to say a few more things, but he was stopped by his brothers. In the end, after consideration of their current state, he remained silent.

"It's not that I, You Mingdeng, am being selfish. This formation was laid together by me, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng. It is absolutely fair.

"And my disciple, You Tonghan, had walked the farthest within the formation. He was the nearest to the Demon Sealing Sword, so it should be he who becomes the substitute sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Is there anyone who wishes to raise objections?" You Mingdeng said again.

The initial rowdy crowd once again returned to peace. Not a single person said another word, nor were there any who dared to object.

You Mingdeng's mouth couldn't help but curl into a complacent smile. Then, he said, "Very well. Since there are no objections, I announce You

Tonghan to be..."

"Wait!" But all of a sudden, before You Mingdeng was even able to finish speaking, a yell exploded within the crowd.

There was no one who wasn't shocked when this shout erupted. The surrounding crowd quickly distanced themselves from the direction of the voice, afraid they would be dragged into whatever calamity that was about to occur.

Very soon, Chu Feng appeared in front of everyone.

"Who are you?" asked You Mingdeng with a bit of unhappiness. After he looked at Chu Feng, he frowned slightly. Chu Feng changed his appearance, so he didn't know he was Chu Feng.

But daring to speak at such a crucial moment made You Mingdeng feel very displeased. This was a challenge to his power.

"This Crippling Night Demon Sect member heard the person who advances the most within the formation can become sect head. So, I want to give it a try. Can Lord Protector give me this chance?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Who is this person? So many people have failed, yet he still wants to enter the formation! Does he truly think he is stronger than You Tonghan? He thinks too highly of himself." A burst of ridicule instantly came from the crowd. They felt Chu Feng was looking to be humiliated.

Originally, You Mingdeng felt displeased at Chu Feng's emergence, but after hearing everyone's mocking, he once again made a strange smile.

He was the same as everyone else. He felt Chu Feng was making a fool of himself, and since Chu Feng wasn't afraid of embarrassment, You Mingdeng was even less afraid. Thus, he decided to allow Chu Feng to disgrace himself completely.

"Of course you can. If you are a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's younger generation, you have the right to become sect head. Go ahead, but careful. The power of the formation is very powerful. If you are injured because of it, no one can help you," You Mingdeng said with a

smile. The meaning behind his words was very clear as well—he was telling all of them when this overconfident brat blasted away from the formation, no one was allowed to help him. He wanted this person to receive serious injuries, teaching him a lesson in that manner.

Chapter 944: Furiously Pulling out the Demon Sealing Sword

"Lord Protector, no need to trouble yourself with worry." Chu Feng lightly smiled. He didn't thank nor bow to You Mingdeng and just walked straight towards the formation in large strides.

Many people only saw Chu Feng's actions as a joke. No one treated him seriously.

However, when Chu Feng entered the formation and, without change in expression nor speed, continued forward at an unbelievable rate—through the tenth layer, ninth layer, eighth layer, and seventh layer—no one could remain calm anymore.

"What's happening? How can this brat walk through so many layers without any pressure?"

Not to mention others, even You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng, the Three Protectors, changed their faces greatly. They had personally laid that formation. They knew the strength it contained.

Even Xuan Xiaochao and the others were under enormous pressure and were limited at the fifth layer, so how could this brat pass through so many effortlessly?

Before the crowd's stunned gazes, Chu Feng still walked with ease. He continued advancing forward without the slightest decrease in tempo. He went through the sixth layer, fifth layer, and the fourth layer that even the Protectors' disciples couldn't enter, still without a change in expression nor a drop in speed. He seemed as if he were walking on normal ground as he felt no pressure at all.

"Heavens! This is unbelievable! How did he do it?"

The observers felt their scalps go numb and chilly winds blow past their spines. They felt it to be so inconceivable, because Chu Feng still looked so relaxed despite it being the fourth layer.

Recollecting Xuan Xiaochao's and the others' performance earlier, they truly felt stupefied.

After arriving at the fourth layer, Chu Feng stopped moving. "Lord Protector, is this the formation you're using to choose the new sect head? It's rather disappointing," he said mockingly.

"You..." You Mingdeng was so furious he gritted his teeth, but he didn't know how to retort. He could only angrily clench his fists and tremble in rage.

"Impossible! It's impossible he entered the fourth layer so easily! Something must have gone wrong with this formation!" You Tonghan couldn't tolerate his master being humiliated.

After a deep breath, he dashed forward and ran straight into the formation. However, just after he stepped into the fifth layer, he let out a painful cry. He was forced out by its immense power.

"Han'er!"

You Mingdeng's expression changed greatly. You Tonghan's descent was quickly softened, but because he had been too careless, he was struck by an extremely powerful force. He had been knocked unconscious by the pressure of the formation.

"This... Heavens! The formation's power hasn't diminished! With this person's own strength, he walked to the fourth layer!"

"That's unbelievable! Who is he? Why have I never heard of such a monster in the Crippling Night Demon Sect?"

You Tonghan's actions undoubtedly brought alarm amongst the crowd—it told them the formation hadn't been changed. It was still that horrifying. This nameless brat was able to walk to the fourth layer because his own abilities were too strong.

Chu Feng helplessly sighed. They had quite a decent relationship, so he didn't wish harm to fall upon him.

But there was nothing that could be done, nor could You Tonghan be

blamed for his rashness. After all, Chu Feng had been insulting his master. If it were another person who insulted Chu Feng's master, he too would not tolerate it.

However, Chu Feng had showed himself in front of You Mingdeng to do exactly that—to throw him into a fit of rage. As such, he couldn't pay much attention to You Tonghan. As he looked at You Mingdeng, he said with a few chuckles, "Lord Protector, it seems that this position of substitute sect head will be changed."

After speaking, Chu Feng turned around and continued forward. He, amidst stunned and devastated gazes, passed through the third layer, second layer, and in a straight path came to the first layer.

Everyone was dumbstruck. Even Xue Xiyue's and Fu Liansheng's eyes were bursting with astonishment.

But Chu Feng clearly didn't plan to stop just there. He looked over You Mingdeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng, then asked, "Lord Protectors, Lord Sect Head proclaimed whoever pulled out this Demon Sealing Sword could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, right?"

Xue Xiyue and You Mingdeng tightly furrowed their brows, and both remained silent.

However, Fu Liansheng faintly smiled, and said, "That is true. Sect Head had said regardless of the person, as long as they pull out the Demon Sealing Sword, they could become sect head."

"Then, if someone does become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, does it mean the three of you also need to listen to their command?" Chu Feng asked again.

"Of course. The sect head is the leader of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Not to mention us, everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect must follow their command. They are not permitted to disobey," Fu Liansheng said as he nodded.

"Since that's true, then I won't become substitute sect head. It'll just be more worth it to become sect head." Chu Feng chuckled, and as he spoke,

he even cast his gaze towards the nearby Demon Sealing Sword.

“How arrogant. Even we Four Protectors weren’t able to pull out this Demon Sealing Sword. Do you think you can?” Xue Xiyue spoke. Her tone was very mocking—mocking Chu Feng’s ignorance.

“Xue Xiyue is correct. The Demon Sealing Sword is very powerful. I’d advise you to avoid contact with it, otherwise if it’s unhappy and kills you, even we can do nothing about it,” You Mingdeng said in a threatening manner.

“This is not up to you, but up to me,” Chu Feng sneered, then, before the gazes of the crowd, he held out his palm, and placed it on the Demon Sealing Sword.

boom

In the instant Chu Feng grasped the Demon Sealing Sword, layers upon layers of boundless auras swept out like a hurricane, the Demon Sealing Sword akin to its eye.

The auras were so powerful many people were unable to withstand it. They were forced back, and even the entire palace violently shook.

“Heavens! He truly wants to pull out the Demon Sealing Sword! He’s too daring!” The members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were quite frightened.

If Chu Feng’s previous actions merely shocked them, Chu Feng’s current actions completely terrified them.

“Heh, this is indeed a good sword. Let me become your master!”

Chu Feng made a smile. As he spoke, he clenched his hand, and fiercely waved his arm. After a clank, the entire earth trembled. A heavy object had been pulled up from the ground, and was held in Chu Feng’s hand.

Chu Feng had drawn out the pitch-black Demon Sealing Sword from the formation.

Chapter 945: Kill without Exception

When the Demon Sealing Sword arose, everything shook. Gales blew all about, and the entire palace was in chaos.

Only after a long while did it gradually calm down...

When the burst of might faded away, Chu Feng was still standing at the very same place; however, in his hand, there was an extra pitch-black sword—it was, of course, the Demon Sealing Sword.

"This... How is this possible? He truly pulled it out!"

Everyone was dumbfounded. They felt this was not reality, and some people were even trembling in fear. No matter what, they never expected this young man to truly pull out the Demon Sealing Sword.

It was the Demon Sealing Sword! A Royal Armament no one could pull out other than the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Even the Four Protectors had failed, yet this young man had succeeded! How could they remain collected?

"Bastard! Who do you think you are to hold the Demon Sealing Sword?"

You Mingdeng was enraged. He released his rank four Martial King aura, and with killing intent, he leapt towards Chu Feng. He was actually attacking Chu Feng.

boom

However, before he was even able to approach him, a thunderous explosion rang out. At the same time, the Demon Sealing Sword in Chu Feng's hand shot up, bringing Chu Feng into the air. After breaking through the palace's ceiling, he broke through the underground palace, into the surface, arriving in the sky.

"Heavens, what is that? What flew from beneath?"

"It's a person, and it seems to be someone from the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Who is that? I don't think I've seen him before?"

The people on the surface still didn't know anything that occurred

underground. When an object flew out from below and straight into the blue sky, it shocked the people above ground. All of them raised their head and curiously looked.

Simultaneously, the ones underground started flying out and arrived on the surface. What Chu Feng took away was the Crippling Night Demon Sect's treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword!

However, only after arriving on the surface did they discover Chu Feng hadn't left. At that moment, he stood unmoving in the air. The sky itself started changing due to Chu Feng's emergence.

boom rumble rumble rumble

Rolling black clouds surface into the peaceful atmosphere, and thick strings of lightning were akin to enormous sinister dragons as they circled around Chu Feng's body, protecting him.

The Demon Sealing Sword released endless black mist which lingered endlessly in the air. A horrifying ear-piercing howl, akin to the cry of a demon, reverberated through the mist and out into the surrounding area.

Moreover, the black mist progressively increased in size. By the time it stopped expanding, it had already enveloped the entire sky. Despite the terrifying howls and cries that rang out from the black mass, none of it harmed Chu Feng. Rather, it appeared that it was guarding him instead.

"What is happening? The Demon Sealing Sword is protecting him!" Not to mention others, even You Mingdeng and the other Protectors were completely baffled.

"You Mingdeng, I pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword! Therefore, I am now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! You don't kneel and kowtow, and even dare to attack me! This is truly dishonourable, and this offense warrants execution!" Chu Feng shouted as he held the Demon Sealing Sword and pointed at You Mingdeng below.

"What? That's the Demon Sealing Sword? The Crippling Night Demon Sect's most valuable treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword?"

Chu Feng's words undoubtedly told everyone he had successfully pulled

it out, and became qualified to lead them.

"What should we do? When the sect head was alive, he had indeed said the one who pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword could become sect head, and we had to unconditionally serve that person!"

Many people panicked. Although Chu Feng had been successful, they were naturally unwilling to have a person they knew nothing of to lead them.

"Who are you?!" You Mingdeng asked. His words lacked the slightest bit of respect, and instead were filled with fury and resentment.

"You really want to know who I am? No problem, I'll show you who I am!" Chu Feng laughed, then waved his big sleeve. When the sleeve slid past his face, Chu Feng's complexion had changed, returning to its initial form.

"Chu Feng? He's Chu Feng?!"

The observers couldn't help but deeply gasp. Some were incomparably excited, and some felt disbelief.

Even though for many of them it was their first time seeing Chu Feng, they still recognized him. After all, Chu Feng was famous in the Eastern Sea Region. His wanted posters were pasted in every street in the Eastern Sea Region. Not to mention the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even many ordinary citizens knew of Chu Feng's appearance.

"Brother Chu Feng, is it you? Is it truly you? You haven't died?"

Xuan Xiaochao and Fu Fengming were elated as they shouted loudly. If it weren't for their masters stopping them, they would have already risen into the air and passionately embraced him.

Their relationship with Chu Feng had always been quite good. When they first heard that Chu Feng had possibly died, they had even felt sorrowful for quite a while. Right now, knowing that Chu Feng hadn't died yet, they were naturally surprised and excited.

"Big Brother Xuan Xiaochao, it is indeed me. I haven't died. I escaped

from the Misty Peak." Chu Feng nodded. He too had quite good feelings towards Xuan Xiaochao and the others.

"Haha, it truly is Chu Feng! This is great! I was wondering why this person was so monstrous... So he was Chu Feng! He's an unprecedented genius in the Eastern Sea Region, and now, he has pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword! He should indeed become sect head."

There were cheers that rang out within the sea of people after confirmation of Chu Feng's identity. From that, one could see a large portion of the Crippling Night Demon Sect felt it was acceptable for Chu Feng to become sect head. Some even wanted him to.

Although Chu Feng had only been in the Crippling Night Demon Sect for a very short time, his achievements completely convinced them all. They felt only a genius like him could bring the Crippling Night Demon Sect back to its glory. He was the most suitable nominee for sect head.

Before, due to the existence of the Four Protectors, they didn't dare to say those words. However, Chu Feng had now pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. He became the successor the former sect head decided on. They could finally speak the thoughts in their hearts.

"Chu Feng, I knew you had ulterior motives by joining the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Indeed, you came here for the Crippling Night Demon Sect's invaluable treasure, the Demon Sealing Sword! Today, don't even think of leaving!

"Members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, attention! This child is not a member of our sect, and he even dares to rob our treasure! He must be killed without exception.

"No matter who it is, if you're a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, you will have accomplished a great deed if you kill Chu Feng, and you will be greatly rewarded!" But just at that moment, You Mingdeng pointed towards Chu Feng and shouted. He had actually ordered Chu Feng's death.

Chapter 946: What the Public Desires

“What? Kill Chu Feng? Why? Why must we kill Chu Feng? Isn’t he a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?”

“Chu Feng only joined us for the Demon Sealing Sword? Is that really true? It wouldn’t be a lie, would it?”

“No matter if it’s real or not, it is a fact that Chu Feng brought great animosity between him and the Immortal Execution Archipelago because he saved members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect! How could we possibly attack and kill him?”

However, beyond You Mingdeng’s expectations, after sending down that killing order, there was not even a single person who moved. There were even many who spoke up for Chu Feng.

“Lord You Mingdeng, didn’t you say the person who pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword could become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and that we must also listen to their commands?” Old Liu once again stood out.

“Insolence! You’ve been repeatedly defending that Chu Feng. Are you conspiring with him?!” You Mingdeng furiously shouted.

“Lord You Mingdeng, I feel that he’s correct. You were the one who personally said Sect Head’s last words, and we had personally seen Chu Feng pull out the Demon Sealing Sword. I believe we should obey Sect Head’s last words.” Unexpectedly, the Earth King had spoken as well.

“Lord Protectors, without a sect head, you are the highest in command of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. But even so, you should still listen to Sect Head’s last words. Otherwise, it wouldn’t matter how much strength you obtain. You will not be able to convince everyone else!”

“That’s right. Besides, Chu Feng isn’t someone we know nothing of. Back then, in the Gale Plains, Chu Feng had risked his life and fought the Immortal Execution Archipelago, doing all that just to save us. Not only have we brothers seen it, Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming

have seen it as well.

"Lord You Mingdeng, have you not seen it too? Will a person who does his best for us and dares to even throw away his own life desire harm to befall the Crippling Night Demon Sect?" said the Water King and Fire King as well. Their tone was very intense, and it was simply as if they were slapping You Mingdeng's face.

Back in the Gale Plains, due to You Mingdeng's strength, they endured his treatment of Chu Feng. However, today, they could not. If they endured any further, You Mingdeng would likely kill Chu Feng.

"Everyone, I'm sure you have heard of what Chu Feng's done to the Crippling Night Demon Sect. I'm sure you've also heard of Chu Feng's potential. Right now, he has pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, and become our future sect head! Tell me, is he worthy of this position?" someone suddenly yelled within the crowd. It was very loud, loud enough to let everyone could hear his words clearly.

"YEEESSS—" replied the millions of Crippling Night Demon Sect members in unison. Their voices were truly like thunder, and such a powerful sound was a manifestation of all their desires of Chu Feng becoming sect head.

"You dimwitted fools! We don't know where this child comes from. How can he be allowed to become sect head?"

You Mingdeng's complexion darkened heavily from anger when he heard the spurts of shouts. Even his heart could explode from the rage. He could not endure this. Thus, he decided to not endure it. Without speaking anymore, he leapt up and rose into the sky. With his boundless rank four Martial King pressure and the horrifying aura that stirred up chaos, he rushed towards Chu Feng, once again attacking him.

wuaoo—

However, the mist surrounding Chu Feng attacked You Mingdeng with an ear-piercing howl.

"Who can stop me?!"

But You Mingdeng was still, after all, a rank four Martial King. When he threw forth his punch, even space itself cracked. The black mist also dissipated instantly.

wuaoo– However, when it dispersed, the mist regathered–that cycle was repeating unceasingly. There was no decrease in amount, and instead, more and more converged together. Like an army of millions, they kept on pouncing towards You Mingdeng and attacking him. It was very difficult to deal with that.

“Look! Even the Demon Sealing Sword is protecting Chu Feng! It wants Chu Feng to become its master!” Old Liu shouted as he pointed at the sky.

“This is unbelievable! It’s said that the Demon Sealing Sword holds extreme arrogance! Even the sect head had only been able to use it, but not fully control it. Yet, this Demon Sealing Sword is protecting Chu Feng in such a manner. Could it be really as Old Liu said? Does this Demon Sealing Sword wants to approve Chu Feng as its master?” Even the bystanders exclaimed. They felt Old Liu’s words were very reasonable.

“Could this be the will of the heavens?” Not to mention others, even Xue Xiyue, knitted her brows slightly. Shock emerged into her eyes.

“Master, help Chu Feng! I understand Brother Chu Feng. He definitely isn’t a person who holds malicious intentions. In fact, like what the Water King and Fire King said, if it weren’t for Chu Feng, perhaps we would have died already at the Gale Plains. You wouldn’t have seen your disciple anymore,” Xuan Xiaochao begged.

“This...”

Xue Xiyue was a bit moved. As one of the Four Protectors, regardless of her viewpoint, she was not an unreasonable person. Chu Feng was a genius–she could see that. However, she was the same as You Tonghan: she held some suspicions regarding Chu Feng’s background.

“You Mingdeng... just leave it. Even the Demon Sealing Sword wants Chu Feng to become sect head. Why go through all this trouble?

“Just follow Sect Head’s last words, and let this Chu Feng become sect

head," Fu Liansheng said suddenly. Moreover, his tone was sincere—one could tell his words came from the bottom of his heart.

"Fu Liansheng, your head is muddled! We don't know where this child comes from! Who knows what he's planning? What if he's someone who hates the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and leads us to destruction in the future? Who will carry this responsibility?"

You Mingdeng was unmoved by anything. He ignored everything that was said. A hint of fierceness flashed into his eyes and, towards Chu Feng in the sky, he loudly shouted, "Chu Feng, you're unable to use the power of this Demon Sealing Sword! Don't think you're safe with it protecting you. If I want to kill you, no one can stop me!"

boom Suddenly, You Mingdeng released a roar, and threw out a palm attack.

It instantly shot forth powerfully. Gales arose with the emergence of the attack, and as the atmosphere transformed, the palm became akin to a giant wave of air.

Layer stacking on layer, it surged forward and oppressed all. This was not an ordinary attack—it was a rank seven martial skill. Even though it was not at the peak, in the hands of a rank four Martial King, he drew forth an extremely horrifying power.

bang bang bang bang The black mist guarding Chu Feng was instantly forced back. It was unable to stop You Mingdeng's rank seven martial skill.

Like he said, it didn't matter how powerful the sword was. Chu Feng was too weak; he could not use the true might of the Demon Sealing Sword. He was simply unable to put up a fight against this rank four Martial King.

Chapter 947: Who Dares to Harm My Disciple

"It won't be that easy to kill me."

Although the power from the Demon Sealing Sword was unable to block You Mingdeng's attack, it had greatly reduced its speed. This gave Chu Feng sufficient time to react.

So, he willed an azure aura to rise beneath his feet, and amidst a dragon's roar, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique had appeared.

Under the watchful gaze of the crowd, Chu Feng grasped the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand, and willed the azure dragon beneath his feet to dodge You Mingdeng's rank seven martial skill.

At the same time, Chu Feng's aura was completely released.

"Rank seven Martial Lord? Brother Chu Feng, you're a rank seven Martial Lord?" Fu Fengming couldn't help deeply gasping.

"Monster! Hell, he's too monstrous! Back at the Gale Plains, he was still a rank five Martial Lord. How is he a rank seven Martial Lord already? Brother Chu Feng, your speed of improvement is quite terrifying!"

As for Xuan Xiaochao, he too was quite shocked by Chu Feng's current cultivation. But amidst his feelings of shock, excitement filled his face as he also felt happy for Chu Feng.

Actually, at that instant, everyone was stunned. Chu Feng was quite famous, so his cultivation was something everyone always focused on. However, it seemed that every time Chu Feng appeared, his cultivation would increase. His speed was simply worthy of admiration.

"Chu Feng, you will not escape today!"

However, in contrast to everyone else, You Mingdeng's bloodlust rose higher and higher. To him, the quicker Chu Feng grew in cultivation, the greater the threat he presented. He had to finish off Chu Feng right now, otherwise it would have an enormous impact on his future.

"Die!"

After collecting his thoughts, he once again made his move. Waving his sleeves, the gales rose and the clouds flowed. A boundless Martial power had become an army of thousands as it rushed unstoppably and invincibly in the air—it was a rank nine martial skill.

"Oh? It seems that this old bastard has been enraged. He looks serious now."

Chu Feng gave a light chuckle as he looked at the army rapidly approaching. Although he could not block that attack, he felt not even an iota of fear. He knew clearly there was an even more powerful person guarding him.

"Xue Xiyue, let's go together! We cannot allow You Mingdeng to kill this Chu Feng!" Fu Liansheng had already risen. He prepared to help Chu Feng.

"Mm. This child is truly a monster. No matter where he comes from, we must protect his growth." Xue Xiyue also flew up after seeing Chu Feng's current cultivation. She was not only preparing to save Chu Feng, she was preparing to protect Chu Feng on his way to become the sect head.

"I must kill this child! No one should even think of saving him!" You Mingdeng swore to kill Chu Feng. He gnashed his teeth upon feeling Fu Liansheng's and Xue Xiyue's presence, but he didn't stop, and instead, channeled his full strength into the rank nine martial skill. At the same time, he flew towards Chu Feng.

boom rumble rumble rumble

A rank nine martial skill was already powerful. But when a rank four Martial King was propelling it forward with everything he had, it truly seemed as if nothing could stop its path. When the army of millions advanced in the sky, even space itself was shattered. None could block that might—not even the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

"This isn't good! What is this You Mingdeng doing? He refuses to listen to reason!" Fu Liansheng frowned slightly. He knew if You Mingdeng

wanted to truly kill Chu Feng, he would not make it even if he moved right now.

"You Mingdeng, have you gone mad from age? How can you kill a genius like him?" Xue Xiyue furiously rebuked.

"Lord You Mingdeng, that is our sect head! Killing one's own sect head is a greatly dishonourable act. Please reconsider!"

At the same time, many other members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect shouted. Nearly everyone was standing out for Chu Feng.

"Everyone, shut up!

"I said, this child must be killed! Today, no one should even think of saving him!"

The more the crowd supported Chu Feng, the more hatred You Mingdeng felt towards him. Gritting his teeth, he further increased the power in his attack. He wanted to completely destroy Chu Feng, not even wishing to leave a corpse behind.

"No one should even think of saving him? Those are quite the words you have there! Today, let me see who dares to even touch my disciple!"

However, when the crowd all felt helpless and that Chu Feng was absolutely dead, an extremely horrifying aura suddenly exploded amidst the crowd. At the same time, a person, with speed even quicker than light, shot up from the surface and arrived in front of Chu Feng.

Moreover, he didn't even move after reaching that position. He released a pressure that even caused space itself to tremble and collapse. You Mingdeng's rank nine martial skill instantly disappeared.

"Heavens! Such power! Who is it?"

"It's Chu Feng's master! It's Chu Feng's legendary master! He had said before that Chu Feng is his disciple!"

"Chu Feng's master is this strong? Who is he?!"

The sudden appearance of a person caused everyone to be shocked. They heard Qiu Canfeng's voice, but didn't see any signs of him. They

could only just guess that Chu Feng's fabled master had appeared.

"That voice just now...?" Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, and You Mingdeng all widened their eyes in surprise because the voice just now was so familiar.

whoosh At that instant, Fu Liansheng and Xue Xiyue had arrived in the air. They waved their sleeves, and the chaotic shock waves vanished. When everything returned to normal, Qiu Canfeng had finally appeared before the crowd.

"Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, it's truly you?" Although they had made a guess, after seeing Qiu Canfeng with their own eyes, Fu Liansheng and the others were still stunned.

"That is? Great Protector Qiu Canfeng!"

"It is truly him! He didn't die, he didn't die! This is great!"

As for the others, they were elated. Some even shed tears from emotion, because that was truly a heavenly great news to them.

"Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, long time no see."

Qiu Canfeng smiled faintly when he looked at them. No matter what they had done before, they still aimed to save Chu Feng. That made some good feelings blossom; at least, in consideration of the situation in whole, they were still thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect's benefit.

"Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, you've become a rank five Martial King. Congratulations!" Xue Xiyue said with a smile. If it were before, she would definitely feel extremely displeased at his superior cultivation. However, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was facing a great disaster. To all of them, Qiu Canfeng's increase in strength was most definitely something good.

"Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, you said just now that this Chu Feng is your disciple?" Fu Liansheng asked.

After Fu Liansheng spoke, all noise disappeared. No one spoke. They all raised their heads and fixed their gazes tightly on Qiu Canfeng, awaiting his answer.

Chapter 948: Conquering the Demon Sealing Sword

Qiu Canfeng lightly smiled at the millions of expectant gazes, then said with a calm but loud voice, “That’s right. I, Qiu Canfeng, have a disciple—Chu Feng. However, I didn’t want people to know this relationship. I didn’t want him to receive everyone’s help by borrowing my fame. I wanted him to rely on himself and grow.

“That’s why I’ve always had him conceal the fact that I’m his master. I forbade him from telling anyone.

“After all that’s happened, I feel very relieved because he didn’t disappoint me. Even without my protection, he was still able to rise in the Eastern Sea Region with his own strength. I feel proud to have a disciple like this. I am proud to be his master.”

“Huaa—”

A commotion instantly arose amongst the crowd. Everyone’s emotions changed from his words.

Qiu Canfeng had clearly told everyone that Chu Feng was his disciple.

This fact changed everything. It meant, from the very start, Chu Feng was a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and he was even the strongest disciple amongst all four Protectors.

He even pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. It was completely reasonable that Chu Feng sat on the position of sect head.

It was truly difficult to not have Chu Feng become sect head. If he did enter that role, there wouldn’t be anyone who’d dare to object. Instead, this was something everyone wished for.

“Ahh, but sadly, although Chu Feng’s abilities were shown completely, it attracted envy. It’s one thing that outsiders bully him, but even people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect want to deal with him. This truly brings disappointment and sorrow my heart.” Qiu Canfeng suddenly

sighed with both fury and sorrow. He even cast his gaze towards You Mingdeng.

You Mingdeng instantly trembled when Qiu Canfeng's gazed at him. He was extremely uneasy at that moment. He reached the extremities of panic.

First of all, Chu Feng was Qiu Canfeng's disciple—that had already made him anxious.

It meant all of his prior suspicions were wrong. Chu Feng sincerely wished to help the Crippling Night Demon Sect. And since Chu Feng was already a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, all the crimes he lay upon Chu Feng were without merit.

Originally, the general population of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had already been defending Chu Feng. They felt You Mingdeng was very dishonourable. They felt he was offending a superior. They wanted Chu Feng to become sect head, yet he, You Mingdeng, insisted on such an unreasonable action and wanted to kill Chu Feng. Right now, in hindsight, he was truly completely in the wrong.

If Qiu Canfeng's cultivation were the same as his, then he'd just be reprimanded; no one could do anything to him due to his status, position, and strength.

However, Qiu Canfeng's cultivation was now superior—he was a rank five Martial King. That was not an existence he stood a chance against. If Qiu Canfeng prepared to punish him, then, though it sounded unpleasant, he could only endure. He wouldn't dare to fight back.

"You Mingdeng, you tell me. Chu Feng, as my disciple, joined the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and fought for the honour of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Is he in the wrong?" Qiu Canfeng asked as he stared at You Mingdeng.

"He... He isn't," You Mingdeng said with a lowered head. There was no spirit in his words.

"Then, you tell me: Chu Feng's body is special, leading an

incompatibility with the Incomplete Moon Formation. So, the formation could not be imprinted on his body. Is he in the wrong?" Qiu Canfeng asked again.

"He... He isn't," You Mingdeng said again quietly.

"Louder!" Qiu Canfeng shouted furiously.

"He isn't! He isn't in the wrong," You Mingdeng replied clearly. His body trembled from fright, and he even took two steps back.

"Then, tell me. He is so outstanding, and he also pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword. With complete reason, he can become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Why is there someone who's bringing up trouble, and even wants to kill him? What plan does this person have? What is he thinking?" Qiu Canfeng asked again.

"Big Brother Qiu Canfeng, I was foolish, I was foolish! I was only thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect! Forgive me! If I knew Chu Feng was your disciple, how could I suspect him?"

Finally, You Mingdeng broke down. He couldn't bear this sort of interrogation. He couldn't bear the gaze of the crowd. He actually admitted his wrongs to Qiu Canfeng.

"Oh, you're wrong. You are indeed wrong. However, it is useless telling that to me. You must admit your wrongs to our sect head." Qiu Canfeng cast his gaze behind, towards Chu Feng.

"This..." You Mingdeng's expression changed. He could admit his wrongs to Qiu Canfeng, but doing that to Chu Feng... he couldn't do that.

It didn't matter whether Chu Feng had the Demon Sealing Sword or not. It didn't matter if Chu Feng was Qiu Canfeng's disciple or not. It didn't matter if Chu Feng won everyone's hearts or not. In his own mind, Chu Feng was still hostile brat who wasn't worthy to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

You Mingdeng deeply sucked in some air, then said, "Chu Feng has indeed pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, but if you want me to approve of him as the sect head just on that alone, I will absolutely not. I

will not serve a person weaker than me, unless…"

"Unless what?" Qiu Canfeng asked.

"Unless he gains the approval of the Demon Sealing Sword in front of everyone. Only then is it proof that this Demon Sealing Sword is truly his and he has the qualifications to lead us," You Mingdeng said.

"This…" Qiu Canfeng's eyes glittered, and he couldn't help but cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

The Demon Sealing Sword was incomparably arrogant. It was the king of Royal Armaments, and even though the former sect head's strength was overwhelming, he had still spent quite some effort to acquire it—and he just hardly grasped it. He hadn't truly obtained the Demon Sealing Sword.

Chu Feng's aptitude was extraordinary—everyone knew that. However, his cultivation was still lacking. Could he, a rank seven Martial Lord, receive the Demon Sealing Sword's approval? That was truly a difficult question.

Moreover, it was as You Mingdeng said. Chu Feng had pulled out the Demon Sealing Sword, and many people did wish for Chu Feng to become sect head.

However, it was likely there were people who weren't convinced in their hearts. Unless Chu Feng could gain the Demon Sealing Sword's approval and truly take it for himself, there would more or less be some doubt and objection.

"Master, it's just gaining its approval. That's nothing. Since I will receive it sooner or later, there's no problem doing it in front of everyone now."

Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he spun the Demon Sealing Sword and slowly raised it up. With a thought, a strand of aura entered the sword. He wanted to merge it with the Demon Sealing Sword, and thoroughly grasp this king of Royal Armaments.

BOOM—

When his aura fused into the sword, an explosion instantly rang out. Layers of black flames were like a surging wave yet also like an erupting volcano as they violently gushed out from the Demon Sealing Sword.

wuaoo—

Frightening howls rang throughout the world. An enormous pressure fell upon their backs, feeling as if the entire world were about to collapse.

The might of the king of Royal Armaments had been shown completely.

Chapter 949: Rank Eight Martial Lord

"So this is the Demon Sealing Sword. Its might is indeed far superior to an ordinary Royal Armament."

Qiu Canfeng tightly furrowed his brows at the crack in the fabrics of space surrounding Chu Feng. He knew the power of the Demon Sealing Sword. He knew it was very difficult to subdue it.

whoosh

But in the instant worry began to spring up in Qiu Canfeng's heart, the destructive might rapidly shrank. They didn't surge into the Demon Sealing Sword, but into Chu Feng's body.

In the end, the boundless aura the Demon Sealing Sword released all entered Chu Feng's body, as if it had always been one with him.

"Heavens, this..." Everyone was dumbfounded. They were speechless. All of their jaws dropped to the floor.

At that instant, the Demon Sealing Sword didn't just approve of Chu Feng. Even the boundless black flames amidst a frightening howl all entered his body. Chu Feng's aura then soared—from a rank seven Martial Lord, he became a rank eight Martial Lord.

He had experienced a change like that before, and it was also in this Depraved Valley, and it was also a Royal Armament recognizing its master.

There was only one fabled explanation for this atypical phenomenon—Absolute Submission.

"Absolute Submission! The Demon Sealing Sword not only approves Chu Feng as its master, it even submits to him! This is unbelievable!"

Everyone was dumbfounded. What was the Demon Sealing Sword? That was the Royal Armament not even the former sect head could subdue.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng had not only subdued the Demon Sealing Sword, he even made it submit and increased his own cultivation. What

did that mean? It meant at least in terms of aptitude Chu Feng was far superior to the former sect head. It was so powerful that even this Demon Sealing Sword was willing to submit to him.

"This... How is this possible?!" You Mingdeng was also stupefied, because he truly had no words to speak after seeing that scene.

"My brothers, what are you looking at? Quickly greet the new sect head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Lord Chu Feng!" Xue Xiyue loudly said.

Only after she spoke did they break out of their gaze. No one dared to hesitate as they all knelt on the ground, kowtowing and saying in unison, "We greet Lord Sect Head!"

After seeing the army of millions kneeling down, Xue Xiyue and Fu Liansheng, after a glance at each other, knelt in the air at the same time— towards Chu Feng, "We greet Lord Sect Head!"

Nearly all members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect had knelt towards Chu Feng, expressing their decision of recognizing Chu Feng as their sect head. Only Qiu Canfeng and You Mingdeng remained standing.

"You Mingdeng, what other objections do you have?" Qiu Canfeng questioned as he looked at You Mingdeng a bit unhappily.

After taking another deep breath, You Mingdeng knelt in the air with a whoosh, and kowtowed, admitting, "This little You Mingdeng has eyes but could not see. I've done a dishonourable act, so Lord Sect Head, please bestow punishment! Even if you grant me death, I, You Mingdeng, will not complain at all!"

Qiu Canfeng only nodded in satisfaction. He turned around, and was going to kneel down towards Chu Feng.

"Master, there's no need! How can I accept this?" But Chu Feng had stopped him.

"Lord Sect Head, in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even masters are inferior to the sect head. Rules cannot be broken, otherwise how can you establish might in the future?" However, Qiu Canfeng merely smiled

lightly then forcibly knelt.

“Master, quickly rise!” Chu Feng quickly pulled Qiu Canfeng up, then he waved his hand and shouted, “Brothers, quickly rise!”

“Thank you Sect Head!” The army of millions only stood up after Chu Feng spoke.

However, You Mingdeng remained kneeling even after everyone rose. He was unwilling to rise.

“You Mingdeng, you can rise as well,” Chu Feng said.

“This little one does not dare! I have disrespected Lord Sect Head, and I should be executed. I ask for punishment to set an example!”

Every single word from You Mingdeng came from his heart. From that, one could see after the Demon Sealing Sword submitted to Chu Feng, he too approved of Chu Feng to become his sect head. He knew how foolish he was before. He nearly killed a person who could lead their sect to glory.

“Your former actions had gone against the former sect head’s wishes. That is indeed a crime deserving of death, but since you were thinking for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, I’ll give you a chance to exchange your offenses with deeds,” Chu Feng loudly said.

He walked up to You Mingdeng. Disregarding the risk he might attack, Chu Feng personally helped You Mingdeng up, and as he did, he even bent his waist, lowered his head, and said quietly, “Senior You Mingdeng, right now, the Crippling Night Demon Sect has an enemy we have to face. We should point the edge of the blade outside, not inside. If we possess the ability, then we should use it for enemies, not each other.”

You Mingdeng’s heart was shaken at those words. Even his body trembled slightly. He didn’t insist on kneeling, and after standing, he said very sincerely, “Thank you Sect Head. This little one will do my best to accomplish deeds and not disappoint your grace.”

Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, and Fu Liansheng captured that within their eyes. They couldn’t help but nod their heads pleasedly.

“Forging when soft”—when Chu Feng made an old stubborn person like You Mingdeng submit to him, they really had to admit they increasingly felt letting Chu Feng become sect head was the correct choice. This young man was not only decisive, he was also a person who was broad-minded and cared about the situation at large.

Afterwards, Qiu Canfeng spoke of many thoughts that fortified Chu Feng’s position of sect head in everyone’s hearts.

Moreover, he started arranging matters against the Immortal Execution Archipelago. In this period of time, Chu Feng was training in seclusion with the Demon Sealing Sword.

After Chu Feng made it submit, not only had he obtained power much stronger than other Royal Armaments, he discovered a special power—it was one connected the formation imprinted on everyone’s backs.

Chu Feng felt if he used that power well, perhaps he could create a Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation that could be moved. As long as he was within a certain distance, he could split the power in the Demon Sealing Sword to everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect and raise their power. At that time, they would have an extra layer of defense when fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

However, the Demon Sealing Sword was very powerful. So powerful that even though Chu Feng had control over it, he was unable to use it to its fullest. So, to want to lend the remaining power in the Demon Sealing Sword to the others in the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not something simple. It truly required some careful studying.

Chapter 950: The Wind Blows

Within a certain underground palace inside the Depraved Ravine, Chu Feng was cultivating in seclusion. However, his goal was not to increase his strength. Instead, it was to completely bring out the power of the Demon Sealing Sword.

His cultivation method was very simple—creating a formation on his own palm.

The Demon Sealing Sword was the same as the Silver Dragon Spear and the Asura Ghost Axe—they had already recognized Chu Feng as their master. Their lives were connected with Chu Feng, and they would move in accordance with his will. They could be brought out from his body, and stored within his body before he had the need to use them.

This was the reason for the formation on his right hand. So long as the imprint was successful, he could freely distribute the power of the Demon Sealing Sword to the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect when the sword was within his grasp.

Which also meant the formation was in Chu Feng's complete control. He could give the power to whoever he wanted to; he would give it to anyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Similarly, he could allot it amongst everyone, he could allot it to an individual, and he could also allot it to certain groups.

"It should be about ready."

Finally, after the final stroke, a seemingly insignificant but very profound formation appeared on Chu Feng's palm. It was barely noticeable, and was quite mystical.

"Haha, Chu Feng, not bad! You're truly quite capable—you truly figured that formation out! If you ask me, the power this formation contains is even greater than that Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation!

"When you activate it, there will be an essential change everyone's strength. Actually, the ordinary ones don't matter much, but the

assistance this provides to Martial Kings like Qiu Canfeng is the most important. After all, they're the ones who supply the most powerful strength in the war."

The queen Eggy couldn't help but praise Chu Feng when his formation finally succeeded.

In the past few days, she had always stayed by Chu Feng's side. She had watched as Chu Feng reached this stage from absolutely nothing. She saw his entire progress as he studied the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation. She had personally seen how Chu Feng brought out his ability in Spirit Formation techniques.

"Heh, since I'm such a genius, should you consider marrying me?" Chu Feng said with a smile.

"Sure! If you don't mind me tearing your thing off on the night of marriage, you can go ahead and try!" Eggy said with a smirk as she placed her hands on her waist.

"Eh..." Chu Feng was quite speechless. He knew she was not a person who could be so easily teased.

hmm

In the same moment, Chu Feng saw the entrance's formation flicker slightly. It meant someone was looking for him.

Chu Feng hurriedly opened the door, and three familiar people entered: Xuan Xiaochao, You Tonghan, and Fu Fengming.

"We greet Lord Sect Head." The three smiled and bowed together, paying their respects.

It wasn't the first time they came to see Chu Feng in the past few days. Chu Feng had also suggested, when there wasn't anyone else, there was no need to call him "sect head" here and "sect head" there—they could just call him Chu Feng. However, that did nothing as they were unwilling to change.

In the end, Chu Feng did compromise. They could call him whatever

they wanted to; he wouldn't care. In any case, they were still his brothers in his heart.

Chu Feng had finished creating the formation, so he was naturally happy after seeing the three of them. He quickly said, "Brothers, stand still!"

Chu Feng hurriedly closed the door, then had them stand orderly in a line. Before letting them say anything, a light shone from his palm, then the Demon Sealing Sword appeared within his right hand.

When the sword appeared, there was no diminishing in the light that originated from Chu Feng's right hand, and instead, continued emitting a faint radiance. Simultaneously, an invisible shock wave passed through Xuan Xiaochao and the others. Their eyes lit up, and their expressions changed greatly.

"My gods! Lord Sect Head, you've succeeded? You've successfully transferred the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation onto your hand?" they exclaimed uncontrollably. The three of them could feel their auras rising. It gave them even more power than the original formation.

It meant Chu Feng had truly succeeded. He not only grasped the power of the Demon Sealing Sword, he could even give them its strength.

"Heh, it seems that it works." Chu Feng smiled and nodded.

"Haha, this is great! Lord Sect Head, I truly prostrate myself in admiration! It's said the former sect head had thought of something like this too, and he had also attempted doing it, but he hadn't succeeded.

"I just didn't expect the thing he failed would be completed by you!" You Tonghan laughed livelily. He felt joy arise from the bottom of his heart.

"Yeah! With this, if we truly start fighting the Immortal Execution Archipelago, we'll gain a greater chance at victory!" Even Fu Fengming who was usually composed nodded excitedly.

Chu Feng naturally understood the reasoning for their intense reactions. Was he himself not very excited as well?

He was now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so finally, he had truly granted the Crippling Night Demon Sect a small favour.

“That’s right. Brothers, you would never look for me needlessly. What’s the matter today? Have the preparations for battle all been set up?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

Although Xuan Xiaochao and the others had quite a good relationship with Chu Feng, they would not visit without cause. Every time they came to find Chu Feng was to update him on their current status.

In the past few days, Chu Feng had been studying the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation in seclusion. He became a boss who threw all responsibilities to others as he handed everything to Qiu Canfeng.

However, Qiu Canfeng was after all the Great Protector of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. He easily managed everyone without any trouble at all. He had also been planning the attack on the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Mm. Under Senior Qiu Canfeng’s arrangements, everything is prepared. With an order, the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army of ten million can head out on conquest at any moment.

“However, we haven’t come here today for this. There’s an important guest who’s come,” Xuan Xiaochao said.

“Important guest?” Chu Feng was taken aback.

“The Immortal Execution Archipelago’s First Immortal,” Xuan Xiaochao said in a low voice.

“Let’s go.”

Chu Feng’s eyes lit up when he learnt it was the First Immortal. A hint of surprise surfaced into his eyes, and without another word, he opened the palace’s doors, and stepped outside.

Right now, all things were prepared. They just lacked the wind to blow them forth.

The First Immortal was the wind they all waited for.

Chapter 951: Two Pieces of Information

Chu Feng soon arrived at the floating palace with Xuan Xiaochao and the others leading the way. Qiu Canfeng had personally built it, and it was an important area for war preparations. Even they didn't have the qualifications to enter.

But Chu Feng, as the sect head, could naturally enter any place since this was a part of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

After entering, Chu Feng discovered the Four Protectors—Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, Fu Liansheng, and You Mingdeng—were there.

Other than those four, there were also two more—Qiushui Fuyan and Taikou.

However, there was an unfamiliar person Chu Feng hadn't seen before. It was an old man with a powerful aura—rank four Martial King. However, he wore a sickly complexion. It was quite evident he was the Immortal Execution Archipelago's First Immortal.

After seeing Chu Feng, his expression was very strange. His gaze especially was very strange, as if he knew Chu Feng already.

Chu Feng even saw a hint of near indiscernible fear concealed within the First Immortal's gaze as he looked at Chu Feng.

That made Chu Feng puzzled. He could not think of anything regarding himself that made a person like him feel fear.

"Everyone, get out. I want to talk to Chu Feng alone," the First Immortal said after looking at Chu Feng carefully.

"That will not do. What if you intend to harm my sect head?" But You Mingdeng denied him immediately after he spoke.

"Sect head? He's already become sect head?" The First Immortal felt quite surprised, but he still resolutely said, "If you want to have a discussion, get out. Otherwise, there will be none."

"You..." Xue Xiyue was a bit displeased. She opened her mouth, about to

spit out curses.

"All of you, leave," Chu Feng interrupted.

"Chu Feng, this..." Qiushui Fuyan hurriedly cast a glance at Chu Feng, telling him to be more careful—the First Immortal was very dangerous.

"No matter. Seniors, head out for a moment. I feel that Senior First Immortal truly hopes to cooperate with us," Chu Feng said with a faint smile. His face was completely calm.

"Whatever. Since Sect Head has spoken, let's listen to him. We'll step outside," urged Qiu Canfeng as well when Chu Feng insisted.

"This... Then fine." You Mingdeng reluctantly nodded.

At first, he was very dissatisfied with Chu Feng, and wanted Chu Feng dead no matter what. However, after Chu Feng became sect head, his attitude changed completely, and he became one of Chu Feng's most loyal subordinates. He was absolutely convinced by his aptitude.

"First Immortal, if you dare to inflict harm upon my sect head, you will wish you were dead."

But even so, Xue Xiyue and the others did not forget to fiercely warn the First Immortal before leaving. Only then did they head out.

"Senior First Immortal, although we faced each other as enemies before, I still truly feel sorry for what happened to Ya Fei."

Chu Feng clasped his hands towards the First Immortal after everyone left, representing his apology. He believed the First Immortal had seen Ya Fei already. Even though she was only a Consciousness, if she were still awake, she would still retain her memories. Perhaps she had already told the First Immortal that Murong Xun killed him. And likely also what Chu Feng did to her.

"No need for that. Everything was Murong Xun's fault. It's unrelated to you.

"I've come here today to ask you only one thing. If I help you deal with the Immortal Execution Archipelago, will you truly be able to help Fei'er

rebuild her body? Will you truly revive her?" the First Immortal asked gravely. As he presented that question, he fixed his eyes closely on Chu Feng, his gaze filled with desire.

"Ya Fei's physical body has been destroyed. Her Source Energy has been cut, and I'm afraid other people's bodies may not be compatible. Even if a body were created out of nowhere, it will still be very difficult to recombine her Consciousness with the new body.

"From antiquity, there have been countless examples of destroyed bodies but surviving Consciousnesses. However, if it were that easy to recreate a physical body and thus revive, there would be no such thing as death.

"I'll be honest: I cannot guarantee Ya Fei's resurrection. However, I will say that there are many profound techniques on the Misty Peak. Since Lady Piaomiao had spoken in such a manner, perhaps she truly does have a way to help Ya Fei," Chu Feng said truthfully.

"Ahh... My poor Fei'er!" The First Immortal heaved a long sigh as the grief on his face became greater.

However, in the end, he still said, "Chu Feng, I will help you. But I will only help you reach the stone tablet. Whether you'll be successful is your own business. I have nothing to do with that.

"Moreover, even though it was Murong Xun who killed Fei'er, I will not kill him. Similarly, I will not kill a single person from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

"I can betray them, but I will not kill them."

"Thank you, senior."

Chu Feng rejoiced in his heart. Although the First Immortal held quite a position in the Immortal Execution Archipelago, from his words and actions, Chu Feng didn't feel he was being lied to.

For Ya Fei, his precious granddaughter, he was truly preparing to help Chu Feng.

After concluding, Chu Feng called in Qiu Canfeng and the others. They started to discuss the specifics regarding their plan to deal with the Immortal Execution Archipelago. Of course, when doing these things, the First Immortal was asked to leave with Taikou accompanying him.

The First Immortal had already promised to help them. However, Chu Feng could tell, regardless of the First Immortal's hatred towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he couldn't bear attacking them due to his own kindness.

So, when they started planning how to attack the Immortal Execution Archipelago, naturally it'd be better to exclude him from the conversation. Otherwise, even if he could accept doing such things, there would be even greater guilty feelings in his heart.

"Chu Feng, we've heard two pieces of information when we were heading here. I feel that we must tell you this," Qiushui Fuyan suddenly said.

"Sister Fuyan, what are they?" Chu Feng asked.

"A few days ago, an abnormal scene occurred above the Eastern Sea Region's Fertile Continent. Its usual scalding summer atmosphere became a chilling air full of snow and ice.

"However, the snow and ice only stayed in the sky and didn't fall down. It stretched outward for several thousands of miles. There were even roars akin to wild beasts that came from the snow," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"A phenomenon? Does that mean it's the descent of a Divine Body?" Xue Xiyue asked.

"I'm not sure. But from what I've heard, when a Divine Body appears, there will be indications. However, that scene suddenly appeared, then suddenly disappeared. No one knows what it meant.

"However, there's only been so many occurrences like this that have appeared in the Eastern Sea Region. I feel it's not normal for something to appear so suddenly," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"I agree, it's not normal at all. Sister Fuyan, what's the second news?"

Chu Feng asked.

Chapter 952: A Spectacle about to Arrive

“The second piece of information isn’t really a secret anymore. I’m sure it will be known in every corner in the Eastern Sea Region soon.

“In a few days, there will be an enormous wedding hosted in the Misty Peak. The bride will be Chu Feng’s fiancée, Zi Ling,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“Murong Xun is pushing the marriage day forward?” Chu Feng pupils shrank. He tightly clenched his fists; it was clear he was a bit disturbed. To him, Zi Ling was really too important.

“No, this isn’t a marriage between Murong Xun and Zi Ling.” However, Qiushui Fuyan shook her head.

“Then who?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s Zi Ling and Jiang Qisha’s,” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“What? Jiang Qisha?” Chu Feng couldn’t help feeling shocked. Though, upon another thought, it was not all that surprising.

Zi Ling’s beauty was stunning, and she was a Divine Body. Jiang Qisha lusted for her beauty; that was somewhat understandable. However, Tantai Xue had clearly threatened Jiang Qisha to not do anything to Zi Ling and the others.

Yet, right now, Jiang Qisha was publicly flaunting his marriage with Zi Ling, which was quite crazy. It didn’t make much sense either, because this was simply challenging Tantai Xue.

“It’s a trap?” Chu Feng calmly said after some thought.

“You’ll know whether it’s a trap or not when you see this for yourselves.” As Qiushui Fuyan spoke, she handed out several invitation cards.

They were Jiang Qisha’s invitation cards sent to various forces in the Eastern Sea Region.

After opening it, Chu Feng wrinkled his brows even more. The content on the card truly made one livid.

Jiang Qisha had not only publicly announced he was the disciple of the Holy Land of Martialism's Cursed Soil Sect, he even announced the reason for Zi Ling's limited aptitude—it was because of the special poison in her body, the Heaven Gripping Pellet.

He even clearly stated on the invitation card that Zi Ling's lover was Chu Feng, but due to his incompetence, he was unable to remove the pellet in Zi Ling's body. His heart could not bear such a tragedy.

Thus Jiang Qisha decided to marry Zi Ling. Two years later, when the Heaven Gripping Pellet reached its most optimal state, he would take away her divine power, and have Zi Ling become an ordinary person.

"What a bastard." You Mingdeng was furious after seeing that invitation card. He not only threw it away, he even shattered the desk in the palace.

"This Jiang Qisha brat has truly gotten tired of living." As for Xue Xiyue, she too gritted her teeth from anger. She looked as if she wanted to skin Jiang Qisha alive.

After being together for a while, Qiu Canfeng had told them a few things about Chu Feng. So, they had a decent understanding regarding the relationship between Zi Ling and Chu Feng.

He was now the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, so Zi Ling was the wife of the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

Yet now, Jiang Qisha publicly announced he would marry Zi Ling, and even stated clearly he was doing it for the divine power in her body. He truly went quite far. How could they even endure such a thing?

"It seems that this is most definitely a trap." In contrast to You Mingdeng, Chu Feng appeared rather serene.

"But even if he's luring you, he doesn't need to do all this, right?" said Xue Xiyue furiously.

"No, he's not luring me. In his heart, I'm not an obstruction in any way. He simply doesn't need to go through so much trouble just for me." Chu Feng shook his head.

“Then who is he luring?” All of them were confused.

“A person like Jiang Qisha, who also comes from the Holy Land of Martialism,” Chu Feng said.

“You mean it’s for Tantai Xue?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“Mm. I can feel that Jiang Qisha is still quite afraid of Tantai Xue. He fears she’ll harm Kuang Bainian, and the only reason he is doing this is to force her to appear,” Chu Feng said.

“Do you think she will?” Qiushui Fuyan asked.

“I’m not sure. Tantai Xue had said she would deal with Jiang Qisha, but she also said she would come and find me if that were the case. However, up until now, she has yet to contact me.

“I’m sure she will appear sooner or later. However, that will only be when she feels the time is ripe. Since she hasn’t come in contact with me, it means she isn’t absolutely confident she can defeat Jiang Qisha.

“So, this is a bit troubling.

“Although she promised to help us, there’s no friendship or anything between us. She is no fool, so she wouldn’t risk her life just for us.

“Similarly, the reason Jiang Qisha is doing this is because he’s afraid of his junior’s safety. Therefore, even if Tantai Xue doesn’t appear, he wouldn’t harm Zi Ling and the others. As for now, they are safe,” Chu Feng said after some analyzing.

“Then what should we do? Will we just do nothing and wait here?” Xue Xiyue said bitterly.

“No. No matter who Jiang Qisha is luring, Zi Ling is still my lover. I will not allow her to marry any other person.” Chu Feng shook his head.

“Sect Head, do you mean?” Fu Liansheng also spoke. At the same time, everyone’s gazes were focused on Chu Feng.

“On the day of marriage, capture the bride, and carry out murder!” Chu Feng said calmly.

“Haha, good! Then it’s decided! If we don’t show him a few things, they would truly think they can bully the Crippling Night Demon Sect anytime!” Xue Xiyue and the others were all joyed.

Simultaneously, a hint of extreme chilliness emerged into Chu Feng’s eyes.

Although he appeared very calm after knowing Jiang Qisha was going to marry Zi Ling, it did not mean he was not angry.

In reality, it was the complete opposite. Chu Feng already hated every single fibre of Jiang Qisha’s being. Jiang Qisha dared to even think of marrying Zi Ling—that was a capital offense. Chu Feng was going to kill him.

After confirmation of the plan, they executed it immediately. On that day, Chu Feng personally led the Crippling Night Demon Sect away from the Depraved Ravine. They headed towards the current headquarters of the Immortal Execution Archipelago—towards the Misty Peak.

They could not use the Teleportation Arrays to arrive at the Misty Peak directly. So, they had to leave at an earlier date. They had to take a longer path and sneak into the Misty Peak. Then, on the day of the marriage, when all forces of the Eastern Sea Region were present, they would give the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Jiang Qisha a surprise.

Actually, ever since the Immortal Execution Archipelago took down the Misty Peak and made it into their headquarters, that news had already shocked the entire Eastern Sea Region.

And right now, when Jiang Qisha spread the news that he came from the Holy Land of Martialism and was even going to marry Zi Ling, that shocked everyone even more.

Who was Zi Ling? Divine Body? Chu Feng’s lover? No, that was not all. Everyone knew Zi Ling was still Murong Xun’s fiancée. She was someone who had an arranged marriage with him.

Yet now, Jiang Qisha announced he would marry Murong Xun’s fiancée, in the Immortal Execution Archipelago’s territory! That was simply a slap

in public.

However, the Immortal Execution Archipelago was hosting everything. Even the invitation cards sent to various forces were sent by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. That introduced a problem.

It meant the Immortal Execution Archipelago was now serving Jiang Qisha, or they were serving the force Jiang Qisha came from, the Cursed Soil Sect.

But no matter what, it would be a spectacle one should not miss.

With that thought in mind, sects from various places in the Eastern Sea Region hurried to the Misty Peak. Not to mention the ones who already received invitation cards, even those who hadn't went forth to join in the liveliness.

Chapter 953: Sneaking into the Misty Peak

When people from various areas headed towards the Misty Peak, there was also an army of ten million that covertly snuck in.

They were disguised and walked beneath the sea—it was the Crippling Night Demon Sect led by Chu Feng.

However, no one knew of their arrival because at that very instant, they were all deep under the sea. They were surrounding a round boulder.

“Sect Head, you’re certain the formation Lady Piaomiao spoke of is here?” You Mingdeng slightly frowned as some doubt arose.

After all, he was a rank four Martial King and a Gold-cloak World Spiritist. Yet, he could not tell what was special about that boulder.

“There’s no doubt about it.” Chu Feng lightly smiled as he firmly nodded. Actually, if it weren’t for the Heaven’s Eyes, he too wouldn’t have found that formation because it was really too hidden.

But despite Chu Feng’s assurance, You Mingdeng, and even many others, were doubtful. No matter how you looked at it, this boulder didn’t seem like a boundless formation that could move millions of people.

“Master, you can activate this formation.” Chu Feng smiled again, and then with mental messaging, he sent the rest of the information to Qiu Canfeng.

Qiu Canfeng’s eyes lit up after hearing Chu Feng’s words. Then, he stood out and laid an Activation Formation on the boulder.

hmm

When the formation was in progress of activating, the seemingly ordinary boulder immediately shone with radiance. The light quickly converged to form a formation which then enveloped all the members within.

When countless runes swirled around, layer after layer of odd power drifted within the formation.

“Waa, it truly is a formation! It’s amazing!”

Almost everyone was shocked by its appearance. Expressions of surprise surfaced onto their faces.

They could feel the power it contained, and they also understood its profoundness.

Even a person like Qiu Canfeng couldn’t help praising, “As expected of Lady Piaomiao. This is truly something not an ordinary person can do.”

“This is a formation Senior Piaomiao spent several hundred years building. To say it’s her life’s work wouldn’t be an exaggeration.

“This formation is as abstract as the Formation of Multitudinous Talismanic Soldiers cast by Jiang Qisha. It’s even a bit more powerful.

“As long as it borrows a bit of the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s power, it can create warriors as powerful as us and we can also control them.

“On the day of the wedding, Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha will definitely welcome the various guests. At that time, activate this formation and attack the Misty Peak.

“When the army attacks, even if their defenses are enough to stop us, they will ignore the inside of the Misty Peak. I and the First Immortal will then go the stone tablet, and I will cultivate the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique,” Chu Feng said.

“But Sect Head, even though it’s powerful, this formation cannot allow us to completely overtake the Misty Peak. It will at most catch them off guard for a short while.

“As for the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, it clearly isn’t something that’s easy to cultivate. There’s only a brief amount of time! What if you’re discovered?” They were still not too worried.

“Naturally, the Mysterious Technique isn’t easy to cultivate, but I doubt it will be so challenging that I will fail.

“Lady Piaomiao had described its cultivation difficulty. If I’m not mistaken, I should finish within half a day,” Chu Feng said.

“Half a day?” You Mingdeng and the others couldn’t help deeply gasping.

“Half a day is enough. Otherwise, my Zi Ling would truly become his.” Chu Feng faintly smiled—confidence was worn on the corners of his mouth.

“Then… fine. We will follow your arrangements.” You Mingdeng and the others no longer doubted him.

“Everyone, the success of this conquest will depend on you. If we obtain victory, all of you have done deeds of absolute importance. I, Chu Feng, will definitely repay all of you.” Chu Feng was very thankful—thankful for these millions of people who were willing to put their lives on the line just for his sake.

“Sect Head will be victorious! The Crippling Night Demon Sect will be victorious!” someone suddenly shouted.

“Sect Head will be victorious! The Crippling Night Demon Sect will be victorious!” Quickly after, everyone started yelling. With these words, they declared their unyielding loyalty towards Chu Feng.

Chu Feng didn’t blame them or anything for making such a ruckus. Although this was already within the borders of the Misty Peak, the sea was very deep. Moreover, they had already laid Concealment Spirit Formations beforehand. Even if they were shouting loudly here, people outside wouldn’t be able to hear them.

However, he had to admit, when seeing so many people willing to fight for him, he not only felt gratitude, he felt very emotional.

Afterwards, Chu Feng didn’t dally any longer. He leapt forward and came by the First Immortal’s side.

The First Immortal’s eyes were glittering, and he said unbelievably, “I had thought you relied on your master Qiu Canfeng to become sect head, but I now seem to be wrong.”

“Hoh…” Chu Feng gave a light smile, then said, “Let’s go.”

Chu Feng consumed the Alternation Pellet Lady Piaomiao prepared for him. After changing his appearance, he pretended to be the First Immortal's servant as they advanced toward the Misty Peak.

When they came above the sea surface, Chu Feng saw a lively scene he had never seen before. There were not only several new palaces built within the Misty Peak, it was very crowded scene. One could see people everywhere in the sky.

Rough estimations gave him a number of over a hundred million people. Ninety percent were from other Eastern Sea Region forces. They came here just to watch the upcoming display.

No one was denied entry to the Misty Peak at that moment. Regardless of strength, position, or status, so long as they came here, they would have good food and good residences. It was quality treatment of guests.

"Your Immortal Execution Archipelago truly isn't simple. They've made such a huge show even when they give their own fiancée to others." Chu Feng couldn't help but mock the First Immortal when they saw such a grand presentation.

"Hoh..." It was now his turn to give a light smile. Then, he said to Chu Feng, "Even if it gets more impressive, so what? It's not like you're going to allow this marriage to be held successfully."

The First Immortal dashed forward and increased his flying speed towards the Misty Peak.

Chu Feng lightly smiled as well. He too dashed forward and followed the First Immortal's steps.

With the First Immortal leading the way, they were met with no obstructions even though it was occupied by the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They thus easily entered the Misty Peak.

Chapter 954: A True Divine Body

Although Chu Feng had entered the Misty Peak, he could not go see Zi Ling, nor could he go to the stone tablet.

Actually, he could not go anywhere. He could only rest in the First Immortal's residence. Everything was left up to him, and every piece of information was to be inquired by him.

In a situation like this, if the First Immortal held malicious intentions and wanted Chu Feng dead, it would be easy for him to do so. However, Chu Feng did not feel any sort of uneasiness or nervousness.

It wasn't that Chu Feng believed in the First Immortal, it was that he believed in the affection between the First Immortal and Ya Fei. For her, he wouldn't sell Chu Feng out.

Yet, this wait lasted ten full days. Although no one had gone to this residence looking for trouble, the First Immortal had yet to return.

This made even the calm Chu Feng a bit anxious. By the look of things, tomorrow was the wedding day between Zi Ling and Jiang Qisha. However, the First Immortal hadn't returned. Could something have happened?

jii

Just when Chu Feng was so nervous he couldn't stay still anymore, the palace door was opened. At the same time, a familiar person walked in—the First Immortal.

"Senior First Immortal, you've finally returned. Why were you gone for so long?"

Chu Feng's tense heart was relaxed at last. But only after nearing the First Immortal did he discover the stench of alcohol exuding from his body. He had likely drank quite a bit of wine.

"I haven't seen the ancestor and the master in a long time. They welcomed me, so I couldn't refuse. I simply couldn't leave the banquet.

“But don’t worry. I got the thing you wanted. This is the Spirit Formation key that leads to the stone tablet.” As the First Immortal spoke, he took out a key, then said, “However, the ancestor seems to view it with quite a bit of importance. If I hadn’t made countless contributions for them, there’s no chance they’d grant me this key. Even now, they don’t permit me to bring anyone else there. Only I alone can go up and cultivate.

“But that’s not an issue. Tomorrow, on the day of marriage, your Crippling Night Demon Sect will come and make trouble anyway. At that time, everything will be in chaos so there will be no problem when I bring you there amidst the havoc.

“Moreover, today, I went to the stone tablet and gave it a look. I even found the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, and attempted to cultivate it.

“However, I found it too difficult to cultivate. It would require me half a year to a full year even for a rough understanding of the technique. It’s quite an urgent situation right now. How will you be successful?”

“Hoh, First Immortal, you’re afraid I’ll fail?” Chu Feng asked with a smile.

“Yes, of course I am. After everything that’s done, success is the only option.” The First Immortal nodded.

“Senior, don’t worry. Although it’s a gamble, it’s not like I lack any confidence. It won’t matter how difficult the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique is to cultivate. Half a day is absolutely enough.”

Chu Feng was very sure of himself. Let alone the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique which there had been past instances of success, he even grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill which there had been no recorded instances of success.

“It seems that the rumours are not false. You truly are a monster. The Immortal Execution Archipelago shouldn’t have made you an enemy.” The First Immortal gave a long emotional sigh when he saw Chu Feng’s definite trust in himself.

“Senior, do you have news regarding Zi Ling and the others? How are they right now?” Chu Feng asked. That was the thing he was most worried right now.

“Don’t worry. Not to mention Zi Ling and the others, even the people from the Misty Peak are in a very good condition. Jiang Qisha is fearful for his brother’s safety, so he doesn’t dare touching them. And right now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has already become Jiang Qisha’s puppet; naturally, they don’t dare to go against his words and harm any one of them,” the First Immortal said.

Chu Feng’s heart was even more at ease. He couldn’t help walking up to the palace window and looking at the stelliferous night sky. However, in his heart, complicated emotions started stemming forth.

Despite the tranquility during the night before the great battle, Chu Feng’s heart could not be soothed.

Even though Chu Feng had a certain amount of confidence, the future was always filled with variables. There were some things that he could not affect.

In such a crucial moment, he too was afraid. He was afraid of losing. He was afraid of defeat. Not only would it represent his death, it would represent the death of all the members in the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and all his lovers and brothers.

However, Chu Feng didn’t even know who his parents were! He still didn’t know who sealed Eggy in his body, in addition to the other powerful World Spirit!

So, he was afraid. If he were dead, no mysteries would be unraveled. So, he had to win this battle.

At the very same instant, Jiang Qisha was in Murong Mingtian’s residence.

“What is this?” Murong Mingtian couldn’t help knitting his brows when he saw several pellets in Jiang Qisha’s hand.

Those pellets were very special. There were countless minuscule runes

imprinted on them. Those runes looked as if they were alive as they were slowly squirming around.

"This is a treasure from my Cursed Soil Sect, called the Talismanic Pellet. It demands several years of concocting, and even though it has a similar effect as Forbidden Medicines, its backlash is very tiny. Its strength is much stronger as well," Jiang Qisha explained.

"Why are you giving me such a treasure?" Murong Mingtian asked in confusion. Jiang Qisha words had told him that these Talismanic Pellets seemed to be an invaluable treasure.

The pure advantages it had in comparison to Forbidden Medicines were sufficient as evidence.

"Tomorrow, that witch will come. She isn't easy to deal with, and I need you to help me," Jiang Qisha said.

"You're talking about that Tantai Xue? Isn't she just a rank nine Martial Lord? You're afraid of just a rank nine Martial Lord? That doesn't seem like you, right?" Murong Mingtian said puzzledly.

"She was a rank nine Martial Lord, but the present is different from the past. Do you remember the phenomenon that appeared? It appeared because she made a breakthrough. If I'm not mistaken, she has already become a Martial King," Jiang Qisha explained.

"She caused the phenomenon? That means she has a Divine Body?" Murong Mingtian felt a bit amazed.

"That's right. She does indeed have a Divine Body." Jiang Qisha nodded.

"Even if she does, she's only a rank one Martial King. Is there a need to be this nervous?" Murong Mingtian lightly smiled and said.

"Hoh..." However, Jiang Qisha smiled—it was a very strange smile. Then, he asked Murong Mingtian, "Have you seen a true Divine Body?"

Chapter 955: The Wedding Begins

"I..."

Murong Mingtian was a bit speechless. Although Zi Ling had a Divine Body, due to the Heaven Gripping Pellet, she simply hadn't fully used its power. She was even much inferior to those with good aptitudes. Therefore, he had never seen what a true Divine Body looked like.

"There's a reason we call Tantai Xue a witch. It's one thing if she doesn't make a breakthrough, but since she has, it won't be as simple as merely one rank. She doesn't only have a true Divine Body, she is even a witch," Jiang Qisha said gravely.

Murong Mingtian couldn't help gulping when he looked at Jiang Qisha's serious gaze. It was the first time he saw him face someone so solemnly.

"If that Tantai Xue comes tomorrow, you face her first. Help me test her abilities, but don't use the Talismanic Pellets. Only use them when Tantai Xue is injured, then we will kill her together," Jiang Qisha said.

"Injured? You're certain she will be injured?" Murong Mingtian's expression couldn't help changing.

"Hoh. I never do things I lack assurance in. I admit, that witch Tantai Xue is very powerful, and especially after her breakthrough even I will feel some difficulty in defeating her, but I am certain she will die when she comes." Jiang Qisha smiled with smug, then strode away.

"Ancestor, do you think there's something wrong with these pellets?" asked Murong Niekong who had been silent before Jiang Qisha left.

"There won't be. If Jiang Qisha wanted to harm me, he would have done so already. There would be no need for so much work." Murong Mingtian shook his head.

"But Ancestor, if Jiang Qisha spoke truthfully about these Talismanic Pellets, aren't they quite precious? Things like these are simply invaluable in the Eastern Sea Region, yet he's willing to give such things to you!" Murong Niekong said.

“Normally, of course he wouldn’t, but now, there are no such things as willing or not willing. He does need a chess piece like me, after all.

“Hoh… He wants me to test that witch’s strength. I’m quite amazed he can think of such a thing. If her strength is so powerful that even he stands no chance, doesn’t that mean I’m absolutely dead?” A sneer arose onto Murong Mingtian’s face, and a hint of fury surfaced into his eyes.

“That Jiang Qisha should truly be damned. He has only been using us from the very start. Ancestor, if this treatment continues, how long do we endure this for?” Murong Niekong was rather angry as well.

“It’s about time. Tomorrow, I’ll let Jiang Qisha know that I, Murong Mingtian, am no pushover.” Suddenly, a strange glint emerged into his eyes, indicating a long-planned scheme.

“Ancestor, could it be… you’ve succeeded?” Murong Niekong rejoiced.

“Mm.” Murong Mingtian nodded.

“But Ancestor, since you’ve succeeded, why didn’t you kill Jiang Qisha just now, and instead are waiting until tomorrow?

“You know how much pain Xun’er is feeling because Jiang Qisha plans to marry Zi Ling! Even putting him aside, what he’s done is a huge disgrace to the Immortal Execution Archipelago!” Murong Niekong said.

“You don’t understand. On the surface, Tantai Xue is Jiang Qisha’s archenemy, but in reality, is she not our archenemy as well?

“If she truly comes tomorrow in order to save Zi Ling and the others, that means after dealing with Jiang Qisha, she will deal with us.

“Rather than removing Jiang Qisha and leaving behind a danger like Tantai Xue, why not instead use Jiang Qisha to remove Tantai Xue, then afterwards remove Jiang Qisha? With that, there will be no more worries.

“As for disgrace? Hoh… When I kill Jiang Qisha tomorrow in front of all the forces in the Eastern Sea Region, who’s the one disgracing who?” Murong Mingtian said smugly.

“Ancestor, you are truly brilliant.” The joy on Murong Niekong’s face

became even stronger.

The seemingly simple wedding was in reality an ambush of danger. But what was fated to arrive would arrive sooner or later. When the sun rose from in the east sea, when it was just dawn, the Misty Peak was already crowded because today was the day of the wedding.

The ceremony required an extremely vast area. Naturally, the Misty Peak was unsuitable.

Therefore, that area was set up outside the Misty Peak—an enormous floating Spirit Formation. Its only use was really to support the banquet and hold over a hundred million people.

At that moment, the ceremony had already began. Not only could guests from various areas enter, even the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago could. Other than a small portion of people who were still responsible for guarding, nearly everyone entered the gorgeous arrangement.

The wedding area also looked very special. It was not flat, and seemed more like stairs: the center was the highest, and the borders were the lowest.

Everyone could thus see the entire wedding event.

Those who sat on the tallest level were naturally the people with the highest positions and strengths in the Eastern Sea Region. For example, Murong Mingtian, Murong Niekong, and the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Only they were worthy to sit on the highest stage.

None were allowed to sit on that level other than them. Even people like the First Immortal could only sit on the second level.

“That’s Murong Mingtian? The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the one who controls them behind the scenes, the person who made the originally insignificant Immortal Execution Archipelago into the true overlord of the Eastern Sea Region?”

The person most focused upon was naturally Murong Mingtian. One must know that before the great battle at the Misty Peak, there had been

simply no one who knew of his existence.

Murong Mingtian quite enjoyed the crowd's discussions and their gazes of admiration, even adoration.

So, he was in quite a good mood. With a smile worn on his face, he stood up, and spoke some customary words representing the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

Though they were customary, after every single sentence, thunderous claps would follow. There was no one who dared to disrespect this several-hundred-year-old ancient monster.

"Next, please welcome the stars of today's event!" After a brief speech, Murong Mingtian cast his gaze towards the Misty Peak.

At that instant, firecrackers were released, and gongs and drums resounded in the sky. A group of people wearing very festive clothing walked slowly over in the air as they held up an exquisite red sedan chair.

The person who led was in red, and he rode a flying horse over. It was Jiang Qisha.

As for the person within the sedan chair, without even guessing, they all knew it was Zi Ling.

At that moment, everyone held their breaths. Their gazes were fixed on Jiang Qisha, and on the sedan chair.

The carefully prepared wedding ceremony had truly began.

Chapter 956: Madman

"Jiang Qisha! He's the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism, Jiang Qisha!"

"He's too powerful. At such an age, he's already a rank four Martial King. This is a true genius! In comparison, not to mention Murong Xun, even Chu Feng can't even be discussed equally with him!"

The people within the banquet cheered endlessly. All sorts of conversations rang out one after the other. Everyone was attracted by Jiang Qisha's powerful strength. They had never seen a Martial King so young before, let alone one that was rank four.

They were all like frogs at the bottom of the well. They saw a new world—they saw a new world in Jiang Qisha. They were amazed.

Many young women couldn't help but hold their hearts. Many were lovestruck by Jiang Qisha, and even their imaginations went wild. They wished the one in the sedan hair was them instead. They wished they could marry a man like Jiang Qisha. Even when Jiang Qisha glanced past them, their heartbeats would quicken, thinking he was looking at them directly.

Not to mention females, even many males, as they looked at Jiang Qisha, were filled with admiration. Naturally, they weren't stunned by Jiang Qisha's appearance, but by his strength.

Strength. In this world, strength was everything. The rest were useless. Strength was the only standard in this world.

Amidst the cheers and admirative gazes from various people in the Eastern Sea Region, Jiang Qisha kept a smile on his face since the very start. However, it was not a kind one—it was a disdainful one. Jiang Qisha held a mocking smile.

In his eyes, everyone here was only a bumpkin. They were trash who had poor cultivation aptitude yet still wanted to cultivate.

Due to that, when Jiang Qisha arrived at the very top level, he didn't say

any customary words to the crowd. He instead, with an arrogant tone and a loud voice, asked, “Do you know of Chu Feng?”

“We do!” the crowd replied in unison.

“Then do you know of Zi Ling?” Jiang Qisha asked again.

“We do!” replied the crowd again loudly.

“Then, do you know Chu Feng and Zi Ling love each other, and are a pair of affectionate lovers?” Jiang Qisha suddenly asked with a smile.

“What? This...”

Everyone was shocked at those words. However, they had heard of the relationship between Chu Feng and Zi Ling.

On the invitation cards sent out by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, it had also stated Chu Feng and Zi Ling were lovers, so more or less everyone knew about them.

However, Zi Ling was the person Jiang Qisha prepared to marry! They couldn’t understand why he suddenly mentioned this.

“Hoh...” Jiang Qisha faintly smiled at the crowd’s bewildered and doubtful expressions. Then, he said, “This is the truth. If you don’t believe me, I can call out Zi Ling and have her tell you about it.

“As for why I said this, it’s because I want to tell you this: it doesn’t matter what relationship Zi Ling has with Chu Feng—no one can stop me. I’m taking away his lover, and I’m forcibly marrying her. What is he going to do about it?” Jiang Qisha loudly laughed—it was quite a mad laughter.

Marriage was a day of elation. For good fortune, unpleasant topics were typically avoided. Where would one find a groom like Jiang Qisha who announced his evil acts?

Even if his words were the truth, he made everyone feel uncomfortable in an environment like this one. His announcement not only smeared on himself the name of an evil person, it even made the ones, who came here from faraway places, accomplices.

But Jiang Qisha didn't seem to care about the crowd's feelings, nor did he want to stop there. After a burst of laughter, he said, "Do you know why I'm marrying Zi Ling? Her beauty? I do admit that Zi Ling is very beautiful. It would not be wrong to say she's the most beautiful woman I, Jiang Qisha, have ever seen.

"But this world is so big; there are plenty of beauties. Of course, I won't marry a woman based on her beauty alone. I'm marrying her because of her divine power.

"There's a Heaven Gripping Pellet in Zi Ling's body, and that had sealed her divine power. But when she reaches the age of twenty, as long as she makes love with another man, her divine power will be taken away by that man. As for me, I'm aiming for precisely that power.

"What if you ask me, what will she become after I take away Zi Ling divine power? I don't mind telling you that she'll become a piece of garbage who can't even cultivate.

"What if you ask me, what will I do to her after stripping away her power? I will tell you that I do hate to harm a beauty like this, but even if she's more beautiful, so what? What use is a person who can't cultivate? In the end, they'll only become a tool for venting lust! Hahahaha..." After speaking, Jiang Qisha once again madly laughed.

Everyone's face was wrinkled and they were extremely speechless. The former joyous atmosphere was completely shattered by Jiang Qisha's words.

No matter what one said, Zi Ling was still an acclaimed beauty in the Eastern Sea Region, yet Jiang Qisha made her into a "tool for venting lust". The people who heard that found it a bit difficult to endure.

"Ancestor, has this Jiang Qisha gone insane? Why is he saying these things on a day like this? He's not only making himself look bad, he's making us look bad. After all, we had helped him host the marriage," Murong Niekong couldn't help but say to Murong Mingtian mentally.

"He's always been a madman, but he's no fool. He can do whatever he wants to do; we'll just watch along. I do want to see what sort of trick he's

playing." In contrast to Murong Niekong, Murong Mingtian was quite a bit calmer.

"Why is no one saying anything? Do none of you think I'm an evil scum who lacks any bit of kindness?" Jiang Qisha suddenly asked.

"You and your mother are scum! You're not worthy to marry Zi Ling, nor are you worthy to live in this world! Get the hell out of the Eastern Sea Region!" An old man suddenly stood up. He pointed at Jiang Qisha and threw out curses.

Jiang Qisha's expression changed slightly. He struck out with his palm, and after an explosion, the old man was completely destroyed as he had become a pool of blood.

"Who else?" After killing that old man with a single attack, Jiang Qisha's eyes glinted with chilliness as he once again swept his gaze over the crowd.

Everyone lowered their heads, silent. After seeing his ruthlessness, who would dare to say anything negative?

Chapter 957: Humiliation

When no one dared to find any more faults with him, Jiang Qisha smiled smugly and nodded in satisfaction. He followed by loudly asking the crowd, “Then, tell me. Am I a good person?”

However, following this question, the crowd remained the same as before: the ocean of people with over a hundred million people were completely silent. No one dared to speak. In the end, the mass of people chose to remain mute.

“Tell me! Am I, Jiang Qisha, a good person?” When there were no responses, Jiang Qisha pointed towards a group of people in the distance. Judging by their clothing, they were likely from the same group—a small sect.

“This... this...” The person who seemed to be the leader stood out when questioned by Jiang Qisha. However, at that moment, he was trembling. He was terrified; he simply could not speak, nor did he know how to respond.

“Go to hell with your ‘this’! You don’t think I’m a good person?” Jiang Qisha was clearly unsatisfied with this person’s performance. Amidst his anger, he furiously attacked again.

BOOM—

When his palm struck down, an orb of light appeared. It instantly engulfed that sect’s people. However, when the orb disappeared, with astonishment everyone discovered that the sect had completely disappeared. What remained was only a large pool of blood on the floor.

“Huu—” Many people panicked. Many were terrified by Jiang Qisha’s actions. How was this even a marriage ceremony? They simply came to be killed!

Jiang Qisha was really too fierce. Was he truly preparing to annihilate the guests who came to join his marriage ceremony?

“Tell me, am I a good person?” After destroying the small sect with a

single palm, Jiang Qisha pointed at another one.

"Yo-yo-you're a good person! Lord Jiang Qisha is a good person!" Learning from the mistakes of the previous force, the people who were questioned this time didn't dare to hesitate.

"Haha, not bad! I like your fake sincerity!" Jiang Qisha happily roared with laughter after hearing their reply. But after laughing, he looked at the crowd, and asked again, "However, I want to hear all of you tell me. Am I, Jiang Qisha, a good person?" As he spoke, strong bloodlust appeared in his eyes—it was a threat laid bare.

"Lord Jiang Qisha is a good person!"

"Lord Jiang Qisha is a true good person!"

Before such threats, the crowd no longer dared to stay silent. At first, only a small portion replied, and they were not all that loud either. But in the end, everyone was speaking in unison, and the sound was deafening, louder than even thunder, as if the words said were their true feelings.

"Haha, that's right! I, Jiang Qisha, have done all sorts of bad things, but I am still a good person because no one dares to say otherwise.

"Let me tell you this: in this world, there is no true good person, nor is there a true bad person. What is kindness? What is evil? Hell, that's all rubbish. It's all nonsense.

"In this world, whoever's fists are harder is the right one. The victor is the king, and the loser is the thief—that's the only truth in this world.

"Today, I'm forcibly marrying Zi Ling, because I'm strong. If he, Chu Feng, has the ability to stop me, how could I have her as my bride?

"When all's said and done, Chu Feng is trash. So trash he can't even protect the one he loves.

"When all's said and done, my fist is harder than his. So hard that he doesn't dare to say anything, and can only pettily endure this humiliation.

"As long as I have strength, I'm the king. It doesn't matter if there's something I should have or shouldn't have—as long as I want it, I will

have it because no one has the power to stop me," Jiang Qisha loudly shouted, his tone filled with arrogance.

His words didn't invoke the anger of the crowd. Instead, it greatly diminished their fury. They even started feeling Jiang Qisha's words were absolutely correct and very reasonable.

The winner was right, and the loser was wrong. The strong were the rulers. Was that not the only truth in this world?

He, Jiang Qisha, was powerful. So what if he did all sorts of evil things? Who dared to do anything to him? As he said, if Chu Feng were strong enough, how could he have allowed Jiang Qisha to take away his lover and forcibly marry her?

"Although this Jiang Qisha is ruthless, he is reasonable."

"Yeah! I heard that Chu Feng, Lady Piaomiao, and Qiushui Fuyan had all safely left the Misty Peak. Chu Feng isn't dead yet. Today, the Immortal Execution Archipelago has sent out invitation cards, so Chu Feng naturally knows about this marriage.

"If it were another person who dared to marry Zi Ling, judging by Chu Feng's nature, he would definitely skin that person alive. However, if it's Jiang Qisha, he wouldn't have such thoughts, right? Not to mention coming to stop him, he doesn't even have the guts to show up."

"That's right. I even thought that Chu Feng was a person who dared to do anything and feared nothing. I thought he was a hero, but now, it seems that he's only a coward who's afraid in the face of strength."

"Yeah yeah yeah! Back then, when Chu Feng took away Zi Ling from the Flower Valley, how mighty was he! Yet, right now, when his lover's going to be married to another person, there's no news of him. He's pretending he doesn't know about it. It appears that this genius is quite disappointing. It's not that Chu Feng was too powerful, it's just that his opponents were too weak.

"Right now, when his opponent's Jiang Qisha from the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng's courage is all gone! He's become a coward who

trembles by mere rumours."

Not only did many people approve of Jiang Qisha's words, they even spoke to humiliate Chu Feng. They felt Jiang Qisha's very actions were very reasonable; on the other hand, Chu Feng became trash.

"Haha, everyone, my friend Jiang Qisha's words are very correct. In this world, what is evil? What is righteousness? Only those with hard fists have the right to judge. Only the words from the powerful matter." Murong Mingtian also stood up, and loudly said, "Chu Feng has not only killed members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he even dares to steal my Royal Armament. How arrogant of him. How impressive. The world even titled him as an unprecedented genius in the Eastern Sea Region.

"But is he truly that invincible? If he's that powerful, why did he escape when we attacked the Misty Peak, and why isn't he even showing himself when his own lover is being married off to someone else?

"In the end, he only bullies others with someone behind his back. He only bullies the weak and is afraid of the strong. Now, without Lady Piaomiao's protection, who does he even think he is?" Murong Mingtian took that chance to humiliate Chu Feng. It could be seen that in his heart, he felt quite the resentment towards Chu Feng.

"Senior Murong is very correct. That Chu Feng is only a coward!"

"That's right. He can't even protect his own woman. Is he even a man?" After Murong Mingtian spoke, many people loudly added and started shaming Chu Feng as well.

"Murong Mingtian, are you certain that Chu Feng will truly not dare to come?" But just at that moment, there was a person who stood up and loudly questioned.

After that person spoke, everyone was shocked. That person not only called Murong Mingtian by his direct name, he even wore a long robe and didn't reveal their appearance. The clothes that person wore and his actions made the people who mocked Chu Feng feel an indescribable uneasiness.

Chapter 958: Endless

"Insolence! Who do you think you are to call my ancestor by name directly?!" The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago were furious. They pointed at the person who spoke, and were about to make their move. That person's actions meant they undoubtedly came here to stir up trouble.

"Wait." However, just at that moment, Murong Mingtian stopped them. Moreover, he cast his lightly squinting gaze at the long-robed person, and sneered, "When my Immortal Execution Archipelago and the three clans arrived at the Misty Peak, Chu Feng wasn't even capable of participating in battle. He could only stay on the side and watch. If it weren't for Lady Piaomiao who sacrificed herself to bring Chu Feng and Qiushui Fuyan away, he would have already died. Do you think he will still dare to come?"

"That may not be so." The person lightly smiled, then said, "Everyone knows Chu Feng is a member of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and they always emphasize camaraderie. I've even heard the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army has secretly gathered here.

"No one knows whether they've gathered to avenge Chu Feng or not.

"Besides, Lady Piaomiao was only injured. She hadn't died. Are you certain after Lady Piaomiao recovers, she won't join with the Crippling Night Demon Sect and return?"

As that person spoke, he pointed towards the crowd, and fiercely shouted, "And you, you despicable bastards! You don't talk about Jiang Qisha taking away Chu Feng's lover, you don't talk about him killing innocent, and instead, you're shaming Chu Feng! Do you not fear he'll bring the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army over and also cut your filthy mouths and take away your insignificant lives?"

"This..." After that person spoke, the people who were humiliating Chu Feng before changing their expressions greatly. An indescribable chilliness was born in their hearts.

Were they not afraid of Chu Feng? Of the Crippling Night Demon Sect? Of Lady Piaomiao?

They were. Of course they were. They were even more afraid after that person spoke. To dare to directly say Murong Mingtian's name in a place like this, and even words like those, meant he didn't come with kind intentions. He was likely one of Chu Feng's people.

"Haha, no matter the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or Chu Feng, whoever dares to come, I'll do the same to them as I will to you! Not even a trace of soul or corpse will remain!"

Murong Mingtian roared with laughter. Amidst that laughter, however, he suddenly waved his sleeve. A boundless Martial power was released, and after a boom, the long-robed person was destroyed.

The observers couldn't help letting out a relieved sigh. His actions were undoubtedly telling the crowd that with him here, even if Chu Feng and the others truly dare to come, it would be no more than committing suicide. No one could stir up trouble in this place.

"Not even a trace of soul or corpse will remain! Are you certain?" But just at that moment, the voice rang out again. At the same time, a figure quickly flew over. When it neared, everyone was astonished.

This time, the person did not wear a long robe, so his face was clearly shown before the crowd.

However, he had a very blurry complexion. Most importantly, his entire body was translucent, and it was shining with light. That was simply not a normal person's appearance, but more like a Consciousness.

"Consciousness? It's a Consciousness?"

"That's not right. Even if he is, it would have been destroyed. Just now, Senior Murong had clearly killed him. How could he possibly reappear?" Many people started panicking as they felt the oddness of that person.

"Hoh, no matter who you are and what sort of tricks you're playing, I'll leave you with a few words: If you appear once, I'll destroy you once. No matter how many times you come, it's useless."

Murong Mingtian sneered and once again attacked. Like before, that person stood no chance against the strength of a rank seven Martial King. After a bang, he shattered.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble...

However, when that person exploded, violent rumbles came from the distance. A dense glowing mass flew over as they covered the entire sky.

“Heavens, that is?”

When the glowing figures approached, the already uneasy crowd paled from fright. Some even start trembling, because they discovered with terror that the glowing mass was formed by people. There were many—over ten million.

The most important thing, however, was that those people were the exact same as the person before. Though they appeared like Consciousnesses, their auras were very real. There were not only countless Martial Lords, there were even several Martial Kings.

“Murong Mingtian, didn’t you say if one appeared you’ll destroy one? Let us see how you will destroy us all!”

Suddenly, a cold laugh came from the crowd. At the same time, layers upon layers of horrifying martial skills shot out from the group of people. The army of ten million started mercilessly attacking everyone.

“Dammit, there’s so many, and there’s even a rank five Martial King! How is happening?” Not to mention the bystanders, even Murong Niekong and the chiefs from the Three Great Monstrous Clans were no longer calm.

“Illusions and deception! Let me see who exactly you are!” Murong Mingtian had leapt up, and with the powerful might of a rank seven Martial King, he dashed into the vast crowd.

He was really too strong. A rank seven Martial King was simply invincible. Every single strike could kill several people; numbers could not overwhelm such power.

“KILL—” After Murong Mingtian made his move, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans joined the battlefield under the command of respectively Murong Niekong and the chiefs.

The battle instantly began. Even though the army of ten million was powerful, with Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King overseeing the situation, they simply could not even approach the marriage area. In just a blink, they were all destroyed and cleanly massacred.

However, before Murong Mingtian and the others even had a chance to enjoy the delight of victory, their complexions turned grave again.

In another direction, another large mass of people appeared. No matter numbers, or strength, it was the exact same as they ones they killed before.

“Let me see how many you can send!” Murong Mingtian was clearly enraged. He leapt forward and once again dashed into the vast ocean of people. As for the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they too quickly followed and joined the battlefield once again.

It was the same as last time. Due to the immense difference in strength, the battle had finished very quickly even though they had great numbers.

However, after the destruction of each wave, another one would appear quickly. The direction they emerged was different every time as well—at first, they had come from the same side, but in the end, they were coming from all directions.

That repeated again and again. Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago was capable of dealing with it, they couldn’t help starting to panic. Even if they were more powerful, their stamina was still limited. If the enemy were coming over endlessly, they would fail to hold on eventually.

Chapter 959: The Attack from a Great Enemy

However, no one noticed, when the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were fighting back the army of ten million of unknown origin, the First Immortal, as the core battle strength of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, had quietly left the marriage area.

He, at that moment, had come into the Misty Peak, and had arrived atop a very important peak. It was the area that held the Mysterious Technique Stone Tablet. Moreover, he was not alone—Chu Feng had also been brought up with him.

"Chu Feng, go. I will guard this place for you. Unless the master or ancestor comes, no one should even think of disturbing you," the First Immortal said gravely after opening the Spirit Formation with the key.

"Senior First Immortal, didn't you say you wouldn't do anything to the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago? What's with the change of heart?"

Chu Feng glanced at the two unconscious people by the First Immortal's side. They were elders from the Immortal Execution Archipelago, and were responsible for guarding this place. However, they were knocked out just now.

"I do not like Jiang Qisha's complete arrogance, his tyrannical attitude, and his absolute disregard for everyone else. I'm even looking forward to you cultivating this Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique and giving that bastard a good lesson," the First Immortal said with a faint smile.

"Senior, don't worry. When I finish, I'll definitely make Jiang Qisha pay the price for his actions." After speaking, Chu Feng stepped into the Spirit Formation gate and walked towards the stone tablet on the peak.

Although he had been within the Misty Peak, he heard every single one

of Jiang Qisha's words outside.

It was one thing humiliating him, but Jiang Qisha dared to speak that to Zi Ling. Bloodlust was already surging within Chu Feng's body. His fury was rampaging. His spew of words was unforgivable.

boom boom boom boom—

Simply no one knew about Chu Feng arriving at the stone tablet within the Misty Peak, because the army outside was truly never-ending. The Immortal Execution Archipelago could not finish killing them.

Even as time elapsed, after countless battles, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans started feeling a bit exhausted. With just a bit of carelessness, they would be destroyed.

After everything that had happened, there were already quite a few people injured. Some had died without even leaving a corpse behind.

The army of ten million would always end up in defeat after every battle, and on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side, there were very few injuries. It was absolutely disproportionate.

However, there was a limited number of people on the Immortal Execution Archipelago's side. Even if there were even fewer people who were wounded during the battle, the numbers accumulated. After many battles, a thousand people had died, and several tens of thousands of people were injured.

"Dammit, what are these things? Why do they never end? Who's the leader of them?"

The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans all panicked. They knew this would not work if they continued this way. Not to mention insignificant people like them, even some Martial Kings would eventually not hold out.

As the proverbs said, "Dripping water can still pierce through stone." Yet this was an endless army of ten million that was a gathering of Martial Lords and Martial Kings! Even if they were even stronger, they would not survive if the current circumstances went unchanged.

“This is too terrifying. These things simply do not die. The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans’ side will lose if this goes on.”

“Heavens! If you ask me, the person who spoke before was likely a part of Chu Feng’s group. In a while, if the Immortal Execution Archipelago falls, won’t we follow them as well since we had insulted Chu Feng?”

Not only did the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago feel danger, even those observing who had spoken quite poorly of Chu Feng felt they were in peril as well.

They truly felt the extremes of fear. Those who had spoken scornfully regarding Chu Feng trembled. There were even a few whose root of life quivered once before they soaked their pants.

“Hoh, Murong Mingtian, you’ve truly gone foolish from age. All of them are created by a formation. Of course it will be ceaseless if you fight them like this.” The silent Jiang Qisha suddenly spoke.

“Created by a formation? What sort of formation can produce such realistic lives? Could it be... that witch has come?” Murong Mingtian only thought of that then.

Actually, he had suspected whether these endless lives were created from a formation, but he had never seen a formation like that within the Eastern Sea Region.

On the other hand, Jiang Qisha had seen similar techniques. So, Murong Mingtian felt if they were truly made by a formation, it wouldn’t be one from the Eastern Sea Region, but from the Holy Land of Martialism.

“I’m not certain on that, but no matter who it is, just find the source and remove it.” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then spread open his palms. A special talisman appeared within his hand, and then he threw it towards the army of ten million.

“Scatter!” Someone realized it was something bad as he saw it flying over. He hurriedly yelled as a warning, wanting to disperse everyone.

But, it was still too late...

jii jii jii—

The talisman was too quick; it passed through several people's bodies, and after piercing through the crowd, the talisman became an odd fish several meters long with runes all over its body.

Immediately after it appeared, it flipped and rushed directly into the sea. Like light, it disappeared instantly.

Afterwards, the army of ten million was very quickly destroyed by Murong Mingtian and the others again. But the strangest thing was this time, the army hadn't reappeared for a very long time.

Murong Mingtian's eyes glittered. He couldn't help turning his head to look at Jiang Qisha.

Everyone also cast their gazes at him. They knew the army wouldn't have vanished for no reason. Jiang Qisha must have done something.

At that moment, he was standing in the air with his eyes closed. The hands held in front of his chest were endlessly changing in gesture. They were changing position so fast no one could even see it what sort of technique he was doing. However, what one could see were layers and layers of shock waves visible by the naked eye were continuously brimming out of his body like a violent gale.

BOOM— Suddenly, a huge explosion rang out in the distant sea. Jiang Qisha's eyes also slowly widened, and he said with a mocking smile, "A bunch of useless people want to fight me?"

"You found them? Who is it?" Murong Mingtian quickly asked.

"The formation is already broken. If they dare to come again, they would have to come with their own bodies. However, with their tiny bit of strength, they wouldn't dare," Jiang Qisha said disdainfully.

"Where? Where are they?" Murong Mingtian furiously asked. After being troubled for so long, he was full of anger. He wanted to completely kill them all and slice up their corpses.

“No rush. They are useless. They can be taken care of at any moment, so leave some strength behind to deal with the real enemy,” Jiang Qisha said with a faint smile.

“Real enemy?” The crowd was taken aback. They didn’t understand.

As for Jiang Qisha, he said quite calmly, “Tantai Xue, since you’re here, why not show yourself?”

Chapter 960: The Powerful Tantai Xue

"Jiang Qisha, you're truly a good person! You take away another person's lover and do things that lower yourself beneath animals. How impressive of you!"

After Jiang Qisha spoke, the nearby air began squirming. At the same time, a person wearing a white long dress with a veil on her head appeared within their line of sight. That person was none other than Tantai Xue.

Many expressions changed after they saw her. Although they were unable to see her complexion, they could tell she was a young woman.

Such a youth was already a rank three Martial King. That was truly unimaginable. At least, in the Eastern Sea Region, there was no one who could accomplish such a feat. So, the crowd all knew that Tantai Xue too came from the Holy Land of Martialism. It was impossible for a person like her to have come from the Eastern Sea Region.

"Rank three Martial King! Not bad, but you seem to have rushed it a bit. Otherwise, with the thing you used back then, becoming a rank four Martial King shouldn't be that much of a problem, right?

"Your mind wouldn't have been... disturbed because you're in a hurry to save Zi Ling for that Chu Feng, right? That's why you're only a rank three Martial King?" Jiang Qisha said with a smile.

"It is sufficient to deal with you." Tantai Xue's voice was cold, and it was still filled with contempt.

"Tantai Xue, what the hell do you think you're so arrogant for? Have you forgotten why you've come to this Eastern Sea Region? If you have, no worries, this young master can remind you. The infamous little witch of the Holy Land of Martialism was forced into a forbidden land when chased by us four brothers! That's why you accidentally came here!" shouted Zhao Yuetian, Jiang Qisha's junior.

"It's one thing that four men were chasing a little woman like me, but

four Martial Kings were chasing me, a rank nine Martial Lord! And you couldn't even catch me! Are you announcing this to tell everyone the four genius disciples of the Cursed Soil Sect are all useless trash?" Tantai Xue sneered.

"You..." Zhao Yuetian was quite choked by Tantai Xue's words, because what she said was true: the four of them were chasing Tantai Xue, yet they had failed. Telling that to everyone really wasn't something glorious.

whoosh Suddenly, she flipped her palm, and a special box appeared on her hand. When she shook it slightly, Kuang Bainian's voice rang out.

"Seniors, save me! Seniors, quickly save me!"

"Dammit! Witch, release my junior!" Zhao Yuetian's voice turned agitated after hearing Kuang Bainian.

"If you want me to release Kuang Bainian, sure. Free everyone, otherwise don't even think about it," Tantai Xue said.

"You are not qualified to discuss conditions with me." Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, then cast his gaze towards Murong Mingtian.

"Insolent witch, you dare to act so impudently just as a rank three Martial King? Do you truly think I'm here for nothing?" Murong Mingtian explosively shouted. The aura of a rank seven Martial King was released, and at the same time, he raised his palm and threw an attack at Tantai Xue.

boom rumble rumble

His strike, though not a martial skill, contained terrifying strength. The King-level Martial power was surging forth, visible by even the naked eye. At that moment, it was like a wild beast as it threw itself towards Tantai Xue with its destructive power.

However, just when his attack was about to strike, Tantai Xue's eyes glinted. Instantly, the sky darkened. Layers of black clouds covered the sky, and a cold chill was the first thing to descend. Countless bone-piercing snowflakes soon followed, and became a violent snowstorm.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

The snowflakes appeared beautiful, but all contained very horrifying aura. Moreover, they would fly in accordance with Tantai Xue's gaze. Not only did the snowstorm completely destroy Murong Mingtian's attack, it even attacked him.

"HAA—"

Murong Mingtian didn't dare to be negligent towards the incoming snowstorm. He raised his hand, and palmed forward. Amidst bursts of roars, countless huge beasts formed by Martial power appeared. As they ran in the air, they ferociously dashed forward.

However, even though this was a fierce rank nine martial skill, it was unable to stop Tantai Xue's attack. When it clashed with the snowstorm, it was instantly shattered. It did not even put up a fight.

"It's that powerful?"

Not to mention bystanders, even Murong Mingtian's expression changed greatly. He was stunned. Even though he knew Divine Bodies were very powerful and had overwhelming fighting strength, he didn't expect her to be this powerful. She was clearly only a rank three Martial King, but such a casual attack was already so violent. He, a rank seven Martial King, was powerless against it.

"I do not believe I cannot deal with you!" But other than shock, Murong Mingtian felt furious. After all, he was still a rank seven Martial King. How could he be forced back by a mere rank three Martial King before the eyes of the crowd?

Amidst rage, he flipped his palm, and took out his Royal Armament. Instantly, the entire atmosphere changed due to its appearance. His aura was also soaring.

After a loud blast, the vast King-level Martial power engaged with the snowstorm. When the two collided, an explosion caused a shock wave to arise and it flew towards Murong Mingtian.

"So powerful. Who is this woman? How does she have such terrifying

strength?" The observers couldn't help deeply breathing when they saw the shock wave spread in all directions.

They had seen Murong Mingtian's strength quite a while before. Many people felt that he was so powerful it went against reason itself, and he was even possibly the only person in the Eastern Sea Region who had a chance at becoming a Martial Emperor.

Yet, now, Tantai Xue simply struck out casually and forced Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King, to use a Royal Armament in defense. He truly stood no chance against that special power.

hmm Just at that moment, the shock wave dissipated, and Murong Mingtian once again appeared.

His clothes were still undamaged, and it could be seen that he wasn't injured. With the power of the Royal Armament, he had successfully stopped Tantai Xue's attack. However, his complexion was not well.

But after organizing his emotions, Murong Mingtian actually laughed. He said, "As expected of a Divine Body, a genius who's obtained the protection of the heavens. It truly is the first time in my entire life that I've experienced such powerful strength. I really do lament at my inferiority."

He said that because he, as a rank seven Martial King, lost to a rank three Martial King—that was quite embarrassing. However, if the one he lost to was not a normal rank three Martial King, but one with a Divine Body, that would be much more acceptable.

After all, everyone knew those who had Divine Bodies were people who held divine power in their hands. No matter cultivation aptitude, or personal strength, ordinary people stood no chance against either.

Chapter 961: Exchanging Hostages

"What? Divine Body? So she has a Divine Body?"

"Doesn't that mean she just used the legendary divine power?"

"I know! I remember! There was a wintry phenomenon that occurred over a week ago! That must have been caused by her."

"That's right. I even personally saw that phenomenon back then. Now that you mention it, it truly is very similar to the technique she's using right now. Doesn't that mean she really does have a Divine Body?"

"This is too powerful. Is this a real Divine Body? A rank seven Martial King must evade her attacks even though she's only a rank three Martial King?"

Indeed, after Murong Mingtian spoke, everyone came to a realization. As they looked at Tantai Xue, their eyes were of surprise and fright, which then turned to extreme fear.

Tantai Xue was different from Zi Ling. Zi Ling had the Heaven Gripping Pellet in her body, and from a young age, her divine power was restricted and she simply didn't have the power she should have had.

But Tantai Xue, on the other hand, had not been restricted. She had a true Divine Body; she was a true genius who had received protection from the heavens.

"Haha, as expected of the witch! It seems that you are qualified to discuss conditions with me." Jiang Qisha suddenly laughed. As he spoke, he cast his gaze towards Zhao Yuetian, and said, "Junior, release them."

Zhao Yuetian quickly rushed into the Misty Peak, and after an instant, when he reappeared, there was a large group of people behind him.

"This is?" After seeing them, many observers were taken aback. They recognized the ones behind Zhao Yuetian.

Of those people, the five disciples of the Misty Peak were included—Chun Wu, Xia Yu, Qiu Zhu, Dong Xue, Yan Ruyu—as well as many

guardians of the Misty Peak.

Other than those, there were also Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang—the ones close to Chu Feng.

However, Spirit Formation chains were tied all around their bodies. Moreover, they were all connected, and even though there weren't any injuries on them, they did look quite pitiful.

But when the observers discovered that they were the ones Tantai Xue wanted, they became aware of a problem: Tantai Xue was together with Chu Feng and Lady Piaomiao. Otherwise, she wouldn't be taking such a risk. That meant they, who had insulted Chu Feng before, were now at risk once again.

"Release my junior," Jiang Qisha said.

hmm Tantai Xue raised her hand slightly, and the box shone with radiance. A person then appeared amidst the light—Kuang Bainian.

However, after they saw him, no matter Jiang Qisha or Zhao Yuetian, their eyes glinted as strong rage surged into their eyes.

At that moment, he was not in a good condition at all. Not only were Spirit Formation chains tied all around him, there were bloody wounds all over his body. Other than those, there were also frightening scars. Even his aura was weak—everything that could be done to make him tragic was done.

It was evident he hadn't received any small acts of torture and cruelty when he was imprisoned.

After seeing Jiang Qisha and Zhao Yuetian, Kuang Bainian looked as if he saw his savior. He quickly shouted, "Seniors, help me—"

bang But before he even finished speaking, out of nowhere, Tantai Xue waved her hand and landed a loud and clear slap on Kuang Bainian's face.

The powerful strength not only spun Kuang Bainian a few times in the air, when he stopped, he opened his mouth and spat out some blood.

"Quiet!" Tantai Xue coldly shouted after the slap.

“Mmm—”

After Tantai Xue shouted at him, Kuang Bainian didn’t retort and truly remained silent. That was very surprising as he’d always had a bad temper. It was as if he were a hungry wolf that saw a fierce tiger—he was simply abnormally obedient.

It could thus be seen that Tantai Xue had left an inerasable shadow in Kuang Bainian’s heart.

“Tantai Xue, I damn your ancestors! You didn’t keep true to your word! You dare to torment my junior like this?!” Zhao Yuetian was furious. He pointed at Tantai Xue and started loudly cursing at her.

“Word? I only said you weren’t allowed to harm the ones close to Chu Feng. I never said I would do the same to Kuang Bainian,” Tantai Xue sneered.

“You...

“You bitch! Since it’s like this, then I’ll torture them right now! I’ll let you know the consequences of harming my junior!” Zhao Yuetian was truly furious. As he spoke, he clenched one of his fists and a whip made from Martial power was created in his hand. He then cast his icy gaze at Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others.

“If you dare to touch them, I’ll take your junior’s puny life right now, then I’ll take yours.” Tantai Xue was very calm, but her tone was full of killing intent.

“Tantai Xue, I know what you’re thinking. You just want to exchange hostages, then deal with us without any worries, right?

“Actually, I have the same thoughts. Come, let us do that. Then, let me see what sort of abilities your so-called Divine Body possesses.” Jiang Qisha suddenly spoke, and he waved his hand at Zhao Yuetian.

Though Zhao Yuetian was unwilling to, he still released them all. However, he did not completely undo the binding around them.

“Wait.” However, Tantai Xue spoke once again. She pointed at the red

sedan chair and said, “Release Zi Ling.”

“Heh, no problem.” Jiang Qisha lightly smiled, and waved his big sleeve. After a boom, the sedan chair was shattered, and as the fragments flew through the air, a beautiful person appeared.

She was wearing a red dress, and ornaments dazzling in gold adorned her body. Her perfect figure, in addition to such careful enhancements, made her look extremely gorgeous. Her beautiful complexion was even enough to enchant millions, and naturally, that person was Zi Ling.

“Waa—”

“Is this Zi Ling?”

“She’s too beautiful. She’s simply even more beautiful than Ya Fei and Qiu Zhu! She’s simply the most beautiful person in the Eastern Sea Region!”

“What a shame, what a shame. She’s such a beautiful woman, and even has a Divine Body, but is fated for… Ahh…”

After seeing Zi Ling, many people couldn’t help but deeply inhale. Admiration surfaced into their eyes, and some men even gulped, lacking a bit of control over themselves.

Zi Ling’s beauty was truly devastating. There were very few who could compare to her, and to say she was the most beautiful woman in the Eastern Sea Region would not be exaggerating. Basically, if it were a man she had definitely moved their hearts.

Tantai Xue didn’t waste any time on words after seeing Zi Ling. She pointed at Kuang Bainian, and said, “Scram. If you land in my hands again, I’ll take away your life.”

At that moment, he no longer hesitated. With large strides, he quickly went towards Jiang Qisha. However, since his cultivation was bound, even if he ran quicker than his current speed, it was still, in reality, not all that fast.

Chapter 962: Shameless and Despicable

"Go. If you're too slow, watch out for my blade." Jiang Qisha swept his gaze over Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others from the Misty Peak. In the end, he stopped on Zi Ling, and said, "My beauty, don't be afraid. I will take you back."

"You shameless man! Chu Feng will not forgive you!" Zi Ling gritted her teeth, so much they creaked. There was also strong killing intent in her beautiful eyes.

"Haha, that trash? I'll be waiting for him. If he comes, I'll cut his flesh bit by bit in front of you. I'll have your Chu Feng beg for forgiveness... right before I kill him.

"Hahaha..." Jiang Qisha loudly laughed. His laughter was one of extreme madness, and extreme sinisterness.

Zi Ling clenched her fists in anger. An indescribable rage surfaced onto her face.

"Sister Zi Ling, let's go." Just at that moment, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang, Chun Wu, Yan Ruyu, and the others all ran over.

Only then did she discover that the others were running towards Tantai Xue with everything they had. In order to avoid burdening others, Zi Ling didn't waste her breath on Jiang Qisha anymore and hurriedly ran towards Tantai Xue as well.

However, they were the same as Kuang Bainian. Since their cultivations were bound, though they could fly, they were rather slow.

But, despite their slowness, no matter Kuang Bainian, or Zi Ling and the others, their speed was about the same.

There weren't any unexpected incidents that occurred with the hostage exchange. When Kuang Bainian safely arrived at Jiang Qisha's side, Zi Ling and the others also safely arrived at Tantai Xue's side.

"Come behind me. They won't be able to harm you," Tantai Xue calmly said.

Zi Ling and the others didn't hesitate. Although they didn't know her, they had heard a bit about Tantai Xue as Jiang Qisha mentioned her quite a few times. They knew she was here to help them.

whoosh

However, just when one of the guardians of the Misty Peak passed Tantai Xue, he suddenly attacked her. Two glowing talismans filled with boundless power landed onto her body, catching her completely off guard.

"You..."

Even Tantai Xue did not expect something like that. The distance between him and her was really too short. When she felt something was wrong, the two talismans had already landed on her snow-white skirt.

bzzzz

boom rumble rumble rumble

In the instant of impact, they rapidly transformed. One became chains of lightning that tied Tantai Xue up, while the other talisman kept on exploding on her body.

"Old Man Liu, what are you doing? Have you gone mad?"

Chun Wu and the others changed their expressions greatly when they saw that. Chun Wu even pointed at the old man and loudly cursed. As she spoke, she was even about to attack him.

"Heh, Old Man Liu? Are you sure?" But just at that moment, the old man's face suddenly changed? No one anticipated that. His complexion was not the only thing that changed—his height did as well.

"You... It's you?!" Initially, Chun Wu and the others were filled with fury. However, after that transformation, fear immediately emerged onto their faces.

Only then did they discover the old man had been secretly swapped. This wasn't Old Man Liu, a guardian of the Misty Peak, but Jiang Qisha's junior, Wu Kunlun.

"Heh. You think trash like you can see through my disguise?

“I’ve had enough with all of you in these days. Other than Zi Ling, all of you will die today!” Wu Kunlun returned to his actual appearance, and he instantly revealed all of his fierceness. As he spoke, he released his rank three Martial King pressure, and was about to start slaughtering them all.

“The one who will die is you.” But just in that absolutely crucial moment, a hand was suddenly held out, which then grabbed Wu Kunlun’s head.

It was Tantai Xue. At that moment, blood was all over her body. Her veil was taken down, showing her ugly appearance. Moreover, her aura was extremely weak. In contrast to this weakness, though, she was releasing a very strong killing intent.

“No!” Jiang Qisha’s complexion changed greatly. He never would have anticipated Tantai Xue to live even after using two treasure-level talismans. Jiang Qisha quickly leapt forward, and flew towards Tantai Xue, hoping to change this horrible change in situation.

“No one will save him.” But before Jiang Qisha arrived, chilliness was released from Tantai Xue’s palm. It instantly enveloped Wu Kunlun, and immediately turned him into a statue of ice.

Afterwards, Tantai Xue’s palm shook, and the large piece of ice was shattered. Wu Kunlun’s aura disappeared completely—Tantai Xue had mercilessly killed him.

“You dare to kill my Junior Wu? I will have your life!”

Jiang Qisha was enraged when he witnessed Wu Kunlun’s death right in front of his eyes. His furious roar shook the world, and after a flip of his palm, a fiery red halberd appeared within his hand.

An incomparable ruler’s pressure enveloped the world in the instant it appeared. The might was even several times fiercer than Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King.

“Despicable thing, the one who will die is you!” Tantai Xue, who fell into the trap, was similarly enraged. Her eyes glinted, and became snow-white.

boom

Simultaneously, the sky darkened, and a violent snowstorm came into existence. As it brought forth chaos, it engulfed everything in an instant.

swish After releasing her divine power, Tantai Xue leapt forward and fought the incoming Jiang Qisha.

boom boom boom

At that instant, the sky above a circumferences of several thousand miles was pitch-black. One could only see the pale-white snowstorm and the blood-red blades of energy.

When those two clashed with each other, horrifying energy shock waves were sent out. Even space itself was shattered, and the sea underneath surged.

It seemed as if the sky had crumbled and the earth had collapsed. The world seemed as though it were to be destroyed by the two of them.

“This is too terrifying. These are the peak geniuses of the Holy Land of Martialism. This is true destructive strength.”

Everyone felt chills go down their spines when they saw such a terrifying battle. All of their hair stood on end; they were completely dumbstruck. Since they were at such a close distance, they were able to feel how powerful the two were.

If they truly used everything they had to fight, it was likely no one within a circumference of several thousand miles would survive. They would be crushed to death by the remnants they released.

But the two of them, when fighting in such a life-and-death situation, were able to prevent any injuries upon anyone despite the world-shaking might they exuded. That meant they had complete control over their strength, and had already grasped their respective power to the maximum.

Chapter 963: The Terminator

The wintry gales howled, shaking the world.

Blades of light flew about, cutting the fabric of space itself.

Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha both held the appearances of a genius. In comparison to the Eastern Sea Region's own geniuses, they were like gods. They were so unimaginably powerful.

They repeatedly traded attacks back and forth as the battle became increasingly intense. The crowd could only see the howling snowstorm and the ferocious blades of fiery energy. The bodies of the two combatants were a blur.

But even though they could not be seen, the mightiness from their martial skills, Royal Armament, and various techniques made everyone's heart surge with various emotions. They were both excited and frightened.

Excited, because they were witnessing the clash of peak geniuses. Frightened, because that was a feeling that arose when beholding such terrifying power.

Admittedly, Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha convinced everyone who was watching of their powerful strength. Even Murong Mingtian himself couldn't help but admit he was indeed inferior to these two monstrous youths.

But in the battle between two tigers, there would always be one defeated. In the clash between two dragons, there would always be a victor. Tantai Xue and Jiang Qisha were no exception.

"Ahh!" Suddenly, a painful cry rang out. A person also shot out from the fierce battlefield, and simultaneously, the devastating energy shock waves vanished instantly.

It was Tantai Xue. At that moment, not only was blood all over her body, she was coughing it out in large amounts. Moreover, her aura was several times weaker than before. Even her body was violently trembling.

She could still stand in the air, but she was at the border of life and death, seeming as if she would fall at any moment.

Jiang Qisha also appeared. He not only held the red halberd in his hand, there was a fiery aura surrounding his body.

It rose endlessly into the air, and was even fiercer than flames. But the most terrifying thing wasn't the fiery aura visible to the naked eye—it was the invisible bloodlust he exuded.

"Tantai Xue, hand your life over!" Jiang Qisha's eyes were blood-red. He was akin to a demon. As he wielded the halberd in his hand, he flew towards Tantai Xue.

"Mm—"

Tantai Xue attempted to move. She wanted to dodge, but it was useless as she could not evade as she wished. Instead, she spat out a mouthful of blood. She was powerless to fight.

But even though Tantai Xue was in no condition to continue, Jiang Qisha didn't hold the slightest trace of care for her. The fiery-red halberd in his hand slashed down with an immense force. He prepared to cut Tantai Xue completely in half.

hmm

However, when everyone expected Tantai Xue to be dead, the space in front of her squirmed slightly, then after a tearing sound, it split open and a pitch-black sword shot out.

After it appeared, it was held horizontally above Tantai Xue, which it then struck Jiang Qisha's fiery-red halberd.

CLANG—

Sparks instantly flew in all directions in the instant of the collision. Simultaneously, Jiang Qisha's wrist trembled. His body quivered, and he sprang back. He was actually forced away by that power.

"What is that?"

Everyone was shocked. They had seen Jiang Qisha's strength, but right

now, the pitch-black sword that appeared out of nowhere so fiercely forced Jiang Qisha away. How could they not be shocked?

"That sword... Could it be?" Murong Mingtian's sharp brows furrowed. An uneasy feeling arose from his heart, because that pitch-black sword looked very familiar.

"Who is it?" Jiang Qisha fiercely shouted with a bit of a frown.

"What, have you forgotten about me already?" Space itself split once again, and a person slowly stepped out, appearing before the crowd.

That person had long hair that fell onto his shoulders, and a large sword in his hand. Although he wasn't that handsome, there was a hint of a valiantness on his face. Moreover, there was some brilliance swirling around his body, making him appear akin to some sort of divine being.

Most importantly, such a young man like him was emanating the aura of a rank four Martial King.

"Chu Feng? It's Chu Feng?!"

Everyone was dumbfounded. It was not only because Chu Feng dared to appear in this place, nor was it because he was releasing the aura of a rank four Martial King. It was because the person who forced Jiang Qisha back was Chu Feng.

"What's going on? Wasn't Chu Feng a Martial Lord? Why has he suddenly become a Martial King, and even a rank four Martial King?"

"What happened? Why has Chu Feng's strength reached such a level, and why does the weapon in his hand look so familiar? It seems like the Crippling Night Demon Sect's treasure, the Royal Armament the former sect head used, the Demon Sealing Sword!"

"Demon Sealing Sword? That's right, it is the Demon Sealing Sword! Chu Feng got his hands on it? He's actually obtained this king of Royal Armaments? What is happening?" There were many surprised exclamations, but there were even more panic and fear.

"Chu Feng!" Zi Ling and the others were elated as they quickly ran up to

Chu Feng.

When he saw them all safe and sound, Chu Feng's heart was at ease. But he didn't have time to chat with them as he hurriedly placed his palm on Tantai Xue's forehead.

wuaoo—

When his palm touched Tantai Xue, an ear-piercing cry rang out. At the same time, one could see a red aura appearing from Chu Feng's body, and it endlessly surged into Tantai Xue's body.

As it was channeled into Tantai Xue, her wounds started healing, and even her aura started to turn for the better.

The reason this technique had such a mystical healing effect was because it was not an ordinary technique, but a Secret Skill—the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique.

"It's a Secret Skill! I seems that I've underestimated you. This cultivation you have doesn't belong to you. You must have gotten it from some sort of special technique, right?" Jiang Qisha coldly said.

However, Chu Feng simply ignored Jiang Qisha. He had kept on healing Tantai Xue, and only after she was saved from danger did he take a relieved sigh.

"Thank you..." With the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique, Tantai Xue had indeed survived. But after giving her gratitude, she closed her eyes, and fainted away.

"Zi Ling, you guys, take care of her." Chu Feng passed the weak Tantai Xue over to them.

"Chu Feng, you..." Seeing Chu Feng, whose expression was calm but heart was bursting with rage, Zi Ling and the others were a bit concerned. They knew Chu Feng well; they knew he wouldn't leave this matter alone.

"Don't worry, I won't be rash." Chu Feng lightly smiled, and as he spoke, he stood up. He then cast his gaze swirling with killing intent and fury towards everyone else and said indifferently, "I just want to finish this

battle."

Chapter 964: The Battle Begins

"Finish this battle? You're quite courageous to dare and say that. You truly think you can defeat us alone?" Murong Mingtian sneered. Although Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, any person who had some experience with battles could see that Chu Feng had obtained this cultivation with some sort of special method.

Murong Mingtian, who had cultivated on the Misty Peak, knew quite well how Chu Feng obtained his current cultivation. But even though Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, he wasn't afraid because he didn't think Chu Feng was any match for Jiang Qisha. Besides, Chu Feng was alone, while they still had an army of dozens of millions.

"Hoh. Murong Mingtian, if you truly think I'm alone, you are absolutely wrong." Chu Feng lightly smiled, then rumbles starting resounding from the distant.

Very soon, over ten million people wearing long black robes appeared within their line of sight, where they then quickly arrived on the battlefield.

Those people were naturally the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army. Not only them, Qiushui Fuyan and Taikou were within their ranks as well.

"The Crippling Night Demon Sect? Their members have truly gathered, and they're truly coming to attack this place?"

Many people felt astonished when they saw such a scene. Everyone knew who of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. So, even though the formation, in terms of strength, was the exact same as the mysterious army that came in waves before, the deterrence brought forth by the one now was completely different.

It was especially so for the Four Protectors of the Crippling Night Demon Sect—Qiu Canfeng, Fu Liansheng, Xue Xiyue, and You Mingdeng. Which one of them wasn't an infamous great demon in the Eastern Sea Region?

As for the Five Elemental Kings—Gold, Wood, Water, Fire, and Earth—they too were more than they seemed.

The formation they made was tantamount to the gathering of the Crippling Night Demon Sect's peak experts. Other than the lack of sect head, all the true experts were present.

"WE GREET LORD SECT HEAD!" But just at that moment, an even more astounding scene occurred: the entire army of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, including the Four Protectors, all half-knelt orderly and paid their respects to Chu Feng.

"What? Sect head? Chu Feng's the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect?"

The already stunned crowd were now all dumbfounded. They were stupefied. No matter what, they would not have expected that Chu Feng had become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

But after a bit more thinking... the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand was the sect's most valuable treasure, and in addition, Chu Feng's cultivation aptitude had always been immensely powerful. Now, his cultivation had soared, so, really, he was qualified to become the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Hoh, so the ones who used the formation before were all of you.

"Although you are merely useless soldiers in my eyes, you are all still willing to die just for Chu Feng. This is quite unexpected."

Murong Mingtian sneered. No matter how they appeared in the eyes of others, in his own eyes, they were a group of trash he could kill himself. Numbers? That was meaningless.

"Hoh, you're looking down on the Crippling Night Demon Sect? If you and Jiang Qisha don't do anything, do you think your Immortal Execution Archipelago is any match for us?" Chu Feng coldly asked.

"This..." Many people's hearts felt like drums beating. Although the Immortal Execution Archipelago's experts were as common as clouds, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was not weak at all. Moreover, the crowd

knew the Crippling Night Demon Sect was the former overlord of the Eastern Sea Region. Even though it had been split up for many years, the legend they left behind made others feel they were terrifying powerful.

Without Murong Mingtian, this rank seven Martial King old monster, not to mention the Immortal Execution Archipelago alone, even if the Three Great Monstrous Clans joined up with them, they still might not necessarily defeat the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

“What a joke. Do you truly think your Crippling Night Demon Sect is invincible? Even if I don’t do anything, your Crippling Night Demon Sect is no match for the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.”

Murong Mingtian sneered. He was not afraid. Putting aside the fact that they, the union of four forces, were in an advantage in terms of battle formation, they were in a huge advantage in terms of numbers.

“Since you’ve said that, I don’t mind letting you see whether your alliance army is stronger, or my Crippling Night Demon Sect’s experts are stronger.” As Chu Feng spoke, the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand shone with light. An invisible ripple then swept out.

hmm When it passed through the Crippling Night Demon Sect, their auras rapidly soared. Although their cultivation levels were unchanged, the feeling they exuded was completely different from before.

“The Crippling Night Demon Sect’s Slaughtering Formation?” Murong Mingtian frowned slightly. He knew the Crippling Night Demon Sect had something that raised everyone’s strength—the Demon Bestowal Slaughtering Formation.

However, it was a very complicated formation. Only in their territory would such a formation exist, yet right now, this was within his Immortal Execution Archipelago’s borders. How could there possibly be a formation like that? Moreover, judging by the increase in their strength, he could tell that the power from the formation was extremely strong.

“Could it be... the Demon Sealing Sword? This brat laid the formation on his body?” Murong Mingtian thought. However, when he imagined

such a possibility, even he couldn't help but feel shock.

"My brothers, attention! Today, I will have the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans annihilated! No matter who it is, those who block me die!" Chu Feng suddenly pointed his sword down—towards the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army.

"KILL—" The Crippling Night Demon Sect were like awakened demons after Chu Feng's words. All of them burst with bloodlust. They used all sorts of ferocious skills, and slaughtered their way towards their enemy.

"KILL—" Of course, the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans would not show any cowardice. Amidst furious roars, they fought the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

boom boom boom boom

When two armies of millions clashed, shock waves instantly arose. The might was truly shocking, and extremely frightening. This time, it was not only an army of ten million fighting, it was an army of ten million actual lives fighting. Every fall of a body represented the disappearance of a life.

But there had to be one victor from the confrontation of two armies. The battle formation of both sides was roughly the same—the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans' side was actually in an enormous advantage in terms of numbers.

But when they truly battled, the one with the edge instantly surfaced—it was the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army. With absolute strength and perfect coordination, they overcame their disadvantage in numbers and gained the upper hand!

Chapter 965: The Slash that Destroys Everything

Duels demanded individual strength.

Group combat demanded mutual understanding of each other.

When millions of people were fighting, all varying in cultivation strength, taking care of one another would greatly reduce the degree of injury and the number of dead.

At that moment, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was attacking the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. Although there was a vast disparity in numbers, no matter individual strength or collective strength, the Crippling Night Demon Sect was far superior to their opponents.

This was like dozens of millions of cultivation experts in comparison to ten million trained elites. The one weaker and the one stronger was absolutely evident.

"AHH—"

A never-ending stream of painful cries resounded in the sky. An endless number of people fell dead from the air within the battlefield. However, amongst ten dead there were at least nine and a half who were from the Immortal Execution Archipelago or the Three Great Monstrous Clans. In the exchange just now, the Immortal Execution Archipelago's army had already entered a very perilous situation. If nothing were changed, their defeat was inevitable.

"This is too terrifying. It's said the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army not only holds horrifying strength, they are very well trained as well. That seems to be absolutely true. Even though the Immortal Execution Archipelago allied with the Three Great Monstrous Clans, they are no match for the Crippling Night Demon Sect." As the observers watched the brilliant coordination, they were very amazed.

"No, that's not all. There's no doubt that the Crippling Night Demon

Sect is powerful, but who would dare to say the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans are weak?

"The reason for such an oppressing advantage is partially due to the commands of the Four Protector, but the most important thing is still because the entirety of the Crippling Night Demon Sect rose in strength.

"And the reason for that is because of the Demon Sealing Sword. Just now, I felt it. The power it released has made the Crippling Night Demon Sect fierce; however, the person who grasps the Demon Sealing Sword is Chu Feng!

"So, in the end, the reason for their overwhelming advantage is Chu Feng!" explained a shrewd person to the crowd.

"Chu Feng?!" After hearing those words, several hundreds of millions of people couldn't help casting their gazes towards Chu Feng. Only then did they discover he remained as calm as the very beginning, looking as if he knew he would win. Such absolute confidence was worn on his face.

"Using a formation to raise their strength... Truly shameless." Murong Mingtian's complexion was very unsightly. After a furious roar, he raised his palm, and pushed it forward. Layers of King-level Martial power flew towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect. In the end, he couldn't help himself from attacking.

whoosh However, in the instant Murong Mingtian made his move, Chu Feng suddenly waved the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand. A black blade of energy sliced through the air, and also through Murong Mingtian's attack.

"Murong Mingtian, do you not want face? Didn't you say you would allow them to fight, and you wouldn't do anything? Do you not know what 'keeping true to your word' is after living for several hundred years?" Chu Feng mocked after cutting through the attack.

"Keeping true to one's word? I, Murong Mingtian, do not do anything like that to enemies. I only know the victor is king, and the loser is the villain. The world only remembers the side that won," Murong Mingtian shouted, and as he wielded the Royal Armament in his hand, he attacked

Chu Feng.

“The victor is king, and the loser is the villain. However, that does not mean nothing else matters. Today, I will openly defeat you!” Chu Feng brought a smile to his face as he faced Murong Mingtian, who held a Royal Armament and exuded the pressure of a rank seven Martial King. He was not the slightest bit afraid.

whoosh

Suddenly, slight movements came from Chu Feng’s body, then he instantly disappeared. When he reappeared, he had already come up to Murong Mingtian. Moreover, the Demon Sealing Sword was mercilessly slicing down.

Even though Chu Feng had already shown extremely powerful strength, Murong Mingtian was not afraid. Waving the Royal Armament in his hand, he slashed towards Chu Feng’s Demon Sealing Sword. He was meeting force with force—Royal Armament with Royal Armament. With this, he was going to display his strength of a rank seven Martial King to guard his dignity.

clang

Finally, the two collided, but after a huge explosion, Murong Mingtian’s wrist actually trembled, and his body quivered slightly as well. Like an arrow, he was shot back.

“How is this possible? This...”

Murong Mingtian was stupefied. He could very clearly feel the Royal Armament in his hand violently trembling. It was not just a simple fear—it was very deep fear, so much it lost its will to fight.

The reason for such a reaction was naturally because of the Demon Sealing Sword in Chu Feng’s hand. The king of Royal Armaments—it wasn’t as simple as just a mere title. The deterrence it exuded would truly make other Royal Armaments fear it.

At first, Murong Mingtian even thought he could compensate for the Royal Armament’s disadvantage with his rank seven Martial King

strength and thus suppress Chu Feng. But no matter what, he would not have expected that he underestimated Chu Feng—a very severe underestimation. With the assistance of the Demon Sealing Sword, Chu Feng's strength had far surpassed his own.

whoosh

When Murong Mingtian was shocked back, light shone beneath Chu Feng's feet, and he once again flew over and came up to Murong Mingtian. The Demon Sealing Sword had been emanating pressure. It was prepared to attack Murong Mingtian again.

"Brat, don't underestimate me!"

Even though he knew of Chu Feng's strength, Murong Mingtian was furious—Chu Feng was not cautious at all as he continued to chase after him. He was clearly looked down on him.

Amidst bitterness, he too attacked. Although he held the Royal Armament in his hand, he did not wave it. Instead, he waved his sleeve, and released a boundless Martial power.

It immediately started coalescing, became innumerable weapons.

Blade, spear, sword, halberd, hatchet, axe, hook, fork, dagger, rod, lance, club, whip, truncheon, hammer, claw...

Every single one of the myriad weapons contained strength no inferior to a Royal Armament. When over ten thousand weapons equal to Royal Armaments gathered together, one could imagine its power.

This was not a simple attack—it was a martial skill. It was not a simple martial skill either—it was a very profound rank nine martial skill.

Its might was very frightening, and everyone was deeply drawn towards this martial skill's strength.

But the most shocking thing was Chu Feng's lack of intention to stop, even when facing a martial skill like that. He wasn't even planning to use a martial skill of his own to counterattack. He was aiming to use the Demon Sealing Sword to meet these weapons equivalent to Royal

Armaments.

whoosh

Finally, Chu Feng made his move. The Demon Sealing Sword in his hand quickly slid through the air, and a black blade of energy flew out.

It was simple invincible and unstoppable. It brought forth destruction in all the areas it passed. It was absolutely devastating as it shattered all the Royal Armaments made by the martial skill.

With just one strike, Chu Feng destroyed Murong Mingtian's rank nine martial skill.

Chapter 966: As Powerful as Before

boom

The energy slash released by the Demon Sealing Sword was unstoppable. It broke through Murong Mingtian's rank nine martial skill without any trouble, and after a violent collision, the slash erupted into an explosion, whereupon the remnant shock wave flew towards Murong Mingtian.

"Dammit!"

Murong Mingtian cursed when he saw the incoming shock wave. At such a distance, he could not cast a martial skill in time, nor could he dodge it. Since he could do nothing to completely avoid this dangerous situation, he could only raise the Royal Armament in his hand to meet force with force. He prepared to block Chu Feng's attack.

bang

But what he didn't expect was despite being only a remnant shock wave, its power was still incomparably ferocious. Although he had successfully blocked it, he was still thrown several miles back.

Most importantly, when he stopped, not only did the Royal Armament in his hand tremble even more violently, his arm trembled violently as well. Large amounts of blood flowed down toward his palm—Murong Mingtian had been injured, and it was no light injury either.

"Dammit. Why is this brat's strength so horrifying?"

Murong Mingtian's complexion was ashen as he tightly furrowed his brows. He was finally aware of how serious this was because he had never expected Chu Feng to be so strong.

In his eyes, the strength Chu Feng showed was not the slightest bit weaker than Tantai Xue before she was ambushed. At least, Murong Mingtian would have a difficult time fighting Chu Feng with the strength he currently had.

"Murong Mingtian, rank seven Martial King? You are quite

disappointing."

Chu Feng sneered, and simultaneously, he waved the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand again. Layers of darkness enveloped the sky, Chu Feng attacked Murong Mingtian once again. This time, the might he released was even stronger than before.

"This brat?!"

Murong Mingtian's expression changed greatly as Chu Feng rushed over again. Within his eyes of guile, wariness, and fearlessness, there was a very rarely seen fright. He knew only death awaited him if he continued fighting Chu Feng in his present state.

"Murong Mingtian, how long are you going to wait until you use the Talismanic Pellets?" said Jiang Qisha, who had remained silent all this time.

Murong Mingtian felt he had a revelation. Flipping his palm, the several Talismanic Pellets Jiang Qisha gave him appeared on his hand. He unhesitantly swallowed them all.

boom An odd shock wave rippled from the inside of Murong Mingtian's body to the outside. Moreover, runic markings started appearing on him.

They looked like dragons and snakes as they were all interconnected with each other. They were very strange, but most importantly, after those markings appeared, Murong Mingtian's eyes caved in. He was akin to a bloodthirsty beast as bloodlust swirled around him. It was very horrifying.

At that very instant, his aura was climbing rapidly. It had infinitely neared a rank eight Martial King, and his fighting strength was even several times stronger than before.

"Can't win, so you use the pellets? Hoh, that's fine. Today, you will die completely convinced of my strength."

Although Murong Mingtian's power had risen, Chu Feng was still not fearful at all. He didn't just continue on, he even sped up. As he wielded the Demon Sealing Sword, he fought Murong Mingtian who had used the

Talismanic Pellets.

BOOM—BOOM—BOOM—

The exchange of blows this time was even more frightening than before. However, Murong Mingtian was not forced into a passive state; he could now put up a fight against Chu Feng but he still remained no match for him. After several trades back and forth, he was once again in the disadvantage.

"This isn't true, is it? Murong Mingtian used so many powerful Forbidden Medicines yet he still stands no chance against Chu Feng?"

"Even a rank seven Martial King cannot defeat Chu Feng? Has his strength become this horrifying? Doesn't this mean he can even stand on equal ground with Jiang Qisha?"

The entire fight between Chu Feng and Murong Mingtian were all caught by the observers. Chu Feng, from the very start, had suppressed Murong Mingtian completely. He even used Talismanic Pellets, yet that didn't change the outcome. Everyone once again witnessed Chu Feng's strength.

So actually, Chu Feng's fighting strength was not only powerful when he was a Martial Lord, he was similarly powerful when a Martial King. No matter how Chu Feng acquired this cultivation of rank four Martial King, right now, Chu Feng had indeed suppressed Murong Mingtian, a rank seven Martial King.

The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago had lived for several hundred years, yet he was still no match for Chu Feng. How could the observers not be stunned?

At that instant, the ones who mocked Chu Feng to be a coward and trash held various emotions in their hearts: some timid, some trepidation, some a mix of varying feelings.

Right now, Chu Feng had slaughtered a way over. And he wasn't alone—he brought with him the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army of ten million. Not only did he become sect head, he even had the cultivation to

suppress Murong Mingtian.

Was such a strong youth a coward? Trash?

No, he was neither. Chu Feng acted the same as he always had. He did things no one else dared to do. They had all held an incorrect perspective of Chu Feng, and they were also regretting because of their mistaken words.

Chu Feng possessed such powerful strength, so they knew very well if he wanted to kill them, it was simple as easy as stepping on ants. There was no doubt they would die.

BOOM— Just at that moment, Chu Feng and Murong Mingtian had another intense clash. Though Murong Mingtian was successful in blocking Chu Feng's attack, there was a frightening wound on his body— he had been injured.

"Jiang Qisha, how much longer are you going to keep watching for? Quickly deal with Tantai Xue and the useless Crippling Night Demon Sect army!" Finally, Murong Mingtian couldn't stand it any longer. He fiercely shouted at Jiang Qisha, who was standing in the air, doing nothing.

"Heh, old trash, you can't go any longer already? I even thought you could hold on until that brat's mysterious cultivation disappeared."

Jiang Qisha made a disappointed smile on his face. He too had seen that Chu Feng's current cultivation did not truly belong to him. No matter how long it would remain on his body, there was a limit, and he, Jiang Qisha, was waiting for Chu Feng's cultivation to fade away.

"Don't waste your breath! I can still deal with this brat. Take this chance to remove Tantai Xue, and the trash from the Crippling Night Demon Sect!" Murong Mingtian shouted again.

"Heh, no worry. Everything is within my grasp. Crippling Night Demon Sect? That's just a group of clowns. I can kill them at any time. As for that Tantai Xue... Indeed, she cannot be kept alive."

Jiang Qisha wore a cold smile on his face, and his gaze suddenly turned

chilly. At the same time, he jabbed out with the fiery-red halberd in his hand. Finally, he made his move.

Chapter 967: Sneak Attack

boom

The flame-like pillar of light released by Jiang Qisha's halberd radiated boundless power as it shot towards Zi Ling and the others behind the Crippling Night Demon Sect with unimaginable speed. The target of this attack was clear: it was aimed not at Zi Ling, but rather the unconscious Tantai Xue in her embrace.

"Crap!"

The incoming attack evoked great change in everyone's expression. Bound by the pressure of the pillar, they were petrified as they could not evade the attack.

The strength of the halberd was truly immense. It clearly wasn't a simple Royal Armament. Be it the aura it radiated or the power of its attacks, it was far superior to other Royal Armaments and could stand on equal ground with Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword. If Tantai Xue were unable to dodge this strike, her death would be inevitable.

whoosh

However, just as the crowd felt there was no hope, a black wave of energy sliced through the air and collided into the halberd's attack.

boom rumble rumble—

In the instant they collided, flames rose into the sky and spread out into surging waves of fire. Strangely, the remnants of the halberd's attack did not manage to harm Zi Ling or the others as the blazes halted immediately when they approached ten meters of the group.

Even though the black energy slash also dispersed into an energy shock wave, it seemed as if it had a will of its own and protected Zi Ling and the others.

Jiang Qisha frowned slightly when he saw such a scene unfold. He knew Chu Feng sent out the energy slash which stopped his attack. Therefore, he couldn't help but cast his gaze towards Chu Feng.

Only then did he discover even though Chu Feng was fighting Murong Mingtian, Chu Feng had shot glimpses over in his direction. Moreover, Chu Feng's gaze was filled with disdain. In his current eyes, he actually looked down on Jiang Qisha.

"It seems I've truly underestimated you." Although Jiang Qisha replied with a light smile, such a gaze of contempt had still invoked his fury.

In his heart, Chu Feng was no different from the others in the Eastern Sea Region. He too was trash. He was trash unqualified to even cultivate. Yet, such trash dared to look down on him, who could still be considered a peak genius in Holy Land of Martialism. That was intolerable.

whoosh

Suddenly, a gale arose; Jiang Qisha had attacked. With the fiery-red halberd, he rushed into the intense battlefield. He joined up with Murong Mingtian, and started sending fatal attacks towards Chu Feng.

"You've come at the exact right moment."

But even though Jiang Qisha had entered, Chu Feng remained calm. The Demon Sealing Sword simply sliced through everything. Nothing could stop him. Not only did Murong Mingtian not dare to use his Royal Armament to block the attacks, even Jiang Qisha's fiery-red halberd was unable to defend against the Demon Sealing Sword. Every time they clashed, his halberd would be forced back by Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword. When Chu Feng fought two alone, he still occupied the advantage.

"This is unbelievable! Chu Feng's actually fighting two people alone, and he's even winning! That Jiang Qisha is no match for Chu Feng either!"

"Heavens! Doesn't this mean Chu Feng's strength is even above Jiang Qisha's? Even the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism cannot defeat Chu Feng! He truly is a monster."

If it was somewhat understandable that Murong Mingtian stood no chance against Chu Feng, it was absolutely unimaginable that Chu Feng could suppress Jiang Qisha in the same manner.

“I do not believe I will lose to trash like you!”

Jiang Qisha’s complexion turned more and more unsightly as the whispers rang out around him. His calm smile had vanished, and replacing it was sinisterness that became increasingly clear.

After being pushed back again by Chu Feng’s Demon Sealing Sword, Jiang Qisha no longer blindly fought. He flipped his palm and raised it in the air.

“Mortal Taboo—Soul Sealing Runes!”

Countless runes flew out from his palm. They were made by Martial power, and contained horrifying strength. It was not a simple martial skill—it was Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Jiang Qisha’s fighting strength was already shocking. After wielding the fiery-red halberd, his strength had risen to a stage that even a rank seven Martial King stood no chance.

In such conditions, let alone a Mortal Taboo martial skill, normal attacks were already terrifying with the strength he possessed!

When the attack was cast, the sky lost its colour, and the sun and moon were stripped of their light. Only on his battlefield was one able to see anything. Based on this attack alone, it wasn’t an impossibility to completely wipe out the Crippling Night Demon Sect’s army of ten million.

“White Tiger Slaughtering Technique!” But when Jiang Qisha cast that Mortal Taboo martial skill, Chu Feng too raised his palm. He cast the supreme Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

aoowuu—

A world-shaking tiger’s roar rang out when he struck out with his palm. At the same time, a glittering white tiger that appeared alive shot out from his hand.

It was simply unstoppable when it appeared. It opened its mouth, and gave a roar that could even shatter space itself. When its claws waved, it

seemed as if it could break down everything.

Before the white tiger, Jiang Qisha's Mortal Taboo martial skill stood absolutely no chance—it was torn apart. More importantly, the white tiger was merciless. After destroying Jiang Qisha's Mortal Taboo martial skill, its power was only cut in half. It didn't disappear, and instead, ran in the air towards Jiang Qisha as it bared its fangs.

"How is this possible? It's a Secret Skill! He can cast such a powerful Secret Skill! So powerful that it's able to destroy my Mortal Taboo martial skill?"

Jiang Qisha was very experienced, so he instantly knew that the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique Chu Feng cast was not an ordinary martial skill but a Secret Skill.

It was a mysterious ability that changed in accordance with the master's strength. If the master was strong, the Secret Skill would be strong. Likewise, if the master was weak, the Secret Skill would be weak.

Jiang Qisha was shocked exactly because of that. Such power coming from the Secret Skill Chu Feng cast didn't just mean the skill itself was powerful, it indirectly meant Chu Feng's aptitude was powerful, which led to the strength of the Secret Skill.

"I do not believe I will be suppressed by trash like you!" Jiang Qisha gritted his teeth and retreated. Overlaying his palms, he cast another Mortal Taboo martial skill—Spiritual Beast Destruction.

aoo— An extremely horrifying Martial power was released, and as the ferocious power surged, it released furious roars. In the end, it became a black-coloured tiger.

It was over a hundred meters long, and was several times bigger than the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. Moreover, the might it had with it was no weaker than the Secret Skill.

boom The black and white tigers, though abilities, seemed to possess intelligence. They did not confront each other directly, and instead cleverly fought against one another. It was not only intense, it was very

wondrous. It truly did seem like two lively beasts fighting for their lives.

When those two tigers fought each other, Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha also closed their eyes. They seemed to be channeling power into their respective abilities. The intelligence displayed by the martial skill was controlled by the two of them.

"Heh, good chance." Murong Mingtian sneered when Chu Feng was stalled by Jiang Qisha. Suddenly, he waved the Royal Armament in his hand towards Chu Feng, and with radiance shining everywhere, an enormous sword in the sky filled with destructive power shot towards Chu Feng amidst surging might.

This was the Immortal Execution Archipelago's Mortal Taboo martial skill—the Illusory Sword Technique.

Murong Mingtian was despicably launching a sneak attack as Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha were fighting it out.

Chapter 968: Biting to Death?

"Crap! Murong Mingtian is sneak attacking Chu Feng!"

The members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect furiously cursed. They gnashed their teeth in anger and their faces turned blue. They felt Murong Mingtian was really too despicable and shameless. He didn't care about honour.

As a senior expert, perhaps it was forgivable that he joined up with another person to attack Chu Feng alone. However, he used a Mortal Taboo martial skill to launch a sneak attack when Chu Feng was preoccupied.

"This..."

In reality, not to mention the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, even the observers were rather speechless. When Jiang Qisha joined in the battle before, allying with Murong Mingtian to fight Chu Feng, at least he made it clear about that.

Yet now, Murong Mingtian was sneakily attacking when Chu Feng and Jiang Qisha were fighting. That was a bit unacceptable.

"Heh, Murong Mingtian, you really want to die, huh?"

But when the Illusory Sword Technique was about to strike Chu Feng, he suddenly opened his eyes, coldly chuckled, and used another White Tiger Slaughtering Technique after the raise of his palm.

aooo— It held the exact same strength as the first White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, but it was clear that Murong Mingtian's Illusory Sword Technique was far inferior to Jiang Qisha's Soul Sealing Runes.

Thus, when the Secret Skill was cast, it did not exhaust much of its power to break through Murong Mingtian's Illusory Sword Technique— just one-fourth. After doing so, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique widened its mouth filled with pointed spikes, and bared it towards Murong Mingtian.

"Illusory Sword Technique." Murong Mingtian was not flustered. Once

again, he stabbed forth with the Royal Armament in his hand, and cast another Mortal Taboo martial skill.

Before this martial skill even reached the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, it exploded, becoming an extremely violent lump of energy that instantly enveloped the Secret Skill.

"Illusory Sword Technique, Illusory Sword Technique, Illusory Sword Technique!"

Murong Mingtian then cast three more Mortal Taboo martial skills consecutively in the instant the lump of energy appeared. Moreover, every single one of them merged into the lump, doubling its power. After three consecutive explosions, the lump of energy was extremely horrifying. It was akin to a small sun as it stood within the air, emanating deterrence.

Murong Mingtian's line of thought was actually very simple: he knew his Illusory Sword Technique was no match for Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, so that was why he planned out something like this. He wanted to use the power of the four Illusory Sword Technique to cancel out Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and protect himself in such a manner.

"Chu Feng, your Secret Skill is indeed powerful, but sadly, you're too juvenile." Murong Mingtian wore a cold smile as he watched the exploding lump of energy and felt the disintegrating White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. He muttered to himself, "I am a real rank seven Martial King. You? You only have this cultivation because you used the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Forbidden Medicines are useless to you, and any other pellets or techniques to strengthen yourself are useless. You can only rely on Lady Piaomiao's tiny bit of cultivation. How long do you think you can last in this battle of endurance?

"Even if my martial skill isn't as powerful as your Secret Skill, with my cultivation foundations alone, I can just wear you out! Brat, with this bit of battle experience, you want to fight me? You are too young!"

wuao—

But just when Murong Mingtian felt his plot had succeeded, a tiger's

roar suddenly rang out. Quickly following that was a white figure shooting out from the lump of energy. It was an entirely new White Tiger Slaughtering Technique; Chu Feng had actually used a Secret Skill three times in a row.

"H-h-ho... How is this possible?" Murong Mingtian, who had a smirk on his face earlier, paled instantly when he saw the fierce white tiger.

No matter what, he did not expect Chu Feng to cast the Secret Skill a third time after two back-to-back casts earlier.

The power drained by the Secret Skill was huge, no weaker than if it were a Mortal Taboo martial skill. Especially since Chu Feng's Secret Skill was so powerful, it meant the strength it exhausted was even more enormous. Even if Chu Feng could cast one Secret Skill, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, while casting another Secret Skill, the Azure Dragon Dashing Technique, to do so continuously truly defied logic.

But now, he didn't care about all that. He quickly turned around, and used a bodily martial skill to flee. The appearance of this white tiger was too sudden; he no longer had any chances to cast a Mortal Taboo martial skill, so his only choice was to escape.

aoo— However, the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique was truly too quick. Even though the bodily martial skill Murong Mingtian cast was very strong, he was still unable to rid himself of the Secret Skill. The distance between the two was becoming increasingly small.

"Jiang Qisha, save me!" begged Murong Mingtian. He was out of options in this poorly developing situation.

"Trash! You used so many of my Talismanic Pellets yet you only have strength like this. What's the use in keeping you alive?"

But as Jiang Qisha watched Murong Mingtian chased fiercely by the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, he just smiled mockingly. He actually ignored Murong Mingtian, and chose to leave him for dead.

"Dammit! Jiang Qisha you bastard! As an ally, you decide to abandon me?!" Murong Mingtian gnashed his teeth in anger and couldn't help but

curse at Jiang Qisha.

aoo— The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique had arrived. With its widened mouth, it engulfed Murong Mingtian entirely.

"Ahh—" A painful cry instantly rang out, and following that was the sound of teeth grinding and chewing from the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

It did not directly kill Murong Mingtian. Instead, it chose to torture him first, granting him a painful death.

"Heavens! Senior Murong, he's actually..."

Seeing the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique that used its own mysterious power to chew madly, nearly everyone's face went pale.

However, Murong Mingtian wasn't a simple person. When the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique tortured him, he was using his own technique to fight back and exhaust the power of the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. As a result, its body was gradually splitting apart.

"Ancestor—"

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique started turning into light which shone in every direction. Its power became weaker and weaker, and when its body turned translucent, panic arose, especially from the Immortal Execution Archipelago. They couldn't help crying out loud.

At that moment, blood was all over Murong Mingtian's body. His arms and hands were gone, and there was even a bite to his brain. More importantly, his ruined body lost its aura completely. Murong Mingtian had been bitten to death by Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

BOOM—

Just at that moment, the remaining power from the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, in accordance to Chu Feng's will, made an explosion. It completely destroyed Murong Mingtian's remains, and didn't

even leave anything behind.

The mastermind behind the rise of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the old monster who had lived for several hundred years, was killed by Chu Feng in such a pitiful manner.

Chapter 969: An Attack akin to a Natural Disaster

"ANCESTOR—" The expression of the Immortal Execution Archipelago's members turned ashen. They were completely stupefied, unable to come back to their senses until a brief moment later, which they began to heart-wrenchingly lament.

Murong Mingtian was simply too important to them. In their hearts, he was akin to a god—one that led them and one that ruled over the world.

Yet now, their god was killed. How could they accept such an outcome? Like a believer who lost their faith, they lost a direction in life.

"We will avenge Ancestor—"

Amidst such devastating sorrow, the Immortal Execution Archipelago felt their rage and woe merge. They started pouncing towards the Crippling Night Demon Sect in a complete disregard for their own lives. They started trading deaths and paid no heed to what they did so long as they killed.

However, though power arose from their blend of emotions, the Crippling Night Demon Sect too rose in might after seeing Murong Mingtian's death. They weren't scared by the suicidal Immortal Execution Archipelago, and instead, they began even more ruthless slaughters.

In a situation like that, it was very difficult for the already suppressed Immortal Execution Archipelago and Three Great Monstrous Clans to hold on.

"This feeling... Could it be...?"

However, after Murong Mingtian's body exploded, there was a faint power that poured into Chu Feng's body. However, Chu Feng frowned after it entered. A hint of suspicion flashed into his eyes.

aoo— In Chu Feng's moment of distraction, Jiang Qisha took that chance to cast his Mortal Taboo martial skill. He wanted to pass Chu

Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique and launch a sneak attack as well.

boom— However, he had greatly underestimated the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique. Even though Chu Feng hadn't been focusing completely, the Secret Skill still had its own will. It once again broke Jiang Qisha's Mortal Taboo martial skill.

aoo— The white tiger then let out a furious roar, and leapt towards Jiang Qisha.

whoosh Jiang Qisha started quickly flying backwards in the air. He didn't choose to continue releasing Mortal Taboo martial skills to forcefully meet Chu Feng's attack. He instead chose to escape.

But the white tiger kept chasing tenaciously and it was very quick. Even though Jiang Qisha had used a bodily martial skill, the distance separating the two continued to gradually shrink.

"Is this real? The genius who comes from the Holy Land of Martialism, and even defeated a Divine Body, is being forced to flee because of Chu Feng?" The observers were exclaiming endlessly at such a sight.

If the act of killing Murong Mingtian made them acknowledge Chu Feng's strength, then the act of Jiang Qisha forced to flee in such a pitiful state by Chu Feng's Secret Skill made them approve of Chu Feng's abilities, as, after all, everyone knew Jiang Qisha was much more powerful than Murong Mingtian.

So even though Chu Feng had suppressed Jiang Qisha, many people still held in their hearts a sliver of hope. They felt the genius Jiang Qisha was unfathomable. There existed an infinite number of possibilities on him, so Chu Feng might not truly defeat him.

But many people's sliver of hope had started to break. The situation before their eyes did not make it appear that Jiang Qisha had a trump card to deal with Chu Feng.

"Hmph." But just when many people thought Jiang Qisha was defeated already, he coldly snorted as a hint of resolution surfaced in his eyes.

He then flipped his palm and several Talismanic Pellets appeared on his hand. He opened his mouth and swallowed them all.

hmm

After consuming the pellets, Jiang Qisha had the same reaction as Murong Mingtian: runes and patterns appeared on his skin and his aura soared.

bang Jiang Qisha suddenly turned around and punched the incoming White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

boom That fist was not to be underestimated. It simply contained the power to destroy this land, and that punch alone blew apart Chu Feng's White Tiger Slaughtering Technique.

"So powerful—"

"As expected of a genius from the Holy Land of Martialism. It seems that this is his real strength."

"This is too horrifying. Has he finally brought out his true abilities? It seems that Chu Feng's going to have something heading his way!"

Many people deeply gasped at the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique dissipating in the air. At the same time, many people who wished for Chu Feng's death had an eased smile on their faces.

"Heavens! Jiang Qisha is this terrifying! How will Chu Feng stop him?" As for those who wished Chu Feng to live, they couldn't help but worry about him.

Regardless how much power remained in the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique, it was still a powerful ability that could destroy Mortal Taboo martial skills.

Yet, at this moment, Jiang Qisha had broken through it with his fist. That illustrated Jiang Qisha's current strength. At least, his former self was not even comparable to him right now.

"Chu Feng, the number of people who can force me to this state are countable by my fingers even within the Cursed Soil Sect.

“I admit. I, Jiang Qisha, have underestimated you. I underestimated the strength that would come out of a bumpkin like you. However, it’s time for this to end. I’ll let you see what a true genius is! I’ll let you see what a true technique is!” Jiang Qisha sneered as he looked at Chu Feng, then his expression changed and he released an explosive shout.

“DIE—”

He struck with his fist, palm, foot, and leg, all at the same time. Four fierce bursts of Martial power rushed out from those four places.

The strength those four bursts of power contained was very fierce. Typical martial skills simply could not compare to them; it was even several times stronger than the Mortal Taboo martial skill Jiang Qisha used before.

He was now not only casting four martial skills at the same time, he was casting four different Mortal Taboo martial skills at the same time.

boom

Then, they merged together in the air, and became a body of energy that enveloped the sky.

The body of energy traveled through the air. It was like an enormous wave as it surged forward, yet also like a horrifying black mass of clouds. It not only had four different colours, it brought with it lightning and a storm. It was akin to an apocalypse that would destroy the world.

“My gods! Jiang Qisha has actually cast such a terrifying technique! Is this still a martial skill? Is this still a technique of a human? This is simply more like the work of a god!”

As they gazed upon the body of energy covering the entire sky and surging towards Chu Feng, everyone was stunned. Regardless if they wished for Chu Feng’s death, they were dumbfounded by Jiang Qisha’s move. This was most definitely the strongest technique they had seen up until now. It was simply a natural disaster that could destroy everything!

Chapter 970: Earthen Taboo—Slaughter of the Blood Moon

Four different Mortal Taboo martial skills merged together. The power was absolutely not as simple as the sum of four typical martial skills.

It was a combination of martial skills, and they weren't even normal martial skills, but Mortal Taboo martial skills. Such a technique held a very great difficulty, and its power was naturally very strong well.

The body of energy made by the combination of four Mortal Taboo martial skill was incomparably fierce. Although its target was Chu Feng alone, its pressure had enveloped a circumference of a thousand miles.

No matter Zi Ling and the others who hid behind the army, or the fighting Crippling Night Demon Sect and Immortal Execution Archipelago, or the hundred million observers, they were bound by that powerful pressure and lost any ability to move.

They felt dread never experienced before in their lives originating from an attack so powerful it was incomparable to anything they had witnessed in the past. After being bound in place by the pressure, everyone lost the ability to speak. The respect and admiration they felt before had long been gone, and in replacement was trepidation of death.

The pressure itself was already so powerful. They did not know whether Chu Feng—and them—would be killed by Jiang Qisha.

"Hoh..." However, just when everyone was terrified by Jiang Qisha's combination attack, Chu Feng made a faint smile. Though the horrifying pressure bound many people, Chu Feng was not one of them.

"It's merely a combination technique. Do you truly think you're the only one who knows it? You dare be so arrogant with a mere combination of Mortal Taboo martial skills? How about I show you the combination of Secret Skills!"

With a light smile, Chu Feng willed a shock wave to burst outward. Simultaneously, with a roar, four enormous beasts of various shapes but

same ferociousness surged out of his body.

The four beasts were not only huge in size, they were very overbearing. The aura they emanated was even incomparably holy.

The beasts were not ordinary creatures. They were the four holy beasts: the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise.

aoo—

The four supreme Secret Skills all had their own abilities, but right now Chu Feng was not using a normal technique. It was an entirely new technique after obtaining the power of the Vermilion Bird Revival Technique—the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation.

aoo—

They possessed extremely powerful might, and they were very quick as well. After they appeared, the observers couldn't even begin to process what was happening when the four holy beasts had already merged together to form a formation.

However, the Four Symbols Formation was completely different from the one that bound Qiu Canfeng before. That was a binding formation, while this was a slaughtering formation. Moreover, the power this had was incomparable to the one before. It could simply suppress anything; this was the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation.

After they merged together, creating the aforementioned Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation, the pressure emanated by Jiang Qisha's attack instantly vanished. The pressure that bound everyone vanished as well.

"Heavens, what is that?"

"It's Chu Feng's technique! I saw it, it's something Chu Feng cast! He's actually combined the legendary Secret Skills, and it's even four Secret Skills!"

"What? Even Secret Skills can be combined? I've never heard of this before!"

Although the millions and millions of people had freedom restored to

them, no one was willing to shift their gazes away because they were all drawn towards Chu Feng's Four Symbols Formation. Their eyes were filled disbelief and shock, because they could feel the power within this Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation was even more powerful than Jiang Qisha's combination of four Mortal Taboo martial skills.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

Just at that moment, the two attacks had woven together. Instantly, a boundless pressure and shock waves surged outward, in layer after layer.

They were really too fierce, and simply no one could withstand that. No matter the Immortal Execution Archipelago, the Crippling Night Demon Sect, or the hundred million observers, no one dared to stay on the spot. They all fled into the distance, afraid they would be engulfed by the pressure and lose their lives within it.

"AHH—"

"AHH—"

However, even though the pressure had no intent to kill, many people were unable to make it out in time. They were swallowed by the pressure, and amidst bursts of painful cries, they were crushed and became blood.

aoo—

But when the pressure wreaked havoc, within it came a furious roar. The Four Symbols Formation also appeared.

The four holy beasts were in the air and running around in a circle on a special path. They were putting power into the Four Symbols Formation, and forcing it towards Jiang Qisha. The might was incomparable, and Jiang Qisha had no escape.

"Senior, don't keep anything hidden. Use that to destroy him!"

Zhao Yuetian's and Wu Kunlun's faces changed greatly. They couldn't help but shout at Jiang Qisha. Even though they felt it to be inconceivable, they couldn't help admitting that the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation Chu Feng cast was too horrifying. If Jiang Qisha

still held anything behind, he would very possibly die because of that.

"You've actually forced me to this state. But that's fine, today, I'll widen your horizons.

"You trash from the Eastern Sea Region, open your filthy eyes and watch! This is an Earthen Taboo martial skill, the Slaughter of the Blood Moon!"

After speaking, Jiang Qisha overlaid his hands, and allowed the Four Symbols Formation to press its way forth. He closed his eyes uncaringly as space itself before him shattered while his clothes fluttered noisily.

boom

Suddenly, a mystical wave swept out from Jiang Qisha's body. When it blew past the Four Symbols Formation, it instantly froze.

Moreover, the mystical wave was extremely fast. It very quickly rushed past everything and enveloped an area within the circumference of a thousand miles.

hmm More importantly, after encompassing everything with its instantaneous speed, the world started changing.

The surging sea underneath became so calm it was like a mirror, lacking even the slightest trace of a wave. The initially clear and chaotic sky turned into night, countless glittering stars appearing.

A rush of peace washed into the world, creating a very rarely seen scenery.

"How magical... Is this the legendary Earthen Taboo martial skill?" Many people sighed in admiration at everything that had changed. How did that even look like a martial skill? Simply the world itself transformed.

"An illusion of the Earthen Taboo rank? No, it doesn't look that simple."

But just when everyone was attracted by the serenity before their eyes, Chu Feng frowned. He could see that it was merely an illusion, but he knew amidst this illusion was definitely an extreme danger. After all, this

was an Earthen Taboo martial skill that came from the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chapter 971: Earthen Taboo—Firmament Slash

rumble rumble rumble...

Suddenly, in a certain place within the serene world, a peculiar rumble sounded. Simultaneously, the space within a circumference of a thousand miles started violently trembling. The tranquil waters surged again, in an even greater degree than before.

Before such changes, an enormous round moon gradually rose from the distant sea surface, appearing in front of the crowd's eyes.

The moon was truly very large, and it was the colour of blood. Its redness was very strange, looking as if it were truly made from blood. Most importantly, after its emergence, an unprecedented pressure enveloped the world.

"This aura—" Many people couldn't breathe. Some even suffocated, and other than Martial Kings, everyone else's face turned purple. Even though the Martial Kings' conditions weren't as severe, their complexions were quite a bit distorted from the difficulty of withstanding the horrifying pressure.

"As I thought, there's a killing technique within this illusion—it kills by pressure. So this is the critical part of this martial skill, right?

"This Slaughter of the Blood Moon is truly not simple. With such powerful strength... As long as Jiang Qisha wants to, it takes no more than a thought to kill everyone here an instant.

"In terms of area of effect, my Firmament Slash is indeed far inferior to this Slaughter of the Blood Moon. But sadly, if I want to use it to break this moon, it will not be difficult."

Chu Feng wore a smile on his face. He had already detailedly analyzed Jiang Qisha's Earthen Taboo martial skill. Moreover, it felt it was time to let the world know of his Firmament Slash.

So, when the Slaughter of the Blood Moon left everyone completely struck with terror, amidst their absolute fear of death, Chu Feng slowly closed his eyes. Simultaneously, an extremely strong power started invisibly coalescing within his body.

“Hoh, you’ve given up?”

A sneer arose onto Jiang Qisha’s face when he saw Chu Feng seemingly accepting his fate. In Jiang Qisha’s eyes, even if Chu Feng resisted, it was useless. Since he had cast the Slaughter of the Blood Moon, Chu Feng was dead. In his perspective, Chu Feng was preparing to give up since he closed his eyes.

“Wait, this is?” But just at that moment, Jiang Qisha’s pupils shrank abruptly. He furrowed his brows tightly, because he discovered Chu Feng seemed a bit off.

At that moment, the space around Chu Feng started to tremble lightly. Yet, it was completely different from the tremors that arose from the casting of the Slaughter of the Blood Moon.

The tremors shook more and more violently from its initial weak state. Cracks had already appeared in the fabrics of space, and an extremely powerful aura was even going to shatter space itself.

Before such changes, the boundless Martial power in the world started converging onto Chu Feng like a hurricane. Facing such immensity, even Jiang Qisha’s expression changed greatly. From the flow of Martial power, he could feel that it was extremely pure.

boom

Just at that moment, Chu Feng suddenly opened his eyes. Simultaneously, an extremely fierce aura emerged within his eyes.

“Hell!”

Jiang Qisha instantly panicked. He quickly willed the Blood Moon to rise quicker. At the same time, the horrifying pressure started gathering in one area and slashing towards Chu Feng. Jiang Qisha was preparing to send an attack at Chu Feng. He was preparing to use the Slaughter of the

Blood Moon to crush Chu Feng to death.

But it was already too late. Before his attack had finished gathering together, bursts of blood-red aura shot out from Chu Feng's body.

They were very strange—shape akin to sharp blades, yet akin to swimming snakes. Not only were they concentrated, there were countless. They even made frightening howls and very terrifying noises, as if they were ghosts from hell.

More importantly, after those blood-red auras appeared, the sky instantly changed colour. Those auras not only contained horrifying power, their speed was terrifying. In just a blink, they completely enveloped every corner of the sky.

And at that moment, Chu Feng's lips were moving. With clear emphasis on every single word, he said: "Earthen—Taboo—Firmament—Slash!

"First slash!"

BOOM

Such words were like the order of a lord. A string of the strange and horrifying auras charged towards the direction of Chu Feng's gaze with their destructive power.

Finally, after a cracking sound, a blood-red slash landed onto the moon in a cross shape.

boom Cracks appeared on the moon that contained boundless power.

"Second slash!"

Quickly after, Chu Feng yelled out lightly again. Another blood-red slash landed on the moon. Most importantly, the power contained within this slash was double the strength of the previous one.

The blood-red moon instantly collapsed. Amidst an explosion, it shattered.

The sky, following the moon's shatter, was akin to a broken mirror. It too started crumbling.

After many pieces of the sky fell, it returned to its initial state. The Earthen Taboo martial skill Jiang Qisha cast had been destroyed by Chu Feng.

"This... How is this possible? He actually destroyed my Earthen Taboo martial skill?!"

Jiang Qisha's face was ashen as he beheld that sight. His eyes were roundly widened, because he didn't dare to believe it. He didn't dare to believe in such a desolate place as the Eastern Sea Region, there was someone who also grasped an Earthen Taboo martial skill, and with such a skill destroyed the strongest trump card he took pride in.

If it was said Jiang Qisha right now was in terror, perhaps a bit disbelieving of his eyes, then he would definitely be stupefied after the next scene.

In reality, what made him fearful was not being suppressed by the Earthen Taboo martial skill. It was that the pressure became more terrifying even after those two strikes.

"Third slash."

bang bang bang bang bang

Chu Feng let out another explosive yell. Instantly, explosions rang out endlessly and countless blood-red slashes started appearing in the air.

All the peak experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all killed with the third slash alone. Murong Niekong and the chiefs of the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all dead.

These powerful people within the Eastern Sea Region, before Chu Feng's Firmament Slash, lacked any strength to counterattack. Even in the moment before death, they couldn't even make any sound before they were completely destroyed.

Chapter 972: You Will Die

The might of the three slashes broke through the Taboo martial skill. They killed millions of people, and deterred the world.

But Chu Feng clearly wasn't prepared to stop just there. The Firmament Slash was the strongest card he held in his hand. Either he didn't use it, or used it fully to guarantee victory.

"Fourth Slash."

Finally, Chu Feng yelled lightly again. The fourth appeared in the air; however, only two slashes appeared, landing on Zhao Yuetian and Kuang Bainian.

Without any surprise, when the blood-red slashes landed on their bodies, they were no different from the others before—they were slashed open. Their death was even more direct. Even though they had died, many people couldn't even begin to process the swiftness of their execution.

"DAMMIT—"

Finally, Jiang Qisha came to his senses. He finally witnessed Chu Feng's terrifying strength. Even though he, Jiang Qisha, had exceptional aptitude and was considered a peak genius in the Holy Land of Martialism, he was indeed no match for Chu Feng right now.

Knowing this was a horrible situation for him, he said nothing else as he turned around and cast an extremely profound bodily martial skill. He wanted to flee.

However, beyond his expectations, his legs were abnormally heavy. Even though he could walk in the air, the speed was incomparably slow. He simply could not escape.

"Chu Feng, you insolent and ignorant bastard! You dare kill my juniors? Do you know who we are? Do you know who my master is? If you dare to kill me, not to mention yourself, even the entire Eastern Sea Region will die because of you!" When all escape routes were sealed off, Jiang Qisha turned around. He mentioned his master to threaten Chu Feng with a

roar.

"Hoh..." But Chu Feng merely gave a light smile at Jiang Qisha's threats, then said, "Jiang Qisha, you shouldn't have done it. You shouldn't have interfered with the enmity between me and the Immortal Execution Archipelago, nor should you have attacked the Misty Peak. What you shouldn't even thought of doing was displaying intention to marry Zi Ling.

"You can humiliate me however you wish, but I cannot tolerate humiliation towards the dearest ones to me. Today, I don't care where you come from. I don't care where your master comes from. I don't care what cultivation your master has. I will kill you."

Chu Feng's expression suddenly turned icy. Simultaneously, blood-red bodies of light appeared. Amidst frightening howls, they flew towards Jiang Qisha.

The power contained within them was several times stronger than the four slashes before. Because this was the Firmament Slash's fifth slash.

"Chu Feng, don't kill me!"

Feeling the horrifying bodies of light flying from every single direction, Jiang Qisha was completely terrified. In this instant separating life and death, he suddenly yelled. There was no more arrogance and pride within his voice, and instead a trace of pleading.

Chu Feng willed the blood-red lights to stop a hundred meters away from Jiang Qisha, then asked, "What else do you want to say?"

"Chu Feng, don't kill me. As long as you spare my life, I can give you anything you want. I can also feign ignorance about my juniors' death. I can even bring you into the Holy Land of Martialism and give a recommendation to join the Cursed Soil Sect.

"With your cultivation aptitude, you will definitely receive my master's approval. He will also bring you in as a direct disciple, and at that time, you can be in an equal position with me. You can get whatever you want. You will have no problem soaring in strength," Jiang Qisha said with a

face filled with sincerity and subserviently.

"Jiang Qisha is actually begging Chu Feng..." His words were caught in everyone's ears. When they saw the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism actually asking Chu Feng for forgiveness, the crowd's emotions were very complicated.

At first, because of Jiang Qisha's appearance, they felt they had witnessed a true genius. They felt, in comparison to Jiang Qisha, Chu Feng was no more than trash.

But now, they discovered they were wrong—absolutely wrong. They had all underestimated Chu Feng's ability. So, as it seemed, Chu Feng was not only a peak genius in the Eastern Sea Region, even against a genius in the Holy Land of Martialism, Chu Feng remained a horrifying existence.

Discussions arose within the crowd. Everyone felt they overrated Jiang Qisha. Though strong, the genius from the Holy Land of Martialism was only so-so.

But Jiang Qisha didn't care anymore how others looked at him. He only wanted to do one thing now—survive.

So, he once again said with sincerity, "Chu Feng, before I just wanted to get the Misty Peak. I didn't want to introduce animosity between us, and actually, what happened today is only a misunderstanding.

"Although I had said those words to mock you and Zi Ling, that was only a bait. I just wanted Tantai Xue to come out, and I had never planned to harm Zi Ling and the others. In fact, if it weren't for me, they might not have even survived up until now.

"I, Jiang Qisha, am a person who treasures people with talent. As long as you forgive me today, I can pretend nothing ever happened. To be honest, with your aptitude, if you enter the Cursed Soil Sect, it's very possible that you will even lead the sect in the future!

"But without me, even if you can enter the Holy Land of Martialism, it will be very difficult to enter the Cursed Soil Sect. Even if you could, to acquire the acknowledgement of the patriarch will be similarly difficult.

“As they say, ‘If you take a step back, you behold a greater world.’ I, Jiang Qisha, can disregard my juniors’ death. Why must you continue pressing forward?”

“Hahahaha…” However, something no one expected was after Jiang Qisha spoke those words, Chu Feng suddenly laughed. His laughter shook the world and became the only sound one could hear.

Many people tightly frowned. They felt very uneasy. After all that happened, Chu Feng had proven, with no doubt, that he was the ruler of this place. It was an easy action for him to kill any person. Even Jiang Qisha feared him, so who wouldn’t?

But on the topic of fear, naturally Jiang Qisha feared him the most. Because he was arrogant, because he was conceited, he felt his life was the most precious. Similarly, he was a person who feared death the most.

“Jiang Qisha, do you think I’m a fool, or are you a fool? You’re saying such unrealistic things to me?” Finally, Chu Feng stopped laughing, but a mocking sneer remained on his face.

poof Jiang Qisha knelt down after hearing those words. He raised his arms and loudly said with a face full of solemnness, “I, Jiang Qisha, swear to the heavens every single word I said today is true! If there’s even half a word of lie, let lightning strike me and grant me a horrid death!”

“Hahaha…” But Chu Feng once again roared with laughter. He said, “Jiang Qisha, first of all, no matter what you do, I won’t believe you. There’s no need to so painstakingly beg.

“Furthermore, even if everything you’ve said is true, so what? You’ve already crossed my bottom line. Let alone only a disciple from the Holy Land of Martialism, even if you were the disciple of god, my actions remain the same!

“Today, you will die! Even god cannot save you!”

After speaking, Chu Feng’s gaze turned cold. At the same time, the halted blood-red lights in the air flew towards Jiang Qisha extremely quickly.

BANG—

When the blood-red lights gathered together, a horrifying blood-red slash landed on Jiang Qisha's body with the shape of a cross.

His body split in an instant. No matter limbs or soul, it all vanished. It was true absolute destruction.

The peak genius from the Holy Land of Martialism had been killed by Chu Feng!

Chapter 973: Long Live Sect Head

Having finally killed Jiang Qisha, the pressure of the Firmament Slash disappeared and receded into Chu Feng's body, returning the world to its former serenity.

Silence permeated the sky. Everyone quietly looked at Chu Feng and remained wordless.

Chu Feng, with his strength alone, killed the peak experts from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and even killed the three geniuses from the Holy Land of Martialism. His strength shocked others, and his actions had a devastating impact on the outcome of the battle

Everyone became convinced of Chu Feng's power. Not only would they never forget his actions today, everyone else in the future—the Eastern Sea Region's successors—would discuss this for years to come because his accomplishments were destined to be recorded in the books of history. He was fated to become a figure of admiration and worship.

However, while the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were celebrating inside, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were terrified. As the hundred million observers from various areas in the Eastern Sea Region sighed in admiration, Chu Feng opened his palm, and a boundless suction power surged out.

Despite its power, the suction force did not affect anyone. However, before such force, Jiang Qisha's fiery-red halberd, Zhao Yuetian's and the others' Royal Armaments, and their Cosmos Sacks, all landed into Chu Feng's hands.

More importantly, Chu Feng didn't just strip away their belongings. An invisible power was also surging into Chu Feng's body—Source Energy. Although Chu Feng killed their bodies and souls, he retained their Source Energy. Right now, he was absorbing it and feeding it into Eggy.

"Lord Chu Feng, spare us!"

“Lord Chu Feng, spare us!”

Just at that moment, an expert from the Immortal Execution Archipelago knelt onto the ground, kowtowing and asking for forgiveness. Quickly following that, many experts from the Three Great Monstrous Clans also knelt and begged for forgiveness.

Everyone else was no exception. Even people like Jiang Qisha and Murong Mingtian were killed, so how could they possibly stand a chance against Chu Feng? Begging was their best option.

hmm Seeing that, Chu Feng willed a boundless pressure to spread out. It enveloped the members of Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

bang bang bang bang... After enveloping them, there were bursts of muffled explosions that started sounding within the sea of people. Every single explosion meant the death of a life as it became a pool of blood.

Chu Feng, in a mere instant, with his own strength, killed several dozen thousand people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago.

“Lord Chu Feng, spare us! Give us another chance!”

“Lord Chu Feng, I have the old to look over and the young to care! They are still waiting for me in my home! Without me, they won’t be able to survive! Please spare me!”

“Lord Chu Feng, spare us—”

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were all stupefied. Those who hadn’t knelt now did and started kowtowing as well while they too begged Chu Feng.

“Hoh...” However, as he faced their tragic cries, Chu Feng merely let out a light chuckle. Then, he said, “In the clash of two armies, each serves their respective master. You’ve done nothing wrong.

“But the winner is the king, and the loser is the villain. To be softhearted towards one’s enemy is to be cruel towards oneself. If I were the one defeated today, I’m sure no one would sympathize with me. So... I

do not care how great your desire is to live. I will not allow any to survive.

"If you must blame someone, you can only blame yourself for following the wrong master. If you must blame something, you can only blame your own actions for making me an enemy."

After speaking, a chilly glint emerged into Chu Feng's eyes. Then, he yelled, "Crippling Night Demon Sect, attention! The Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans are to be all killed. Leave none alive!"

"KILL—"

After he spoke, the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army once again became bloodthirsty demons. They released their boundless bloodlust as they all used various techniques, rushing again into the formation of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. They started slaughtering.

The people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans wanted to fight for their lives. Even if they were to die, they were going to bring a few along with them. But it was useless, as they had no chance with Chu Feng there.

Chu Feng's pressure froze them in their kneeling state. They couldn't even take half a step, let alone defending. Awaiting them was only a merciless annihilation.

For a brief while, endless painful cries rang out in the sky. Countless bodies started falling, and large amounts of blood sprayed down like a rain of blood. It entered the sea beneath, causing it to be dyed crimson.

Terror filled everyone who was unrelated to Chu Feng, such as the observers. They would have never thought he would be this ruthless. They didn't expect he would truly completely kill off the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans.

They were worried—worried whether Chu Feng would be consumed by blood and kill even them. After all, they had come here today to participate in the wedding of Jiang Qisha and Zi Ling. In the end, their

actions were a type of humiliation towards Chu Feng.

But their worry was redundant. Although he was cruel towards his enemies, Chu Feng wasn't insane. He wouldn't kill the innocent. Even though the observers were detestable, it was not to the degree that they deserved death.

Just in such a manner, the people from the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans were completely annihilated by the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army. Not a single person was left alive.

Although they did not have too great of a strength, there was, after all, a large number of people. Thus, Chu Feng did not abandon their Source Energy. He absorbed it all and gave it to Eggy.

At that moment, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect stood orderly in the air. They paid their respects towards Chu Feng and at the same time, and shouted simultaneously, "LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!

"LONG LIVE SECT HEAD!"

Those four words thunderously resounded endlessly. The people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were truly excited because the powerful strength Chu Feng showed them was something even the former sect head couldn't do.

His strength let everyone know that their decision was right: Chu Feng not only had the qualifications to become their sect head, they even felt he would surpass all former sect heads and become the greatest existence in the history of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

At that instant, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, Chun Wu, Qiushui Fuyan, Taikou, Qiu Canfeng, and the others...

Those dear to Chu Feng were brimming with a joyous smile on their faces. They felt happiness from the bottom of their hearts. They felt pride

for Chu Feng.

Chu Feng's strong performance astounded others; those who could have befriended him yet missed the chance felt intense regret. Their emotions were very complicated.

Xia Yu and Dong Xue were the representatives of those people. Although Chu Feng wouldn't do much to them, they knew very well that making Chu Feng an enemy was their largest failure in life.

They knew Chu Feng would become very strong. So strong it'd be unimaginable. At that time, from what they knew of him, he would definitely help the ones close to him. Chun Wu and the others were within that group. However, Xia Yu and Dong Xue... they... they would never be qualified to receive Chu Feng's assistance.

They and Chun Wu were already on two different levels. On the road of cultivation, Chun Wu would leave them further and further behind. They had been put into the exact same situation as Chun Wu, but... they just chose the wrong path.

So, at that very moment, they truly hated themselves. They hated their ignorance. They hated their failed judgement. Not only did they give up a huge opportunity to befriend Chu Feng, they even made him an enemy. If they had...

But sadly, there was no medicine for regret in this world. They were fated to pay the price for their very actions. What they could do was represented by two words: eternal regret.

Chapter 974: What Kind of Method?

But just when everyone felt everything was settled, Chu Feng suddenly cast his fierce gaze towards the Misty Peak. He loudly said, “Just watching as your younger generation is being killed, huh? You truly have quite the tolerance.”

They all felt confused at Chu Feng’s words because other than the faraway Misty Peak in the direction of Chu Feng’s gaze, there was no one. Not even half a shadow.

“Hoh, so you already knew I hadn’t died? I really can’t underestimate you.”

Just when the crowd was feeling puzzled, an aged laughter rang out. Simultaneously, an old person showed himself and appeared before the crowd.

“How is this possible? It’s him?”

After seeing that person, not to mention the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Zi Ling, and the others, even the observers were very taken aback. Their faces were filled with shock as they felt this to be unbelievable.

At that very instant, the person who stood in the air was none other than Murong Mingtian. The ancestor of the Immortal Execution Archipelago hadn’t died.

“I admit you’ve made a good attempt. You’re a very skillful old cunning fox, and I was almost tricked by you.

“But since you haven’t fled and dare to appear in front of him, I’m sure you have some sort of new technique to fight against me, right?

“Since you’ve already finished preparing, why be so secretive? Just bring it out and let me see what method you’ve been preparing for so long. Show me why you didn’t show yourself even though all your successors were being killed,” Chu Feng said with a light smile.

The expressions of Zi Ling and the others instantly turned grave. After looking at one another, they started backing away slowly with the entire

Crippling Night Demon Sect's army.

They knew Murong Mingtian was very cunning: he was not only ruthless, he was very calculative. As Chu Feng said: since he dared to show up even after Chu Feng defeated Jiang Qisha, it meant the reason he was fearless was because he had backup. It would only make sense that he had something to deal with Chu Feng.

They stood no chance against Murong Mingtian before, and to an even greater degree, they stood no chance against Murong Mingtian now. They had to quickly leave this battlefield between the two, otherwise they would distract Chu Feng.

"Haha, interesting! You know I have something I can use to deal with you, yet you still dare to call out so arrogantly to me! It seems that you also have quite some confidence. I, Murong Mingtian, have been in the Eastern Sea Region for so many years, but you're the first one who's been able to force me to this state.

"But Chu Feng, the Earthen Taboo martial skill you used before was so powerful, so I'm guessing that you too had paid quite a huge price, right? Don't think I can't tell. Right now, you appear fine, but you've actually exhausted quite a bit of power. Your strength is lesser than before," Murong Mingtian said with a smile.

"Hoh... You are correct, but it is still more than enough to deal with you," Chu Feng sneered. Even though Murong Mingtian was very correct, he remained unafraid because he had already decided. Whether he himself would live or die, Murong Mingtian would not live to see another day.

Actually, after killing Murong Mingtian, Chu Feng had tried absorbing his Source Energy, but he couldn't even find a single trace of it. So, at that time, he confirmed that Murong Mingtian hadn't died, and had instead used some sort of special technique to escape.

Chu Feng also knew very well that Murong Mingtian could have just fled. But, he didn't. After killing Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian dared to appear again.

That meant he now had something even more powerful than Jiang Qisha. No matter what it was, without a doubt it was greater than Jiang Qisha's total strength.

Chu Feng was no god. Even though he could make many guesses, he could not be certain what Murong Mingtian grasped within his hands that gave him the courage to stand here. Even though Chu Feng held a certain amount of confidence, he could not be definite he could defeat Murong Mingtian.

So, Chu Feng didn't escape, and instead calmly faced the situation. What he relied on was not only confidence, but also determination—determination to fight Murong Mingtian to the very bitter end.

Chu Feng knew if Murong Mingtian had a way to defeat him, even if escape were successful, that applied only to himself. Zi Ling and the others would not make it out. If he left, they would die. So, he could not escape. Today, their lives were shared.

In the same vein of reasoning: if Murong Mingtian couldn't reign victorious, then Chu Feng could thoroughly remove this old monster. Although his aptitude wasn't as good as Jiang Qisha's, he was too scheming. Moreover, he knew some secrets regarding the Misty Peak. Leaving him alive would stem countless troubles in the future. He had to be removed, and it had to be now.

"Chu Feng, oh Chu Feng, I truly feel a bit of admiration for a young man like you. How good would it have been if you weren't my enemy." Murong Mingtian actually nodded his head in appreciation towards Chu Feng's decision. However, he wore an odd smile quickly on his face and said, "To be honest, right now, you are more powerful than me. With the strength I currently possess, no matter what I do I am no match for you.

"But the reason you are stronger than me right now isn't only because your aptitude is good and your strength exceptional. The more important reason is because of Lady Piaomiao's cultivation. However, I understand the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique very well. No matter how much better your talent is, no matter how long you can keep Lady

Piaomiao's cultivation on you, there will be a day that it disappears. On that day, killing you will require me barely any strength.

"However, I did not escape. I did not choose to deal with you after you lose Lady Piaomiao's cultivation. Instead, I chose to stand before you when you're at your strongest. Do you know why?"

Chu Feng didn't respond to Murong Mingtian's question. He knew his method would be absolutely not simple. However, Chu Feng didn't only have strength to deal with Jiang Qisha. He had kept some backup. If he put forth his all, defeat might not be unavoidable.

Besides, if he could truly do nothing, he still had a monster from the Asura Spirit World within his body. The worst result was to truly use everything he had, regardless of the consequences. So, Chu Feng was not afraid.

"Hoh, Chu Feng, I'll tell you honestly: I dare to stand in front of you right now, at a moment like this, is because there's no doubt to your death if I use this. Who you will face will not be me alone. It will be an even more terrifying existence."

Suddenly, Murong Mingtian made a smile. His gaze also started to change—his eyes turned dark-green. But the most significant change was an odd mark appearing on his forehead.

It squirmed around, as if it were alive. It was sinister and horrifying, seeming akin to a demon.

Chapter 975: Killing One's Own

After the appearance of the strange mark, Murong Mingtian's aura became completely different. It was simply not the aura of a man. It seemed as if there were a demon housed within his body. It was sinister, horrifying, and exuded bloodthirsty killing intent.

Although he had a very odd aura, so odd it was terrifying, his strength wasn't actually increased. That was why the changes occurring to him were so peculiar.

But even so, Chu Feng didn't dare to be at ease. He noticed that Murong Mingtian's change in aura was due to his preparations in casting a special technique.

hmm

Indeed, just when Chu Feng felt something was off, Murong Mingtian made his move. He laid a Spirit Formation in front of him—it was a Teleportation Formation. It could send special objects within a short distance to his side.

"Master, Senior Taikou, Sister Fuyan, quickly bring Zi Ling and everyone in the Crippling Night Demon Sect away from here," Chu Feng hurriedly sent a mental message. He knew this was likely the method Murong Mingtian had to deal with him.

Qiu Canfeng and the others didn't dare to hesitate after receiving Chu Feng's words. They started to retreat orderly. However, even though they were very far away, they didn't escape.

They just didn't want Chu Feng to be distracted but they would not abandon him and leave. In this battle, if Chu Feng won, then they won. If Chu Feng lost, everyone lost.

Though Chu Feng hadn't personally seen their actions, he was aware of them. However, he didn't say much because he knew Zi Ling and the others wouldn't listen to him regardless. So, he didn't bother. He turned pressure into power—it was not an option to be defeated. He had to kill

Murong Mingtian.

After seeing the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect stay quite far away, the observers also quickly left. There were even many timid people who didn't stay behind. They started flying towards the Teleportation Array, preparing to leave.

They knew very well that the upcoming battle would be horrifying. With a slight bit of carelessness, they could become the sacrifices to the fires of battle.

However, since there were timid people, there were, of course, fearless people. Although many people had started to leave, there was still quite a few who chose to stay behind. They wanted to personally witness this frightening battle.

Everyone cast their gazes towards the Teleportation Formation behind Murong Mingtian. They all knew the thing it was about to summon would not be simple at all. It would definitely be something exceptional and would most likely be related to the secrets of the Misty Peak.

rumble rumble rumble

Before the gazes of the crowd, a tremor rang out from the formation. As the formation shook, a rectangular black object appeared in front of them.

It was made out of wood. Two and a half meters wide, three meters long. There were chains tied around everywhere, and on the chains, there were binding runes engraved. It was a coffin.

But most importantly, there was a mark in the center of the coffin. That mark was squirming and releasing an extremely horrifying aura.

Even though the size of the mark was different, no matter aura or shape, it was the exact same as the one on Murong Mingtian's forehead. It was the same mark.

"This... It's him?!"

Chu Feng had used the Heaven's Eyes because he knew there was

something within the coffin. But after he saw what was inside, his expression changed greatly. Surprise and discomfort emerged onto his face.

whoosh

Just at that moment, Murong Mingtian's hands overlapped each other. After casting a spell, the mark on the coffin started glittering faintly. Simultaneously, the chains surrounding it loosened before the coffin opened up completely. A person then slowly appeared before the crowd.

It was a man. He was big and large, and exuded an exceptional aura. As his long hair fluttered to and fro in the wind, his handsome face appeared occasionally. On it was evidence of his vast experience in the years. Most importantly, there was also this flame-like scar on his forehead.

That man was no stranger. He was the formerly strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, the person who had defeated the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Huangfu Haoyue.

"Haoyue?" Many people's faces changed greatly when they saw that person, but the one with the most complex emotions was Qiushui Fuyan.

The relationship she had with Huangfu Haoyue was not simple at all. After knowing Huangfu Haoyue had gone insane, she even searched the Eastern Sea Region but was unable to find him again. No matter what, she would not have thought that Huangfu Haoyue had been captured by Murong Mingtian.

So, at that very instant, after she saw him again, she lost control of her emotions. As she yelled, she ran towards Huangfu Haoyue.

"Sister Fuyan, don't come over!" Chu Feng suddenly shouted at that moment, then he said mentally, "This is indeed Senior Huangfu Haoyue, but he is not the person you know. If I'm not mistaken, he has already been controlled by Murong Mingtian with some sort of sinister method."

Qiushui Fuyan went into a slight daze after hearing Chu Feng's words, then carefully examined Huangfu Haoyue. Only then did she discover that he did look a bit odd.

Back then, when she saw Huangfu Haoyue, he was in a very rough state. Moreover, he was muttering to himself, his actions were odd, he seemed randomly frightened by something... He looked like a madman. There had clearly been some heavy injuries dealt to his mind, leading to his loss of reason.

But now, though he lacked any expressions to his face, there was fury in his eyes as he emanated a powerful bloodthirsty aura. Right now, he was even more terrifying than his previous state because now, it seemed that he now had absolutely no awareness. As Chu Feng said, Huangfu Haoyue really did seem controlled by someone.

"Haoyue, it's me! I'm Fuyan! You don't recognize me? You don't even recognize me?" But even so, Qiushui Fuyan was unwilling to give up. She called out Huangfu Haoyue's name and mentioned things that had happened in the past.

She could already imagine what Murong Mingtian was going to use him for. He was going to fight Chu Feng until one of them died. This was something she never wanted to see because both Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue were very important to her. She didn't hope anything to happen to either one of them.

But sadly, Huangfu Haoyue was cold and expressionless. He gave no reactions, as if he couldn't hear Qiushui Fuyan's words.

"Is this truly Huangfu Haoyue? The former number one genius in the Eastern Sea Region? Didn't he go to the Holy Land of Martialism? Why is he in the Eastern Sea Region? Has he come back?"

"What is happening? He should have a very close relationship with Qiushui Fuyan, but now, he is not only ignoring Qiushui Fuyan, his e instead standing with Murong Mingtian. Could it be... he's been controlled?"

Those watching were no fools. After hearing Qiushui Fuyan's calls fail, they had confirmed Huangfu Haoyue's identity. But amidst the shock they felt, they deduced the reason why he was ignoring Qiushui Fuyan: Huangfu Haoyue had been controlled by Murong Mingtian, and he was

the strongest method Murong Mingtian possessed to deal with Chu Feng.

They were truly very shocked. They had imagined all sorts of methods Murong Mingtian would use to deal with Chu Feng, but they didn't expect it to be this. Murong Mingtian was simply making Chu Feng kill his own.

Chapter 976: Demonic Soul Seizing Technique

“Haoyue, you truly don’t recognize me anymore? You don’t remember those things?

“Then… Do you recognize him? He’s Chu Feng, the child you carried out of the Heavenly Road! He’s become an adult now; do you still not recognize him? Did something happen in the Heavenly Road? Have you forgotten about that too?”

Qiushui Fuyan ignored the crowd’s discussions and continued trying to communicate with Huangfu Haoyue. Since she couldn’t make him recall anything with her own stories, she attempted to recall his members with Chu Feng’s stories. But sadly, it was still useless.

“Haha, Qiushui Fuyan, there’s no use. If it were that easy to summon Huangfu Haoyue’s memories, do you think I would bring him out so easily? If he remembers, doesn’t that mean I’m digging my own grave? You underestimate me too much.” Murong Mingtian suddenly laughed oddly, then he mockingly said, “I’ll be honest. The method I’m using to control Huangfu Haoyue is viewed as a forbidden technique on the Misty Peak—the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique. This technique is something even Lady Piaomiao doesn’t know of. I accidentally found it in Master’s residence.

“As for its usage, it’s very special as well. The technique is not something cast with just a simple Spirit Formation. It is a formation that can only be created with the blood and flesh of live people as catalyst and the bones of infants as medicine. The more people alive refined within this formation of flesh, the stronger the binding power created.

“To bind Huangfu Haoyue, I have killed over a million cultivators and several dozen thousand infants! Huangfu Haoyue is my puppet. If I tell him to go west, he will not dare to go east. If I tell him to stand, he will not move.

“If I want him to kill someone, he will kill that person. Even... if it’s his former lover, he will not be merciful.”

“Nonsense! Haoyue has a firm will. How could he possibly be controlled by the likes of you?!” Qiushui Fuyan cursed.

“Haha, it seems that you still don’t believe me! But that’s fine. If you don’t, I can test it out.” Murong Mingtian’s smile turned stranger and stranger. He pointed towards Qiushui Fuyan and yelled, “Tear this bitch’s corpse into a million pieces!”

hmm Immediately after Murong Mingtian’s command, Huangfu Haoyue’s body trembled. His eyes emitted a dark-green light the exact same as Murong Mingtian’s.

More importantly, after the green light appeared, the mark on Huangfu Haoyue’s forehead changed instantly. It became a lump of flame, whereupon a boundless pressure engulfed Qiushui Fuyan.

“Heavens, this aura...”

Everyone’s faces changed when they felt that. They trembled despite the lack of coldness, and they felt chills go down their spines. Because, right now, the aura Huangfu Haoyue emanated was rank eight Martial King.

Although Huangfu Haoyue had been powerful, he was not a rank eight Martial King before. Yet, he was right now. Such powerful strength made everyone fearful. Rank eight Martial King... that was a realm near Martial Emperor, a level they had never seen before in their lives.

And Huangfu Haoyue was even so young. If he continued cultivating, becoming a Martial Emperor was not something impossible. Imagining that someone in the Eastern Sea Region could become a Martial Emperor... that truly brought forth shock.

“Haoyue, you...”

But in comparison to the fear and shock the observer felt, Qiushui Fuyan was frozen. As she felt the incoming pressure that even shattered space itself, her eyes reddened.

Even though she knew Huangfu Haoyue had been controlled and wasn't intentionally attacking her, she still felt heartbroken. An indescribable sorrow washed over her heart.

Amidst such sadness, she had even forgotten about escape. Though, in reality, she couldn't even escape due to the great difference in cultivation.

boom

As the surging pressure was about to collide, a black slash suddenly appeared. It was incomparably fierce and even the pressure could not withstand it—it was slashed open, and the attack was stopped.

It was Chu Feng who made his move. With the Demon Sealing Sword in his hand, he stopped the horrifying pressure.

"Sister Fuyan, stay farther away! Believe me. No matter the strength of the formation, there will always be imperfections. I can rid Senior Huangfu Haoyue of Murong Mingtian's control," Chu Feng said mentally after cutting open the pressure.

Qiushui Fuyan calmed down. Although she still held doubts in her heart, she had to believe in Chu Feng. Right now, he was the only person who could fight off Huangfu Haoyue, and also the only person who was worthy of trust.

boom rumble rumble

But, beyond any expectations, after failing the first strike, Huangfu Haoyue once again attacked Qiushui Fuyan. Moreover, this time, it was not just a simple attack of pressure—it was a punch.

That single punch gathered the King-level Martial power within the circumference of several miles. Its power was terrifying, and it was simply not something an ordinary martial skill could stop. Even Chu Feng's Demon Sealing Sword could not.

"White Tiger Slaughtering Technique." Chu Feng opened his Heaven's Eyes to analyze and decide on a defensive technique. He gave no hesitation as he immediately used the Secret Skill to block that single punch.

The White Tiger Slaughtering Technique's power was limitless, but it was dependent on the opponent. Huangfu Haoyue only sent a normal punch—it wasn't even a martial skill. However, he was not a typical rank eight Martial King. Even putting aside cultivation, his aptitude and fighting strength was superior to Murong Mingtian and Lady Piaomiao.

Thus, even though the White Tiger Slaughtering Technique successfully stopped the power of the punch, it had still dissipated. Huangfu Haoyue, with a mere punch, destroyed Chu Feng's Secret Skill.

"AHH—"

Seeing his own attack blocked once again, Huangfu Haoyue violently roared. As it rang out, layers of ferocious flames started appearing around him and they pressed towards Qiushui Fuyan.

"Chu Feng, run! Those are the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!

"Huangfu Haoyue is the only person who's been able to master the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique within the Burning Heaven Church! You won't be able to block these flames!"

Qiushui Fuyan's face instantly turned as pale as paper. She started to yell loudly, and she, who didn't want Chu Feng to be affected by that attack, ran towards him.

"Sister Fuyan, don't come over! Believe me. No matter how much more powerful these flames become, I can withstand them. Leave! Go towards Senior Taikou and the others."

But what Qiushui Fuyan didn't expect was as the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven fiercely pounced over, Chu Feng turned his head around with a light smile. On his face, there was no fear. Instead, there was a hint of confidence.

Qiushui Fuyan couldn't help but be taken aback when she saw Chu Feng. Even though she felt it was inconceivable, she suddenly felt that he could truly block these terrifying flames.

Chapter 977: A True Monster

BOOM—

The speed of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven was extremely quick. In the instant Qiushui Fuyan entered a daze, it had already arrived. It was akin to a fiery-red enormous wave of flames, yet also like a ferocious army formed by Monstrous Beasts. With a destructive might, it arrived before Chu Feng.

In front of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, Chu Feng was akin to an ant in a flood. He simply could not resist as he was instantly flooded by the flames.

Moreover, after engulfing Chu Feng, the horrifying fire did not stop. Its heat soared into the sky and as it surged, it continued towards Qiushui Fuyan and the others. This was because the flames' goal was originally Qiushui Fuyan. She was the person Huangfu Haoyue aimed to kill.

"Hahaha, ignorant brat, who do you think Huangfu Haoyue is? With this borrowed cultivation, you think you want to defeat him, a rank eight Martial King? You're simply committing suicide!"

Seeing the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven that enveloped the entire sky as it surged in the air, seeming as if they could burn through everything, Murong Mingtian roared with laughter. He knew how terrifying the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were. He knew even more how terrifying Huangfu Haoyue's Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were.

The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven could burn through all creatures in this world. Those words were not just meaningless talk. Huangfu Haoyue's Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven could truly do that because he had already mastered the Burning Heaven Church's most precious treasure, the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique. The mark on his forehead was the proof of that.

So, after Chu Feng was submerged within the inferno, Murong Mingtian felt Chu Feng was absolutely dead. How could a rank four Martial King

possibly defend against the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven?

But in contrast to Murong Mingtian's secret joy, Qiushui Fuyan and Zi Ling and the others instantly fell into an icy bottomless hole. An indescribable sorrow started flowing within their hearts. They couldn't even make out any crying sounds but their eyes were already red.

They felt Chu Feng hadn't been able to block the ferocious Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. Although its power was limited, they could feel it was actually much more terrifying than the Earthen Taboo martial skill Jiang Wushang cast before.

boom rumble rumble rumble—

However, just when everyone felt Chu Feng had possibly lost his life, a deafening explosion rang out amidst the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. The blazing flames themselves suddenly stopped as well as they stagnated in the air.

boom The strangest thing was after another explosion, the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven started swirling on the spot. Moreover, they seemed to be shrinking, as if there were a black hole in the center of the sky absorbing the fierce flames.

Finally, the flames disappeared completely. At that moment, a person also appeared within the crowd's line of sight. That person was not big or large, but was very imposing. He was none other than Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng! It's Chu Feng! He hasn't died yet and not only that, he even withstood the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!"

"Heavens, how powerful is this Chu Feng? As a rank four Martial King, facing Jiang Wushang and Murong Mingtian is one thing but he's even able to face Huangfu Haoyue, a rank eight Martial King? Does logic no longer apply to this person?!" The crowd was shocked when they saw that and felt great disbelief.

"No, wait, look! Look at the lightning covering Chu Feng's body! It's not simple at all, and he isn't a rank four Martial King right now. His cultivation has risen! Right now, he's a rank five Martial King!" But some

sharp people discovered the changes that occurred to Chu Feng.

At that moment, there was a blinding lightning armour covering Chu Feng's body. As it surged, his aura had changed. He was now a rank five Martial King. And this... this was the origin of Chu Feng's confidence because rank four Martial King was not his limit.

"Impossible! How is this possible?"

But when Murong Mingtian saw the changes to Chu Feng, his complexion turned quite interesting.

Actually, he already knew Chu Feng had a technique to raise his cultivation. However, the reason he remained so fearless and confident was precisely because of the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique.

He knew quite a bit about the technique, so he knew, after the using the technique to obtain another person's cultivation, no matter Forbidden Medicine or other methods of cultivation raising, both were useless. It was impossible to raise one's cultivation after using the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. It was impossible.

Yet, right now, Chu Feng was using that lightning armour to do exactly that. How could Murong Mingtian not be shocked? When Chu Feng was a rank four Martial King, he was able to defeat a rank seven Martial King. So, when Chu Feng was now a rank five Martial King, who knew whether he'd be able to defeat Huangfu Haoyue, a rank eight Martial King?

"Surprised? Indeed, I used the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique to borrow Senior Piaomiao's power. That's why I'm at this rank. In such a situation, I cannot raise my cultivation by Forbidden Medicines or special martial skills.

"But, I don't mind telling you that this lightning armour isn't a Forbidden Medicine, nor a martial skill. It is my own ability. It will not give me any backlash, nor any restrictions. Even the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique cannot restrict it," Chu Feng said with a mocking smile. He knew what Murong Mingtian was thinking, but he also knew his own ability.

“What? His own power?” Everyone was shocked again. An ability that could raise one’s cultivation by one rank, regardless of the realm. That was really quite powerful.

At that instant, everyone looked at Chu Feng with fiery gazes. They finally knew why Chu Feng was so monstrous. This person did not seem like a normal person. At least, judging by his lightning armour ability, Chu Feng grasped something that others did not have.

“Hmph. You can raise your cultivation. So what? You have powerful fighting strength, but does Huangfu Haoyue not? You are the genius in the Eastern Sea Region right now, but when Huangfu Haoyue was famous you were still in your mother’s womb!”

Although he felt it was quite inconceivable, Murong Mingtian was not too afraid. He pointed at Chu Feng, and loudly said, “Kill this brat! It doesn’t matter what you use, but I want to see nothing remaining!”

BOOM—

After Murong Mingtian spoke, Huangfu Haoyue once again attacked. Again, it was the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, but this time, no matter area or fierceness, it was several times more horrifying that before.

Even though the observers were quite far away, they still felt the heat wave slam over from afar. It was very difficult to withstand, and they couldn’t help but retreat. The flames were really too terrifying, and before such a blazing temperature, even if the flames were far away, they were still enough to burn them into ashes. Huangfu Haoyue was serious now.

Chapter 978: The Pope of the Burning Heaven Church

"Actually... I've always wanted to spar with Senior Huangfu Haoyue. After all, he was someone who defeated the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect.

"Although I don't wish for the current situation, it is a rare opportunity for me to experience Senior Huangfu Haoyue's techniques."

However, even though anyone could tell that the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven were several times fiercer than before, Chu Feng remained, unexpectedly, fearless. Instead, there was a hint of yearning surging within his eyes.

Huangfu Haoyue was very powerful—of course Chu Feng knew that. Huangfu Haoyue was the strongest person he had seen, and he was even more sure of that after hearing Qiu Canfeng talk about what had happened in the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng knew very well that the strongest person when the Crippling Night Demon Sect was at its peak era wasn't the head of the sect, whose name alone brought forth fear. It was Huangfu Haoyue because when he was thirty years old, he was already equal to the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect. Now, he was far superior.

Right now, Chu Feng too was named as the strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, but Huangfu Haoyue was an undefeated legend. So, Chu Feng, with the cultivation gained from the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, wanted to experience just how powerful this legend was.

"Chu Feng, you must be careful. There's a total of nine levels for the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. What Huangfu Haoyue used just now was only the first level. Right now, it's the fifth.

"The power of every level is multiplied by ninefold. The power of the fifth level is dozens of times the first. You cannot be careless," shouted

Qiushui Fuyan. She saw Chu Feng was not preparing to dodge and instead planned to face it with force, so she made sure to remind Chu Feng of its power.

"The Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven Huangfu Haoyue grasps is this powerful? It's simply several times more terrifying than the pope himself!" The elders of the Crippling Night Demon Sect such as Qiu Canfeng were shocked.

To think the former head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect was titled the strongest in the Eastern Sea Region, and in everyone's eyes the only person who could hold him back wasn't Lady Piaomiao, but the pope of the Burning Heaven Church...

Although, strictly speaking, the pope of the Burning Heaven Church was possibly inferior to the head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, the pope was still very strong.

His Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven was first-grade. Most importantly, his Royal Armament, the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, was very powerful. If added to the Burning Heaven Church's Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique, it would be unstoppable. Even no inferior to the Demon Sealing Sword.

But right now, the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven Huangfu Haoyue cast was not with any external power, yet it had still surpassed the pope of the Burning Heaven Church. If he had the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven to strengthen his cast, it would be unimaginable how powerful it'd become.

whoosh However, when the crowd was stunned by the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, it had arrived onto Chu Feng. In such a critical moment of life and death, he made a shocking move: he put the Demon Sealing Sword behind him and punched the boundless flames.

boom

Before that punch, gales arose. The waves flew into the skies and everything turned into chaos. The most important thing, however, was that the horrifying flames were all pushed back.

boom rumble rumble

However, Huangfu Haoyue's eyes glinted, and the flames that were pushed back surged towards Chu Feng again. Its power rose by several times and its area was endlessly enlarging as it swept everywhere.

But even so, Chu Feng remained fearless. This time, he threw out nine punches continuously. Every single one would be fiercer than the previous, and before such a perfect, destructive, and disastrous power, Huangfu Haoyue flames were pushed back.

However, Huangfu Haoyue was no simple person. As Qiushui Fuyan said: the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven truly had levels to them. If the sixth didn't work, then the seventh. If not, the eighth. Every single stage's power would be ninefold the former.

In the end, even Chu Feng felt enormous pressure. Especially when Huangfu Haoyue used the ninth level of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, the power it released twisted even space itself within the circumference of several thousand miles. The sea below even boiled.

If it weren't for the many experts amongst the observers who laid Spirit Formations to protect the crowd, the heat from the flames alone could turn everyone into ashes.

So, before such horrifying flames, Chu Feng could only use the Demon Sealing Sword. It was the king of Royal Armaments, and its power was not to be underestimated. When Chu Feng became a rank five Martial King, the power of the Demon Sealing Sword rose accordingly as well.

"This is a true stunning battle. I never thought I would be able to see such a fight. I can now die without regrets."

When Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue traded attacks back and forth, alternating between offense and defense, the people hiding within defensive Spirit Formations felt their bloods boil with passion. They were all astonished by the two's powerful strength.

In the Eastern Sea Region, Martial Kings were already the peak. There hadn't been a Martial Emperor for at least ten thousand years. So, no one

had seen the glorious battle between Martial Emperors.

But today, after they saw the battle between Chu Feng and Huangfu Haoyue, they felt shocked. They had never seen such an intense battle before.

Even though they knew this was still very far off from the battle between Martial Emperors, they already felt very honoured to be witness to it. Even risking their lives to personally behold such a sight was worth it.

whoosh However, just at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue flipped his palm. A white fan appeared.

It was very lengthy: a meter and a half long. It was entirely white, and a bit glowing. It was not made out of paper, but more like translucent jade.

whoosh Suddenly, Huangfu Haoyue flipped his wrist, and the enormous fan opened up. Afterwards, from his palm, flames appeared.

The flames looked very strange, as if they were a fire serpents as they squirmed up the white fan. At that moment, a boundless aura was also released from Huangfu Haoyue body. This was a Royal Armament, and absolutely not a normal Royal Armament.

“It’s the Fan of the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven!”

“Does this mean Huangfu Haoyue has become the pope of the Burning Heaven Church?”

After seeing that fan, everyone inhaled a deep breath. They recognized Huangfu Haoyue’s fan. It was the Royal Armament only the pope of the Burning Heaven Church could possess.

It was very similar to the Demon Sealing Sword. Not only was its power strong, it held a special meaning—it represented the pope. In other words, the person who held this fan was the pope of the Burning Heaven Church.

So, to be more precise, the person who was fighting Chu Feng was not only Huangfu Haoyue, but also the pope of the Burning Heaven Church.

Chapter 979: Deciding the Outcome

whoosh

Suddenly, Huangfu Haoyue's eyes emitted a chilly glint as he waved the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

The flames that Chu Feng suppressed once again arose and this time, the flames essentially strengthened. Their very nature changed.

At that moment, the flames were truly fierce, and even Chu Feng felt enormous pressure.

However, in spite of that, he did not back away. Instead, with a thought, he shouted, "Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation!"

wuaoo—

Instantly, four holy beasts dashed out of Chu Feng's body. They madly ran towards the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven and merged together. They circled around a formation, and as they ran forth, the Four Symbols Slaughter Formation arose.

boom rumble rumble rumble

Its power was limitless. After entering the Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven, they threw the raging flames into chaos. In the end, they completely vanished.

After they disappeared, however, the Four Symbols Slaughter Formation did not stop. With its incomparable divine might, they pressed their way towards Murong Mingtian. Exactly, Chu Feng's target was not Huangfu Haoyue, but Murong Mingtian.

Right now, Huangfu Haoyue was being bound by the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique. To break it would be very difficult.

However, Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were not there for nothing. On the surface, he was fighting Huangfu Haoyue quite intensely, but in reality, he had been searching for a method to break the binding formation.

Finally, Chu Feng reached a conclusion. It was actually very simple if he

wanted to break the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique: just kill Murong Mingtian. As the proverbs said, to defeat the thieves, one must first capture their leader. As long as Murong Mingtian was dead, the Demonic Soul Seizing Technique would naturally be destroyed.

"Dammit. This brat is actually...

"Kill him, kill him! No matter what you use, he must be dead!"

Indeed, Murong Mingtian panicked when he saw the overwhelming Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation pressing towards him. As he backed away, he started howling madly.

The killing intent in Huangfu Haoyue's eyes became even stronger. The fan in his hand trembled slightly, and after some odd cries, the fiery-red fire serpents on the fan all rushed out.

When the fire serpents were in the fan, they were indeed very small. However, after they left, they were like released demons as they instantly became thick fire serpents several thousand meters long.

There were thirty-eight of such fire serpents. The power every single one contained was unimaginably horrifying.

After they appeared, they immediately attacked the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation. They started surrounding it and biting in madness. Then, completely beyond their expectations, the Four Symbols Slaughtering Formation was instantly torn into pieces by the thirty-eight enormous fire serpents. Chu Feng's formation was so easily destroyed.

"Dammit, this is the strongest technique in the Burning Heaven Church, the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation!" Seeing the ferocious fire serpents, Qiushui Fuyan let out an exclamation. Her already nervous face now filled with uneasiness.

"It's the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation? Huangfu Haoyue has summoned thirty-eight Burning Heaven Fire Serpents to create the formation?"

Qiu Canfeng's and the others' face changed greatly as well. Their already nervous eyes were covered with a layer of strong fear and

uneasiness as well.

The Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation was a Mortal Taboo martial skill, but not just any ordinary one. It was a Mortal Taboo martial skill cast together with the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven.

In other words, if one wanted to cast this martial skill, the absolute necessities were the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven. Neither could be lacked and the requirements were extremely high. It was very difficult to cultivate.

It was exactly due to the existence of the Burning Heaven Mysterious Technique and the Fan of Raging Flames of the Burning Heaven that the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation was so abnormally powerful. It was even titled as the strongest Taboo martial skill in the Eastern Sea Region.

Back then, the pope of the Burning Heaven Church had used this to shock the world and annihilate a race. He turned a preposterous Monstrous Beast race into an eternal sea of fire.

Qiu Canfeng and the others had personally witness the scene of the former pope of the Burning Heaven Church cast the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation. All of them, after seeing such a technique, approved of it. They approved of this formation, and agreed it was the strongest Mortal Taboo martial skill in the Eastern Sea Region.

However, to know when the pope of the Burning Heaven Church could only summon three Burning Heaven Fire Serpent with all his power. After summoning, he lost all his strength and paid quite a price for it.

Yet now, Huangfu Haoyue had actually summoned thirty-eight Burning Heaven Fire Serpent. If they were to become a Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation, then its power would simply be unimaginable. It would possibly even surpass an Earthen Taboo martial skill. After all, this was not a normal Mortal Taboo martial skill.

rumble rumble rumble rumble rumble

As they say, “The greater one worries, the more likely it comes.” When Qiushui Fuyan, Qiu Canfeng, and the others were all concerned about the creation of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation, the serpents did start to merge together, which they then created a boundless formation of flames.

The formation’s flames rage and the runes on it shone. It was extremely large, and as it stood vertical in the air, not only did it emit a blinding fiery-red light, it emanated an aura that made the formation seem it could burn through everything. It simply appeared like the sun had fell down the sky.

At that instant, the fabrics of space no longer twisted. Instead, they started to merge together.

At that instant, the sea not only boiled, it started steaming.

At that instant, a powerful pressure engulfed the world. Other than the Misty Peak that glittered in light, not moving in the slightest, nearly everything visible to the naked eye was being twisted.

Even the people hiding within the Spirit Formations felt restless. Those with slightly weaker cultivations actually exploded, unable to withstand the power of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent.

In a situation like that, even Qiu Canfeng and the others were forced to increased the defensive strength of the Spirit Formation as they led the crowd back. They knew very well if the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent were to explode, its power would simply be unimaginable.

When those far away felt such a pressure, one could imagine how much pressure Chu Feng felt, as he was so close.

At that moment, fire permeated the air around Chu Feng. It was in complete chaos, and everything in his surroundings changed. How did he even look like he was standing in the air? It seemed more like he was standing in an endless oven.

Droplets of sweat unceasingly appeared on Chu Feng’s skin. They slid down his skin, but before they even made any sizable distance, they were

evaporated. Before such high temperature, Chu Feng's face turned red.

But even so, he remained calm. With a smile worn on his face, he said calmly, "In the end, it seems that I still have to use this to finish it off."

Chapter 980: The Curtains Fall

“Chu Feng, are you really going to use the Firmament Slash? Do you want to cripple yourself?” Eggy, who had been remaining silent, suddenly spoke.

This queen had watched Chu Feng grow up and she had experienced everything that Chu Feng experienced. There was no one who knew him more than her.

She knew well that Chu Feng’s strongest killing blow was the Firmament Slash; however, it was a double-edged sword. As it gave Chu Feng power, it exhausted his strength. It wore Chu Feng’s body down. The Firmament Slash was a martial skill that did such a thing.

Before, although there were no problems on the surface when Chu Feng used the Firmament Slash to deal with Jiang Qisha, various issues had begun springing up in his body. He was now only enduring.

If he used the Firmament Slash slash once again right now, then the damage dealt to his body would be even larger, perhaps even become permanent. This was not just harm dealt to his body, it was harm dealt to his entire future in cultivation.

“Eggy, I know you’re worried for me, but if I can’t even live pass today, what’s the point about talking tomorrow?

“Come, give me a hand. Let us finish this battle together and kill that bastard Murong Mingtian,” Chu Feng said.

“Ahh, is there truly no other way?” Eggy asked in a probing manner.

She knew of Chu Feng used the Firmament Slash again, his body would definitely be injured. Huangfu Haoyue was much stronger than Jiang Qisha. He would not be defeated by just the fifth slash; perhaps there would be a need to use all nine.

The pressure from every single slash of the nine slashes was completely different. The ninth was the most powerful, but at the same time its demand in power was the most horrifying. So, that meant Chu Feng had

to pay a huge price in order to be victorious.

"There can only be gains when there are losses. Where would harvests come if not for the investment? I cannot lose this battle, and only with this will my chance in victory be the greatest. So, I can only put everything I have into this," Chu Feng said.

"Whatever. Since you've decided on this, then let us bear through this together." Suddenly, Eggy gave a sweet smile, and as she spoke, she closed her eyes.

"Eggy, you..."

At that instant, Chu Feng's expression changed. He could feel an extremely strong power surging into his body from Eggy's—it was power from the Asura Spirit World.

Actually, Chu Feng did want to borrow Eggy power to raise the strength of his physical body. With that, using the Firmament Slash would reduce the damage dealt to himself.

But right now, the reason he was so shocked was because Eggy not only helped Chu Feng strengthen his physical body, even his fighting strength was increased with Eggy's channeling of power. She once again touched upon a taboo and helped Chu Feng by exhausting her own life.

Chu Feng did not approve of Eggy's current actions, but the present battle did not only relate to his and Eggy's life. Everyone else's life was related as well. So, Chu Feng didn't raise any objections. He allowed Eggy to use this sort of method to help him.

hmm Suddenly, Eggy's power surged out of Chu Feng's body. The black flames became a pair of black wings. When they extended outward, everyone could feel Chu Feng's power increasing in strength.

"Bastard, what the hell are you looking at? Why aren't you killing that brat?" roared Murong Mingtian once again when he saw that.

boom rumble rumble rumble After Murong Mingtian's command, Huangfu Haoyue unhesitantly attacked. With his channelling of power, the incomparably horrifying Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation

pressed towards Chu Feng.

After the formation moved, everything within the borders of the entire Misty Peak started violently trembling. Not only trembling—nearly everything was being burned by the surging flames.

"Crap, run—"

Everyone felt the upcoming disaster. They had truly witnessed the terror of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation. They knew even though they were very far from the battlefield, there was no doubt to their death when the formation thoroughly exploded.

Actually, at that very instant, of the hundred million observers, one-tenth were already unable to bear the blazing aura. They were exploding and dying; the slaughter had already begun...

So, other than a few observers who chose to remain here, continuing to watch this frightening battle with no regards to their life, a large number of observers had already started to turn around and escape, aiming to protect their own lives.

However, even though the observers were fleeing, the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect and Zi Ling and the others didn't. Not one left. They all stood in the air, and allowed the ferocious waves of air to slam onto the Spirit Formation that protected them. In spite of the danger, there wasn't a single person who backed away.

Everyone focused on Chu Feng. They had already entrusted all their hope onto him and even threw their lives onto him.

In this battle, if Chu Feng lived, they live. If Chu Feng died, they would die with him.

"Earthen—Taboo—Firmament—Slash!

"Nine Consecutive Slashes!"

Chu Feng finally made his move. After spitting out those words, a pressure that seemed it could destroy the world was released from Chu Feng's body and it swept outward.

The horrifying aura from the Firmament Slash instantly engulfed everything and everyone. It actually froze the fierce waves of air.

whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh whoosh

Quickly after, countless blood-red energy slashes appeared and all struck the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

boom rumble rumble—

When the blood-red slashes blended into the formation, they heard a huge explosion. Their vision then became filled with fiery-red.

A ferocious might had covered their eyes, preventing them from seeing what was happening. However, the horrifying shock waves wreaking havoc let them know how horrifying the energy of the explosion was.

But when those shock waves were invisibly blocked, averting harm to the crowd, many people knew that it was Chu Feng who protected them. It was he who used his own power to stop the horrifying shock waves.

Before such changes, no matter the ones escaping or the ones observing, they didn't move. They looked down. Other than the people beside them, they couldn't see anyone else; however, the rumbles that echoed next to their ears became more and more thunderous.

Only after a long while did that start to subside. First, the rumbles faded away, then the violent shock waves stopped. In the end, the fiery-red light that blocked their vision and even Spirit power vanished.

"This..." And when their sights were clear, everyone was taken aback.

But soon after, Zi Ling, Qiu Canfeng, and the members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect all brimmed with indescribable excitement and joy.

After experiencing continuous battles, cheers finally rang out again in this world. Not only were the ones on the Crippling Night Demon Sect's side cheering, even those with no relation to Chu Feng were cheering.

The curtains of this terrifying war finally fell.

Chapter 981: Let Me Try

The shattered fabric of space were akin to the broken fragments of a mirror. However, unlike a mirror, the pieces slowly reassembled, striving to restore itself to its once complete state.

Space was something perceivable but untouchable. Only with sufficiently powerful strength could one crack or even shatter it, leading to an endless void.

But even if space were completely fragmented, it would soon return to its original state. This natural phenomenon was very mystical and unexplained.

One could say that though space was intangible, it was actually interactable. There seemed to be a limit, and so long as one's power surpassed that limit, it would shatter. But due to its restorative properties, space could not be destroyed.

Even if one could destroy mountains with a single palm, shatter clouds with a single fist, cut off rivers with a single stamp, nearly no one could truly destroy space itself.

For instance: the sea beneath them right now. In the battle before, both it and the fabric of space received the same destruction but at present, the latter already returned to normal while the former still boiled as heat and steam soared into the sky. The sea level was now several hundred meters lower compared to the beginning of the battle. Even some shallower regions revealed the mud and rocks from their previously submerged seabeds.

However, even in the regions where the sea was deeper, enormous corpses still floated above its water. These were the bodies of sea beasts. Despite being hidden within the depths, they too were unable to avoid disaster and ended up being killed by the power of the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

"Chu Feng!"

“Chu Feng!”

“Chu Feng!”

...

However, no matter what destruction or disaster occurred to the world around them, Chu Feng’s name reverberated in his surroundings.

Nearly everyone was shouting his name. Even the observers were cheering in endless excitement.

At that very instant, in the distant battlefield, Chu Feng still remained standing in the sky. As for Huangfu Haoyue, he was hugging his head and half-kneeling. The demonic aura emanating from his body vanished. At that moment, he was trembling slightly and appeared like a tiger whose teeth were pulled out: he was of no threat to Chu Feng. In reality, he was rather terrified of his opponent.

Huangfu Haoyue, the former strongest genius in the Eastern Sea Region, had been defeated by Chu Feng.

As for Murong Mingtian, his body remained floating in the air. His lifeless eyes were wide open and his mouth agape. His face was frozen with fear and bitterness. The combination was quite a terrifying sight to behold.

Despite his unsightly expression, he exuded no aura because of the frightening wound on his chest. The wound spread havoc within his body, destroying everything inside, including his dantian.

Not only were his organs destroyed, even his Source Energy was being extracted. Indeed, Chu Feng not only killed Murong Mingtian, this monster of several hundred years of age, he was still absorbing this old monster’s Source Energy—one of a rank seven Martial King.

Murong Mingtian was defeated. The Immortal Execution Archipelago was gone. Even the Three Great Monstrous Clans were removed and all of this was due to Chu Feng.

However, the reason for such thunderous cheers was not only because

Chu Feng won this battle, nor was it only to boot-lick, these were cheers that stemmed from the bottom of their hearts. They were sincerely cheering for Chu Feng.

He not only won this battle, he even saved everyone's lives. Judging by the momentum of the battle, if it weren't for Chu Feng, then Huangfu Haoyue would have burned everyone here into ashes with the Burning Heaven Fire Serpent Formation.

"Eggy, you have to hold on! Look, I'm absorbing Murong Mingtian's Source Energy for you! He's a rank seven Martial King; as long as you refine his Source Energy, your cultivation will soar! Haven't you always been strong? You have to hold on!"

But no matter how fervent the cheers, Chu Feng tightly frowned. His complexion was quite poor, and even his usual firm and fierce gaze was filled with unstable emotions. He lost his former steadiness as he was in a panic.

Even though he won this battle, he had paid a painful price. Not only was Eggy unconscious, even he himself had received visible injuries— extremely severe injuries.

"Mm—"

Suddenly, Chu Feng's cheeks bulged and he started swaying in the air. Blood was rushing up his throat, but he forced it back down.

However, a hint of red flowed out of the corner of his mouth as his lips trembled, unable to contain all the blood. However, he didn't bother with that. As he tightly gnashed his teeth, he continued absorbing Murong Mingtian's Source Energy.

Finally, all of it entered his body. But also at that moment, his eyelids gradually shut, and his body leaned to the left as he lost the ability to fly, thus dropping down from the air.

Moreover, no matter the black wings behind him, or the lightning armour surging around him, both disappeared instantly. They returned to his body and even his aura rapidly shrank. Very quickly, he returned to

being a rank eight Martial Lord from a rank five Martial King.

"No—"

At that instant, the crowd was still cheering. However, when they saw Chu Feng fall from the sky, they were all frightened. As for Qiu Canfeng and the others, they quickly rushed towards Chu Feng.

Finally, it was Qiu Canfeng who arrived first and caught Chu Feng in his arms. Only then did he discover that Chu Feng had lost consciousness. Moreover, his aura was extremely weak. The most alarming thing was that Chu Feng's aura still shrank. Though it was at a very slow rate, if it continued, Chu Feng was going to die.

"Dammit, nothing is working!" Qiu Canfeng was attempting to heal Chu Feng, but no matter what he did, it was all useless. He couldn't even tell what part of him was injured.

"Let me try." Qiushui Fuyan took Chu Feng from Qiu Canfeng's arms. She laid a formation and put Chu Feng on top of it. Then, she started using a special healing technique.

Her method was very profound; it was one from the Misty Peak. Although she was from the Burning Heaven Church, she was still the daughter of Lady Piaomiao. Naturally, she had gotten quite a few techniques from her.

But even though such techniques were from the Misty Peak, they remained useless. Chu Feng appeared like a person fated to die as he walked into the gates of hell one step at a time. It seemed as if no one could stop him. That truly made everyone anxious.

"Chu Feng, you have to hold on!"

"Chu Feng, you can't leave us behind!"

At that moment, Zi Ling and the others all surrounded him. Seeing Chu Feng whose aura was truly as weak as it could be, and whose body was still icy despite the treatments, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, and even Chun Wu and the others had reddened eyes. Tears streamed down like rain as they started crying uncontrollably.

In reality, not to mention those close to and cared about Chu Feng, even those who had nothing to do with Chu Feng, the observers, felt their hearts ache. After all, they had been saved by Chu Feng. No matter if he intended it or not, he had indeed saved their lives.

Besides, Chu Feng had shown them his strength today. Regardless where his cultivation came from, at least he had great aptitude in cultivation. No one hoped death to befall a genius like him.

There would be one day when Chu Feng would enter the Holy Land of Martialism representing the Eastern Sea Region. If, one day, Chu Feng were to make a name for himself in the Holy Land of Martialism, he would become the pride of the Eastern Sea Region. They would feel proud of Chu Feng.

Unless it were a person who hated every single part of Chu Feng, or someone who had a grudge against him, why would someone hope for his death?

But sadly, when even Qiu Canfeng and the others were out of methods, who could save Chu Feng?

“What you’re doing is useless. How about you let me try?”

When everyone ran out of ideas, an aged voice, one that seemed as if the speaker was smiling, rang out above the hundred million crowd.

Chapter 982: Unfathomable

"Who? Who dares to speak such arrogant words? Do you think you can do something even my sect's Protector cannot?" shouted someone furiously within the Crippling Night Demon Sect's army.

In their eyes, the observers were merely garbage onlookers. It was a humiliation towards Qiu Canfeng and the others when someone dared to say something like that.

"Young man, you must watch your words. The world is vast. Do you truly think if your Protector is unable to do something, no one is? If that were true, then who was the one who forced your sect head into this state?" That aged voice rang out again, but this time, with a bit of ridicule.

"Insolence!" The already enraged members of the Crippling Night Demon Sect were naturally even more irritated by the old man's words. They seemed as if they would rush into the throng of observers and grab the speaker at any moment.

"Everyone, shut your mouth!" All of a sudden, Qiu Canfeng shouted angrily.

After his words, the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were like deflated balloons; no one dared to say even half a word.

"Sir, may I ask who you are? Can you show yourself to speak?"

After berating the crowd, Qiu Canfeng clasped his hands very politely towards the vast sea of people. He discovered even though he had locked onto that person's voice, his location was still indeterminate. That meant the speaker was not simple at all.

"My name is not worth a mention, but destiny has brought me and Chu Feng together once, so I am willing to give him a hand today."

That voice rang out again, and at that moment, an aged figure slowly walked out of the sea of people, and his appearance thus appeared before the crowd.

That old man had hair as white as snow. It was very long and it was akin to a silvery waterfall. It drooped down straight to his heels.

But the most shocking thing was that the old man's eyes were shut—he was blind. Furthermore, he was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm.

Qiu Canfeng and the others knitted their brows as a hint of suspicion and confusion surfaced into their eyes. That old man was blind in the eyes, but not in the heart. Every single step was calm as he walked towards Chu Feng and the others in the air. That simply did not seem like something a blind could do.

Most importantly, after that old man appeared, regardless of their observations, Qiu Canfeng and the others received a single result: he was in the eighth level of the Heaven realm. There was no doubt to that. However, the seemingly less doubt they had regarding his strength, the more they felt the old man was not simple at all because it meant he had concealed his cultivation too perfectly.

The old man did not care as he was gazed upon by such complicated eyes. He walked straight up to Chu Feng and put his hand onto Chu Feng's chest.

Actually, when the old man held out his hand, Qiu Canfeng and the others were very nervous because they could not be certain whether he was an enemy or ally. So, when he was making his move, Qiu Canfeng and the others were surrounding him, staying well on guard.

But their tense expressions very soon turned into joy. The old man had only placed his palm on Chu Feng's chest and simply nothing could be felt radiating out of it.

However, in a situation like that, Chu Feng's aura had truly turned for the better—at a very quick speed as well. He soon entered a stable condition and his complexion was much better too.

"He was injured internally—his Consciousness and Source Energy. But he will be completely healed after a few months' rest," said the blind old man after taking his hand away.

“Thank you for saving our sect head!”

The Crippling Night Demon Sect didn’t dare to dally in their act of appreciation. Even their own Protector was clasping his hands towards the old man, so how could they possibly dare to hesitate? They quickly expressed their gratitude, and those who were yelling here and there felt even more ashamed.

However, the blind old man just waved his hands at those thanks and said, “It cannot be considered saving. Chu Feng has a strong body. Even if I do nothing, he would have been fine. At most, he would stay in slumber for another year or so, but in the end, he would still awake.

“As I said, I’m only giving him a hand and shortening his time asleep. Don’t worry, the day he awakes is the day his body is healed. While he’s unconscious, just take good care of him.”

Qiu Canfeng and the others felt even more complicated emotions when they heard the blind old man’s words. They simply did not know what the issue was with Chu Feng, yet the old man already knew his injuries before he even came into contact with him. That was further proof of this old man’s unfathomability.

“AHH—”

But just at that moment, Huangfu Haoyue was still hugging his head and painfully howling as if he was enduring the most painful torment.

“Haoyue!” Qiushui Fuyan panicked. She leapt forward and wanted to rush over.

“Fuyan, it’s dangerous! Don’t go!” Taikou quickly held Qiushui Fuyan back.

“Father, let me go! I cannot leave him alone!” Qiushui Fuyan wanted to escape Taikou’s hold.

“Fuyan, calm down! Right now, Huangfu Haoyue is not awake. Who knows whether he’ll attack you!” Taikou painstakingly begged, unwilling to let go.

“Lady Qiushui, don’t blame me for speaking too much, but your father is correct. Huangfu Haoyue’s mind is not in a normal state. He’s still very dangerous; it will be best to stay a bit farther away,” advised Qiu Canfeng.

“Let her go. The formation controlling that person has already been deactivated by Chu Feng. He’s doing this right now only because he’s frightened. There’s not much wrong with him.”

But just at that moment, the blind old man suddenly spoke. Moreover, after speaking to Taikou, he looked at Qiushui Fuyan and said, “Have him take this pellet and let him rest for a few days. He’ll be fine by then.” After speaking, the old man spread open his palm. A pellet that looked quite insignificant appeared atop his hand.

That pellet truly did look insignificant. No light came from it, nor any fragrance. It seemed like a pellet that could simply not be any more normal. Who knew if it even did anything?

However, after seeing that blind old man’s skill, Qiushui Fuyan did not hold any bit of hesitation. She held out her hand took the pellet.

However, in the instant she took it, Qiushui Fuyan’s face changed. When she looked back at the blind old man, there was unavoidably a few more traces of respect.

She discovered with astonishment that the pellet was nothing special even after Spirit power detection, yet when she grasped it within her hand, there was an unspeakable feeling. If it must be described, one word was sufficient: “mystical”.

Qiushui Fuyan’s confidence soared and Taikou and the others didn’t stop her anymore. They let her near Huangfu Haoyue. After seeing what the blind old man did to Chu Feng, more or less trust arose.

Just like that, Qiushui Fuyan carefully approached Huangfu Haoyue, and as he was howling, she took the chance to throw the pellet into his mouth.

Shockingly, it melted and was refined instantly in his mouth. Huangfu Haoyue then closed his eyes, his body went limp, he lost his ability to stay

in the air, and started falling.

Qiushui Fuyan quickly flew up and held him in her arms. Only then did she discover that Huangfu Haoyue had a face of serenity, as if he entered a sweet dream after some extremely tiring matter.

“Thank you sen...” There was no need to mention how happy Qiushui Fuyan felt. She turned her head around and wanted to thank the blind old man.

But only then did she see only Qiu Canfeng and the others remained behind her. As for the blind old man, he had disappeared. There were no signs of him ever being here.

Chapter 983: After Awakening

"Eggy, Eggy, Eggy..."

A chaotic world presented itself before his eyes. Blurred figures appeared unceasingly. Calls for Eggy left Chu Feng's mouth again and again.

He knew this was a dream. He had a long, long dream, and in here, he could do absolutely nothing. It wasn't even up to him when to wake up.

But he still kept on calling out Eggy. He hoped calling out for her would be useful. He hoped Eggy, who bore a serious injury because of him, could persevere and survive.

Amidst this dream, the notion of time was very hazy. Even Chu Feng himself didn't know how much time had passed. Regardless, his calls for Eggy had never stopped because in the dream, he had no need to sleep, nor could he feel lethargy. What he could feel was only worry for Eggy.

"Stop calling me! I was sleeping quite comfortably, yet I was forcibly awakened by you." Finally, Eggy's mellifluous voice rang out. There wasn't a trace of weakness in those words and instead there was a hint of naughtiness.

"Eggy, you're okay?"

Chu Feng was elated. Eggy's voice not only seemed like a person's who wasn't injured at all, it was even filled with energy. But he still held a trace of doubt. After all, this was a dream. He couldn't even be certain if the voice just now truly came from Eggy.

"I've been fine since a long time ago. On the other hand, you should stop sleeping; they're waiting for you! Quickly wake up." Eggy's voice once again rang out, but disappeared very quickly.

Suddenly there was a flash, then complete darkness. When he opened his eyes again, he was lying on a comfortable bed. This familiar environment and feeling of safety other places did not bring led him to know it was the Misty Peak. He was now on the Misty Peak.

“Haha, you’ve finally woke up!” Eggy voice then rang out again.

“Eggy, you’re truly fine! This is great!” Chu Feng’s power of judgement was very strong. In the instant he woke up, he knew he had left the dream. Moreover, he knew that his and Eggy’s injuries had been healed completely. They were completely fine now.

More importantly was Eggy’s cultivation. She was now a rank eight Martial Lord—the same as Chu Feng. Such a change was naturally because she refined the Source Energy of Jiang Qisha, Murong Mingtian, and the members of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and Three Great Monstrous Clans.

Eggy was very special. There was a seal on her that restricted her true cultivation. So even though she could absorb the Source Energy of humans and thus regain cultivation, there were many restrictions.

These restrictions showed themselves with greater clarity as her cultivation grew stronger. The Source Energy she required increased in size, but the harvests she’d gain from such enormous quantities were very small—just like Chu Feng.

Yet, she was different from him. Chu Feng could strengthen himself with all sorts of Natural Oddities, but Eggy could only rely on Source Energy.

So, since Eggy was a rank eight Martial Lord, Chu Feng was certain it was the result from refining all the Source Energy he absorbed and nothing else.

Although she only reached such a level after so much Source Energy, Eggy’s fighting strength was still far above Chu Feng’s. So, in that perspective, rank eight Martial Lord was already quite a good result.

One could even say the person who’d gotten the most out of this battle was Eggy.

“Mm, it seems that someone hiddenly helped us. Otherwise, we wouldn’t have healed up so quickly.” Eggy nodded, confirming the fact that she was completely recovered.

“Someone helped us?” Chu Feng was slightly taken aback. He suddenly recalled that in the dream, he had indeed felt a gentle power. However, he just didn’t know what was with that power. After all, within the dream, he had no clue what was true and what was not.

“Chu Feng, you’ve woken up!” A familiar voice rang out. Looking towards the speaker, Chu Feng saw Qiushui Fuyan quickly walking over with a joyous face.

“Sister Fuyan!” Chu Feng also revealed joy when he saw Qiushui Fuyan. He discovered that her complexion was very spirited, which meant nothing happened to everyone. Otherwise, she wouldn’t be this happy.

“Chu Feng, don’t get up yet. You just woke up, so you should be resting.” Qiushui Fuyan quickly went to stop Chu Feng when he attempted leave his lying position.

“Sister Fuyan, don’t worry. I’m filled with energy and there are no wounds on me.” Chu Feng lightly smiled, and still sat himself up. He knew his body very well, and right now, he had indeed completely recovered.

“It seems that the senior was truly correct. The day you awake is the day you’re healed entirely.” After carefully examining Chu Feng and discovering nothing wrong with me, the smile on Qiushui Fuyan’s face became much wider.

“Senior?” Chu Feng expression changed.

“On that day when you bore a serious injury and was unconscious, we could do nothing to help you. In the crucial moment, there was a senior who came out and saved you.

“That senior had hair as white as snow, and he was also blind. He said he had met you once, so that’s why he decided to give you a hand.

“Ah, that’s right. Someone said that senior had wandered back and forth in the Everlasting Sea of Blood for many years. Do you have any recollection of him?” Qiushui Fuyan said.

“It’s him?” Chu Feng came to a realization. He naturally remembered

the blind old man in the Everlasting Sea of Blood. He was the person who narrated the legend regarding the Fate Primogenitor which still remained fresh in Chu Feng's mind.

At that time, Chu Feng already felt that the old man was not simple at all, but he didn't expect him to be this powerful. Not only was Chu Feng himself saved, Eggy was saved at all.

Back then, Chu Feng could feel how weak Eggy was—she was even weaker than him and in an even more dangerous spot. Yet now, Eggy was not only this lively, she even refined all the Source Energy. It was definitely due to the old man that she was able to. So, at that moment, Chu Feng was truly filled with gratitude towards that person.

"Chu Feng, you're awake?" Just at that moment, another sweet voice rang out. A beautiful person was slowly walking towards Chu Feng.

Not only did he know that person, he was very familiar with her. This was Chu Yue of the Chu family. Right now, on her beautiful face, there was a smile of joy. She was also bringing over delicious dishes on her hands.

They were very special. Although small in amount, the dishes were filled with nutrients. Moreover, there were healing medicines included within the ingredients; clearly, they were prepared just for Chu Feng.

"Chu Yue, why are you also here?"

Chu Feng felt very happy when he saw Chu Yue. Back then, when he was facing various difficulties in the Chu Family and poorly treated, Chu Yue was the only person other than his father and elder brother who meant well for him.

But being happy was being happy—Chu Feng felt confused now. He had safely put Chu Yue and the others on one of the eastern continents. Yet why had she appeared here now?

Chapter 984: Curing Zi Ling

"Chu Feng, not only have I come, many people who were in the continent of the Nine Provinces—even the Jiang Dynasty and the World Spirit Guild—have come. They've all been situated in the Misty Peak. We can live together like we did in the past!" Chu Yue's eyes squinted into two crescent moons as she gave a very beautiful smile.

"Sister Fuyan, what is going on?" Chu Feng didn't celebrate too soon; instead, in his eyes, there was a hint of anxiousness.

"Chu Feng, don't worry, it's like this..." Qiushui Fuyan seemed to know what Chu Feng was concerned about, so she quickly explained, "After Tantai Xue awoke, she immediately left. However, before departing, she told us we can continue living here because it was only an accident that she and Jiang Qisha and the others came to the Eastern Sea Region.

"It isn't that easy to come to the Eastern Sea Region from that place. Actually, it can be said to be impossible. Moreover, there won't be anyone in the Holy Land of Martialism who will want to come to a place like the Eastern Sea Region because in their eyes, this is no more than a landfill that has nothing.

"Moreover, no one knows about Jiang Qisha and Tantai Xue coming to the Eastern Sea Region, so there won't be anyone else from the Holy Land of Martialism who'll disturb us.

"After knowing about this, my mother decided to bring all our friends and families to the Misty Peak. Here, we can not only protect them, we can provide even better cultivation conditions. We can even borrow the Misty Peak's power to prolong their lives."

"I see."

Chu Feng now understood what had happened. So, his nervous heart was finally at ease. As Qiushui Fuyan said, what he worried was the Cursed Soil Sect's members coming to the Eastern Sea Region. At that time, they will most definitely know Jiang Qisha and the others were killed by him. And judging how the Cursed Soil Sect acted, anyone related

to him would meet disaster.

However, if what Tantai Xue were true—the Cursed Soil Sect wouldn't come to the Eastern Sea Region—then everyone was fine. Moreover, as Qiushui Fuyan said, it would most definitely be many times better to have those with quite good relations with him to live in the Misty Peak rather than in the eastern continents.

"Sister Fuyan, how are they right now?" Chu Feng asked.

"With the assistance of your Crippling Night Demon Sect, is it not an easy task to build some floating palaces? Don't worry, everything's been set up well. Senior Qiu Canfeng has also led the Crippling Night Demon Sect to eradicate the remnants of the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans. He's also rebuilt the Crippling Night Demon Sect, and now, they've returned to their former prosperous era. They've become the overlord of the Eastern Sea Region once again and their positions are nearly unmovable.

"Even your position of sect head is recognized by all to be more powerful than the former sect head.

"It's because your potential is unlimited. Right now, it's even said that you're the person who's the most promising to become a Martial Emperor," Qiushui Fuyan said with a smile. There was even a hint of pride as she spoke those words.

"So many things have happened? How long was I asleep for?" Chu Feng asked.

"You've slept for three months and sixteen days," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Three months and sixteen days?! Doesn't that mean the Heavenly Road that leads to the Holy Land of Martialism will open soon?" Chu Feng was clearly quite amazed as he had planned to go forth to the Holy Land of Martialism this year whenever the Heavenly Road opened.

"Yeah! It will open very soon. You were asleep for so long and we even thought you were going to miss it! But it seems that you don't need to wait another year.

“Also, I have another good news. After you learn of it, you will definitely be very happy.” Qiushui Fuyan’s smile became even more dazzling, and Chu Yue by her side was the exact same.

“What good news?” Chu Feng asked after giving the two of them a smile.

“Take a guess.” Qiushui Fuyan’s raised her brows lightly and her smile was even more beautiful.

“Eh... I got it.” Chu Feng rolled his eyes a bit in a thinking manner before giving them a faint smile, seeming as if he already knew the answer.

Qiushui Fuyan very rarely played a joke. Yet, right now, not only was she doing exactly that, she was even smiling so beautifully. Chu Feng thus immediately thought of a possibility.

“Oh? Tell me what good news it is. If you’re right, you’ll get a prize!” When she saw Chu Feng’s face of confidence, Qiushui Fuyan was instead a bit suspicious as she questioned him.

“If I’m not mistaken, Senior Huangfu Haoyue must have recovered his memories,” Chu Feng said with a smile.

“Heavens, you truly did get it right!” Qiushui Fuyan’s face changed after hearing Chu Feng’s response. There was a hint of surprise on her smiling complexion.

“That means Senior Huangfu Haoyue has truly recovered his memories! Has he said anything about my ancestry?”

Chu Feng was also elated. Although he was confident with his answer, he was still quite ecstatic when Qiushui Fuyan gave him the confirmation. Huangfu Haoyue’s memories were really too important to Chu Feng. This related to where he came from.

rumble rumble rumble rumble—

But just at that moment, rumbles came from the outside. Simultaneously, the white sky instantly turned pitch-black. Quickly after,

purple layers of light flashed outside.

"She's succeeded." Qiushui Fuyan didn't hold a hint of worry when she saw that. Instead, she looked at Chu Feng and said, "Chu Feng, quick, let's go out and see."

Qiushui Fuyan first flew out and arrived at the entrance to the Misty Peak, heading outside. As for Chu Feng, he quickly followed her.

Only after coming outside did Chu Feng discover there were indeed several floating palaces built. They were not gorgeous, but they exuded a natural and essential feeling. It went quite well with the Misty Peak.

However, right now, what grabbed Chu Feng's attention the most was a single exquisite floating tower. There were many layers of people surrounding its exterior, and of those people, many were familiar faces.

Su Ruo, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi... nearly everyone Chu Feng knew was below the floating tower.

At that moment, the crowd's gazes were fixed on it. Moreover, there were expressions of surprise, admiration, and joy brimming from their faces.

At that very instant, the powerful strength emanating from the floating tower affected the world itself. The bright day turned into endless night.

The layers of purple glows also came from the floating tower. It was being unceasingly emitted and nearly filled the entire sky. Amidst that blinding and beautiful purple glow, one could faintly see something—a huge bell.

"Zi Ling cursed herself of the Heaven Gripping Pellet?"

There was also an indescribable excitement surging within Chu Feng's eyes. This was a phenomenon. Very clearly, the person who initiated this was Zi Ling. The Divine Body that had been sealed from birth was now, finally, unsealed.

Chapter 985: A One-on-One Chat

The initial bright sky was now a shade of black.

However, it was not completely black because there were purple glows lingering in the sky. They were very dazzling.

They nearly covered the entire sky and one could simply see no end to them. The most important thing, though, was the faintly visible enormous bell within the glows. It gave people a feeling of destruction. It gave rise to fear and respect to it.

However, even though the phenomenon was very frightening, there was not a single person afraid. Instead, on their faces, there was excitement. Joy. They knew very well who this power originated from.

hmm

Finally, the phenomenon started shrinking. The purple glows surged back into the floating tower, and when it all vanished, the darkness in the sky faded away as well, returning to the vast white sky bright for a myriad of miles.

Shortly after the purple glows disappeared, the doors to the floating palace gradually opened. At that instant, a beautiful person slowly walked out.

It was a young woman with a purple dress. It simply matched perfectly with her delicate curves and beautiful face. She simply looked like a fairy who came down to the mortal world; her beauty was simply suffocating.

Naturally, such a pure and divine woman was Zi Ling. Moreover, she had a breakthrough in cultivation. She was now a Martial Lord from her initial cultivation in the Heaven realm. Although it was only rank one, there was no doubt she was a Martial Lord.

“Haha, Zi Ling, it’s a success?” Su Rou, Su Mei, and the others all went up after Zi Ling appeared. They were emotional and excited as they awaited her confirmation.

“Mm.” Zi Ling gave a moving smile as she faced the crowd’s desire for

the answer, then firmly nodded her head.

They were all thrilled. Their joyous emotions permeated this world, and everyone's emotions were great.

They've already seen the strength of a person with a Divine Body from Tantai Xue. Now, Zi Ling too had a Divine Body and her cultivation aptitude was now unsealed. Very soon, there would be a second Tantai Xue—possibly even a greater one.

"Chu Feng?" But when the crowd were surrounding Zi Ling and cheering endlessly, her expression changed as a cheerful expression emerged into her eyes.

Because she saw Chu Feng at the entrance of the Misty Peak.

Zi Ling leapt forward and flew towards Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng?"

Drawn by Zi Ling's movements, the crowd too discovered Chu Feng. When they saw him, their faces all lit up. They stood far away as Qiushui Fuyan and Chu Yue did. They, who were already overjoyed, felt even more excitement. They all rushed up and surrounded Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, you've finally woken up! How do you feel? Any discomfort anywhere?" Zi Ling looked up and down, carefully examining Chu Feng, afraid there was anything bad they overlooked.

"Don't worry, I've completely healed." Chu Feng lightly smiled. He gently stroked Zi Ling's soft hair and said, "Zi Ling, congratulations. You've finally rid yourself of the Heaven Gripping Pellet's fetters."

"Rather than that, I'm more happy that you've woke up." Zi Ling's eyes glittered, then she suddenly leapt forward and entered Chu Feng's embrace.

He did not refuse it and even though there were many observers, Chu Feng still spread open his arms and hugged his little beauty by her waist.

No one hid their emotions when they saw that. Instead, the joy on their faces became even stronger because to them, this was a very rare reunion.

As Zi Ling said, in comparison to her being cured, Chu Feng's awakening was something much more worthy of celebration. That not only applied to Zi Ling but to everyone else.

When two joyous events occurred, naturally there had to be a banquet. On that day, everyone put down their work and raised their cups and drank in complete elation.

In the banquet, Chu Feng and Zi Ling undoubtedly became the main characters people focused on. However, Chu Feng was also observing the crowd. Amongst the familiar faces, he discovered a person who shouldn't be here—the First Immortal.

The former head of the Nine Immortals of the Immortal Execution Archipelago, in order to help Chu Feng, avoided the disaster of death and, as an exception, stayed in the Misty Peak.

That did seem like a decent ending but Chu Feng discovered in such a cheerful day, there weren't many happy expressions on his face. Instead, there was a hint of near undetectable worry and helplessness.

"Sister Fuyan, why don't I see Ya Fei?" Chu Feng asked Qiushui Fuyan amidst his confusion.

"This...

"Chu Feng, to be honest, Ya Fei's physical body has been destroyed. It will be very difficult to recreate it... Actually, my mother lied to the First Immortal," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"Lied to the First Immortal? That means Ya Fei hasn't been brought back to life?" Chu Feng felt quite surprised.

"He was lied to, and Ya Fei cannot be revived. However, she won't die. Although we're unable to rebuild her physical body, her Consciousness will not pass away in the Misty Peak. There will be no issues for her to continue surviving in this state," Qiushui Fuyan said.

"I see." Chu Feng seemed to understand why the First Immortal felt so helpless. By his nature, there was no chance he'd stay in the Misty Peak. However, he did all because of his granddaughter.

Chu Feng felt a bit guilty in his heart. Although his dealings with the First Immortal hadn't been too much, if it weren't for him, it would have been nearly impossible for Chu Feng to have cultivated the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique. Even more so, it'd be impossible to defeat Jiang Qisha and Murong Mingtian.

Now, they were victorious. They defeated all their enemies in the Eastern Sea Region, so he had to say that the First Immortal had helped out quite a bit.

But they were unable to keep true to their former promise. How could Chu Feng not blame himself? Especially after recalling that the First Immortal betrayed his own force for his granddaughter yet still unable to bring her back to live, Chu Feng felt even more guilty.

At that moment, Chu Feng hiddenly made a decision. If he had accomplishments in cultivation in the future, then he would definitely return to the Eastern Sea Region and help Ya Fei rebuild her body. He would return this favour to the First Immortal.

"Senior First Immortal, I express my apologies regarding Ya Fei." After his resolution, Chu Feng came up to the First Immortal and bowed with a remorseful complexion.

"It's unrelated to you, nor do I blame Lady Piaomiao. After all, if it weren't for her, my granddaughter wouldn't have survived. Although it is only a Consciousness, at least she's still here to chat with me." The First Immortal shook his head.

"Senior, don't worry. This world is so big; there are all sorts of mystical techniques. When I enter the Holy Land of Martialism, I will gather information on this matter. I believe I will find the method to revive Ya Fei," Chu Feng swore gravely.

The First Immortal's face instantly froze. Then, an indescribable expression of gratitude emerged into his eyes. He didn't say anything and just kept nodding his head. Only after doing that for a good while did he say, "Then I'll wait for the day you return."

The First Immortal celebrated secretly. He knew what sort of potential

and talent Chu Feng had. Since such words were spoken, he felt that Chu Feng would definitely stay true to his word. There was hope for his granddaughter's resurrection.

"Chu Feng." Just at that moment, a male's call rang out

He couldn't help but be taken aback when he turned around and looked. He discovered there were a man and woman standing behind him. One was beautiful and moving—Qiushui Fuyan. The other was large and mighty—Huangfu Haoyue.

"Chu Feng, I want to talk to you about a few thing alone. Do you have time?" Huangfu Haoyue said with a faint smile.

Chapter 986: The Place of Meeting

“Senior Huangfu, we finally meet again.” Chu Feng’s heart was filled with incomparable excitement. He couldn’t help but reveal a smile of insuppressible joy.

Huangfu Haoyue wore a light smile on his face. He first said to Qiushui Fuyan, “Fuyan, wait for me here,” then cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, follow me.”

whoosh

After speaking, Huangfu Haoyue rose into the air. Chu Feng followed and the both of them flew into the distance and soon disappeared into the faraway horizon.

Everyone held some concern regarding this matter. The crowd revealed complicated expressions because they knew the upcoming conversation was of utmost importance to Chu Feng.

They continued flying and only when they felt they were far from the clamour did they stop in a location where they could not be seen.

After stopping, Huangfu Haoyue started to carefully examine Chu Feng. The expressions in his eyes were very complicated; there were some unspeakable ones. Then, after a long while, he nodded and said, “You’ve grown up. My mission should be considered completed.”

“Senior Huangfu, are you able to tell me the truth now?” Chu Feng asked, unable to help himself.

“Truth? You’re referring to where and who I brought you from to the continent of the Nine Provinces?” Huangfu Haoyue asked with a smile.

“I want to know everything. After you entered the Heavenly Road until you left the Heavenly Road—everything that happened during that time,” Chu Feng said.

“Mm. If you truly want to know, then I really do have to start from the beginning.” Huangfu Haoyue lightly smiled. He took a deep breath, then exhaled. He started speaking.

“Back then, the Burning Heaven Church ventured into the Heavenly Road. We wanted to enter the Holy Land of Martialism and seek a better path in cultivation.

“However, we underestimated the Heavenly Road. There were obstructions in there, and those obstructions brought heavy losses to the Burning Heaven Church. Everyone—millions of members—died. I, however, survived.”

“Obstruction? Killings? What was it? Senior Huangfu, what did you meet in the Heavenly Road?” Chu Feng asked.

“I can’t really put my finger on what it was. However, since you’re preparing to enter the Heavenly Road, I must remind you that it is not easy to pass.” Huangfu Haoyue first heaved a sigh, then said, “Actually, the reason we dared to venture into the Heavenly Road was because we held a certain amount of confidence. One of our Burning Heaven Church’s ancestor saw a stone tablet in an ancient remains. On it the secret of the Heavenly Road was written.

“If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.

“That was what the stone tablet wrote. Chu Feng, do you know what that means?” Huangfu Haoyue asked.

“‘If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.’?” Chu Feng repeated. Then, he said, “If I’m not mistaken, the former part means the Heavenly Road is the path that leads to the Holy Land of Martialism. It’s impossible that everything goes smoothly as its difficulty is very high—it’s unimaginable.

“As for the latter part, it might be reminding that there is no retreat inside the Heavenly Road. If one courageously advances, they will have a chance to enter the heavens—the Holy Land of Martialism. However, if they hold cowardice in their hearts and thus retreat, they will only walk towards death and die within the Heavenly Road.”

“That’s right. You are absolutely correct. Within the Heavenly Road, the first half was very calm, leading to a false sense of ease. As we walked, we even felt hope for the future.

“But when we reached the middle, many unknown creatures appeared. They were very odd. I can’t say for certain what they were, but they were very powerful and also very terrifying.

“They were large in numbers and they sealed off the vast path forward. They pressed forward and wanted to tear us all apart.

“There is only one way to pass through those unknown creatures—to advance with faith and courage. If there is even a single hint of fear in one’s heart, they would be engulfed by those creatures. However, if one retains no fear, then those monsters cannot do anything.

“Yet, when facing such terrifying things, it is really too difficult to remain calm and cast away the terror in one’s heart.

“Even though we had specially trained before entering the Heavenly Road, when it was reality, a large portion of us had lost their minds.

“Seventy percent were horrified by those monsters. They forget the pope’s lessons as they turned around and ran. But in the end, they were still caught by those creatures and lost their lives.

“The rest chose to continue forth bravely. But there were really too few who held no fear in their hearts. Of the thirty percent remaining, only one percent survived amidst the wave of the unknown creatures.

“But shortly after passing through the creatures, another wave faced us. They were, however, different from the previous ones.

“On the surface, the level of might and terror they brought was less than the first wave of creatures. However, they weren’t existences we could deal with.

“So, since we were able to pass through the first wave of monsters despite how terrifying they were, we assumed it wasn’t hard to pass through the second wave. After all, on the surface, no matter numbers of power, the second wave was lesser than the first.

“But we were wrong. Although they appeared inferior, the second wave’s demands were actually much harsher.

“Perhaps… our fear hadn’t been cleansed completely, so we were attacked by the second wave.

“This time, they started massacring us. They were merciless. Our pope led the way and was ruthlessly killed. Quickly afterwards, everyone received a fatal blow.

“Those monsters were too terrifying. We stood no chance against them, nor could we pass through them. Before such frightened emotions and desire to survive, I gave up on the thought to fearless advance. I chose to escape.

“As I fled in panic, I stumbled upon an area. I will never forget that place.” Huangfu Haoyue’s breathing starting becoming erratic and even the expression in his eyes became unstable.

Chu Feng didn’t probe him to quickly answer as that place had affected Huangfu Haoyue greatly. So, Chu Feng waited for him to continue.

“The feeling of that place was very special and I really can’t describe it. No matter the style of the buildings or the aura of its entirety, it gave people a very dark feeling and casts uneasiness onto them. Using terrifying to describe that place is quite suitable.”

“But… If you want me to truly describe the feeling I received from that place, although the description is only one word as well, terrifying is absolutely not it—it would be holy.” Huangfu Haoyue gave a bitter smile, then looked at Chu Feng and said, “That is where you and I met.”

Chapter 987: Thank You

Chu Feng's heartbeat instantly sped up. Although he appeared calm, a storm stirred inside his heart because the place Huangfu Haoyue was now talking about was the place Chu Feng came from.

"Senior Huangfu, what did you see there?" asked Chu Feng. He was truly impatient to find out what sort of people were at that location. Were they his parents? Was his family there? Or perhaps something else had happened?

"Ah..." Huangfu Haoyue let out a long sigh, seeming as if there was some sort of trouble he could not speak of. Only then did he say, "I, Huangfu Haoyue, have even gone into an Imperial Tomb. No matter if others have seen it before or if they haven't, from ancient times, I have seen quite a few of the so-called big spectacles.

"However, it was the first time I saw a place like that. The holy feeling it exuded was suffocating. It was not only simple fear, it was veneration originating from my entire being. Such a feeling made me want to stop, as I did not dare to step in.

"However, since there were monsters aiming for my life behind me, I had no choice but to enter. At that place, I saw a man.

"That man..." Huangfu Haoyue suddenly swallowed his words. He cast his gaze towards Chu Feng and his eyes were now glittering with emotions. His firmness was no more, and replacing it were indescribable complex emotions and fear.

If it must be described, it was an emotion filled with panic, fear, and paranoia.

"Senior Huangfu, are you okay?" Chu Feng was a bit worried. He knew that the memories from that period had too great of an effect on Huangfu Haoyue's mental state.

Huangfu Haoyue's body trembled slightly after hearing his words, then he came to his senses. He wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and

said, “Actually, when I saw that man, my awareness was blurred. I don’t remember his face, but I feel that yours is very similar to his.

“That feeling’s very strange... In my mind, I clearly have no recollection of his appearance, but when I see you, I feel that you look very similar to him.” Huangfu Haoyue smiled because even he himself felt this was something amusing.

“Chu Feng, this Huangfu Haoyue must have seen your father. Other than him, who else would look that similar to you?

“The reason why he doesn’t remember your father’s appearance yet feels you look like your father is because his memories have been messed with. A true expert can affect one’s memories without them even knowing by blurring their awareness.

“This segment of memory is a fearful and blurry one. He doesn’t dare to recall it because he’s afraid. Quickly ask him what came afterwards. You cannot allow him to recollect his memories and you must finish your questions quickly. Otherwise, there will be damage dealt to his body and there’s even a possibility that returns to insanity,” Eggy suddenly reminded.

“Senior Huangfu, what came next? After you saw that man, what happened?” Chu Feng quickly asked.

“It’s a bit shameful to say... Although I couldn’t see his appearance clearly, I was terrified by him. Do you know what was the first thing I did after I saw him?” Huangfu Haoyue asked Chu Feng.

Chu Feng shook his head and asked, “What is it?”

“Before he even said anything, I knelt. I didn’t only kneel, I even kowtowed and begged him.

“Although I, Huangfu Haoyue, am not any great person, I am not a cowardly person. In my entire life, there are very few people who I’ve kowtowed and knelt to—no one else other than my parents and my master.

“Before that, even if you beat me to death I wouldn’t believe that one day, I, Huangfu Haoyue, would beg someone so I could live.

“However, on that day, I did indeed do that. I remember it clearly. How lowly I was, yet how willing.” Huangfu Haoyue gave a bitter chuckle, then continued, “I was really afraid of that man. That fear came from the bottom of my heart. It was like a commoner seeing a god. That sort of reverence was impossible to resist.

“But actually, that man didn’t do anything bad to me. He never threatened nor harmed me. Instead, he was quite benevolent. He entrusted you to me, and he told me to bring you out of the Heavenly Road and in turn entrust you to a family named Chu. He named you Chu Feng and told me to protect you until you grew up.

“I agreed; I didn’t dare to refuse. I felt I had no choice but to agree, and after that... I felt my vision blur. When it returned to normal, I had come back to the Eastern Sea Region. I’m sure you know what happened later on. After I returned, my mental state started deteriorating.

“Although that man had never scared nor threatened me, I myself felt I had to finish this mission. Otherwise, he would kill me. That’s what I felt. As for death, I do not fear it much, but when I recalled he was going to kill me, I felt endless terror.

“I knew very well I had been broken from fright. I knew I would go mad. However, I couldn’t control my fate. I was that powerless.

“Before turning insane, I went to see Fuyan. I told her not to enter the Heavenly Road. Afterwards, I went to the continent of the Nine Provinces and wanted you to settle down there.

“Actually, there are quite a few clans named Chu in the Eastern Sea Region, but I didn’t dare to put you there. I knew my time was short and I would lose the power to protect you soon. I couldn’t be certain whether you could safely grow up in a place like that.

“That’s why I brought you to the continent of the Nine Provinces and chose a small family. I felt, by my threats, they would not dare to treat your poorly due to the overwhelming fear they’d feel.

“And after entrusting you to the Chu family, I hiddenly monitored them for a while until... until I was truly unable to control myself. Only then did

I leave, because I was afraid I wouldn't be able to control myself and harm you after going insane.

"I'm sure you know what came later," Huangfu Haoyue said.

"Senior, do you remember the place you talked about? The position in the Heavenly Road where you met the man?" Chu Feng asked.

Huangfu Haoyue provided the clues, but didn't tell him the answer he wanted to know. So, Chu Feng had to personally head towards the Heavenly Road and investigate.

"I don't remember. However, nothing in the Heavenly Road changes. After meeting the second group of creatures, go a bit forward, then head east. You should be able to find it..." Huangfu Haoyue said with an uncertain tone.

"Thank you, Senior Huangfu." Chu Feng bowed and clasped his hands. He didn't continue asking because he knew nothing more would come out of it. Rather than having Huangfu Haoyue recall the worrying memories of the past, it was better to just leave it like this.

"There's no need to thank me. If it weren't for you, perhaps I would already be dead in the Heavenly Road. No matter what I experienced in these years, at least I'm alive. Moreover, I have unknowingly become a rank eight Martial King. That's absolutely not a coincidence either. I feel that my aptitude right now is even stronger than back then. Perhaps one day I will even become a Martial Emperor.

"And this... is all because of you. If there must be thanks, it should be me thanking you." Huangfu Haoyue looked at Chu Feng with immense gratitude.

Chapter 988: Before Departure

Chu Feng did not refute Huangfu Haoyue's words. After all, he was very correct. If it weren't for Chu Feng, perhaps Huangfu Haoyue would have already died within the Heavenly Road. How would he live to see today?

Although he had gone insane for quite a long period of time and he had borne a few pains, he had gotten quite a few gains as well. As he said, amidst his madness, he simply knew nothing about cultivation. Yet, his cultivation had grown. Not only cultivation, even his comprehension strength had become stronger. These were his gains, and he knew where they came from.

Moreover, after experiencing such a suffering, he knew the most important thing in life was not cultivation. Even though he wished to become a Martial Emperor, he did not plan to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. Instead, he planned to stay in the Eastern Sea Region by Qiushui Fuyan's side.

"Chu Feng, I know you must go to the Heavenly Road. I simply cannot stop you, so I'm not planning to stop you.

"But that is truly a dangerous place. As such, I do not advise bringing Zi Ling and the others with you. You're different from them. You have a very strong willpower; you can pass through the Heavenly Road. However, that may not apply to them," Huangfu Haoyue recommended.

"Thank you for your advice, senior. I've already decided." Chu Feng nodded, then return to the Misty Peak with Huangfu Haoyue.

When he returned, Chu Feng called over Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Jiang Wushang, and Zhang Tianyi.

However, when he looked at their faces brimming with smiles, Chu Feng found it a bit hard to speak. They all had their dreams and they didn't fear danger. They really should head to the Holy Land of Martialism, so Chu Feng truly didn't know how to convince them to stay.

"Junior Chu Feng, there's something I and Brother Wushang want to tell

you," Zhang Tianyi suddenly said. There was even a bit of an apologetic expression on his face.

"Senior Zhang, just speak your mind," Chu Feng said.

"Junior Chu Feng, I am truly sorry. We cannot accompany you to the Holy Land of Martialism," Zhang Tianyi said remorsefully. Jiang Wushang's face was also a bit apologetic.

"Senior Zhang, Brother Wushang, you mean...?" Chu Feng felt a bit surprised at his words.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, I know we brothers said we would face fortune and disaster together, but there's really too great of a difference between our cultivations. We don't want to be constantly on guard after entering the Holy Land of Martialism with you. We don't want to affect your future because of our helplessness.

"So, we've already discussed this with Sister Fuyan. She allowed me and Big Brother Tianyi to stay in the Misty Peak to cultivate. She'll also pass down the cultivation methods from the Misty Peak.

"The Misty Peak is something from the Ancient Era. And since even Jiang Qisha and the others, who'd come from the Holy Land of Martialism, expressed such desire for the Misty Peak, it shows how impressive it is. So, as we stay here and cultivate, our speed might not be slower than yours.. Perhaps one day, we will even catch up to you! When we feel that we won't be a burden, we'll go to the Holy Land of Martialism and search for you," Jiang Wushang said as he chuckled.

"You've truly decided?" Chu Feng asked.

"Mm. Even you cannot sway our decision," said Zhang Tianyi and Jiang Wushang together.

"Chu Feng, we are also planning the same thing." Zi Ling suddenly spoke. Su Rou and Su Mei were holding Zi Ling's arms as they gave a sweet smile.

"You are also planning to stay in the Misty Peak?" Chu Feng felt even more surprised.

“Mm. Although my Divine Body has been cured, the cultivation I have is still too weak. As he said, with the cultivation we have right now, it is truly too dangerous to enter the Holy Land of Martialism. It’s better to stay here and strengthen ourselves first. When we acquire a certain amount of achievements in cultivation, we can always join up with you at that place.” Zi Ling nodded.

Since even they’d spoken, Chu Feng was a bit speechless. At that instant, he only felt a bit of reluctance to part. They had said they would enter the Holy Land of Martialism together, but now, he would go alone—again.

Without his lovers, his brothers, no matter how wonderful the new journey became, he’d be lacking a portion of enjoyment and gaining a portion of sorrow.

However, this situation was one Chu Feng hoped for. Thus, there was not only unwillingness to separate in his heart, there was also gratitude. He was very thankful that they thought of him.

Chu Feng knew how much they hoped to come to the Holy Land of Martialism with him. However, precisely because they thought cared about Chu Feng so much, they gave up without Chu Feng even asking them to.

There were still a few days to the opening of the Heavenly Road. As such, Chu Feng was not in a rush to leave. Before leaving, there was a joyous event held in the Misty Peak—the marriage between Huangfu Haoyue and Qiushui Fuyan.

This wedding was not announced to the outside, nor was it overly grand. However, everyone who was there hoped the best for the two of them. It was a very warm moment, and before the wishes of the crowd, this pair of lovers would finally, once again, live and walk together.

Moreover, since Lady Piaomiao’s cultivation was gone, she could no longer guard the Misty Peak. Thus, she handed down such a mission to Qiushui Fuyan and Huangfu Haoyue and had them guard this place together.

As for the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng gave full authority to Qiu Canfeng. Although Chu Feng was going to leave, to the people from the Crippling Night Demon Sect, he was eternally their sect head.

Finally, the day of the Heavenly Road's opening arrived. After passing the Heavenly Sea, they would reach the place where it opened.

This was something that happened every year, and every time, quite a few people would come to watch. Most of them didn't plan to enter the Heavenly Road; they came here just to give it a look.

However, this year, there was a lot more people than usual—several thousand times more. It was even much more lively than the year when the Burning Heaven Church headed to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Vast number of bodies filled the sky. It was a very grand scene to behold.

The reason for such an anomaly was because it was rumoured there would be a famous person who was going to enter this year's Heavenly Road.

The person who eradicated the Immortal Execution Archipelago and the Three Great Monstrous Clans, who killed Murong Mingtian, Jiang Qisha, and the others alone, the current head of the Crippling Night Demon Sect, Chu Feng.

"Look, it's Chu Feng! He's truly come! It seems that he's preparing to enter the Heavenly Road this year," exclaimed someone amidst the crowd. Very soon, everyone cast their gazes in the direction he pointed. They could see a vast stream of people flying over slowly.

Everyone started feeling excited. Such an emotion permeated this land.

Within the immense sea of people, there were simply countless famous people from the Eastern Sea Region. However, at that very instant, the person who caught the most attention was a young person—Chu Feng.

He was riding a flying horse. He was so full of spirit. He was so young.

On his face that wasn't really all that handsome yet was filled with

resolution, there was a confident and dazzling smile.

To his left were Su Rou, Su Mei, and Zi Ling. To his right were Jiang Wushang, Zhang Tianyi, and the Chu family.

As for behind him, Lady Piaomiao, Qiushui Fuyan, Huangfu Haoyue, Qiu Canfeng, Xue Xiyue, and the many peak experts from the Crippling Night Demon Sect were there.

However, without a single trace of doubt, amongst all these famous people, Chu Feng was the focus.

Chapter 989: The Heavenly Road Opens

Everyone above the sea burst into discussion when Chu Feng appeared.

The elderly continuously nodded at Chu Feng. As they looked at him, they narrated his accomplishments to the younger generation within their clans. They also told them to take Chu Feng as a role model—work hard in cultivation and become an exceptional person.

That led the young children to blink with their innocent big eyes. When they looked at Chu Feng, it simply wasn't like looking at a person but more like at a god. Their eyes were filled with a fervent adoration.

To survive in a land like this, especially if one were from a famous cultivation clan, every single child's dream was to become a peak cultivation expert. Chu Feng was the person they all wanted to become.

However, in comparison to the elderly's passionate conversations and the children's sincere admiration, the younger generation similar in age to Chu Feng were clearly much more lively.

They were all cheering; some were even screaming. The degree of respect they held towards Chu Feng reached an insane level.

The males were a bit more presentable. When they looked up to Chu Feng, they were roughly akin to children. It was more admiration they felt as Chu Feng was bringing honour to their generation. That was why they gave him this much respect.

But the females on the other hand were completely different. They not only gave Chu Feng admiration, there was a bit of worship. There were even many young women who made Chu Feng into their standard for a partner and made him into their ideal lover.

Right now, their "ideal lover" had appeared right before their eyes. How could they not be moved? They naturally lost control of their emotions.

"Oh? It seems that my Chu Feng is quite popular!" said Su Mei as she giggled at such a scene. But there was a bit of jealousy amidst her words.

As for Chu Feng, he just gave a calm smile. When facing a situation like

this, Chu Feng was really too used to it. In the world of cultivation, the strong were respected. Recalling back when he was wanted by the Immortal Execution Archipelago, he was simply like a rat crossing the street. There were very few people who were willing to help him.

But now, after the blink of an eye, he became the idol figure of the entire Eastern Sea Region. This was quite a big change, and Chu Feng had fought for all of it himself.

rumble rumble rumble

Just at that moment, rumbles came from the depths of the sea. On the sea surface splashing with waves, enormous vortexes started appearing.

As they swirled around, the splashes were fierce. The area of the vortexes even kept on enlarging. In the end, countless of them, great in size, nearly filled the entire sea. It was truly an incomparably grand sight to behold.

bang

bang

bang

bang

Suddenly, from the vortexes, thick beams of light shot out. They merged together in the sky and formed a blinding golden formation.

The formation occupied an enormous area. It broke through the clouds and stretched down into the sea. It was like a golden wall that blocked off a part of this world, yet also like a dazzling sun that just stood there.

“So this Heavenly Road truly is a mystical formation.”

Seeing the golden formation erected in the sky. Chu Feng felt stunned. Even though he had heard the Heavenly Road was opened by a hidden formation within the Heavenly Sea, he still felt astonished when he witnessed such an event with his very own eyes.

Even without any detailed observations, one could tell already with the naked eye how complex and powerful it was. What cultivation did the

person who laid this formation have?

hmm

After its emergence, the formation quickly started powering up. Everyone could see an entrance slowly appearing in the center of the formation—that was the entrance to the Heavenly Road.

"The Heavenly Road! The Heavenly Road has successfully opened!" The crowd's hearts were filled with complex emotions such as excitement and fear as they looked at the already opened yet endless entrance.

The Heavenly Road was the path that led to the Holy Land of Martialism. From ancient times, there had been innumerable people who entered; however, with the exception of Huangfu Haoyue, not a single person who went in returned.

Huangfu Haoyue had announced that he hadn't passed through the Heavenly Road, nor had he entered the Holy Land of Martialism.

Although he didn't tell the world how he came out of the Heavenly Road, he told them everyone else had died inside.

This, as expected, invoked everyone's shock. Many people had suspected whether the Heavenly Road was a path of no return, and hearing Huangfu Haoyue say this, they agreed that it was not something a normal person could pass through.

As such, even though the Heavenly Road had already been opened, not a single person stepped in. Even those who planned to enter were standing outside, making no signs of entering. They all cast their gazes towards Chu Feng.

"Big Brother Chu Feng, it seems that they're hoping you to be the first to enter," Jiang Wushang said with a chuckle.

Chu Feng could only smile at those words. Of course, he could see what the crowd wanted. Even though Chu Feng was only a rank eight Martial Lord, after his actions at the Misty Peak, many people felt that he was the strongest person in the Eastern Sea Region.

Moreover, the rumours said Chu Feng was going to enter the Heavenly Road. Those who planned the same naturally wanted to hug his legs and follow him. Perhaps they could take just a tiny bit of advantage of him.

But if they knew even Chu Feng himself wasn't absolutely confident he could pass through the Heavenly Road, who knew what they would feel.

whoosh

But just when everyone's gazes were fixed on Chu Feng, his eyes lit up. He discovered a person appearing out of nowhere and was walking towards the entrance of the Heavenly Road. He also recognized that person—Tantai Xue.

"Tantai Xue, wait!" Chu Feng called out. Simultaneously, he leapt forward and flew towards her.

"Tantai Xue? She's the person with the Divine Body who came from the Holy Land of Martialism?" Due to Chu Feng's call, everyone noticed her. When they recalled who she was, there was unavoidably a few extra hints of reverence in their eyes.

"Yes?" Tantai Xue indifferently asked, as she turned around and stopped upon hearing Chu Feng.

Currently, Tantai Xue was still wearing a white dress and a veil covering her complexion. More importantly, the feeling she gave Chu Feng was still that icy cold. It was unfamiliarity that rejected people a thousand miles away.

"I just want to thank you."

Chu Feng's word of thanks came from his heart. Back then, if it weren't for Tantai Xue who used Kuang Bainian as a bargaining chip and saved Zi Ling and the others by swapping hostages, even if Chu Feng successfully cultivated the Immortal Transference Mysterious Technique, he wouldn't have so easily defeated Murong Mingtian and Jiang Qisha.

Tantai Xue deserved full credit for the part she played.

"I just did what I should have done. You don't need to thank me. But

seeing as you had saved me, I can tell you something," Tantai Xue said.

Chapter 990: Horrifying Attack

"What is it?" Chu Feng asked.

"If one enters the Heavenly Road, they walk against the heavens. Those who enter take half a step in death and half in life; those who retreat are absolutely dead.

"Remember: after entering the Heavenly Road, it doesn't matter how terrifying the things you see are. They are only illusions. They are there to test your courage. As long as you ignore them and hold no fear, there will be no troubles as you pass through the Heavenly Road into the Holy Land of Martialism."

Tantai Xue had spoken those words mentally. Very clearly, she didn't want others to know about that. People were selfish—she was no exception.

"Thank you for the reminder." Even though Chu Feng had already known about that before, when Tantai Xue mentioned it again, it strengthened his confidence to pass through the Heavenly Road because it made it much more likel what Huangfu Haoyue said before to be true.

Moreover, in comparison to Huangfu Haoyue's words, Tantai Xue's were much lucid: no matter how terrifying the things within the Heavenly Road were, just ignore them. To Chu Feng, that was not a difficult task.

"No need to thank me. Some things are much easier said than done. Whether you can pass through this Heavenly Road will depend on your own abilities." After leaving behind those words, Tantai Xue turned around and rushed in.

One could see she did not plan to walk together with Chu Feng. The words she said just now were truly no more than a reminder. His life was unrelated to her at all.

whoosh whoosh whoosh

After Tantai Xue made her move, of the group of people who prepared to enter the Heavenly Road, there were dozens of people who moved as

well. They cast intricate bodily martial skills and, with the quickest speed possible, chased after Tantai Xue.

They likely felt since she was from the Holy Land of Martialism, she knew the method to pass the Heavenly Road. Thus, they wanted to follow and take advantage of her.

Chu Feng did not enter after them. Instead, he returned to Zi Ling and the others and gave them a short farewell.

Unavoidably, there was reluctance. But no matter Chu Feng, or Zi Ling and the others, none of them showed it. Instead, there were encouraging smiles worn on their faces.

After such a short goodbye, Chu Feng turned around and flew into the Heavenly Road. Afterwards, the people who prepared to enter the Heavenly Road also all arose and followed Chu Feng as they too entered.

However, Chu Feng did not see the worry and loss that surged on Zi Ling's and the others' face in the instant he entered the Heavenly Road.

At first, it was darkness inside. The feeling it gave made it seem as if it were a black hole. However, as he continued forth, light soon appeared at the front. It was an azure light emitted by a floating object.

It was as big as a watermelon, and many objects similar to it nearly filled this vast world. When he looked ahead, the Heavenly Road did not look like some space. It instead looked like a stelliferous sky. It was both beautiful and mysterious.

However, before they walked all that far in, Chu Feng and his group saw dozens of people. They were flying towards Chu Feng and the others from the depths of the Heavenly Road. After seeing Chu Feng, they nodded and smiled a bit fawningly. They said in unison, "Lord Chu Feng."

"You lost her?" Chu Feng said with a faint smile. These dozens of people had been the first to enter the Heavenly Road in order to follow Tantai Xue. But clearly, they lost track of her.

"Hehe..." They felt rather embarrassed at Chu Feng's question, and could only foolishly chuckle as they scratched their heads. They didn't

reply, but they confirmed Chu Feng's guess by such a reaction.

Chu Feng looked back. There were several hundred people behind him, and in addition to these dozens of people, there weren't even a thousand in total.

Although there weren't many people here, they were all elites. Most of them were middle-aged and were all Martial Lords. The remaining were elderly cultivators—all of them were peak Martial Lords. There was even a rank one Martial King. It was an old woman Chu Feng hadn't seen before, likely a hidden expert.

However, at that very instant, even this old rank one Martial King held no arrogance in front of Chu Feng. Instead, she seemed rather humble and perhaps even a bit uncomfortable.

Although it seemed very strange that an elderly rank one Martial King treated a young rank eight Martial Lord with such an attitude, it was not abnormal at all when one put into consideration what Chu Feng did in the Eastern Sea Region and his position. If even a rank one Martial King treated Chu Feng in such a manner, the rest were naturally even more respectful.

"It is perilous in the Heavenly Road. If you want to turn back now, you can still make it," Chu Feng said.

"Lord Chu Feng, since we've stepped into this place, we've already decided. Even if we die, we will not turn around."

"Yeah! Lord Chu Feng, we know you must be able to pass through this Heavenly Road. Could you also bring us through?" But unexpectedly, there was not a single person who backed away despite Chu Feng's words. They joined together and actually begged him.

Seeing the crowd who were sincerely begging with faces of resolution, Chu Feng was moved. So, he said to them, "I do not hold absolute confidence I can pass through this Heavenly Road, let alone bringing you with me.

"However, I can give all of you a reminder. This Heavenly Road is a test

of one's courage. So, no matter what sort of frightening thing you see later on, do not be scared, nor should you dodge. They are merely illusions. As long as you follow me and pass through, it will mean they are nothing. However, if you are afraid, you will most definitely fall victims to the illusions."

"Lord Chu Feng, thank you. Since we dare to enter this Heavenly Road, perhaps we have nothing else, but we most definitely have courage."

"Lord Chu Feng, thank you for the reminder. We will not disappoint your expectations. No matter what we face up ahead, we will not retreat. We will only advance." The crowd all expressed their stances; their faces were ones of resolution.

"Good. Everyone, follow me. Remember, no matter what you see, do not be afraid. As long as you follow me ahead, nothing will happen to you." Chu Feng turned around. He activated his Heaven's Eyes and flew straight forward.

Although these people would indeed affect Chu Feng's speed, they had still come from the Eastern Sea Region. Perhaps when they were still in the Eastern Sea Region, there weren't many feelings that he felt towards him, but after leaving, there was more or less some intimacy.

So, since Chu Feng could help them, of course he would do his best. If he could, of course he hoped he could bring them all into the Holy Land of Martialism, this world called sacred.

aoo—

AHH—

roar—

However, soon after they advanced, there were bursts of odd sounds that came faintly from the depths of the Heavenly Road.

They were terrifying; they led chills down one's spines. They were akin to the weeping of a child, yet akin to the shriek of a woman, yet akin to the roar of a beast. Regardless, it was horrifying.

Moreover, those sounds increased in clarity, and increased in volume. Many people started becoming nervous because they were certain there were very frightening things within this Heavenly Road. And, right now, those things were approaching them.

Chapter 991: Murderous Vengeful Spirits

Chu Feng couldn't help but frown. He wasn't afraid, but there were already others trembling slightly within the crowd behind him. People were becoming frightened even before those creatures neared them.

Chu Feng couldn't help but recall the Burning Heaven Church's fate and Tantai Xue's words: some things were easier said than done.

Regardless, this Heavenly Road... was indeed something not so easily passed.

He already had a premonition that a large portion of the people following him would die during this ordeal.

"Do not be afraid. Remember, no matter how terrifying they are, all of them are fake. Follow me and you will pass," Chu Feng reminded again.

"Yes!" the crowd responded. Although they appeared quite outstanding, seeds of doubt had already been sown in their hearts.

"Follow me."

As Chu Feng spoke, he strode forth and into the air, towards the frightening sounds. The others quickly followed.

As they continued forward, continuing to near the unknown monsters, the peculiar and frightening sounds became louder and louder. Finally, deep in the Heavenly Road, there was a large mass of blood-red gas.

It covered simply everything. One could not even see the ends of it. As it surged around, it sealed off the path ahead—the horrifying sounds came from the blood-red gas.

It was, with a horrifying speed, rushing towards Chu Feng and the others. The feeling it emanated made it seem like an incomparably hungry demon that had finally found a tasty dish. It wanted to engulf Chu Feng and the others.

Many people were already panicking, and it only escalated further when the blood-red gas approached them. They could see what sort of things

were inside.

Torn off hands, sliced off heads, split bodies, extracted organs... Broken body parts were inside the blood-red gas.

More importantly, they were still squirming around and making odd sounds. Although they didn't have any actual power, they released a nearly unendurable aura—one that was so horrifying it was suffocating.

"Everyone, listen up. This is not a simple illusion. It will even affect one's mind. Follow me; do not retreat," shouted Chu Feng again as he swept his eyes over the blood-red gas.

With the power of the Heaven's Eyes, he already knew that those things were illusions—not normal ones, however. They had the power to kill. Although they were different from the typical ones, in the end, they were merely things for scaring. They could scare other perhaps, but not Chu Feng.

At that very instant, Chu Feng unhesitantly flew over—straight towards the blood-red gas.

Everyone was terrified by what he did. In their eyes, no matter how they looked at it, Chu Feng seemed to be jumping into a pit of fire. He seemed to be committing suicide.

But recalling the words he said before, most of them still bit down on their teeth and charged with Chu Feng.

However, there was also a portion who could not withstand the horrifying aura exuded by the blood-red gas. They allowed fear to be born. After a few acts of hesitation, they didn't follow Chu Feng. Instead, they flew back where they came from, choosing to flee instead.

Chu Feng had already expected that to occur. He ignored those who were running away and didn't say anything. What should be said had been said already; whether they were able to successfully pass the Heavenly Road would depend on their own luck. Right now, Chu Feng could only care for himself.

wuaoo—

As Chu Feng ran, he finally dashed into the blood-red gas. At that instant, there were ear-piercing howls from every single direction. They were very terrifying and brought forth uneasiness to one's heart.

Furthermore, a fetid stench irresistibly flooded him. He could even feel the broken limbs touching his body. It was very revolting.

Right now, Chu Feng and the others seemed as if they entered a vast pool of blood. They had to step on those disgusting pieces of rotten flesh and broken limbs in order to advance.

Moreover, within this pool of blood, there were countless ghosts awaiting the opportunity to take their lives. They were awaiting to force new members to join their ranks.

But no matter how much terror they instigated, they were of no effect to Chu Feng. With the power of the Heaven's Eyes, even if more corpses were in front of them, they could not interfere with Chu Feng's line of sight. The roars of the blood-red gas were already ignored, making it seem as if he were merely flying through a normal sky. He was quick and not affected in the slightest.

However, not everyone had a heart as firm as Chu Feng's. In reality, a large portion of the ones following Chu Feng had already panicked. It would be a lie to say they were unafraid and fearless. They merely followed Chu Feng in with false courage.

But the blood-red gas didn't seem to be that simple. Even though the others were still following Chu Feng and running without even looking back, the rotten limbs and invisible ghosts were still attacking them.

The attacks from the corpses and ghosts were really indefensible. All sorts of painful cries rang out, and a large portion of the people following Chu Feng died by their strikes.

After such wails, after they were truly killed, those who didn't even have much fear in their hearts were affected in a chain reaction. They too, due to the fright that was born in their hearts, fell to the attacks of the corpses.

“Lord Chu Feng, didn’t you say these were illusions and we could just ignore them? If they truly are, why are they killing us?”

Some people even started questioning Chu Feng amidst the panic. However, what awaited them was only inescapable death.

Cries fluctuated as they endlessly resounded behind Chu Feng. However, he did not even turn his head around. He just kept on running. Finally, he broke out.

However, when Chu Feng finally stopped and turned his head around to look, there was nothing else but the rapidly departing blood-red gas amidst horrifying sounds it made.

As for the hundreds of people initially following him, they were cut off completely. Not even a single one remained, as if they had never even appeared.

“Ahh…”

Chu Feng couldn’t help but let out a sigh as he looked at the blood-red gas getting farther and farther away. When all was said and done, those were still several hundred lives, and they were also from the Eastern Sea Region.

Chu Feng did sincerely hope they could arrive at the Holy Land of Martialism with him, but sadly, their hearts were not sufficiently firm. They couldn’t even pass through this first stage, let alone the later ones. They were destined to fail.

“That can’t be blamed on you. They were unqualified. If this Heavenly Road were this easy to pass, wouldn’t everyone be entering the Holy Land of Martialism?” Eggy said with a giggle. Her voice was as sweet as usual; however, within her tone, there was not the slightest trace of sympathy for the ones who had died just now.

Chapter 992: Becoming a Disciple, Learning Skills

"Mm. Those things are illusions but they are not normal illusions. Not everyone can ignore them." Chu Feng nodded and didn't brood over it too much. He continued advancing.

Without the crowd following him, though Chu Feng was much more lonely, quite a few of his worries had disappeared. As he travelled in this Heavenly Road, he was a lot more free.

Chu Feng continued on the path for a very long time. He didn't meet any more tests like before; however, there were changes that occurred to the Heavenly Road.

It was no longer an endless beautiful starry night because the azure light objects started diminishing in number. The more he advanced, the lesser there were until they disappeared completely.

The Heavenly Road once again, like the very beginning, became completely dark. If it were a normal person, they would find it very difficult to determine direction in an environment like this. But Chu Feng was an exception.

With the Heaven's Eyes, Chu Feng was able to lock onto the path forward. However, he did not just go straight. Instead, he was looking around and searching. The reason was because his most important mission in the Heavenly Road wasn't to enter the Holy Land of Martialism, but to find his place of birth.

At the same time, in the Eastern Sea Region, the Heavenly Road had now closed.

As they watched the disappearing entrance and the sea returning to its initial state, Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, and Jiang Wushang all wore faint sorrow and strong wistfulness.

A large portion of the observers had left already, including the Crippling Night Demon Sect, who left by Qiu Canfeng's lead. Slowly, the

clamorous sea returned to serenity.

What resounded was no longer noisy conversations and laughter but the violent sound of gales and the surging waves. In the sky, only dozens of people remained.

Qiushui Fuyan, Huangfu Haoyue, Lady Piaomiao, Taikou...

The Azure Dragon Founder, the ancestor of the Jiang Dynasty, the Chu Family...

Zi Ling, Su Rou, Su Mei, Zhang Tianyi, Jiang Wushang...

After looking at Zi Ling and the others who were unwilling to shift their gazes, Qiushui Fuyan and the others more or less felt some aching in their hearts when they looked at one another.

They could understand their feelings. Zi Ling and the others were so close to Chu Feng, so they were definitely very concerned with his safety. After all, this Heavenly Road was not something easy to pass.

But on the topic of Chu Feng's safety, how could Qiushui Fuyan and the others not be worried? Actually... they knew why Zi Ling and the others wore such emotions on their faces. The most important reason was that they were unable to join Chu Feng in his journey into the Heavenly Road.

"Zi Ling, it's time we go back." After much hesitation, Qiushui Fuyan spoke.

"Mm. Sister Fuyan, sorry for the long wait." Zi Ling and the others all turned their heads around, their faces filled with forced smiles.

Everyone else's heart ached even more when they saw Zi Ling and the others act in such a manner.

"Don't worry. With Chu Feng's abilities, it won't be hard for him to pass the Heavenly Road. I firmly believe he will make a name for himself in the Holy Land of Martialism as well," Qiushui Fuyan consoled.

"I know. The first time I saw him, he was much weaker than me. Without even joking, I really didn't put him in my eyes back then." Zi Ling sweetly smiled. She recalled the scene when she and Chu Feng first met.

“However, in spite of that, I was still defeated by him. At that moment, I became aware of how powerful he was.

“So, I don’t doubt his strength at all. Even though I was forcibly brought back to the Eastern Sea Region by my parents, I still believed that one day, he would bring me back. And he truly did.

“Now, I still believe in him. However…” Although the smile on Zi Ling’s face was still there, she choked over her words a bit.

“However, you still worry for him, right?” Just at that moment, an aged and calm voice rang out behind Zi Ling.

“Senior?” Qiushui Fuyan’s and the others’ expression changed greatly. At that very instant, the person who appeared behind Zi Ling was not an ordinary one—it was the blind old man.

He was standing with his hands behind his back. His eyes were closed, but he still seemed to be able to see Zi Ling. His cultivation remained low, but gave others a feeling of unfathomability.

“Little lady, don’t cry. Perhaps I can help all of you,” said the blind old man again.

“Senior, you mean?” All five of their eyes lit up.

“Your cultivation aptitudes are all decent, but if you want to catch up to that boy Chu Feng with what you have right now, I’m afraid you will never succeed. Even you, who has a Divine Body, have no chance.

“If you continue the way you all are, burdens are the only things you’ll be to Chu Feng. He’ll give you help, but don’t even think of doing the same the other way around,” the blind old man said to Zi Ling as he smiled faintly.

Zi Ling and the others all came to a realization. The person right in front of them was an expert. There was no doubt. Furthermore, the words he just said had a deeper meaning.

Zi Ling and the others, after a mutual glance at one another, nodded their heads. Then, they half-knelt in the air. They paid their respects to

the blind old man and said together:

"I, Zi Ling—"

"I, Su Rou—"

"I, Su Mei—"

"I, Jiang Wushang—"

"I, Zhang Tianyi—"

"—am willing to become your disciple."

"Haha, you have good tacit understanding." The blind old man chuckled. Then, as he stroked his snow-white beard, he said, "If you become my disciples, naturally I will teach you skills. However, it is not easy to become my disciples."

"Senior, as long as you are willing to accept us, we are all willing to go through hardship and suffering!" said Zi Ling and the others. This was a very rare opportunity. They did not want to miss it.

The blind old man once again smiled lightly, then said, "Don't say that too early. My tests aren't things normal people can handle..."

As he traced off, the smile on the blind old man's face became even wider.

Chu Feng, of course, knew nothing of what occurred back at the Eastern Sea Region. He was continuing his search in the Heavenly Road.

Time trickled away; Chu Feng had already wandered for several days in this endless Heavenly Road.

And the gods did not disappoint those who persevere. Slowly, Chu Feng found the edge of the Heavenly Road within this endless space.

It was very special. It seemed like rock, yet it was not. It seemed like steel, but it was absolutely not. Call it a formation, but it didn't seem like a formation... It was very difficult to describe; however, without a doubt, it was indestructible.

But that wasn't even much. The most shocking thing was after walking

along the edge, Chu Feng actually found a tunnel.

It was very vast, and it went very deep. No one knew what the depths of the tunnel held, but intuition told Chu Feng it absolutely did not lead to the Holy Land of Martialism.

Out of curiosity, Chu Feng entered. But the farther he entered, the more shock he felt. By the two sides of this tunnel were buildings, and a dangerous aura even started surging.

Finally, in front of Chu Feng, there was an overbearing door. It was truly a large door, and it was not a simple one as well. If that door must be described, then it was quite similar to the Imperial Door of the Imperial Tomb back at the continent of the Nine Provinces.

Chu Feng knew it was different. However, even though he was up close, Chu Feng himself didn't know what was different.

After coming to this place, Chu Feng was basically certain that everything here was manmade. This seemed more like someone's land.

Chapter 993: Not a Test

Chu Feng could not open the door, nor did he dare to. He could feel what sort of danger was on the other side. It was something he simply stood no chance against.

Chu Feng even felt if he opened the door, the thing within would bring Chu Feng endless suffering.

Since he was out of options, Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes to look. But sadly, it was still useless. They too could not see through the door.

"Chu Feng, how is it? Are you getting any sort of a familiar feeling from this place?" Since the Heaven's Eyes were useless, Eggy asked Chu Feng about the feeling he got from this place.

"I don't. This does seem to be someone's land, but I'm getting a very unfamiliar feeling from it. I don't think I've come to this place before.

"Besides, based on what Senior Huangfu said, the position we're in right now cannot be the place he met me." Chu Feng shook his head.

Although this place was mysterious and continued inestimable perils—which meant the creator was very extraordinary—it still differed from Huangfu Haoyue's descriptions.

At least, Chu Feng didn't feel any holiness from this place. Similarly... although this place was not simple at all, Chu Feng knew as long as he didn't open the door, he was safe.

This experience was completely different from Huangfu Haoyue's. Even though everyone's senses varied, there wouldn't be this much of a difference.

So, Chu Feng knew this was absolutely not the place he and Huangfu Haoyue met.

"Then that's strange. Who would build such a thing in a place like this?" Eggy was confused. She knew even though there might not be a person living behind the door, there was most definitely something there. This was someone's place, after all.

“Who knows. This Heavenly Road has always been mysterious.” Chu Feng lightly smiled. Then, he turned around and went back the path he came from. He knew he would gain nothing from staying.

After leaving, Chu Feng continued searching.

Surprisingly, there wasn’t just a single place like the one before. After leaving, Chu Feng had found another.

The structures’ style was completely different though. Chu Feng even got a dissimilar feeling regarding the era the structures were built. They were definitely not built by the same group of people.

More importantly, discovering two different lands at such a short distance—even though the Heavenly Road was so big—was absolutely not a coincidence.

It was likely there were many other places like these within the Heavenly Road. As for the location Huangfu Haoyue met him, it was likely one of the numerous ones.

“Strange. Why are there so many places like these in the Heavenly Road? Could there be some sort of secret hidden in this place?”

Various questions arose in Chu Feng’s heart. He increasingly felt that this Heavenly Road was not simple. It was definitely not just a road that led to the Holy Land of Martialism from the Eastern Sea Region.

However, no matter what was concealed in this place, it was not something Chu Feng could discover. Right now, his most important mission was to find the place he and Huangfu Haoyue met. In other words, where his father was.

He had already been in the Heavenly Road for a few days, yet he hadn’t encountered any attacks from monsters. He didn’t even see any living creatures. So, Chu Feng reached a conclusion.

The tests in the Heavenly Road likely related to the distance. Since he was wandering about, even though he was advancing, he made very slow progress. In a short period of time, he wouldn’t meet the second wave of unknown creatures Huangfu Haoyue spoke of.

If he wanted to find his place of birth, then Chu Feng had to quickly advance. After meeting the second test, he should then be able to find the place he was born in.

After making that decision, Chu Feng stopped walking around. He put his full strength into making some distance.

Indeed, after a while, there was a dangerous aura that appeared up ahead.

Chu Feng could even hear rumbles—it was the sound of battle. Moreover, the might of this exchange was not simple. It was likely a fight between Martial Kings.

"This is?" But after Chu Feng continued forward, he saw an astonishing scene. In front of him, a large group of monsters appeared.

They were enormous in size—every single one was dozens of meters tall. They also had very ugly appearances. Not only did they have varying shapes and appearances, they even released an extremely dense feeling of evilness.

With a glance, one could see there were at least several million monsters, and every single one was actually a Martial King. There were even peak Martial Kings within their ranks.

Several million Martial King monsters. Chills would simply go down one's spine if they even imagined such a scene, let alone appearing so realistically in their line of sight.

"What is happening? Could this be the second wave of unknown creatures Senior Huangfu spoke of?" Chu Feng could not remain collected when he saw them.

He discovered they were not illusions at all. He could even say with certainty that they were actual creatures.

However, the most terrifying thing, above even that, was the person who was fighting those monsters. It was Tantai Xue.

There were dozens of those monsters fighting her. Their cultivations

varied; some were rank four Martial Kings, some were rank five. They all held higher cultivation ranks than Tantai Xue, and their strengths were very powerful as well. Judging by the attacks they sent out, Chu Feng could see how strong they were.

Rather than saying Tantai Xue was fighting those monsters, it would be more accurate to say the monsters were toying with Tantai Xue.

Indeed, they were toying with her. With their strength, even though Tantai Xue had a Divine Body, it was an easy task to kill her.

Moreover, at the same time the fight was going on, the observing monsters would even occasionally let out odd sounds—the sound of mocking laughter.

"Chu Feng, run! These monsters are not illusions!" Even Eggy panicked a bit when she saw that. She could feel how terrifying these monsters were.

The aura they emanated: bloodlust, ruthlessness, cruelty... nearly every single thing of darkness was gathered within them. They were simply a group of monsters who lived to kill. If they discovered Chu Feng, he would be absolutely dead.

"No, I cannot ignore her." However, Chu Feng shook his head. He could not leave Tantai Xue behind.

"Tantai Xue, don't panic. Don't forget this is only a test.

"No matter if they're illusions or not, as long as you are unafraid, they can do nothing to you." Chu Feng thought Tantai Xue had lost the stability in her heart and was scared by the physical bodies of these monsters. So, he sent a mental message to remind her.

"Dammit, why have you come too? Run! These things aren't a part of the Heavenly Road's tests! It doesn't matter if you fear them or not, they will kill you! Run!" replied Tantai Xue. She was alarmed after receiving Chu Feng's mental message.

"What? These monsters aren't a part of the tests? What are they?" Chu Feng's expression changed greatly as well. Shock emerged into his eyes. He knew Tantai Xue was not joking at all.

“Kukukuku, it seems that this year’s harvests are quite good. Two have come!

“Boys, grab the male one over here as well.”

But just when Chu Feng became aware that something was wrong, a voice filled with amusement and evilness rang out.

Chapter 994: The King of the Heavenly Road

"Dammit!" Chu Feng cursed, but it was already too late. Nearly in the same instant that evil sound rang out, a boundless pressure immediately descended and enveloped Chu Feng.

It was too powerful, so powerful Chu Feng could not resist it at all. He could feel its terrifying strength—a peak Martial King, an existence a step away from Martial Emperor.

Before such pressure, Chu Feng was bound entirely. There was no chance for him to escape. Several enormous monsters had come up to Chu Feng and surrounded him. One even extended its hand and hooked Chu Feng's collar with its sharp nail, raising him up.

That feeling was like a giant grabbing a tiny ant. The monster was not only powerful, it was also enormous. In front of it, the adjective most suitable for Chu Feng was a single word: minuscule.

After grabbing Chu Feng, the monster threw him to Tantai Xue's side. The monsters who were "fighting" her also stopped and backed away.

Simultaneously, the huge bloodthirsty monsters formed layers as they surrounded Chu Feng and Tantai Xue. All sorts of odd and revolting laughter rang out unceasingly. They simply didn't seem like they were looking at a person, but more like two playthings.

As Chu Feng looked at those ugly appearances with alert, he cast his gaze towards Tantai Xue. Only then did he discover her chest rising up and down and her unstable aura. She had paid quite some price for the battle before. As Chu Feng thought, it was an easy task for these monsters to kill Tantai Xue. They were toying with her.

"Tantai Xue, what are those things?" Chu Feng asked by a mental message.

"How should I know?" Tantai Xue's reply was very cold. She likely knew she was being toyed with, so she was very furious and agitated right now.

“You don’t know those things? Then how do you know they’re not a part of a test within the Heavenly Road?” Chu Feng asked again.

“Because I’m certain that all the tests in the Heavenly Road are illusions. These monsters are clearly not,” Tantai Xue replied impatiently.

“Tantai Xue, then do you think these monsters were left behind by the people who entered the Heavenly Road before?” Chu Feng asked.

He held a guess of some sort. Since there were so many peculiar places in the Heavenly Road—and he too was from the Heavenly Road—it was quite normal that there were other existences inside.

Tantai Xue seemed to have a greater understanding of the Heavenly Road, so Chu Feng wanted to be certain whether his guess was correct. Perhaps they could even find an opportunity to survive within this desperate situation.

She was taken aback by that question. Then, she pondered it. But in the end, she coldly shot Chu Feng a glance and said, “Why do you have so many questions? If you enjoying asking that much, why not just ask them?”

“Yeah, why don’t I just ask them?” Chu Feng gave a faint smile to Tantai Xue’s words, then very indifferently swept his gaze over the group of monsters and shouted, “Where did you come from? Why did you stop us?”

“Kukukuku…” Evil laughter once again rang out amongst the group of monsters.

Quickly after, the enormous group split apart. A monster different from the rest appeared within Chu Feng’s line of sight.

Actually, that monster, in terms of appearances, was not all that different from the other monsters other than its slightly larger physique and well-built body. Its strength, however, was much superior to the other monsters.

It was a rank nine Martial King. It was the existence that bound Chu Feng with nothing but its pressure. From the other monsters’ attitudes,

one could tell it was likely the leader of these millions of monsters.

Since there was such a large number of monsters and they were all enormous, they occupied a lot of space. Due to that, the leader was still quite some distance from Chu Feng when it first showed itself. It approached them slowly and the pressure also became increasingly stronger.

It was intentionally strengthening its pressure; it wanted Chu Feng to see how powerful it was. It wanted Chu Feng to tremble before it.

But sadly, although Chu Feng was a rank eight Martial Lord right now, he had once defeated a rank eight Martial King. Though it was not with his true cultivation, he'd had that experience.

Thus, even though his opponent was very powerful, Chu Feng was not afraid at all. He was very calm.

"Sss—"

That made the rank nine Martial King monster frown. It felt a bit surprised; it could be seen it didn't like how Chu Feng reacted.

"Brat, you're not afraid of me?" said the monster. Its voice was thick and powerful, and even more deafening than thunder. However, there was not even a hint of righteousness. Instead, it was filled with evil, like a king interrogating a criminal.

"Why should I be afraid of you?" Chu Feng smiled. He couldn't possibly be even calmer than he was; his attitude did not even seem like any criminal.

"Brat, do you want to know who I am?" The monster was clearly displeased as it coldly asked.

"Rather than wanting to know who you are, I want to know why you stopped us. You should know your very actions have broken the rules of this Heavenly Road." Chu Feng was not afraid at all. Instead, he questioned it back in a loud tone.

The monsters all around were furious at Chu Feng's attitude. Their

brows furrowed deeply, expressing their displeasure. Their venomous gazes and sounds of teeth gnashing made it seem they wanted to take Chu Feng into their mouths and crush him into mush.

"HAHAHAHA—" But just at that moment, the rank nine Martial King monster started laughing. Its laughter was very deafening and sinister. It even made invisible sound waves and violent gales which endlessly charged at Chu Feng and Tantai Xue.

The laughter was completely different from before. Mixed in with such laughter was fury and killing intent. This monster was enraged by Chu Feng's words.

"Dammit, you angered it!" Tantai Xue coldly rebuked.

"I did indeed anger it, but even if I didn't, would it spare you?" Chu Feng replied.

Tantai Xue was made speechless by Chu Feng's question. Indeed, as Chu Feng said, they were already like a lamb in a tiger's mouth. These monsters were absolutely not kind. The instant they were caught was the instant they were fated to die.

They were dead already, so it was only a matter of time. Recalling that, Tantai Xue was put more at ease and she no longer blamed Chu Feng.

"Brat, listen up. I don't care if you have the experience of passing the Heavenly Road or not. I don't care where you came from. However, with me here, you should not even think of passing through.

"In this place, if I want you alive, you will live. If I want you dead, you will die. Do you know why? It's because we are the kings of the Heavenly Road." As it spoke, the monster's tone was very cold. Moreover, it was filled with inviolable majesty.

At that instant, even though Chu Feng appeared unperturbed, his heart was actually a bit shaken. He wanted to buy time so he could find a chance to escape, but now, he was uncertain whether these monsters would even give him that chance. He truly felt their strong bloodlust.

hmm

However, in this crucial moment of life and death, an invisible wave rushed past Chu Feng and the others. Simultaneously, a blinding light shone behind the monsters.

It was a very bright light. It completely illuminated the pitch-black Heavenly Road. The light was so strong no one even dared to widen their eyes.

Before such light, Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were in a fairly decent state, but the monsters started making lowly, painful, and quiet roars, as if they were bearing some sort of great torment.

More importantly, Chu Feng actually felt strong fear emanating from these monsters. They, who held incomparable arrogance before, were now afraid.

A voice filled with ancientness also arose in the direction of the light.

“You are merely a group of filthy guards whose seals have been removed. Yet you dare to call yourselves the kings of the Heavenly Road?”

Chapter 995: Martial Emperor

"You are merely a group of filthy guards whose seals have been removed. Yet you dare to call yourselves the kings of the Heavenly Road?"

After those words were spoken, there was sudden movement within the army of monsters. They, who were making low roars, now actually started howling in madness. To be more precise, howling in pain.

Indeed, these were cries of pain. Although Chu Feng could not open his eyes right now, he could feel the changes occurring to his surroundings with his Spirit power. The monsters' bodies were being crushed. The light was killing them.

Moreover, before such radiance, even though the monsters' sizes were as big as mountain peaks and their numbers were so much they looked like an ocean—vast and endless—and they were all Martial Kings, they were completely powerless.

What they could only do was stare as their bodies were torn apart, then refined until their lives disappeared completely.

"This feeling... It's an Imperial Might!"

Chu Feng felt shocked. He could feel the power surging amongst the light and how horrifying it was. The feeling was simply unstoppable. It seemed it could destroy anything. Even the indestructible bodies of Martial Kings, before such power, stood no chance. And this power was called Imperial Might.

A Martial Emperor. At that very instant, Chu Feng had actually met a Martial Emperor within the Heavenly Road.

"What is happening here?" Not only was Chu Feng alarmed, even Tantai Xue was in a bit of a daze. They didn't know what was happening anymore.

When it felt the attacker was going to kill them all, the rank nine Martial King monster threatened, "Bastard, do you know where we came from? You dare kill us all?! Do you think—"

But before it finished its words, it made a painful howl. Afterwards, it completely disappeared.

All noise disappeared in their surroundings resounding endlessly with howls. It was as if the monsters were never there. It was dead silent.

The blinding light also faded away slowly. Darkness once again enveloped all of them.

“This...”

Chu Feng could finally open his eyes. But after he captured the scene before him, even though he had experienced quite a few battles and slaughters, his heart couldn’t help but beat heavily.

The monsters had all died. Several million monsters—all Martial Kings—had died. Not a single one was left alive.

But they did not completely disappear. Their enormous and revolting limbs were still around him along with the fetid mist of blood.

The remnants of the monsters seemed as if they stretched out for infinity and completely enveloped everything. It was extremely horrifying when one gave such a scene a glance.

“So this is a Martial Emperor!”

Imagining the endless group of horrifying monsters before, then gazing at the scene in front of his eyes, Chu Feng couldn’t help but exclaim at the attacker’s strength. Martial Emperor—an existence of legends. Its power was indeed unimaginable.

bang... bang... bang... bang...

But right now, rumbles started resounding from the distance. That noise was akin to the explosion when a meteor crashed into the earth. It was thunderous and shook one’s heart. However, these were merely footstep sounds.

Even Chu Feng frowned slightly at the repeated sounds. He knew the person who killed the millions of Martial King monsters in a blink of an eye had come. It was the Martial Emperor.

In reality, not only did Chu Feng frown, even Tantai Xue, the one titled as witch who came from the Holy Land of Martialism, knitted her brows closely. She too was extremely nervous.

The two of them fixed their gazes closely in the direction of the rumbles. Finally, an enormous dark shadow appeared deep within the mist of blood.

Because of the bloody mist, it was very difficult to see its appearance clearly. They could only see a dark shadow, but judging by its area, one could tell how big it was.

The one who came was actually several hundred meters tall. Before it, the monsters that were killed became tiny existences.

As for Chu Feng and Tantai Xue, they could no longer be described as ants before this thing, but as dust instead. Indeed, in front of this enormous figure, humans like Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were only as big as specks of dust.

“Interesting. It seems that this Martial Emperor isn’t human. This Heavenly Road is truly interesting!” Eggy actually appeared quite excited when she saw the departing enormous creature.

As for Chu Feng, he wasn’t in the mood to joke. He didn’t know whether it was an enemy or ally. However, he did know it was much more terrifying than the monsters before. Martial Emperor—just this thought alone could make one’s soul flee.

As the enormous creature neared, though Chu Feng and Tantai Xue were in the air, the space beneath their feet violently trembled every time it took a step. The two of them couldn’t even stand stably in the air.

At that moment, the enormous creature was very close. However, it was still a huge shadow. What one could see was only a pair of blood-red eyes.

Those eyes were really too big. Rather than saying they were a pair of eyes, it would be more accurate to say they were two bright moons—blood-coloured moons.

Then it suddenly stopped. The radiance emitted from its eyes enveloped

Chu Feng and Tantai Xue. It was carefully examining them.

"Senior, thank you for helping us." Chu Feng clasped his fists in thanks when it didn't move. No matter what it planned, it had still saved them.

"Follow me," An ancient and deep voice came from the enormous creature. Afterwards, it turned around and went back in the direction it came from.

Chu Feng didn't hesitate as he quickly followed. Tantai Xue did the same.

"STOP!"

But just at that moment, the enormous creature turned its gaze around. Its blood-red eyes emanated a horrifying killing intent.

It fixed its gaze onto Tantai Xue and said with an extremely icy tone, "If you dare to take another step, I will tear you apart."

Tantai Xue's body trembled; she was not lightly scared. She stopped moving, not daring to make even half a step more. Although one could not see her complexion, Chu Feng could feel her face was drenched with cold sweat.

Martial Emperor—every single word from one stunned one's soul. An existence of that realm surpassed typical cultivators.

"Continue forward and you will pass the Heavenly Road. There will be no one ahead to stop you." The enormous creature's tone became quite a bit more gentle when Tantai Xue stopped.

"Senior, thank you for the advice." Tantai Xue took a relieved breath. She, who was typically cold, gave a rare bow and clasp of hands in expression of her gratitude.

But the enormous creature no longer paid attention to Tantai Xue. It continued striding forward with heavy steps. Indeed, it was not heading towards the Holy Land of Martialism but a certain other place in the Heavenly Road.

Chapter 996: Shadow

"Chu Feng, be careful. No matter what it's here for, do not argue with it. Let alone there are times where one must lower their heads, you are now facing a Martial Emperor!

"Sometimes, being a bit humble can perhaps save your life," Tantai Xue said mentally after the enormous creature left. As she faced a Martial Emperor, she too didn't dare to be careless.

"Humble? If it were you, would you be humble?" Chu Feng asked with a smile.

"I..." Tantai Xue did not reply. Humbleness depended on the person. Some people would never be willing to bow down to another even if they died. Chu Feng was a person like that, and Tantai Xue was the same.

"Heh, Lady Tantai, no matter what you say, I do have to thank your concern. Don't worry. One day, I'll see you again in the Holy Land of Martialism. Let us meet in the future." Chu Feng once again smiled, then chased after the enormous creature gradually getting farther and farther away.

The enormous creature quickened its speed. In a blink, it disappeared within the mist of blood. Chu Feng quickly followed, and he too left quickly.

Only Tantai Xue remained. She looked in Chu Feng and the enormous creature's direction, and looked for a very long while. Only then did she murmur to herself, "Where did this Chu Feng come from? Why was that Martial Emperor existence looking for him?" Tantai Xue pondered curiously. Yet, regardless of her thoughts, she remained puzzled. So she just stopped thinking. She leapt forward and, in the direction the creature pointed, headed towards the Holy Land of Martialism.

Chu Feng naturally followed the creature.

Right now, the cover of the mist of blood had vanished. In addition, since the two of them were much closer now, Chu Feng could see the

creature's appearance clearly.

It was indeed not human, but it had a humanoid figure. As for why it wasn't human, it was because its head seemed like a dog's. To be more precise, like a wolf's. But in reality, it was neither a dog nor a wolf. It was a creature Chu Feng had never seen before.

It stood several hundred meters tall like a ladder that reached the heavens. It wore golden armour; however, the armour did not emit any light.

At that moment, what attracted Chu Feng's attention the most was the weapon in the enormous creature's hand. It was a sceptre—a very special sceptre.

It even seemed as if it came from the creature's body itself; it seemed as if it were one with the creature. But something absolutely true was that the sceptre contained extremely terrifying power.

On the road, Chu Feng had attempted to communicate with this enormous creature, but it was ignoring him. Although it didn't berate him or anything, it didn't pay attention to him. Rather than saying it was allowing Chu Feng to come with it, it would be more accurate to say it was guiding Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, this dog-head wouldn't help you for no reason. It wouldn't be your relative, right? Heh..." Eggy smiled with a naughty expression; her smile was a quite happy one.

"Less of that nonsense." Chu Feng felt rather helpless. In a situation like this, likely only Eggy could remain this calm and even dare to make a joke.

Although her joke was quite ridiculous, Chu Feng was actually also making guesses at the creature's origin. Even though Chu Feng felt that this Martial Emperor creature couldn't possibly be his relative, there was likely some sort of relationship between them.

Chu Feng was even thinking it was bringing him to the place he and Huangfu Haoyue first met. In other words, this enormous creature was on

the same side as him.

The more Chu Feng thought of that, the more excited he became and the closer he followed. He was very afraid he would miss the chance to solve the mystery of his ancestry.

With the creature guiding the way, Chu Feng indeed came to the edge of the Heavenly Road and entered yet another vast tunnel. This too was someone else's land, but it was many times vaster than the other ones Chu Feng saw before. It was on a completely different level.

As he looked at the structures on the two sides, Chu Feng became more and more agitated. The feeling this place brought him was the exact same as Huangfu Haoyue's descriptions.

If it must be described, one word was sufficient—dark. However, its true feeling was the complete opposite—holy.

Indeed. The structures in this place gave others such a conflicting feeling. Seeing darkness, yet feeling holy.

"Waa, there's so many big dog-heads?" Even Eggy couldn't help exclaiming when Chu Feng entered deeper in.

At that very instant, what appeared by his sides were enormous dark-grey statues. They were several hundred meters tall and all held sceptres. They were identical to the creature leading Chu Feng.

The only difference was that the ones by his sides were statues, while the one leading Chu Feng was a living Martial Emperor.

At first, Chu Feng even thought the statues were built by this enormous creature, but soon, he discovered he was wrong.

At that moment, in front of Chu Feng, a large door appeared. It was already opened, and inside it was dusky. Only in its depths was there a bit of light. The door could block off Spirit power; even Chu Feng's Heaven's Eyes were no exception.

However, what made Chu Feng shocked the most wasn't the ajar door. It was outside the door. There were spots for two statues. However, one

was vacant.

The enormous Martial Emperor creature was walking towards that empty space. Moreover, it stood neatly at that place, and went in the same position as the other statues.

hmm—

Just at that moment, the most mystical scene occurred. Its body started solidifying and its golden armour started changing. It became dark-grey stone and even the Martial Emperor aura disappeared. In the end, it became a statue—one the exact same as the previous ones.

"Waa, really? This dog-head that saved you truly is a statue!

"There are so many here; they wouldn't all be Martial Emperors, would they?" Eggy widened her mouth in amazement. She felt it was quite inconceivable.

"Haha, interesting. Truly interesting! As expected of the existence who could seal me in your body. Chu Feng, I'm getting more and more curious about your family!

"Quick! Quickly enter! Let me see what they look like!" Eggy urged amidst the shock. Not only was Chu Feng impatient, she too was impatient to find Chu Feng's family. Not only would it unravel his ancestry, perhaps the answer could even undo her seal.

After taking a deep breath, Chu Feng strode forward and headed towards the door.

After passing through the door, his surroundings became dark. However, it was different from the darkness within the Heavenly Road. With Chu Feng's abilities, he could still see many things within the latter. So long as it was inside a certain range, he could see everything clearly.

But here, he lost the power that a cultivator should have. It was that dark in his surroundings. Even if he used the Heaven's Eyes, there was not the slightest bit of change.

So, Chu Feng could only head towards the faint radiance. After nearing, his expression could help but change greatly.

He finally knew where the faint light came from. It was from a small fire. But right now, what attracted Chu Feng's attention wasn't the fire, but the person sitting cross-legged by it.

Chapter 997: Old Ape

Chu Feng looked carefully, and he was once again shocked.

As thin as a match, the ape wore ragged clothing over its disheveled fur. Due to its visibly poor state and frailty, the old thing looked as if it were on its deathbed.

However, Chu Feng detected a near untraceable fierceness hidden within the old ape's lifeless eyes, fierceness that could only come from experiencing a certain amount of suffering and reality. Chu Feng was currently very far away from acquiring such a thing.

"Waa, what is this? Why's there an ape after the dog-heads? We wouldn't have come to a zoo, right?" exclaimed Eggy surprisingly after seeing the old ape.

She was the same as Chu Feng; she too was nearly certain this was the place he an Huangfu Haoyue met. So, after he stepped past that door, they both felt who they would meet next would be—even if not his parents—his family.

But the ape in front of his eyes didn't look like Chu Feng's family at all, nor like his parents.

Judging by its surface, it didn't even reach the standards of a Monstrous Beast. It was just an ape that simply could not be more normal. However, Chu Feng was a person who grasped special power. How could he possibly be of the same family with this ape?

"Junior Chu Feng greets Senior." Although he was confused and didn't feel any hint of familiarity with it, Chu Feng still clasped his hands, bowed, and paid his respects.

Chu Feng was certain this was where he and Huangfu Haoyue met. No matter who that ape was, since it was here, it was likely not an enemy. Even if it wasn't a part of Chu Feng's family, there was still likely some sort of relationship. So, it was worth his greetings.

But who would have thought after Chu Feng politely faced it, the old

ape merely shot him a faint glance. Then, it cast its gaze back at the fire and said, “You’re too weak. Do you feel no shame coming back with strength like this? Get the hell out of here!”

Its calm words were filled with ice. There were even strong disdain and contempt.

Chu Feng, who thought he had found where he came from and assumed he was going to meet his relatives, was a bit unable to accept those words.

However, considering there were various unknown variables, he didn’t say much. Instead, he once again clasped his hands at the old ape and said, “Senior, you recognize me? Since you do, can you tell me where my parents are?”

But the old ape ignored Chu Feng words. There was no reaction. Instead, he used a wooden stick to stir the fireplace, making the flames burn a bit brighter.

“Senior, I don’t know what I’ve done incorrectly that led to your displeasure and treatment towards me.

“However, it could be considered that I’ve gone through many suffering to come to this place. I don’t have many requests; I just want to see my family. So... if I’ve offended you in any place, please forgive me.”

After seeing his words were ineffective, Chu Feng once again clasped his hands at the old ape. Then, he strode forth and headed towards it.

Since it had such a horrid attitude, Chu Feng didn’t prepare to waste his breath with it. He decided to just pass it and walk deeper in. This land was so big; if Chu Feng’s family were truly here, then he would definitely find them.

bang

However, before he even took a few steps forward, an invisible power suddenly appeared in front of him. With lightning speed, it struck Chu Feng’s body.

“Ah!”

The power forced him several meters back. When he landed on the ground, Chu Feng felt his inside in complete chaos. However, there wasn’t much pain. The power only forced him back; it didn’t harm him.

At that instant, he cast his gaze back at the place he bounced back. He discovered nothing. The thing that repelled him was not a pre-laid barrier.

Afterwards, he cast his gaze towards the old ape. But, he discovered that the old ape’s eyes were not on him. Chu Feng was caught off guard when he was struck back so he could not be certain whether that power came from the old ape.

whoosh

Suddenly, Chu Feng threw himself back up. Then, he used a bodily martial skill, a profound running technique that made his body become akin to an arrow that just left a bow and he rushed deeper in with light-like speed.

bang

However, like what happened earlier, before Chu Feng even passed the aged ape, he was repelled by an invisible power.

This time, Chu Feng was a bit angry. He had carefully observed and he was nearly certain that the one putting forth such power was the aged ape.

Even though he was displeased, Chu Feng didn’t display any anger. He felt the ape definitely had some sort of relationship with his family. So, he still asked very respectfully, “Senior, why must you stop me?”

But what Chu Feng didn’t expect was this time, the aged ape was unmoved. It took Chu Feng’s words like the wind that passed one’s ears.

That truly threw Chu Feng in a difficult position. He was certain this was where he met Huangfu Haoyue and his family. At least, someone related to his family would be here. Even this old ape was possibly an

existence related to him; otherwise, it wouldn't have said those words before which had implied it knew him.

Those words, as demeaning as they were, still meant the ape knew something.

Yet right now, it was not only unwilling to let Chu Feng pass, it was even driving him away.

In terms of strength, it was simply unfathomable. Chu Feng couldn't forcibly pass, so he could only ask with respect. Yet, it ignored him. He couldn't pass by force, nor could he pass by words. What could Chu Feng do?

"Chu Feng, let me go out and try. This ape is not simple. From my estimations of its strength, it is possibly even stronger than me before I was sealed. It is absolutely not a normal Martial Emperor. It's not impossible that it was the one who sealed me within your body.

"Let me out and I'll ask for the details. Even if I don't learn anything about your ancestry, at least let me understand why it sealed me in your body for no apparent reason," Eggy said suddenly.

Chu Feng didn't refuse Eggy's request. First of all, she was helping him, and second of all, she also had the right to question. Her request was not an unreasonable one.

So, Chu Feng willed the World Spirit Gate to open, and Eggy, the grand queen, slowly walked out.

After she appeared, the ape's expression changed slightly. It seemed to be quite surprised, but after a faint glimpse, it retracted its gaze and paid no more attention to her.

It seemed that she was already prepared for such a reaction. The corners of her lips curled up as she revealed a cute and charming smile. She walked forward with her slender and long legs, but when she stopped, she did something that made Chu Feng completely dumbfounded.

Chapter 998: Mystery of Ancestry

Eggy put her hands on her waist and furrowed her brows greatly. With an extremely loud and clear voice, she looked at the ape and cursed, “You old monkey bastard, who the hell do you think you are, acting like a lord here? You think you can be so mighty because you’re just a bit older? And you dare to tell Chu Feng to get out of here? And you even dare to stop him? Do you truly think you’re god?

“I’ll tell you this: you may drive Chu Feng away, but I’m no pushover. Why did you seal my cultivation? Today, you must give me a satisfying answer! Otherwise, I’ll pluck all your fur and make you into a bald monkey!”

Chu Feng was stupefied by Eggy’s words. He had thought of many ways she would try and persuade the old ape, but he never expected she would be this fierce. She didn’t even say half a polite word and just started insulting it. She even spoke in such an intense tone.

boom—

Just at that moment, the old ape stood up abruptly and at the same time, a ferocious Imperial Might swept over like a hurricane.

It was really too powerful. Chu Feng was frozen in front of it. He even had trouble breathing; on Eggy’s end, she was kneeling and pain filled her beautiful face.

“A mere Asura World Spirit dares to speak to me like this? You gave you these nerves?!” The ape was furious. Its words were filled with rage, and one could even hear the sound of its teeth gnashing.

“Mm—” Eggy’s face, other than pain, was one of unyielding. It seemed she wanted to retort, but she simply didn’t have the power to speak. The pain on her face became more and more distinct. It truly made Chu Feng’s heart ache.

“Senior, Eggy has always spoken her mind without much prior consideration. In addition, her power has been bound and she was

forcibly sealed in my body for many years. She holds grudges in her heart, so that's why she said those words. Senior, I hope that you can spare her life," Chu Feng quickly begged.

"No matter the strength of a World Spirit, they are always a slave. The uncouthness of a slave lies in the responsibility of the master.

"Right now, if you kneel and beg me, I'll leave her alive. Otherwise, this place will become her grave today and she shall never return to life!" the old ape said fiercely.

"Mm—" Eggy was enraged. She wanted to say something, but it was useless as she simply couldn't even speak.

The old ape was too terrifying. Although what it emanated was also Imperial Might, it was several times stronger than the old dog-head. As Eggy said, this old ape was indeed a ruthless character and was indescribably powerful.

"Senior, if I've truly offended you in any way, you can tell me. If there's any place I've let you down, even if you don't want me to kneel, I will still kneel.

"However, if you don't say the reason and want to drive me away... To be honest, Eggy's words were all correct. If you want me to take her place for punishment, I can; however, if you want me to kneel, absolutely not," Chu Feng firmly refused.

"Less of this rubbish. I'm asking will you kneel or not?!" the old ape shouted furiously. Everything seemed to tremble; its power was not only overwhelming, its tone was undoubtable. If Chu Feng did not kneel, it would truly kill Eggy.

"Senior, if you don't tell me the reason, then it's impossible that I kneel to you.

"However, to me, Eggy is not only a World Spirit, nor any slave. She's a very important companion to me.

"I ask for a trade of lives. I ask that you spare her life. As long as you leave her alive, I am willing to die in her place." Chu Feng spoke again.

Moreover, in his eyes, there was a resolution to die.

Mm—“ When she heard those words, Eggy’s body couldn’t help but tremble. Her beautiful eyes instantly reddened and two streams of sparkling tears spilled from the corners of her eyes. Although the old ape controlled her body, it could not control her emotions.

When Eggy heard Chu Feng was willing to die for her, this queen’s heart melt. She was greatly moved.

“Hahahaha...” Just at that moment, the old ape let out a burst of laughter. It was laughing very happily. Only after a while did it look at Chu Feng with quite a bit of satisfaction and say, “Although your cultivation is lacking, you have some courage. You haven’t shamed your father’s name.”

After speaking, the old ape waved its arm. The flames burning atop firewood became a lantern that landed into its hand.

“Follow me.” With lantern in hand, the old ape turned around. It walked forward with a bent back, deeper into the pitch-black world. Simultaneously, the horrifying Imperial Might disappeared.

With her fetters gone, Eggy stood up quickly. She, filled with fury, leaped forward and actually attacked the old ape.

hmm

However, Chu Feng was already prepared for that. He willed the World Spirit Gate to open in front of Eggy. Catching her off guard, she leapt into the gate. Seeing his plan succeed, Chu Feng hurriedly closed it shut.

“Chu Feng, what are you doing? Let me out! I haven’t received this much humiliation in my entire life! I will kill that old ape!” Eggy furiously roared when she realized she walked into Chu Feng’s trick.

“Eggy, I know you hold grudges, but our strength right now is not enough. If we force a fight, we’re the only ones who will suffer.

“If you want to forcibly go, then I can join you. I won’t just watch as you send yourself to die. Even if you die, I will join you.

“If you truly want to send yourself to death for no reason at all, I’ll join you right now.” Chu Feng opened the World Spirit Gate again.

However, Eggy didn’t come out. She first wiped the tears from her face with grievance, then said, “For you, I’ve endured this time.”

After speaking, Eggy sat in the corner within the World Spirit Space. She hugged her knees and burrowed her head into her arms. She no longer spoke.

Chu Feng’s heart stung. But, he could do nothing. Putting aside the fact that the old ape was too powerful, it still held a relationship of utmost significance to him.

Although its attitude was horrible and had ridiculed him and Eggy before, it had not truly harmed them. Now, the ape’s attitude changed suddenly and it was even leading Chu Feng. Its previous actions might have even been a test.

The ape didn’t truly want to make things difficult for Chu Feng. So, let alone avenging Eggy, it was very difficult to even harbour any hatred towards it.

But exactly because of that, Chu Feng felt Eggy had truly been wronged. That’s why his heart ached for her.

No matter how wronged he was, it would be fine. However, he didn’t want the ones close to him bearing the same pain. Of course, Eggy was one of the closest people to him.

“What are you waiting for?” The old ape’s impatient voice came from the depths of this land.

“I’m coming.” Chu Feng didn’t dare to hesitate as he hurriedly followed.

He, at that moment, held too many questions in his heart. What awaited him up ahead was very possibly the mystery of his ancestry.

Chapter 999: Chu Feng's Gravestone

With the old ape leading the way, Chu Feng headed deeper into this place. After a short distance, they stopped.

At that moment, a gravestone appeared in front of Chu Feng. His expression changed greatly when he saw the name written on it. An indescribable emotion surged into his heart .

The name written on the gravestone was "Chu Feng". With the Heaven's Eyes, he discovered it was made by normal Profound Stone. The marked time was actually the exact same as his current age.

But sadly, the only thing he could discover was the things written on the gravestone. When he looked into the grave, he could see nothing.

"Senior, what is this?" Chu Feng asked the old ape amidst his confusion.

"Hoh..." The old ape calmly smiled. It was a smile filled with complex emotions. Then, it said, "Actually, I really should be calling you 'Young Master'.

"However, right now, you aren't qualified for that because title respect is gained through strength.

"As for this grave, it had saved your life before. And right now, it can save your life again." An invisible wave surged out behind the old ape and into the grave.

The soil started churning and bursting outward. Very soon, a coffin appeared. It was also made by Profound Stone, but it was enormous. It was more than ten times the size of typical coffins.

When he looked at it, the complicated emotions in Chu Feng's heart became more and more intense. He truly wanted to know what was inside this coffin and how it was related to him.

Before, the old ape said this grave had saved his life, and now, it could save him again. What did that mean?

bang

Just at that moment, a loud muffled sound rang out. The lid of the Profound Stone coffin opened. What appeared within was a blinding light.

It was a formation. An extremely profound—so profound Chu Feng comprehended nothing—and indescribably powerful formation. Despite its complexity, Chu Feng could still tell it was a Teleportation Formation, one far superior to ones from the Ancient Era.

"Go. This formation can bring you safely to the Holy Land of Martialism," said the old ape indifferently.

"Senior, you want me to leave?" Chu Feng asked in bewilderment.

"Of course. You aren't thinking of staying here, right?" The old ape calmly shot Chu Feng a glance. Its gaze was like saying, "You must leave now!"

"Senior, do you know how I found this place? Do you know how I've been in all these years? After countless tribulations, I found where you were. After countless tribulations, I came here. I don't have any other goal. I just want to know who my parents are. I just want to know how they are.

"But... I don't even understand anything. I don't even know who I'm a child to. I don't know even know who my family are. I don't even know why they abandoned me. And now, you want me to leave?"

Chu Feng was clearly a bit agitated. In his eyes, there was a trace of desire. He hoped this old ape would tell him a few things because he knew it definitely had information he wanted.

"Ahh..." Indeed, the old ape was moved after hearing Chu Feng's words. It said, "Oh Chu Feng, it's not that I'm unwilling to tell you, it's just that your father is unwilling to let me tell you. He's here right now, actually. However... he doesn't want to see you because you're too weak. So weak you're unworthy to be his son."

"What?" Chu Feng's heart couldn't help but tremble. That reason was quite a devastating one.

His father, who he dreamt of meeting, who he wholeheartedly admired,

wasn't absent. Rather, he was here right now. He was just unwilling to see Chu Feng. And it was because Chu Feng was too weak?

"Hoh..." Suddenly, Chu Feng smiled. It was an abnormally happy smile; but in reality, his heart was filled with extreme anger.

Suddenly, he exploded. He roared furiously. Towards the depths of this place, he shouted at the top of his lungs, "What kind of bullshit reason is that?"

"You abandoned me from a young age and had me become another person's child. And now, you're still unwilling to recognize me. And this reason is because I'm too weak?

"Fine, I admit. In comparison to you both, I am indeed very weak. I'm so pitifully weak. But must family be weighed by strength? How can there be parents like you in this world?! You—"

"Shut up!" But before Chu Feng finished what he wanted to say, the old ape suddenly shouted furiously. That voice was filled with a horrifying aura.

When it exploded next to Chu Feng's ear, he felt his head buzz as if his entire being had been blown up. Then, his blurred emotions of sorrow and fury were magically pacified.

"You aren't qualified to blame him. Go. Before you have sufficient strength, don't come back here. Of course, if you feel he's an unqualified father, you can also choose to never return. You can go live a life you desire," said the old ape again. However, within its tone, there was a hint of sorrow.

Chu Feng, who had already returned to calmness, felt an indescribable pain in his heart when he saw the old ape's expression. He suddenly realized there were some troubles it couldn't speak of. Or, perhaps his father and his family had troubles they couldn't speak of.

Regardless how they treated him, when Huangfu Haoyue protected him and when the big dog-head saved him within the Heavenly Road, it was his family behind the scenes. Without them, perhaps he would already be

dead.

So, it didn't matter how they treated him. The reality was that they protected him with everything they had. There would simply be no explanation why they did that if they didn't love Chu Feng. So, he determined this treatment must be due to some trouble.

But what sort of trouble would force someone to abandon their child?

"Senior, since my father is unwilling to see me, I can leave. However, can you ask him what cultivation I need to have before he's willing to see me? What cultivation do I need until he's willing to recognize me as his son?" Chu Feng said coldly. In his eyes, there was even a bit of pleading.

The old ape's gaze changed once again, like a layer of frost being melted.

"Ahh..." It sighed deeply once again, then said, "If I'm not mistaken, you must have been seen as a genius in the Eastern Sea Region. But do you know why I'm saying you're weak?"

Chapter 1000: Thing of Burden

“I know.

“As the proverbs say, ‘There are skies beyond this sky, and men beyond this man.’

“Of those in my own generation in the Eastern Sea Region, I am indeed not considered weak.

“But in the Holy Land of Martialism, there are definitely many people superior to me while being in the same generation. In comparison to them, I am indeed not strong,” Chu Feng replied.

“Wrong. Absolutely wrong. In the Eastern Sea Region, or the Holy Land of Martialism, either of them is just a part of this world. The difference is only the outside and the inside. What are the people there comparing to you?” However, after hearing Chu Feng’s words, the old ape appeared very agitated. It looked at Chu Feng and berated with a fierce tone, “You have the nine-coloured Divine Lightning in your body—it was given to you by your father.

“There’s even a World Spirit from the Asura Spirit World sealed in your body—it was given to you by your mother.

“And right now, their blood of nobility is flowing within your veins, yet you are still comparing yourself to the trash of this world? And you dare say you’re not weak?

“You aren’t just pathetically weak in cultivation, you’re pathetically weak in knowledge. Chu Feng, you’re truly so weak you’re a failure. Not only have you shamed the family’s name, you’ve also shamed your parents’ name.”

The old ape’s words stupefied Chu Feng and froze him. Even though its words were lashing out of Chu Feng for his weakness, it was simultaneously giving him some information.

His nine-coloured Divine Lightning was given by his father, and Eggy, the horrifying World Spirit, was given by his mother. From the old ape’s

tone, which was resentful from disappointment, Chu Feng could tell that his father and mother were absolutely not ordinary people. They were likely very impressive as there were hints of respect within its tone.

The old ape was a Martial Emperor—there was no doubt to that. As for a person who could make the old ape so respectful... it was simply unimaginable.

Although his heart was shocked, Chu Feng didn't interject. He silently awaited the old ape to leak more information. Only when it was unwilling to reveal any more would he analyze the information.

"Ahh..." After venting out such fierce words, the old ape's mood was much calmer. As it looked at Chu Feng, whose face was serene yet had eyes filled with longing, it heaved another long sigh and said, "As they say, 'If you near red, you become red. If you near black, you become black.' You're in such garbage lands, so it does make sense that you're so weak. After all, you don't belong to this place."

"Don't belong to this place?" Chu Feng's heart was moved. He couldn't help asking, "Then where do I belong?"

"You come from the Outer World," said the old ape.

"Outer World?" Chu Feng was shocked.

"Ahh, whatever. Since you're so lacking in knowledge, I'll make an exception and tell you about this. I'll let you know what burden you're carrying on your back," said the old ape.

"Your family comes from this world, but it has already been forgotten by this world's people because long ago, your family left this world. However, undoubtedly, your family's strength can bring forth admiration from everyone in this world, including many forces in the Holy Land of Martialism.

"As for the nine-coloured Divine Lightning in your body, that's the symbol of your family. That's the Inherited Bloodline only your family possesses. That's the power that allows you to surpass all else in this world.

“As for your father, he was the family’s pride. But sadly, because of your birth, you and your father were driven away. All of your father’s honour had been stripped away. One could even say that the criminal who did that was you,” said the old ape with solemnness.

“What? I took away my father’s honour?” Chu Feng was shocked again. He couldn’t understand what was happening. However, recalling the old ape’s attitude before, and recalling the things that had happened to him, it seemed that Chu Feng understood something.

The old ape said the nine-coloured Divine Lightning was the power of his family’s bloodline. However, the Divine Lightning only entered his body at the age of ten. Which also meant before the age of then, there was no power from any Inherited Bloodline within his body. Even now, he simply hadn’t completely grasped the bloodline’s power.

That was sufficient evidence to the “weakness” the old ape spoke of before. A person who couldn’t even grasp their own bloodline. A person who didn’t even have any bloodline power within their body before the age of ten. Was that not weak?

So, he asked, “Senior, it was because of me? Was it because I was too weak, so the family drove me and my father away, so my family stripped away my father’s honour?”

“No. The one who drive you two out is indeed your family, but the one who stripped away your father’s honour is you. You! Do you understand?” the old ape furiously roared as it pointed at Chu Feng. It looked like it was gazing at an enemy; there was even some hatred within its eyes.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt extremely complicated emotions in his heart. An indescribable sorrow surged out from his heart and filled every single corner of his body. This was an emotion he had never felt before.

Chu Feng knew a very long time ago that his family was very powerful. He knew, a very long time ago, he disappointed his father. Although he hadn’t seen him before, he admired him a lot.

So, he worked hard at cultivation. On one side, it was to meet a goal; it was for himself. On the other side, it was to make his father proud. To

make his family proud. He wanted, when he reunited with his family, to let them know he hadn't ashamed them.

But it was actually himself who drove his father away from their family. It was even he who deprived all his father's honour. That was really a bit hard to accept.

"Crap." When Chu Feng entered a daze, the old ape's expression suddenly changed greatly. There was actually a hint of fear that surged within its eyes.

hmm Suddenly, it willed the formation's light in the coffin to shine with brilliance. It was beginning to activate. Then, it grabbed Chu Feng and threw him into the coffin. It said, "Stay there, and don't move. No matter what happens, do not come out. Let this formation take you away."

After speaking those words, the old ape shifted the Profound Stone lid and wanted to seal Chu Feng inside.

Seeing that, he hurriedly stopped the lid that was going to close him away. Looking at the old ape outside, he asked, "Senior, what happened?"

"Don't ask so much. Just follow what I say." The old ape's eyes suddenly became mysterious and gentle. There was even a hint of sorrow and wistfulness. Its tone also became extremely warm as it said to Chu Feng, "Chu Feng, you must remember you were the one who took away your father's honour. However, the one who can take it back will also be you. You're his hope."

"Hope?" Chu Feng's heartbeat quickened when he heard that word. In that instant, he seemed to have understood something. So, he asked again, "Senior, when can I return here? What level of cultivation do I need to have in order for my father to be willing to meet me?"

The old ape hesitated a bit at Chu Feng's question. Then, it said, "You can return whenever you feel like you can."

bang Afterwards, a gentle power pushed Chu Feng down, and the coffin also closed completely shut.

Chapter 1001: Chu Kongtong

The coffin was sealed, but the formation was still firing up. Chu Feng could feel that the formation was very powerful. However, at that instant, it hadn't been activated completely. It was still gathering power. Only when it finished could Chu Feng be sent away.

However, right now, what surprised Chu Feng wasn't the profound and mystical formation but the coffin itself.

Although it was made by Profound Stone, it was very special. If one looked from the outside, it could block off anything. Nothing could be seen; even if Chu Feng used the Heaven's Eyes, it was useless.

But at that instant, when the coffin was completely shut, it was the opposite. Chu Feng was actually able to see everything outside clearly through the coffin, as if it and the soil were transparent.

Right now, Chu Feng could see that the fear and uneasiness in the old ape's eyes didn't diminish at all. However, it was still doing its best to conceal it. Very soon, it acted as if nothing had ever happened. It turned the lantern in its hand to a pile of fire, and sat cross-legged by the flames.

The old ape's series of strange movements made Chu Feng know that something was going to happen. So, he really did hope this formation would take a little longer to fire up so he could learn what was about to happen that made this old ape so afraid.

hmm

Just at that moment, radiance shone in front of it. A blinding golden light appeared. It was too bright; it completely lit up this pitch-black land.

Before the golden light, Chu Feng could see that this place was truly gorgeous and great. There were many structures around, and every single one was enormous. They were like mountain peaks that led to the skies, and as they were shone by the radiance, they were also incomparably brilliant.

Some were like crystals, some were like diamonds, some were like ice and snow, some were like flames... They were all made by special materials, and they were both grand and imposing. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say these were the greatest structures Chu Feng had ever seen in his entire life.

But right now, Chu Feng wasn't in the mood to admire these buildings. Putting aside the fact that this place was too big, the place that the golden light shone was merely the corner of an iceberg. More importantly, however, when the golden radiance appeared, an extremely horrifying aura also descended.

That aura was extremely powerful. It was the most horrifying aura Chu Feng had ever felt in his entire life. Before such an aura, Chu Feng truly felt he was not even worth a speck of dust. He was so pathetically minuscule.

"Old Ape, you truly have quite the nerves!" Suddenly, a fierce and arrogant voice rang out amidst the golden light. That tone was very lofty, akin to a lord descending into this world.

After that voice rang out, quite a bit of the golden light was retracted. Finally, a person appeared in front of the old ape.

It was a very huge figure—a dozen or so meters tall. Its body shone with golden light and emanated an incomparable might. Chu Feng could only see his blurry outline also because the golden radiance was too blinding. He simply could not see this person's complexion; he couldn't even see their clothes clearly.

Everything was being separated by the golden light and Chu Feng could only feel its strength. He simply couldn't observe anything else. This person was a true nobility, so noble that commoners weren't even qualified to see his appearance.

But if Chu Feng were to judge, he would say this person seemed more like a warrior who won all battles and was unstoppable. Even the old ape was quite a bit weaker when it was in front of it.

However, even though this person was unimaginably powerful, the old

ape was still very calm. There was no more fear in its eyes, and it simply didn't even look straight at that person. It remained sitting and kept lightly poking at the firewood in front of it.

"Old Ape, who let you summon the statues without permission? You should know you are not allowed to use the things here!" The person who came was even more furious when the old ape used such an attitude to face him.

"Something that shouldn't have appeared in the Heavenly Road appeared. It affected the order of things. I was just removing harm for those who pass and cleared some obstructions," said the old ape calmly. However, it still didn't look straight at the newcomer.

"Oh? Old Ape, when have you become a Good Samaritan? You use my clan's power to help the garbage from this place?" said the person mockingly.

"When have you become so free? You always have your eyes on this place. When there's just a slight bit of movement, you just rush over here. You're simply more sensitive than dog's nose," said the old ape with also a mocking tone.

"Hmph." The person coldly snorted. Then, with a thought, a boundless Spirit power was released and swept across everything.

"Crap," Chu Feng cursed. He could feel how horrifying that Spirit power was. It was something several tens of thousands of times stronger than his own. Before that Spirit power, Chu Feng simply could not hide.

hmm

However, Chu Feng's worry was redundant. When the Spirit power came attacking, the formation within the coffin changed slightly and blocked it for Chu Feng. The horrifying Spirit power was unable to cover Chu Feng's body.

"Mm?" His Spirit power being blocked made the person aware that something was wrong. He raised his palm, and a golden light shot out and flew towards the coffin that held Chu Feng.

Seeing the incoming golden light, Chu Feng's entire being was frozen. He felt a dangerous feeling he had never felt before. He could feel what sort of power was concealed within the golden light. Not to mention the light itself, even the remnants of the golden light could shatter his soul and he'd die instantly.

boom But just when Chu Feng felt he was dead, the old ape made its move. Not only did it stop the golden light, it even dispelled the remnants. It stopped the attack completely.

"Chu Kongtong, are you looking to die? You dare attack my young master's grave?" the old ape furiously questioned after stopping the attack.

"There is movement within the grave. I suspect someone's inside. And since you're protecting it so much, it seems that you're hiding someone." Chu Kongtong was even more furious and he actually attacked the old ape itself.

hmm Golden radiance shone. Everything in his surroundings became incomparably minuscule, and that golden radiance became the only thing one could see within this world.

Before that light, the old ape made a painful expression on its face. It used everything it could to withstand that attack, but it was unable to and was forced to kneel onto the ground.

"Hahaha, Old Ape, you've gotten weak! And not just a little bit weaker either!" Chu Kongtong suddenly laughed smugly when he saw the old ape kneeling in front of him. His laughter was even quite mad.

Chapter 1002: Who Gave You These Nerves

“Old Ape, to think how mighty you were back then. Clearly, you were only a foreign Monstrous Beast, yet in my Chu family, you held even a higher position than my family members.

“Back then, just because my big brother spoke a few disrespectful words, you slapped him three thousand times in front of the rest of the family. The effect it had on him was so great he felt he had no more face so he destroyed his own cultivation, thus cutting off his future.

“Had you ever thought a day like today would come? Have you thought that you, who came from the Fighting Ape clan, would one day kneel in front of me?” said Chu Kongtong coldly. His words were extremely mocking.

“Chu Kongtong, twenty years ago, would you dare to speak to me like this?” shouted the old ape. At the same time, the fur on its body all stood on end. A boundless power burst from his weak body. The old ape actually stood up amidst the golden light.

“Kneel back down!” However, just when the old ape stood up, Chu Kongtong strengthened the golden radiance by several times and once again forced the old ape onto its knees.

“Hmph.” After doing that, Chu Kongtong coldly snorted and said, “Twenty years ago? Of course, I wouldn’t dare to speak to you like this twenty years ago, but it’s twenty years later now.

“Old Ape, if you must blame someone, you can only blame yourself. You can only blame yourself for following the wrong master. You wouldn’t have fallen to this state and be bearing this pain here right now otherwise.

“I know how arrogant you were. You came from the Fighting Ape clan, had extraordinary bloodline, overwhelming strength, so you thought even my Chu family’s forbidden land could do nothing to you.

“But now, you know you’re wrong, right? Your fallen cultivation and this powerless body have represented everything. This place can not only engulf my Chu family’s cultivation, it can also engulf yours.”

“Chu Kongtong, less rubbish! If you want to avenge your elder brother, then kill me. Why speak these inane words so indirectly?” the old ape shouted mockingly.

“Heh. Kill you? That would be too good for you! To think this master and servant were so arrogant in my Chu family... yet you want to die and end it all? In your dreams!

“I want you alive. I want you two to barely survive in this place until you become trash who don’t even have a trace of cultivation! Then, I’ll have you pay the price for your very action.

“As for now, I want to torment you. There’s movement in the grave. I know you must have concealed someone. You two can’t leave this place, so you want to access the outside to help you, right?

“Let me tell you this: as long as I’m here, you should never even think of playing any tricks! Stay here and receive the punishments for your crimes!” Chu Kongtong sneered, then some golden light left his body.

It became a hoe and shovel and arrived in front of the grave that held Chu Feng. He was preparing to break the coffin.

Seeing the incoming tools flying over, Chu Feng was not afraid. Instead, on his face, there was an indescribable fury.

Chu Feng had heard everything that Chu Kongtong and the old ape said. Although they had only exchanged a few words, Chu Feng had still caught a few things: this person called Chu Kongtong seemed to be someone from the Chu family. Moreover, he held quite some resentment for Chu Feng’s father and the old ape.

At first, since Chu Kongtong had insufficient strength, he didn’t dare to do much to them. But now, they had clearly suffered in some way and thus their strengths were far inferior to before. So, this despicable and shameless Chu Kongtong was taking this chance to deal with Chu Feng’s

father and the old ape.

Although Chu Feng didn't want to die, that depended on the situation. Chu Feng could not tolerate his father's dignity being challenged. So, when the golden tools were flying down into the ground, Chu Feng stood up and wanted to break through the coffin and leave. Even though he knew it meant certain death, he still wanted to fight that Chu Kongtong.

hmm However, what Chu Feng didn't expect was just when he stood up, the coffin's formation finished channelling. It was now activating.

At that instant, Chu Feng felt his vision swirl. Very soon, he lost consciousness.

boom—

Just at that moment, hoe and shovel made by the horrifying golden light fell down at the same time. With destructive power, it scattered the soil that buried the coffin, and also shattered the Profound Stone coffin lid.

However, after it was destroyed, Chu Feng wasn't inside. Similarly, there wasn't any formation. There was only a little child skeleton that lay within the enormous coffin.

The skeleton was covered with special cloth. It shone with golden light, but the skeleton itself wasn't all that bright. It was even a bit yellowed; clearly, its owner had died for quite some time.

"What? I clearly felt something before." Seeing the coffin completely empty, holding only a child's skeleton, Chu Kongtong was taken aback. He felt very surprised at that result.

"Chu Kongtong, you filthy animal! You dare take apart my young master's grave and break his coffin? You don't even allow his young soul to rest?! I'll kill you!" the old ape furiously howled. The deafening sound made everything tremble.

This time, Chu Kongtong did not retort. Instead, he said without much confidence, "It's just breaking the coffin. It's not like the skeleton's been damaged. Besides, I'm doing official duties. I felt there was movement in this coffin, so it was reasonable that I checked it out. After all, this is my

Chu family's forbidden land. I cannot allow outsiders to enter.

"However, since there's nothing abnormal within the coffin, I let you two off for now.

"In the future, you better guard this place well and don't even think of having any unbefitting thoughts. Otherwise, even if I forgive you, they won't."

After speaking, Chu Kongtong retracted the golden light that oppressed the old ape. At the same time, the radiance surrounding him became strange. Layers of odd ripples started emerging. He was planning to leave.

hmm However, just at that moment, an invisible power suddenly came down from above and engulfed Chu Kongtong's body.

"Ahh—"

The invisible power was really too terrifying. It could simply destroy everything. It was so indescribably powerful. Before such power, even Chu Kongtong let out a painful cry. Like mud, he lay on the floor and couldn't even move.

"AHH—"

Moreover, this invisible power became stronger and stronger, causing Chu Kongtong's cries to become more and more intense. Even when being suppressed by such power, the golden light on his body started twisting and changing. It gradually faded away, and it looked as if his body was being disintegrated.

boom

When pressed by this invisible power, an explosion finally rang out. The light on Chu Kongtong's body disappeared completely, and at that very instant, Chu Kongtong revealed his true appearance.

He wasn't a golden warrior some dozen meters tall. Instead, he was a gorgeously dressed middle-aged man who wasn't even a meter and a half tall.

Chu Kongtong was not only short, he was incomparably ugly. More

importantly, his ugly face was filled with a fearful expression. In just that instant, large amount of cold sweat seeped out of his face and, like rain, showered down.

"Not only do you bully my person, you even dare break my son's coffin. Today, you even want to leave.

"Chu Kongtong, who gave you these nerves?"

Just at that moment, a voice as calm as a gentle wind yet could petrified one's soul suddenly rang out from the depths of this land.

Chapter 1003: Chu Feng's Father

ta ta ta

After that voice rang out, footstep sounds resounded from the depths of this place. As the sounds neared, a person soon walked out from the darkness.

That man was not tall, nor was he well-built. He wasn't all that handsome either; he could be said to be extremely ordinary.

However, the feeling he gave others was that different. One could even say the feeling he exuded wasn't one of a person's.

Indeed, the feeling he gave others made him seem he wasn't a person. No matter how normal he looked, no matter how simple the clothes he wore, the unique demeanor emanated from his very being wasn't incomparable to an ordinary person.

"Chu Xuanyuan, you..."

Chu Kongtong's expression changed greatly. Within his widening eyes, there was indescribable fear. He said with a trembling voice, "How is this possible? How could your cultivation remain the same after being here for so many years?"

"Chu Kongtong, you truly don't understand this situation. Right now, what you should be worried about is your safety, not my cultivation." The corners of Chu Xuanyuan's mouth curled up as he walked over with somewhat of a smile. The old ape also stood up and walked behind Chu Xuanyuan.

"Wh-wh-what are you doing? There was abnormal movement in the forbidden land, so by orders I came down to investigate. If you dare to do anything to me, the people above won't forgive you!" Chu Kongtong knew this was bad. Gnashing his teeth, he wanted to free himself, but it was useless as he simply didn't have that power before Chu Xuanyuan.

"The people above? Hoh. Actually, I'm quite curious. Who exactly are 'the people above' who so impatiently want to deal with me? How about

you tell me about it?" Chu Xuanyuan walked up to Chu Kongtong. With a thought, he made Chu Kongtong, who was kneeling, float in front of him, straightening him out in the process.

"Chu Xuanyuan, don't even think of using this to trick me! If you dare, attack me! I'll let you know the consequences of your actions."

A hint of resolution flashed into Chu Kongtong's eyes—resolution to remain silent even if death was imminent. So, at that moment, he had closed his mouth—very, very shut.

"Hoh. Consequences? I'll let you know the consequences of disturbing my son's grave." A chilly glint flashed into his gazes. Simultaneously, a blood-red light swept past Chu Kongtong's eyes and he started painfully howling.

At that very instant, blood filled his eyes. His eyeballs were gone already.

"You've seen my son's remains, so you should lose your eyesight."

Chu Xuanyuan slowly spread open his palm. On there were two complete eyeballs. However, he left his palm open for just an instant before closing them shut, crushing Chu Xuanyuan's two eyeballs.

"AH—" As if feeling them being squashed, Chu Xuanyuan cried even more painfully.

"Old Ape, I'll leave the rest to you. Don't be merciful. Just leave him breathing." Chu Xuanyuan turned around and backed away to the side. The old ape walked up without saying anything else, and waved its sharp claws, tearing Chu Kongtong's body.

whoosh— The old ape's clawing was really merciless. It not only left bloody wounds on Chu Kongtong's body, even his bones were snapped. His flesh was torn open, and organs were revealed. That was the degree of Chu Kongtong's injuries.

But that was merely the beginning. The old ape did not leave the torture there.

That was truly just an appetizer because the further it went, the more bone-chilling the old ape's torment became. Skinned and tendons extracted. Joints dislocated. In just a blink, nothing was the same with Chu Kongtong's body as before.

But the most expected thing was before such torture, Chu Kongtong's cries didn't increase in pain. He endured it. In the end, he even started laughing.

"Haha... Old Ape, you're truly old. Even your torturing methods are so mundane. This is just a physical body; I'll give it to you for free! Do whatever you want with it. This doesn't affect me at all. As for this tiny bit of pain, I, Chu Kongtong, can take it with no problem." He not only laughed, he even smugly humiliated the old ape.

"You..." The old ape furrowed its brows slightly. It didn't have too great of an expression. When one reached a realm like theirs, one's physical body did indeed not matter all that much. It too knew, other than letting Chu Kongtong feel some pain, torture like this wouldn't do much to him.

However, it couldn't do anything. After all, Chu Kongtong was from the Chu family. There were definitely people who knew he came down here. So, it didn't dare to kill him.

"Oh? Are you certain this is only a physical body?" But just at that moment, Chu Xuanyuan lightly smiled. Then, his palm moved slightly. A ray of light shot out and bore into Chu Kongtong's body.

"AHH—"

Chu Kongtong's expression changed greatly. He couldn't endure it anymore, and he once again let out a painful scream.

Runes started appearing within his body. They started crawling around inside, and as they moved about, Chu Kongtong's body started collapsing. His physical body was being engulfed.

In the end, his body disappeared completely. His dantian changed into a strand of light, and that strand of light hovered in the air for a very long time. As it floated, it released a painful shriek. Only after an hour did it

stop.

The body of light started stretching, becoming a rough humanoid figure. It was Chu Kongtong; his body was destroyed, and right now, only this Consciousness remained.

However, Chu Kongtong's current Consciousness was different from other people's. No matter how weak the brightness emitted from other people's Consciousness, at least they had a complete body. But Chu Kongtong didn't.

He didn't have eyes, and there was no undamaged skin all over his body. He didn't even have two legs, and only a single arm remained. Moreover, on that arm, only a finger remained. The most important thing, however, was that his cultivation rapidly fell.

"Chu Xuanyuan, wh-wh-what did you do to me?" Feeling the changes that had occurred to him, Chu Kongtong felt his mind crumbling.

Chu Xuanyuan merely gave a faint smile at his reaction. "If I were you, I wouldn't stay in this place. I would quickly return and find your boss to help you heal your injuries.

"But, of course, the precondition for this is that they are actually able to provide such treatment."

"You..." Chu Kongtong's expression changed greatly again. He was furious and filled with hatred, yet didn't dare to say anything.

He knew Chu Xuanyuan's abilities. If this person's cultivation had decreased, then that would still be acceptable. But now, not only was his cultivation the same, it was even unfathomable. There were no clues that pointed to the reason why that was the case. In a state like this, Chu Xuanyuan was very difficult to deal with.

Even if there was someone in the family who could heal him, they would still have to pay an enormous price. It would even affect their own cultivation. So, he didn't think anyone would do that for him.

But no matter what, he was left with no choice. He could only move his body slightly and lay a Teleportation Formation. While he still had

cultivation, he had to quickly leave this place.

"That's right. Chu Kongtong, tell those people above this: if they have some opinion of me, they can come look for trouble themselves. But... only if they dare."

Chu Kongtong's body trembled after Chu Xuanyuan spoke those words. He didn't dare to stay behind, and immediately left through a Teleportation Formation.

Chapter 1004: Chu Feng's Resolution

After Chu Kongtong left, the land returned to its original state. Completely pitch-black darkness; only the pile of firewood emitted a faint light, brightening up a small area.

hmm Chu Xuanyuan raised his hand slightly and repaired the broken coffin. The overturned grave also returned to its perfect state.

"Old Ape, sorry for the trouble," Chu Xuanyuan said with an apologetic tone as he looked at it.

"Xuanyuan, you're still being so formal with me? It's just a small thing. If it can motivate Chu Feng, then so what if I was wronged even more?" said the old ape at ease. It was entirely willing to go through all that.

"Old Ape, I'm not talking about that. It's just..." As Chu Xuanyuan looked at the old ape who looked as if it was about to die, the sorrow and self-blame increased in his eyes. He knew very well what sort of powerful existence the old ape was before.

"Ahh, I'm willing to do all of this. Besides, for things like cultivation, if it can be taken away, it can be taken back. Right now, I've just fallen slightly. Sooner or later, I can regain it all." The old ape faintly smiled, then said, "Actually, Chu Feng's talent is truly not bad. It's already quite unbelievable that he has this cultivation in the Eastern Sea Region that lacks cultivation resources greatly. Besides, you did some things to his bloodline."

"The suffering he's getting in cultivation right now isn't much, but it can lay a very good foundation for his future. But to be honest, Feng'er's growth is better than I expected. Not only in terms of cultivation, but also in terms of a person.

"In all these years, I haven't been able to stay by his side to protect him, look after him, or lead him.

"What I worry the most wasn't how much his cultivation could be raised, but his character.

“Right now, my worries have vanished because his nature has been set. He’s a very spirited man. I feel very relieved knowing just that.” Chu Xuanyuan smiled with an eased face.

“The reason Chu Feng has such a firm nature must be because he has a father like you, right? After all, he’s your son.

“But right now, Chu Feng’s entered the Holy Land of Martialism. He, with that cultivation, is like a little fish that entered a vast ocean. Even if his aptitude is extraordinary and has a bloodline that surpasses all others, he hasn’t grown yet.

“At that place, all sorts of accidents can happen. As a father, are you not worried at all?” asked the old ape.

“I am. How could I not be worried? But what can I do about that? I can’t have him stay here and make him a useless person, then have him die from age, right? Rather than that, why not just let him go? At least, he’ll still be able to see the exciting world outside,” Chu Xuanyuan said very helplessly.

“Actually, what I’m worried the most really aren’t outsiders but instead the ones from the Chu family. Although they basically won’t interfere with this world, they have still sent people to monitor it.

“You’ve done a few things with Chu Feng’s bloodline, so the power he grasps will look different from your Chu family’s bloodline. Although it’ll look different, there will always be similarities.

“Chu Feng isn’t bound by this place. As long as he safely develops, sooner or later his name will spread throughout this world. If those who have some conflicts with your Chu family hear of his accomplishments, suspicions will unavoidably arise.

“So, that was why I urged you to change Chu Feng’s name when you had that person from the Eastern Sea Region take him away,” said the old ape.

“No matter how the Chu family’s treated me, we are still a member. The surname cannot be changed.

“As for his name itself, his mother chose it, so that absolutely cannot be

changed.

"Besides, this world is big. There are countless people with the same name. If Feng'er truly falls to a disaster because of his name alone, then it can only be said to be fate.

"The road of cultivation has never been an easy path. As his father, I will definitely worry for his safety. I don't want him to receive any harm, and I hope that he can be away from danger.

"However, for his future, I won't protect him. I actually hope that he can face some perils alone.

"There are some things that should be personally experienced, such as tribulations. Experience is something even more precious than cultivation resources.

"Which famous expert in this world hasn't gone through a million troubles and passed through the gates of hell countless times?

"In comparison to the Outer World, this world is simply like a greenhouse. If I, Chu Xuanyuan, have a son who can't even develop within a place like this, then that only means he is unworthy to be my son." The fatherly benevolence in Chu Xuanyuan's eyes vanished, and replacing it was a hint of fierceness—ruthless fierceness.

"Ah..." The old ape didn't say anything more. It heaved a long sigh as it felt complicated emotions.

At the same time, Chu Feng had awoken. He discovered he had left the coffin and entered a tunnel.

Inside the tunnel, Chu Feng's body lost control. He could only go along with the flow and go forth with an indescribable quick speed.

He knew he had gone into the correct path. This tunnel was the true Heavenly Road, the true path that led to the Holy Land of Martialism.

But at that instant, Chu Feng felt extremely complicated emotions. He had caught everything that happened before into his eyes. He couldn't even be certain whether the old ape was still safe and whether his father

was still being humiliated.

Chu Feng didn't blame his father, nor did he blame the old ape. He could see from the scene before what sort of days his father and the old ape were having.

Chu Feng could also guess that his father had done quite a bit for him. The grave was his, but it was a cover. It was likely a lie that his father made in order to make everyone within his family believe that "Chu Feng" had died. The goal was to bring Chu Feng away from this land.

That land was detrimental. Otherwise, the old ape's and his father's cultivation wouldn't have fallen. His father wasn't just driven out from his family, he, and the ape, were bearing painful torture.

Chu Feng didn't know what had happened within his family; however, he was certain his parents hadn't been well. At least, his father hadn't been very well.

From the old ape's words before, Chu Feng knew there was a reason that his father acted that way, and that reason had an unshakeable relationship with him. One could even say that he, Chu Feng, harmed his father and put him in this state.

So, Chu Feng felt responsible. He felt very responsible, so much he nearly wished he were dead.

"Chu Feng, don't hold burdens in your hearts. No matter what had happened, you weren't able to do anything to it. What happened has already become reality. No matter who it is, they are powerless to change the past.

"However, you can change the future. Didn't that old ape say it too? The one who deprived your father of his honour was you, but the person who can regain your father's honour is also you. You can see how much expectation they've entrusted you with," Eggy consoled when she felt Chu Feng's downcast mood.

"I won't disappoint their expectations. I will not only take back the honour my father lost, I will make those who stepped over my father's

honour pay the price. Even if they're my family, I will not spare them."

A hint of fierceness flashed into Chu Feng's eyes. This expression was very similar to the one his father showed before; however, it was a bit different. This sort of fierceness was a much more thorough one.

Because this was Chu Feng's resolution.

Credits

Translator: Flower Bridge Too

Epub: Estevam / dotNOVEL